

# **DOMINATING SWORD IMMORTAL**

---

**by Jian You Tai Xu**

# Dominating Sword Immortal

Jian Dao Dun Zun

剑道独尊

Author : JianYou TaiXu 剑游太虚

Year : 2013

Status : 1485 [Completed]

Synopsis :

Dominating Sword Immortal is one of the top ten books in China. The main character Ye Chen, was a university student in the 21st century before dying in an explosion of a failed experiment. His soul wandered the universe before entering another world. A world of martial arts. There he fused his soul with another's soul and body.

Using the memories of his past life, he quickly integrated himself in his clan and was integral to its rise in power. Because of the fusion of his soul and the original soul of the vessel, his talent and potential in martial arts evolved into an unimaginable level that allowed him to comprehend martial arts at an inhumanly fast speed. Throughout the rise of Ye Chen, geniuses in the world of sword art revealed themselves one after another, what other kinds of storms and thunders will he bring upon this world?

Official Description:

On this True Spirit Continent, with millions of different martial art institutions, there're so many strong fighters just like the trees in the forests. Among all, a mediocre apprentice from one of the mediocre institutions suddenly became a martial art genius after a mysterious incident, not only has he got a photographic memory and keen perception but he also came to discover that his ability to comprehend martial arts is astronomically good, which eventually

made him an almost godly existence. From the hot-blooded intense battles to the clashes between the top geniuses, Martial art is no longer limited to the mortal world, it reaches to a level that can do everything from controlling the oceans to flying up the sky and diving under the ground.

---

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/dominating-sword-immortal/>

Raws :

Translator :

<http://www.xianxiaworld.net/Dominating-Sword-Immortal/>



# DSI-Toc

[Dominating Sword Immortal](#)

[DSI-C01](#)

[DSI-C02](#)

[DSI-C03](#)

[DSI-C04](#)

[DSI-C05](#)

[DSI-C06](#)

[DSI-C07](#)

[DSI-C08](#)

[DSI-C09](#)

[DSI-C010](#)

[DSI-C011](#)

[DSI-C012](#)

[DSI-C013](#)

[DSI-C014](#)

[DSI-C015](#)

[DSI-C016](#)

[DSI-C017](#)

[DSI-C018](#)

[DSI-C019](#)

[DSI-C020](#)

[DSI-C021](#)

[DSI-C022](#)

[DSI-C023](#)

[DSI-C024](#)

[DSI-C025](#)

[DSI-C026](#)

[DSI-C027](#)

[DSI-C028](#)

[DSI-C029](#)

[DSI-C030](#)

[DSI-C031](#)

[DSI-C032](#)

[DSI-C033](#)

[DSI-C034](#)

[DSI-C035](#)

[DSI-C036](#)

[DSI-C037](#)

[DSI-C038](#)

[DSI-C039](#)

[DSI-C040](#)

[DSI-C041](#)

[DSI-C042](#)

[DSI-C043](#)

[DSI-C044](#)

[DSI-C045](#)

[DSI-C046](#)

[DSI-C047](#)

[DSI-C048](#)

[DSI-C049](#)

[DSI-C050](#)

[DSI-C051](#)

[DSI-C052](#)

[DSI-C053](#)

[DSI-C054](#)

[DSI-C055](#)

[DSI-C056](#)

[DSI-C057](#)

[DSI-C058](#)

[DSI-C059](#)

[DSI-C060](#)

[DSI-C061](#)

[DSI-C062](#)

[DSI-C063](#)

[DSI-C064](#)

[DSI-C065](#)

[DSI-C066](#)

[DSI-C067](#)

[DSI-C068](#)

[DSI-C069](#)

[DSI-C070](#)

[DSI-C071](#)

[DSI-C072](#)

[DSI-C073](#)

[DSI-C074](#)

[DSI-C075](#)

[DSI-C076](#)

[DSI-C077](#)

[DSI-C078](#)

[DSI-C079](#)

[DSI-C080](#)

[DSI-C081](#)

[DSI-C082](#)

[DSI-C083](#)

[DSI-C084](#)

[DSI-C085](#)

[DSI-C086](#)

[DSI-C087](#)

[DSI-C088](#)

[DSI-C089](#)

[DSI-C090](#)

[DSI-C091](#)

[DSI-C092](#)

[DSI-C093](#)

[DSI-C094](#)

[DSI-C095](#)

[DSI-C096](#)

[DSI-C097](#)

[DSI-C098](#)

[DSI-C099](#)

[DSI-C0100](#)

[DSI-C0101](#)



[DSI-C0102](#)

[DSI-C0103](#)

[DSI-C0104](#)

[DSI-C0105](#)

[DSI-C0106](#)

[DSI-C0107](#)

[DSI-C0108](#)

[DSI-C0109](#)

[DSI-C0110](#)

[DSI-C0111](#)

[DSI-C0112](#)

[DSI-C0113](#)

[DSI-C0114](#)

[DSI-C0115](#)

[DSI-C0116](#)

[DSI-C0117](#)

[DSI-C0118](#)

[DSI-C0119](#)

[DSI-C0120](#)

[DSI-C0121](#)

[DSI-C0122](#)

[DSI-C0123](#)

[DSI-C0124](#)

[DSI-C0125](#)

[DSI-C0126](#)

[DSI-C0127](#)

[DSI-C0128](#)

[DSI-C0129](#)

[DSI-C0130](#)

[DSI-C0131](#)

[DSI-C0132](#)

[DSI-C0133](#)

[DSI-C0134](#)

[DSI-C0135](#)

[DSI-C0136](#)

[DSI-C0137](#)

[DSI-C0138](#)

[DSI-C0139](#)

[DSI-C0140](#)

[DSI-C0141](#)

[DSI-C0142](#)

[DSI-C0143](#)

[DSI-C0144](#)

[DSI-C0145](#)

[DSI-C0146](#)

[DSI-C0147](#)

[DSI-C0148](#)

[DSI-C0149](#)

[DSI-C0150](#)

[DSI-C0151](#)

[DSI-C0152](#)

[DSI-C0153](#)

[DSI-C0154](#)

[DSI-C0155](#)

[DSI-C0156](#)

[DSI-C0157](#)

[DSI-C0158](#)

[DSI-C0159](#)

[DSI-C0160](#)

[DSI-C0161](#)

[DSI-C0162](#)

[DSI-C0163](#)

[DSI-C0164](#)

[DSI-C0165](#)

[DSI-C0166](#)

[DSI-C0167](#)

[DSI-C0168](#)

[DSI-C0169](#)

[DSI-C0170](#)

[DSI-C0171](#)

[DSI-C0172](#)

[DSI-C0173](#)

[DSI-C0174](#)

[DSI-C0175](#)

[DSI-C0176](#)

[DSI-C0177](#)

[DSI-C0178](#)

[DSI-C0179](#)

[DSI-C0180](#)

[DSI-C0181](#)

[DSI-C0182](#)

[DSI-C0183](#)

[DSI-C0184](#)

[DSI-C0185](#)

[DSI-C0186](#)

[DSI-C0187](#)

[DSI-C0188](#)

[DSI-C0189](#)

[DSI-C0190](#)

[wink](#)

## Chapter 1 – Ye Chen

In a dim room, a teenage boy lay on a bed softly mumbling, “...so this poor fool is also named Ye Chen, we even look somewhat similar...what a coincidence... is this fate?”

Ye Chen was a graduate student studying physics in the 21st century. He was considered the top student in his class. However, during his attempt to create a particle accelerator for the university, an accident occurred and an explosion happened, ripping Ye Chen’s soul from his body and sent it into the vast reaches of the Universe. His soul wandered the empty void until finally reaching this world.

If it was anyone else was facing this kind of sudden change, especially their soul entering into another, entirely different, body, they would most definitely have a rough time[1]. However Ye Chen did not even feel a thing, only surprise.

Ye Chen wondered if he was actually some kind of freak, he felt absolutely nothing after this kind of huge change. What if he could not feel anything?

After half a night, Ye Chen had digested more than a decade of memories. Through those memories, he learnt that he was a member of a famous family and that he had joined the Sky Cloud Martial School [2] at the age of twelve, and officially becoming an outer apprentice when he was fourteen was one of the few happy events in Ye Chen’s bitter life.

The most frustrating part is that, over the years, the previous owner of this body had only trained his Qi[2] to Qi Realm Level 4; other than that, none of his skills seemed to have had any improvement. He was only capable of performing the first three forms of the most basic “Sword Arts of Yun”.

“If I want to survive in this world...I will wash away this title of useless!” Ye Chen hated being considered a loser, even if the title was attached to the former owner of this vessel. Now that this body belonged to him, he was determined to get rid of that humiliating title.

After making up his mind, he can't help but remembering the things that happened before he turned twelve.

The Sky Cloud Martial School, was located on the north side of the Heavenly Wind Country, is one of the five powerhouses in the country. They are three Martial Schools, one Academy, and one Martial Palace. Other than these five powerhouses, there were also eight families in control of thousands of martial artists in Heavenly Wind Country. Even the royal family fears them and dares not to offend them.

And the family Ye Chen belongs to is the Ye family, one of the eight famous families.

The Ye family had over two hundred years of history. Originally they were merchants who had accumulated a massive fortune by selling tea leaves and silk. Unfortunately, their wealth eventually brought the worst kinds of people out, all interested in making an easy profit.

After being robbed and blackmailed countless times, the master of the family at that time decided enough was enough, and began to develop their martial art prowess using their immense financial strength. After struggling for hundreds of years, the Ye family finally achieved the position they hold today.

Being a part of the Ye family meant that people would bend over backwards to

please you, no matter where you go. However Ye Chen had never experienced this kind of treatment, because of his lack of martial talent and in fact was bullied often.

The only factor that protected him from complete humiliation, was that his father was the current head of the Ye family, and his mother was also an elder of the School of Southern Hills— one of the three Martial School.

His most vivid memories were when his cousins would come over for family meetings. They would take him to a place where nobody would see and humiliate him. Even his maid, Daisy, would be despised by all other maids, and every time it happened she would run to him and start crying on his shoulders, complaining about the unfairness of the treatment they recieved.

“Fuck, I won’t let them get away with this!” His eyes sparked with hatred as he firmly clenched his fists.

Feeling an unquenchable rage, Ye Chen vowed for revenge, especially now that he is the combination of the two Ye Chens. He has the memories and emotions from both of their lives, in other words, he is a combination of both Ye Chens.

And no matter which Ye Chen is humiliated, he shall take offense.

After a deep breath in order to control his emotions, Ye Chen carried on retrieving his memories...

The youths of the Ye family started training their Qi when they were ten. In order to be selected by one of the five Martial Arts Schools in Tian Feng and become an apprentice-in-process, you would have to reach Qi Realm Level 2 by

the age of twelve. To become a senior apprentice, they would, at the minimum, have to reach Qi Realm Level 4.

Perhaps he was motivated by the pressure, or maybe he simply didn't want to disappoint his parents, but Ye Chen somehow managed to reach Qi Realm Level 2 in two years, and Qi Realm Level 4 soon after that. He surprisingly did this before age twelve and became a senior apprentice in the Sky Cloud Martial School.

However his accomplishments were quite lacking compared everyone else from the Ye family: Ye Feng, the eldest cousin of Ye Chen and his third uncle's son Ye Ming both reached Qi Realm Level 4 when they were twelve but the most impressive ones have to be the second eldest cousin, Ye Tang and fourth uncle's daughter, Ye Xuan, both of whom reached Level 5 at the same age, they are considered to be rare martial arts geniuses.

Your talent and potential determined what rank of school you were able to join. The lower the rank the better quality of school.

Being the worst of all, Ye Chen joined the rank nine Sky Cloud Martial School. And Ye Feng and Ye Ming joined the rank eight School of Zi Yang; most impressively, Ye Tang joined the rank seven Northern Snow Villa; and Ye Xuan joined Emerald Valley, also rank seven.

"In one year will be the Triennial Family Meeting. I must do well. I can't bear to bring shame to my mother again." Ye Chen rolled out of the bed and, after quickly cleaning himself, he walked out to the yard with his sword in hand.

The Cloudfall Sword Art has nine stages, the first six don't have names, but the last three are named "The Search for Opportunity", "Walking on a River of



Clouds”, “Shine in Darkness”.

Ye Chen shut his eyes, picturing the sword art in his mind, Ye Chen slowly extends his right arm into the air, began to practice Cloud Fall Sword Art from the first stage.

Ye Chen’s eyes glimmered as he recalled his previous body’s pitiful clumsy attempts. It was incomparably different! Compared to before, the sword moved like a fish darting in the water and yet his body was completely relaxed, almost like everything has already fallen into place and there is nothing more to worry about.

Swssh!

A falling leaf was cut in half in mid air, yet Ye Chen didn’t feel a thing, he just carried on waving his sword.

The first stage, the second, the third, ... the seventh.

Gradually, Ye Chen’s sword skills pushed past his former limits. Even though he was comprehending new techniques, he fluidly moved at an extremely fast pace, but it also seemed like there was nothing restraining him in any way, the sword in his hand seemed to go wherever he wanted it to. Without stopping for a breath, he finally reached the seventh stage, “The Search for Opportunity”. All of a sudden a light glanced out from his sword, bouncing around erratically, easily cutting through a couple of falling leaves, even though they are spread out from each other.

Ye Chen opened his eyes and ceased moving as he observed the results in

surprise. You must know that for a beginner of martial arts, even the most basic moves were very hard to master. It was not just about the extent of your potential but about your ability to adapt to new things. For example, when trying to learn how to swim, it seems to be very hard in the beginning because of the fear of drowning, but as you begin to acclimate yourself, your restrictions are removed and every move suddenly becomes simple.

As you can see, to become better is not hard, but to start from scratch? Incomparably difficult.

Ye Chen took a deep breath and cleared his mind. Effortlessly, he began the movements of the Cloudfall Sword Arts, over and over again.

The first stage, the second, ..., the seventh.

The first stage, the second, ..., the seventh.

...

After repeating this ten times, Ye Chen was finally able to comprehend the eighth routine “Walking on a River of Clouds”.

The great steel sword in his hand gave off a blurry white sheen, just like the clouds in the sky suddenly running like water in a river, condensing then splitting, condensing then splitting, condensing then splitting...

As Ye Chen continued, the Qi inside of Ye Chen started to slowly increase its speed, just like the running river, continuously completing one loop after another, flowing up through his meridians before coming back to his lower

abdomen then running right back out again.

Hm?

Suddenly, Ye Chen felt something change in his lower abdomen.

“I achieved Mid Level Fourth Qi Realm so easily?” Ye Chen knew that in order to reach Mid Fourth Qi Realm from Early Fourth Qi Realm, it would take at least a week, yet it only took him an hour.

It could never be that simple but there must be something else prompting this kind of growth.

[1] Normally when a soul enters into a completely different vessel, the vessel would have signs of rejection to the newly arrived soul which would make the soul feel tortured.

[2]Qi: is life-force -- that which animates the forms of the world. It is the vibratory nature of phenomena -- the flow and tremoring that is happening continuously at molecular, atomic and sub-atomic levels. In this book, it is mostly referred to the Qi inside of people' bodies which is largely related to the practise of martial arts.

## Chapter 2 – The Pavilion of Martial Arts

However, no matter how hard he tried, he could not think of any other reason.

The only possible explanation for his unusual comprehension speed, that allowed him to master the eighth form of the Skyfall Sword Art, had to be the fusion of his two souls.

As his breakthrough in the Qi Realm, the reason was quite simple. The heart of martial art laid in the art of calmness, while martial art broken down was simply the art of movement. Although they are two seemingly opposite forms of training, they all have the same effect on strengthening the Qi. However the former was only used for training Qi while the latter was primarily used for attacking the target then subsequently training Qi.

Ye Chen's heart rate rose noticeably as he was enlightened. There are two important factors of a martial artist's potential: first, one must be blessed with a resilient body and discipline to hone their body, and second, one must have comprehension to allow one to be grasp the heart of sutras and immerse themselves into the path of the sword.

To be blessed with an resilient body allows one manage to train their Qi much faster than the others such as Ye Chang and Ye Xuan; and to have comprehension is to be able to easily pick up the physical martial arts and defeat those who seemingly stood above you. After all, being weak or strong depends on individual performances.

“What luck! At this rate, reaching the Eighth Level of the Qi Realm within a year is not impossible!” The path of cultivation is extremely difficult, people with great potential and ability may be able to achieve Level 5 in two years, but to reach Level 8 in two years after that is uncertain, and the time needed to reach

Level 9 and 10 is at least twice that. To reach the Surreal Realm was even more difficult! In the history of the Ye family, only the third master was able to reach that realm.

Ye Chen smiled as he walked out to search for more profound sword arts in the martial art pavilion.

...

Most manuals in the pavilion were low ranked; the master ranked manuals would never be stored here. Especially with his ranking as an outer disciple, he was only able to borrow Middle-Ranked Mortal and below manuals. Glancing around the room, the hundreds of manuals made him feel a bit dizzy.

“The Flying Sword, The Sword Art of Wind, The Freedom Sword Art, The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords ... Cloud Pushing Palm, Broken Cloud Palm, Infinite Flying palms... Broken Air Fist, King Kong Fist, Seven Stars Mantis Fist...”

For sword arts alone, there were around forty different manuals, and for the palm and fist arts there were more than fifty manuals each, twenty-eight different kinds of different leg arts, and only eight manuals in regards to fingers.

The manual of The Flying Sword had a very high requirement, every stage described in the manual was very agile and complex; The Sword Art of Wind was slightly more in depth and required a certain level of comprehension; The Freedom Sword Art exuded an aura that was almost murderous, each stage was aggressive and bold, very suitable for those with a cold and calm personality. The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords was even more outstanding and demanding than the ones before, with each stage, the sword movements grew sharper and indomitable.

“The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords it is.”

It was only after a quiet and long thought that Ye Chen had made up his mind. With his extraordinary comprehension, there was no point in wasting time to learn common sword arts. For Ye Chen to choose, only the best would suffice.

As for the fist palm, and finger arts, Ye Chen had already made up his mind.

Ye Chen chose the King Kong Fist for the time being he could not use a sword. However, finger art were very complicated and difficult to practice, and he was afraid that it would slow his way of the sword so he decided to give it up for now.

Holding the two scripts in his hand, Ye Chen walked up to the old man sitting lazily in a chair by the entrance, the pavilion master, to register the books.

“What? The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords?” The pavilion master started to frown and tried to persuade Ye Chen, “Young one, a journey of a thousand miles begins with a single step. Never aim too high or too far. Put your feet on the ground and take it step by step. The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords is a Middle-Ranked Mortal manual but the difficulty of mastering it is almost as hard as elder-ranked manuals. Many junior apprentice chose not to listen to me and ended up with nothing. Listen to this man’s old words and work steadily, one step at a time, in order to make solid progress.”

Ye Chen bowed his head as he listened to the speaker’s heart and said, “Master, my path is a difficult path, yet chosen and blessed by destiny I shall walk forth.” The pavilion master shook his head, thinking of all the disciples from before, also once full of confidence, before returning after months of unfruitful practice and with tearful faces. Such shame that their confidence was the only thing they had.

“Well...hmpf...never mind. I do not have the right to stop anyone from

choosing what they want. My job is to disperse wisdom in hopes that they would realize their abilities, instead of holding on to a fruitless dream.”

With that thought in mind, the master added, “Remember our Sky Cloud Martial School’s rules. You are not allowed to teach martial arts privately without permission, otherwise you will face expulsion. In more serious circumstance, you will be decapitated. You have three months to return the manuals.”

“Don’t worry elder, I don’t dare to joke about my own life.” Ye Chen took the scripts and walked out of the pavilion. Beside the morning and evening meals, once every three days the outer apprentices of the Sky Cloud School gathered together for a martial art lesson, the rest of the time was free for whatever they chose to pursue.

Ye Chen carried his great steel sword and walked deep into the mountain. The mountain had a height of three thousands eight hundred meters, the top half of the mountain covered in a perpetual mist. Far away from the secular world and civilization, it was quiet, calm and relaxing. Except for the expressed forbidden areas belonging to the masters and some core disciples, most of the space in this forest was open to all for practicing.

Ye Chen spent around an hour in the mountain before choosing a remote cliff. The cliff was around two to three meters high, the three sides filled with white mist whose form was ever changing, sometimes it was thousands of horses, sometimes it became a violent ocean, and sometimes it was just mist, expanding and contracting with no discernable pattern.

“Although the many wondrous views of Earth were quite breathtaking, it somehow just lacks a hint of mysteriousness. Only here will you be able forget everything, find peace, find enlightenment, and advance on the path of the sword,” Ye Chen said. In his opinion, to master overnight was difficult! To do so

you would have to endure the loneliness and find peace, and those of who boasted about how they would master any top script, if they could get their hands on it, were just ridiculously ignorant.

Taking a deep breath, Ye Chen started his boring and basic training.

Feel the Qi. Breathe. In. Out. Breath. Breath. Move the Qi. One step after another, continually directing the sword, moving his hands...

After only a day, Ye Chen comprehended the ninth routine “Shining in The Night”. Smoothly moving from stance to stance, the light flashing from the sword was just like the light reflected off a river under the moonlight. As for its combat prowess, it had reached the early stages of Middle-Ranked Mortal arts and was Ye Chen’s strongest move at the moment.

Mornings came, nights left, without noticing, three days had gone.

On that steep cliff, a human figure waved a sword and pointed towards the huge rock on the other side.

A light shone from a sword just like a mirror reflecting sunbeams.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!...

The huge rock was pierced like a piece of tofu leaving behind countless marks; each mark had a depth of more than three centimeters.

“Finally.” Out of Qi, Ye Chen’s head was full of sweat, but he did not seem to care at all. The sword marks on the rock caused him great satisfaction. The ninth stage was many times harder than the eight stage before, but its power was also many times stronger. He spent four whole days to master it, also, during the four days of training, the Qi inside his body had become more pure and intense, and



moved faster and more easily than before.

Ye Chen let out a deep breath. Today will officially be the day he would start to practice the hardest manual– the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords. It had thirteen stages, each were extremely dangerous, just like a peak standing alone after an apocalypse, seemingly able to see right through people's soul and mind.

After going through the script, Ye Chen understood the broad idea of the manual, and even sensed an indescribable realm behind it. Once he would be able to almost master it, killing those weaker than him would only take an instant, and when facing those who are stronger than him, they will fall under his sword, unless they were very strong and half a foot into the surreal realm.

## Chapter 3 – The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords

Three months passed by quickly.

The ocean beyond the cliff roared, the clouds overhead flowed on ever changing. Upon that cliff, a teenage boy was wearing a training robe and holding a great steel sword. He jumped up and down and moved forward and back, making his sword shine with light that danced and weaved.

Perhaps it was just an illusion, perhaps it was the environment, but the scene of the young man waving his sword gave one the sense that he was standing there all by himself like a lone peak, looking down over the mountains of the world, everything miniscule in comparison. Even though he was there right in front of you, but it felt like he was far far away on that lone peak, a kind of unpredictable sense of distance that would make one feel like they were helplessly lost in the world.

One by one, he moved from stance to stance, starting from the first stage and advancing to the twelfth stage. After moving through the twelve stages, the young man's gaze became sharp, cutting right through the air. He jumped high up into the air and dove down like he was jumping off a peak. Snap! A small spark appeared . The next second, half of the rock was scored with a horrifying three-centimeter-deep sword mark. It was clean and neat, yet aggressive and cold-blooded.

Returning his sword back to its scabbard, the young man mumbled to himself: "No wonder the pavilion master wanted me to choose another sword art, it turns out that this Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords was not just some simple Middle-Ranked Mortal manual. It actually contains profound truths, making its actual rank much higher than what the manual had been listed at. Only these

truths were not explained in the manual”

This young man was Ye Chen. Over the past three months, he had already finished his training of the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords, due to his extremely strong comprehension. However, he recently realized that there was still something missing. Ye Chen concluded that the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords was incomplete, and that the complete manual had been lost and had its rank drop to the Middle-Ranked Mortal level.

Fortunately, it was Ye Chen who was training in it. After spending some effort studying it, not only had he managed to reach the Conscious Stage, which was not explained in the manual, but his Qi had also been improved. The Conscious Stage was a stage of realization. Imagine a pianist playing a piece of music that she had played many times before, however, instead of just reading the notes and playing as written, she played the piece in a completely different manner, yet still using the same melody and rhythm! The pianist had comprehended the emotion and feeling that caused the composer to write the song. The heart! This was the Conscious Stage of the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords, the true heart and intent. Indomitable and lonely. He believed it would not take long before he would be able to recreate and master his own Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords.

From his training the past three months, the Qi inside of Ye Chen had reached the beginning of Qi Realm Level 6.

“It’s time! I should go and return the script now.” Remembering the rules of the School of Yun, Ye Chen did not want to waste a second, he immediately started to head back.

On the way back, his ears twitched as he heard grunting from a distance. Even though it was at least five hundred meters away, he still could hear it very clearly, as if the sounds had been pressed together and all occurred at the same

time.

“What a loud noise! The body to produce this kind of sound must be wondrous indeed! And from what it sounds like, it seems to be a woman...” Unable to quench his curiosity, Ye Chen carefully approached.

After crossing a few thorny bushes, he arrived at the back of a huge rock.

He stuck his head out and he saw a small forest and a wood cabin with a small pond beside it. Four lotus leaves drifted peacefully in the pond causing the whole place to have a poetic feel.

At the edge of the forest, there was a teenage girl who looked to be about sixteen years old. Wearing white training gear, she was practicing a fist arts which caused her to continuously grunt with a loud sound that could frighten one's soul.

She was a petite skinny girl that looked so weak that she might be blown away by the wind. But each punch and kick of hers gave off such a terrifying aura that one would think it would be able to rip through anything.

“It's senior sister Xu Jing...so this must be a forbidden area?”

After seeing her, Ye Chen realized something.

The master of the School of Yun, and each of the elders, had their own mountains for practicing, and if the others wanted to train their martial arts, they would have to find a different place. However, although the Mountain of Wind was huge, the best training locations were scarce. So usually, the elders

and the core apprentices would get to pick the good places first and mark them as their own territories. If anyone tried to break in, it was viewed as incredible disrespect, and they would be definitely yelled at or even badly punished if it was a serious situation.

This sister Xu he was looking at was one of the core apprentices in the School of Yun, ranked at 23. She had reached Mid-Surreal Realm, and was extremely talented.

Xu Jing continued taking steps. Between the movements of her fists and legs, she pressed her tongue on the back of her teeth, gathered the Qi inside of her body together in her lower abdomen and grunted repeatedly, all of which increased the power of her fist art.

After a few round of punches, her power seemed to have reached its peak. All of the sudden, she jumped up in the air, her fists moved fast like lightning, murderous, like a tiger attacking its prey. The next second, she threw a punch right on a massive branch of a big tree.

Pow! Pow! Pow!

Something unexpected happened... Out of nowhere, there was a gold light shooting right out of Xu Jing's fists that was so bright it could almost blind anyone who looked at it. Soon, the bright gold light turns into something solid and caused the big tree, and the directly adjacent trees, to explode without any visible effort... its powerfulness was frightening.

Ye Chen squeezes his eyes. It must've been done by pushing her Qi out!

When a Qi Realm trainer was able to convert the Qi in their body into Real Qi, it meant that he (or she) had officially reached the Surreal Realm. Not only was the power of their attack largely increased, but Qi was actually pushed out of the body and attack people through the air.

“Still not going to come out?” Xu Jing has already noticed Ye Chen’s arrival a while before. And now, she stares sharply in the direction of his location.

Ye Chen swallowed and revealed himself as requested.

“You are a outer apprentice.” Xu Jing says.

“Yes.”

“Why are you spying on me practicing my fist art?”

“I’ve heard your voice from far away, and came to have a look out of curiosity.”

Xu Jing studies Ye Chen carefully, his confident attitude makes her curious, if it was any other apprentice, they would normally already be stuttering speechlessly in front of her, but he spoke with logic, in a calm and confident manner. She couldn’t find any deceit in his bearing, thus she bore him no ill.

Not planning on giving him any trouble, Xu Jing calmly said, “Please leave now, and don’t return unless given I give you permission.”

“Okay.”

Leaving the place, Ye Chen let out a breath.

When facing Xu Jing, he had felt an immense pressure, one that he hadn't felt from other, higher ranked core apprentices. It seemed that there would be some changes in the ranks of core apprentices soon.

Ye Chen chuckled.

If it was before, I would probably have had a hard time putting a sentence together in front of her. It must be due to my increased soul power that I can stand in front of her so calmly.

But the most memorable part of encountering Xu Jing had to be her personality. She was so cold and unfriendly and yet had such fierce and powerful martial arts, that she was very easy to remember.

Ye Chen arrived at the Pavilion of Martial Arts.

The pavilion master looked up from his desk and recognized Ye Chen instantly, he spoke up, "How was it?... you failed to master that Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords, right? It's not too late for you to choose another sword art."

Ye Chen smiles, "there's no need, I came to return the script."

"Okay, just sign here."

After signing, Ye Chen turned to leave.

Looking at him, the pavilion master asked curiously: “Only two months to go, then it will be the challenge of Mu Ren Gang, you sure you are not going to trying something else?”

Mu Ren Gang is a traditional challenge held once every six months in the School of Yun, the contestants are mostly outer apprentices. If you do well, it means your combat skill is very high; and if you failed, then you will know your skills are lacking. In his memories, he saw his previous self taking the challenge almost half a year ago, he had vomited blood after taking a three breath long of beating, which turned him into a huge joke among the entire school.

“I imagine the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords should be of a high enough level for me to pass that.” Ye Chen thinks that if he can train his Qi to the late stage of Qi Realm Level 6 in just two months, even if he doesn’t make it into the top ten, his rank should still be fairly good, but it is a fact that he hasn’t been in an actual combat yet, so he’s still not too sure about his combat skills.

The pavilion master nodded subconsciously, then he looked up with full of surprise, “you mean you’ve mastered the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords? How is that even possible?”

“More or less, I guess.” Ye Chen replies.

I wonder what he would think if he knew that I have not only mastered the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords but also realized its mental realm and achieved a higher level of Qi Realm.

Ye Chen did not want to reveal too much so he walked out of the pavilion.



After he left, the pavilion master couldn't believe what he had just heard. He knew that the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords was not a complete art, it was created by the third master of the School of Yun, its rank was truly at the top of the mortal class. But, because of some unknown reasons, the real script was lost, leaving only this unfinished script.

Despite all this, the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords itself is still very hard to master, since its basics still belong to the top mortal class, which is impossible for a outer apprentice to understand.

“The outer apprentices nowadays are way too full of themselves.” The pavilion master shakes his head. It is obvious that he didn't believe what Ye Chen said at all.

## Chapter 4 – The First Fight

Back in his courtyard, Ye Chen was sitting silently. Seemingly lost, he pondered on Xu Jing's fist art as he began to try the King Kong Fist.

He threw punches slowly and quickly, before stopping as he realized something was not quite right.

If I am correct, Xu Jing was training the 'Monster Executing Fist', a top mortal class martial art of unlimited power. And although the King Kong Fist is not as good as the Monster Executing Fist, it should be based on the same principle. However Xu Jing's fist seems so much more powerful and frightening compared to my fist, what did I do wrong?

Standing silently in the middle of the yard, with his eyebrows twisted together, Ye Chen couldn't stop thinking about Xu Jing practicing her fist skills, again and again.

Right! Xu Jing's grunting was heard more than five hundred meters away, such a noise must come from her strengthened body. While I have strong comprehension, my physical body still is too weak to master that powerful fist skill.

After realizing the key to the problem, Ye Chen sighed. He was not afraid of not being able to master it, he was afraid of not knowing why he could not master it.

The first thing he needed to do was to practice his horse stance, a strong punch can only be performed when you have a firm base, otherwise you might lose your life when you go head on with the enemy.

The horse stance required that you place your feet a little wider than your shoulder and take a half squat. Because the posture looked like riding a horse and was stable as a stilt in the ground, it was called the horse stance. A strong horse stance could strengthen your kidneys, your back, and your muscles which in turn would improve your Qi. A stable lower body provided an unwavering balance, plus improved reflexes as well. A firm horse stance was one of the basics that everyone must learn before learning martial arts. It was like the saying: "You would never reach your destination without learning how to walk first". To copy the moves from the manual without actually training your whole body to endure the gravity and pressure would just end up being a bunch of fancy moves with no real power behind it.

With both his legs spread wide and bent at a ninety degree angle, Ye Chen looked straight ahead as he breathed in and breathed out while throwing punches at a controlled rapid pace.

Pow! Pow! Pow! Pow! ...

His punches were like bullets, fiercely stirring up the air around them. After about fifteen minutes of punching, he focused on his tensed lower abdomen for another fifteen minutes.

Then, in the evening, he repeated it all over again, but this time his speed was slowly increasing as he tried to have a break his previous pace each time he threw a punch.

After another two weeks had passed, Ye Chen was longer seen practicing throwing punches, instead he started to practice the low horse stance. He would stand there still in his low horse stance position quietly for half an hour at a time.

Soon, he realized it was way too easy, so he tightened his hands into fists facing forward, then with straight elbows and he placed them as parallel as he could to the ground as much as he could while doing the horse stance, with his back relaxed and his chest forward he began to lower his upper body as far as he could without falling over. After every hour, he would tense his lower abdomen and swing his upper body the other direction for another fifteen minutes.

After a whole month of training, Ye Chen's body had changed noticeably, he could almost lift half a ton and run so fast that it looked like he was flying. Also, his Qi could be seen emanating around the back of his body, full of energy. And the most noticeable change was the increase of his appetite, during each meal he could eat three huge bowls of rice plus a whole barbequed chicken and still he sleep like a baby. By the end of the month, his Qi could even float around his whole body freely without any restrains, it was almost like he had endless energy to spend.

But the most important thing of all was that Ye Chen finally managed to reach the state of heart and palm unity so he could keep himself at his peak the whole time during his fight with others. The heart and palm unity was a state was simply the state where a martial artist was able to accurately move his arms and legs in a fluid manner effortlessly and without much thought.

Today, after practicing his horse stance, Ye Chen frowned and said, "My body strength did improve, but the strength is still not enough, Sister Xu Jing's power is at least a few times stronger than mine, especially when practicing the Fist of Monster Killer! She's so powerful, so strong, almost invincible ..."

Looking around the yard, his eyes suddenly lit up when he saw the huge hundred-pound rock in the corner.

Without a doubt, lifting could increase one's upper body strength, but could easily injure one's muscles and tendons, therefore was not very wise to do so. However, running while carrying such a weight was a completely different case, with the constant changing of the center of gravity and the shifting pressure, one could train every bone and muscle of one's body and endurance.

Without hesitation, Ye Chen ran to the corner, using both of his arms, he lifted the huge rock then turned around and started running out of the yard.

The windy mountain had ten hills and encompassed an area of ten miles. Besides the tops of the mountains which were covered by different buildings, the rest were rarely visited by anyone. But at the bottom of the mountain, there were many apprentices from the Sky Cloud School guarding the entrance, not allowing anyone from the outside to enter.

On the path of the mountain, there was a human figure lifting a rock above his head and running so fast it looked almost as if he was flying. And if you paid attention, you would notice that there were no Qi fluctuations which signified he did not even use his Qi at all, it was completely due to his true body strength.

"Look, isn't that Ye Chen?"

"Yah! What's the heck is he doing instead of practicing?"

The Sky Cloud School had three thousand prospective apprentices, and five hundred outer disciples, most of whom did not like to just stay in their own yard, they liked to come out here in the middle of nowhere and practice their own martial arts just like Ye Chen, and sometimes some of them would come out here with training buddies and maybe have friendly matches with each other.

Ye Chen kept focusing on the road, he didn't care about their discussions.

But sometimes you couldn't avoid trouble even if you wanted to.

Out of nowhere, another figure suddenly jumped out and landed in front of Ye Chen, cutting his way. It was a fourteen-year-old bulky-looking teenage boy.

Ye Chen stopped, "Wang Gang, what can I do for you?"

The bulky teenager was called Wang Gang, just like Ye Chen, he was also a outer apprentice. However, his skills were considerably higher than Ye Chen, and had already reached Early Qi Realm Level 7. He was known for his mastery of different martial arts and his extremely strong body strength. The two of them had a conflict before, in which Ye Chen was beaten up by him and had laid in bed for half a month.

Wang Gang laughed at him, "You can't just practice like a mad person to be gain strength, it will never work. Just like last time, I could beat you into a dead dog using only a third of my strength."

Ye Chen sneered. I wasn't planning this, but since he came directly in front of me, obviously I will not just let him go like this. Half a year ago, I said one thing accidentally, and the next second I was being punched, and had ended up with two broken ribs. Luckily my family is rich and had many different medicines for wounds so that I could heal in less than a month.

"Is that right? So how do you think I should practice then?" Ye Chen dropped the huge rock.

“Cut the crap, let me teach you how!” Wang Gang suddenly leaned forward and after few steps, he appeared right in front of Ye Chen. Wang Gang threw out a huge palm, which suddenly swelled two times larger than a normal palm, and chopped down like a iron plate, you could clearly hear the loud sound of it cutting through the air.

Looking at the opponent’s huge palm coming at him, Ye Chen stood still, he lifted his left hand like he was holding a ball and met it head on.

Suddenly, it sounded like a rock had just hit a piece of wood. Ye Chen was still standing there without having moved an inch, while Wang Gang’s lower body began to wobble, full of weaknesses.

“How could this even be possible? His Qi skill was clearly below me, how could he take my Breaking Stone Palm and be completely fine? I’ll be damned...”

Wang Gang immediately realized something was not right and ignoring all the weaknesses in his stance, he turned his right fist into a palm and chopped straight towards Ye Chen.

He didn’t expect that Ye Chen had already saw it coming and retaliated with a awfully strong fist right on the chest before he could even make his second attack.

“King Kong Fist, fifth movement: King Kong Smash!”

Snap! Wang Gang was punched into the air while vomiting blood, his body rolled a couple of times until it finally stopped moving. He looked like he had just lost all his power, he couldn’t even push himself up.

Everyone was shocked. They couldn't handle the fact that Wang Gang, who had always been famous for his powerful strength had just lost to a head on collision with Ye Chen, and was wounded badly just like a dead dog...

Only Ye Chen knew what had actually happened. While Wang Gang's strength and Qi skill were both higher than his, but because Wang Gang had never paid attention to his martial arts skills he had many gaping flaws and weakness in his stances. That Breaking Stone Palm was definitely powerful but Ye Chen had chosen not to contest head on with him. Ye Chen had actually used two moves! He began with a slight pushed Wang Gang's palm first so it lost some power and before he drew his fist back and then using all his strength to push it which made his opponent's lower body started to wobble. All of this happened so fast that it created this whole "head-on" illusion.



## Chapter 5 – Teenage Sword Artist

“Senior Wang Gang. It seems like your training method is too weak. Please excuse me.” Lifting up his huge rock again, Ye Chen continued running.

After Ye Chen left, the crowd got louder.

“Unbelievable! Ye Chen won against Senior Wang Gang! Was that the King Kong Fist he was using?

“King Kong Fist and Breaking Stone Palm are both Middle Ranked Mortal martial arts, so it should not have had such a disparity. And Wang Gang’s level is definitely higher than Ye Chen! What happened?”

“It’s very simple,” a seemingly-very-calm teenager said, “Ye Chen’s King Kong Fist has already reached the Gentle Stage! His punches was strong and powerful yet still full of gentleness.”

Someone questioned how would he know about that.

The teenager smiled, “Teacher once said, powerful but gentle should be the goal for every power-based martial arts. When Ye Chen held Wang Gang’s punch, it seemed so domineering and easy, but it had actually used the gentle method of receiving the enemy attack and rebounding the power with Ye Chen’s own attack. Of course, I only realized it after a careful observation.”

The path in the mountain was steep and rugged, full of shark rocks and large boulders making the path very hard to transverse.

With a shaking sweaty body, Ye Chen had just ran more than ten miles around the hills before he stopped in front of a wide river.

Boom!

He threw the rock on the ground, then he took off his outer clothes and jumped in the deep, deep river. All of sudden you could see a figure under the water throwing out punches one after another in a quick manner that disturbed the river's flow.

Practicing under the water was hundred times harder than on the ground, the extreme pressure from the depth and speed of the rushing water would squeeze one's body from each direction and caused many people to be frightened for their lives.

Pushing his Qi into his dantian, Ye Chen firmly stood at the bottom of the river which was full of little rocks and mud as he casually threw a punch. With all the running water around him, the power of his punch could only reach about thirty percent from usual.

However, this was exactly what Ye Chen wanted, otherwise there's no point in training under the water anymore.

The river suddenly became cloudy, and the flow of the river began to change and spin like a hurricane. It was almost like as if there was a large monster hiding in the deep, shifting its weight in preparation for the right moment to snake its head out.

In this extreme condition, Ye Chen could feel every bone and every muscles in his body shaking and fighting against the sudden turbulence as he finally managed as he dug his feet into the river bed to find his balance in the high pressure and turbulence.

Losing track of time, Ye Chen ran out of his breath and finally came out of the water.

Gasp! Gasp!

Ye Chen breathed in heavily, he laughed: “Training under the river is so efficient! I wonder how many people know about this method?”

...

The Town of Windy Paths was about ten miles from the Windy Mountain.

On the second floor of the Lucky Coin Restaurant ...

A man was seen stuffing his mouth, grabbing meat slabs with one hand and a bowl of water in the other. Ye Chen slobbered as he tried to sate his starving stomach, going crazy on this big table of delicious dishes, leaving nothing behind.

In the previous life, he would come here once every couple of days because as an outer apprentice in the Sky Cloud Martial School, his meal was cooked and served in a huge pot which was like eating gruel, guaranteeing nutrition and nothing more. The good thing was even though the Town of Windy Paths was not large but full of delicious cuisines.

Plus, Ye Chen also enjoyed listening to the gossip outside the mountains which broadened his scope of the world, preparing him for the future when he leaves the Sky Cloud Martial School .

Nearby, there were a couple of martial artists sitting close to Ye Chen, each of them carried a sword or a blade.

“Have you guys heard about it? Wu Wanshan the Swiftblade lost to a teenage blade artist!”

“Yah, I heard about that, I think that teenager was called Lin Qi or something like that, he is one of the three famous disciples from Northern Snow Academy... His blade is extremely fast and sharp and beat Wu Wanshan in ten moves...”

“No way! Are you joking? Swiftblade has reached the Early Clasp of Yuan Realm, extremely powerful! How could he lose to that kid?”

“Bro, you are totally out of it, everyone’s talking about that fight, how could it be fake? But, now you mentioned it, it is quite scary that Lin Qi who only has reached the Late Condensing Reality Realm was able to defeat Wu Wanshan... I wonder what would happen if he fought against a core apprentice from the Sky Cloud Martial School?”

Ye Chen’s eyes slightly widened as he tried to recall the memories of Wu Wanshan and Lin Qi...

Wu Wanshan didn’t belong to any of the martial school or academies, around thirty years old, self-invented his extremely swift blade art that could slice a drop

of water into five parts in one second, once killed more than forty skilled horse thieves all by himself, could cut a bridge in half at a distance. His reputation of being one of the fastest blade artist!

Lin Qi, one of the three core apprentices in the Northern Snow Academy, started to train his Qi since the age nine and reached the Condensing Reality Realm at thirteen, Mid Condensing Reality Realm at fifteen, and the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm at seventeen. With his excellent talent in blade art, his fighting skill could be said to almost equal with the top apprentice of Northern Snow Academy – Child North Snow.

Both of them were way too strong for the Ye Chen now, but incomparable to Senior Xu Jing. Once he overheard the teacher said that Xu Jing's skills had already reached beyond some of the Inner Court Masters, her genius martial in martial arts was unparalleled. She was one of the most rare geniuses in the history of Yun.

How long will it be until I reach this level? Ye Chen didn't doubt his potential at all because his only disadvantage was that he crossed over so late.

Suddenly, one of the guys said, "Who do you guys think has the most potential among the younger generation of Sky Cloud Martial School, compared to with the other top apprentices from the other four schools?"

"Without a doubt, Fragrant Plum Sword" – the top apprentice of the School of Yun is definitely on the same level of Child North Snow...As for the rest, I personally think the rank 4 core apprentice Jing Jue could potentially make it; he's cold, emotionless, and very experienced."

"Jing Jue is great, but personally I think the rank 3 core apprentice Yao

Xiaofeng is quite impressive as well, he can always defeat people who are way stronger than him, very smart.”

The guy who started this conversation laughed, “All you talked about were the top five core apprentices, if it was before I would probably think the same, but this time I am really excited about core apprentice rank 23 – Xu Jing.”

“How so?” The others wondered, as well as Ye Chen, he didn’t expect them to mention sister Xu Jing.

“Three days ago, I saw her fight against the famous thief ‘Iron Destroyer’ ...”

He hadn’t even finished, the crowd started yammering, “‘Iron Destroyer’ Li Tong is definitely a character! Fraudulent, crafty, and brutal! He has been wanted for more than half a year now, but is still out there safe and sound. I heard that he learned his special Iron Destroyer art from the Rudra<sup>1</sup> Nation and could crumble rocks and break iron, this Xu Jing girl you mentioned shouldn’t be able to compete with this, right?”

“Wrong! Especially in that fight, Xu Jing completely beat Li Tong not leaving him even a chance to fight back. In the end, Li Tong’s arms were broken completely, and he vomited too much blood and died.”

“What? Li Tong has the top skills of Late Condensing Reality Realm and couldn’t even fight back?!”

“It’s not that shocking if you were there to see what happened. You would know how strong and powerful Xu Jing’s punches actually were. Compared to her, Li Tong seemed weak.”

Ye Chen smiled, he was quite familiar with Xu Jing's power. Normally, in power-type martial arts, there were three stages, the first stage was the Gentle Stage, the stage where each movement began to turn from harsh and forceful into a strong flowing gentle movement. The second stage was the Opposite Stage, this was the stage where each movement embodied both the elements of hard and soft into strong and gentle movements. The highest stage was the Unity Stage, where one can no longer distinguish in a movement hard or soft, strong or gentle from one another. Xu Jing had already trained her Monster Executing Fist to the second stage! Although he had only trained for a short time but he had also managed to reached the Opposite Stage in his King Kong fist which he showcased against Wang Gang.

Obviously, the three stages were not that easy to comprehend. For people who did not have much talent, it could take years even decades and still fail to first stage. For example, that Wang Gang had not even completely understood the movements in Breaking Stone Palm, not to even mention the Gentle Stage...

---

[1] Rudra: A Rigvedic deity associated with storms and wind. Shares many traits with the Hindu deity Shiva.

## Chapter 6 – Silent Hills

In a blink of an eye, another month or so had passed by and the Mu Ren Gang challenge was less than a week away.

During this period of time, Ye Chen split his time between his horse stance practice every morning and night, building his physical fitness, and martial art training.

At this point of time, Ye Chen could already lift a three-hundred-pound huge rock over his head with only one hand; and with both hands, he could easily hold thousands of pounds over his head.

Besides all the noticeable improvements in his body, Ye Chen was finally powerful enough to use sword arts more freely and easily in regards of his speed and control. His power had reached a new level, he could slice seven falling leaves, cut through a huge thick tree, and leave four inch gashes on a huge rock, all in just one single move.

It's time to move on to battle skills. Ye Chen realized he already reached his peak, and improvement limited if he kept training. Instead of wasting his time and energy, he might as well try to gain some experience fighting and new techniques so that he could reach his full potential.

However, real battle skills were hard to obtain. Ye Chen was still just a outer disciple who could not go out into the world to risk life and death in battles; even if Ye Chen were on the same realm as an inner disciple, he would still lose after two or three moves. That was the difference between having a life and death experience or not.



Thankfully he did not have to fight with an actual person to experience life and death. There were many demonic beasts in this world for that matter. A demonic beasts could actively or passively train themselves, when the richness of the Demonic Beast Qi inside their body reached a certain level, they would go through a mutation and evolve into the next level.

Since thousands of years ago, the ancient people classified the Demonic Beasts in different ranks. Rank 1 and 2 were comparable to the Mortal Realm; Rank 3 and Rank 4 were comparable to the Condensing Reality Realm; Rank 5 and Rank 6 comparable to Clasp of Yuan Realm; the Demonic Beasts of Rank 6 and higher were extremely rare, only would appear in those deep ancient forests up high in the mountains.

Fighting against a Demonic Beast was not as easy as people would expect, in the contrary, Demonic Beasts are more powerful than human beings. A monster that had hunted countless animals and humans suddenly appeared in front of you, with one look, it would scare and affect you so you could reach only five percent of your actual ability.

With that in mind, Ye Chen decided to go train in the Silent Hills area because there were always some low level demonic beasts around.

Putting his great steel sword down, Ye Chen straightened his clothes and walked out of the yard.

Walking down the mountain, he saw a lot of inner and outer apprentices going up and down the path and thought no matter who you are, if you want to live a good life, you would have to have money. The Ye family that he belonged to had a massive fortune, so in theory he was not poor, but sadly that was not the truth. The Ye family had a population of around a thousand people, six or seven hundred of which were businessmen helping the family business, the rest of the

four or five hundred people put all their effort into practicing martial arts. However, if you wanted to protect your own property, you would have to hire protection which cost a great amount of money, so even his father, the leader of the Ye family, had only fifty thousand silvers in his personal asset, and as the son of the leader, Ye Chen was given an allowance of one hundred silver per month.

One hundred silvers per month couldn't do much, only enough to eat well and dress decently. He couldn't afford to use expensive medical supplements for the training of his body that the core disciples of the family or the school were able to afford.

He climbed down to the bottom of the mountain and after finding the right direction, he sped up.

Around noontime Ye Chen arrived at the entrance of Silent Hills where he started to sight some Rank 1 Demonic Beasts. Normally a Mortal Realm warrior would never dare to come to this kind of dangerous place. Even Ye Chen was quite cautious about his surroundings and kept his hands on his sword at all time, ready to react to any commotion.

Silently stalking forward, the strongest demonic beast Ye Chen had seen was a wounded Rank 2 Scarlet Fire Bird. However, Ye Chen lamented his misfortune that he was unable to hunt flying beasts.

After walking for a while and killed three weak Rank 1 demonic beasts, Ye Chen suddenly stopped and moved all his Qi to his ears to enhance his hearing.

There is a fight over there!

The biggest difference between a normal person and a martial artist was the ability to use Qi. A normal person could have amazing senses but after a point will hit a limit. But a martial artist could manipulate their Qi to enhance their senses. Ye Chen, by using his Qi, could faintly hear clashes of a fight about a mile away and knew exactly which direction the sound was coming from.

Following the sound, Ye Chen rushed there quietly. Pushing back branches, Ye Chen found a forest scene with a human figures and a huge growling demonic beast.

When he was thirty steps away from the battlefield, Ye Chen jumped up onto a big tree to watch the fight from above.

In the woods, there was an emptied grassy field about fifteen meters long. And in that field, there were five teenagers holding weapons in their hands surrounding a huge demonic beast. Its body was about three meters long and looked like a tiger with black shiny hair, panting as its long bloody tongue dripped with purple liquid, its mouth was filled with huge sharp teeth and its claws were sharp and angled, measured about a meter long.

It was a Late Stage Rank 2 Poison Saw-Toothed Tiger, its power was equivalent to a Mortal Realm Rank 10 martial artist. Its teeth carried a deadly poison that, once beaten, would cause your skin would to fester and only cured by the single antidote, otherwise once the poison spread to your heart, even a Condensing Reality Realm martial artist would lose their life.

Ye Chen noticed that the group of teenagers all had a golden loop symbol on their sleeves, identifying them as disciples of a low ranking institution.

The Hall of Golden Light was an institution was also a rank 9 school like the Sky

Cloud Martial School. The leader of the hall, Li Yi was a Middle Ranked Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist who specialized in using the Deadly Golden Loop weaponry. According to the rumors, he used to be an outer disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School, before he leaving to travel to many other countries outside of his native Heavenly Wind Country. Upon returning, he founded the Hall of Golden Light which currently had about five hundred disciples.

The five people attacking the monster were quite lacking, but had great teamwork, a result of spending a lot of time together in many different situations.

A teenaged girl in red, holding a skinny sword of the Mortal Realm Stage Level 5 landed several sword attacks on the beast. By her side, there were twin boys with blades who were very bulky and powerful looking. They continuously shouted and ran around the demonic beast in attempt to focus the attacks on themselves.

Although these three people worked very hard, their attacks were not as effective as the other two in their party.

One of them was an extremely fit young man in black, holding a dangerous looking halberd, the “Verdant Dragon Halberd”. The two-meter-long weapon seemed very heavy. Every time the poisonous saw tooth tiger was attack the others, it would be beaten back by him and left with a bloody wound.

But the one Ye Chen noticed the most was the teenager in blue, he was about eighteen years old, only had a flute around his waist. Weaponless, his attack were actually the most powerful, every causal punch of his would conjure up a sharp black storm which forced the monster to back down.

If Ye Chen was right, the teenager in blue was a Mortal Realm Rank 9 martial artist, and was able to mix his Qi into the air around his palm and forcefully attack people without them noticing. Of course, the power of that attack could not compare to actually pushing Qi outside the body. Otherwise, the demonic beast would be dead already.

The badly wounded monster in front of them was already exhausted, after the poisonous smoke that it futilely blew out was pushed away by black storm from the punch of the teenager in blue, the monster turned around and tried to escape.

“Not a chance!” The teenager in blue moved fast like lightning, without restraint, and hit the side of the monster extremely hard.

Boom!

After one last growl, the monster was thrown like an old cotton bag by that punch. The beast cried pitifully before it died from all of its organs were exploded.

“Very impressive Brother Liu.” the girl in red swiped the sweat off and turned to look at the young man in blue with envy.

The teenager in blue said calmly: “This is not that impressive. In a couple of years you will match this power easily.”

The teenager in black holding the verdant dragon halberd said: “Heh years? I am at the Late Stage Mortal Realm Rank 7, it would only take a couple of months to catch up to you.”

“Mmm.” The man in blue nodded as he didn’t really mind.

The girl in red made a displeased face, as she heard the arrogant statement of the teenager in black.

## Chapter 7 – The Poisonous Saw Tooth Tiger

The twin brothers suddenly laughed brightly as they harvested the demonic beast, “This time we got really lucky! This demonic beast condensed a poisonous pearl core!”

“A poisonous pearl core?” The blue robed young man and black clothed man seemed surprised.

The twin brothers calmly nodded, “Yes, it is. It seems to have been formed only a couple of months ago judging that it is no larger than a walnut.”

A Rank 2 demonic beast could sell for about a thousand silvers. After dividing it five ways, everyone would receive two hundred silvers. However, a pearl core from the demonic beast’s body could sell for one thousand silvers by itself. And even though it was only formed months ago, a pearl the size of a walnut could sell for at least two thousand silvers. This was because the poisonous pearl core came from the Demonic Beast’s dantian which could be used as a medicinal ingredients or used during for training one’s poison arts. What is a pearl core? It was simply the condensation of the demonic beast’s life energy compressing over the ages and richness of Qi in its dantian. The result was a pearl that formed from layer upon layer of energy slowly wrapping the pearl core to become larger and larger.

The red clothed girl stared with big eyes as she reached out to touch that incredible rare black pearl core with her hand before the blue robed young man stopped her immediately, “Little Sister Tao, don’t touch it! Poisonous pearl cores are condensed from the poison from the demonic beasts over many years. It is extremely toxic, it can even melt through iron not to mention what would it do if you touch it!”

“Hmph!” The young girl stuck her tongue out.

The blue robed teenager took out a jade box from his pocket and said: “A wooden box and an iron box would not be able to contain this pearl core, only a jade box could safely seal in the poison.” The boy began to accumulate Qi in his left hand before gently pushing the Qi out to lift the poisonous pearl up in the air without actually touching it, carefully putting it into the jade box.

By the dead beast, the twin brothers had already begun to cut away parts of the demonic beast’s body parts before storing it into a golden silky leather bag.

After everything was done, the elder twin brother frowned: “Elder brother Liu, we spent so much effort to kill this one demonic beast. Back in the cave we saw at least three demonic beasts, one of which was extremely massive.”

The red clothed girl suggested: “Perhaps we would go back and ask for help.”

“What if other people get there first?” The elder twin frowned.

The teenager in black rolled his eyes, “How is that even possible? The Silent Hills are at least a thousand miles long, and with its complex lay out, it’s incredibly rare to find another group.”

The blue robed young man shook his head, “Didn’t you guys notice? The Poison Heart Plant is about to ripen.”

“Hmm? What does that mean?” The red clothed girl was not following.



The young man in black looked a little bit distracted and also a little bit embarrassed as he said: "Once the plant is ready, those poisonous demonic beasts would come out to eat it."

The blue robed young man made up his mind, as he said in a low voice: "We can handle normal Poisonous Sawed-Tooth beasts, but that extremely large one is definitely out of our league so let's give it up! Otherwise there is a huge chance that we would all die."

Everyone fell silent reflecting on those words, it was definitely not worth to lose their life over this.

"How about I tag along?" A bright voice rang out in their direction.

"Who are you?!" The teenager in black spun around brandishing his Verdant Green Halberd posed to attack.

Ye Chen walked to them very slowly "Calm down, calm down. I'm not here to steal anything. I was just walking past when I saw you guys."

The man in black sneered, "Just walking past? Lies! You heard our conversation!"

"Be calm." The blue robed young man gave him an annoyed look as he took a step forward, blocking the three men behind him. He asked: "Who are you, good sir? It seems like we haven't met."

Ye Chen shrugged, “Ye Chen. Outer Disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School. I was out hunting when I heard your fight so I came to have a look. I mean no harm.”

“I see.” The blue robed young man did not doubt Ye Chen. The demonic beast was quite strong, so it was quite probable for others to hear. Plus, Ye Chen belonged to the Sky Cloud Martial School, a higher ranked school than the Hall of Golden Light and it was not appropriate to offend him needlessly.

The young man in black observed Ye Chen carefully, he sarcastically replied, “Did you say you have only reached Mortal Realm Rank 6? How can a weakling help us with anything?”

Ye Chen glanced at him, then said to the blue robed teenager: “If my guess is right, that large demonic beast should be roughly equivalent to an Early Condensing Reality Realm martial artist which could be very hard to deal with, but I have a plan to seal its movements.”

“Oh? What’s that?” The red clothed girl seemed be interested.

Ye Chen knew that he would not be able convince them if he did not prove at least some of his ability, so he unsheathed his great steel sword. Seeing him reaching for his sword, they all narrowed their eyes as they tightened their grips on their weapons in case he suddenly decided to attack them. Who could tell one’s intention when faced with a poisonous pearl worth at least two thousand silvers.

Ye Chen took a deep breath as he turned around to face a large tree, before suddenly stabbing his sword towards the tree.

Piu!

The tree's trunk was easily the width of two grown men, but it easily became a piece of soft tofu after being stabbed through without any restraint.

The blue robed young man looked surprised, he said quietly, "Sword Light Coagulation! He can condense the sword light into a single point, what skill!"

A very small percent of Mortal Realm martial artist were able to comprehend the mysteries of the sword and form sword light. To be in the Mortal Realm and comprehend Sword Light Coagulation was unheard of! The blue robed young man shook his head in defeat as he witnessed Ye Chen achieve Coagulation, he couldn't help but admire him. Definitely a Sky Cloud Disciple, no doubt about it he thought.

Ye Chen turned around and said: "Poisonous Sawed Tooth Tigers are quite dangerous to kill due their extremely swift movements paired with their high defense. But if we could break through their armor and cripple one of its legs, then we can take it down."

The competitive young man in black sneered: "Hah, words are cheap. You think demonic beasts are trees? They won't wait for you there to slowly cut off their legs"

Ye Chen grinned, as he once again waved his sword a couple of times.

Shing!

The sword was back in its scabbard.

When the teenager in black was just about to sneer again, a couple of leaves drifting above Ye Chen's head suddenly split in half, then again into four pieces, each with smooth edges!

Everyone gasped, being able to do this without even looking was extremely high skill, even the masters in the Hall of Golden Light couldn't do it.

The blue robed young man took a deep breath, he smiled, "I am Liu Tao, an outer disciple in the Hall of Golden Light. This fellow in black here is Wang Haichuan. And these two twins are Yang Wen and Yang Wu. And this is junior sister Tao Qing." Liu Tao pointed at the four people as he introduced them, finally confident of Ye Chen's abilities.

Ye Chen replied submissively, "Nice to meet you guys."

Tao Jing chuckled: "Are all the outer disciples in the Sky Cloud Martial School this strong?"

Wang Haichuan replied quietly, "Preposterous..."

...

In the forest, a slope could be seen by itself, it was about ten meters high and more than a mile in length.

"Brother Ye, about a hundred steps further and you will see the cave. If nothing has changed, there should be two Poisonous Sawed-Tooth Tigers

guarding out front and the huge one would be inside.”

Those five people had all trained their movement skills extensively and could walk without any sounds at all, like a group of ghosts.

Ye Chen nodded as he whispered: “Brother Liu, do you have a plan on how to draw one out?”

Liu Tao smiled, “Those Poisonous Sawed-Tooth Tigers love to eat poisonous plants. I have five harvested poisonous scorpion plants, and although they are not as exquisite as the Poison Heart Plant, it should work. In fact that’s how we lured the previous beast out before.”

Shortly after, the group could see the dark cave and the two demonic beasts about ten meters away. They all sucked in their breath and held it for a moment at the sight.

With everyone nervously staring, Liu Tao took out a long jade box from his pocket and opened it. Inside was full of purple plants that had nine leaves each that smelled somewhat fishy. It was the poisonous scorpion plants!

Holding them in his hand, Liu Tao explained: “This poisonous scorpion plant smell spreads very quickly. Once a demonic beast catches a whiff of it, we will have to immediately depart, otherwise we risk being swarmed by other demonic beasts.”

As Liu Tao was talking, the demonic beast near them suddenly raised its head, flaring its nostril.

“Its coming!” Tao Qing eyes gleamed in excitement as his body tensed for

action.

It was almost as if they were playing a game, when the demonic beast took ten steps forward, they took thirty steps back; then the demonic beast walked forward thirty steps, they backed out another hundred steps.

## Chapter 8 – The Spider King Plant

Looking at the two Poison Sawed Tooth Tiger's corpses on the ground, Liu Tao took a deep breath, "One last demonic beast to go, hopefully everything will go well."

Ye Chen relaxedly replied, "No worries, everything will be alright."

In the battles before, the red clothed girl Tao Qing did not contribute much because Ye Chen was just way dominating with his sword. With overeager face, she asked, "What kind of sword arts are you training in and how did you train your sword arts? Could you perhaps teach me?"

Liu Tao frowned because of his junior sister Tao's forthrightness, and said immediately: "Don't be ridiculous Sister Tao, how could sword arts be taught?" In the various kingdoms, manuals and skills were very strictly regulated, even teachers would not teach everything to the apprentices, not to mention two strangers who just met.

However, they did not expect Ye Chen's answer. "Actually, there really isn't much to teach. If you practice the basic sword movements a hundred times a day, you will see the same improvements I had in a month."

"Really?" Tao Qing didn't believe him.

Ye Chen gave her a smile, did not explain.

In the cave, that Poisonous Sawed Tooth Tiger was shockingly huge, even the

size of its head was as big as a water tank. Its huge bright eyes locked onto the intruders with a bloody murderous intent.

“Begin!” The blue robed Liu Tao ran in, throwing four palm movements towards the monster. Palm lights as bright as the snow quickly followed. These beams of force light convulsed midair as they poured irresistibly out like the ocean water and landed on the beast’s body. The monster grunted with pain from Liu Tao’s attack. The beast snorted in anger at being forced to retreat, as it suddenly belched out of its mouth a large cloud of purple poisonous smoke sparking with flames.

Liu Tao eyes widened as he was caught off guard, he immediately accumulated all the Qi in his body into his hands. Slowly, a black screen of light condensed in front of his hands. The purple poisonous smoke roiled and exploded once it came into contact the black light. Liu Tao grunted as he was pushed back by the concussive force of the explosion, his hands started to numb. Seeing this, the rest of the group stood stock still frightened before turning to run out as quickly as they could.

At that moment, Ye Chen jumped out. His great steel sword already in mid swing towards the monster’s still open mouth. The tip of his sword slowly cutting open the monster’s head as easy as cutting a piece of tofu.

The monster never expected such a sharp sword, as it suddenly realized the danger, it tried to retreat quickly but was too late. Its head tilted, it stopped breathing and died.

“It died?” When Liu Tao saw Ye Chen didn’t follow the plan of stopping its movement by attacking its leg, he thought Ye Chen must have forgotten about it. But he truly did not expect with just one sword movement of Ye Chen would have slain the monster. How ridiculous was Ye Chen!



Shook the liquid off the sword, Ye Chen slowly sheathed his sword and said: “Thank you. When the monster ejected that poisonous cloud, it delayed for a second, and in addition, it had had huge inherent flaw. In its mouth, there is a place the size of a cup lid which connects directly to the brain that is easily pierced.”

The rest of the group had already came back after seeing the death of the giant demonic beast. The twin brother Ye Wu was impressed, “That really is quite amazing that you could find the deadly flaw after killing just two poisonous saw tooth monsters.”

Ye Chen replied, “A swordsman must be able to find the flaw.”

“Haha... well, it doesn’t matter, we have killed all of the poisonous saw tooth tigers now.” Tao Qing chuckled.

After harvesting the demonic beast, they began to explore the cave. The cave itself was not that deep, only measuring about thirty meters. With a torch in his hand, Liu Tao gasped at what he saw, “it is not Poison Heart Plant, it is a Spider King Plant!”

“What? The Spider King plant? Brother Liu, are you sure about this?” Yang Wen turned in surprise.

Liu Tao confirmed: “The Poison Heart plant is supposed to be a deep purple color like an orchid. But the Spider King plant is black, the tip of each leaves like a leg of a poisonous spider. I am sure!”

After hearing Liu Tao, even Ye Chen who was usually quite calm couldn't help his heartbeat quicken. Although the Poison Heart plant was very valuable and was quite helpful for some poison artists with their trainings as a rare medicinal ingredient, it could only be sold for about two to three thousand silvers. In comparison, the Spider King plant was much more rare, mere Mortal Realm practitioners like them would not usually be able to see such a plant. Not only was it a crucial ingredient to many miracle medicines or extremely beneficial to poison art training. But most importantly, there was a poison art movement called "Thousand Spiders Palm" which required the Spider King plant in order to master it. If any poison artists knew they had it, they wouldn't hesitate to hand over at least ten thousand silvers, and of course, they were more likely to kill for it.

Tao Qing said: "Brother Liu, here is too dark, I cannot see anything."

"Right, let's go outside."

Liu Tao carefully dug out the Spider King plant and walked out of the cave.

In the brighter environment, the group finally saw the Spider King plant for the first time.

The plant was about seven inches tall, with seven leaves in total, its stalk was ink black and faintly reflected the light. On the tip of the plant, there was something looked like a black spider sitting in wait there. If you just took a glance at it, you would not be able to tell if it was alive or not.

"This is the Spider King? It's so creepy!" The twin brothers commented.

Liu Tao seemed to remember something, "When I joined the Hall of Golden Light, I was lucky to witness that the eldest master receive a Spider King Plant

just like this one, I never expected that I would hold one myself one day.”

Wang Haichuan stared at the plant and licked his lips, said: “One Spider King plant could sell for at least ten thousand silvers, split between the six of us is one thousand six hundred and sixty-six silvers each which is more than half of my yearly income.”

The statement shook Liu Tao out of his reverie as he turned and said to Ye Chen: “Brother Ye, we are in different martial schools and may be quite difficult to contact you not to mention it would take a while to sell the materials from the poisonous saw tooth tiger and the plant, how about I just give you your share of the money now?”

Ye Chen was actually not interested in the Spider King plant and readily agreed with Liu Tao’s idea.

“Great, those two normal poisonous saw tooth tigers are valued about two thousand silvers, that huge one would value one thousand and five hundred silvers, plus another ten thousand silvers for the Spider King plant, equals thirteen thousand five hundred silvers, after splitting between the six of us would be two thousand two hundred and fifty silvers which is two hundred and twenty five gold. Here is an one hundred gold note and a ten gold note for you. Brother Wang, Brother Yang and Sister Yao, you guys get the rest of the money for Brother Ye now.”

The rest of the group spent a lot of effort but they were still short of fifty gold, they had to use some of the body parts from the monsters instead.

Putting away all the money and the materials, Ye Chen suddenly heard something, whispered: “We have companies.”

Liu Tao put away the jade box which contained the Spider King plant, he yelled: "I am Liu Tao, apprentice of the Hall of Golden Light, reveal yourselves please."

"Haha, the Hall of Golden Light, that the small infamous institution?" There were noises coming from the bushes, a bunch of muscular men came out of the forest, the leader looked very ugly with a small half of his scalp missing, extremely horrifying.

"Bullshit!" Wang Haichuan was mad.

The ugly man suddenly looked even more scary, full of murderous vibe.

Liu Tao knew they didn't come in peace, they were probably a group of wanted criminals, his face didn't look so good at this moment, "How could we help you?"

"Haha, we are a bit tight with money lately, it would be nice if you guys would show us some respect, if you know what I mean."

Liu Tao frowned, "we don't have much money on us, but we could give you the demonic beast body, which should be worth few thousand silvers!" He couldn't be sure about their cultivation levels, but if he was right, they would be at least Mortal Realm Rank 10. If they were to fight, besides him, no one will survive, not even Ye Chen.

The ugly man was furious, "Are you deaf or blind? Do we look like beggars? A few thousand silvers!? Leave the Spider King plant and get out of here now before I change my mind! Oh right, and that little girl too, I need something to relieve my anger."

The men started laugh.

Yao Qing looked pale, her teeth were biting the lower lips.

Liu Tao tried to restrain his anger: “Good sir, you must be joking, right?”

“Good Sir? Do I look like I am joking? I am counting to ten, if you don’t do what I ask, don’t blame me for what happens next.” The ugly man grabbed the sword on his back.

## Chapter 9 – Fighting Back

Wang Haichuan was furious, his face immediately reddened: “Cut the bullshit out! If you want to fight, then let’s fight!”

The ugly man sneered: “It is not like I hate you guys, but if I decide to fight, none of you will be able leave with your lives. Of course, I will give you time to change your mind...ten, nine...”

Liu Tao stopped smiling, his voice sounded emotionless and cold: “Sir...are you really going to do this?”

“Five, four....” The ugly man didn’t reply, instead he looked at the group as if they were already corpses.

Ye Chen and Liu Tao shared a look, they understood what they had to do.

“Three! Fuck it, kill them!” He hadn’t even finished his sentence before the ugly scarred man had already took out his huge blade and jumped towards the group.

The group was startled as their expectation was that the enemy would count to one then attack. But that was exactly the bandit’s underhanded trick that worked every time because people were always caught off guard by it. The scarred man, the evil leader of the bandits was called Maq Wu, a wanted criminal from another city. He used to be a guard in a small family and he had fallen for the beauty of his young female master. One night, instead of doing his job and keeping her safe, he raped and killed her.

The group was badly startled from the surprise attack and only Ye Chen was prepared. It was nothing to do with experiences, because he didn't have any. It was only because he sensed Maq Wu's intentions through the bandit's small shift in position in preparation to spring while counting.

Accumulating all his Qi to its maximum, Ye Chen tilted his body, holding his sword in both hands, he began to trace the eighth movement of Sky Fall Sword Art "Walking On A River of Clouds".

Maq Wu was surprised and a little bit unprepared for any kind of reaction, he definitely did not expect that this group of youngsters would be resist him at all.

Suddenly, sparks lit up as bright as the fire from the collision. Ye Chen's great steel sword slightly shifted and slid pass Maq Wu's sword.

Ting! Shiiing!

With a burst of the sparks, Maq Wu's waist was scratched with a sword cut, a little bit of blood slowly leaked out from the shallow cut.

Everyone who witnessed this just could not believe their own eyes: A Mortal Realm Rank 6 warrior had wounded a Mortal Realm Rank 10 warrior with just one movement. It was just impossible.

No one would know that Ye Chen himself was actually a little bit disappointed.

If Maq Wu didn't react as fast as he did, my movement would definitely have injured him badly; or, if his cultivation was not as high as it was, his sword would not be resist my attack, and the sword mark would be at least one-inch-deep

according to its effect when you had master the movement of Sky Fall. But still, I guess it's pretty good that you don't need to have a higher cultivation to be able to defeat your opponent.

"It was right not to underestimate a Mortal Realm Rank 10 martial artist..." Ye Chen whispered to himself. Seeing his first attack failed to create a huge impact, Ye Chen delivered his second attack – the ninth movement of Skyfall "Shining in the Dark".

All of the sudden, a sword light as dark as a river at night speckled with light like the moon reflecting off the river started to pour out from the sword, it seemed like the surrounding air had turned into a tangible liquid, like a river rushing under a dark sky that was too deep to tell.

"Damn, this brat is actually quite skilled!"

Maq Wu had a horrible look on his face. His sword raised like it was about to slice the sky, the sword flashed as it sliced towards the center of Ye Chen's sword light like a lighting. Maq Wu wanted to destroy Ye Chen's sword light momentum, otherwise he knew he would be in trouble.

Swish!

His attack was energetic and powerful but surprisingly failed to hit its target. Maq Wu was shocked, his sword cut through the sword light but was as useless as trying to stop a river's flow with a sword slash. Maq Wu immediately jumped back, hurriedly retreating from his opponent.

Ye Chen eyes flash as he expected Maq Wu's retreat and pushed his legs as he



ran after Maq Wu. Ye Chen's sword flashed as he changed his sword movement, it bounced back before his chest before rising up into the air then flowing down from above like an indomitable mountain. It was the powerful Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords!

Maq Wu's eyes flashed with murderous intent, he brandished his left hand full of Qi in attempts to push back Ye Chen's fatal attack, he yelled: "Damn brat, go to hell!"

Boom!

A Mortal Realm Rank 10 warrior was not so easy to kill. A strong wind exploded from the bandit's hand like a hurricane, blowing away Ye Chen's body.

Ye Chen's body flew through the air before lightly landed like nothing happened, as if his body was as light as a feather. Ye Chen crinkled his brow as he lifted his sword in movement that released an attack with a horrifying momentum like a huge mountain just broke down.

Chop!

The tip of Ye Chen's sword went through Maq Wu's neck and came out from the back of his scalp. It all just happened so quickly and smoothly.

A martial artist who had almost reached the Condensing Reality Realm was killed by one simple sword movement, as easy as having tea and eating lunch. Ye Chen grinned as he finally understood his own power level and fighting skills and best of all, he realized just exactly how powerful the Lone Peak of Thirteen Mountains was.

Pulling the sword out and shaking off the blood on it, Ye Chen tried not to think about the fact that he just killed a person. He looked around and found the two groups were already fighting against each other: Eight burly men were attacking Liu Tao and the group in a circle. The sounds of weapons colliding against each other were continuous and seemingly endless.

“Piss off!”, said Liu Tao who had the highest power level among the group. He threw a couple of punches that rolled in a row and four burly men were blown away.

However, one of them had only been pushed back three steps, and even though the clothing over his chests were all ripped apart, but he wasn’t hurt at all.

Seeing that, Liu Tao’s pupil narrowed, “...Armor Guard Arts!”

The guy had a square face and a huge mouth. Standing at two meters tall, his back was always hunched. His massive chest muscles were like two high mountains raised up from the ground and strong like iron. It also seemed to flash a vague dark navy color, nowhere close to a normal human body.

“Haha, I specialize in the Iron Shirt martial arts. Years and years of rubbing and soaking in medicinal alcohol everyday caused my skin and bones to be as tough as bronze and iron. As long as I still have my Qi, I am invincible!”

“Die!”

It was from Wang Haichuan. He waved his Verdant Dragon Halberd around in a

circle to force back those people who were attacking him. Then, he turned his body the other way and stabbed his sword towards the opponent.

The giant man dared not to risk his life, he knew no matter how well he mastered the Iron Shirt, his body would never become as strong as actual iron. Even if he could protect himself from normal blunt blows, but he would suffer injuries and die from any sharp weaponry. And with Wang Haichuan's powerful sword movements and his die-hard attitude, his sword could cut through even an iron armor.

With his hands put together, the giant man caught the Verdant Dragon Halberd at once and would not let it move an inch.

Liu Tao saw the open opportunity and jumped behind the giant man, his palm gently pressed against his back.

Thud!

A sound that was like an iron hammer hitting a piece of thin leather rung out and you could see there were drops of blood leaking out the corner of the giant man's mouth. And if you look closer there was also a slight bloody bruise on his chest.

In that moment, two ferocious men jumped forward and attacked Liu Tao.

Liu Tao saw them coming but he realized that he was stuck in a powerless situation. Although his attack wounded that giant man, he couldn't move his arms to defend himself because they had gone numb from the rebounding force from his attack.

Seeing his friend in need, Wang Haichuan felt powerless as he was being crazily attacked by the men whom he had wounded before. He was forced to retreat step by step, barely dodging their attack.

Only Yao Qing and the twin brothers seemed to do be fine as they only had one opponent each.

Liu Tao eyes dimmed as he thought his death had arrived when a bright dazzling sword light suddenly appeared. It twisted twice in the air, and suddenly two head fell on the floor as blood started pouring out from their neck. Then, their bodies fell back and hit the ground.

After his successful attack, Ye Chen didn't stop at all. Using Skyfall movement "The Search for Opportunity", he stabbed another man in the chest which saved Wang Haichuan from his predicament.

"Thanks!", gratefully said Liu Tao who felt like he had escaped from hell's gate. His face still looked a little bit pale from before.

Ye Chen nodded, "It can wait. Let's kill them all first."

Actually, after Maq Wu's death, the men's fate had already been decided, it was just a matter of time.

Shortly after, other than the man with the Iron Shirt art, the rest were all dead; And on Ye Chen's side, besides Liu Tao and himself, the rest were all wounded more or less.

“Where do you think you are going?” Wang Haichuan sensed that the giant man planned to escape, with a sharp sound, he threw out his two-meter Verdant Dragon Halberd at him.

Swoosh!

The giant, experienced man tilted his body and avoided the halberd by inches.

However, he couldn't run away from his fate even if he tried. Ye Chen waved his sword smoothly, and with one sword move, the Iron Shirt defense gave way. The sword slid easily into the chest of the giant man and back out leaving a giant bloody hole.

## Chapter 10 – Body Refining Ointment

The crisis was finally finished. Liu Tao and the rest of the group let out a large sigh and finally relaxed from all the tension. Slowly they began to pale as they were aghast when they realized Ye Chen just killed a Mortal Realm Rank 10 warrior and an martial artist trained in Iron Shirt Armor Guard all by himself.

They finally realized just how strong that man really was, even the No.1 outer disciple in the Hall of Golden Light could replicate such feats; even those who had been just promoted to inner disciples probably could not do it, and even if they managed to do it, it would have been impossible to be uninjured after fighting such opposition. But Ye Chen, an outer disciple, had just done all that.

“Brother Ye, I have never truly admired anyone before, but today, I admire you!” Liu Tao said seriously.

Ye Chen wordlessly smiled.

The random encounter with bandits had brought them an extra income of about three thousand silvers. Divided evenly, everyone received about five hundred silvers which slightly compensated those life-threatening fights.

“Well I guess this is where I part ways.” With more than enough silvers, Ye Chen didn’t want to continue with adventuring with a large group and decided to go to the Silent Hills by himself to practice his battle skills.

Liu Tao said: “Alright, we also plan to head to our hall. Take care of yourself.”

They were all about to leave, Tao Qing just could not help herself anymore and said: “Ye Chen! Remember to visit us!”

Ye Chen nodded, “If I have time, I shall see.”

Soon, the group disappeared in Ye Chen’s sight. Ye Chen thought, I have only been adventuring for so long yet I had already gained two thousand seven hundred silvers. With this amount, I can afford to buy some expensive medicine to condition my body. Sadly I will have to pass on being able to buy those essence stones for training Qi which cost about ten thousand silvers each, I could not even afford half of a stone...

Despite all that, what surprised Ye Chen the most was that it was actually his first time killing someone, but he actually did not feel much reaction to it... Maybe it was something to do with the previous owner or our fused soul power?

Shaking his head, Ye Chen really could not figure it out.

The Silent Hills covered about a thousand miles in which lived countless demonic beasts. As far as Ye Chen knew, in the outer range of about hundred miles, only rank 1 and rank 2 beasts were found, the chance of encountering a rank 3 beast were really low. That relatively bigger poisonous saw tooth tiger was actually not a true rank 3 monster, it could only be counted as a rank 2 demonic beast that was half a step into rank 3. However, past the outer range, was the inner range of about 200 to 500 miles which was labeled as the danger zone, demonic beasts rank 3 to rank 5 could appear any time, and with Ye Chen’s current power level, anyone of those beasts would kill him instantly.

Beyond 500 miles was the forbidden zone. About ten years ago, a large group of masters were sent to retrieve some rare valuable medicines. Unfortunately

within the forbidden zone, they had encountered the rank 7 beast – Ghost Faced Bull, and among the hundreds of people had been gathered, only one person had escaped and made it out, but sadly he too died a few days afterwards. His death was because there was too much residue energy from the demonic beast left in his body and caused him to go crazy which killed him eventually. After that incident, no one dared to even step foot in it.

Over next ten miles, Ye Chen killed three beasts, two rank 1 beast and one rank 2 beast. After gathering the valuable parts of the demonic beasts, Ye Chen stopped venturing deeper into the woods and started to walk parallel to the border of the danger zone so that he would not have to face any demonic beast above Rank 2.

...

Time went by quickly. On the third day, carrying a huge leather bag, Ye Chen headed back to the Windy Town.

The Panacea Pavilion was the only drug store in Windy Town, it was neither big nor fancy, but wealth wise, they were definitely number one.

Because, in this world, the richest people were warriors who spent most of their money without abandon on medicine or elixirs for training. For them, money meant nothing to them, they could always make more, but the opportunity to improve their cultivation was extremely rare.

Soon after walking into the Panacea Pavilion, Ye Chen began to frown.

The store was crowded with people, most of them were warriors loaded with



gear and well dressed young masters from rich families. But there were about one or two people that Ye Chen could not see their cultivation which signified that they should be at least at the Condensing Reality Realm.

He walked up and put a huge bag of beast parts onto the counter.

“Hey, I am selling demonic beast parts.”

The shopkeeper was an elder wearing a black robe trimmed in gold. With a calm and kindly countenance, he walked up to Ye Chen and opened the leather bag. As he was counting the parts, he calculated the prices as well, “Poisonous Sawed Tooth Tiger parts valued five hundred and twenty silvers, Bald Tail Wolf parts valued eighty-five silvers, Mad Bull parts valued three hundred and eighty silvers, ... in total it was one thousand six hundred and fifty silvers.”

Ye Chen said, “Please have changed them all into golden notes.” The so-called golden notes were exactly like the silver, it could be taken into bank and changed into gold or it could be used directly as a currency. The lowest note was valued at five silvers, and the highest was ten thousand silvers, the service fee were three percent of the whole amount, which means if you put one hundred silvers into the bank, you could only take out ninety-seven silvers.

The banks that issued the currency also guaranteed to never go bankrupt making their notes worth the amount printed on it. There was a saying saying, ‘Even if the Windy Nation was destroyed one day, the Heaven Bank would still stand there in the ruins’ in response to the reliability of the golden note. Heaven Bank was a super bank that spanned ten nations, it had countless powerful parties secretly protecting it which included the nation itself.

Asking the workers to put away the beast parts, the shopkeeper opened the

safe and took out a couple of golden notes, and laid them all out neatly on the counter.

“Here is one hundred and sixty-five gold, please verify the total.”

Ye Chen took a glance and nodded. Then his focus shifted and landed on the product shelf next to him.

Working in the sales industry, required great observation skills of potential buyers, the elder smiled and said: “Young warrior, is there anything else I may assist you in?”

Ye Chen replied: “I need something to boost my body strength, could you please give me some recommendations?”

“No need, let me get you a list of body boosting medicine that summarizes the effect of each medicine and the price each one.”

“Sure.”

The shopkeeper handed over the list then went back to his business, leaving Ye Chen with one very thick piece of paper in his hand.

Bone Boosting Pellet

Blood Patterned Tiger and snake’s pure blood

Five thousand silver per pellet.

Bull Beast Power Boosting Pellet

Mad Bull’s blood and Training Yuan plants

Three thousand and five hundred silver per pellet.

Flying Swallow Pellet

Flying Swallow liver and three different herbs

Two thousand silver per pellet.

...

After reading for a long time, Ye Chen shook his head. These body boosting medicine are way too expensive, they cost least two to three thousand silvers. Counting everything I own, I could only afford one bone boosting pellet, which only lasts three days which is not ideal for use in a long period training.

With all those thoughts in his mind, Ye Chen started to envy those rich young masters from large families. They received the best training from the time they were born and ate expensive cultivation medicine like candy. After few years of this, the money spent on them could probably fill up a house, of course they will have rapid improvements! Of course with all those medicine, you could probably become a normal master at a martial school, but it would be extremely difficult to reach those higher levels.

Ye Chen kept reading, when he almost reached the bottom of the list, suddenly, his eyes were lit up. Yes, there it is!

## Body Boosting Ointment

Three Suns plant, cow oil, iron wood juice and six other ingredients

One hundred silver per bottle.

This is it! Let out a breath, Ye Chen lift up his head and called out to the staff member that was walking past, “Could you give me thirty bottles of Body Boosting Ointment?”

“Yes, sir! Coming right up.”

Thirty bottles of the Body Boosting Ointment filled up a wooden box, Ye Chen paid for it and carried it out of the Panacea Pavilion.

## Chapter 11 – The Number One Outer Disciple

Whoosh... whoosh...whoosh...

In a little square courtyard, a human figure was seen practicing fist arts on a wooden post while seated in a horse stance. A wind was forcefully brought out by the powerful punches, blowing the dust around like a little tornado.

“Hea!”

After one movement, the punches suddenly got stronger. Two punches in a row had landed on the huge waist-sized post before a sudden sound. Snap! The post could not handle the force of the punches, and snapped in two at the middle, the top part was blown at least seven meters into the air, before breaking apart into shreds.

“Finally! The Unity Stage!”

With one last day before the Mu Ren Gang competition, the idea of slacking off never occurred to Ye Chen, as he focused on training his King Kong Fist with all his heart. He could feel and combine the power coming from every inch of his body which created a higher level of explosive power which was also why he could master the King Kong Fist to its highest stage.

The person who created this King Kong Fist manual probably had not mastered it to the Unity Stage, so I am definitely better in that regards; however, I could never invent my own style of martial art like he did at this moment so I am inferior in that regard.

Ye Chen laughed and shook his head as he walked towards the stone table nearby.

On that round stone table, there was a white china jar with a red wooden plug on top. That was exactly that body boosting ointment he bought before.

Pop!

He unplugged the bottle and turned it upside down, a milky yellow colored liquid slowly dripped onto his palm releasing a strong pleasant medicinal scent.

Taking off his clothes, Ye Chen slowly rubbed the ointment over his whole body.

“Ah...so relaxing...” Shortly after, Ye Chen could feel a burning sensation that slowly soaked into skin then into his muscle, blood and bones. It almost felt like there were ants crawling into his body, itchy, and a bit tingly.

Looking down, he could see that his body was outlined with muscles like a furious cheetah, a streamline body shape that looked extremely powerful that did not resemble a fourteen years old boy in anyway. But compared to Xu Jing’s extremely fit body that was able to explosively burst forth, Ye Chen was still miles away.

After soaking for a bit longer, Ye Chen got up, put on his clothes and picked up his great steel sword. After walking out of the yard, he walked towards the message center on the west side of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

The message center was where the Sky Cloud Martial School announced big



news, and the ceremony of Mu Ren Gang contest would be announced here tomorrow as well. It was quite useful, especially for those new disciples who had no idea what was happening yet, like Ye Chen when he first started.

In fact, Ye Chen did not really have to be there, because the customs for the Mu Ren Gang contest had not changed for a long while and Ye Chen knew everything that he needed to know. However, he was not the old Ye Chen anymore and realized that he could not just brainlessly follow instructions anymore, he had to have everything under control and understand all the details before the event because sometimes it was the detail that made all the difference.

Plus with only one day to go, the message center must be full of people, making it a good opportunity to see what would he be up against.

After observing the crowd, Ye Chen realized that he did not have any real friends in the two years he spent in Sky Cloud Martial School.

He forced a smile. Watching people talking and laughing together, Ye Chen couldn't help but envy those outer disciples.

Finally arrived in the message center, in front of Ye Chen was a three-hundred-meter squared marble plaza. And at the entrance of the plaza, there was a huge wall standing there on which there was a large piece of paper with black ink writings "The Challenge of Mu Ren Gang" written on it.

Following the crowd, Ye Chen entered the plaza, his ears filled with all sorts of sounds. "The champion of the Mu Ren Gang challenge last year was the number one outer disciple Wu Zongming, I wonder who would win this year?"

“I think that it will still be Wu Zongming, no one knows how much had he improved.”

“That makes sense. But I think the genius outer disciple – Zhang Haoran would win!”

“Zhang Haoran! That thirteen-year-old rare genius who had already reached the Mortal Realm Rank 10!”

“That’s the one! I heard that when he joined the Sky Cloud Martial School at the age of twelve, he had already reached the Mortal Realm Stage 7. And within a year, he has already jumped from rank 7 to rank 10, what an incredible speed!”

One man sneered: “No matter how genius is that Zhang Haoran, he had only reached the Mortal Realm Stage 10. Did you guys forget? Wu Zongming had already reached the same level half a year ago, and right now he is probably one step away from the Condensing Reality Realm.”

“Haha, ‘one step away’? Didn’t you mean to say, he already has failed to breakthrough. Otherwise instead of ‘one step away’ it would be he is a Condensing Reality Realm cultivator.” The person who made the speech had a squared face and thin lips, looking extremely evil.

“How dare you to insult Wu Zongming?” The outer disciple who defended Wu Zongming said angrily.

The guy with the squared face wouldn’t back down, “I know you are a friend of Wu Zongming, but I am not, besides I only have stated the fact. Ask anyone, is what I said false?”

“Hmph, what did you say?”

Out of nowhere, there was a bright voice, then a powerful aura suddenly appeared like a tornado.

Everyone turned towards the new speaker. Just ten steps away was a teenager in blue with a long sword on his back standing there, staring at the people who had unknowingly mocked him.

It was the number one outer disciple – Wu Zongming.

Ye Chen he stood to the side observing with interest as he waited for the drama to unfold.

The square-faced apprentice who just insulted Wu Zongming, frightened by his strong aura stammered, “I...I... Isn’t the thing I said...the truth?”

Wu Zongming smiled cheekily, “You know what kind of people I hate the most? Cowards. Cowards who only will have the balls to say stuff behind people’s back. Now I offer you a chance of redemption: if you could take a punch of mine, I would let everything go. Do you dare?”

One punch! The square-faced apprentice thought. My power level is at Mortal Realm Rank 8, with two ranks between us, taking a punch should not be too bad, a small wound at most, but if I refuse this offer, then I really will be the coward, I will be the butt of people’s joke forever!

“Okay! One punch it is! What’s there to be afraid?”

He arched his back as he lifted his his right arm, his clothing started to whip back and forth even though there was no wind, a clear sign of the man gathering all his Qi to his right arm.

“This is the beginning of the Little Yasha Palm!” Someone recognized the movement, couldn’t help but yelled it out.

The square-faced apprentice smiled complacently. Little Yasha Palm was a top ranked mortal realm martial art. Normally with his as an outer disciple, he would never be able to obtain this, but his father was an elder of outer disciples at the Sky Cloud Martial School, he was able to get any kind of martial arts.

With the Little Yasha Palm, he was confident that he could handle Wu Zongming’s punch, and secretly hoped that with this conflict, he would gain some fame.

Wu Zongming looked the same, didn’t seem to be affected by the commotion from the crowd and said quietly: “Ready?”

“Anytime.”

Everyone in the crowd held their breath, staring at those two without any distraction. The number one disciple versus a Mortal Realm Rank 8 cultivator, although they would only attack once, but from the brief contact, they should be able to see part of their actual power, and even if they couldn’t tell the difference, it was still be worthwhile to just be able to witness such an event.

## Chapter 12 – Genius vs Genius

Wu Zongming stared and laughed at the other disciple gathering his Qi. Wu Zongming slowly walked towards that square-faced apprentice without a sign of Qi gathering.

Ten, nine, eight, ... five more steps to go!

Surprisingly, it was not Wu Zongming that attacked first, but the square-faced apprentice. His legs bounced up from the ground as he took a huge step, his hanging right arm drew a strange curve in the air to attack Wu Zongming from below.

Poonn!

With an air breaking sound, there was a vague dark colored light around that square-faced apprentice's right hand signifying that his Qi was about to break out his body.

"Hmph. Useless!"

Wu Zongming yelled in a low voice as he thrust one of his palm at that square-faced apprentice's right hand.

Boom!

The square-faced apprentice was sent flying with both of his feet up in the air to exactly where he started from and had to back up for another ten steps,

almost falling on the ground.

Gahg! Spitting out a huge chunk of clotted blood, the square-faced apprentice pointed at Wu Zongming, “You, you...” He only managed to squeeze out one word before he passed out.

All of the sudden, the plaza was filled with clamor.

Everyone knew that the square-faced apprentice could not match up to Wu Zongming, but no one actually expected that the gap between the two was that large, especially since Wu Zongming did not even use any martial art or Qi, he only used the most basic movement of a palm thrust. Everyone could sigh in amazement at the power of the number one outer disciple.

Unlike the rest of the crowd, Ye Chen had his own opinion. The gap between Mortal Realm Rank 8 and Rank 10 should not be this big, plus that square-faced apprentice used a top ranking Mortal Realm martial art – Little Yasha Palm which boosted his power level to the threshold of Mortal Realm Stage 10. Even if he is not as good as Wu Zongming, it is highly unlikely for him to pass out. There must be another reason.

If Ye Chen guessed right, the martial art Wu Zongming utilized was much higher ranked than that square-faced apprentice, in addition, his Qi controlling skills was much, much higher than the other disciple as well.

Ye Chen could not help but be forced to smile.

The world he lived in was called the Land of Souls, its land covered countless miles without any borders. No one knew how big it actually was nor how many

people or demonic beasts that lived in it. But only one thing was certain. It was a world filled with martial arts and warriors.

On this land, there were only two things that mattered to warriors: skills and movements.

However, compared to skills, the movements were few times more important.

A low rank Mortal Realm movement could be even more valuable than a middle rank Mortal Realm skill.

If a warrior could master a new skill, it could unleash power about three times stronger; on the other hand, movements were considered to be the core of warriors. A strong core gave the warriors a better advantage to master martial arts.

Normally, when the warriors mastered a higher level of movement, their total Qi would increased about thirty percent, that meant if there were two warriors with the same cultivation, but one of them trained in a low ranked Mortal Realm movement, while the other one trained in a middle ranking one, the total amount of Qi in the latter person would be thirty percent more than the previous person; if the latter trained in a high ranked Mortal Realm movement, then they would have seventy percent more, and if it was a top rank Mortal Realm movement, then it would be two times plus ten percent more Qi. This kind of gap was almost insurmountable.

Besides, with a higher level of Mortal Realm movement, the quality of Qi would have a noticeably large improvement. For example, if you looked at the Qi that was produced by training low ranked movement as a chunk of wood, then the Qi from a high ranked movement would be like a stone, or maybe even a metal. A

wood could never compete with a stone or a metal in density because obviously they were not on the same level.

Wu Zongming as the number one outer disciple, the movement he trained must have been at least middle ranked Mortal Realm level. Ye Chen's movement was low ranked Mortal Realm. So even if the Wu Zongming's cultivation was the same as his Mortal Realm Rank 6, then Wu Zongming would have thirty percent more Qi than him, not to mention that Wu Zongming's power level was actually higher than him.

Thankfully, Ye Chen was fairly confident about the quality of his Qi, even if he had to compare, he was sure that it would not lose to Wu Zongming's. He had already trained his Cloud Air Spell to its highest stage which was one stage higher than it was described in the manual which was equivalent to a common middle rank Mortal Realm movement.

After beating that square-faced apprentice in one move, Wu Zongming did not show any complacency at all. For him, that square-faced apprentice was just a clown, beating him did not bring him any satisfaction, he was just trying to send a message that even if he failed to get to breakthrough to the next realm, he was still invincible to them.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

A young, pretty teenager applauded as he walked closer, "Bravo! Number one outer disciple indeed. Wu Zongming, you are qualified to be my opponent."

Wu Zongming turned his head before he caught sight of the newcomer, "Zhang Haoran."



Although Zhang Haoran's appearance seemed young, he had a very mature temperament. He smiled, "I wonder which stage you are right now at that high ranked Mortal Realm movement - Sky Fall of yours."

"Not too great, just the peak of the fourth stage."

Ye Chen was shocked, no wonder Wu Zongming could knock out that square-faced apprentice with only one punch, it turned out that he had trained in the Sky Fall movement. As a high ranked Mortal Realm movement, the Sky Fall was not considered the best but had one extremely strong point: the Qi from training the Sky Fall was extremely thick. Plus, the Sky Fall had only five stages, so being able to reach the peak of the fourth stage was quite impressive.

Unexpectedly, Zhang Haoran laughed proudly, "Compare to a normal person, you are indeed a genius. However, right now, I am way out of your league."

Wu Zongming sneered: "Arrogant people never have happy endings."

"Oh yeah? I was afraid to shock your ego, but truthfully, I trained in the 'Clouds and Beyond' high ranked Mortal Realm movement and have already reached the fifth stage, highest stage. This is the gap between us."

Hearing this, the plaza was immediately filled with discussions.

"No way! Movements are very hard to train in! Zhang Haoran received that manual four months ago, and had already reached the fifth stage?! How is that possible?"

"Yes, high ranked Mortal Realm movement normally have five different stages.

For a normal person to get to the first stage would take at least three or four days; the second stage would need ten days and the third would need a month, the fourth stage three months, and for the fifth level it would at least take a year. I remember there were some inner disciples that just gave up on finishing a high ranked Mortal Realm movement when they were transferring to the top rank movements.”

“Speaking of talent, it seemed that Zhang Haoran is even more talented than Wu Zongming.”

Unlike other people people, Ye Chen thought it was quite reasonable. Wu Zongming was definitely not bad, especially that he was only one step away from the fifth stage which would only take him at least half a month to reach it.

Wu Zongming was truly surprised, he got the Sky Fall manual half a year ago when he won the champion of Mu Ren Gang. He thought it was already quite impressive to reach the fourth stage in six months since a normal person would need about five months time to go from the first stage to the fourth stage and plus another five months to reach the peak of the fourth stage. He never expected that Zhang Haoran was even more genius than him, spent only four months to reached the highest fifth stage.

Tooke a deep breath, Wu Zongming said calmly: “Needless to say more, I will see you at the challenge.”

Zhang Haoran gave him a smile, “that’s right. And I will be the champion of this coming Mu Ren Gang challenge.”

Speech over, he walked away, leaving the crowd staring at his back.

# Chapter 13 – The Wooden Guardians

## Editor Note:

We will be using the word Stage instead of Rank when talking about cultivation level.

---

Watching Zhang Haoran leave, the crowd were full of respect and envy that even though Zhang Haoran and the people in the crowd were all human beings, he could reach the Mortal Realm Stage 10 and the highest stage of the Over Sky and Clouds Movement at the age of thirteen.

Is the difference between a genius and a normal person really that big?

Ye Chen shook his head and walked towards the notice board.

On that giant piece of white paper, there was a line of characters the size of a fist. It was perfectly written, probably by a master of calligraphy.

Besides some disclaimer information, it also listed that those participating in the Mu Ren Gang contest would receive one of Sky Cloud Martial School's special Qi boosting pellet. It could save a month of training, and if it was used upon reaching a bottleneck, it could help breaking through to the next realm. However, it could only help with breaking through stages of the Mortal Realm.

What I need the most right now is time. This Qi boosting pellet that would save me a month of hard work would be really helpful. Ye Chen smiled, and carried on reading.

“The top ten winners of the Mu Ren Gang would be able to choose one High Ranked Mortal Realm Skill; the top six would be rewarded with three Windy Dew pellets; the top three could learn one High Ranked Mortal Realm Movement of their choosing and the champion would also be rewarded with a Yuan Boosting Pellet.”

Ye Chen squeezed his eyes, he didn't really care about the High Ranked Mortal Realm Skills, but the Windy Dew pellets would be such a good asset to have for training Qi. In the first ten days after using the Windy Dew pellet, a warrior would feel extremely purified and fresh both physically and mentally, their training speed would also increase dramatically and would have a higher comprehension of martial arts. There were even a lot of inner disciples that desperately looked for it, it was valued at more than ten thousand silvers. The only bad thing about it was that it could not be used too often, each use of the pellet would be increasingly worse than the last time until its effectiveness completely disappeared.

However, a High Ranked Mortal Realm Movement was even more valuable. With a High Ranked Movement, Ye Chen could train at a much faster speed and the quality and quantity of his Qi would be on another level qualitatively. In other words, if he could get his hands on a High Rank Mortal Realm Movement manual, it would even be possible for him to breakthrough to the Condensing Reality Realm.

Ye Chen smiled helplessly as he saw the prize for the champion.

Needless to say, a Yuan Boosting Pellet was the most valuable among the listed prizes, it could help a Mortal Realm warriors step straight into the next stage, it could even be used to breakthrough the bottleneck of the Condensing Reality State. However in regards of obtaining first place, Ye Chen was not confident at

all. Even Maq Wu, who was a Mortal Realm Stage Ten warrior, could never compete with Wu Zongming and Zhang Haoran who were the sons blessed by the heavens. The movements and skills they had mastered were much stronger than anyone else, and with their genius comprehension abilities, it was almost impossible to beat them to take first place. Only if Ye Chen could reach the Mortal Realm Stage Eight from Stage Six, then would he even have a chance to contend against those two.

Slowly letting out a breath, Ye Chen made up his mind. He dare not to dream for first or second place, but third place would be his! Failure will not be tolerated!

...

The night was over, the first beam of sunshine raised from the east side.

In the yard, Ye Chen had just finished a movement and was rubbing himself with the body boosting ointment.

Six months after the Mu Ren Gang, it will be the Ye Family Gathering. Whether or not I will attend will depend on what happens today!

Ye Chen understood clearly, his eldest uncle's son Ye Tang and his fourth uncle's daughter Ye Xuan were both rare geniuses of the Ye family. They had reached the Mortal Realm Stage Five at the age of twelve. And now, after three years' time, they may have very likely reached the peak of Mortal Realm Stage Ten, or perhaps they had even broken through to the Condensing Reality Realm.

A Condensing Reality warrior was on a different level! Even if Ye Chen had

amazing comprehension and insights, there was still a huge gap between him and them.

Before Ye Chen had even left the house, the Sky Cloud Martial School was already filled with chanting. It was an important day for most of the people, the day of Mu Ren Gang. What's more was that during the challenge, some outer elders and inner disciples would come to watch the competition, and at some of the rare cases, a couple of inner elders would be present as well. If an outer disciple did well today, it could be considered as a ticket to heaven if an elder took an interest in them.

Because the Mu Ren Gang was located right in the front of the message center which was usually closed so you could not really see what was actually happening inside.

Ye Chen arrived in the message center and found the place already crowded with people: half of the three thousand outer disciples were already waiting here, along with a few inner disciples and outer elders sitting in the high tower in the end of the plaza, looking down over the crowd.

"Elder Lin, who do you think will be the top ten this Mu Ren Gang?" A teenager who was about sixteen years old asked. He was very good looking, although his skin was oddly pale.

The elder man who was called Master Lin laughed: "Yuntao, you are already one of the top inner disciples, yet you are still interested in this?"

Yuntao nodded as he replied: "I didn't really have an outstanding talent back in the day, and for that I really struggled during those days, so I really relate to the outer disciples, especially with their desperate desire to do well."

“Right.” Master Lin nodded, “In my opinion, the top ten for this Mu Ren Gang would probably be the same but with Zhang Haoran in there somewhere.”

“Zhang Haoran? I heard of him. They said he is the number one genius among the junior apprentices.”

“Yesterday I heard that Zhang Haoran had already mastered his High Ranked Mortal Realm Over Sky and Clouds Movement to its highest stage. What a rare genius!”

“The fifth stage of the Over Sky and Clouds Movement... no wonder those elders have been praising him so highly.” Yuntao seemed surprised, when he was still a outer disciple, he also trained in the Over Sky and Clouds Movement but he still had not reached the final stage yet.

Elder Lin looked at Zhang Haoran who was standing in the plaza and said gratefully: “The more geniuses that the Sky Cloud Martial School have, the more potential we have. Perhaps one day we can even upgrade from a Rank Nine to a Rank Eight Martial School, I would be so happy that even if I died I would die with a smile.”

Yuntao felt extremely motivated from Master Lin’s speech, “Don’t worry, Elder Lin! Although I still cannot compete with the core disciples, I will give everything I have and do my best to help the Sky Cloud Martial School promote to the next rank!”

“Haha! Wonderful! It is really great that you have this kind of determination.”

It is time for the Mu Ren Gang to begin!

Crack!

The huge wall in the front of the plaza suddenly cracked open. Revealed in front the crowd was a dark path of unknown length and unknown destination.

At this moment, Master Lin stood up and said: “Everyone, today is our semi-annual Mu Ren Gang challenge, all outer disciples are eligible to enter. As for the prize, you probably had already read about it on the message board so I won’t go in details. Now, let’s get to the first round of the challenge: to enter the Mu Ren Gang, you would have to beat a wooden guardian.”

Master Lin’s voice naturally was not very loud, but when fortified by his Qi, it spread miles away allowing everyone heard him loud and clear.

“Shit, I almost beat one of those wooden guardian last time, this time I can definitely do it!”

“Me too! But I heard that there are not just wooden guardian in Mu Ren Gang but also a wooden sword artist, I am not sure if I can make it.”

Regardless what everyone thought, the challenge of Mu Ren Gang had officially started.

Click, click, click...

A row of twenty wooden guardians walked out.



These two-meter-tall wooden guardians were made of a special kind of wood, their eyes were made of two thin slices of crystals sparkling with cold lights, they were obviously not normal puppets.

Ye Chen was not surprised. Rumors said that those wooden guardians were a special puppet which were invented five thousand years ago by the rank 5 Martial Academy – the Puppet School. Although the puppets were not intelligent, they could sense people around them and attack them in different ways which was very impressive.

Sky Cloud Martial School received the manufacture instructions in a fortuitous occurrence. However these wooden guardians were only powerful to an extent, equivalent to a Mortal Realm warrior, so they were only great for training the outer disciples.

---

#### Editor and Translator's Corner:

Hi all! Just a little clarification on what a movement is. Movements are a set of routine movements that one practices in. Movements are divided into palm, sword, finger, and etc arts which are also meant for attacking. Deeper comprehension results in a better quality and quantity of Qi. The difference between movements and skills are that skills are a single “movement” that increases your attack in a short burst with no benefits for your cultivation versus movements which are a set of stances that are both meant for attack and increasing your cultivation.

If anyone has a better term for movement please comment below since Sheryl and I are going nuts over trying to find a better term that could be used in a bunch of different ways for different things!

## Chapter 14 – Ruling the Ranking

During the first round, the outer disciples were tested twenty people at a time. The ones who made it through would be sent to the right to wait for the actual challenge of Mu Ren Gang; and the ones that failed would be sent off to the left to leave the competition.

Last time, Ye Chen had only lasted ten seconds until he was beaten into submission, even to the point of vomiting blood.

Donnng! The challenge had started!

Surprisingly, Wang Gang was one of the first twenty people. With his Peak Stage 7 of the Mortal Realm cultivation, it was fairly easy for him to beat the wooden guardians. Getting knocked out would be a humiliation.

The wooden guardian sensed the incoming disciples and activated its heavy body. It rose up and threw a punch towards Wang Gang suddenly. The punch was so fast that the wind generated made Wang Gang's hair fly up.

Wang Gang did not specialized in speed and had to immediately cross his arms in front of himself to block the strong punch which pushed him three steps backwards.

“Breaking Stone Palm!”

After dispersing the force from the punch, Wang Gang jumped up and hacked towards the wooden guardian's head with his right palm.

Boom!

The wooden guardian actually had a sharp sensitivity, and raised up its right arm and blocked that deadly attack of Wang Gang's. Then it immediately threw another attack with his left hand, which was so fast that it was almost impossible for most people to react in time.

"Damn, that wooden guardian is killing it!" Some of the fresh junior apprentices couldn't help but exclaim. Even Ye Chen was amazed by these wooden guardians. They were not living creatures yet their arts and skills were strong and steady, perfect textbook display of martial arts.

Suddenly, Wang Gang's left leg bent as he threw his knee towards the wooden guardian and attacked for the second time, then with the counterforce, he bounced back and landed safely five steps away.

After putting himself in a distance, Wang Gang realized that he could not defeat the opponent with only brute force.

"Twin Dragon!"

Seeing the wooden guardian rushing forward, Wang Gang decided to give up on his Breaking Stone Palm and chose to use the Twisting Snake Fist which he rarely used before. He twisted his arms like two fierce snakes and attacked the wooden guardian.

Crack!

The wooden guardian's fist was blocked.

Wang Gang grunted, with both of his arms occupied, he kicked out his leg.

"Falling Star Kick!"

Hoom!

The wooden guardian was kicked over by that powerful heavy kick, as the supervising elders on the side yelled out, "Pass!"

Unlike Wang Gang, you could continuously hear people yelling "Failed" all over the place.

Soon, the first twenty people finished their entry test. Only four of them passed, and the rest had failed and had to leave the plaza in disappointment.

Despite the numerous attacks given from each disciple, the wooden guardians were surprisingly not damaged at all. Thankfully, people could pass once they knocked down the wooden guardian, otherwise they would probably die of exhaustion if they were to damage the wooden guardian.

Shortly after, the second group was finished their test, shockingly only one man had passed.

The third group, five people had passed.

The fourth group, three people had passed.

The fifth group, none of them had passed.

...

The one hundred twentieth group had both Wu Zongming and Zhang Haoran in it. They glanced at each other as they walked up to those wooden guardians emotionlessly.

Facing those wooden guardians, they attacked almost at the same time.

Wu Zongming's figure suddenly disappeared from sight and reappeared in front of the wooden guardian like a ghost. At the same time, he put his right palm over that wooden guardian's chest, as a sudden huge force went through his palm to attack the guardian. The wooden guardian was blown away instantly like a pile of straws, its chest branded with an obvious palm mark.

However, Zhang Haoran's attack was even scarier. As his body relaxed, he instantly appeared in front of the guardian, despite the ten-meter distance between them, and locked onto the guardian's head in his extended hand, then suddenly went still as he threw his hand out.

The wooden guardian was thrown out about ten meters.

"Damn, an instant-kill!"

The crowd stood there with their eyes wide open, completely shocked by what

they had just witnessed. Wu Zongming were already quite impressive, with one palm up close and one palm extended, he knocked out the wooden guardian. But Zhang Haoran...Zhang Haoran was even more impressive, the wooden guardian was like a vulnerable toddler in front of him.

The one hundred and twenty-third group, Ye Chen finally entered.

Unlike the fast speed of Wu Zongming and Zhang Haoran, Ye Chen started out with a simple yet smart approach, and with only few attack, he successfully beaten the wooden guardian and passed.

When the first round of the challenge had finished, Elder Lin stood up and said, "A total of three hundred and sixty-five people had passed. Now for the second round, all contestants please enter the Mu Ren Gang."

"Haoran, you said you were going to help me to get the third place, right?" There was a tall teenager standing right next to Zhang Haoran, he was about fifteen years old. He couldn't help but ask nervously.

Zhang Haoran didn't mind, he said: "Cousin, relax. With your power level, it won't be too hard to pass the challenge. To reach the top ten would be a little bit difficult, but I will help you by blocking the other apprentices at the right moment."

"Great!" It turned out that that teenager was Zhang Haoran's cousin, he joined the Sky Cloud Martial School a bit earlier than Zhang Haoran, and attended the challenge of Mu Ren Gang before. But he only reached rank thirty something which was far away from the top ten not to mention the top three. If he could make it to the top ten, he could not only get a manual of a High Ranked Mortal Realm Art, plus a High Rank Mortal Realm Skill of their choice and three

Windy Dew pellet which would be more than enough for him to reach the Condensing Reality Realm.

Suddenly, the tone of Zhang Haoran's voice changed, "However, I had to do it covertly, you know the rules."

"I know, don't worry, I am confident to be in the top ten even without your help."

"Good, let's go!"

The Mu Ren Gang was shaped like a gourd and had a narrow entrance which could only fit five people at a time. Once you walked pass the entrance, there were ten different-sized lanes, and the space inside each was massive.

The three hundred and sixty-five people were divided into ten groups and entered different lanes.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The walls and the floor of the lane that Ye Chen chose suddenly cracked open, and out jumped a group of wooden guardians and wooden sword artists equipped with wooden swords. They knocked out five to six people in the blink of an eye like a violent summer storm, causing the place was to be full of moaning sounds.

Ye Chen tilted his body and dodged an attack from the wooden sword artist as he took out his great steel sword out of its scabbard and sliced the opponent's wooden sword in half. Ye Chen followed up by ducking his body and passing the

wooden sword artist smoothly.

Wow, that was close. Luckily I wasn't stuck in the crowd, otherwise I would not have had any space to dodge.

As he moved forward, contestants were being eliminated left and right, among the forty people from the beginning, there were only twenty people left. As they passed through, five more different narrow lanes appeared in front of them. The group of twenty looked at each other as they were once again divided into a group of four to five people and entered a lane.

In another lane, Zhang Haoran took sudden large steps, his feet moved inhumanly fast, keeping his robe up in the air. All of the wooden guardians and wooden sword artists tried to locate him but failed, and the ones that tried to block in front of him were slapped away casually like dolls.

As Zhang Haoran moved forward, the space in Mu Ren Gang changed from wild to narrow. Zhang Haoran stopped and thought, The upcoming place is filled with wooden guardians, if wait for the right moment, I could create troubles for the other contestants to help my cousin easily obtain third place.

As for the first place, Zhang Haoran thought it was already in the bag, Wu Zongming was no where near his power level and definitely not a threat which was also why he could help his cousin. Plus, this was the only path that led to the finish line, so even if there was someone that could be a threat to the number one position, he would still have plenty of opportunities to fix it.



Thanks guys for your responses! We will be using 'arts' instead of 'movements' from here on forward!

## Chapter 15 – I Will Ruin You

Slash!

The first one to arrive was Wu Zongming who was only a bit slower than Zhang Haoran.

Wu Zongming looked at Zhang Haoran in confusion, Didn't he say he wanted to be the champion? Is he waiting for me on purpose? That's outrageous! How could he be so arrogant?!

Although he had a myriad of question and indignation, Wu Zongming would not any waste time with him, all he wanted to do was to finish the competition.

As he was walking by, Zhang Haoran suddenly blocked his way, "Wait!"

Wu Zongming gloomily turned and asked: "What do you want?"

Zhang Haoran replied casually: "Nothing much, don't you think it would be more fun when there are more people? There's no need to hurry."

"I don't care if it's fun or not, piss off."

"Sorry, I can't let you pass."

"Then die!" Wu Zongming was furious, his body suddenly rotated swiftly as he brought up his right fist which glowed bloody red, and along with a powerful hot

wave, shot out towards Zhang Haoran.

High rank Mortal Realm Skill – Burning Fist!

Zhang Haoran was still smiling, as he also brought up his fist and intercepted the incoming fist.

Boom!

With a touch of both fists, the walls and the floor started to shake, and a strong wave of wind suddenly blew in every direction.

All Wu Zongming could feel was his arm's numbness, suddenly he felt three different level of force coming through the opponent's fist which shook his body and had to back up three steps just to find his balance. He couldn't help but yell, "The Three Forces Floating Cloud!"

The Three Forces Floating Cloud was a well known martial skill of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Although it was only a High Ranked Mortal Realm Skill, a lot of outer disciples practiced it. Many took it up because of its special aspect. The higher cultivation a warrior had, the stronger the three forces would become! This aspect made this skill quite popular.

Zhang Haoran shook off the sparks left on his fist, his face seemed surprised, "I seemed to have underestimated you, your Burning Fist can make real flames."

"Same here." Wu Zongming truly did not underestimate Haoran's talent and slowly began to accumulate all of the Qi inside his body without showing it, waiting for the most important moment to attack.

The surprise on his face slowly faded away as Zhang Haoran laughed: “What ‘same here’? Don’t get me wrong Zongming, but I had only used seventy percent of power. How much did you use?”

To be honest, Zhang Haoran had the right to be arrogant. At the age of thirteen, he had not only mastered his Qi to the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage Ten and the Over the Sky and Clouds Arts to the highest stage, but also mastered the Three Forces Falling Cloud. He was confident in his ability to evenly compete with an early Condensing Reality Realm warrior, not to mention a Stage Ten Mortal Realm Wu Zongming.

Wu Zongming didn’t argue with him, because he knew that nothing he said could change anything, only by his strength could he prove himself.

Boom!

The bloody red fist started to spark, and slowly, it became a little flame. And in the middle of the burning fire, was his fist smoldering like a piece of iron burning hard and hot.

Wu Zongming sneered: “So, it was not just I who did not use their full power.”

“Interesting...Interesting.”

Zhang Haoran was a bit surprised and a trace of anger appeared in his eyes. His opponent hid his real power repeatedly, making him feel underappreciated. Until today, everyone was forced to use their full power whenever they faced him if they wanted a chance to survive.

Sparks rolled off Wu Zongming's fist as Zhang Haoran breathed deeply as he glared at Wu Zongming.

Right at that moment, a human figure suddenly appeared, watching the two intense figures, he alarmingly slowed down and leaned towards the shadow from the other side of the lane.

It was Ye Chen!

Although he was a little bit slower than Wu Zongming and Zhang Haoran, he had tried his best and could not be compared with the rest of the contestants. Because facing the slow, clunky wooden guardians, using the martial arts cleverly was better than just brute forcing his way through.

It really is unexpected that they would fight against each other during a race. Noticing the cracks on the wall, Ye Chen did not have to guess to know that there had already been an intense fight with a tied result or possibly they were still battling each other.

However, even if they didn't care about the ranking of the Mu Ren Gang, he did!

If these two still wanted to fight it out, then the champion could very well be him. Even though it was a little bit underhanded, who would turn down this kind of opportunity.

Quickening his pace, Ye Chen tried to enter the lane.

"Presumptuous! Since when was it your turn?" Zhang Haoran was already a

little bit of pissed, and seeing that Ye Chen had ignored them and wanted to enter the lane, he poured out all of his anger on him.

Zhang Haoran's right hand pulled then shot forward. An ice cold wind suddenly spread out, every step he took, the floor was covered with ice.

High Rank Mortal Realm Skill – Soaking Cold Palm!

Ye Chen was frightened, he did not have any enmity with Zhang Haoran but Haoran decided to launch a deadly Soaking Cold Palm. With Zhang Haoran's Mortal Realm Stage 10 power, it would be stronger than anyone else he had faced before. If he was hit, it would take a couple of months to heal from the injuries, not to mention the possibility that it could freeze his meridians and ruin his chances of any future in martial arts. Even though the Ye family was extremely rich and had many rare elixirs to heal it, that did not mean he wanted to put himself through that suffering.

“The Mountain Avalanche!”

With the great steel sword out of the scabbard, Ye Chen moved like an avalanche tumbling down a mountainside, it was so fast that it was like a lightning in a flash.

It was a movement in the Lone Peak of Thirteen Sword that was specialized in steps and speed.

Crack!!

The place Ye Chen was just at was suddenly covered by ice cold frost, he could

not imagine if he hadn't managed to dodge it.

Kept distance with Zhang Haoran, Ye Chen said emotionlessly, "You crossed the line!"

"You are just a plain old Mortal Realm Stage 6 outer disciple, how dare you dream to be in the top three? And to think you dare to take first place? Piss off!" Zhang Haoran did not take Ye Chen seriously at all, even though Ye Chen had just dodged his attack.

Everyone had a consuming anger once someone crossed their bottom line, especially Ye Chen. Eyes sparked cold light, the veins in Ye Chen's arm suddenly popped out as he squeezed the sword in his hand. Although he didn't know how this was going to end at all, but if he tried with his life, I was sure that he could wound him.

"What? You want to fight? Believe me, I could end you right now. And even if the school caught me later, it would be just a light punishment at best, what are you compared to the I, the genius Zhang Haoran." Zhang Haoran sneered as murderous intent ran across his face.

Wu Zongming could not stand Zhang Haoran's attitude and he sarcastically said: "Hmph, big words. Do you think I will just sit here as you beat him in front of me?"

Zhang Haoran replied ghastly: "Wu Zongming, have you decided to fight against me? Don't you dare regret it."

"What a joke, where is there for me to regret?"

“Hmph! Let’s see who will become a Condensing Reality warrior first! But as for this guy in front of me, I would definitely beat him in front of you.”

His shadow was stretched out, Zhang Haoran’s left hand hiding behind his back, his right hand filled with ice cold breeze as he walked towards Ye Chen with huge steps, aiming for his head. Normal people would never stand a chance facing his extremely fast movements, and in Zhang Haoran’s opinion, Ye Chen was a dead dog, like the rest of them.



## Chapter 16 – Tiger Dragon Roaring Fist

With the powerful aura bearing down on him, Ye Chen felt his life was in danger. He held his sword with two hands in a defensive guard to receive the incoming attack.

Hongg!

Haoran's palm broke through his guard like a hot knife through butter. Seeing the opponent's incoming palm breakthrough his guard, Ye Chen grunted as he punched out with his left fist to meet Zhang Haoran's palm.

“King Kong Unlimited Fury!”

This was the strongest attack of the King Kong Fist Art, which Ye Chen had already mastered to the unity stage. Under the extreme pressure of this life and death situation, the strength of Ye Chen's fist reached an unimaginable level.

Their hands had not even collided, and yet the pressure of their attacks was creating such pressure as to create the sound of an explosion. Zhang Haoran was surprised, he had never seen such a strong King Kong Fist before, its power almost reached that of a top rank Mortal Realm Skill. But so what? The quantity and quality of my Qi is much better than his!

“Piss off!”

The coldness of his palm had increased as Zhang Haoran added more Qi. His palm streaked out like a lightning and covered Ye Chen's fist.

Boom!

With his arm frozen, Ye Chen was instantly pushed back. Blood leaked out from the corner of his mouth and his left arm was ice cold and he could not lift it up anymore.

“Next time think a little before you mess with someone who’s better than you are.” After a second, Zhang Haoran attacked once again.

At this moment, Ye Chen threw caution to the wind. Ye Chen twisted his right wrist slightly, and a bright cold light shot out from his great steel sword, blinding everyone in range. Even though it was very close, it gave people the illusion that it was very far away, even Zhang Haoran was confused for a second. Haoran hurriedly moved his left hand out from behind his back to try and catch that sword light.

Wu Zongming saw what had happened and knew that, even if Ye Chen managed to wound Zhang Haoran, Haoran would still ruin him. He swore to himself that he would not let that happen as he watched.

“Emotionless Burning Fire!”

Sparks flew everywhere as Wu Zongming took a few large steps and then threw a punch towards Zhang Haoran.

Realizing that he was surrounded, Zhang Haoran became furious. He shifted back and threw both arms out in front of him. His sleeves waved in the air and caused his shadow to expand. In a blink of an eye, he escaped out of their

attacks.

## High Rank Mortal Realm Skill – Inching Steps!

Wu Zongming face changed as Zhang Haoran's power kept surprising him. The fifth stage of Over the Sky and Clouds Arts, Three Forces Floating Clouds, the Soaking Cold Palm, and now the Inching Steps... what else does this crazy bastard have?

“Young apprentice, what is your name?” Wu Zongming took a deep breath, turned his head and asked Ye Chen.

Ye Chen was breathing heavily, trying to circulate his Qi to remove the icy numbness from his left arm as he answered: “Ye Chen.”

“You probably already know my name so I will skip that, but honestly, your fist and sword arts are quite impressive! I underestimated you.” Wu Zongming actually noticed Ye Chen's punch from before. Although Haoran was wounded from fighting against Zongming, not many others could pull off that kind of punch and go toe to toe against Haoran, especially not someone with a Mortal Realm Stage 6 cultivation.

“Thanks.” Ye Chen sounded calm, but he was actually quite anxious about the persisting coldness in his left arm. Right now, he started to regret that he had not practiced a Middle Rank Mortal Realm Art. Even though his Qi quality would not be as good as Zhang Haoran's, but he could have reduced the gap between them and definitely would be able to remove the coldness.

Obviously, It was not Ye Chen's fault, a Middle Rank Mortal Realm Art was

equal to a Top Rank Mortal Realm Skill, and, as a outer disciple, Ye Chen would never have been able to get it. However, there were some crappy Middle Rank Mortal Realm Arts, but they was not easy to master and required a lot of effort and time. Also, if a warrior wanted to change to another art later on, he would have to spend more time to train his Qi. Therefore, Ye Chen wanted to win the Mu Ren Gang so that he could get a high ranking art. However, he never expected this kind of situation.

“Wu Zongming, do you want to die too?” Cornered by the two, Zhang Haoran face turned bright red, then white, then purple, which was extremely creepy.

Wu Zongming replied without any emotion: “You don’t have what it takes.”

“Great! Today, both of you will fall under this skill! Storms of the Universe!” Layers of his Qi had just bulged, there was a bright blue light flashed on Zhang Haoran’s body. That was a sign of his Over the Sky and Clouds Art being pushed to its peak.

Zhang Haoran used both of his hands to draw a circle in the air. The freezing cold breeze suddenly became a ball that started to swirl. It flew towards Wu Zongmin and Ye Chen.

Whooooooooo...

Cold wind whipped everywhere like a tornado. The floor was covered with rapidly spreading frost.

Wu Zongming was surprised. It was easy to tell, from this attack, that Zhang Haoran was able to turn illusions into reality which meant he was very close from

changing his Qi into Real Qi, which was the difference between Mortal Realm warriors and Embracing Reality warriors. Otherwise he would not be able to master the Soaking Cold Palm to this level.

“Prairie Burning Fire!”

Wu Zongming had not used his full power for a long time, but right now he was using everything he had. Suddenly, heat pushed in every direction like a wave. His face slowly turned red, and eventually became bright red with steam coming out.

And both of his fists were so hot they seemed like they were going to melt. The massive heat reached out and faced that coming cold storm.

The ground shook, the walls violently vibrated, and chunks of the wall fell to the ground.

BOOOOM! A loud sound.

Zhang Haoran and Wu Zongming both were blown away, however, it only took Zhang Haoran three steps to recover while it took four steps for Wu Zongming to recover.

Right at this moment, a shockingly bright sword light suddenly appeared, stabbing straight into Zhang Haoran’s left chest like a sudden summer storm appearing without any signs.

“Die!”

Zhang Haoran didn't even have time to take a breath before he was stabbed by Ye Chen. Furiously, he ignored his body's limitation and accumulated all his remaining Qi to throw out a punch.

The great steel sword was being bent by a strong wind and would not move an inch. Ye Chen's eyes opened wide as he realized Zhang Haoran's true power.

"Zhang Haoran, take this!"

Wu Zongming jumped up to Zhang Haoran and threw out a punch.

Without the support of Qi, Zhang Haoran couldn't use his Inching Steps. He fiercely went head on with Wu Zongming, and there was blood came out from the corner of his mouth.

"You made me do this."

After being pushed back out ten steps by from that punch, Zhang Haoran wiped the blood off the blood on his mouth and said creepily.

Hearing Zhang Haoran's word, Wu Zongming thought: No way! This guy still has more skills?

Ye Chen also frowned, he had to admit, Zhang Haoran was truly a genius the only genius he truly admired. Every one of those martial arts he had displayed had been mastered to a high degree such a degree.

Watching the two people standing in front of him fearlessly, Zhang Haoran grippedturned his hands into fists. A bright blue light suddenly came out of the fists then turned into beautiful flowing ribbon of air.

With the blue air floatingfloating blue air flow around, a quiet tiger roar suddenly resoundedappeared. It sounded quite fierce.extremely scary.

“Tiger Dragon Roaring Fist!”

Wu Zongming’s face suddenly changed and he spoke without realizing it, , he didn’t even realized his mouth moving as he said: “Top Rank Mortal Realm Skill, Tiger Dragon Roaring Fist! Damn, this is not good. How could this guy have so many skills?”

Ye Chen had heard about this skill before. Rumors said that, among the top rank Mortal Realm skills in the Sky Clouds Martial School, only the Monster Killing Fist and a few other skills could match it in power. According to the rules, only inner disciples could practice Top Rank Mortal Realm Skills, but obviously, Zhang Haoran had somehow gotten around this rule. got around this rule somehow.

## Chapter 17 – Third Place

Zhang Horan smiled viciously and relaxed his body, moving towards the other two at an extremely fast speed. When he was half-way to his opponents, he started swinging his fists forward, the blue light creating a stream behind his fist which made it look like a roaring dragon was coming with the fist.

The punch was not even close, yet Wu Zongming and Ye Chen were already wobbling. In their view, there seemed to be a ferocious dragon coming their way, it was so powerful that they almost froze in fear.

Obviously, they would have to fight back to survive. It was the only way.

Ye Chen was about to do something before he realized that Wu Zongming was already prepared.

“Zhang Haoran, don’t think that you could so easily beat me with a Tiger Roar Dragon Fist! Burning Sacrifice!” Wu Zongming put his hands together, quickly accumulated his Qi, blocked out Zhang Haoran’s punch. Then he jumped toward Zhang Haoran with his whole body and threw out a punch that seemed slow but extremely fast.

Hearing Wu Zongming’s words, Ye Chen was shocked. The Burning Sacrifice was a extremely strong skill, it burnt Qi in exchange of a higher power level. However, it only lasted a short amount of time, and had a severe consequence on user’s body. If it was used too many times, the user would eventually wreck their ability to do martial arts.

Boom!



When the two fists touched, the rocks on the ground shot out, away from the explosion.

The next moment, both of them bounced back and there was blood coming out both of their mouths.

“No wonder you would dare to fight against me, it turns out you have mastered the Burning Fire Sacrifice Spell.” The Burning Fire Spell was only a high rank Mortal Realm martial art. However, once mastered, the user could bring up his power level for about thirty percent, but in return, the user would suffer in severing side effects, if they were lucky, only the user’s body would be damaged, otherwise the user might be wrecked, so no one really dared to use it regularly. Therefore, it was marked as a forbidden skill in the Sky Clouds Martial School. On the other side, even Zhang Haoran gave up on fighting Wu Zongming, he had already put in too much, if he backed out, it might affect his attempt to reach the Condensing Reality Stage.

Wu Zongming was about to say something, but he realized there were people chasing up from behind, he sneered: “Sorry, got to go!”

Woosh!

With his Burning Fire Sacrifice Spell active, Wu Zongming increased his speed to its peak, brought up a wave of heat, and disappeared into the distance.

“Consider yourself lucky, this time.”

Zhang Haoran really wanted to teach Ye Chen a lesson, but he was afraid that

Wu Zongming would steal his No.1 place. Plus, he had already been wounded, and that Tiger Roar Dragon Fist had already burnt out his Qi, he was not even sure if he could make it, so he could only leave this meaningful comment and then run after Wu Zongming.

Ye Chen sneered and then he stood still and continued to remove the coldness.

Shortly after, at least ten people showed up in the lane.

Minutes later, Ye Chen opened his mouth and let out a breath of cold air. His right hand squeezed the sword, his steps lightly touched the ground, and he shot out into the lane like an arrow.

Deep in the lane.

The wooden sword artists jumped out one after another, chopping at whatever they sensed. The ten people running in front of Ye Chen had to slow down, so that they would not be attacked at the last minute.

“Damn, that guy behind us is so fast!” The person who was in the back yelled when he saw Ye Chen ignoring all the wooden artist as he ran, and managed to dodge the deadly attacks every single time.

Ah!

Right after yelling, he was knocked, by a wooden sword artist, to the ground, regretting his carelessness.

Ye Chen jumped above him, effortlessly cut off the incoming wooden sword, then passed between two wooden sword artists dangerously with perfect timing.

The reason that Ye Chen could be so calm about this, it was all because of his strong soul power. He could sense the surroundings within five meters without his eyes, then calculated a perfect route to travel, which saved plenty of time.

Ye Chen finally made his way back to third place, and ditched the number four far behind him.

...

The exit of Mu Ren Gang was the same as the entrance, which meant all of the contestants had to run in a huge circle. One could imagine how huge the Mu Ren Gang field was.

Although Ye Chen could already see the exit, but that did not mean he had succeeded yet.

There was a skinny short wooden sword artist standing by the exit. It was made of a hundred pieces of dark red wood. Holding a long thin sword in its hand, it did not seem to be alive, however, it projected a fierce aura.

Click, clack, click!

The wooden sword artist came running towards Ye Chen, faster and faster.

When it was only five steps away, it swung its sword.

Ching!

Ye Chen almost lost the sword in his hand, he was surprised at the wooden sword artist's power.

With its first attack being blocked, it started its second round of attack with the same power and speed.

“The Search for Opportunity!”

Ye Chen took a breath, his great steel sword twisted like an eel, and hit the wooden sword artist's elbow at an awkward angle.

Although, it did not break its elbow, it created a flaw in its sword's path Ye Chen quickly punched it in its chest.

Boom!

The wooden sword artist was blown away.

Challenge completed!

Outside the exit, Master Lin was a little bit surprised when he saw Ye Chen, he smiled: “Congratulation, you have won the third place. Here are three Windy Dew pellets. As for the high rank Mortal Realm skill and art, you would have to

go pick it out yourself in the Pavilion of Martial Arts. And this is the access permit for the second floor, however, it can only be used once.”

Put away the pellets and the permit, Ye Chen finally let out a breath, it was not easy to get third place.

Wu Zongming smiled as he walked close, “Once you have a high rank Mortal Realm Art, I am afraid you will catch up with me in no time.”

Ye Chen could handle Zhang Haoran’s punch with only his Mortal Realm Stage 6 cultivation, it made Wu Zongming very interested in becoming friends with him. A friend was always better than an enemy.

Ye Chen humbly replied: “No way. If it wasn’t for you, I probably wouldn’t even be standing here.”

“Never mind that, we need to hang out in the future.”

“Certainly.”

“Oh yeah, be careful around Zhang Haoran. Although he can’t really do anything to me, he might try to mess with you, so be careful.”

Ye Chen nodded, and looked towards Zhang Haoran.

Zhang Haoran did not look good, he had failed epically today. Not only he did not beat Wu Zongming, he failed to help his cousin. Luckily, he won the championship with his Inching Steps, otherwise, he would never forgive himself.

Actually, Ye Chen could not care less about Zhang Haoran. With the new high rank Mortal Realm art, he was confident he could reach the next level in a short time. In a few months time, when he trained his Qi to stage 7 or 8 and he took his arts to the highest stage, it would not be impossible for him to fight against Zhang Haoran. However, the opponent's Tiger Roar Dragon Fist would be a threat which would be very tricky to deal with. It was rated highly among top rank Mortal Realm skills. However, Ye Chen would not be far behind, with his unique Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords, he was confident he could handle Zhang Haoran.

## Chapter 18 – Choosing A New Martial Art

After a night of rest, Ye Chen went to the Pavilion of Martial Arts in the morning.

Besides most of the inner disciples and all of the core disciples, the pavilion master knew only a few other disciples such as Zhang Haoran and Wu Zongming. But surprisingly, the pavilion master recognized Ye Chen and smiled the minute he entered the pavilion.

Ye Chen felt flattered, but still politely greeted the elder, “Pavilion Master.”

The pavilion master nodded, as an elder in the martial art world, he said: “It is not necessarily a good thing to have too many martial skills. Don’t bite off more than you can not chew, you know what I mean?”

Ye Chen obviously understood him perfectly and forced a smile. “Master, I am going to the second floor, here is the access permit.” He said and handed over the permit.

“Permit? What? You won the third place?!” The pavilion master forgot his position and exclaimed surprisingly.

“Yes.”

The pavilion master hesitated to ask: “You really mastered the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords?”

Ye Chen nodded, the pavilion master still could not really believe him: With an unfinished martial art – the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords, he won third place? Isn't that a little bit too easy? Not to mention Ye Chen was only a Middle Mortal Realm Stage 6.

As the pavilion master, it was inappropriate for him to ask more so he warned Ye Chen: "Only inner and core disciples can access the second floor, so when they see outer disciples, they may be a little harsh. Try not to be bothered by it. Also, since you are not a formal outer apprentice yet, you will only have fifteen minutes to make a selection, so make up your mind quickly."

"Yes, elder."

Ye Chen understood the rules, although the inner disciples and outer disciples were all just disciples, status was very important. It would not end well for him if he got in trouble with an inner disciple. As for the fifteen minutes rule, it was probably used to prevent the outer disciples trying to memorize other martial arts.

The stairs were on the left-hand side deep within the pavilion, Ye Chen walked calmly towards it.

Once he was on the second floor, he could feel invisible pressure from all over the place. Scanning the place, the whole second floor was filled with about twenty people, some of them were reading the manuals carefully, some of them were chatting quietly, some of them were in the process of making the difficult decision of choosing between manuals. All of those people were under twenty and the youngest was probably the same age as Ye Chen. They all had an unmeasurable aura that only inner disciples radiated.



The inner apprentice who was the closest to Ye Chen subconsciously turned his head and scrunched up his face in confusion, then he seemed to recall something as he mumbled: “I almost forgot, yesterday was the Mu Ren Gang, this guy was probably in the top ten.”

After the comment, he looked back at his manual.

Walking forward, Ye Chen examined the place and found it was similar to the first floor, but was much more classy and fancy. The rows of bookshelves were made of valuable sandalwood which had a relaxing aroma.

There were five rows of shelves on each bookcase, the bottom three were stacked with High Rank Mortal Realm manuals while the top two were stacked with Top Rank Mortal Realm manuals. Each row had about three to seven manuals. On the side of each roll, there would a label such as “Mastering Martial Arts”, “Assisting Arts”, “Body Boosting Arts”, “Attacking Skills”, “Guarding Skills”, and so on.

There was no time for Ye Chen to waste! He only had fifteen minutes!

He first arrived in the area of martial art manuals, he randomly took out a manual off the shelf and browsing the content, then he put it back and picked up another one, putting it down, ...

After scanning tons of manuals, Ye Chen had only liked nine of them which were –

“Burning Fire Fist, Attack Skill!”

“Inching Steps, Body Movement Skill!”

“Chasing Cicada: Eight Steps, Body Movement Skill!”

“The Power of Yuan, Defense Skill!”

“The Reflection, Defense and Attack Skill!”

“Golden Swallow Art, Attack Skill!”

“Disintegration Fist, Attack Skill!”

“Sword Draw Art, Attack Skill!”

“The Withered Wood Seal, Attack Skill!”

These nine martial skills probably were not the best High Rank Mortal Realm skills, but they were definitely the best fit for Ye Chen which was why he was torn to make up his mind.

The Burning Fire Fist was Wu Zongming’s primary martial skill, its prowess was already proven by Wu Zongming. When a warrior mastered it, their fist could produce an actual fire and execute a deadly attack. Inching Steps was what Zhang Haoran used before. A warrior could move extremely quickly, seemingly causing the ground to shorten into inches which were also very powerful and practical for movement. The Chasing Cicada: Eight Steps detailed how to use the explosive force within the eight steps a warrior took, it could raise the user’s speed by at least fifty percent. No matter how fast the opponent was, no one

could escape from the person using this technique, it was the best choice for hunting enemies. The power of Yuan was a little bit different, a warrior drew Qi out then transformed it into out a unique Yuan Qi, which was the same as Qi but was stored inside the user's body. It would automatically activate when the user faced an enemy, causing it to swell over the user's body in defense. However, it was not recyclable. Once it was used, the user had to create more Yuan Qi to replace it.

The first four martial arts were one of the best options, if Ye Chen did not have the other five options, he would have already picked one from the four. However, with the other five, Ye Chen decided to give them up.

Comparing to its defense, the Reflection Skill was actually more of an Attack skill. It allowed users to not only protect themselves but also reflect the opponent's' attack. The skill's strength solely depended on the opponent, if the opponent was very powerful then the reflected attack would be powerful as well. It could only be activated when the user was under attack. The best part was that a user could bounce back an attack without even noticing they were under attack! Therefore, once mastered, it would not be necessary for the user to master another defensive martial art.

The Golden Swallow Art was a movement art, once mastered, the warrior not only could walk on water but when mastered to its extreme, the warrior could also walk in the air for hundreds of meters like a flying swallow.

When Ye Chen saw the introduction of the Disintegration Fist, he could not help but made a face. How could this martial skill be so powerful? It did not have any stage other than just mastering the punch. However, with one punch, the target would definitely break into pieces. In other words, it helped a warrior display their power to the utmost.

Sadly, this extreme power would not last long. According to Tai Qi, everything is about the balance of Ying and Yang, powerful and gentle. Especially in a battle, if I could not beat the opponent in that punch, then I would be beaten, this art is way too extreme. Ye Chen shook his head and gave up the Disintegration Fist.

As for the Sword Draw Art, it focused on the moment of drawing the sword from its scabbard and its explosive force, its power and speed was much faster than simply waving the sword. This kind of art was extremely advantageous during the beginning of a fight. It allowed the user to beat the opponent in the first attack, killing in one attack.

Ye Chen had mastered the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords, if he could master the Sword Draw Art as a supplement, he would be invincible in every case except opponents that were stronger or had much better skills.

However, nothing would be that easy. The Sword Draw Art was great but it was not a wise choice for a warrior learning the way of the sword. Similar to the Disintegration Fist, it was too extreme, aiming for an instant kill. If it failed in that moment, then it was useless.

Hence, the Sword Draw Art was not suitable for sword artists. It was an art for assassins.

The last one art was the Withered Wood Seal Art. It specialized in hiding the user's fighting intent, it allowed the user to be almost invisible when attacking. Most of the time, the opponent was killed because of such an unexpected attack. Although the name 'Withered Wood Seal Art' sounded quite lifeless, it was actually the opposite. The user could accumulate and lock his Qi on his opponent, then suddenly release it at the moment of attack. Like an old tree dead during the winter that suddenly bloomed to life in the spring, his calm attack would suddenly burst full of horrifying explosive power.

# Chapter 19 – Pure Yuan Art

## Editor’s Corner:

Don’t confuse this chapter’s “Pure Yuan Art” with last chapter’s “The Power of Yuan”.

Last chapter was a defensive skill, and compared to this chapter’s offensive art.

---

Which skill should I learn?

Ye Chen stood there quietly before he made up his mind. He grabbed the manual of the Golden Swallow Skill.

He made a very reasonable decision, compared to an attack skill or a guard skill, a movement skill would be much more helpful for his survival. While there were hundreds of “unbeatable” and strong arts in the world, Ye Chen could only protect himself and hurt his opponent when he had speed, when his speed reached a certain level, it would be more powerful than any attack skill. In the end, even if he failed to hit his opponent, Ye Chen still could escape. Comparatively a guard skill could also protect him, but he would be a turtle, forced to defend until he no longer had the strength to.

As for why did he choose the Golden Swallow Skill instead of the Inching Steps or the Chasing Cicada: Eight Steps? It was nothing more than a hunch of Ye Chen’s.

After choosing his martial skill, it was now time to choose a martial art.

“What are you doing? I called dibs on this Iron Shirt Art first!” All of the sudden, someone started arguing down the third row.

Ye Chen recognized the voice the second he heard it. Out of curiosity, he walked between the shelves towards the sound, searching for that familiar face.

There were two people standing ten steps away, one of them was quite handsome and seemed to be only thirteen years old. Just like Ye Chen thought, it was the one and only Zhang Haoran. The other guy was about seventeen years old and wore yellow gear. He was physically quite impressive, his arms were thicker than Zhang Haoran’s thighs. He had a square face, square chin, and his long, narrow eyes shone with a cold light. He looked like a combination between a tiger and a poisonous snake.

They were arguing about the High Rank Mortal Realm Martial Skill – the Iron Shirt. Although it was not the highest rank skill, it was extremely effective and practical in a battle which even made it more popular than some of the top rank skills. Zhang Haoran wanted to practice it to supplement his weak defense, and had just taken it off the shelf when the other guy appeared and took it out of his hand unexpectedly. He even rolled his eye in a manner that seemed to say “piss off”. Zhang Haoran did not expect this kind of treatment at all, and quickly became furious.

The young man in yellow laughed: “Outer disciple? Where do you think you are? Piss off now, go back to your mama on the first floor!”

Zhang Haoran had an extremely ugly look on his face, “Don’t think I don’t know who you are. Huang Bingwen, seventeen years old, Early Condensing Reality Stage, the second child of the Windy Town mayor.”

“Good! Now beat it kid.” Huang Bingwen’s proud face had a wide smile.

“Hmph. You are weak! At the age of seventeen, you have only reached the Early Condensing Reality Stage? You’re a joke! To come out here and brag about it...you are not qualified to stand in front of me and do so.” Zhang Haoran’s word surprised everyone in the room.

The room suddenly filled with the sound of quiet murmurs as interest built up.

“Is that guy Zhang Haoran? No wonder he dared to confront Huang Bingwen! But honestly, that was way too brutal though, he might offend some disciples by not giving us face.”

“The Peak of Mortal Realm Stage by the age of thirteen...if he can reach the Condensing Reality Stage by the end of this year, he would be one of the top five genius in the Sky Cloud Martial School!”

“Doesn’t look to good for Huang Bingwen. I heard that Zhang Haoran was greatly favored by by the Inner Court Elder Liu, he even made an exception for Zhang Haoran to practice the Top Rank Mortal Realm Skill – Tiger Roar, Dragon Fist!”

As Huang Bingran heard the discussions, his face soured as he said ghastly: “You little brat. Good job to make it here because of your little connections.”

“Good job? I, Zhang Haoran, need connection? Please, don’t make me laugh at your ‘insults’. Do you dare to make a bet? A battle, in two months, on the Martial Arts Plaza! The loser has to apologize to the winner!” Once again, Zhang

Haoran threw out a big “bomb”.

Huang Bingwen and the other inner disciples in the room were all shocked. They couldn't believe their ears that an outer disciple wanted to challenge an inner disciple.

“As you wish, young master. I will crush you in now, and I will crush you in two months.” Competing with a junior apprentice was below his status, but as long as he could beat him effortlessly then it would be fine. People would even turn against Zhang Haoran and call him disrespectful and would not blame him for taking such a bet.

As Zhang Haoran grabbed the Iron Shirt manual out of Huang Bingwen's hand, he left without looking back.

Huang Bingwen's face tinted purple as he felt a burning anger smolder him with no place to release. He soon discovered Ye Chen, the only other outer disciple in the crowd and yelled with a low voice: “Fuck! What are you looking at?!”

Ye Chen froze. He had never expected that he would suddenly become Huang Bingwen's emotional punching bag. Masking his anxiety, he said emotionlessly: “My eyes... are on my head, do I need your permission to see from them?”

Upon hearing this, the crowd was shocked again. They were all wondering what was going on, the outer disciples this year were the most arrogant bunch they have ever seen. At least the other disciple had reached the peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10 and had the backing of a senior master, but this guy had only reached the Middle Mortal Realm Stage 6 and had zero reputation. However, he was as arrogant as Zhang Haoran.



Huang Bingwen felt like he was about to explode. His clothing began to whip up even though there was no wind. A dark brown colored light began to emit from his body along with an invisible pressure in preparation to attack Ye Chen.

“Huang Bingwen, what are you doing?! Remember where we are!” A dark hair senior apprentice in black rebuked.

Huang Bingwen shivered as he remembered that he was in the Pavilion of Martial Arts where fighting was strictly forbidden. There was a huge punishment plus a six-month ban from the Pavilion of Martial Arts if you were caught.

After taking a deep, calming breath, Huang Bingwen dissipated his Qi and stared at Ye Chen murderously. He threatened: “Once we are outside, I will finish you!”

Ye Chen frowned, the guy standing in front of him was like a mad dog, biting whoever came close. Ye Chen knew his power level was still quite low and definitely would not be able to beat him at this time. If he did not come up with something quickly, this might not end well for him.

Making up his mind, Ye Chen lifted up his head, “I will also make a bet with you. Battle me in two months on the same Martial Art Plaza as Zhang Haoran. Whoever loses has to apologize to the winner. Do you dare?”

It was like a lightning in a sunny day, Huang Bingwen froze.

“Haha!” He looked like he just heard the funniest joke ever, Huang Bingwen pointed at Ye Chen with his finger, said: “You? You think you can beat me in two

months? Did you lost your mind?”

“What? You afraid?”

“Fuck I knew it, you are just baiting me into a fight. But brat, why would I be afraid? I will teach you and Zhang Haoran both a lesson in two months.” Huang Bingwen was actually patient, he knew the longer he waited, the better he would feel when it actually happened. Plus, this two months would pass in no time at all.

“In that case, I will take my leave. Excuse me.” Fifteen minutes was about to end and Ye Chen had yet to choose a martial art. He did not want to waste another minute.

Watching Ye Chen leaving, the rest of the inner disciples began conversing animatedly. They desperately wanted the next two months to go by quickly so that they could watch those interesting battles.

Standing next to the book shelf, Ye Chen was trying to make a decision.

“Six Sun Art, Extreme Power with Extreme Yang!”

“Withered Wood Spell, Hidden Tracks and Concealed Intent!”

“Sinking Cloud Force, Supreme Qi Manipulation, Invoking Flames!”

“Little Star Art, Qi Purification, Destroying those who stand above!”

...

There were not many training arts, but Ye Chen was torn with all the different kind of arts. There were even some random arts that he had never heard of.

Tick tock. Time slipped by.

Ye Chen began to become anxious. He knew if he did not hurry, time would run out.

Losing his patience, he randomly picked up a manual. However, his eyes caught sight of something. There was another manual under the one he was holding, it seemed to be hidden on purpose.

On the cover of that manual was three black-inked characters,

“Pure Yuan Art”!

## Chapter 20 – Emerald Martial Palace

Picking up the Pure Yuan Art manual, Ye Chen turned to the first page.

“Pure Yuan Art. The first Qi Coil strengthens the Qi; Second Qi Coil cleanses the body and mind; Third Qi Coil strengthens the body; Fourth Qi Coil accumulates and reinforces Qi in the heart; Fifth Qi Coil combines the six senses into one, attaining ekatra, the state of unity.”

This is it!

With just a single glance, Ye Chen made his decision. If he reached Pure Yuan’s Fifth Qi Coil, it would combine the six senses into a system of unity. The state of unity meant the combination of one’s spirit, Qi, mind, hands, eyes, and body, attained harmony in unity.

While its attack and defense might not be as good as the others, its ability to refine Qi was the best in its class. In addition, within the Mortal Realm Arts, there were very few arts that could actually manage to reach ekatra, that state of unity.

Out of nowhere, Ye Chen realized there was another inner disciple standing right next to him, reading a manual. The inner disciple sensed Ye Chen’s glance and smiled politely. As he saw at the manual in Ye Chen’s hand, he asked in surprise, “Pure Yuan Art?”

Ye Chen nodded, “Yes.”

That inner disciple hesitated then said, “Pure Yuan Art is definitely a rare art. However, over the past century, not one person in the Sky Cloud Martial School has managed to reach the fifth coil, in fact, there were not many people who has managed to reach the fourth coil. I suggest you to choose another one, otherwise it will simply be a waste of your time.”

Oh? Even more reasons for me to train it! Ye Chen was quite happy to hear that no one else would be training in the same martial art as him. The inner disciple said that no one had truly mastered it in the last century, that was because once Mortal Realm warriors reached the Condensing Reality Stage, they would gain access to Top Rank Mortal Realm Arts and would most likely give up their original art. Because even the High Rank Mortal Realm Art at its highest stage would still not be able to compete with Top Rank Mortal Realm art. This was the gap that separated the stages.

“My time is up.” Excusing himself, Ye Chen took the two manuals that he chose and walked downstairs.

The inner disciple shook his head. He truly was being nice to give Ye Chen advice. However, it was not really his business if Ye Chen chose not to listen, they would most likely never see each other ever again.

...

On his bed, Ye Chen sat with his legs crossed and closed his eyes, his hands repeating the hand seals described in the manual, up and down, near his Dantian. Along with his breath, swirls of Qi from heaven and earth accumulated near Ye Chen, it formed a small tornado and that was rapidly being absorbed into his body, cycling through his meridians continuously.

If anyone with exceptionally perceptive eyes looked at Ye Chen right now, they would see that inside his Dantian there was another little Qi tornado forming inside his main Qi tornado, it was slowly spinning but firmly.

“Whooo...” Ye Chen gradually released his breath and as he opened his eyes, a subtle light quickly flashed through.

Reached the First Qi Coil within three hours. I think I might have underestimated my potential. Ye Chen was quite satisfied with his results and sat in the moment.

However, it was only the beginning. The Pure Yuan Art had five Qi Coils in total, and each Qi Coil was harder than the last one. It would take at least a couple of days to reach the second coil, it would take twice as long for the third coil, and three times as long for the fourth coil. However, for the fifth coil, it would not be as easy as simply doubling the time of cultivation. It required an enlightenment to reach the fifth Qi Coil, which depended on the warrior's potential, talent, and comprehension.

Even though Ye Chen already had a basic idea of his power, he was still a bit surprised when he reached the second Qi Coil on the third day.

Right now, the second Qi tornado inside his body was already the one-tenth of the size of the Qi tornado from his Cloud Qi Cultivation of his Sky Fall Art, but it was purer and stronger and was like a clear crystal without any flaw.

On the sixth day, the meridians inside Ye Chen's body had been cleared and unblocked, the Qi of Pure Yuan Art circulated repeatedly and continuously without any restraint, slowly building his body and boosting his physical fitness, it also extracted an extremely pure Yuan Qi from his bones and blood and blended

all together which made it spin even stronger and faster.

On the seventh day, Ye Chen achieved the third Qi Coil of the Pure Yuan Art.

The second Qi tornado was already the one-fifth size of the first Qi tornado and, not only it was unbelievably pure, but its spinning speed was also ridiculously fast, it was almost like a powerful engine, pumping huge amount of Yuan Qi and Qi from the first tornado.

Ye Chen thought to himself, The Qi of the Pure Yuan Art is at least two times purer than the Cloud Qi from the Sky Fall Art. Well I guess it's time refine my Cloud Qi, otherwise it will hamper my future cultivation by having two different types of Qi inside my body, and make it extremely hard to reach the Fourth Qi Coil not to mention attaining ekatra in the Fifth Qi Coil.

Making up his mind, Ye Chen engaged the Pure Yuan Art, forcibly blending the Qi from his Cloud Qi Spell into the Pure Yuan Qi revolution.

The Cloud Qi sensed the foreign attack and tried to fight back by creating a blockage with the large amounts of Cloud Qi.

However, the Pure Yuan Qi was much purer. It was like a sharp knife, slicing one layer after another while continuously refining each layer of Qi to strengthen itself. It was like a snowball, the longer it attacked, the stronger and larger it got.

Sensing the powerful Qi of the Pure Yuan Art, Ye Chen could not help but think, Quality truly is much more important than quantity. The quantity of Cloud Qi was five times more than quantity of the Pure Yuan Qi but the Cloud Qi still could not resist the overbearing Pure Yuan Qi.

Tick tock, time flew by.

When the Cloud Qi tornado was only one-fifth of its original size, the Qi tornado suddenly collapsed. Qi scattered about in a chaotic manner, the chaotic cloud of Qi no longer had any resistance to the Pure Yuan Qi.

Pop!

Once the Cloud Qi from Sky Fall Art had completely refined into Pure Yuan Qi, Ye Chen's Dantian bloated up causing Ye Chen to frown as he felt it strain before breaking through to the Late Mortal Realm Stage 6.

Pleasantly letting go of a huge breath, Ye Chen stretched a little, causing all the bones in his body to crack loudly like a firecracker.

It only took me ten days of hard work to reach the Late Mortal Realm Stage 6, this Pure Yuan Art truly is a High Rank Mortal Realm Art!

Training arts were extremely important to warriors. In a situation where people had the same potential, the warrior who trained in a high rank martial art would always be stronger than the one who trained in a low rank martial arts, this was an undisputable fact. Ye Chen reached the third Qi Coil of Pure Yuan Art in ten days, but had already accumulated a lot of high quality Qi, and now that he had managed to refine all his Cloud Qi, his power had reached a new level.

As Ye Chen was celebrating his achievements, a group of guests arrived at the bottom of mountain of the Sky Cloud Martial School. They were two men and two women.



Their leader was an old man about sixty years old, his wrinkled face was expressionless. He wore a long green robe with an emerald jade mark tied around his waist.

Next to the elder, there were three young teenagers. One of them was a young man about seventeen years old, his facial features were as white and stiff as jade which almost looked like they had been carved onto his face, leaving a cold impression. On his left side, there was a pretty teenage girl who was about fifteen years old, wearing a green dress with a long sword tied around her waist. On her right, there was another teenager who seemed to be a bit older than her. She was an extremely beautiful young woman that had a prideful lonely aura. Looking at her, people would always automatically connect her with a lonely orchid blooming at night or a lone peony, the king of flowers.

The teenage girl in the green dress said to the latter, “Sister Xueyan, no matter what you do, I will respect your decision.”

“Ye Xuan, I am not a picky person. My mother and Ye Chen’s mother were both outer court masters of the Rudra School and are like sisters to each other. She used to babysit me and treat me so nicely... But I don’t want other people deciding my marriage, and I don’t want my future husband to live the rest of his life in my shadow.” The beautiful young woman’s voice was perfection, only adding to her beauty and aura to be even more attractive.

Ye Xuan nodded and kept quiet.

Then, the indifferent elder said, “Don’t worry. Our Emerald Martial Palace, the top martial institution in the Windy Paths Nation, would never push you to do anything you don’t want to do. With your talent and potential, you would definitely become an inner court master in the future, so there is no need to waste time on this kind of business.”

# Chapter 21 – Childe Hanshan

## Editor Note:

Childe is defined as a youth of noble birth or the so called young master in other xianxia. In this xianxia, it is used as a title, and will be continuing to be using Childe instead of young master.

---

“Identify yourselves!”

At the bottom of the mountain, four disciples on guard duty stopped the group.

The cold-looking teenager stepped forward and said loudly, “We are from the Emerald Valley. Along with us is our senior master Mu Fengyuan! Let us through at once!”

“Emerald Valley’s senior master!” The guards were astonished because in the Windy Paths Nation, the disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace were always consider to be outstanding, not mention how astonishing their senior masters were. They were always treated the utmost respect, even the emperor himself would pay them respect.

“Sir! Please enter through here.” The leading guarding apprentice smiled as he eyed the people next to him, “Go notify the warden elder immediately!”

The news of the venerable visitors quickly spread throughout the whole Sky Cloud Martial School.

Inside the welcoming lobby of Sky Cloud Martial School.

Besides a couple of senior masters sitting on the left hand side, there was a middle-aged man sitting in the main seat who seemed about forty years old. With his huge body and tiger claw like hands on the armrests, he emanated a strong pressuring aura. He was the number one warrior of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Patriarch Luo Xinglie!

Normally, if it was just a normal senior master coming, Luo Xinglie would not usually show up, leaving the reception to the headmaster or even the vice headmaster. But this time, their guest were not so simple. While Mu Fengyuan was not the headmaster, he was one of the top ten senior masters in the Emerald Martial Palace, he had reached the Late Claspng Yuan Stage and was not too far behind Luo Xinglie in power. However, even if the top three senior masters of the Emerald Martial Palace were as strong as him, it would be hard for any one of them to suppress him. Since Luo Xinglie did not want his guests to appear to be stronger than his school, he had personally appeared to welcome the guests as he was the only one overtly stronger than his guests.

On the right hand side, Mu Fengyuan and the three young teenagers were seated in order.

“Haha, master Mu, what has brought you here today? Please excuse our poor reception as we were not expecting guests.” Luo Xinglie laughed brightly as his eyes focused on Mu Fengyuan.

Mu Fengyuan smiled, put down the teacup in his hand, and replied, “I hope Patriarch Luo does not mind us showing up here uninvited.”

The headmaster of Sky Cloud Martial School was an elder with a slightly obese body responded, “Nonsense, when the patriarch heard that you had arrived, he came out personally to welcome you.”

Luo Xinglie nodded, changed his tone, “May we know what is master Mu’s reason for this visit? Surely, you are not just visiting us?”

“Paying a visit is a must, but since I am here, I would like to handle my disciple’s personal issues.”

“Your disciple’s personal issues? What is the issue?” Luo Xinglie was a bit surprised.

Mu Fengyuan cleared his throat, asked, “I wonder if there’s a outer disciple that goes by the name Ye Chen in the Sky Cloud Martial School? This is his sister Ye Xuan, and the other one was also related with him.”

Hearing Mu Fengyuan’s introduction, Luo Xinglie and the senior masters all looked at Ye Xuan and the beautiful young woman besides her, they could not help but praise them in their hearts.

Not only their beauty, but their cultivation was extremely high.

Ye Xuan seemed to be not even fifteen, but she had already reached the Early Condensing Reality Stage and by looking at her Qi which was still not completely pure yet, they could tell she had just reached this stage not too long ago. Regarding that level of talent and potential, Sky Cloud Martial School did not have too many geniuses, not to mention she was a girl.

The other beautiful young woman was even more powerful! She was only a little bit older than Ye Xuan but had already reached the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Stage. In a couple of months, she would definitely reach the Late Stage. With her outstanding talent, she could definitely be in the top three ranking in Sky Cloud Martial School, or perhaps even the top ranked disciple.

Luo Xinglie sighed in his heart. There are so many martial geniuses in Emerald Martial Palace, any one of them would be powerful enough to compete with our top disciples. No wonder they have retained their spot as the best martial institution in the Windy Paths Nation, even the Northern Snow Academy can compete against them.

“Young lady, what is your name?” The headmaster could not help but ask curiously.

The young woman seemed relaxed, “Greetings, headmaster. I am Ji Xueyan.”

“Ji Xueyan, are you a member of the family Ji?”

“Yes.”

Luo Xinglie laughed, “The heavens have blessed the Ji family! With a daughter like you, their status in the top eight family is even more stable, congrats!”

“Fortune!” The other senior masters nodded and agreed.

“Someone, go find Ye Chen and bring him here.” Luo Xinglie did not know who Ye Chen was at all, but as the patriarch of the institution, no one would dare to not obey his words.

With Mu Fengyuan's permission, the cold-looking teenager who had not said a word stood up and said, "Patriarch Luo and senior masters, I, Liu Wuxiang, have a presumptuous request. I hope to compete with Childe Hanshan before Sister Ji finishes with her business."

Luo Xinglei froze a little, "You mean my son Luo Hanshan?"

Mu Fengyuan smiled, "Liu Wuxiang is one of the four core disciples at our martial institution, competing with Childe Hanshan would only be a friendly spar. How about it?"

"Naturally. It's just that my son is having issues with his body, he probably won't be able to handle this." Luo Xinglei seemed troubled, and if you looked closely, you could see a deep sadness flickering in his eyes.

Liu Wuxiang was a little bit disappointed. He opened his mouth in preparation to say something, but was stopped by Mu Fengyuan.

"Father!" Suddenly, a teenager in blue appeared outside the lobby.

Luo Xinglei looked at that teenager in surprise, "Hanshan, how come you are here?"

The teenager in blue looked at Liu Wuxiang, said, "Father, I will take on the challenge, I would like to see 'Palm Termination' Liu Wuxiang's true power."

"But..."

“Don’t worry, I know my limit.” The young man in blue was indeed Childe Hanshan – Luo Hanshan, son of Luo Xinglie, rank two among the core apprentices, right after the ‘Gentle Fragrance Sword’ Zhu Mei.

Liu Wuxiang stood up, “Two years ago, the four most powerful people among the younger generation in Windy Paths Nation were revered as the ‘Top Four Childe’, it included the top disciples Emerald Childe, Snow Childe from the Northern Snow Academy, Childe Duanmu from the Mu Family, one of the top eight ranking families, and the Childe Hanshan from Sky Cloud Martial School. When this disciple and the North Snow Childe underwent closed door training for the Clasp of Yuan Stage, you lost your title as the number one disciple. I found it quite unbelievable.”

Luo Hanshan replied humbly, “Zhu Mei beat me fair and square, I think you all know about her ability.”

“‘Gentle Fragrance Sword’ Zhumei, is definitely strong. But frankly, she was still far behind you. How much have you changed?”

Luo Hanshan tired about the subject and said, “Cut the crap, how would you like to compete?” The opponent was one of the four core apprentices in Emerald Martial Palace, who was called the “Palm Terminator” among the young generation in Windy Paths Nation. He had extremely powerful Qi and palm art, which was only below the Emerald Childe according to rumors. Luo Hanshan would not dare to underestimate him.

“Nothing much. Just three palm attacks. It is actually is not ideal for us to truly fight yet.”

“As you wish. Let’s just do it right here.”

Luo Xinglie, Mu Fengyuan and the rest of the senior masters who were present were all staring at the two young men. The battle between the top warriors of the young generation did not happen often. Especially for Luo Xinglie, his face was full of worry but deep down, he was also a bit excited.

Ji Xueyan and Ye Xuan’s eyes were sparked with excitement. Being able to witness Brother apprentice Liu Wuxiang battling Childe Hanshan, this trip was definitely worth it.

“Please!” Luo Hanshan walked few steps forward with one of his hand behind his back, and the other hanging in the air.

Liu Wuxiang walked big steps, “I hope you would do your best, otherwise you would not be able to beat me.”

“Of course!”



## Chapter 22 – Blue Murderous Qi

The two stood ten steps apart and accumulated their Qi.

Luo Hanshan's face began to give off a purple aura as his Qi accumulated. He yelled out in a low voice and began to run towards Liu Wuxiang, throwing his right palm forward.

His Qi wave reached Liu Wuxiang before his body did, the powerful Qi fluctuation made it so that you could see the visible waves in the air.

Liu Wuxiang face grew serious as the bricks underneath his feet suddenly broke under his strength. He pushed off the ground and rushed toward Luo Hanshan, striking forward with his own palm attack.

The air exploded out in different directions, which knocked over all the tables and chairs. Meanwhile, the two human figures were both pushed back a few meters.

Ye Xuan looked surprised, she did not expect the battle between two Late Condensing Reality Stage warriors to be this frightening. The collision, from before, even managed to knock over the heavy purple wooden tables nearby. As Ji Xueyan was one step away from the Late Condensing Reality stage, she was unsurprised by the strength shown in the battle, but she knew she was nowhere near those two in power, she probably could not even handle one palm attack.

The two did everything they could to control their bodies, and, coincidentally, moved closer to each other, they were close enough to each other that they easily felt strong killing intent from the other.

“Well, I don’t even need three moves to end this fight. With your ability, isn’t the outcome of this match obvious?” Suddenly, a blue cloud flowed around Liu Wuxiang, and rotated around at a speed that split the air and caused an awful piercing howl.

“Blue Murderous Qi!” Luo Hanshan whispered as his face grew even more strict.

However, Luo Xinglie, who was sitting in the top seat, was even more nervous than Luo Hanshan. The Blue Murderous Qi was one of the lost martial arts from the Emerald Martial Palace, as a Low Rank Earth Realm Art, its strong point was in its power to strengthen Qi output. It was extremely valuable, and not even ordinary core disciples could learn it, it had to be given to the top core disciples. Seeing the transformation of Liu Wuxiang, Luo Xinglie obviously sensed the power of his Blue Murderous Qi Stage 8 and could not help but appreciate Wuxiang’s strength as a warrior, and, at the same time, he also worried about his own son.

Liu Wuxiang said without any emotion: “I think we should end here.”

“I don’t think so!” Luo Hanshan took a deep breath, a vein popped out on his forehead, then there was a second one, then a third one... Suddenly, something horrifying happened. His pupils turned from black to red, then purple, and, eventually, two purple clouds shot out of his eyes.

“Purple Pupils Frozen Heart Art Stage 8! Well done! Well done!” Luo Xinglie mouth hung open from shock before enthusiastically shouting in joy.

All the other senior masters in the room were all smiling. The Extreme Purple

Art was a Low Rank Earth Realm Art with 9 stages, each stage harder than the last. Previously, they all had thought that Luo Hanshan was doomed to fail, but now they had nothing to worry anymore.

Luo Hanshan saw his father full of happiness and was secretly relieved. The past two years were, psychologically, very hard on them. Ever since he received the Top Four Young Masters title two years ago, he had failed every time in breaking through the Extreme Purple Art Stage 6 bottleneck. Then when he lost his place to the number one disciple, Zhu Mei, during the core disciple competition and everyone thought he had run out of potential.

Now no one would doubt him anymore!

This time, Liu Wuxiang attacked first, his palm wrapped in blue air flow suddenly punched out, it looked like it was about to ruin the whole lobby.

Luo Hanshan seemed to be fine, his palm reaching out toward his opponent, however, unlike Liu Wuxiang, his palm attack was silent, but everywhere it moved, the air started to vibrate like boiling water.

The two palms touched each other!

The floor suddenly cracked open. With them in the middle, a huge explosion occurred and traveled throughout the room like a hurricane, it was so powerful that it sliced all the tables and chairs into pieces.

Facing the incoming hurricane, Ji Xueyan accumulated her Qi and put out her palm to create a shield.

The power wave was blocked out, making huge noises like firecrackers. It was so powerful that Ji Xueyan's face paled a bit. Luckily, it was just an aftershock, which was only thirty percent of the original power.

Ye Xuan, who was sitting right next to Ji Xueyan, yelled: "If it wasn't for sister blocking it, I would be badly wounded just by that aftershock!"

Ji Xueyan replied: "That Blue Mysterious Qi specifically targets warriors' Qi. Add that with the pure Qi from that Extreme Purple Qi and the result is this destructive power." Besides Ji Xueyan and Ye Xuan, the rest of people completely ignored the power wave. There seemed to be an invisible wall in front of them, protecting them.

Outside the lobby, Ye Chen was excited.

Is this the Late Condensing Reality Stage battle?! So intense! It's exactly like a martial art television series of the 21st century! I wonder when will I become this strong?

During the explosion of the palm attacks, Liu Wuxiang's body shifted, and he was forced back thirteen steps, with each step leaving a deep footprint on the floor. Meanwhile, Luo Hanshan was forced back fifteen steps and the last step broke the brick beneath him into pieces.

It turned out that Liu Wuxiang had won.

Gave Luo Hanshan a deep meaningful look, Liu Wuxiang then said: "After all, palm art is my expertise, how about we call it even this time?"

Luo Hanshan said: "Let's do the third round!"

"That is unnecessary, I have already seen your ability, although you still haven't reached my big brother's level, but at least you have your reputation back." Luo Hanshan paused, then nodded his head, accepting Liu Wuxiang's approval.

Luo Xinglie saw the battle was over and laughed: "The apprentice from Emerald Martial Palace is, indeed, powerful, just like your reputation! So young but so impressive!"

Mu Fengyuan said: "Apologies for the trouble, leader Luo."

"Haha, don't worry about it." Luo Xinglie was very happy to see his son get his top genius title back. He smiled and said: "Hanshan, find yourself a seat."

Luo Hanshan nodded, he said to Liu Wuxiang: "Tell Fei Wushuang, I am back."

"I will."

They both sat back at their seats, stopped talking.

Outside the lobby, Ye Chen regained his sense of self and bowed in front of Luo Xinglie and said: "Leader. Senior masters. I, apprentice Ye Chen, am here as requested."

The top senior master casually said: "Come in."

As he walked into the lobby, Ye Chen recognized Ye Xuan and Ji Xueyan, who was sitting beside her. He met her a couple of years ago, but she was no longer a little girl anymore, things had changed since they last saw each other. He had a basic idea of their purpose for this trip because he knew they were not close enough for a random visit like this.

Luo Xinglie controlled his emotions and spoke with majesty: “Ye Chen, do you recognize these two?”

“Yes, sir.” Ye Chen took a deep breath.

“Since it is a personal affair, I will leave you to it. How about that?” Luo Xinglie didn’t care for whatever they planned to do, he was not a core apprentice after all.

“Yes.”

Ji Xueyan stood up and spoke to Luo Xinglie and Mu Fengyuan: “Please excuse us, I would like to talk to him in private.”

Luo Xinglie and Mu Fengyuan nodded.

Walking in front of Ye Chen, Ji Xueyan motioned for him to follow her, “Let’s talk outside.”

Ye Chen did not say anything, he just followed her. Ye Xuan hesitated, she also excused herself from the elders and followed the two.

## Chapter 23 – Dragons don't live with snakes

Outside the lobby was a welcoming plaza which was covered with shiny white marbles. In the middle of the plaza, there was a huge decorative wall with a height of ten meters and a length of five meters.

Beside the wall, Ji Xueyan was scanning Ye Chen up and down and, after a long time, she finally said to him: "I am here for..."

"I know." Ye Chen interrupted her.

"You know?" Ji Xueyan was a bit surprised. In her memory, although he was not stupid, he definitely was not smart, but seeing him now, she noticed that there were changes.

Ye Chen laughed: "Well, you are certainly not here to see me!"

Ji Xueyan shook her head, "Of course not, it does not matter if you knew or not, I have to say it myself. It is impossible for you and I to be together."

"So you are here to discuss the cancellation of our engagement, because if I refuse and you still go through with cancelling it, it would be quite messy. Since there will be many elders that will voice their disapproval, especially my mother, who has been very good to you because of her relationship with your mother. However, if we both agree to cancel it, then there is nothing that they can do about it."

Ji Xueyan opened her mouth, but then she realized she could not find a single

word to say to him. It was completely different from what she had expected. She had thought that he would become extremely angry from the humiliation of being rejected by a girl. In preparation, she was resolved to show him the gap between their abilities and prove that she was out of his league, and if he decided to carry on pursuing, she would be resolved to further humiliate Ye Chen until he gave in. However, to her surprise, all her preparation became useless and just sat there in surprise. Ji Xueyan cried a little inside as she felt wronged in not being allowed to speak everything she had prepared beforehand.

Taking a deep breath, Ji Xueyan realized that she had underestimated Ye Chen. Feeling a bit frustrated, she said, “That’s right, but you have to remember one thing. Even if you refuse, I will still cancel the engagement. Dragons cannot live with snakes. We are completely different people. I still have a bright future to attain, and the gap between us will only get larger.”

“Dragons cannot live with snakes...” Ye Chen mumbled to himself and laughed: “Interesting metaphor, making yourself the great dragon and me the little snake...However, it is still too early for that metaphor, who’s the great dragon is still uncertain, and even that little snake might become a dragon, you never know.”

Ji Xueyan could not help but start to sneer. How dare he think so highly of himself? Right now, it is so obvious who is the dragon and who is the little snake, and he said that it still is uncertain? What? He thinks he could become a dragon one day and fly in the sky? Is he joking?

“Okay, I am not interested in arguing the truth, I just want to know if you agree to cancel the engagement?”

Without hesitation, Ye Chen replied: “Why not? I agree to cancelling the engagement.” Ye Chen knew his ability, in time he would reach Condensing



Reality Realm, then the Clasp of Yuan Realm, perhaps even the Astral Reaching Realm. No need to entangle himself with a girl.

Besides, even if I don't agree, it won't change anything. She even brought the senior master of Emerald Martial Palace, it will only be asking for trouble. Now that I have agreed, I can take back some control of this matter and save myself some dignity. But! Concerning how I was treated today...I will return it two-fold! Then she will know that the title of a dragon has to be earned, not the fanciful words of some little girl.

The silence lasted a while.

Then, Ji Xueyan lightly scratched her crystal ring on the left hand, suddenly, it lit up and a manual appeared in her hand.

Ye Chen's pupils dilated a bit,

Storage Ring!

A Storage Ring was a legendary treasure for normal people, but it was a basic necessity for high ranking warriors. There was a large amount of space in the ring and could store anything from gold, pellets, plants, clothes to even weapons. The user would not feel any weight other than the ring itself.

Ye Chen did not expect her to have one, because, within the Sky Cloud Martial School, only two or three core apprentices had it.

"This is a Top Rank Mortal Realm Art – Iron Bone Great Palm. If you can master even half of it, you will beat any warriors your level. And do not worry, this is not

a manual from the Emerald Martial Palace, I got this from killing a wanted thief so you will not face any repercussions from practicing it. It is kind of my ‘thank you’ gift for you.” Ji Xueyan slightly raised her chin, acted like it was nothing but a common gift.

“If I wanted it, I would go out and get it myself.” Ye Chen rejected without hesitation. What a joke, there’s no need to lose my dignity just for a Top Rank Mortal Realm Art. Plus, she will definitely look down on me if I accepted it like a street urchin accepting leftover food.

Ji Xueyan frowned and said: “Do you not understand? With your potential, it will take god knows how long for you to become an inner court disciple.”

Ye Chen said without any emotion: “You don’t have to worry about the engagement cancellation, I will keep my promise, if there’s nothing else, please excuse me.”

Finished talking, Ye Chen notified Luo Xinglie of his leaving, before he turned to walk towards the lobby.

Ji Xueyan was shocked at his reaction but then laughed. She thought he was just doing it for her, otherwise, he would never give up a high-rank Mortal Realm Art, after all, it was a manual for a martial art, you could not just have it if you wanted to. Too bad, that was just a waste of resource, I will never fall for him.

On the way back, Ye Xuan stopped Ye Chen.

“Why are you so stubborn? Just take that manual, no need to hold a grudge.” Ye Xuan was well respected in the family of Ye, Ye Chen used to be afraid to

confront her.

“There are tons of manuals in Sky Cloud Martial School, I don’t need it.”

Ye Xuan shook her head: “You have already changed, you have become so unreasonable. I know you feel humiliated, but, to be honest, sister Xueyan is way out of your league, her future husband will be someone like a Top Four Young Master, not someone like you, but of course, I am not trying to talk down to you, different people have different lives, as long as you are happy and know your place[A].”

I am unreasonable?! ...never mind. Ye Chen did not want to keep talking to these two arrogant women, because, sometimes, the more he said the worse things got. The best way to deal with this kind of situation was just to ignore them. In this case, less was more.

“I will see you at the annual family meeting.” Then, he walked back into the lobby.

Inside the lobby.

Mu Fengyuan glanced at Ye Chen, “At least you know your place. Ji Xueyan is one of the most gifted apprentices in our Emerald Martial Palace, she is too good for you.”

Ye Chen could not help but curl his lips. Stupid old man, whether she is good for me or not is none of your damn business. All of you people from Emerald Martial Palace are all the same, arrogant and sickening. You all think you are higher than everyone else, even Ye Xuan had changed.

One day, I will beat all of the apprentices in the Emerald Martial Palace, one by one. I will let you know you are all just humans and nothing more.

With all these thoughts scrambling through his head, Ye Chen kept his mouth shut, it would be stupid to confront a senior master who was at Late Claspng Yuan Stage.

“Leader, I would like to leave now, excuse me.” Ye Chen bowed in front for Luo Xinglie.

Luo Xinglie waved his hand, “Since the problem has been resolved, you can go now.”

“Yes.”

Turned around, Ye Chen, not even looking at Ji Xueyan, left without looking back.

Standing right next to Ji Xueyan, Ye Xuan made a face, she felt a bit embarrassed about the huge gap between her and her brother.

Ji Xueyan whispered: “I hope he won’t make things up in front of Aunty Hui.”

“He wouldn’t dare to.” Ye Xuan replied with confidence.

## Chapter 24 – The Union of Six Senses

It had been ten days since his engagement had been canceled.

During these ten days, Ye Chen took the first of his Windy Dew Pellets. It cleared his mind, just like they said it would, and he felt fresh and focused. It cleared the meridians leading to his heart, allowing him to train his Qi without any restraint and reach the fourth coil of the Pure Yuan Art.

At the same time, Ye Chen began practicing his Golden Swallow Art. It required pure Qi, which was very hard to cultivate. Without it, the user would never be able to truly master the art and travel long distances in the air.

The good thing was that the Qi from the Pure Yuan Art was unbelievably pure. All of the impurities in his Qi had been filtered out upon reaching the second Coil. With his Pure Yuan Art at the Fourth Coil, in addition to the heart power, the training process of the Golden Swallow Art was extremely quick.

During these past few days, my Qi has been growing like crazy, which should be a sign that I have reached Mortal Realm Stage 7. The cultivation speed of the fourth Coil of Pure Yuan Art is indeed incredible, but to reach the Condensing Reality Stage is truly difficult. What should I do? In reflection, I've only been in this world for six months, but compared to other people who have been practicing the same art for 4-5 years or maybe even 7 years there's no difference.

Ever since he found out that Ye Xuan had already reached the Early Condensing Reality Stage, Ye Chen knew that he needed to work even harder. Otherwise he would not be able to fight against Ye Xuan in the end of this year at that Ye family meeting. Other than Ye Xuan, the second son of the eldest Uncle

Ye Tang was also quite powerful since he and Ye Xuan were regarded as the top two geniuses of the family Ye.

He took out a jade bottle from his pocket and unplugged the wooden stopper as a blue pellet fell out into his palm.

Qi boosting pellet was a common pellet for warriors used to breakthrough to the next stage and was valued at more than three thousand silvers.

Right now, Ye Chen was only one step away from reaching the Mortal Realm Stage 7 which normally would take him a week or so. However, he didn't want to wait anymore and wanted to use the Qi boosting pellet to break into Stage 7 which would save him seven days of hard work.

Seven days might be nothing to other people, but for Ye Chen, it meant everything. With his comprehension ability, seven days could allow him to master a high rank Mortal Realm Skill, even that top rank Mortal Realm Skill Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords only took him two or three months which was only because it was incomplete, otherwise it would only take him a month.

So, he had to save time when he had a chance, he could not afford to waste the time.

Sitting on his bed, Ye Chen flicked the blue Qi boosting pellet into his mouth which slid down his throat.

Gurgle!

The Qi boosting pellet melted the second it entered his body and became extremely pure Yuan Qi.

All of a sudden, the Qi from the Pure Yuan Art rushed out from his Dantian like a hunting wolf, and in a second, wrapped the pure Yuan Qi from the Qi boosting pellet and started refining.

What a powerful refining ability! If it was Qi from that Cloud Qi Spell, it would be at least two times slower. The higher the quality was, the faster the refining would be was a well-known fact that everyone on this land of souls knew. But it was clear that if the total quantity of the Qi increased, it would be a great help for training Yuan Qi. Because in most situations, it was common for the quantity to be greater than the quality.

One hour had passed.

There was a quiet sound of bubbles popping coming from Ye Chen's body.

The dilated Dantian once again grew bigger like a blown up balloon. And in the middle of the Dantian, the crystal clear Qi tornado inside suddenly increased its spinning speed that was constantly changing and began absorbing the incoming Qi.

After a long time, Ye Chen finally opened his eyes and exhaled out a black fog. Ye Chen could not help but stupidly smile as he knew he had just reached the Mortal Realm Stage 7.

Normally, there was actually not much difference between the Mortal Realm Stage 7 and the peak of Mortal Realm Stage 6. But for Ye Chen, even the smallest change could mean a huge improvement in his power, allowing him to

perform more powerful martial skills.

I should stop cultivating my Pure Yuan Art and begin to stabilize the foundation. Ye Chen knew the importance of pacing himself, he had to stabilize the foundations of all his newly mastered skills in order to learn more and get stronger, just like a skyscraper, if you only put keep building without a strong base, it would fall down any minute, and he would be ruined.

On the second day, Ye Chen managed to stabilize his skills completely with a little bit of improvement. That Qi boosting pellet could save up to a month's worth of hard work and he had only used seven days, so there were still technically twenty-one days of effective use left.

Ye Chen took a second Windy Dew Pellet in the following days and boosted up to the fifth Coil of the Pure Yuan Art – the Union of Six Senses.

But of course, his life was not only about martial arts.

After meeting with the number one outer disciple Wu Zongming, they had become friends and would chat and spar with each other during their spare time.

In the beginning, Wu Zongming was full of pride, thinking that although Ye Chen was quite formidable, there was still still a gap between them. But however, when he limited his power to the Mortal Realm Stage 7 and sparred, he was surprisingly a bit behind! His High Rank Mortal Realm 'Burning Fist' seemed to be weaker than Ye Chen's 'King Kong Fist'! Wu Zongming was astounded.



However, he had no idea that Ye Chen had already mastered his King Kong fist to its highest stage – the Unity Stage. Therefore, it would be impossible for him to win Ye Chen while suppressing his cultivation.

In the deep end of the mountain, neither the sun nor the moon could be seen. Without noticing, another six months had passed.

One night, Ye Chen rubbed the body boosting ointment all over his body, preparing to officially try to enter the fifth Coil of Pure Yuan Art and combine his six senses.

As for the body boosting ointment, the unity stage required a strong body that was full of energy and the ointment would increase his chance of success.

Pushing the Qi of Pure Yuan Art to its extreme, Ye Chen pressed his tongue against the roof of his mouth, he concentrated on his heart, reaching a different mental stage.

Whoosh! Although it seemed to be silent outside, inside Ye Chen's body, there seemed to a climate change, his Qi was like a little river that rolled unceasingly.

For most warriors, three of their senses were usually combined, such as their spirit and Qi. The first step of training was purifying their spirit and mixed it with Qi. This step of allowed the two to become a union which could change their form when with just a thought. If you combined spirit and consciousness, your mind's sharpness would increase under pressure. The hardest part of the union was to combine Qi and your consciousness.

After few days of exploring and experimenting, Ye Chen finally had a basic idea

of it.

His eyebrow unnoticeably straightened, his Qi followed the veins and arrived between his eyebrows, the place where the human soul was located which was where the consciousness resided.

After pushing his Qi to go through his whole body for thirty-six cycles, his Qi was infused with the power of soul and reached back to Dantian. Ye Chen knew he had succeeded that he had reached the internal unity.

Then, there was the outer unity.

In comparison, the outer unity seemed easy. For example, you would only have to unite your eyes and hands, coordinated your whole body which would not be hard, any human being could manage that after training. However, the outer unity of Pure Yuan Art was about the infusion of three different Yuan Qi into the limbs, the eyes and the spinal cord.

First of all, the warrior had to extract the hidden Yuan Qi from the spinal cord. Knowing that the spinal cord was one of the most important part of the human body, even a tiny little mistake would result in an injury that was very hard to treat so Ye Chen did not want to rush it at all.

He let his Qi slowly permeate into his spinal cord, then slowly pulled out a stream of Yuan Qi hidden deep within the bones and nerves and mixed it with the Qi.

Waited until they fully become one, Ye Chen then put that finished Yuan Qi back to his spinal cord.

Repeating the same procedure over and over again, Ye Chen finally managed to combine his Qi and the outer unity together. His forehead was covered with sweat, his shirt was completely soaked.

But all of that was definitely worth it, considering that the Yuan Qi in his limbs, eyes, and spinal cord were infused with spirit and mentality causing his reflexes to be improved tremendously.

Other than that, after reaching the fifth Coil of Pure Yuan Art, the rate his Yuan Qi restored itself was quite satisfying.

## Chapter 25 – Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf

At the outer part of the mountain range was a very strange set of landforms, there were forests, hills, moors, lakes...

Over the past few days, you could often see a human figure coming and going, killing one beast after another.

He had such bad luck. Thirteen rank 2 beasts and none of them had pellets inside their bodies, this was even including four peak rank 2 beasts.

Ever since he reached the highest stage of his Pure Yuan Art, Ye Chen realized that if he wanted to improve faster in the future, he would need the help of beast pellets.

The beast pellets were extracted from the parts, inside the beasts' bodies, where they absorbed the Yuan Qi from nature. Theoretically, a beast pellet that was a year old could save a warrior about a year of hard work, a five-year-old pellet could save about five years of hard work. However, it was only theory. Inside the pellet was not only extracted Yuan Qi but also a lot of Beast Qi. If a normal warrior was infected with a little bit of beast Qi, he might risk of going crazy, and, if he was unlucky, the whole pellet would be melted by the beast Qi and became completely worthless.

But, of course, if a warrior had reached the Condensing Yuan Stage, they could suck out the Beast Qi with their own Qi, then the pellet would be perfectly safe. However, the pellet had to be under Condensing Reality Stage. In another word, a Condensing Reality Stage warrior still would not be able to handle the pellet that was higher than rank 4.

The strong smell of blood attracted a lot of beasts' interest. Ye Chen closed his eyes and, with his extraordinary soul power, sensed there was a relatively strong beast around thirty meters away, it should be a peak rank 2 beast.

His body shifted and he somehow started to float, both feet in the air, like a big bird, he flew out twenty meters and came straight towards the back of a huge tree.

With a loud noise, the tree was cut in half and a beast, that looked like both a wolf and a tiger, appeared behind the tree.

A peak rank 2 beast, the Tiger-Wolf Beast!

Ye Chen twisted his wrist and his great steel sword became a beam of light, shooting out with extreme speed. It was the strongest move in the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords – The Extreme Sword.

The Tiger-Wolf Beast did not expect Ye Chen to be this fast, it was just about to move his body, it was stabbed in the chest. Although it was badly wounded, but it was surprisingly tough, it suddenly grabbed Ye Chen's elbow.

"Piss off! 'The Twisted Road'!" Ye Chen ignored the opponent's attack, accumulated his Qi into his great steel sword, and thrust it towards the opposite side, forcibly twisting open that beast's chest. Then, with extreme speed, he cut the beast's claws, which were reaching toward him.

Such strong rank 2 top beast, yet it could not survive two attacks from Ye Chen, its body softened and fell on the ground, like a broken balloon.

Looking at the beast's wound, Ye Chen's eyes brightened, and his face was filled with joy: It is about time. Finally, this beast has a pellet inside its body!

Slicing the Tiger-Wolf Beast's corpse, Ye Chen reached his hand inside its body and took out a milky-yellow pinkish pellet, about the size of an egg.

According to the booklets about the beasts, if the rank 2 beast had a pellet inside its body, it would increase its chances of becoming a rank 3 beast. If the pellet had slight color changes, it meant it was not far away from upgrading to its next power level. This pellet was milky yellow with a hint of pinkness, no doubt that monster was about to reach the next level, it was more powerful than a normal rank 2 pellet, and for its size, it must've been there for at least a year.

Even after the evil-warding potions' cleansing and losing about ninety percent of its Beast Qi and Yuan Qi, it could at least save Ye Chen a month of hard work. Nevertheless, this pellet was about to reach the next power level, its effect might even double, and could save him two months of hard work.

Staring at the pellet in his hand, even with his powerful soul power, Ye Chen still could not control his excitement. Two months of hard work! It could help me reach the Late Mortal Realm Stage 7, and, if I am lucky, there might still be a fifth of the original Yuan Qi left. After the cleansing of the evil-warding potion, which means four months of hard work, then I will definitely reach Mortal Realm 8.

Ye Chen took out a jade box, carefully put that valuable pellet into the box, and closed the lid. This was to protect against Beast Qi and Yuan Qi leakage.

After taking a deep breath, he calmed himself from his excitement and looked

at the beast's corpse.

“The materials from a peak rank 2 beast could sell for ,at least, a thousand silver. I should not let it go to waste, I need the money to buy the evil-warding potions which cost five thousand silvers.” Ye Chen mumbled to himself, squatted down, and started digging inside the beast's body, collecting all the useable parts.

After he finished collecting materials, he frowned. The big leather bag that I brought is completely filled up, it would be so nice if I have a storage ring.

But, of course, he was just dreaming about it. Among all the core apprentices, only eldest sister Zhu Mei and “Hanshan Childe” Luo Hanshan had it. He knew he was nowhere close to that stage yet. However, he was surprised at how powerful Emerald Valley was, because, among all the countless geniuses in Emerald Martial Palace, even Ji Xuyan, who was only at the Peak of Mid Condensing Reality Stage, had a storage ring.

Sigh... Emerald Martial Palace is, indeed, a rank 7 martial institution, they have countless fortunes and treasurable assets. The Ye family is one of the famous eight family, and also have a large fortune, but only my father and some other senior masters have storage rings, my mother also had one, but she was a junior master of the Rudra martial institution, with a great reputation. But it was impossible for other people, like me, to get a storage ring.

Shaking his head, Ye Chen closed the big leather bag and prepared to leave.

All of the sudden, out of nowhere, a huge gale of wind started to blow around the forest, throwing around small rocks, and even some of the small plants were pulled out of the ground, with their roots flailing in the air, like a hurricane.

Ye Chen was shocked. What the heck?!?

AHWOOOO...

A terrifying loud howl was heard. It seemed to be only a couple hundred meters away.

Oh no! It is a rank 3 beast! Only the rank 3 beasts could release their Beast Qi and let it form an air flow, known as a Beast Wind, which could confuse people's senses.

Before Ye Chen's soul traveled to this world, he read this classic fantasy novel, called "Outlaws of the Marsh", in which the main character was fighting against a tiger. There was also a wave of odd wind blowing before the appearance of this tiger. Right now, this rank 3 beast was way more powerful than that tiger. its wind was more like a hurricane.

No time to waste, Ye Chen put all his effort into accumulating Pure Yuan Art, his feet pushed the ground, his body jumped out like a big bird, wanted to avoid the rank 3 beast's attack.

He heard the sounds of branches breaking. Shortly after, a wolf beast, the size of a cow, suddenly appeared where Ye Chen was previously standing, its body slim and strong. It did not have hair covering its body, but, instead, was covered with black flakes, which seemed metallic. It had a long scorpion tail, the hook at the end had a gray shine to it, which just screamed "deadly poisonous".

Ye Chen turned his head to look, then he tried everything he could to



accumulate his Qi. Pushing his Golden Swallow Art to the limit, he ran away as fast as he could.

That weird-looking beast was the Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf, one of the top beasts among all rank 3 beasts. Even a Mid Condensing Reality Stage warrior would have to run away from it.

## Chapter 26 – Mysterious Queen

Run! Run! Run!

Ye Chen knew that, even if he could reach the Peak of Mortal Realm, Stage 10, he would still not survive, the gap of a whole power level was not easy to overcome. As for that battle between the North Snow Child, Lin Qi and Wu Wanshan. Lin Qi only won because of the powerful martial arts and skills from his superior Rank 7 martial institution, North Snow Academy. They had existed for thousands of years and had accumulated countless priceless martial art manuals. Wu Wanshan was only a lone warrior, even his most powerful move was invented by himself.

Ye Chen had already completely mastered the Golden Swallow Art and after pushing his movements to the limit, Ye Chen could travel so fast that his feet would not touch the ground, allowing him to float over the ground, moving at ten meters per second, just like a real swallow bird.

AHWOOOOO!

Running at an extremely fast speed, Ye Chen could feel that there was a large amount of Beast Qi approaching his back.

Without looking, he knew it was the Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf, any warriors that had a lower power level than the Condensing Reality Stage would be paralyzed after getting hit by that tail.

With his strong soul power, Ye Chen's body shifted, avoided the attack.

Boom!

That Qi ball hit the ground on Ye Chen's right side, not only left a huge empty pit, but also killing all the plants that surrounded the pit.

Damn! Such a powerful Qi Ball, this Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf's pellet must be extremely powerful, if I could get my hands on it, it would save me, at least, half a year's hard work! Wait, what the heck am I even thinking about?! Ye Chen laughed at his own thoughts. It was still uncertain whether he would even make it out of this situation or not, yet he was thinking about that pellet.

Pow! Pow! Pow!

Beast Qi Balls were fired, one after the other, once again Ye Chen could feel it from the back of his head. But he, somehow, always managed to find the best escape route, it was almost like that he was just taking a walk through a war zone.

That Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf was furious, it stopped firing and, instead, it started to chase that little human who was running ahead with its full power, slowly catching up.

Fifty steps to go!

Forty-five steps!

Forty steps!

...

Ye Chen shivered and hurriedly threw his big stuffed leather bag into the air. It accurately landed on a branch of a huge tree, which was a great hiding spot, that was hard to detect from the ground, so people would not steal it away from him.

After throwing away a hundred pounds of beast material, Ye Chen's running speed suddenly increased to a level that was not worse than a Early Condensing Reality Stage warrior. Plus, with the help of his strong soul power, he reached an inhumanly fast speed.

However, even with all that, the Scorpion Tail Demon Beast was still catching up, but now at a much slower rate.

They were both moving at an extremely fast speed. Without them even noticing, they reached the deepest part of the Silent Hills. It was weirdly quiet, with not a single sound.

The Scorpion Tail Demon Beast, that was chasing in the back, seemed to be a bit scared, it slowed down its speed, its humongous head kept checking around.

All of the sudden, a huge figure jumped out from the bushes on the side, it bit into the Scorpion Tail Demon Beast's neck effortlessly. It all happened so fast, their bodies kept moving in their momentum and slid out about ten meters.

The Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf tried everything to fight back, it howled with a horrifyingly loud cry.

However, that huge figure seemed to be way more powerful, with just one claw attack, it smashed the Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf's head into pieces, spilling

blood everywhere.

When Ye Chen turned back to check what was going on, his eyes caught that huge beast's eyes. They were bloody red with a sharp intense stare, extremely murderous.

Rank 4 beast: Red Blood Demon!

Ye Chen was stressing out, he did not expect that he would encounter the Scorpion Tail Demon Wolf and especially not the even stronger Red Blood Demon on this trip. He thought he would still have a chance of surviving, then he realized that he was lost in the deepest part of the Silent Hills.

Even though he tried to deny it, he knew this was the deepest part of Silent Hills, otherwise there would not be rank 4 beasts here.

Seeing that Red Blood Demon catching up to him, Ye Chen forced himself to be calm, he scanned the surroundings carefully, then noticed the rock hill on his left side.

Over there, there was a huge horizontal crack, it seemed to be done by a sword of some sort, it was so deep that you could not see the bottom.

There was no time to consider the consequences, Ye Chen's right foot pushed against the ground and his body jumped out and dived into that huge crack.

Boom!

The rock hill was shaking and cracking down, rocks were falling. Because the Red Blood Demon's body was way too big to fit in the crack, it could not reach Ye Chen at all.

Ye Chen did not think the entrance could hold back that demon for long, so he reached into his pocket and grabbed the Night Shine Pellet, with its dim light, he was able to see the surroundings so he started to walk deeper into the cave.

Without knowing how long he had walked, Ye Chen could not hear anything from the outside anymore.

Drip!

A drop of water fell down from the top, Ye Chen subconsciously dodged it.

Before, I did not know how fast was my reflex at all, I cannot believe that I can even sense a drop of falling water and manage to dodge it. If it was before, even if Ye Chen could sense the water dripping, his body would not be able to react fast enough, but now that he had mastered the Pure Yuan Art, his mind was almost perfectly connected with his body.

After walking for a while, Ye Chen could feel air flow blowing on his face, suddenly his mood was lightened and he increased his walking speed, took out his great steel sword, and accumulated all his Qi, ready to go.

A wave of fresh wind blew past, Ye Chen's view expanded.

In front of him was a humongous space, with a height of ten meters. It was, surprisingly, an underground world.

There was river, trees, and a stone house. Outside the stone house, there was a stone pavilion with a stone table and four stone chairs in it.[A]

Is there someone living here? Ye Chen was shocked, but also extremely curious, he thought he found the exit, but it turned out to be a completely different world.

There seemed to be fish in the river. They kept appearing at the surface and making noises. As for the trees, they were weird looking, unlike the normal trees, the branches were as gray as the rock, they only had a couple of leaves, looking very lifeless.

He did not dare risk anything, Ye Chen walked towards the stone house.

“Hello?” Standing outside, Ye Chen yelled.

After yelling a couple of times without any responding, Ye Chen took a deep breath and pushed the door open.

The stone house was not very big, it was only about nine square meters. There were tons of Night Shine Stones on the wall, which brightened the room.

The first thing that appeared in his sight was a huge portrait: there was a gorgeous lady in the painting, her hair was like a waterfall, her eyes were like the stars. She was like a fairy, a flower, she had a unique aura that Ye Chen had never seen before.

On the right bottom corner were the words, “Mysterious Queen”.

Seeing the name, Ye Chen was shocked.

In this land of souls, there were countless powerful warriors, however, there were only a couple of them that were considered true powers, for example, the Con King, Evil King, Dragon King, and Mysterious Queen.

As the only female among the top warriors, the life of Mysterious Queen was definitely a legend.

She became a Condensing Reality warrior when she was only eleven, reached the Clasp of Yuan Stage fourteen, Astral Reaching Realm at eighteen, Sea of Souls Realm at twenty-five, then completed the “Challenge of Life or Death” at the age of thirty-five and became the youngest warrior to ever achieve that for the past thousand years. Her power would go beyond the sky and ground, hence the name, Mysterious Queen.

Notes:

[A] - I think this house might have some stone in it.... (EC)



## Chapter 27 – Magic Rings, Magic Stone, and The Manual

No one actually knew how powerful the Mysterious Queen was.

Some said that she was one of the top five strongest warriors; some said she was weaker than the Evil King and the Dragon King while some said she was just below the Con King; there was also a rumor said that she was the strongest warrior, already at the edge of the God Art.

Of course, all of those were only assumptions, but everyone agreed that she had reached an extraordinary cultivation level. According to the rumors that Ye Chen had heard, she had once killed a leader of one of the top three martial sects from miles away; her palm attack was so powerful that it could make a mountain shake, cause volcanic eruptions, and change the geographic environment; she had even managed to move her own mountain to a place a thousand miles away.

Studying the painting, Ye Chen realized that no matter how hard he tried, he could not see the Mysterious Queen's face, it seemed like the painter intentionally blurred it out to create a mysterious beauty.

After a long while, Ye Chen finally finished staring, but he could not help but started to question.

Who lives here? Who could manage to get a painting of the Mysterious Queen? Being a queen for decades, not many people were qualified to meet her. And looking at the age of the paint, the painting was painted no more than ten years ago. And where is the person who dwells here now? The painting was perfectly preserved which means whoever put it there must have treasured it. Then why did the owner not take it with him or her?

Hm? What is this?

After scanning the room, Ye Chen's eyes focused on the burn mark in the middle of the stone room, after studying it carefully, he noticed that there was a hidden ring in that pile of white ash.

He reached out and picked it up, then wiped the ashes off with his sleeves. There were two ancient characters carved on the back of that blue ring – Mid Grade

Ye Chen was shocked first, then joy bubbled up as he realized this simple little ring in his hand was a magical storage ring, and even the valuable mid grade kind!

The mid grade storage ring would cost a huge fortune, even for a rich clan like the Ye family. So only one or two people among a whole martial institution would have one and those rings would be owned by only the leaders, it would be impossible for a normal apprentice like Ye Chen to afford one.

Taking a deep breath, Ye Chen started accumulating Qi and slowly push it into the storage ring.

Bing!

The storage ring shook slightly and Ye Chen's sensitive soul power sensed a subtle air flow spreading out.

Then, Ye Chen was able to see the space inside the storage ring.

It was a standard cube, with both height and weight of six meters which made it even bigger than normal people's living rooms, its crystal like body had a dim glow around it, it seemed like it came from a different dimension.

Inside the cube, there were two manuals, a long blade with a huge scabbard, and some egg-sized jade stones shining with white light.

No way! Soul Stone! Looking at the soul stones, Ye Chen could not stay calm anymore.

He concentrated for a second and a jade stone appeared in his hand. He closed his eyes and accumulated all his Qi into it.

Boom!

It was like a dam breaking, the Yuan Qi powered out from the soul stone and flooded towards Ye Chen's meridians.

Not good! Warriors below the Condensing Reality power level are too weak to cultivate with soul stone! Ye Chen's face turned white, he coughed out some blood. He hurried to activate his Pure Yuan Art to cut the connection between him and the soul stone.

Gasp...gasp...

After taking a couple of deep breaths, Ye Chen was still shaking. He was so

happy when he saw the ring then he got carried away and forgot about the basic rules which almost cost him everything.

The good thing was that the Qi from Pure Yuan Art was extremely pure and that was at the highest level, allowing it to be just strong enough to break off the connection; otherwise, if it was someone else, the pressure from the Yuan Qi from the ring could cause death! And if it did not, it would certainly destroy their martial ability.

Although the meridians in his arms still hurt, Ye Chen started to laugh.

Both of the soul stone and storage ring were essential for the high rank warriors, the latter was used to store objects, while the former provided Yuan Qi which was needed for training. Also, the soul stone was even more rare as it could not be manufactured, it could only be created by nature and was rated as low, mid, top, or extreme grade according to its quality and purity.

Normally, it would take more than five years to train from Mortal Realm Stage 1 to 10; more than ten years to train from Early Condensing Reality Stage to Late Stage; it would take at least twenty to thirty years to train from Early Claspng Yuan Realm to Late stage. Altogether, it would take at least fifty years.

Fifty years was a long, horrifyingly long time.

However, it was different if a warrior had soul stones. Because, besides the Mortal Realm which required a warrior to train step by step, once a warrior reached the Condensing Reality Stage, he could absorb the Yuan Qi from a soul stone and speed up the process. According to experienced warriors, the quality of the Yuan Qi in the soul stone equaled the natural Yuan Qi times five, which meant, besides the issue of reaching new power level, it could speed up the

warrior's normal training speed by four times.

In another word, you could only reach your potentials when you had soul stones.

Especially for martial geniuses who jumped power levels in an inhuman speed, with the help of soul stones, they could reach their full potential.

Ye Chen did some quick calculations: there were at least ten thousand soul stones in that storage ring, each soul stone was worth at least a thousand silvers, which meant they were worth ten million silvers in total.

Ten million silvers was a huge amount of money, it was the amount a middle class family would spend in their lifetime.

I can never show it to anyone. I have to keep it as a secret until I get powerful enough.

Ye Chen thought to himself.

Forcing himself to let go of the soul stones for now, he took out the two manuals.

The first one was a Fist Art manual – Domineering Fist, a low rank Earth Realm Skill. The summary read:

A warrior had to have extreme confidence, never give up. Otherwise, the true power of the Domineer Fist could not be performed.

There were totally four movements:

The first movement, Dominating Walk!

The second movement, Lone Domination!

The third movement, The Rulers!

The fourth movement, The Aura of Domination!

Warning: The Fist Art is extremely powerful. Before achieving Reality Qi, the warrior should have an extremely fit body, otherwise injuries might occur.

The fourth movement – The Aura of Domination was very deep, it required not only a strong body but also great Real Qi to reach its peak.

Even though the manual was only a low ranked manual, Ye Chen was excited about the Earth Realm Fist Art. Because only a core disciples could learn a Low Rank, Earth Realm martial art. For inner court disciples, they could barely even peek at any Low Rank, Earth Realm martial arts, not to even mention the privileges of outer court disciples.

Ye Chen took out the second manual and opened it.

It was a body boosting manual.

Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell. Low Rank, Earth Realm. It was a manual from hundreds of years ago.

A warrior could store more Yuan Qi when mastered; if it was trained by a Mortal Realm warrior, it would boost up the warrior's body and enable him to absorb the Yuan Qi from the soul stones without concerning the safety issues.

There were five spells in Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell:

The first spell, Power Enhance!

The second spell, Power Balance!

The third spell, Pure Jade Body Enhance!

The fourth spell, Broke Jade Reborn!

The fifth spell, King Kong Jade Body!

The first and second spells were focused on body boosting, warriors with a strong body could jump to the third spell; if a warrior could reach the highest level, he would be invincible to those of the same cultivation.

It was another low rank Earth Realm manual!

## Chapter 28 – The Weird Fish

After the excitement of discovering the storage ring and the soul stones, Ye Chen felt nothing looking at the low-rank Earth Realm manuals.

Putting away the manuals, Ye Chen took out one last object.

It was a long saber with a scabbard.

Carved on the scabbard were mountains, rivers, birds, and fish. The handle was quite long and its guard was shaped into a tiger's head with an open mouth that was swallowing the blade.

Ting!

As Ye Chen took out the extremely sharp saber, a bright beam of saber Qi shot out, leaving a one-meter-long mark on the wall.

What an excellent saber! It's imbued with its own Qi! Ye Chen's eyes brightened because he knew a saber imbued with saber Qi was not a Mortal Realm weapon, it was a Heaven Realm weapon. His Ye clan also had a family heirloom sword called The Last Shadow, it could slice through the air without any restraint, killing people without them noticing.

Similarly, the saber he was holding probably would have cost at least a million silvers.

The only downside of this was that Ye Chen did not use sabers, he had only



used and preferred swords because, in his mind, the sword was widely considered, by warriors, to be the king of weapons. While more than half of the warriors chose to train in swords arts, only a few could truly master it.

The scary saber disappeared into the scabbard, Ye Chen's eyes moved back to the burnt floor. If I am right, the owner of this stone house must have died from failing to breakthrough, burnt to ashes by the flame of Reality Qi. And naturally, the storage ring on the owner's hand fell off and landed in the ashes.

Bowed in front of the ashes three times, Ye Chen mumbled: "Elder, although you did not leave much behind but they are all very useful to me. I, a junior apprentice from the Sky Cloud Martial School, Ye Chen, hereby bow before you, I hope you will not blame me for taking away your relics."

While bowing, thoughts floated around in Ye Chen's mind, from the things that were left behind, this elder must have a high power level, at least above Claspng Yuan Realm or even reached the Astral Reaching Realm, too bad that he still ended up going too far, being destroyed by his obsession, which would be another lesson about the difficulty of training martial arts, not only does one have to be able to defend against outside factors, but he also has to be careful about the demons inside himself.

Stuck inside the underworld, there was no way of knowing the time. With nothing else to do, Ye Chen started training the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell.

He had already mastered the first spell, and the unity stage of the second spell, all he was lacking was the ability to create the Heavenly Strength inside his body like Sister Xu Jing did before.

What was Heavenly Strength?

One of the best horses on the market was called the Amber Horse, it could run so fast that it looked like it was flying and it had an extremely strong body. Their striking power could reach two thousand pounds standing still. And that was just from using the Heavenly Strength.

Right then, Ye Chen had already reached about one thousand and five hundred pounds which was not far from the target, two thousand pounds. But he knew the closer he got, the longer it would take him.

He took out few bottles of body boosting ointment, took off his clothes, and started to rub the ointment onto his body, carefully, not leaving any spots until his skin shone with oil. Ye Chen then started his fist art training.

He was still training the King Kong Fist Art.

The higher you trained a fist art, the more effectively it would train the body. However, the King Kong Fist Art, that he was performing, was different from usual, Ye Chen was combining it with the second movement of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell. Practicing both internal and outer martial arts together, the effects were even more obvious.

“King Kong River!” “King Kong Mash!” “King Kong Ocean!” “King Kong Unlimited!”

Going through all the movements of King Kong Fist Art, Ye Chen slowly lost himself in practicing, forgetting about everything around him.

Vaguely, he could hear his blood pumping inside his body like a river. But on

the contrary, he could feel his heart beating more and more slowly, yet more and more powerfully, like drums shaking every bone.

No one knew how long it had been before Ye Chen suddenly opened his eyes, his body shifted, his punch landed on a huge gray tree branch.

Boom!

The huge branch was extremely tough and only responded with a few cracks.

What a tough tree! But my power has increased quite a lot, it should be one thousand and six hundred pounds now! The Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell was surprisingly effective.

In the short time of an hour, Ye Chen's power had increased one hundred pounds which was never going to happen with only King Kong Fist.

After a short break, Ye Chen felt a bit hungry, all of those movements had drained his energy.

Walked towards the river, Ye Chen thought, those fish in the river should be eatable, right?

The river was very deep but it was very clear, Ye Chen could see some shadows moving around under the surface. The small ones were one meter long, the big ones were almost three meters long. They swam in an extremely fast speed, they just shook their tails and they would shoot out eight meters, away from his sight.

Picked up a rock, Ye Chen grunted, “Now!”

With his thousand pounds’ power, the little rock in his hand was sharper than an assassin weapon, it drew a straight line into the bottom of the river.

Whoosh!

All of the sudden, a dark shadow twisted and appeared out of the river.

The water splashed everywhere, it was a dark brown weird looking fish. There were spikes near its gills and it had a sleek muscled body with dented skin.

It opened its huge mouth full of sharp teeth and jumped at Ye Chen’s head.

Ye Chen gave it a light smile, bowed a little, and hit the fish in its stomach.

Chin!

The weird fish’s skin was like steel, which surprised Ye Chen. He knew his punch could turn a huge stone into dust, but, somehow, it could not break through this fish’s defense.

Pow!

The weird fish bounced back half meter from the punch, however, its long slim tail swung towards Ye Chen, it was so fast that it stirred up a strong wind. Even Ye Chen did not want to take it.

At this deadly moment, instead of backing out, Ye Chen took out the blade, from his new storage ring, and swung it at the fish.

Whoosh! The fish's tail was cut off.

And the weird fish fell back into the river, it hurriedly swam towards the deep, afraid to attack Ye Chen again.

Ye Chen forced a smile, he knew it would not be this easy if he did not have the blade. He would probably still be struggling to break its defense. However, the weird fish did not seem to carry Beast Qi, so it could not be a beast of some sort, so it must be a powerful ancient creature.

The fish's tail was a meter long, thick as the bowl, and should be enough to fill up Ye Chen.

Ye Chen carried a flint and steel, everywhere he went, he quickly made a fire and started to barbecue the fish.

Fifteen minutes later, a great smell, which Ye Chen had never smelt before, spread around Ye Chen, making him salivate.

Grabbing the fish tail, Ye Chen bit into it. The fish meat was so tender that he almost bit his tongue.

Unbelievable! This fish meat is like both beef and chicken, it has this rich taste that I cannot describe with words, extremely chewy. Wait! Why is my body

starting to heat up?

After he swallowed the fish meat, Ye Chen felt a warmth moving around his body, all the way into his stomach and, from there, it spread all over his body and into his muscles, blood, even bones. One wave after another, all he could feel was the warmth.

## Chapter 29 – Heavenly Strength Achieved!

About fifteen minutes later, the heat finally wore off and Ye Chen could feel an endless stream of energy coming out from inside of his body continuously. The energy invigorated him and he felt like he could kill an adult tiger with one punch.

Did that fish meat just boost my body? Ye Chen's face was full of joy as he carried on munching on the fish tail, stuffing it all in without much chewing.

Whoosh!

His body started to heat up rapidly and black sticky gooey stuff was seen coming out of his pores on his skin, accompanied with by a bad odor that almost caused Ye Chen to black out from the smell.

"I can't take it anymore, I really need to cleanse myself!" Ye Chen could not stand it anymore and dived into the river full of strange fishes.

Splash!

When the water splashed onto his body, Ye Chen felt his temperature go down. Ye Chen felt extremely relaxed as he felt all his pores over his body open up and be refreshed.

However, while Ye Chen was enjoying the moment, the residents of the river were not.

The strange fishes nearby heard the noise and was irritated by the filth streaming from Ye Chen and attacked Ye Chen in retaliation fiercely.

Ye Chen sneered as he took out his great blade and swung out.

One, two, three...

Totally, there were nine fishes were cut in half without being able to fight back, all by that one attack of Ye Chen's.

One by one, Ye Chen threw all of their bodies onto the land, saving them for later.

After a quick rinse, Ye Chen came out from the river. As he shook off his the dripping water, he felt his body had lightened and power increased. Besides that, Ye Chen could feel the fish meat in his stomach had already been digested and felt intense hunger pains.

The largest fish of the nine was about one-meter-long. Ye Chen picked up three of them, gutted them, then rinsed them out in the river. He then skewered them and started barbecuing again.

Soon, a delicious smell spread out in the cave.

My power had already increased a lot, I wonder if I could gain Heavenly Strength by eating all these fishes. Power over two thousand pounds was called Heavenly Strength, some people attained Heavenly Strength when they were eight or nine years old, while some people died still unable to attain it, and that was the difference between geniuses and mortal people. Normally, it would take



Ye Chen at least a week to reach the level of power with the help of Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, but now with the fish meat, he not only fed himself but also reached his goal, a perfect win-win scenario.

After eating the three fishes, more black gunk appeared on Ye Chen's skin, but there were far less and much clearer than the first time.

Suddenly, Ye Chen felt a sharp pain from his stomach accompanied by a loud rumbling. Ye Chen's face soured as he ran to a hole and squatted as his innards unloaded itself.

It was like an exploding volcano; the place was contaminated with an unbearable odor. After finishing his business, Ye Chen did not feel the expected weakness of such a violent expulsion, rather, he felt quite relieved. Those were the leftover black stuff that did not come out Ye Chen's skin.

While being naked, Ye Chen sprinkled some vanilla powder around to mask the horrific odor, then he walked towards the river again.

Once again, he washed away the black gunk on his skin. His skin felt smooth like silk, tough like steel, and impervious to all blades. His body looked like it had been trained thousands of times, his muscles sleek, and shoulder wide and strong.

Ye Chen calmly felt the changes as his body continued absorbing Yuan Qi from nature. The Yuan Qi was also changing slowly as its speed slowly increased and was continuously being mixed with the Qi inside his body.

The Qi tornado in his Dantian gradually condensed as the pressure increased

rapidly.

It seemed that not only my body has been strengthened, but the speed of absorbing Yuan Qi had also increased, which means I have broken past that bottleneck of Heavenly Strength.

Ye Chen's power had already reached beyond two thousand pounds and was reaching three thousand pounds at an inhuman speed. Comparing physical power just alone, Ye Chen was already as powerful as Xu Jing already.

...

Eating fish, training his fist art, and purifying his Qi Ye Chen passed time slowly.

One day, Ye Chen once again stood in front of the gray humongous tree.

If I could punch this huge tree in half, then my power has reached three thousand pounds. Then I can easily train the third spell of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell. Once I mastered the third spell, I could use the Yuan Qi from soul stones instead of the nature Yuan Qi which would massively increase my training speed.

In Ye Chen's mind, his future was cleared and all planned it all out.

He!

Let out his breath, he started to use his power, he then punched the tree.

Crack!

The next second, the top part of the tree started to fall down then hit the ground with a loud sound.

Yes! I did it! Ye Chen took a deep breath. It was even more powerful than I thought! It should be around three thousand five hundred pounds.

Although there was no way to know for sure, but according Ye Chen's instinct, it had only been three days, perhaps even less.

Within three days, he had already mastered the second spell of the Pure Jade Body. Even Ye Chen was shocked by his own training speed, he could not help but think how strong his power would continue to grow, it might even reach beyond five thousand, or even ten thousand pounds.

Shaking his head, Ye Chen could not imagine such power.

As time flew, Ye Chen began to become bored. This place is so depressing, completely cut off from the outside world with no sunlight, it was fine for one or two days, but if I have to live here everyday, I am afraid I will go crazy!

Made up his mind, Ye Chen decided to leave this place.

He stared at the river, deciding to get keep those strange fish in his storage ring before he left. Ye Chen figured the value of the fish should be more than ten thousand silvers, especially that three-meter-long huge fish whose tail alone could outshine those other little fishes.

Thought of that, Ye Chen took out his great blade and dived into the river one last time.

The river was very deep and pitch dark. However, Ye Chen already expected the darkness, he threw out a couple Night Shine stones.

Swoosh!

The river started scrambling, a huge shadow swam towards the opposite side.

Where do you think you are going?

Ye Chen accumulated his Qi and waved his blade.

The bright blade Qi was unstoppable; it was like a lightning chasing after the shadow. Shoo! The shadow froze in the middle of the river.

Ye Chen did not want to take any risk, he swung his blade at it again.

Exactly as Ye Chen expected, the huge shadow struggled for a while making the water around it kept moving, blurring Ye Chen's sight.

Obviously, it would not be a problem for Ye Chen. With his Qi, Ye Chen grabbed the shadow effortlessly, then his feet pushed the water, his whole body jumped out of the river.

Ye Chen threw the fish body onto the ground then dive back in the river.

One, two, five...

Until there was no longer any more fish, Ye Chen finally gave up.

It's time to head back. That beast would not still be there waiting for me, right? Ye Chen was still a bit worried, the powerful rank 4 beast was impossible for him to beat. Even if he managed to have ten thousand pounds of power, he still would not have a chance. Unless he reached the Condensing Reality Stage.

Followed the paths he came, Ye Chen carefully walked back.

There was light in the far distance which would be the entrance. Ye Chen held his breath, he tightened the blade in his hand, walked towards the exit without any sounds.

## Chapter 30 – Li Bu

As Ye Chen walked out, he was greeted with a sight. The entrance was a mess, there were broken chips from the wall everywhere, the rock wall covered with scratches that were inches deep which made the rock wall looked like it was made of tofu.

Ye Chen was glad that beast was nowhere in sight, but did want to linger, so he started to run down the path he came.

He had learned his lesson, this part of the mountain was extremely dangerous, so he jumped from one tree to another instead of running on the ground while pushing his soul force to its peak, stopping at any sounds and patiently waiting until the sounds stopped.

It was almost the afternoon; Ye Chen finally came to the location where he hid his big leather bag.

Hm? Someone there? Hiding behind a huge tree, Ye Chen's eyes sharpened.

Under the huge tree, were three teenage boys standing there, one of them carried a huge leather bag which was exactly the one Ye Chen left there few days ago.

“Haha! We are so lucky! We could even find demonic beast materials just by walking around. And there is even a pellet in there, adding them all together, they might be worth of at least twenty or thirty thousand silvers.”

The older teenager said sarcastically: “I wonder what kind of idiot would hide the beast materials on a tree and think that no one would find it, what a joke.”

The other teenager said pleasingly: “Zhang Kun, if it wasn’t for you spotting the bag on the tree, we would have never known!”

Zhang Kun replied with pride: “Of course, it is lucky for you all to follow me. After my cousin Zhang Haoran becomes an inner court disciple, no one would dare to look down at us!”

“Of course, of course!”

The two nodded with respect.

Ye Chen could not take it anymore, he walked out from behind the tree, “Put down the bag.”

Zhang Kun turned to look, “You again!”

On the day of the Mu Ren Gang, Zhang Kun was guaranteed third place with the help of his cousin Zhang Haoran. However, Ye Chen came out of nowhere and stole his third place causing Zhang Kun much unresolved anger and grief.

“Zhang Kun, who is this brat? Shall we teach him a lesson and make him kneel down and bow to us?” The teenager with a square face read Zhang Kun’s face and knew that Ye Chen offended Zhang Kun somehow.

“Yah, I am very good at dealing with these kinds of lowly rank outer court

disciples, making them beg for mercy is so simple. Hey, little brat, why don't you crawl over here!" The Rank 9 Mortal Realm teenager did not take Ye Chen seriously, his face was full of disgust.

Zhang Kun sneered: "He offended my cousin so it will definitely not end well for him. But before that, let's beat him a little and show him what kind of people he just messed with."

Ye Chen said in a cold voice: "Are you done? Put down the demonic beast materials and slap yourself ten times, then perhaps I will consider letting you go."

"What?!"

Heard Ye Chen's words, the three were surprised. It was not their first time encountering an arrogant person but it was definitely their first time encountering an arrogant person with such a weak cultivation. Their faces distorted as they felt the anger and outrageousness wash over them.

"I dare you to say that again." Zhang Kun did not even try to cover his killing intent in his eyes. "If you kneel down and apologize, there might still be hope for you."

"No need to talk to him anymore. Brat, go die!" The teenage boy with a square face took one step forward and extended his right palm towards Ye Chen's face.

If this aggressive palm attack landed on Ye Chen, even if he did not die, his looks would be forever ruined.



“Arrogant.” Although the opponent’s cultivation level was two ranks higher, Ye Chen completely ignored it as he casually walked one step closer. His body appeared in front of the teenager and Ye Chen’s right hand reached out and grabbed the opponent’s neck before slamming it down.

Boom!

Suddenly, a shallow pit had formed in the ground, the square-faced teenager’s head the center of the one meter pit, there was no way of knowing if he was alive or dead.

“Bastard, you dare hurt my people? Prepare to die!”

Zhang Kun and the other teenager were shocked, as they recovered they furiously attacked Ye Chen together with their strongest skills.

“Limitless Hands!”

“Breaking Cloud Palm!”

Under the pressure of two powerful attacks, the ground under Ye Chen started to shake, the hard cement-like ground cracked and broke. Ye Chen stared stonily at the two before stretching out with his two fists towards his two opponents.

Boom! Boom!

“What happened? Isn’t he only Mortal Realm Rank 7!” The two were shocked as their bodies flew in the opposite direction while blood poured out of their

mouths.

Zhang Kun's face flashed sinisterly as he threw out a dark light ball.

"Die! When you are in hell, don't forget it was I, Zhang Kun, who killed you!"

Swish!

The dark light was actually a poisonous willow dart flying at an extremely high speed. It was only shot out a moment ago, yet it was already in front of Ye Chen.

While Zhang Kun was sneering, his face froze as he saw Ye Chen catch the dart with two fingers.

"Impossible! My hidden weapons arts is top notch, even among Mortal Realm Stage 10 warriors!" Zhang Kun could no longer hold himself, he fell on the ground. His face was a mixture of shock and anger.

Ye Chen could not care less and shook his hand, sending the dart back the way it came, "I hope you carried the antidote with you."

Fwhip! The dart hit Zhang Kun's arm and the poison immediately invaded inside his body.

"Asshole! I will kill your whole family! My cousin will not let this go!" The poison on that dart was the Five Steps Snake Poison! Normal people and Mortal Realm warriors would definitely die after a painful infection, even Condensing Reality warriors may face death under this poison. Zhang Kun's face paled as he

was terrified that he would die before he could take the antidote. He immediately took out a bottle, unplugged it, and poured it all over his wound.

Ye Chen anger stirred when he heard the threats against his family, and his rage took over as he pushed his Golden Swallow art to its limit and jumped out towards Zhang Kun, his figure blurred like lightning.

Right then, suddenly Ye Chen heard a grunt.

“Piss off!”

Out of nowhere, a human figure appeared in front of Zhang Kun.

Ye Chen could not stop his body midair, so he threw out a punch at the figure.

The strong wind that arose from the punch gushed out with such force that it pressed the grass down. Ye Chen floated back on the ground, staring at the teenager in front of Zhang Kun.

“Li Bu.” Zhang Kun’s voice was full of surprise and relief. Li Bu was one of the top outer disciples. He and Zhang Haoran were at the peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10. However, because he had failed to break through after a long time, he had locked himself away in hopes to have the breakthrough before the end of the year. Because of that, he had missed the last Mu Ren Gang, otherwise Wu Zongming would not have been able to take the second place.

“Li Bu, he poisoned me! Kill him for me!” Zhang Kun was badly wounded and blood gushed out as he spoke.

Li Bu said calmly: “A Mortal Realm Stage 7 warrior beaten you? You are such a shame compared to your cousin. But don’t worry, I would show this fool how it feels like to kneel on the ground and beg for life.” Zhang Haoran was regarded as a young genius with much potential, however Li Bu also was a person of much prestige.

Turned around, Li Bu said with an interest: “Little brat, I will give you a chance now: if you kneel down and apologize, I will let you go. Otherwise, I will show you what I can do.”

---

#### Editor Note:

Aiyah, I feel really dumb. Sheryl just told me Soul Force was used pretty much everywhere, in pushing his physical body to the limit, in sensing the area, and other things. It was previously translated as soul power. The direct translation is literally soul strength/power.

## Chapter 31 – The Yuan Qi Pellet

“I also will give you a chance, if you leave right now you can leave unharmed.” Ye Chen only used fifty percent of his power before and felt confident of success.

Li Bu laughed loudly and harshly, however, he did not try to mask the killing intent in his laugh at all. He was truly pissed off.

“It looks like you are just too stubborn to give up. Kneel!” Laughter still could be heard as Li Bu’s attack launched towards Ye Chen. In the air, Li Bu’s blade light flashed, cutting through air with its powerful aura.

Ye Chen stood still, he looked like he was shocked by the blade light.

Seeing this, Li Bu sneered. What should I cut off first? His arm? One of his ear? Or both?

Hm, want to fight back?

Li Bu saw Ye Chen putting his right hand on his sword, his eyes seemingly empty yet purposeful.

Chin!

The next second, a bright sword light appeared from nowhere, it shot out at an unbelievable speed before stopping and disappearing back inside its scabbard.

Li Bu stood there in shock as he could not believe what had just happened, he looked down at his stomach. A hole had appeared on his lower left stomach that went completely through his body, causing his clothes to drip with blood.

“No! No! I had reached the peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10 one year ago, how could I be in this state with one exchange?!” Li Bu had a scary look on his face that contrasted with his weak state.

Ye Chen casually said: “I will spare your life today. But if you mess with me again, I won't let you off so easily.”

Picking up his big leather bag, Ye Chen walked away without looking back.

...

Windy Town's medicinal shop.

The owner looked at all the demonic beast materials on the counter with great surprise. It was not because there was something wrong with the beast material, rather it was because the one selling them was only a Early Mortal Realm Stage 7 warrior.

“Red Shell Spider, nine hundred silvers. Ground Cracking Centipede, one thousand two hundred silvers. Red Burning Bird, one thousand three hundred silvers. Ground Snake, eight hundred silvers, ..., Tiger Wolf Beast, one thousand one hundred silvers. In total, twenty-eight thousand eight hundred silvers in total.”

“Change them all into gold notes like last time and give me a Evil Warding potion please.” The beast pellet was more effective than just using the soul

stones alone, Ye Chen would never want to waste any useable source.

“You have demonic beast pellets?” The shop owner’s eyes brightened.

“Yup, why?”

The owner replied: “Could you sell it to us?”

Ye Chen shook his head, “I don’t need more money, I need cultivation resources to help save me time.”

“What if I exchange it with a Yuan Qi pellet? To be honest with you, the owner of this store is experimenting with a new type of pill which required a lot of beast pellets, plus a Yuan Qi pill is definitely better than a three-month demonic old beast pellet, and will also save you money from buying a Evil Warding Potion.”

Yuan Qi pill? Ye Chen froze a little. This kind of pill could save me three months of hard work. Although a demonic beast pellet is pretty good but after using the Evil Warding potion, there would only be two or three months left which would not be very efficient. I might as well take take the Yuan Qi pellet and it would save me ten thousand worth of Evil Warding Potion.

“Okay, let’s exchange.” Ye Chen nodded.

...

Walking out of the drug store, Ye Chen walked towards the restaurant.

“Please sir, I am begging you! Give something to my poor daughter to eat, I would do anything.” In front of the restaurant, there was a middle-aged woman holding the hands of a little girl. Both of them were wearing dirty tattered clothes with dirty faces that looked like they were starving for a while now. The little girl was sucking on her thumb, looking at the people come and go with a forlorn hope in her eyes.

Sadly, no one would even look at them. The people walking past ignored them because many thought they were too dirty to even be there.

Ye Chen felt bad for them so he took out a silver from his pocket and threw it over to them.

He had never lacked money. A normal meal would cost at least ten or twenty silvers which was nothing for him.

“Thank you! Thank you so much!” The middle-aged woman was so happy that she could not even talk anymore. She and her poor daughter had been in Windy Town for days, but the only people who gave her money were basically peasants or other beggars, not a single rich people had given them even a look.

Ye Chen waved his hand and started to walk into the restaurant.

The little girl sitting next to the middle-aged woman stared at Ye Chen’s back, her eyes filled with inexplicable emotions.

...

On the second floor.



Sitting by the windows, Ye Chen was still thinking about what had happened.

Compared to warriors and rich families, peasants and poor people truly live a hard life. I could make hundreds of thousands of silvers just from killing a beast, while they struggle to pay just for a single meal. Countless people starved to death this way. Is there really a destiny for everyone?

Only now had Ye Chen began to fit in this world. Feeling the emotions for this world, seeing the unfairness of this society, and caring for others in this world.

Before today, he always thought himself as an observer, an outsider.

I give up, there are thousands and thousands of poor people in this True Spirit Continent, I can only help one person at a time.

After eating, Ye Chen left the restaurant. The mother and daughter had disappeared. Perhaps they had left somewhere to buy steam buns. Ye Chen sighed and walked towards the Windy Mountain far away.

Back in his yard, it was already dark and a bright moon slowly climbed up the sky.

Ye Chen was showering to wash away the dust and thoughts of town. Then, he sat on his bed and prepared to take the Yuan Qi pellet.

Gulp

Swallowing the Yuan Qi pellet, Ye Chen sat straight up and started to revolve his Pure Yuan Art.

Boom!

There seemed to be a huge sound in his internal world. The Yuan Qi pellet melted and became extremely pure strands of Yuan Qi that mixed with his Qi to spread throughout his body in a rush.

One hour passed.

Ye Chen opened his eyes, there was a sharp bright flash in his eyes.

It boosted me up from the Early Stage to the Late Stage of the Mortal Realm Stage 7 in just this short amount of time. I don't recall the Yuan Qi pellet being this powerful... Ye Chen guesstimated that it would take him three months of hard work to reach the Mid Stage Mortal Realm Stage 7, since his body strength was not at the peak level yet. It could barely be regarded as mid rank, nowhere near those peak level martial geniuses. The only advantage he had was his powerful soul force which gave him an extremely strong comprehension that allowed him to master all kinds of martial arts and even reach levels beyond the ones listed on manuals. However, that was not related to the growth of his cultivation.

Perhaps that fish meat changed my body? Or attaining Heavenly Strength caused my body to lack Yuan Qi, making this Yuan Qi Pill even more efficient?

Ye Chen knew he could not find an answer now so he began to think about how to start training the third spell of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell.

Unlike most martial arts, body boosting arts were extremely hard to train in. It had nothing to do with a warrior's comprehension, it was all about the training method used and plain luck.

Ye Chen had everything ready. This third spell of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell was a bit different than most body boosting arts. Warriors had to absorb Jade Qi from stones and blend it into his body.

## Chapter 32 – The Martial Plaza

Thinking about it a little more, Ye Chen opened the box next to the bed and took out a blue jade with dragon carvings on it. The jade piece looked quite old and was broken in some places due to age.

Ye Chen saw this jade when he was at the medicinal shop and thought it looked quite special. However, the Ye Chen was not able to figure it out at the time so he bought it on a whim to take home to observe a little more closely. Inside the jade, there was an continuous blue flow circling inside the jade that was continually fixing the broken part.

“Inborn Blue Jade!” Ye Chen exclaimed in surprise.

There were two different kinds of jade, Natural Jade and Inborn Jade. Natural Jade was jade that had grown naturally after thousands of years; while Inborn Jade was jade that was infused with natural Yuan Qi. The true value of Inborn Jade was that it contained a type of lingqi.

It was very hard to differentiate between the two. If it was not for Ye Chen’s powerful soul, he would not be able to tell.

With this inborn blue jade, it could save me so much time! What a great timing! Ye Chen laughed, he held the blue jade tightly in his hand.

Eased his excitement, Ye Chen took a deep breath, pushed his Pure Yuan Art to its peak then traced the Qi through his meridians into the inborn blue jade.

Pop!

The Yuan Qi and Jade Qi blended perfectly and became a different type of lingqi which was extremely thick and viscous. It was a bit hard for Ye Chen to pull it out using his Yuan Qi. The viscous Qi could only be absorbed one strand of it at a time and each time took longer than the last time.

Fine, one strand at a time. No choice but to take it slow.

Without the original Jade Qi to restrict it, the lingqi slowly flowed inside Ye Chen's body, it spread out all over Ye Chen's body instead of blending with his Qi.

Reciting the mantra of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, Ye Chen used his powerful soul to gather the loose Qi of the lingqi and cycled it through his body repeatedly. Eventually, the Qi was completely absorbed by his body. Ye Chen's body slowly changed with each strand being absorbed, his skin flushed with a pure white jade sheen.

...

Six days passed.

Ye Chen felt close to mastering the third spell of the Jade Body, his body had absorbed one hundred and thirty-three strands of lingqi Qi. During this time, the Inborn Blue Jade slowly lost its sheen and its lingqi. Every time Ye Chen used his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, his body would shine like a jade giving you a sense that Ye Chen was invincible.

Picked up a fruit knife from the table, Ye Chen bit his teeth and used about

sixty percent of power to stab himself in the chest as he rotated the Jade Qi in his body.

Swoosh!

The fruit knife broke! Although fruit knife was not the great steel sword, it still was quite sharp. However, there was only a little white mark on Ye Chen's skin.

Releasing his control over the Jade Qi, Ye Chen's skin softened again as the white jade sheen slowly dissipated. His skin returned to its usual soft silky feel.

I have not even mastered the third spell yet and I already have this kind of defense. I wonder what it would be like when I reach the fifth spell.

Ye Chen had previously decided that he was only going to use soul stones to cultivate after he had mastered the third spell, but now he decided he was ready. His meridians and body were tough enough to handle the soul stone without having to worry the side effects.

Ye Chen grabbed a low grade soul stone. The result was exactly like he imagined, although the Qi from a soul stone was still insanely pure and wild, Ye Chen had it all under control.

Turning the Yuan Qi from the soul stones into his Qi, Ye Chen managed to break through to Early Mortal Realm Stage 8.

Looking at the low grade stones in his hands, Ye Chen thought: A low grade soul stone that would last at least five days for an Early Condensing Reality warrior should last about ten days for my Mortal Realm Stage 8 cultivation. That

elder who passed away had left me a great treasure!

...

In the Martial Art Plaza where the disciples of Sky Cloud Martial School compete.

Today was just another ordinary day, there was no competitions or events. However, there were still quite a lot of people gathered in the plaza, most of them were outer disciples.

Three inner disciples stood in a row, two of them were talking.

“Huang Bingwen, don’t you dare underestimate Zhang Haoran! His reputation of being a genius is not just for show!”

“Elder brother Cui was right. But don’t you dare fail and bring us inner disciples shame!”

Wearing yellow martial robes, Huang Bingwen said with pride: “Of course, I would never underestimate him. I gave him two months back then because my Maze Heart Spell had almost reached the fifth level. And each level of Maze Heart Spell is exponentially more powerful than the last. That time period was for me to breakthrough so I can crush him!”

It had been two months since the incident in the Pavilion of Martial Arts and Huang Bingwen did not forget about the bet with Zhang Haoran. Plus, he finally had someone to test the strength of his fifth level Maze Heart Spell.

“Maze Heart Spell Level 5? Good! Good! You hid it so well! Now, Zhang Haoran would not dare to disrespect his seniors.”

“Oh! I heard you also made a bet with another outer disciple?”

Huang Bingwen sneered: “Him? He was just a Late Mortal Realm Stage 6 brat. I could kill him with one finger.”

“Just Late Mortal Realm Stage 6? How arrogant of him!”

“Haha, the outer disciples this year are way too arrogant. I want to go up and teach them a lesson myself.”

However, today was all about Huang Bingwen. Upon his arrival, all the people stopped chatting to look at him which made him feel extremely prideful.

Standing on the stage, Huang Bingwen yelled: “Zhang Haoran! Come up here and accept your death!”

Among the crowd, Zhang Haoran who wore blue martial robes sneered: “Huang Bingwen, if you want to die just ask nicely. But I think you should take care of the other brat first.”

Zhang Haoran had already heard about the news that his cousin had been badly wounded, but he was not in a hurry to seek revenge. For him, seeing Ye Chen being stepped on in public by Huang Bingwen was not a bad alternative at all. There was no need for him to do it personally. Plus, if he battled with Huang



Bingwen before Ye Chen, then he would never be able to witness his enemies killing each other.

“Fine, it won’t take long to beat him, and there’s nowhere for you to escape anyways.” Huang Bingwen did not care for little things like this, he scanned the crowd, looking for Ye Chen.

In the crowd, Wu Zongming was a little bit worried: “Ye Chen, although you had already reached the Late Mortal Realm Stage 9, but the opponent had been in Early Condensing Reality Realm for a long time now. Even the martial arts he trained in are all higher ranked than yours, it would be extremely hard for you to win! Just surviving and not looking bad will be enough.” In the history of Sky Cloud Martial School, there were only a few outer disciples that had beaten inner disciples, and all of them were the once in a century martial geniuses. Although Ye Chen was not bad, it was still very difficult for him to beat Huang Bingwen, impossible really.

Ye Chen smiled a little and squeezed through the crowd. Ye Chen walked towards the battle stage and he said loudly: “No need to look for me, here I am.”

Huang Bingwen’s eyes focused on Ye Chen, he laughed: “Took you a while to get here. What? Too afraid to come out?”

Shoo!

Taking a small leap, Ye Chen landed on the huge battling stage.

“To be honest, it is a mistake not to fight with Zhang Haoran first, because you will never have a chance to.”

Huang Bingwen had never cared for an outer disciple and flicked his eyebrows, “Shameless. Soon you would know how it feels like to be stepped on.”

---

#### Editor’s Note:

Couldn’t figure out a better name for linqi. It translates to spirit, reiki (the japanese form of linqi), and a bunch of other things that don’t really fit/flow well so I just chose to keep it in the pinyin form. I am currently deciding between vital energy and lingqi so comment below on which one you like better!

If you want to know more: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reiki#Etymology>

## Chapter 33 – A New Power Arise

Huang Bingwen stared at Ye Chen.

The crowd murmured, “This little brat is trying to get himself killed... You know him?”

“I do, his name is Ye Chen. He was only Mortal Realm Stage 4 half a year ago. But now, I can’t even see his cultivation anymore, no wonder he is so cocky.”

“Useless! How fast cultivate is pointless in these fights! Although Huang Bingwen four hundredth ranking quite low among the inner disciples, he is still an Early Condensing Reality warrior. Outer disciples like us much too far away from him to even think about challenging him.”

“True, well, Ye Chen asked for it.”

“Little weasel, it’s time to die!” On the stage, Huang Bingwen did not accumulate Qi, instead he took a step forward and jumped. His black claws screeched as they sliced through the air towards Ye Chen’s head.

“Demon Hunter Claw!” Ye Chen recognized the martial art the opponent was using. This claw art was a Top Rank Mortal Realm Art. With its one claw attack, it could tear apart iron and steel; it could break through the any warrior’s, of the same cultivation, Qi guard, extremely powerful.

Shoo!

Ye Chen's feet lightly touched the ground, before flying backwards, avoiding the claws.

Huang Bingwen's face soured, he yelled with anger: "Trying to hide?! Dragnet Attack!"

An Early Condensing Reality warrior could already manifest his Zhen Qi into the air and kill people at a distance. Huang Bingwen's hands seemed like they were tearing something up in the air, his dark ghost claws formed by his Zhen Qi shot out in the air, the dark shadows spread out the stage.

"Zhen Qi Manifestation? It is indeed a bit tricky." Regarding a fight against a Condensing Reality warrior, the most disadvantaged part for a Mortal Realm warrior was that the latter could not attack from distance. At best, he could bring up a palm wind from three or four meters away which was not very powerful especially when compared to manifested Qi.

On the contrary, Condensing Reality warriors could kill their opponents from more than ten meters. There were even some high rank martial arts that could only display its potential at a certain distance.

Pushing his Golden Swallow Art to its peak, Ye Chen's body shifted, leaving an afterimage. He dodged the shadows of Huang Bingwen's claws, and rushed towards Huang Bingwen.

"Ha! I have been waiting for you."

Huang Bingwen did not expect Ye Chen to be this fast, but he was not worried at all. His claws reached towards Ye Chen once again.

Halfway through, Ye Chen lowered his body, his right hand was on his sword handle as his gaze on Huang Bingwen sharpened.

Ten steps away!

Seven steps!

Five steps!

A sword light shot out between the shadows of claws like an eel traveling through the gaps between rocks.

“Skyfall Sword Art, seventh movement: The Search of Opportunity!”

Sometimes, the simplest martial art was the most powerful one because of the lack of flaws.

The sword light had not reached Huang Bingwen yet he could already feel it. The sword light gave him a chilly pressure that gave him goose bumps. He was shocked that Ye Chen was much more powerful than he thought.

But he was still a Condensing Reality warrior! After all, he had been adventured a couple of times outside of the school and been in a few deadly battles. Controlling his emotion, he yelled out with anger: “Maze Aura!”

Bloom!

The air vibrated. The space seemed to be twist one meter around Huang Bingwen, causing Ye Chen's sword light was blocked out.

"It's Maze Heart Spell level 5!" Some of the inner disciples frowned as they looked at Huang Bingwen with respect.

Ye Chen also frowned, before he hurried to back out.

Huang Bingwen said with great confidence: "With my Maze Aura, all your attacks are useless, and my attack can even affect your balance."

"Perhaps not." Ye Chen had a plan.

"This time, I will beat you with one attack." Huang Bingwen's face was quite ugly, he had planned to beat Ye Chen with one movement then teach him a lesson. However, he never expected Ye Chen to be this difficult. Ye Chen was fast like a frightened deer, leaving no trace. All his previous attack did not even touch Ye Chen, therefore, although Ye Chen's sword art seemed simple, the pressure from that sword light pushed him to use the fifth level of Maze Heart Spell that he was planning on saving.

"Swimming Dragon Steps!"

His body expended, Huang Bingwen took few big steps towards Ye Chen just like a dragon taking off.

"Huang Bingwen had to use his Maze Aura and Swimming Dragon Steps... This

Ye Chen is that powerful?” Most of the inner disciples had never fought against Ye Chen before so they did not know the reason.

“According to my observation, I think Ye Chen is definitely a sword genius.” An inner disciple said slowly but seriously.

“How so?”

“I used to watch the head disciple Zhu Mei battling with other core disciples, she was also using Skyfall Sword Art, although it was not the most powerful but it was very hard to defend, because it was not limited within movements.”

“You are overestimating him. How could you compare him with the number one disciple?”

“Don’t ask me, I don’t know either. I think only the true experts within the inner disciples or core disciples could understand what is truly happening.”

“Nevertheless, this Ye Chen is going to be famous.”

Facing Huang Bingwen running towards him, Ye Chen squeezed his eyes. As he started to also walk forward, he began the ninth movement of his Skyfall Sword Art – Shining in the Dark.

The next second, sword light filled the whole stage.

Huang Bingwen’s eyes were wide open, he never knew how powerful the Skyfall Sword Art was. However, it was still not enough to scare him. His left

hand formed a claw while his right hand squeezed into a fist then threw both of them out.

“Demon Catcher Hurricane Claw, Mad Fist!”

The sword and the claw touched, making loud noises that sounded like fire crackers.

Ye Chen floated off the ground out of nowhere, he flew slightly backwards, then squeezed his left fist. There was a dim gold light covering the fist, he threw it against Huang Bingwen’s right fist.

Boom!

Two different kinds of power pushed against each other before exploding, causing wave after wave of wind to fly out.

Earlier, the reason Ye Chen floated back was to release some of the power. Right after the explosion, as his feet touched the ground, his aura became like a huge mountain breaking apart into an avalanche, he stabbed towards Huang Bingwen with an inhuman speed.

“Not good!”

Huang Bingwen was caught off guard, he pushed his Maze Aura to its peak while he tilted his head.

Swoosh!



The Sword was pushed away slightly past Huang Bingwen's face, only leaving a little scratch and a drop of blood on his cheek.

"King Kong Limitless!"

Ye Chen yelled. His left fist was shining with gold bright light; it was like made of pure gold. Ye Chen threw it at his opponent, bringing up an unbearable loud sound.

Huang Bingwen's eyes opened up wide like it was going to tear apart his head, he howled: "Brat! I AM GOING TO KILL YOU!"

Huang Bingwen's Maze Aura broke as he flew out; he took Ye Chen's punch on his chest, breaking his ribs and causing him to cough out blood.

Ye Chen also flew out, he was surprised that Huang Bingwen could still throw out such a strong punch after getting hit. The punch landed on Ye Chen's left chest.

However, Ye Chen had already secretly activated his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell causing the punch only damaging his meridians a little and shocking his Qi. Other than that, there was no damage done.

"Ye Chen won?! So powerful!" Under the stage, the crowd was in deep shock, they kept looking at Huang Bingwen and Ye Chen who was still standing unbelievably and repeatedly.

Zhang Haoran sneered, he was indeed surprised. Two months ago, he could not care less for Ye Chen but now he could beat an inner disciple. However, in his opinion, Huang Bingwen was not his equal, because he was also a Condensing Reality warrior now.

“Ye Chen, do you dare to take three punches of mine?” Without much movement, Zhang Haoran appeared on the stage.

---

Zhen Qi: Previously translated as Real Qi. The best name I can think of in English would be True Qi, however this can cause confusion between just regular qi, yuan qi, and true qi/zhen qi.

Let us know below whether you would like it as Real Qi, Zhen Qi, or True Qi!

## Chapter 34 – Ten Thousand Pounds Punch

Zhang Haoran did not even try to hide his zhen qi, all of the inner disciples could feel the zhen qi accumulating inside of him, some of them said surprisingly: “It’s zhen qi, he reached the Condensing Reality Stage!”

“Another genius. With his potential, I am afraid he will surpass us in no time.” Before, although Zhang Haoran was a rare genius, none of the inner disciples really cared about him since most geniuses with a fast cultivation speed would not be as good as some of the disciples who had trained for a longer period of time. A genius was only recognized when he reached the Condensing Reality Stage.

“Sigh, we will have to work harder now. Being overshadowed by a younger disciple is not a good feeling and there are still a lot of people up there on the ranking charts that we need to catch up to.”

“Yeah, besides the core disciples, there are a couple of insane people among the inner court disciples that had already mastered their Top Rank Mortal Realm martial arts to its highest stage. I don’t know how we would ever be able to compete with that.”

“The higher the rank, the hard it will be to master. Even if I am offered a low rank Earth Realm martial art, I could not even train it.”

During the continuous chatters among the inner disciples, Wu Zongming walked up the stage.

“Zhang Haoran, you are not the only person who had reached the Condensing

Reality Stage.” There was an aura made of real Qi appeared around Wu Zhongming, stirring up all the dust on the stage.

Hearing Wu Zongming, a lot of the people showed their interest.

Zhang Haoran sneered: “When you were a Mortal Realm warrior, you were not strong enough to be my opponent, and now that you are a Condensing Reality Stage warrior, you still aren’t.”

Wu Zongming said: “Whether I am or not, we shall see when we battle. Ye Chen, you step down first.” Honestly, he was not confident in facing Zhang Haoran at all. The reason he decided to step up is because he wanted to save some time for Ye Chen to regain his Qi.

Ye Chen smiled, said to Zhang Haoran: “You want to exchange three attack?”

“I know you had used up a lot of your Qi in the last fight and it would be unfair for you to battle with me. So you only have to endure my three punch, if you could take it without being badly injured, then you win. How is that?” With both his hands behind his back, Zhang Haoran’s cloths started to move even though there was no wind.

Wu Zongming interrupted: “Ye Chen, don’t say ‘yes’. Even though you are talented, he is specialized in physical martial arts!” Then, he yelled at Zhang Haoran: “Where is your honor?”

Zhang Haoran replied casually: “Did I say anything about him not using sword?”

“I will agree to it as you wish, we do have some business that needs to take care of.” Ye Chen took a deep breath, slowly calming his boiling Qi.

“Fine!” Wu Zongming knew there was nothing more he could do so he left the stage.

Looking at Zhang Haoran’s confidence, Ye Chen remembered what happened in the welcoming lobby one month ago. It was an exciting battle of one of the top four core disciples Liu Wuxiang was battling with the second ranked core disciple of Sky Cloud Martial School Luo Hanshan.

Now he finally had a chance to exchange three moves with someone, and although their cultivation was nowhere near those two monsters, this was still quite exciting. He felt a rush of pride about his growth.

“Let’s start!” Ye Chen did not seem to want to use his sword, putting both of his hand together in front of him.

Zhang Haoran snorted at him and said despicably: “Without your sword art, you probably would not even be able to take my second attack. Do you think I am a loser like Huang Bingwen that would be so easy to fight against?”

“To be honest, I had not used all of my real power when I am battling with Huang Bingwen.” Ye Chen smiled.

“What? He is only Mortal Realm Stage 9, and he did not use all his power when he was fighting Huang Bingwen?! Is he bluffing or is he lying?” All of the suddenly, the plaza was filled with clamoring.

In the crowd, Huang Bingwen went pale after hearing Ye Chen. He felt humiliated and said with great anger: “What the fuck? If I didn’t go easy on you, I would not have lost!”

The inner disciple who was standing next to him sighed, then he said: “Huang Bingwen, no matter if you admit to it or not, you lost. Period.”

“I... am just...” Huang Bingwen squeezed his fists until his bones started cracking.

Heard Ye Chen, Zhang Haoran laughed brightly: “Great. Take my first attack, Ice Snow Cosmo!”

When he was still at Mortal Realm Stage 10, Zhang Haoran’s Soaking Cold Palm was already extremely powerful. Now that he had reached the Condensing Reality Stage, a fierce snow wind appeared once he started to use his martial art, the huge stage was already covered with ice frost as it spread rapidly towards Ye Chen.

Halfway there, all the snow wind combined together and formed a little hurricane, that continuously attacked Ye Chen.

Chin!

Ye Chen’s right hand tightened, making a sound like metal hitting each other. He threw it out without hesitation.

“How could this happen? It should only be a high rank Mortal Realm martial skill, how could it be so powerful under Zhang Haoran?” Huang Bingwen seemed

shocked and frustrated.

Zhang Haoran obviously did not hear Huang Bingwen and would not care even if he did.

In the snow wind, Ye Chen could not hear nor see, however, he had an extremely great senses, he could “see” Zhang Haoran’s movements clearly even his facial expression.

“Die!”

Zhang Haoran threw his palm towards Ye Chen’s chest.

“Perhaps not!” Ye Chen was waiting for him, he threw out a punch.

Boom!

The snow wind exploded in the air, Ye Chen’s fist pressed against Zhang Haoran’s palm, no one is backing out, they seemed to froze on the stage.

Understanding the situation, Zhang Haoran smiled, his left hand changed into a fist then smashed into Ye Chen’s chest like a lightning.

However, what surprised him was that he was also attacked on the chest somehow.

The crowd could hear two loud hitting sound clearly. The two on the stage

both backed out, both staggered.

“Haha! I had already completely mastered Iron Shirt, you could never hurt me.” Zhang Haoran dusted his chest, seemed not hurt at all.

The cloths in front of Ye Chen’s chest was completely tear apart. He looked down, there was a thin layer of frost over his shiny muscle. He used his Qi and shook off the frost easily, it became crystal like dust.

Looked up, Ye Chen said: “You did not hurt me either.”

Zhang Haoran face changed, “...truly did not expect you to train a body boosting martial art like I. I underestimated you. However, this punch, is the end.”

“Tiger Roar Dragon Fist!”

Compared to few months ago, Zhang Haoran could use his Tiger Roar Dragon Fist even more smoothly. The powerful blue Qi accumulated on top of his palms, making tiger roars. Then, it drew a beautiful line before flying straight towards Ye Chen like a flying dragon taking off.

Taking a step forward, Ye Chen pulled back his right fist a little and grunted with a low voice to himself: “Now that I have more than ten thousand pounds of power, I could kill an elephant instantly, today I will let you be the first one to see it!”

Shoo!



Formed a firm stance, Ye Chen's punches were more powerful than any weapon in the world. He could tear apart air and compress the space in front of his fist to form a thin layer of Qi.

Two fists clashed. Shockingly, Zhang Haoran was blown away, he coughed out a huge chunk of blood in the air.

## Chapter 35 – Mortal Realm Stage 10

Standing in the middle of the stage, Ye Chen looked like a drawn sharp sword radiating with power.

“This guy’s strength is horrifying. If beating Huang Bingwen proved his strength, then beating that genius Zhang Haoran proves he is an unimaginable genius.”

“Right, it is not too uncommon to see a genius challenging those who have a higher cultivation than themselves. What shocked me is that the one that Ye Chen beat was also a genius, it's like watching someone our age challenge the top ranked disciple.”

“That’s impossible. Among our generation in Windy Nation, no one could challenge our top disciple.”

“It was only a metaphor!”

With one knee on the floor, Zhang Haoran put his left hand on his broken right arm. He looked up as his lips, that were were soaked with blood, cascade blood down his chin. He said with a murderous tone: “No one could beat me, Zhang Haoran. Not even you. Ye Chen, just you wait. When you become an inner disciple in five months, I will come challenge you again.”

The crowd all shook their heads as they all thought: Ye Chen who was only at Mortal Realm Stage 9 has already beaten you, would you even have a chance when he becomes an inner disciple?

Ye Chen was actually quite impressed by Zhang Haoran. Although he was arrogant and disrespectful to the point that he thought superior to everyone else, he did have a passion for martial art. He never knew when to give up. In the contrary, Huang Bingwen decided to hide in the crowd once he failed. He probably is planning some evil plan at this moment. His personality would never accomplish anything.

“Okay, I will give you a chance to redeem yourself when I become an inner disciple within five months.” To warriors with such passion, Ye Chen took every word they said seriously.

Staggering to stand up, Zhang Haoran gave Ye Chen a deep look. “You are strong. I, Zhang Haoran, have lost fair and square. However, if you want me to just give up...sorry, it’s impossible.”

After speaking those words, he walked down the stage staunchly.

“Wow! A man with such honor, nice!” Around the stage was the viewer seats, it was about two meters high filled with different levels of seats. At the top of the viewer area, there was a teenage boy in green, he was waving a fan in his hand, looking very relaxed.

On his side stood a teenager with iron sword, he said casually: “Becoming a Condensing Reality warrior at the age of thirteen should make him one of the top five warriors of Sky Cloud Martial School in the past decade.”

The teenager in green nodded, “When he matures a bit, he will qualify to be our opponent. As for the other one, I am very curious about how he gained such strength. Even core disciple Xu Jing cannot compete with him in strength.”

“He is of no concern. After he reaches Condensing Reality Stage, his power will not be useful anymore. Although his defense martial art is quite unique, I have never seen anything like it before.”

“Everyone has their own secrets, didn’t you just get a sword art in that Ghost Cry Forest?” the teenager in green laughed, then said: “Let’s go! We are wasting time.”

The other teenager nodded. The two left the Martial Plaza.

If someone saw these two, they would definitely recognize them. The teenager holding a sword was one of the top ten inner disciples in the Sky Cloud Martial School, he was called Li Kuang. His sword art could even frighten ghosts and was nicknamed the Ghost Sword among the northern part of the Windy Nation; the teenager in green was called Fei Shaoqing had an even higher rank than Li Kuang. Although he was young and calm, he was extremely brutal in fights, his opponents usually ended up either badly wounded or dead.

The two had just came back from a mission for the Sky Cloud Martial School. Upon seeing the crowd at the martial plaza, they came to check it out.

On the way back home, Wu Zongming looked at Ye Chen curiously, “Ye Chen, your improvement is through the roof! Now, you are way ahead of me.”

Ye Chen could not explain everything that had happened to him, he said: “Really? I did not think so.”

“You were only Mortal Realm Stage 6 during the Mu Ren Gang and now you are already at Mortal Realm Stage 9. And your strength is incomparable to most

warriors of the same stage. When you reach the Condensing Reality, I wonder what kind of monster you would become.”

“Hm, I probably just had an enlightenment.”

Heard his comment, Wu Zongming nodded surprisingly, “It is not unreasonable for such a thing to happen. Some people happen to be extremely ordinary in the beginning, then suddenly arise to fame and greatness. And you, my friend, might be one of them.”

Ye Chen did not know how to reply.

...

Time passed. Ye Chen was not gloating as people expected. Instead, he was usually found either locked himself in his room or at training at the edge of the mountain.

During this period, Zhang Haoran and Wu Zongming had officially become inner disciples.

Each inner disciple had their own identity mark secured to their waist. Their names were inscribed onto the back of the mark, and could access the Pavilion of Martial Arts freely with their identity mark, read top rank martial arts, and take on school missions to venture outside school grounds where they could make their own path and reputation.

Of course, going on an adventure outside the school was very dangerous. In the past decade, numerous inner disciples had died. Some of them were killed in

assassin ambushes; some of them were killed by different bandit gangs, some of them were killed by other martial institutions, while some of them just completely disappeared.

However, the leaders of the Sky Cloud Martial Art did not come try to decrease the death rate of their inner disciples. Because, no matter how pretty a flower in the greenhouse is, without surviving the wind and the rain, they could never amount to anything. They could only grow stronger when they were allowed to leave their “greenhouse”, so that they could build a stable base for their future.

However, Zhang Haoran and Wu Zongming did not need to do missions yet. Within the first half year after becoming inner disciples, the leaders allowed them to focus on training and boosting their power level. After half year, they could go outside to train their mind and potential.

While everyone else was working hard, Ye Chen was working even harder.

Everyday besides training the third spell of his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, he would train with soul stones.

After absorbing all the lingqi from the inborn blue jade, he did not need more Jade Qi. All he needed to do was to master his body art, connecting between every inch of his blood and flesh; once the connection was built, his defense would be flawless and unbeatable.

Ye Chen had to admit, the meat of those strange fish had helped him a lot, otherwise he would not be able to master the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell to the level where even an Early Condensing Reality warrior could not injure him.

Now that he had finished his supply of fish meat, Ye Chen's power had stopped at twelve thousand pounds. From now on, every ten pounds would be ten times harder than the last, he almost reached his body's limit. If he wanted to continue increase his power, he had to make some kind of breakthrough.

...

At night. A bright moon had come up high in the sky.

The moonlight was clear like a crystal, going through the windows and brightening the room. Outside the windows, the shadow of the trees blanketed large swaths of area, creating a beautiful aura.

Ye Chen sat on his bed, with one soul stone in each of his hands.

Before, Ye Chen was afraid to use two soul stones at a time. Although this method could increase his training speed two times faster, the powerful Yuan Qi from the soul stones could destroy his meridians and cripple his martial arts cultivation. However, his body had been strengthened. With his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, using a soul stone was nothing to him, in fact, using two at the same time would be just the perfect amount of energy his body could handle.

With the huge amount of Yuan Qi from the soul stones nourishing his Qi, the Qi tornado inside Ye Chen's Dantian kept expanding, eventually it filling up his Dantian completely. Fortunately, with the protection from Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell and the fish meat, his Dantian had become stronger; otherwise, there might be a huge problem.

Boom!

The Qi tornado suddenly compressed thirty percent of its original size.

Ye Chen opened his eyes, slowly he breathed out an impure breath, “I finally reached the peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10. Reaching the Condensing Reality Stage was harder than I expected.”

To reach the Condensing Reality Stage, the warrior had to liquidize his Qi into zhen qi which was an extremely hard process. After that, it would only get harder and harder, it might cause rebound for failing to breakthrough. Comparing to others, Ye Chen already had it easy. Because his Pure Yuan Art was famous for its purity, he could control it without restrain.

However, when he was about to officially try to reach the next level, he had to stop converting Yuan Qi from soul stones. Because no matter how pure his Yuan Qi got, it required time to combine with the Qi inside his body, making it quite difficult to reach the Condensing Reality Stage.

Standing up and walking to the windows, Ye Chen looked at the view outside the windows, he mumbled to himself: “The Ye family meeting is in two weeks time, it is time to go home.”



## Chapter 36 – Ye Tang

There was twelve thousand miles of distance between Sky Cloud Martial School and Maple Leaf Town where the Ye family was located. Even with a fast horse, it would take at least twelve days to get there. If he stopped over somewhere in the middle, about a half a month of time would be just enough for him to get there on time.

However, the world was different from the one Ye Chen came from. A fast horse was not a big deal. The fastest horse in Windy Nation was the half demonic beast horse – Ghost Eyes Jade Lion. It had the blood of a demonic beast and could run three thousand three hundred miles a day; it came from Demon Grassland in the east side of Wind Nation, and was extremely hard to catch and train. Even the lowest ranked one would sell for at least ten thousand gold, it could even sell up to twenty thousand gold when the supply was low.

Although it was very easy for warriors to make a fortune, only a few warriors could afford a Ghost Eyes Jade Lion. The reason for that was because the warriors also needed to spend a lot of money. For example, for Ye Chen, he went out four days and made twelve thousand silvers. However, after he bought a pellet, he only had a small fraction of that twelve thousand left. The higher the rank of a pellet, the more pricey it got, there were even pills that were even more expensive than a Ghost Eyes Jade Lion.

After asking for an one and half month leave from the outer court elder, Ye Chen hurried to start his journey home.

He had bought a blue haired horse for transportation awhile back, it could run one thousand two hundred miles a day, and costed him five thousand silvers. As for a dark brown horse could run two thousand miles a day, it was not because

he could not afford it, but rather he was too weak to control it at the time he was looking for a mount.

“Hiya!”

At the bottom of the mountain, Ye Chen’s legs clipped on the horse’s stomach, it started to run.

The closest city after Windy Town was the Windy City. As he went through the south door of the Windy City, the view in front of him suddenly widened.

The sky was bright blue, the clouds were white like milk, and the waves of wind could be seen billowing across the green grassland.

In that beautiful scene, Ye Chen rode his horse like lightning which made him have the urge to scream aloud in wonder, because he would never think that one day, he could become a warrior like the ones in those novels he used to read. Even though this was not really true adventuring, Ye Chen felt excitement bubble up as he rode out

A couple of riders came close to Ye Chen on their horses, “Hey, little bro, we are heading to the Silent Hills to kill some demonic beasts, how about we count you in on one hunt?”

Ye Chen did not want to slow down, he turned his head and said: “Sorry, there is something I need to do.”

“What could be more important than making money? You know, with our power level, killing a rank 3 beast is a piece of cake.” Their leader rider who wore

a cone-shaped bamboo hat had an anxious look on his face, he was still trying to convince Ye Chen.

Ye Chen sneered: "Sorry, farewell."

"Hiya!"

Ye Chen shook the reins and his horse increased its speed to its limit.

"Pft, this brat is pretty smart, we could not even trick him." The rider with a bamboo hat made a cold expression.

"Boss, why didn't you just block him? He had a blue haired horse, he must be loaded. If we took him, it could have lasted us for months."

"Yeah! He seemed like a young master of some family."

The rider with a bamboo hat said: "What the heck do you know? That brat had sharp eyes and faint killing intent. He must not be an easy target. We might've failed horrified."

Changing topics, he changed his tone, "It's almost the end of year, there are plenty of disciples heading home from all the small martial institution around. There are lots of opportunities, there's no need to risk our lives."

"True. No wonder you are the boss, you could plan so far ahead!"

“Alright, let’s go.”

The gang turned their horses, started to head back to Windy City.

In the far ahead, Ye Chen sneered: this gang must have thought him as those cocky inexperienced disciples, once he agreed to join, they would reveal their true intention, kill him and rob him.

Unfortunately, although Ye Chen hadn’t been out much, he did not lack of experience, thanks to all those xianxia novels he read in school.

...

Ten thousand miles away, another teenager was also riding a blue haired horse and was also hurrying on his journey.

The teenager wore a white training robe and had a great saber on his back. His handsome face slightly resembled Ye Chen.

“The Purple Sun Martial School is not far ahead, I promised my big brother that we would meet up there, I wonder if he is waiting for me.” The teenager stared at that tall mountain far away, it had an odd purple aura around it, very powerful, with waves of purple Qi coming from the east.

After a while, the teenager arrived in the bottom of the mountain.

“Ye Tang, here you are.” A teenager with big eyes and thick brows said loudly. In the bottom of the mountain, there were a lot of disciples from the Purple Sun

Martial School who were all wearing purple gears with a burning sun embroidered in the back.

The good looking teenager ride his horse and came closer: “Big bro, your Purple Sun Martial School’s environment is quite nice, unlike Northern Snow Academy which is always snowing, and there is always at least one meter of snow on the ground.”

The teenager with big eyes and thick brows was the eldest son of Ye Chen’s eldest uncle, called Ye Feng; the good-looking teenager was his blood related younger brother, called Ye Tang. Ye Feng had joined the rank 8 Purple Sun Martial School, while Ye Tang had joined the rank 7 Northern Snow Martial Academy, both of them were much stronger than Ye Chen.

Ye Feng said: “I wanted to go to Northern Snow Martial Academy, but sadly my power was not enough to join.”

Ye Tang smiled, he studied Ye Feng, “Big bro, you had reached the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 9, good job!” Jumping from Mortal Realm Stage 4 to the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 9 in three years, was considered to be pretty good, ranked to be around a middle or high talent. The martial school would definitely give him a lot of attention.

“I can’t compete with you; you probably had already reached the stage 10 right?” Ye Feng could not see through Ye Tang, and honestly, he never was able to in his life.

Ye Tang said with pride: “I just barely was able to breakthrough to the Condensing Reality Stage, so my Zhen Qi is still not stable yet.”

“You reached the Condensing Reality Stage?” Ye Feng was surprised. Although the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10 was only one step away from the Condensing Reality Stage, but the process of breaking through was extremely difficult, a lot of people with high potentials would spent half of year to be able to reach it to finally become an inner disciple officially.

There was no need to boast in front of his own brother, so Ye Tang changed the subject and said: “Enough about this. Speaking of which, the annual family meet was almost here, I wonder what’s going on with that loser Ye Chen, don’t tell me he still has not even reached the Mortal Realm Stage 7? It is such an embarrassment to be in the same family with him.”

Ye Feng put away his envy, he laughed: “The higher it gets, the harder it becomes. I don’t even think that he could reach the Late Mortal Realm Stage 6. Well, when we get home, let’s break it down for him to show him how much of a loser he is.”

“Thinking of which, I really missed that period of time back home. Being served everyday, and we could even mess with Ye Chen when we felt bored. But he was actually quite a tough kid, he never told his father and mother about it.”

“Pft, what’s the point telling his parents. Our father is the inner sect elder of the Purple Sun Martial School, he is not scared of Ye Chen’s father even though he is the leader of Ye family.”

“Oh! Speaking of which, is father coming home this year?”

Ye Feng nodded, “Father said he would be few days later than us, so we should head back first.”

“If that’s the case then we should head back now. I think Ye Chen has probably already left Sky Cloud Martial School. What about Ye Xuan? Do you know what her cultivation level is?” The only relatives in the Ye family that could earn Ye Tang’s respect had to be Ye Xuan. Back in the day, when he was at the Mid Mortal Realm Stage 5, she was at Late Stage 5 which caused him to be quite depressed for a long time. But three years had passed and he should be much stronger than she is now.

Ye Feng had already given up on chasing after Ye Tang, especially when he was his own little brother. When Ye Tang rose to fame in the future, it would also be helpful for him, “In this True Spirit continent, there are hardly any women warriors, maybe her cultivation level is almost the same as me.”

Ye Tang agreed, “Let’s go!”

“Okay!”

The two whipped their horses and shoot out like lightning.

## Chapter 37 – Luo City, The Family of Ye

Qingyuan River, the largest river in the Luo City, had a total length of two thousand seven hundred miles with the widest part being twelve miles, and the narrowest part only two or three miles.

In the river, a lot of boats came and went, like stars in the sky.

Holding the reins in his hand, next to the horse, Ye Chen stood in the front of the boat with his eyes fixed in the distance. There was a huge city, looking square and strictly shaped. There was a high tower located in the middle of the city, that could be seen clearly even from afar.

“Youngster, are you heading home to visit your family?” The boatman who was paddling saw Ye Chen who wore blue gear and a great sword around his waist, who did not move at all, no matter how bad the boat was shaking. The boat man could not help his curiosity and asked.

Ye Chen nodded: “Yeah, I haven’t been home for three years!” Ye Chen missed the last two family meetings, because he did not want to embarrass himself. However, it was different this time, even if the family did not send a notification, he would still go home, just to take back his dignity.

“Yeah, you should go home, everywhere was nothing like home.” The boatman seemed to think of his wife at home, a smile appeared, replacing the tiredness on his face.

Ye Chen was actually torn as he was going to see his parents when he got home. Although he had fused with this world’s Ye Chen’s soul and completely



received his emotions, he was still the one controlling his body. In other words, the other mind had already disappeared, and this Ye Chen was still the 21st century Ye Chen.

The boat had arrived in the bay and Ye Chen threw a whole piece of silver to the boatman.

“Young one, this is too much.” The boat man froze a little bit, before uprightly informing Ye Chen.

Ye Chen waved his hand, jumped up the horse, and started to ride to Luo City which was not far away.

Watching Ye Chen’s disappearing back, the boatman was both envious and happy. He envied cool and relaxed Ye Chen that never had to worry about money. He was happy thinking about how happy his wife would be to know that he made ten silvers today, enough to buy some beautiful clothes for his wife and still would have some left.

...

Luo City.

Showing the city entrance guard his Ye Family name tag, Ye Chen rode his horse straight into the city.

The Ye family was located in the southern part of the Luo City. They had thousands of acres of land. In front of the front door, there were two stone lion sculpture with the height of two men. The door was dark red with shiny copper

nubs, and two giant door rings. The doormen's clothes were colorful and was styled like the ancient Chinese; they were obviously Mortal Realm warriors.

"Young master Chen, Young master Chen has come home." Hearing the horse steps, all the doormen followed the sounds. When they saw the teenager in blue, their eyes brightened, and they started yelling.

"Young master Chen, let me hold the horse." A doorman ran up to hold the horse.

Getting off the horse, Ye Chen asked: "Are my parents home?"

That doorman replied: "Your father and mother are both here, I had already sent someone to notify them."

"Okay, I will go greet them at once!"

Entering the gate, and following the doorman, Ye Chen arrived in front of the lobby.

Taking a deep breath, Ye Chen took a step inside.

The lobby was huge and fancy. In there stood a man and a woman, the man was about forty years old, his face was pale with no facial hair. He was very tall, and was radiating an invisible pressure just standing there, making people not dare to make any eye contact. The woman was about thirty years old, she was extremely beautiful with a classic elegant look, her eyes were bright like Ye Chen's, her body was slim like a teenage girl.

The two were indeed Ye Chen's father Ye Tianhao and mother Shen Yuqing.

"Father, mother." The moment he saw them, Ye Chen subconsciously knelt down and took a deep bow, it was like an invisible hand was controlling him.

Shen Yuqing was obviously excited, she walked over and held him up, and said: "Good to have you back! Good! Good!."

Ye Tianhao nodded with a smile, he was about to say something, but then he made a noise all of a sudden, "Hm? Chen'er, you reached the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10!"

"Really?" Shen Yuqing was too excited to see her son that she missed her son's rise in cultivation. On a closer look, they realized that Ye Chen's Qi was quite pure and abundant, almost at the point to be able to form Zhen Qi, the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10.

"Chen'er, what is going on?" Theoretically, Shen Yuqing should be happy, especially, as an outer elder of the Rudra School who had reached the Early Clasp Yuan Realm. Her husband was also the head of Ye family and thus, had always high hopes for her son, and was sad to see her son being bullied because of his inferiority. However, her son suddenly had suddenly become a genius, it was just too sudden for her.

Although Ye Tianhao did not speak, his eyes expressed the same thought.

Ye Chen had expected his parent's reaction and prepared a response, he cleared his throat and said: "I don't actually what happened either. One day, I

just had a sudden enlightenment then felt like training had become extremely easy, just like drinking water and eating.” The more complicated a lie was, the easier it was to be caught lying. Ye Chen understood this theory clearly.

“A sudden enlightenment?” Ye Tianhao did not understand.

Shen Yuqing thought about it and said to her husband: “It’s not like it never happened before, there was a disciple in our Rudra school who was quite ordinary when he had first joined, and was tested to only have a low potential. However, after a year or two, he surprisingly became enlightened, reaching the higher cultivation levels until finally becoming a core disciple.”

“So, our Chen’er is also a genius?” Ye Tianhao did not care about some disciple from Rudra School, he only cared about his own son.

Shen Yuqing said: “Technically, an acquired genius.”

“Whatever, he is a genius, haha, my son is a genius! I am so happy right now!” Ye Tianhao laughed.

Ye Chen watched his parents’ happy faces and said seriously: “Don’t worry, from now on I, Ye Chen will never be weaker than anyone else.”

“Of course, to reach the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10 from the Early Mortal Realm Stage 2 within just three years, who dares to say my son is weaker than someone?”

Shen Yuqing pushed Ye Tianhao a little, “I know you are happy, but Chen’er had a long trip, let him rest, and we can talk at dinner.”

“True, Chen’er, your yard is ready, go have a shower and relax.”

“Okay then, I am off.”

Leaving the lobby, Ye Chen followed his memory, and walked into his yard.

“Greetings, young master.” A teenage girl in green had already been waiting.

Ye Chen smiled: “Cui’er, long time no see, you’ve grown up.”

Cui’er blushed, and said: “Young master has also grown up.”

“Hehe, that’s true, is the shower ready?”

When Cui’er saw that Ye Chen was still as friendly as he used to be, she was relieved and replied: “Yes, young master. Follow me.”

...

In the bathroom.

The steam filled the room, making everything a blur.

After Cui’er left, Ye Chen took off his clothes and stepped in the wooden bucket.

“Ahhh, so nice!” Ye Chen exclaimed as he leaned back and laid down, he closed his eyes and thought of his past.

In the 21st century, I did not know who my parents were. I had been taken out from the orphanage, then attended primary school, then middle school, and then university. I was nothing special. I was just like everyone else.

He could not believe that he would have the opportunity to have his own parents in this world, and feel this kind of parental love, which he enjoyed and missed so much.

## Chapter 38 – The Winning Chance

The dinner was excellent, but of course, the main topic was not about the dinner.

“Chen’er, why didn’t you join the Rudra Martial School? If you joined, I could have take care of you.” Shen Yuqing was an outer elder of the Rudra Martial School. Although she was not as powerful as the inner elders, she was allowed to return home at anytime, plus only a two-day trip was not far from Luo City.

Ye Chen said: “I just want to try to live by myself for a while, besides I am doing great right now.”

Shen Yuqing sighed, “You are right, if you had gone to Rudra Martial School, you perhaps would not have gotten where you are now. I had almost ruined you.”

Ye Tianhao took a sip of his drink, he laughed: “Is there any hope for you to reach the Condensing Reality Stage soon? In a few months time, is the competition among the inner disciples of Sky Cloud Martial School.”

“Probably by the end of this month!”

“So confident.” Shen Yuqing put down the chopsticks in her hand.

Ye Chen explained: “There is already some Zhen Qi formed inside my body, plus I am also training the Pure Yuan Art which I had already trained to the Peak of fifth level.”

Gasp!

Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing were both shocked. In Windy Nation, there were many people within the five famous martial institutions training in the same Mortal Realm martial arts. There were also people training Pure Yuan Art in Rudra Martial School, but there was rarely anyone that could master the Pure Yuan Art to its fifth level when they were at Mortal Realm Stage, not to mention it was the peak of that stage.

Forcing a smile, Shen Yuqing said: “Remember back in the days when I was still an outer disciple, I was also training the Pure Yuan Art but I could only master it to the peak of level 4. I cannot believe my son has surpassed me.”

Ye Tianhao nodded, he had finally understood how much talent his son Ye Chen had. He knew his son was a genius at training martial arts and was definitely not any worse than most of the geniuses.

“Oh, I’ll tell you guys a bad news, Ye Tang and Ye Xuan had already reached the Condensing Reality Realm.” Shen Yuqing said seriously.

She was not planning to say it as she was afraid to hurt Ye Chen. But after pondering about it, she decided to say it after all, since he would come to know of it sooner or later.

Ye Chen nodded, “I already knew about Ye Xuan’s breakthrough. But there is something you might not know. Ji Xueyan had been to the Sky Cloud Martial School and asked to cancel our engagement.”



“Cancel engagement?!” The chopsticks in Ye Tianhao’s hand suddenly broke in half, as his face turned dark. He sneered “Yuqing, I told you, this marriage is not going to work out great. Now we have to deal with the consequences. Our son was rejected to his face. What more do you want from our Chen’er?”

Shen Yuqing froze for a while, then she thought of something and said: “I am like a sister to Ji Xueyan’s mother, I will go talk to her later.”

“To say what? That no one likes our Chen’er?!”

Ye Chen looked the same, he said calmly: “Don’t worry, it did not affect me in any way. If she wants to cancel it, then cancel it. I didn’t want to get married too early anyways.”

After seeing her son being treated unfairly, Shen Yuqing’s emotions turned bitter and said sourly: “She will realize the mistake she made in a few years time.”

“She already missed it. My son is a genius now, he could have all kinds of women if he wants.” Ye Tianhao was even more emotional than Shen Yuqing.

Not wanting to continue the subject, Shen Yuqing said: “Enough about Ji Xueyan. Right now, the most important thing is the family meeting at the end of the year. There are eighteen people attending from the Ye family. The top three could gain the full support from the family, and the champion could win a low rank storage ring.”

A low rank storage ring! Ye Chen was interested in it. The mid rank storage ring I have is too obvious, and not just the Condensing Reality warriors, even Clasp-

Yuan warriors might be interested in it. It is extremely dangerous to wear it all the time. If I have a low rank storage ring, then it could save me a lot of trouble.

“This annual family meeting, I shall be the champion.” From an outsider’s view, Ye Chen might seem to be arrogant, but he did not feel like that at all.

“Good. You are courageous, I approve. No matter whether you are the champion or not, your mother and I will make sure that you will have a low rank storage ring.”

Shen Yuqing nodded: “As long as you try your best, you can have anything you want. I have been an outer elder for so long, so I do have some savings.”

Ye Chen smiled, he knew he was lucky to have parents like this. However, he liked to win everything by himself. Of course, he could not say much now, he knew that his parents did not have any high hopes of him being able to win, since there was a huge gap between the Condensing Reality Realm and Mortal Realm.

After dinner, Ye Chen went back to his own yard.

The moonlight outside was bright. The whole house was completely quiet.

Inside his room.

Ye Chen sat on his bed, his breathing was firm and strong.

Unlike the quietness outside, there was a huge storm inside Ye Chen’s body. His Qi was rotation at a speed three times faster than normal .

And after completion of every circle, there was a tiny bit of liquidized Zhen Qi forming in the qi tornado in the middle of the dantian.

After an hour, Ye Chen opened his eyes, he mumbled to himself with a little bit of tiredness: “No wonder so many people had been stuck at the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10 for more than half a year. It is so hard to convert Qi into Zhen Qi. No matter how much of a genius you are, there are no short cuts.”

“But at this rate, I could reach the Condensing Reality Realm in ten days.”

Generally speaking, rarely could someone predict exactly when they would have a breakthrough. But Ye Chen was different, his soul power was twice as strong as a normal human being. His highest level of Pure Yuan Art had given him the purest Qi, allowing him to be able to predict the timing with a small chance of error.

Slowly breathing out impure air breath by breath, Ye Chen got off his bed and walked into the yard to practice sword arts.

...

On the second day, the Ye family started to become lively.

The family meeting had not started yet, as the top two geniuses in the family of Ye had not come home yet.

Ye Tang, Ye Xuan, these two were not only famous in the Ye family, the whole

city knew about them. One of them had reached the Early Mortal Realm Stage 5 at the age of twelve, while the other reached the mid Mortal Realm Stage 5. One of them had joined the rank 7 Northern Snow Martial Academy, while the other joined the No.1 martial institution of Windy Nation – the Emerald Martial Palace. They were both extremely powerful. Besides those two geniuses, Ye Feng also had quite a reputation that was only a bit weaker than the other two.

Besides these three, the Ye family also had a lot of other members that had just come home and was preparing to attend the family meeting in a few days.

Some of them had joined the martial institutions a few years ago, some of them had been out on their adventures, and others had followed their master and traveled the world.

For the servants in the Ye Family, it was always entertaining to guess who would be the champion of this year. Rumor said that they had already set a gambling pool.

The contestants that had the highest winning rate were obviously Ye Tang and Ye Xuan. However, surprisingly, Ye Feng was not the one in third place, instead he was fifth place. The third place was taken by Ye Hai, who had followed his master and traveled the world; The fourth place was taken by Ye Ming who had been training in the world; Ye Chen placed eighteenth, the last lowest rank.

Ye Chen had no idea about all of this. He wouldn't care even if he did.

## Chapter 39 – The Beginning of the Family Meeting

On the west side of the Ye family court.

A small group of people were walking, the one walking in the front was a sixteen-year-old teenager who wore a black robe and had a battle saber on his back; he had a stalwart face, and he exuded a murderous vibe.

“Brother Ye Hai, you are probably the only one that could compete with Ye Tang and Ye Xuan for the championship this annual family meeting.” The teenager who said this seemed to admire the teenager in black.

Ye Hai replied casually: “I had followed my mentor Duan Yueke since when I was thirteen. Over the past three years, I had travelled with him all over the world. I had been to the Demon Grassland in Windy Nation, the exotic Rudra Nation, and the extremely populated Black Dragon Empire. I had fought sharks in the Long White River; I had lived in the Nio Desert for a month, I had gone without sleep or food for three days straight. So for me, getting first place at our little family meeting is nothing special. As for Ye Ming, although he has also traveled around, he has only reached the Mortal Realm Stage 10 and isn’t someone I have to worry about.”

“Pft, you have traveled the world, big deal. But you had never spent time in a martial institution, so you would never know the true scope of the benefits that it offers.” From nearby, there were another three or four people who had approached, Ye Tang who was wearing white gear looked at Ye Hai provocatively.

Ye Hai glanced at Ye Tang, “Sure, the education system in martial institutions is very thorough. However, facing me who had killed dozens of people, how well do

you think you could perform?”

“Killing people? I thought you were going to say something more surprising.” Ye Tang laughed, he pointed at Ye Hai and said: “In our Northern Snow Martial Academy, all we do is train in our deadly sword art. Sorry to burst your bubble, but I also have killed dozens of people.”

“By killing, do you mean bullying people who are weaker than you? Have you ever challenged anyone who was stronger than you? Have you ever been in a deadly situation? Have you ever won a battle you were doomed to lose? No? You are nothing. You only kill to brag.”

Ye Hai threw out three rhetorical questions in a row leaving Ye Tang speechless. Then, Ye Tang finally retorted and said: “Nothing matters now, I will see you at the family meeting. Let’s go.”

After Ye Tang and his people left , the teenager that stood next to Ye Hai said: “Brother Ye Hai, I will support you. That Ye Tang is nothing special.”

Ye Hai shook his head, “No. To be honest, he is not any weaker than me, maybe even stronger. You know, the deadly sword art from the Northern Snow Martial Academy is the No.1 martial art in Windy Nation, and no one could compete with it. However, a battle is not only about the competition between power levels.”

“Oh, is there any new strong character in the Ye family?” Ye Hai asked.

“The top five are you, Ye Xuan, Ye Tang, Ye Ming and Ye Feng. The others are not even close.”

“What about that Ye Chen guy?”

“Ye Chen? He is still a loser, probably at Mortal Realm Stage 6 at best .”

“Weird. It has been five years now and he is still at Mortal Realm Stage 6. Are you sure he has only been improving at the rate of one stage per year?”

“Yes, of course. He has nothing to his name other than being the son of the leader. Such shame on our family.”

“Since there’s not that many powerful people, I have about a sixty percent chance of winning.” Ye Hai was very confident about himself. He believed that his past three years of experience were the perfect stepping stone for his bright future.

...

In the blink of an eye, three days time had passed.

The family meeting of Ye had begun.

In the morning.

Ye Chen had just finished cleaning up. After he straightened his clothing, he walked towards the court of Ye family with his great steel sword.

There were already plenty of people there. Almost all the servants and warriors that lived in Ye family had come to watch the competition. Besides that, some powerful people of Luo City had also shown up to see how powerful the new generation of Ye family was.

Looking around, Ye Chen found that a particular contestant seating area was relatively quiet and walked over.

On the VIP seats high up, Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing had sat together. On Ye Tianhao's right side was a middle aged man in expensive clothing. Although he was a very round and chubby man, it did not affect his powerful aura. He was obviously someone with power.

"Leader Ye, if I may ask, which one is your son?" The middle-aged man asked with a smile.

Ye Tianhao had already spotted Ye Chen, pointed at him and said: "Mayor Lin, that would be my son over there."

The middle-aged man was indeed the mayor of the Luo City who had the complete control over the army in the city and was also an Early Clasp Yuan Realm warrior. However, no matter who it was, their standing would be lower than Ye Tianhao. As the leader of one of the top eight families, a mere mayor could not compete with him. In other words, the whole Luo City was in control of the Ye Family. The mayor had to consider about Ye family's opinions when making any big decision.

Mayor Lin looked at Ye Chen, after studying for a while, he asked curiously: "It looks like the rumors are quite inaccurate. Your son is obviously at the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10, just one step away from Condensing Reality Realm."



Shen Yuqing, who was sitting right next to them smiled with pride, "To be honest, even we his parents, are also quite surprised. It seems like traveling to distant school has done some good for him."

"Haha, this year's family meeting will be quite interesting, I am very excited."

With his powerful soul force, Ye Chen could feel that there was someone staring at him, and even that there was more than one person staring. He noticed that some of the attention came from his parents and the Mayor, while some of the attention was from his third uncle and his son Ye Ming, and also focused on him was Ye Hai.

Ye Ming was at a lower cultivation than him, only at the Late Mortal Realm Stage 10. However, Ye Hai was much more powerful than Ye Chen as he had already reached the Early Condensing Reality Realm. Even if he did not have any powerful martial skills or arts, considering the fact that he had been traveling for so many years, he should not be underestimated. Also, his mentor must have taught him some powerful movements to help him become the best he could be.

"Interesting. Like I said, it's impossible to still be at Mortal Realm Stage 6 even after five years. It turns out that he had already reached the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10." Ye Hai nodded slightly, even though his face said otherwise, he did not seem to care at all about Ye Chen. In his opinion, only Ye Tang and Ye Xuan were his competition.

All of a sudden, there was an extremely powerful aura that appeared in the court. It made everyone present quiet down.

"Hahahaha... How would it be called a family meeting without me, Ye Batian!"

The crowd naturally cleared a path for him. A middle-aged bulky guy walked past, wearing a purple robe with a shining sun embroidered on his sleeves that had beautiful patterns around the edges. Wherever he looked at, the crowd stopped breathing so that they won't catch his attention.

This guy was indeed Ye Chen's eldest uncle – Ye Batian, an inner elder at the Purple Sun Martial Palace.

Beside him were Ye Tang and Ye Feng. Following Ye Batian, they felt extremely proud and confident, arrogantly looking down on everyone else.

But their extreme confidence was not unreasonable. Although Ye Batian was not as powerful as Ye Tianhao, his status was not any lower than Ye Tianhao. Sometimes he had even intentionally gave Ye Tianhao a hard time in order to embarrass him. In regards, Ye Tianhao could not retaliate since Ye Batian was an inner elder of the Purple Sun Martial Palace. He had already reached the Late Clasp of the Yuan Realm and had been called strongest warrior of the Ye family. Although Ye family was one of the top eight families, it could not compare to the rank 8 Purple Sun Martial Palace.

“Brother Batian, I did not expect this family meeting would bring you here.”

“Yeah, brother Batian, you haven't come home for years, right? After the family meeting, let's go out for drinks, as a welcoming party for you.” All the powerful people around tried to befriend him. Their attitudes were more friendly to him than to Ye Tianhao.

Ye Batian waved his hand, “Okay, I will be there just for you.”

Finished speaking , he walked up to the VIP seats. He stared at Shen Yuqing, signaling her to give up her seat.

Ye Tianhao had a bad look on his face, Shen Yuqing understood the situation and knew there was nothing she could do, so she stood up, “Big Brother, please sit.”

“Excellent. I will not reject your hospitality.” He sat down instantly and laid his palm on the table, making a huge sound.

Far away, Ye Chen’s eyes were full of anger.

## Chapter 40 – The Top Three

Thinking of the past, Ye Chen just started to realize why the Ye Chen from this world would not want to tell his parents about him being bullied; the biggest reason was because of the existence of Ye Batian. He always tried to cover his ass, even if it was his son's fault, he would deny it completely and make it look like it was someone's fault. So if Ye Chen mentioned about the bullying to his father, then it would definitely cause some conflict. Plus, even though Ye Tianhao was the leader of Ye family, there was still the inner elder union. There would be a lot of inner elders supporting him because he was the inner elders from the Purple Sun Martial Palace. So saying anything would not change anything, it might even make matters worse.

Also, it was degrading for Ye Tianhao to be involved in the younger generations' drama, which would exactly fulfill some people's intention.

Ye Batian had extremely sharp senses, he immediately noticed Ye Chen's attention; he seemed to be shocked by Ye Chen's power level, said to Ye Tianhao on his side: "Three years away from home, and the loser finally becomes a normal human being now. Too bad, he still won't be in the top three."

Ye Tianhao replied in a low voice: "Show some respect please."

The mayor Lin sensed the tension between the two, so he tried to be the middle guy and said: "Today is the family meeting, please don't make a fool out of yourselves. Brother Batian, let me buy you a drink someday."

"Haha, how could I say no to Mayor Lin's invite." Ye Batian also did not want to fight with Ye Tianhao now, he took upon the mayor's offer and let it go.

Ye Xuan just arrived when the battle was about to start. Along with Ye Xuan, there were also two other female disciples, both of whom were above Mortal Realm Stage 7.

Mayor Lin took a glance at Ye Xuan, then his eyes brightened, "This girl is so talented, so young but still she had already reached the Peak of the Early Condensing Reality Stage."

Ye Tianhao nodded, "That's true. Her training speed is regarded as the best in the history of Ye family."

"Ye Wenhao had got a good daughter!" Mayor Lin said it with a little bit of envy.

Ye Batian felt a little bit threatened, although his second son was a genius but he had only reached the Early Condensing Reality Stage two months ago which was obviously slower than Ye Xuan. The good thing was that she was his fourth brother's daughter, instead of his second brother's son. With this thought on his mind, Ye Batian glanced at Ye Tianhao.

Time was up. Ye Tianhao stood up, he yelled in a loud voice: "The Ye family tournament has officially begun. The rules are the same before: during the battles, deadly attacks are forbidden. If you hurt people intentionally, you will be punished for your behavior."

Finished speaking, Ye Tianhao looked at the third elder on the judge seat, and nodded.

The third elder was always the host of all the family activities, he cleared his throat, stood up and said: “There are eighteen contestants in total, all of you should go over to the wooden box and draw lots; the contestant who got No. 1 wooden stick would be competing with No. 2 contestant; the No. 3 contestant would be competing with No. 4 contestant, and so on and so forth. Now! Go get your wooden sticks, everyone!”

All the contestants could not be anymore familiar with the rules than they already were. They all ran towards the huge wooden box in the corner and reached to get their wooden sticks.

Ye Chen was the last one to get there, and he got wooden stick with the No. 7 on it.

After everyone was finished with drawing lots, the third elder yelled: “The family tourney begins! The contestant No. 1 and contestant No. 2, please get on the stage.”

The contestant No. 1 was not so famous, his name was Ye Chao; however, he had to face Ye Tang.

“I withdraw.” Ye Chao raised his hand, full of frustration.

Hearing him, no one laughed at him. One of them was a Mortal Realm Stage 8 warrior, while the other was an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior. There was no need to compete, it would just be a waste of time.

The third elder’s seat was not even warm yet, and he had to stand up again, “No. three against the No. 4 contestant.”

You had to admit, in the Ye family, there were still a few gifted disciples besides people like Ye Xuan. Contestant No. 3 and No. 4 were both at the Mortal Realm Stage 9, which led to them continuously battling in the middle of the stage. It was hard to tell who was winning.

“The Sunset Palm!”

“The Mountain Breaking Fist!”

The two did not want to struggle with each other anymore, they both used their best martial arts. The palm and the fist touched in the air.

Boom!

The No. 4 contestant was slightly weaker; he was forced to back out few steps. However, No. 3 contestant did not stop there, he kicked away the opponent after throwing a strong attack.

“No. 3 contestant Ye He wins!”

Then it was the battle between No. 5 and No. 6 contestants.

No. 6 contestant had won.

“No. 7 contestant Ye Chen against No. 8 contestant Ye Feng, on stage.” The voice was heard once again, Ye Chen took a deep breath, and slowly walked onto the stage.

Ye Feng had a very bad look on his face, he was expecting Ye Chen to be at Mortal Realm Stage six which would not be a threat to him at all; but somehow his opponent got extremely lucky and reached the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10, a power level higher than him.

“Ye Chen, don’t you think you can win just because you have a higher power level than me, my control over martial skills isn’t something you can compete with.” The only thing Ye Feng was confident about was his advantage in his martial skills, otherwise he wasn’t even sure he could beat Ye Chen.

Ye Chen said casually: “Are you done? Let’s start!”

There was a hint of anger that flashed through Ye Feng’s eyes, his large body jumped out like a cheetah, it only took him seconds to arrive in front of Ye Chen, and pushed out a palm attack towards Ye Chen.

“Red Sun Clouds Palm!”

Whoosh!

The air around them suddenly started to boil, the strong heat attacked towards Ye Chen without holding back.

“King Kong Smash!”

Ye Chen did not need any fancy tricks, he performed his King Kong Fist to face the incoming attack. His fist was thrown out directly, it touched Ye Feng’s palm



through the unbearable heat.

Pop!

Ye Feng could only feel a huge force just attacked his body, then found himself flying in the air, while blood poured out his mouth.

On the VIP seats, Ye Tianhao was a little bit surprised, he thought the two would at least struggle for a while, instead Ye Chen finished his battle in just one attack; on the other hand, Ye Batian sneered, there was a bad look on his face.

On the contestant seats, Ye Tang also sneered: "I would let you be arrogant for a little while longer, but you better hope that you won't have to stand in front of me, otherwise I will make you lose everything."

Ye Xuan was slightly shocked, because she remembered that the last time she saw him, he was still at the Mortal Realm Stage 6, she wondered if the incident with Sister Xueyan had an impact on him. But then, she thought to herself that Ye Chen must have achieved his power level by using pellets.

The first round of competition was soon finished. The contestants who made it to the next round were: No. 2 Ye Tang, No. 3 Ye He, No. 6 Ye Jun, No. 7 Ye Chen, No. 10 Ye Hai, No. 11 Ye Ming, No. 14 Ye Xuan, No. 16 Ye Jing, and No. 17 Ye Lin.

Although Ye Chen's performance was on point, but it did not attract too much attention.

The most conspicuous contestants were no doubt Ye Tang, Ye Hai and Ye Xuan. The opponents facing these three either gave up or were beaten with an

effortless attack. Infact most of them could not even survive half of the attack. The three were way ahead of the rest of the disciples in Ye family. In most people's opinion, they were a hundred percent guaranteed to be the top three.

“The top three! Huh, I wonder who is stronger.” Mayor Lin was actually voting for Ye Xuan, but he couldn't say it out loud, as it might upset Ye Batian, which would be tricky to deal with.

Ye Batian finally showed a smile, “Ye Xuan is pretty great, Ye Hai is also good. But I heard that Tang'er had learned the Snow Storm Sword Art from the Northern Snow Martial Academy, I wonder which level he had mastered it to. As for that Ye Ming, he does not have many flaws besides that he is just slightly behind, so he should be able to take the fourth place. The fifth place...it will probably be the No. six contestant Ye Jun, since he is also a disciple from the Purple Sun Martial School.”

Ye Tianhao did not care for Ye Batian's speech, all he cared about was his son Ye Chen. He wondered if Ye Chen would give him another pleasant surprise, and kill some of Ye Batian's pride.

## Chapter 41 – Ghost Flame Eighteen Kicks

After a fifteen minute break, the second round of the competition had begun.

Just like the first round, the second round of the competition was a series of battles between the two contestants next to each other. They were Ye Tang against Ye He, Ye Jun against Ye Chen, Ye Hai against Ye Ming, Ye Xuan against Ye Jing, and as for the No.17 contestant Ye Lin who was the last one without an opponent, he could choose whoever won this round and battle, and if he won then he could replace his opponent's place; if he lost, then he would be out.

In the arena.

Ye He surprisingly did not give up his battle and said to Ye Tang dressed in white: "I will not let you win that easily."

Ye Tang sneered, "If you could do that, it will be great. Otherwise, it will be too boring."

The third elder saw they both were ready, he yelled: "Battle begins!"

Swoosh!

While the third elder was still giving his speech, Ye He had already jumped out, his lowered body was walking in a weird path without patterns. Instead of a straight line, he looked like a poisonous snake hunting for its target that could release a deadly attack any second.

“High Rank Mortal Realm Step Art: The Nine Twisting Snake Steps!” Someone in the crowd recognized Ye He’s martial art.

“They said when you train Nine Twist Snake Steps, you would have to train your body to be extremely flexible. And the pain is indescribable, only the trainer would know. Ye He is tougher than people think!”

“That’s right, Ye He is one of the most powerful people among the outer disciples in Rudra Martial School. Even a normal Peak Mortal Realm Stage 10 warrior would probably not be able to beat him; plus, Ye Tang had only reached the Condensing Reality Stage two months ago, so his zhen qi is still not quite stable yet, so if he is going to win, it will at least take him ten attacks, maybe even more.”

Unlike everyone else, Ye Chen did not think highly of Ye He. Although there was no Nine Twisting Snake Steps manual in the Sky Cloud Martial School, it did not affect his perspective at all.

Ye He’s Nine Twisting Snake Steps seems to be flawless and extremely fast. However, there is a time gap that always appears between each twist, it probably is because he had not completely mastered it yet. If I could see it, Ye Tang could definitely see it too.

Just as expected.

As Ye He was about to twist and attack again, Ye Tang moved; his figure flashed, his palms were straight like knife. Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! He sliced three times.

The first and second attacks shook off Ye He's right arm and left arm, his third attack landed heavily on Ye He's chest, making a cracking noise. All of the sudden, Ye He's whole body was blown away, crashing on the field dozen of meters away. He did not look like he would be able to rise any time soon.

"This Ye Tang definitely went too far." Ye Chen could hear Ye He's ribs breaking, he could not help but frown.

On the VIP seats, Ye Batian laughed a little, "As a warrior, you should have this kind of brutal instinct, otherwise you could never make it. Well done."

Ye Tianhao disagreed: "We are all family, there is no need for this kind of brutality."

"Sometimes families may not be on the same side of the battle, plus, if you lost to your own family, you would only be lying in bed for one or two months at best; if you lost to someone else, you might never wake up. If you don't show him how cruel the world is, how could he survive the world outside?" Ye Batian did not care for Ye Tianhao's comments. As a inner elder of the Purple Sun Martial Palace, he sure had his own philosophy.

During the crowd's discussion, the second battle of the round had begun.

Ye Jun was just like his name (TL: Jun means handsome in Chinese), he had a good-looking appearance; his handsome look was unlike Ye Tang's "boy next door" type of good-looking, nor Ye Chen's clean cut kind of handsome, his handsome was just perfect. If only judging from his facial features, it was flawless.

Slowly walked up to Ye Chen, Ye Jun said lightly: “You are going to lose.”

“Oh yeah?” Ye Chen smiled.

Ye Jun’s eye brows twitched. His opponent’s confident attitude made him anxious, but he soon cleared out his thought. He joined the Purple Sun Martial School one year earlier than Ye Feng, now he was already sixteen years old, reached the Mid Mortal Realm Stage 10. Although he had never shown it before, who could thought he had already surpassed Ye Feng? Everyone thought he was still stuck at Mortal Realm Stage 9.

“Sister Ye Xuan, who do you think will win?” Among the female contestants, Ye Xiaomei who looked only thirteen years old asked curiously.

Ye Xuan replied calmly: “Ye Jun has the upperhand, I think!”

Ye Xiaomei did not believe her, “But Ye Chen had knocked out Ye Feng before with only one punch, I don’t think Ye Jun could do this, could he?”

Ye Jing who was about to compete with Ye Xuan on the fourth battle shook her head and said: “Little one, Ye Xuan is the the only one who had reached the Condensing Reality Stage at her speed in the history of our Ye family, she must have her reasons.”

Ye Xiaomei made a face. Since when whatever geniuses always correct?

“Xiaomei has her point. Speaking of cultivation, Ye Chen is definitely stronger; but it is not only about cultivation. Before, Ye Chen was able to knock out Ye Feng with one punch, he was only using his powerful Qi and went for a head on

exchange. However, Ye Jun would definitely not go for a head on collision like Ye Chen wants. With his experience and control over his martial skills, it is quite likely for him to beat Ye Chen.” Ye Xuan explained.

During their discussions, the two on the stage had already started battling.

“Ha!”

Ye Jun let out a breath and started accumulated his power, his eyes brightened suddenly; a hot wave of Qi started to appear above his tightened fists, making them look like two burning hot irons.

His feet touched the ground, causing Ye Jun to jump up about eight meters, and started to attack Ye Chen brutally.

“Burning Fists? No, it should be the Pure Flame Fists from the Purple Sun Martial Palace which is much stronger than Burning Fists!”

Facing the endless incoming fist attacks, Ye Chen took them all. His hands drew a half circle each, then he pushed out with King Kong Limitless.

Boom!

A loud explosion sound was heard, it brought up all the dust into the air.

Meanwhile, a human figure appeared from the smoke, it was Ye Jun. He expended his arms like a big bird, his long strong legs were also kicked out repeatedly.

“Eighteen Kicks of Ghostly Flame.”

Pop! Pop! Pop! Pop! Pop!...

The strong power rubbed the air, creating a light blue color just like the ghostly flame that sometimes appeared in a cemetery at night, each move was swift and deadly.

Ye Batian made a sound, then he gloated to Ye Tianhao: “Little brother, your son is going to lose this round. The Eighteen Kicks of Ghostly Flame is a martial art derived from the Low Rank Earth Realm Martial Skill ‘Huge Sun Ghost King Kick’. It is much stronger than normal Top Rank Mortal Realm Martial Skills. There is barely anyone among the inner disciples in our Purple Sun Martial Palace that could master it, even inner disciples would take quite a long time to train in it, I did not expect Ye Jun to master it.”

“The battle had not finished yet, everything we say is pointless until then.” Although Ye Tianhao said it casually, but his worried eyes betrayed him.

Sitting in the another row of VIP seats, Shen Yuqing was also worried. She had heard about the Eighteen Kicks of Ghostly Flame, there was an inner disciple from the Rudra Martial School who was out for a mission when he got into a conflict with an inner disciple from the Purple Sun Martial Palace. During the battle, the inner disciple from the Rudra Martial Palace was attacked and overwhelmed by the Eighteen Kicks of Ghostly Flame causing all his bones to be broken without able to fight back, and after the battle, he became trash.

“Chen’er, please don’t push it.” Shen Yuqing mumbled.



Ye Chen did not know anything about his parent's concern. To him, the Eighteen Kicks of Ghostly Flame was definitely powerful, but was impossible for it to hurt him. However, he did not want to show off all of his power just yet; even it was just half of his full power, he wanted to preserve it, since it was all he had to his name, he wanted to try to keep it a secret for as long as he could.

"Let's break it down!" Ye Chen stepped back slowly as his fists constantly flew out, either blocking the attacks or colliding head on. Slowly, Ye Chen took down all of the attacks from Ye Jun.

## Chapter 42 – Thousands Mountain Thousands Snow!

The King Kong Fist came to life in Ye Chen's hands, it struck out in all kinds of different forms, creating a perfect block for Ye Jun's kicks.

"The Unity Stage, Ying and Yang combined! This is the highest stage of the powerful fist arts!" Mayor Lin gasped, he had lived for so long and met so many geniuses, but he had rarely met anyone could master martial arts to the extent Ye Chen did.

Ye Jun did not look good. At that moment, he had already kicked out eleven kicks, none of which managed to injure Ye Chen even a little bit. His opponent was trickier than he expected.

"Ghostly Flame Four Twist Kill!" "Three Deaths Ghost Art!"

The next seven kicks had two major moves left. Ye Jun accumulated all his Qi and threw out his deadly attack.

At this moment, facing the incoming attacks, Ye Chen was thinking how he should have trained in more martial skills. Besides the sword arts, he had only mastered a high rank Mortal Realm Martial Skill, King Kong Fist. Although he had another powerful fist art manual, with his current cultivation, it would be extremely hard to train, there was even be a risk for him to be injured.

After this, I have to reach the Condensing Reality Realm. Once I become an inner disciple, I will have access to all kinds of martial skills, so I will never be stuck in this kind of awkward situation ever again.

Facing this “dangerous” situation, Ye Chen forced a laugh. He pushing his power to thirty percent of his peak stage, and then he threw out seven punches midair.

Boom! Boom! Boom! ...

Clumps of Qi exploded in the air forcing Ye Chen to take a few steps back. His feet lightly touched the ground as he looked up. Not far away, Ye Jun dressed in purple looked like a kite with its strings cut, drawing a beautiful line in the air. Eventually, he fell down and hit the ground near the edge of the audience seats.

“Great! Good job!” Up until now, Ye Tianhao finally was able to let out a breath as he exchanged a look and a smile with Shen Yuqing.

Sitting next to Ye Tianhao, Ye Batian forced a laugh out as he looked at Ye Tang. He thought of his most accomplished son, and thoroughly expected a win when his son and Ye Tang would clash.

On the other side, Ye Xiaomei laughed without restraint, “I knew it! Ye Chen would win!”

Hearing this, Ye Xun frowned. Right before, she obviously sensed that Ye Chen’s power had increased at least one fold more than before, otherwise he would definitely not have been able to beat Ye Jun this easily.

“Ye Chen win! Battle three, Ye Hai against Ye Ming!” Although the hosting elder was a bit surprised, he thought it was quite reasonable since Ye Chen had a higher cultivation than Ye Jun.

The battle between Ye Hai and Ye Ming was very intense, adding to the excitement, both of their battling styles were quite similar, each movement was brutal and efficient without a second thought; at times, the audience thought there might have been a personal matter involved since the two were obviously trying to kill each other.

“Ye Ming, if you have to blame someone, blame yourself for having a lower cultivation!” Finally, Ye Hai brought out his top moves, he threw two palm attacks in a row and blew away Ye Ming who was still struggling to win.

“Ye Hai win! Battle four, Ye Xuan against Ye Jing!”

In the crowd, Ye Jing thought for a moment before raising her hand and saying: “I give up!”

The hosting master nodded, he said to the last contestant Ye Lin, “Now you could choose your opponent, if you win, you could replace him or her; if you lose, then you are out.”

Ye Lin looked at Ye Xuan, Ye Tang and Ye Hai, he shook his head, then he looked at Ye Chen in the end, still, he shook his head, “Third master, I will also give up!”

He knew he would definitely not be able to win the first three contestants. As for Ye Chen, although he was not a Condensing Reality warrior, but judging from the two battles before, anyone who was not a Condensing Reality warrior would not be able to beat him. There was no need to risk his reputation. He thought he might as well give up since he would never be in the top three.

“Good. Now, there are still four contestants left, they are Ye Tang, Ye Chen, Ye Hai and Ye Xuan. The first battle is between Ye Tang and Ye Chen, then Ye Hai against Ye Xuan; whoever wins would enter the final battle and compete against the winner of the other round to determine the champion of the Ye Family tournament. Then, there will be a battle for deciding the second and the third places, any questions?” The third master scanned through the four contestants.

The four contestants, including Ye Chen, all shook their heads.

The hosting elder started to talk again: “If so, then you guys can go take a fifteen minutes break. Try to recover some of your zhen qi, so that you will not run out of it later.”

Finished speaking, he sat down and started drinking his tea.

In the arena, the remaining four looked at each other. Technically, it was only Ye Tang, Ye Hai and Ye Xuan exchanging looks, only Ye Tang glanced at Ye Chen for some reason. It was almost like he was trying to warn him of the upcoming beating. The other two were completely ignoring Ye Chen as they were trying to compete for the champion spot after all, and with Ye Chen’s cultivation at the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10, he was nowhere near the champion position.

Ye Chen was completely unfazed by all of this and went back to his seat to rest.

“Ye Xuan, up till now, you had only used life thirty percent of your power, am I right?” Ye Hai had already targeted Ye Xuan as his strongest competitor and was trying to probe her strength.

Ye Xuan gently pulled her loose hair away from her forehead, she said calmly:

“Besides you two, who could make me use more than sixty percent of my power?”

“Sixty percent? Don’t flatter yourself. Once I finished dealing with Ye Chen, I will show you the might of the Snow Storm Sword Art from our Northern Snow Martial Academy.” Ye Tang sneered.

Ye Xuan turned to walk back to her own seat as she left Ye Tang a speech, “I had seen a lot of amazing geniuses in Emerald Martial Palace. There were the oldest brother disciple the Emerald Childe, the second brother disciple ‘Broke Palm’ Liu Wuxiang, the third brother disciple Shi Potian. Comparing to them, you are only a mid-rank genius at best; and you still have to battle me with a gap in our cultivation, so against me, you would definitely lose.”

The final battles had not yet begun, but Ye Hai could already feel the intense atmosphere. His breath was slightly hurried. Right up to this point, he realized he was not only fighting for the champion position anymore. He felt like he was fighting to prove himself among this crowd of geniuses.

Fifteen minutes passed quickly.

Before the notification from the hosting master, Ye Chen and Ye Tang had already came onto the stage and stood facing each other with about ten meters distance between them.

“Don’t put in too much useless effort. You are definitely not eligible to be my opponent. After beating you, you will have to beat Ye Xuan and Ye Hai, so just give up.” Ye Tang could not wait to battle with Ye Xuan which completely killed any interest in fighting Ye Chen, all he wanted was to finish this battle as soon as possible so he could face Ye Xuan.

Ye Chen said: “Being impulsive is the number one mistake for any warrior. For that, you have already lost.”

“Cut the crap, just admit defeat already!”

Ye Tang started accumulating his zhen qi, his white robes started fluttering; white freezing cold qi appeared around him, making the whole battle yield feel like winter. Suddenly, his feet touched the ground just like a flying swallow, as his hands formed knives and jumped towards Ye Chen.

“Thousands Mountain Thousands Snow!”

This movement was originally from a sword art, but Ye Tang altered it to become a palm art. Although it was not as powerful, but it was more than enough for beating a Mortal Realm warrior.

Swoosh!

The air was sliced open, his white hand knives were everywhere, there seemed to be no way out.

“Break it down!”

Pushed his power to over sixty percent, Ye Chen did not back down, his fists punched out continuously, it was like a thousand arrows were being shot out, like an endless river, they brutally smashed against Ye Tang’s countless hand knives.

All of the sudden, the explosions were heard everywhere. Waves of wind constantly gusted out, blowing over the whole arena with a strength that could easily blow a strong tiger away.



## Chapter 43 – Beyond Expectations

Ye Tang was shocked, “How could this happen? Although my knife hand is not as powerful as my sword, it still shouldn’t ever be able to be blocked by a Mortal Realm warrior.”

However, what he did not know was that Ye Chen’s physical power had already reached past twelve thousand pounds, sixty percent of his power would mean seven thousand pounds which was equal to the power of two or three mad cow running at full speed.

“The Crane Catcher!”

Changing his style of attack, Ye Tang’s clothes were fluttering in the air. As he dived down from the sky, his fingers became a claw, aiming for Ye Chen’s shoulder.

At that moment, Ye Chen felt that he was being hunted by a beast. He knew he had to completely avoid that claw, otherwise even if he was not injured, he would still lose his balance.

Swoosh!

Executing his Golden Swallow Art, Ye Chen’s body floated up into the air, leaving a dark shadow behind.

Ye Tang tore apart the shadow angrily. Then suddenly he looked up, a bright dot appeared in front of him.

It was a sword light!

An extremely bright sword light!

It was almost the same time, Ye Chen appeared in front of Ye Tang.

“Ah!” Ye Tang did not expect Ye Chen to have the energy to fight back, neither did he expect that Ye Chen's retaliation leave him unable to dodge. He was surprised at Ye Chen's abnormal strength.

“Break!”

Ye Tang yelled with anger, as his right hand turned white like jade by his icy Qi. His two fingers clenched in the air, as he prepared to block Ye Chen's and break Ye Chen's great steel sword.

Ye Chen sneered, “You wish!”

His great steel sword shifted, it was like a light reflecting on the surface of a river, flashing in the night countless times.

Swoosh!

Ye Tang's finger which was full of zhen qi had a new bloody hole; blood started to pour out. The next second the icy Qi surrounding his finger was broken completely by the sword light, disappeared in the air.

“Tang’er’s Freezing Ice Finger was broken!” Ye Batian’s face did not look good, he could not believe his eyes.

Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing were also shocked. They knew Ye Chen was very powerful but they certainly did not expect him to be this powerful. Was he going to beat Ye Tang despite the gap between cultivation Realms?

“Not good!”

Ye Tang was forced to step back; he took out his great blade from behind.

The blade was one and a half meter long with a width of half a meter, it had a smooth and shiny surface; it spread a kind of coldness that made you shiver when looking at it, which meant it was definitely not a normal weaponry. Instead, it was probably a precious killing blade. In fact, this blade was called “Vibrant Snow Blade” in the Northern Snow Martial Academy, only inner disciples could use it.

“Snow!”

Once he took out the Colorful Snow Blade, Ye Tang started to have a powerful aura. He shook his hand and waved it, the shiny blade lights covered the sky and flew to attack Ye Chen, it was like the first snow of the winter had arrived early.

Ye Chen held his sword with both of his hands then used all his power and waved it in the air.

All of the incoming blade light shattered, unable to get any closer. From this scene, you could understand how fast Ye Chen was waving his sword and how precise his strikes were.

“Ice Frost!”

Ye Tang did not stop there. Within his blade light, there was an unbearable coldness, that could easily freeze the water in the air. It spread and seemed like it was going to freeze the whole battlefield.

Crack!...

Ye Chen was just about to do something, suddenly, a thin layer of frost covered the ground below him, it was directly from Ye Tang, making the whole stage change into an icy field.

Retreat!

Ye Chen held his sword close to his chest as his feet touched the ground lightly, causing his body to fly backward.

“Ye Chen, you managed to withstand so many moves, you are pretty good! But too bad, you are still going to lose. Lofty Snowfall, Biting Frost!” Ye Tang held up his blade with both of his hands before chopping down from top to bottom.

Chin!

Around the Colorful Snow Blade, there was a half meter long blade light, it sliced open the air and attacked towards Ye Chen with an ominous aura, it

seemed it was going to slice Ye Chen in half.

“Chen’er, be careful!” Shen Yuqing was so worried for her son that she stood up subconsciously, preparing herself to save Ye Chen.

Ye Batian made a noise, his right hand made a gesture in the air, created an invisible barrier in front of Shen Yuqing that restrained her movement.

“Sister-in-law, the competition is still going on, don’t be rude.”

Ye Tianhao could not hold back his anger any longer. Suddenly, a powerful aura burst out around him. His right foot took one step forward and then in next second, all of the VIP seats were kicked into the air and exploded.

The tension between them was on the edge of breaking out.

“Wait, you two. Just wait, I think the situation might still change.” Mayor Lin hurried to accumulate his Qi to protect himself from the after wave, he yelled at them at once.

Hearing this, the three returned their attention back to the arena.

Ye Tang’s blade light had rent the air into visible pieces and had even left a one-meter-long mark on the ground.

“Ye Chen is going to lose, he might even die.” Almost everyone there was thinking that.

Facing the horrifying blade light, Ye Chen's body shook. All of the Qi and blood inside of his body started to make a loud rushing noise, his aura suddenly strengthened, causing him to look like a huge sculpture of a god.

"Die!"

Yelling loudly, Ye Chen did not move from the spot but his left hand formed a fist and punched out.

Boom!

The blade light were shattered into pieces before it could get closer to Ye Chen.

"What happened? How could he be so powerful?" Ye Xuan stood up suddenly, she could not help but yell.

Ye Hai looked extremely serious, his eyes were fixed on Ye Chen.

And Ye Tang's eyes were widened, he seemed to be frozen on the spot.

"Lonely Mountain's Avalanche!"

Ye Chen's eyes looked as sharp as a sword, his body lurched forward with a powerful aura as he arrived three steps away from Ye Tang, his great steel sword stopped at Ye Tang's throat.

“You lost.” Ye Chen said lightly.

Right then, Ye Tang just came back to life from his astonishment. As he realized the situation, he could not accept the fact, his eyes were blood shot, “No way, I did not lose, you go die!”

The Vibrant Snow Blade twisted in his hand in preparation to attack.

The crowd thought Ye Chen to be mad as his left hand extended to meet the sword. However, Ye Chen easily slapped the Vibrant Blade out of Ye Tang’s hand, before he kicked Ye Tang’s body away.

Pooh!

Midair, Ye Tang vomited a huge chunk of blood, before landing ten steps away.

“Ye Chen won! He won?!”

“I can't believe it. Ye Tang, who had already reached the Condensing Reality, could not beat Ye Chen? How strong is he? It looked like the champion is still undecided.”

“Good. Ye Tang is one of the top two geniuses in Ye family, who went to the Northern Snow Martial Academy. He is even more powerful than the older generation of Early Condensing Reality warriors, but still he lost to Ye Chen. It is so beyond our expectations. If Ye Chen also reached the Condensing Reality Realm, how powerful would he become? He could definitely beat all of the Early Condensing Reality warriors, perhaps even the Mid Condensing Reality warriors might not even be able to be his match.”

“This is the rumored talent of those who could defeat those of a higher cultivation realm.”

The audiences exploded, they were like boiling water that could not calm down. Seeing Ye Chen beaten Ye Tang, no one would question his ability to compete for the champion position; even if someone did, then he must be either crazy or blind from the truth.

Ye Xuan still could not sit down. She remembered few months ago, Ye Chen was still a little Mortal Realm Stage 6 warrior, but now he had the power to compete with her, it made her a little bit uncomfortable and even frustrated a little, she could not put her feelings into words.

If she had to try to explain it, then it would be the huge difference between the past and present Ye Chen that was making her feel weird.

“Assholes, all of you, shut the hell up!” Hearing the chatters among the audience, over the messy VIP seats, Ye Batian made a huge roar, its powerful aura spread out like a huge tsunami.

All of the sudden, the crowd was knocked over.

Seeing this, Ye Tianhao yelled with great anger: “Ye Batian, what are you doing?!”



## Chapter 44 – Point Star Sword Spell

Trying to repress his anger, Ye Batian scowled at Ye Chen, before yelling at the audience: “The competition is still going on, what are you chatting for? Be quiet!”

Hearing him, the whole arena turned deadly quiet, no one would dare to confront him, especially not when he was in a violent rage. Not only was he a highly respected inner elder in the Purple Sun Martial Academy, but also a Late Claspng Yuan Realm warrior; he had always been highly respected not only in the Ye family, but also the whole Luo City. It was safe to say that, if Ye Batian decided to stamp his foot, the whole Luo City would shake.

Ye Tianhao let out a breath, he said to a servant: “Go bring another VIP seat.”

“Yes, master.”

Several servants walked away with their heads bowed.

Mayor Lin sensed the awkwardness in the air, he forced a smile at Ye Tianhao and said: “Leader Ye, I did not realize that your son had hidden his talent so deeply, it really was a big surprise.”

“Chen’er had only come back a few days ago, So even I don’t really know the full extent of his strength yet.” Ye Tianhao was full of pride, he looked like he had just eaten a jar of honey. On the True Spirit Continent, besides their own power, everyone dreamed to have great children, especially in a big family or a martial institution. If their children or disciples did not have much potential, then their position would gradually be eroded away. But if there were countless geniuses in

the younger generation, the family's future was secured, and perhaps they could even increase their power.

Before, Ye Tianhao had already given up on this dream, but now, he started to hope for it once again. And that hope only grew stronger with each of Ye Chen's victories, causing him to feel as if he had taken a fresh breath of air.

Ye Batian said in a cold tone: "So young and yet he is already so full of himself. What will he be like when he grows up? Ye Tianhao, is this how you have raised this great son of yours?"

Ye Tianhao sneered: "Winning and losing are most common events in a warrior's life. This life cannot be filled with only your son winning, and my son losing, correct?"

"Using such a despicable move to win...Sorry to say this, but I don't think that your son will ever amount to anything in the future."

"We shall see!"

This conflict between the two brothers was not a recent development. Ever since they were little, they had always despised each other; they had often fought until they were both on the ground unable to move. When Ye Tianhao took over the position of family leader and, Ye Batian was promoted to the position of an inner elder at the Purple Sun Martial Academy, their differences were temporarily suspended, or at the very least, it was not as intense as it used to be.

In the judge's seat, the hosting elder was frozen in shock for a while, Only

when the elder sitting right next to him tapped on his shoulder, did he finally came back to reality, and yelled: “Ye Chen wins! Next battle, Ye Hai against Ye Xuan.”

Sitting down, the hosting elder said: “What a great kid, Ye Tianhao truly has a great son.”

“Right? With a cultivation only at the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10, he could already beat Ye Tang who was at the Early Condensing Reality Stage. This is even harder than challenging someone of a higher cultivation stage as this is challenging someone of a different realm! I still don’t know how he did it.” The second elder kept staring at Ye Chen, trying to figure him out.

The first elder who was sitting in between the two warned: “It is fine to say this in front of me, but do not ever mention this event in front of Ye Batian.”

“Of course, we know.”

“The next battle had already begun; I wonder if there will be any more surprises.”

In the middle of the arena, Ye Hai and Ye Xuan were still trying to ease their emotions. After a while, they both looked up at each other.

“Within a hundred moves, you will lose.” Ye Xuan stated calmly, as she kept her hand on her sword.

Ye Hai laughed, “You think I can’t hold on for even a hundred moves? Good, but I want to go for more than three hundred moves, how about that?”

“You could try.”

Chin!

As she drew her sword out of the scabbard, Ye Xuan’s feet touched the ground and she flew out. In the air, the long sword in her hand started to cast dots of star-like sword light, flying to cover the meridian spots all over Ye Hai’s body.

“Great sword art, but it is still not enough.” Ye Hai’s aura strengthened as his sword on his back automatically came out of its scabbard and landed into his hand. If you looked closely, you could see that the sword was covered with strings of blood, seemingly soaked in human blood when it was forged, giving off an extremely sinister feeling when looked upon.

“Blood saber, Eight Arts!”

A bloody saber light floated in the air, wrapped Ye Hai in the middle, from time to time, there would be one or two saber light shooting out towards Ye Xuan.

Ting! Ting! Ting!...

Unlike Ye Tang, Ye Xuan had already stabilized her Zhen Qi and was able to take a huge step forward. She had already reached the Peak of Early Condensing Reality Stage, her Zhen Qi was pure, strong, and flawless. No matter how good Ye Hai’s defense was or how hard he tried to attack her, he could not restrain her movement.

The sword light clashed with the saber light and suddenly, the cloth over Ye Hai's shoulder was torn apart

“Hmph.” Ye Hai frowned. As he jumped backwards, he waved out his saber.

Swoosh!

A solid saber light sliced open the air, and flew towards Ye Xuan.

Ye Xuan sneered, her left hand was covered by a layer of glazed green Qi. She broke the saber light effortlessly with her palm, while her right hand shook the long sword. The next second, the sky was full of shining star-like light, blinding Ye Hai's eyes.

One step, two steps, three steps... ten steps.

Ye Hai had to take a whole ten steps to find his balance. He was a little bit shocked by her inhuman power. He knew that she was powerful, but her power was beyond his expectation. If it wasn't for his mentor who had taught him some deadly moves, he would have already been beaten. Still, he felt that his chance of winning was no better than sixty percent.

Well, she has left me with no choice. Ye Hai took a deep breath. Suddenly, his robe expanded.

“Broken Mountain and River!”

He threw out a saber attack. Suddenly, the air started to vibrate like someone

had thrown a stone into calm river; the powerful aura was rushing towards Ye Xuan.

The VIP seats had already been replaced, Ye Tianhao just sat down on his new seat as his eyes suddenly brightened , “That is the famous Broken Mountain sword art! No, it should be the simplified version of it to be precise, I wonder what Ye Xuan will do now.”

Mayor Lin nodded, “The Broken Mountain Sword Art is not a common sword art even in most of the large martial institutions. With one movement, it could break a small mountain in two, definitely powerful.”

Facing Ye Hai who had just brought out his strongest move, Ye Xuan did not seem to be surprised. She switched the long sword into her left hand, her right hand index finger and middle finger touched each other and pressed on the sword.

“To push me to use this move, you are already pretty good.”

Shoo!

Ye Xuan’s fingers slid on the sword, a sharp star-like light suddenly shot out and landed heavily on Ye Hai’s saber light, then immediately there was the second one, the third one...

Boom! Boom! Boom!...

It sounded like fireworks. Ye Hai was already nowhere to be seen, no one knew what had happened.

The moment the smoke from the was blown away, Ye Hai jumped out from it. He laughed: “It has already been one hundred and eight moves!”

Ye Xuan sneered: “No matter what Broken Mountain Wanderer had taught you, you will never be able to be my opponent.” The martial art she had used just now was a low rank Earth Realm sword art, but of course, it was only the first part of the sword art; only the most valuable core disciples could train in the second half of the sword art. The reason she was chosen, was all because of her extremely high potential and talent. She was regarded as a top level genius in the Emerald Martial Palace, otherwise even if she was an inner disciple, it would still be impossible for her to train the second half of the martial art.

“Anything you say is pointless, take my Broken Sun and Moon!” Ye Hai yelled, his bloody long saber with a terrifying aura started his endless attack.

Ye Xuan slightly frowned, she increased the speed of finger-sword sliding movement. Countless sword light formed sharp knives and shot out at an extremely fast speed like lightning.

Ye Hai’s cultivation was much lower than Ye Xuan, and his comprehension and rank of sword arts were not better than Ye Xuan either. So it was only inevitable that he could not keep up with Ye Xuan. His Zhen Qi faltered allowing a star light to smash onto his chest causing him to vomit out a mass of blood before landing heavily onto the ground.

Ye Chen was actually a little bit surprised. “Ye Xuan is so strong that I could not even tell what her true strength is, and I believe she is still holding back a portion of her power. No wonder she is so arrogant all the time. I believe she still has a powerful movement hidden in secret.”

## Chapter 45 – Arrows and Shields

“Ye Hai lost. It seems like, among the younger generation of the Ye family, only Ye Chen might be able to compete with Ye Xuan.”

“To be honest, I am not really sure that Ye Chen can compete with Ye Xuan. It’s not due to his power level being not as high as Ye Xuan’s, but that he cannot attack through air. As you saw earlier, Ye Xuan’s sword art is continuous, which makes it almost impossible for anyone to get close to her.”

“That sounds right. But, maybe Ye Chen is still hiding his real power. Let’s just watch.”

“Yeah, it is still too early to jump to conclusions.”

A lot of famous people in the Luo City had came to watch the competition, now they were discussing about it quietly, expressing their opinions on the battles.

In the judge seats, the third elder was pleased, he nodded his head. As long as we have Ye Xuan, even if we could not increase the family’s power in the future, we can be sure that the family won’t decline.

“Ye Xuan won. The next battle is the finals. The first place would be rewarded with a low rank storage ring, one hundred low rank soul stones and also ten thousand gold. Ye Xuan, Ye Chen, I hope you two would try your best in the following battle, try not to leave any regrets. Of course, the second and third place would also get the same rewards, just without the low rank storage ring.”



“Now, take a fifteen minute break first.”

Just one hundred low rank soul stones? Why so little? Ye Chen was confused.

Actually, Ye Chen was only confused because he was biased. In his opinion, if that dead martial artist can leave behind ten thousand low rank soul stones, then as one of the famous eight families, Ye Family should definitely have more. Indeed, the Ye family had millions of low rank soul stones, but there were at least six hundred warriors in the Ye family, more than three hundred Condensing Reality Stage warriors, if everyone only used one hundred low rank soul stones each year, it would still cost about thirteen thousand silvers, which was still a huge amount of money. It could make a normal big family go bankrupt in a few years.

In addition, the Early Condensing Reality warriors only used one soul stone per five days, which was only around seventy soul stones per year. Beyond that, the soul stones would be useless for them, since they would not be helpful for their training anymore. So one hundred soul stones as rewards was a well-thought decision, not just something they decided randomly.

As for the ten thousand gold, it was not too much nor too little. According to Ye Chen's memory, his father Ye Tianhao's personal property was no more than ten thousand gold. Of course, as the leader of Ye family, he would never need to use his own money, as everything was paid by the family such as buying medicines or pellets, or weapons or manuals; but if it was something personal, then it would have to come out of his own pocket.

Off the stage, Ye Xuan took out a low rank soul stone, and used it to recover her lost Zhen Qi.

While her Zhen Qi slowly recovered back to being firm and strong, Ye Xuan looked at Ye Chen, as she thought to herself: no matter how strong you are now, I will beat you. An Emerald Martial Palace disciple is not allowed to lose, not in the past, not now, not in the future, never.

Ding!

The bell of the final battle had rung, the third elder let out a huge breath, and yelled with a loud voice: “Time’s up, the battle shall begin now!”

Ye Xuan put away the soul stone, walked towards the middle of the stage one step at a time; she stopped ten meters away from Ye Chen.

Ye Chen studied Ye Xuan, and said: “I haven’t seen you for a few months. You’ve grown stronger, seeing that you’ve reached the Peak of Early Condensing Reality Stage.” The last time they met, she was just like Ye Tang, still unable to stabilize her Zhen Qi yet, but now just after a few months, everything had changed.

“My training speed should be one of the top in the Sky Cloud Martial School. However, in the Emerald Martial Palace, it was nothing, there are many people that train faster than me.” Even before they began, Ye Xuan was already trying to shake his confidence.

Ye Chen could not care less, he smiled: “Let’s begin!”

“Your sword art is not bad; I wonder if it can match up to me?”

Finished speaking, Ye Xuan’s body disappeared, turning into a wave of blue

smoke and appeared just five steps away from Ye Chen; the long sword in her hand casually shook, and suddenly, it started to vibrate visibly. There were beams of sword light that bursted out from the tip of the sword like fireworks, they shot out seeming to try and cover the sky above Ye Chen.

“Good job!”

Ye Xuan was very clever in using her sword art, and it excited Ye Chen. He took his great steel sword out of the scabbard, and fought back with an even faster speed. In the blink of an eye, he had thrown out thirty-six sword attacks of his own.

Pop! Pop! Pop!...

The tips of the swords clashed together, creating a bright spark, that shone over their bodies. All the audience could see was only the bright light.

Three years ago, Ye Xuan was already famous for her sword art in the Ye family. During these three year at the Emerald Martial Palace, her sword art had improved rapidly. Now, she was doing her best, her sword was so fast that a human eye could no longer catch its movements, which kept flashing overhead, like a bolt of lightning in the dark sky,.

And Ye Chen on the other hand, did not have this great of a talent before. He was once called a useless loser. Ever since the infusion of the soul of the other Ye Chen, his comprehension ability had also increased rapidly, which enabled him to master all kinds of martial arts to its peak within a short amount of time, making him a demonic beast like existence.

With a sword in his hand, Ye Chen fully displayed the power of his Lone Peak of the Thirteen Swords. His sword art was unpredictable and left no trace of any flaws, his movements were extremely smooth without any restraints. He was in complete control of his body, every sword attack of his was able to block three sword attacks of his opponent, and he did it all effortlessly making it seem like it was an art.

The two kept fighting, from the middle of the stage to outside of the stage, then from there to the speaking platform... their incredible sword skills had amazed and terrified the younger generation of the Ye family, as all of them stared without blinking, as if they were afraid that they might miss the greatest scene in their life.

Over at the VIP seats, all of the powerful people could not help but gasp.

“That is just unbelievable. Are they still teenagers? They look like they are more powerful than the older generation who had been training in the sword arts for decades.”

“The disciple had surpassed the master; the future is indeed in the younger generation’s hand.”

“Being able to witness this battle, it is definitely worth the trip.”

The chattering among the crowd did not affect the two, their battle seemed to become even more intense.

“The Peak of the Peak!”

With his enormous power, Ye Chen was not afraid of his opponent's Zhen Qi attack, he stabbed out a beautiful sword attack that encompassed an aura of someone looking down on everyone from the peak of a mountain.

Ye Xuan's pretty eyes widened, the long sword in her hand became light green, it reached out towards the incoming attack, while she yelled: "Break!"

Crack!

The great steel sword made a crunchy sound, it was a sign that the sword was about to break.

However, it was bound to happen given that Ye Xuan's long sword was the famous Glaze Sword from the Emerald Martial Palace; while Ye Chen was only using the normal great steel sword. The two swords were not on the same level at all, the latter would not hold long.

Exerting his qi to its limit, Ye Chen's right hand suddenly let go of the great steel sword. He drew a full circle in the air, and then brutally punched out.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!...

The great steel sword turned into thousands of broken pieces, and they all flew towards Ye Xuan like locusts.

"So crafty! But it is useless against me." Shocked by Ye Chen's weird attack, anger surged in Ye Xuan's eyes. Her left hand also drew a full circle behind her back, creating a layer of green colored Zhen Qi barrier, which stopped the countless broken pieces attacking her.

“Hahaha! Take my punch!”

Without the sword, Ye Chen’s aura did not decrease but instead grew, the qi and blood inside of him started rushing faster like a river. As he took a huge step, he threw out a punch.

Boom!

The firecracker like sounds once again surfaced. The Zhen Qi blockage was completely shattered.

Within the short time gap in between, Ye Xuan flew backwards, switched the sword to her left hand; while her right index finger and middle finger closed up, she immediately placed her fingers on the sword.

“It’s Point Star Sword Spell! This is not going to be good for Ye Chen.”

“It only seems that way, as Ye Xuan indirectly showed that her sword art is weaker than Ye Chen.”

“So what? Whatever happens during the battle does not matter, only the result is all that counts.”

“That’s true.”

While the crowd could not help but scream, beams of star-like light shot out like knives as they completely blocked off Ye Chen’s way out. Besides going head-

on with the attack, there was no other way out.

Even as he knew his situation, Ye Chen was not shaken at all. His body shone with a jade like shine, he yelled: “Let’s see which one of us is stronger? Your arrows or my shield?”

## Chapter 46 – The End of the Family Tournament

Boom!

The first beam of star light was smashed away by Ye Chen's punch, then the second, then the third one... In the end, Ye Chen's punch could not match up with the sheer quantity of the star light and he was hit heavily several times, which made sounds like they were hitting against some metal instead of his body.

Taking a closer look, besides some small holes here and there on his clothes, Ye Chen was not wounded at all. His tightened skin had a jade like shine over it, which was a sign of him completely mastering the third level of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, almost close to mastering the fourth level – Broke Jade Reborn.

"What kind of defense art is this? It could even defend against the attacks from the Point Star Sword Spell!"

"So impressive. What else is he hiding? He was able to reverse every critical moment he had faced until now."

"I think Ye Xuan is feeling threatened. This guy is so scary, throwing powerful movement one after another, no one could understand him."

Hearing some of the powerful people chattering right next to him, Ye Tianhao could not agree with them more. He reviewed his memory, Ye Chen had surprised him when he punched and knocked out Ye Feng and Ye Jun, then shocked everyone and beat Ye Tang, now he was even able to fight against Ye



Xuan. There were too many surprises, that he even felt a little numb to anymore surprises now.

Unconsciously, he took a glance at Shen Yuqing's eyes. They just kept staring at each other, as none of them knew how to react to this situation.

Ye Batian was also a little numb, he was expecting to see Ye Chen fail horribly. He could have never expected that even Ye Xuan could not take him down. Doesn't this mean that my Tang'er was no where near his power and was doomed to lose?

What the heck?! How did this brat suddenly turn this powerful ? After taking a couple of deep breaths, Ye Batian stared towards the stage.

On the stage, Ye Xuan was biting her lower lip, she said to herself furiously: "Let's see how many attacks you can handle!"

Accumulating all the Zhen Qi in her body at her fingertips, Ye Xuan slashed the sword repeatedly. When the Zhen Qi rubbed against the green glaze sword, it created a shocking reaction, it seemed to be blend with the original spirit of the sword, illuminating that unbreakable sharp weapon with a dazzling star light.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!...

Some of the star light went off track and hit the ground, badly damaging the stage, leaving it with thousands of small holes. Some of the audiences' weapons were even destroyed by the stray star light as well, the owners were all frightened and jumped away from the incoming attacks.

“What a crazy attack! How did Ye Chen manage to block them all?” Only at this moment, did the audience finally understand how powerful the Point Star Sword Spell was. A normal warrior would never be able to handle it.

The clothes covering Ye Chen’s upper body were already torn to shreds, exposing his supple but extremely strong muscles. Every time the star light which were like knives that got close to Ye Chen’s skin, the jade like shine would turn even brighter and easily shattered all the foreign objects that were flying towards him.

Bloom!

Ye Chen’s long hair was flying in the air. With his mountain like aura, he ran towards Ye Xuan, as he threw out a punch into the air.

Ye Xuan was terribly upset, the power Ye Chen displayed had completely shattered her confidence, she even came to doubt herself and was wondering if she could handle the incoming punch.

“I would like to see which one of the two will prevail, your fist or my sword.”

Seeming to gain back some of her confidence, Ye Xuan let out a quiet growl, she switched the long sword back to her right hand. Along with her regained pride, she stabbed out her sword towards Ye Chen’s incoming fist.

Shoo!

The tip of her sword and his fist clashed, bringing up a little bit of sparks. Instead of a normal human fist with blood and flesh, Ye Chen’s fist seemed like it

was made of the strongest metal.

The green glaze sword was bent by the powerful force, but soon, it bounced back to its original form like nothing had happened. However, the counterforce of the sword bouncing back had shook Ye Xuan into the air. Blood poured down the corner of her mouth.

Ye Chen's aura strengthened, he chased up, then threw out another punch.

Boom!

This time, Ye Xuan finally could not handle the rebound of her Zhen Qi; the long sword fell out of her hand, her face went pale, and her eyes lost their original brightness.

The arena was in complete silence, then the next second, the crowd bursted out into a loud clamor.

"So many things had happened! I can't believe that Ye Chen is the champion, who could've thought of that?"

"If I had only known, I would have bet on Ye Chen! Then my five silver would have gone up by at least ten times!"

"Fuck. I had bet ten silvers on Ye Tang! That's about my one-month salary!"

The competition had finished. The most frustrated people were the servants. They had secretly set up a betting pool, prepared to make a huge fortune from

the competition. However, once the results were out, most of the people were frozen with shock, and were full of regret.

Only the organizers of the betting pool could not be anymore happier, as they had made ten times more than usual on this competition, which would probably make their life better for a long time.

The third elder was the first one that came back to reality, he cleared his throat and yelled: “The champion is Ye Chen. Now, the battle between the second place and the third place begins!”

As they were chattering, all the servants who had bet all their money had just realized that they had also bet on the second and the third place, and they were hoping to win back some of their money.

They had already completely given up on making a fortune, and were only regretting not being able to recognize Ye Chen’s power.

The following battle was predictable, Ye Hai easily beat Ye Tang who had already lost his drive to win and won the third place; Ye Xuan automatically won second place; while Ye Chen who had taken down all the powerful people and raised up won the first place. He had become the most famous person in the Ye family.

At the reward ceremony, the third elder said to Ye Chen with a huge smile: “Keep up the hard work, don’t ever drown in the pride.”

Ye Chen replied: “Yes, I will, third elder.”

“Good. With geniuses like you in the Ye family, us old generation could finally relax now.”

Receiving the low rank storage ring, Ye Chen put it on at once, then he threw the one hundred low rank soul stones and the ten thousand gold notes into the storage ring.

As he let out a breath of air, Ye Chen turned his head only to notice that Ye Xuan’s attention was on him.

“The next time we meet, I will definitely defeat you.” Ye Xuan had already overcome the shock of losing. However, she could not forgive herself for losing her confidence at that critical moment.

Ye Chen was not bothered by her words: “Then you will have to hurry, I am already leaving you behind.”

“Hmph!” Ye Xuan sneered, but did not speak .

“Haha, Ye Chen, you are also my target. Don’t ever lose to someone else!” Ye Hai came up to Ye Chen and talked. Among the contestants, Ye Hai, just like his name (“Hai” meant ocean) implied, had a huge heart. Unlike the rest of the people, he did not care much about the failure.

Ye Chen quite liked Ye Hai, “After this competition, are you still going to follow your mentor and travel the world?”

Ye Hai nodded, “Of course, traveling the world is my dream, I will never give up on that. My mentor said he is going to take me to the Dark Dragon Emperor

Lands, which is the most dangerous place in the world. He wanted me to see and gain some experience. It's just that I am afraid that after today, you and I will only be able to meet again at the end of next year. I'm so excited."

"Me too. I hope you can get even stronger."

"Thank you. Let's go out for a drink later. I assume you never had a drink yet?"

"I had a little, I think I can handle it."

After the reward ceremony, Ye Tianhao stood up in high spirits, his hands were put together in front of his chest and he said: "Thank you all for coming to watch our annual family tournament, there will be a feast coming up, I hope you all can make it there."

"Great! We might as well, I just hope Leader Ye has enough food for all of us." Someone teased.

Ye Tianhao laughed, "Nonsense! Everyone shall eat as much as you can! I am feeling extremely generous today!"

While the crowd was moving towards the dinning area, there were two people in the corner of the arena who were extremely noticeable.

"Master Hai, how is that young disciple?"

"Very strong. But, he is still not as strong as the geniuses of the Hai family, unless he could reach the Condensing Reality Realm."

Hearing him, the other guy said: “Over the past few years, there were dozens of geniuses that appeared in the Windy Nation. I wonder what kind of battles we would see in the future when they clash. One day, maybe they would be able to leave the Windy Nation and make a name for themselves around the whole Nan Zhuo region.”

“It is too hard! Our Windy Nation is still at the bottom when compared to the whole of the Nan Zhuo region. Our geniuses could still not compete with those of the other nations. If there is someone who could become a strong leader, then, we might have some hope.”

## Chapter 47 – Break Through

The feast lasted until midnight. Most of the people were already wasted and had a glossy appearance to their eyes.

Ye Chen, Ye Hai and several others of the younger generation from the Ye family were at the same table, they were getting to know each other while chatting and drinking.

Suddenly, Ye Tianhao called out to Ye Chen.

“Chen’er, this is the head of Wind Rider Security Company Xu Tai, Uncle Xu, and this is his second daughter Xu Mei.” Ye Tianhao dragged Ye Chen, and introduced him with a huge smile on his face.

“Hello, Uncle Xu!” Ye Chen studied the two. Xu Tai was a bulky man in his forties, who wore a head guard and looked extremely strong; his second daughter looked no more than sixteen years old. Her body looked extremely slim and fit under her red dress, sexy with a hint of coldness. Sensing Ye Chen’s gaze, her face slightly blushed.

Xu Tai was also studying Ye Chen. After a while, he laughed: “What a great young man. So young and yet so powerful already, definitely not some mediocre talent.”

He was not just saying it, Xu Tai had been travelling around the world for years, during which he had met all kinds of people. He could accurately predict some people’s future to fame and power when they were young. As for Ye Chen, although he looked quiet and weak like a scholar, he had a subtle yet powerful



aura to him, which could not be underestimated.

Ye Chen humbly said: “Uncle Xu, you are flattering me.”

Xu Tai shook his head, “I, your uncle Xu is someone who has experienced a lot of things in this world. I know when you should be humble and when you should not; I always felt that, being humble is being hypocritical, which you should never be. I really like you, my daughter likes you too, maybe you guys should find some time to get to know each other.”

Although Ye Tianhao could not be anymore familiar to Xu Tai’s personality, but he decided to keep silent, because he wanted to see how Ye Chen would reply.

“Uncle Xu, since you are so straightforward, I will do the same. I still haven’t reached my father’s level, so I am not really interested in things like relationships and such.” Ye Chen said seriously.

Frozen for a while, Xu Tai could not do anything but say: “It seems like my daughter doesn’t have the luck then. Fair enough, you will definitely become someone quite important one day, I am afraid my Mei’er won’t be able to handle you anyways.”

Ye Tianhao was really impressed with Ye Chen’s committedness to his path, even though he scolded him: “Nonsense, a true man will never be afraid of love.”

Then, he said to Xu Tai, “Brother Xu, we should let our kids handle their own business. We can not help them with some things even if we want to, what do you say?”

Xu Tai nodded, “That is true. Since that is settled, we should get going. Let’s catch up sometime. Mei’er, let’s go.”

Ye Tianhao tried to stop them, “Brother Xu, why leave when it is still early?”

“Thank you for having us. I should go though; my wife had made me some soup at home.” Xu Tai waved his hand, and started to walk home, while Xu Mei followed him behind.

After the two had left, Ye Tianhao turned to look at Ye Chen. It was such a serious stare that unsettled Ye Chen a little bit.

After a long time, Ye Tianhao said: “You must be tired from the competition, you should go rest soon!”

“All right, let me say goodbye to Ye Hai and the others.”

Watching Ye Chen walk away, Ye Tianhao started to smile.

The god had given me a huge surprise! Especially when I was just about to give up hope.

Shen Yuqing walked over and said: “Tianhao, what happened?”

Ye Tianhao laughed: “How strong do you think Chen’er would be? In our Luo City, there hasn’t been even one Astral Reaching Realm warrior for at least a century.”

“How optimistic. But our Chen’er is a bit different now, did you notice that?”

“Yeah, I felt like I sensed something, but then it seemed as if there was nothing different. But who cares! As long as he is our Chen’er, it’s fine by me.”

...

Five hours later!

The sky was slowly brightening. The servants started to wake up and start their day of work.

Time had passed.

The window of Ye Chen’s room slightly shook, making a little noise. It seemed as if it was being moved by a huge gust of wind.

Inside the room, an invisible Qi surrounded Ye Chen, it looked like a funnel being placed upside down. All of the light objects in the room were floating in the air.

Buzz!

A weird vibration originated from the middle of Ye Chen’s Dantian and spread all over his body. All of the objects in the air suddenly dropped where they were, making loud noises.

“Finally, I reached the Condensing Reality Realm.”

As he slowly let out a deep breath, Ye Chen opened his eyes, the bright light in his eyes was like lightning, shining in the dim room.

After a long while, the light in his eyes slowly faded. A confident smile appeared on Ye Chen’s face.

Actually before last night, Ye Chen was still not sure if he could reach the Condensing Reality Realm, since it was not easy to liquidize Qi to Zhen Qi, it required a long time of compressing it and training. That was the reason why so many people were always stuck at Mortal Realm Stage 10 for at least six months, while some of them even spent years to achieve it. The top ranked outer disciple Wu Zongming had also spent more than six months to make the breakthrough, and become an official inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

As for people like Zhang Haoran, who had spent only two months to achieve it, were extremely rare, maybe one in ten thousand people at best can be able to achieve something like that.

It was safe to say that only the warriors who had reached the Condensing Reality Realm were considered real warriors. Before that, they were could only be considered as a lowly apprentice in the True Spirit Continent.

Once someone reached the Condensing Reality stage, it not only increased their power level, but also doubled, sometimes even tripled a warrior’s power. It even enabled them to attack someone from a distance, allowing to kill them from even ten steps away.

If Ye Chen and Ye Xuan were to fight again now, Ye Chen was confident that he would be able to defeat her within only a few attacks, effortlessly.

“I should see what’s this Zhen Qi is all about first.”

Ye Chen talked to himself as he focused his attention on his Dantian.

The messy Qi tornado from earlier had completely disappeared. Replacing it was a upside down funnel of Zhen Qi in the shape of a cone. Both the quantity and the quality had largely improved from Qi, when it spun, it was like a cluster of stars in the universe, pulsing and surging with power.

As he fully activated his Pure Yuan Art, Ye Chen’s robe started to expand.

He!

As he threw out a punch in the air, the windows that were ten steps away shattered at once, breaking into thousands of pieces. The powerful wind continued to spread all the way into the field.

“From today, I could start to train the Tyrant’s Fist, I wonder how powerful it is.”

He did not feel tired at all, so he decided not to sleep. He got up and cleaned himself, then he opened the door and walked out.

## Chapter 48 – The Hidden Struggle in The Dining Room

In the Luo City, the largest mansion had to be the one owned by the Ye family. The Ye family owned more than a thousand kilometers squared of land, which was three times larger than even the mayor's mansion. Inside Ye family, there were pavilions, chapels, towers, bridges, rivers, bamboo forests, lakes, and almost anything else you could think of. It was almost like a small sized Luo City.

As he walked through a few hallways, and crossed a thirty meters long white jade stone bridge, in front of Ye Chen was a huge training court.

There were already a lot of people in the training court, those warriors of the Ye family who were not required to work but instead had to train their martial arts were all trying their best. They were either training in something repeatedly by themselves, or discussing about various issues of martial arts with other people, or battling with each other. The whole place looked extremely busy, and full of life.

“Greetings, young master Chen.” Outside the court, five middle aged women and men who saw Ye Chen arriving, said respectfully.

Ye Chen nodded, “Is it your turn today to teach martial skills?”

These five were the martial skill instructors of the Ye family. In the Ye family, there were more than three hundred warriors who advanced to the Condensing Reality Realm, two-third of them were the directly related to the family, and the remaining one-third of the warriors had different last names who decided to join the Ye family. According to their cultivation, they would have different social status. For example, the Claspng Yuan Realm warriors would become guest masters, the Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors would become the Ye

family attendants, and the Mid Condensing Reality Realm warriors would be the martial skill instructors, just like the five people in front of Ye Chen. Early Condensing Reality realm warriors would be the assistant trainers, who were not eligible to teach other people themselves, they could only help out the martial skill instructors.

“Yes, we are on duty here on the training court every three days, and today it is our turn.” The middle aged lady on the left who looked quite nice replied to Ye Chen.

“I am just passing by; you guys can go back to work!” Ye Chen waved his hand and started to walk away.

Standing in the middle, a middle aged with a scholarly appearance wearing gray robes could not help but said: “Young Master Chen had already reached the Condensing Reality Realm! I am not completely sure if even you and I could beat him anymore!”

“A genius is like a wild card; how could we compete with him?”

“Alright, stop whining now. One day, when we reach the Clasp of Yuan Realm, we could become an guest master in the Ye family. Then we will never ever have to worry again in our life.”

“You are right.”

There was a distance of at least four hundred meters to the dining room from the battling court which took a while for him to get there.

When Ye Chen entered the room, there were already a few people eating breakfast.

“Chen’er, you woke up so early.” Ye Tianhao had so many things to deal with everyday, so he was used to getting up early.

Ye Chen said: “I didn’t sleep last night, I was training all night.”

Ye Tianhao looked a little surprised, “You reached the Condensing Reality Realm?”

“Yes, I just managed to breakthrough.”

“Really?”

Ye Tianhao responded subconsciously. He was a little bit shocked when Ye Chen replied without hesitation, then he was full of joy. If Ye Chen could only be counted as a battle genius before, who was not very good at training, then the Ye Chen now would be counted as a true genius. No one could steal his thunder, Ye Chen could now stand right next to Ye Xuan and Ye Tang.

“Let me see.” Ye Tianhao reached his hand over Ye Chen’s shoulder. Although he could read Ye Chen’s cultivation by just looking, but under some special circumstances, a warrior at the Peak of Mortal Realm Stage could emit light Zhen Qi vibration, which was very easily confused with the signs of a newly advanced Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

Ye Tianhao’s Zhen Qi that was from a Claspng Yuan Realm warrior went inside Ye Chen’s body; it was immediately strongly rejected. Ye Tianhao was afraid to



hurt Ye Chen, so he cut off his Zhen Qi at once, and let go of his palm.

“It is indeed the Early Condensing Reality Realm, and your Zhen Qi is pretty stable already. You are already close to the Peak of Early Condensing Reality Realm.” Ye Tianhao could not even believe himself as he said it.

Ye Chen himself was not sure of the reason for this, he guessed: “Is it because of the Pure Yuan Art?”

Ye Tianhao nodded, “It should be. There is rarely anyone who can master the Pure Yuan Art to its highest stage, making your Qi extremely pure. Once your Qi liquidizes into Zhen Qi, your foundation will much more stable than most people, which will save you a lot of time when trying to stabilize it.”

This is nice, it saved me so much hard work. Ye Chen thought.

“Okay, get some breakfast. Wait until I go back and tell your mother, she will be so happy for you.” Ye Tianhao was already full, but then he got so happy that he started to eat again with Ye Chen, while chatting.

Shortly after, Ye Hai and Ye Xuan had shown up.

Even though they noticed Ye Chen, the group did not pay much attention to him, only after studying him a little bit closely, they were all shocked to realize that he had broken through the Condensing Reality Realm.

Ye Tianhao realized that he was going to be late, so he said to Ye Chen: “Eat slowly, I need to head out now.”

“Okay, father.”

After waiting until Ye Tianhao had left, Ye Hai walked over and said: “Ye Chen, did you reach the Condensing Reality Realm?”

Ye Chen laughed: “Let’s spar, then you will know.”

“Alright!” Ye Hai went into position.

As he stood up, Ye Chen said: “One punch is enough, come on!”

He!

Ye Hai did not underestimate Ye Chen, he threw out a punch filled with Zhen Qi, which brought up a light Qi wave in the air, that spread throughout the whole room.

Ye Chen kept his body still, and threw out a punch as well.

Boom!

The air was torn apart. Their two fists clashed in the air, making a loud sound.

“No way, you are sick. You had just made a breakthrough but your Zhen Qi is already so stable.” Ye Hai had to back out at least ten steps to bear the impact, he said with a forced laugh.

Ye Chen sat back on his seat, “Let’s eat!”

Sitting in front of each other, they felt very comfortable.

Ye Xuan who was sitting not far away was very frustrated. She thought that she could soon reach the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, then she would be ahead of him. Never had she expected that Ye Chen would be one step ahead of her and would reach the Early Condensing Reality Realm before that happening, that too with an extremely stable Zhen Qi. Now it would be almost impossible for her to beat him, even if she managed to reach the Mid Condensing Reality Realm.

“Ye Chen, I forgot to tell you. Sister Xueyan had already reached the Late Condensing Reality Realm.” Ye Xuan needed to let out some of her frustration, so she brought up Ji Xueyan to harass Ye Chen.

Ye Chen replied causally: “She is not the goal I am chasing. My goal is to lead the younger generation of the Windy Nation, as for my second goal, I haven’t thought of it yet.”

Ye Xuan said spitefully: “Dream on! There are so many geniuses in the Windy Nation, let alone the famous four young masters, the inner disciples of our Emerald Martial Palace could beat you easily. You might think I am just bluffing, so just go ask your inner court disciples in the Sky Cloud Martial School then you will know. In this world of ours, who has not gotten beaten down by our Emerald Martial Palace disciples.”

“Ye Xuan, I don’t think I like your attitude. I know you are a disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace, but you are a member of the Ye family first. How could you always be attacking your own family siding with the outsiders?” Ye Hai did

not appreciate Ye Xuan's tone and put down his chopsticks.

Ye Xuan sneered, "I just don't like him."

Ye Hai said what he thought: "I think you just cannot really handle your own failure. But fair enough, Ye Chen used to be ordinary, and could have never been able to compete with you, so you never thought that one day you might lose to him, so when he actually did defeat you, it made you really uncomfortable, right?"

"Don't be too happy too early. You might be ahead of me right now, but it doesn't mean that this will continue forever. The Emerald Martial Palace is the biggest martial institution in the Windy Nation, our disciples are the best." Ye Xuan was a little intimidated by Ye Hai's speech, her voice volume slightly rose.

"Ye Xuan is right. You two are like the frogs in the bottom of a well. The Northern Snow Martial Academy and the Emerald Martial Palace are both rank 7 martial institutions. Their power is not something you could imagine. Just wait, one year from now, I will beat you both." Ye Tang appeared in the dining room.

Ye Chen sneered inside. Although these two were very talented, their personalities were quite terrible. They were fine when everything went according to their expectations; but once something went wrong, their frustration would be much greater than normal people. They were also extremely stubborn and held onto their beliefs even when they were in the wrong, which eventually led to their unbalanced mentality.

In short, they were blinded by their emotions.

“No need to argue with them”, Ye Chen said lightly: “Everything you said could only be proved by your action. Everyone can boast. Okay, please don’t interrupt my breakfast time.”

## Chapter 49 – Broken Sword

After breakfast, Ye Hai and Ye Chen, both arrived at the famous street in Luo City that was known for the antique shops located there.

The history of this street was as old as Luo City itself, the buildings located here were the most ancient ones in the city. And although the owners of the shops had changed from time to time, most of them were just taking over their family businesses, keeping the history alive between one generation to the next.

As they walked on the street, they saw that there were so many great things in every shop that Ye Chen did not even know where to look at anymore.

Ye Hai, who was standing right next to him, said: “Buying antiques here is more about luck. Someone had bought a high rank soul stone which looked like an ordinary rock for only ten silvers, then he sold it to a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior for two hundred million silvers. After that, he did not have to worry about anything for the rest of his life.”

Ye Chen laughed as he recalled that story. There were four different ranks total for soul stones: low rank, mid rank, high rank, and top rank. The gap between the quality of each rank soul stones was huge. Normally, a mid rank soul stone could be exchanged for fifty low rank soul stones, a high rank soul stone could be exchanged for fifty mid rank soul stones, after calculation, one high rank soul stone was equal to about two thousand five hundred low rank soul stones, and each low rank soul stone was two hundred and fifty silvers each. Adding all that up together, a normal person could live a really happy life with that kind of money.

“Let’s go have a look at the Nine Tripod Pavilion.” Ye Hai pointed at an antique

building twenty steps away from them.

Ye Chen nodded. The Nine Cauldrons Pavilion was an ancient thousand-year-old shop that was extremely well connected. The ancient nine footed bronze cauldron in the middle of the lobby was the shop's emblem. One time, a leader of the Ye family tried to purchase it, but was rejected. Rumor said that, the background of Nine Tripod Pavilion was extremely powerful and that even the Ye family was wary of it.

As they passed through the gate, there was no one that came to welcome them; everyone seemed to be extremely busy.

Ye Chen and Ye Hai did pay heed to it and walked straight inside.

In front of them was a huge cauldron that was taller than three people standing on each other's shoulders. It had a blue hue that was so dark that it was almost black, and a spherical round shape. Numerous ancient Chinese characters were carved on its surface; below the cauldron's body, there were nine feet supporting its humongous body, giving it an impression of being extremely stable. It had quite an extraordinary sight, making people feel as if it was touching the heavens.

Ye Chen took a deep breath. The last time he was here was four years ago, when he was still very young and weak. When he saw the nine footed cauldron back then, he did not feel much. But right now, he felt as if his soul was being shaken by its Zhen Qi.

When he turned his head to look at Ye Hai, Ye Chen saw that Ye Hai obviously did not sense anything from the cauldron, and although he was curious to know, he did not say anything.

“Let’s go to the second floor! There’s nothing good here on the first floor.” Ye Chen suggested after he scanned the room and failed to see anything noteworthy.

“Yes, all the items here on the first floor are no different from those displayed at the other shops.”

As the two walked together, they reached the second floor which was exquisitely decorated.

Compared to the first floor, there were not many people on the second floor. Including the shop assistants present, there were only about fifteen or sixteen people at best, which made the room seem quite empty.

The people who were on the second floor could be considered quite rich, since even the cheapest antique present here was worth thousands of silvers. As for whether or not it was worth it or not, it all depended on one’s own luck.

“Damn, this stone sculpture should at least have a hundred years history!” Ye Hai was attracted to a human sized stone sculpture that was full of cracks.

Ye Chen glanced at it before losing interest in it and walking away.

Right then, someone had already found the antique they wanted to buy, however, that person’s choice of antique surprised Ye Chen.

“Hey, go tell your manager. I want to buy this wooden shelf, just give me a



price.” The speaker was a fat looking guy who wore extremely fancy looking clothes and had rings on all of his fingers. However, he did not seem to have much patience.

The shop assistant was secretly annoyed. What the heck do you want this shelf for? This was just something used it to display all the antiques, is he trying to mess with us? But he put on a smile and said: “Okay, let me go check with the manager, please wait a second.”

“Hurry.” The rich fat guy waved his hand, while his eyes stared at the wooden shelf like it was going to grow a pair of feet and run away from him.

Ye Chen found this funny, but this also made him start to think. I should not judge a person by his appearance, this shelf might be more valuable than it appears to be.

With such thoughts in his mind, he stared at the wooden shelf with all his attention then suddenly released his soul force.

Swoosh!

There seemed to be an invisible wave in the air, that slowly entered into the wooden shelf and searched carefully. If there was anything special with it, Ye Chen would be able to sense it.

Hm?

There is a soul stone hidden inside this wooden shelf. It has way better Yuan Qi than a low rank soul stone. Judging from that, it must be a mid rank soul stone

which is worth five thousand silvers. How did this fat guy detect it? Or maybe he just simply wanted the shelf?

Ye Chen was a little bit excited but also a little confused, but it was just five thousand silvers, which was not that tempting for him. With his cultivation, it would be extremely easy for him to make that amount of money, of course, it would be easier for him to spend it.

The manager walked towards the fat rich guy in a hurry, he said to him: "Sir, are you sure you want this wooden shelf?"

The fat rich man rolled his eyes, "Give me a price!"

The manager reached out a finger, "Ten thousand silvers."

"Good, excellent price. My father-in-law would probably really like this ancient wooden shelf." The rich fat guy did not hesitate at all, as he took a one thousand gold note out from his storage ring.

"Excellent, as long as you fancy it. Lee, quickly, clean up the wooden shelf for our guest." As he took the gold note, the manager told the shop assistant.

Ye Chen was speechless. If the rich guy really did not know about the hidden soul stone and only bought it for his father-in-law; and the manager had no idea as well, given that he was only using this wooden shelf for decoration, then I guess nobody really lost in this transaction.

It looks like there are many interesting things happening in the Nine Feet Cauldron Pavilion. Nothing here is truly strange anymore.

As he shook his head, Ye Chen walked past the group.

There were countless antiques on the second floor. There was a broken half of a bronze mirror that was full of rust, a dark colored jar, a piece of material that was at least a thousand years old, there were also broken shells and weapons like steel chains, long swords, a broken blade, bent iron sticks, and a hammer without an iron chain and so on.

Releasing his soul force, Ye Chen looked at all the antiques one by one. His eyes pure and calm like river.

In the end, only the Shooting Star Hammer grabbed Ye Chen's attention. If it was repaired, it would be as valuable as the great blade inside Ye Chen's storage ring, perhaps even more.

Unfortunately, the broken hammer had already lost its sharpness and the rust accumulated from a thousand year neglect had burned out its spirit. It could only be used as a decoration or as a collection at home, instead of a weapon. Ye Chen could not accept it at all.

As he put down the Shooting Star Hammer, Ye Chen was about to leave.

Suddenly, something caught his eyes. It was a broken sword hidden in the gap between a wooden shelf and the wall. Only the hilt and half of the sword was left, its surface was dusty and lackluster, the sword could not be any more ordinary than this.

As he picked up the broken sword, Ye Chen had a quick look at it before he

infused some of his soul force into the sword.

“Hahahahhahahaha...”

A loud rich laugh rushed into Ye Chen’s head. At that second, Ye Chen felt as if he had traveled back to an ancient time where nothing else existed but the laugh resounding in his ears.

“What’s going on?” As he cut off his soul force, there was a hint of perspiration on Ye Chen’s forehead.

Using soul force to inspect an object was a new skill that Ye Chen recently picked up. Unlike using his consciousness, soul force allowed him to inspect deeper instead of just the surface, otherwise he would not have detected that mid rank soul stone in that wooden shelf.

## Chapter 50 – Cui Shiming

“Hey friend, I would like to buy this sword, how much do you want for it?” Ye Chen did not put it back and asked the shop assistant who had been waiting patiently.

The shop assistant glanced at the broken sword, “The manager had already stated that all of these ancient weapons are twenty thousand silvers each, no bargaining.”

“Okay.”

The price was still in Ye Chen’s budget, so it was worth buying.

Over on the other side, Ye Hai had also chosen a stone sculpture and a broken bronze clock for himself which was fifteen thousand silvers all together. By this, it could be seen that the annual profit of the Nine Footed Tripod Pavilion can be estimated to be unbelievably high since some of the ancient antiques cost them only a few silvers when they were bought in.

When the two left the Nine Footed Tripod Pavilion, it was already noon.

“Ye Chen, let’s go eat in the Sun Restaurant! I am buying.” Ye Hai had a storage ring as well which was given to him by his mentor, so he put the stone sculpture and the broken bronze clock in the ring.

The Sun Restaurant was the largest restaurant in the Luo City, Ye Chen hadn’t been there for ages, so he agreed immediately.

Fifteen minutes later, the two had arrived in the restaurant; and with the help of a waiter, they walked towards the second floor.

“Two young masters, would you like a room or will a table in the general dining area be fine?” The waiter asked.

Ye Chen answered: “The dining area is fine.”

“Alright. There are seats by the windows, please follow me, sir.” The waiter directed his guests with his hand, then he ran over to the table and wiped it with the towel that was over his shoulder.

As he sat down, Ye Hai checked out the view outside, and said: “There’s nothing better than being at home here in Luo City. You know, my mentor and I were on the road almost everyday, maybe this city today, then some small villages in the middle of nowhere the next day. Sometimes, if we were unlucky and unable to reach any village or town nearby, then we had to live in the wild.”

Ye Chen asked: “Were you ever in danger?”

“Of course! My mentor and I were once chased by a top rank 6 demonic beast in the forest of the Dark Dragon Emperor Empire. We had also been surrounded by a famous gang in the Rudra Nation. But fortunately, we were able to make it out easily most of the times.” Remembering the past, Ye Hai was still a little bit scared.

Ye Chen was actually quite impressed with Ye Hai. He is such a wild person. Obviously, his mentor is as well. No wonder they would team up together.

The dishes were served, the two also ordered a bottle of alcohol before they started eating.

During their meal, a lot of people walked up the stairs.

“Brother Cui, the Sun restaurant is the largest restaurant in the Luo City, a lot of famous powerful people had dined here before. You will not be disappointed.” A crispy female voice said. It was Ye Xuan.

“Since Senior Sister Ye gave such praise to the Sun restaurant, it must be good. Come on fellow disciples, let’s enjoy the meal.”

“Right, we are rarely here. We should definitely make some memories here.”

“Sister Ye, although the Luo City is pretty great, it is not a place for you to stay. You belong at the Emerald Martial Palace!” Someone persuaded.

The footsteps got louder and louder, the group arrived on the second floor. Ye Xuan was about to speak, but she sneered and frowned as she saw Ye Chen and Ye Hai by the windows.

“Sister Ye, who are those two?” The teenager with small eyes noticed the change in Ye Xuan’s expression, he turned his head and noticed Ye Chen and Ye Hai as well.

Ye Xuan said calmly: “They are members of my Ye family.”

“Ye family members, huh? I wonder which martial institutions they belong to.” Another teenager asked.

“One of them joined the Sky Cloud Martial School; the other followed the Broken Mountain Drifter and traveled the world.” Ye Xuan answered honestly.

“Sky Cloud Martial School... it is indeed a big martial institution in the Windy Nation. Too bad though, it is of no comparison to our Emerald Martial Palace. There’s a difference of two ranks in between. As for that Broken Mountain Wanderer, why did I never hear of him? He is not a swindler, is he?” The teenagers teased.

Ye Hai had already noticed the group’s arrival. He did not want to make a fuss, but when they talked bad of his mentor in his presence, he was truly pissed off. He put down his chopsticks and turned to them: “Who are you? Don't you know that it is extremely rude to judge other people’s mentors?”

The teenager with small eyes sneered: “I was just trying to warn you about swindlers. You don’t want to be involved with one of them, it is just not worth it if you lose your life, you know.” Normally, the group would have just let it go for Ye Xuan, but they heard she lost to someone called Ye Chen which unsettled them, and even Ye Xuan did not mention it, but the second they heard one of them was from Sky Cloud Martial School, they knew who they were dealing with, so they started messing with them on behalf of Emerald Martial Palace.

Ye Hai did not look good, “Take back what you said, and I will let this go.”

“Are you joking? Spoken words are like water that had been poured out, you could never take them back. So? What are you going to do about it?” The teenager with small eyes looked at Ye Hai and tried to provoke him.



Ye Xuan had a bad look on her face. These people were all Emerald Martial Palace disciples who were all at the same cultivation level. However, the guy that had the highest power level of all of them was Cui Shiming who had kept quiet so far. He was already a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, and was also the top ranked disciple among the inner disciples. Although Cui Shiming did not say anything, but Ye Xuan obviously knew how he felt about her, otherwise he wouldn't have come all the way just to see her.

On one side were the members of Ye family, while the other side were her fellow disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace. This was why Ye Xuan did not want them to have any conflicts, because no matter which side failed, it would make her look bad, which was the last thing she wanted.

“Lu Shao, let it go!” Ye Xuan finally decided to break it off.

The teenager with small eyes who was called Lu Shao glanced at Ye Hai, then he nodded and said: “I will let it go for Senior Sister Ye, otherwise it wouldn't have ended well for you.”

“How would you know if you don't try? Mountain Essence Fist!” Ye Hai yelled with anger. His body was filled with Zhen Qi; he threw out a punch towards Lu Shao.

“You are just looking for death.” Lu Shao's eyes were throwing ice cold looks. His feet touched the ground, then the next second he landed three steps in front of Ye Hai, and threw out a palm attack.

Boom!

A couple of tables nearby were blown away by the wind from the fist art; the other customers started to run for their lives, the whole restaurant was filled with the cries from the terrified people.

Ye Hai backed out three steps, he yelled with all his power: “Again!”

Another punch was thrown out that was even more powerful than the last one.

“Broken Jade Palm!”

The palm attack failed to beat Ye Hai which made Lu Shao look bad. So he decided to use an Emerald Martial Palace’s special martial art. His palms looked like a jade which were slowly cracking apart.

The fist and the palm clashed, making a sound like jade breaking. Ye Hai was slightly disadvantaged to his opponent when comparing cultivation levels. He could not fully control himself after the clash and had to continually step back even after knocking over several tables.

When he was going to fall out of the window, Ye Chen reached out his hand, and tapped on Ye Hai’s back gently. His Zhen Qi from the Pure Yuan Art was extremely pure and was able to break down Lu Shao’s Zhen Qi, saving Ye Hai from embarrassing himself badly.

“You are that Ye Chen! Experience my fist!” Lu Shao was looking for an opportunity to teach Ye Chen a lesson and now that Ye Chen had joined the battle, he could finally attack him. So Lu Shao jumped out and threw out another

Broken Jade palm attack.

“Piss off!”

Ye Chen kept his body very still, then the very next second, he threw out a punch and took back his hands as he waited.

Boom!

It was like thousands of horses had hit him, Lu Shao was still in shock while his body was blown away and blood poured out of his mouth.

Right at this moment, Cui Shiming caught Lu Shao effortlessly, and said quietly: “Brother Lu, in the future when you throw out attacks, you have to live up to our Emerald Martial Palace’s reputation, or just simply do not engage anyone. Remember that.”

Finished speaking, he changed his tone, and said to Ye Chen: “Wounding my fellow Emerald Martial Palace disciple, do you know what you have done?”

## Chapter 51 – The Secret Skill of Shadow Cuts

Ye Chen calmly said, “In the True Spirit Continent, nothing matters except one’s strength. If he isn’t as strong as others, what does that have to do with me?”

“You say that only strength matters, huh? If that’s the case, does that mean that it is okay for me to kill you?” Cui Shiming narrowed his eyes and spoke emotionlessly.

“If you think you have what it takes, feel free to challenge me, but I need to ask you something first. Let’s say I grievously wound you. Can you guarantee that one of the other top ten Inner Disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace won’t come and try to fight me?

Cui Shiming seemed a little mad, even if he was dumb, he would still get the sarcasm in those words, so he replied scornfully: “You? Don’t be crazy. Today I will destroy you and ruin your martial arts ability in front of everyone! I will let people know what happens if you mess with the disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace.”

Ye Xuan realized that they were on the verge of fighting, so she tried to dissuade them, “Brother Cui, it was all a misunderstanding! Please don’t make a big fuss of it!”

“Sister Ye, leave this to us, okay? It is not that I don’t respect you, it is just that this Ye Chen here is way too arrogant. He doesn’t know who he is messing with and he thinks that he can do anything he wants, just because he happened to reach the Condensing Reality Realm. If people learn about your loss in the future, then what will happen to the reputation of our Emerald Martial Palace?” Cui

Shiming was always thinking about the bigger picture, so that when he beat his opponent, it would not only give them physical wounds but also mental ones, which would break them down badly.

Taking a huge step forward, there seemed to be a little tornado forming under Cui Shiming's feet. The next second, Ye Chen was assaulted by a gale of wind. Ye Chen's clothes were blown up in the air, making a loud sound; the tables and chairs near them were also blown off the floor and out of the windows.

Ye Chen's feet seemed to be glued to the ground and his body did not move at all. He looked like a rock in a river, which had not moved for centuries. No matter how strong the winds or the waves, it would not move an inch.

Cui Shiming's face changed. A shadow separated from his body. Though it was a thin shadow, it was made of large amounts of Qi. The Qi was as sharp as knives and was heading straight for Ye Chen.

"Shadow Cuts! That is the secret skill – Shadow Cuts! Brother Cui is going for the kill! This Ye Chen is going down for sure." The disciples from the Emerald Martial Palace could not help but yell.

A secret skill referred to a martial skill that had never been told to or shared with another person. It was a type of martial arts that was extremely hard to defend against, which was why they are mostly used for killing. This type of skill worked better when one caught the opponent off-guard. Even when the opponent was at a higher cultivation level, they would still get badly wounded. They might even die. However, a secret skill was very hard to train in. Such skills were known to be ten times harder to train in than a normal martial skill of the same rank, plus, there are not that many secret skills out there, most of them were passed on from ancient times.

The secret skill that Cui Shiming was training in, Shadow Cuts, was a top rank Mortal Realm skill. The skill was separated into three stages. At the first stage, one could create a blade of Qi, which could be used to slice the target. At the second stage, which was the stage Cui Shiming was on, one could combine multiple blades of Qi into a large morphable shadow. It could easily cut people like cutting vegetables. According to a rumor, when the skill was trained to the third stage, the user could form a human shaped shadow that could confuse one's opponents and could be detonated at will, which made it a terrifyingly powerful move.

With the use of Shadow Cuts, Cui Shiming had once killed a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior, which greatly increased his reputation in the world.

Facing the shadow attack, Ye Chen raised his fist and punched out.

The punch brought up another wave of wind, which smashed a table to the side into pieces.

The shadow seemed to have sensed the vibration of the air flow, and changed its form ahead to avoid the deadly attack, then it immediately attacked towards Ye Chen from a different angle.

Ye Chen frowned: what a weird martial skill. It is ten times, no, a hundred times faster and more flexible than a human body. It also has a great sensitivity for air flows. It will probably be really hard to break it.

The shadow sometimes turned into a human figure and tried to attack Ye Chen, then the next second, it would change into a sharp awl, trying to stab at Ye Chen's head. Sometimes it would extend its body and attempt to whip Ye

Chen, then it would change into a sword and perform a sword art, emitting a bright sword light.

“Break!”

After struggling for a long time with the shadow, Ye Chen pulled out his sword and stabbed right into the head of the shadow.

“Such a fast sword move!”

Cui Shiming was surprised, then he sneered, “Don’t even think about breaking my Shadow Cuts. Anyway, I also don’t want to fight any longer. Shadow Rain Kill!”

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!...

The shadow lost a little of its substance, after being stabbed in the head. Its body flashed in the air, then countless needles of sharp Qi rained on Ye Chen with an inhuman speed.

Swoosh!

Ever since Ye Chen had reached the Condensing Reality Realm, this was the first time he had used the Golden Swallow Art. His body shifted and floated into the air, it was like he had a pair of wings on his back.

The next second, the ground Ye Chen was just standing on was full of all kinds of holes, from which you could see how powerful that attack was. Each of those

Qi needles was comparable to a bullet in the twenty-first century.

“If I guessed right, there should be a connection between you and the shadow, so I will break that connection.”

A sword light flashed past people’s eyes. Ye Chen’s sword sliced through the air between Cui Shiming and the Shadow. Although he encountered resistance, he managed to cut all the way through.

The sound of several strings being cut in half resounded. The shadow changed its form a couple of times, then, eventually, it broke off and melted into the air, disappearing completely.

“Bastard!” Cui Shiming looked very pale. The shadow was formed from one-third of his Zhen Qi, which was controlled by thirteen Zhen Qi strings. Right then, when Ye Chen cut off all the zhen qi strings, Cui Shiming had lost more than one-thirds of his zhen qi which made his remaining Zhen Qi fluctuate.

“What?! Cui Shiming’s Shadow Cuts was broken?!”

“This is one of the thirteen secret skills from the Emerald Martial Palace! How could it be so easy to break it? Had he encountered it before?”

“So that’s the secret of the Shadow Cuts? How could he know?”

All of the Emerald Martial Palace disciples looked shocked.

After he cut off all the Zhen Qi strings, Ye Chen looked at Cui Shiming, “A secret



skill with its secret known is no longer a secret skill. I am afraid that all your fellow disciples have also learned of the secret now.”

“Brother Cui, don’t listen to him. We will keep your secret.”

“Yes! I will swear on my pride that I will not tell another living soul about the secret of Shadow Cuts.”

Hearing them, Cui Shiming had a bad look on his face, “You are definitely going to die. You really think I only have Shadow Cuts? I will tell you this, it is only one of my many skills. Now I will show you my real power.”

“Cracked Jade Claw!”

All of a sudden, the floor was cut open. Five scratch marks stretched all the way to the other side of the room.

His clothes floating in the air, Ye Chen effortlessly avoided the attack. His body flew backward rapidly, his right foot lightly touched the wall.

Boom!

The wall was shattered. Ye Chen, seemingly, turned into a bird and flew towards Cui Shiming, stabbing out with his sword.

The amazingly bright sword light compressed into a dot, slicing through the air without any restraint. Even the sound of fast movement through the air could not be heard anymore, making people wonder if they had just lost their sense of

hearing.

Cui Shiming growled, his claws reached towards the tip of the sword.

Chin!

The unbelievably bright spark flashed in front of the crowd and then disappeared from their sight. An explosion rushed out from where Ye Chen and Cui Shiming had clashed.

“The Twisted Road!”

While his body was still in the air, Ye Chen twisted his body then dived towards Cui Shiming, in an inhuman way. His sword pierced through Cui Shiming's shoulder and came out behind him.

Right then, everyone present was in shock. they could do nothing but stare at the scene.

## Chapter 52 – Before Heading Back to the Sky Cloud Martial School

Shoo!

Ye Chen landed a few meters away and put his sword back in its scabbard.

“If you are just not as good as other people, I believe that there is nothing much you can do about it. But on the other hand, if I lost to you, you would have crippled my cultivation. Now, if I do not kill you nor cripple your cultivation, and you still decide not to drop this issue, then don’t blame me for being cruel. Plus, I believe that the Emerald Martial Palace would not declare war on my Sky Cloud Martial School just for the sake of you, a little inner disciple, you are not that important.”

“Ye Hai, let’s go.”

Since the dishes had all been knocked over, there was no reason for them to stay there any longer. Fortunately, they were almost done eating when Ye Xuan and the others came in.

Ye Hai just stood there staring at Ye Chen’s back as he walked away. Although he already knew that Ye Chen was very strong, he still could not help but be surprised when he saw him beat a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior within ten moves. What kind of aura is that? In comparison, my fighting spirit, which is all I have gained during my travels, is nothing when compared with him.

By the stairs, Ye Xuan could not control her trembling heart as she watched the two leave.

Maybe he could really tower over the young generation of the Windy Nation, being able to accomplish things even the top disciples of Emerald Martial Palace could not accomplish. He at his Early Condensing Reality Realm somehow managed to beat Cui Shiming who was already at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm. When he reaches the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, does that mean he could challenge warriors at the Late Condensing Reality Realm? Then, what happens when he gets even stronger?

“Bastard, I will never let you get away with this.” Cui Shiming roared, he had a murderous look on his face.

Ye Xuan frowned as she glanced at Cui Shiming. Although she was not a big fan of Ye Chen, but when compared to Cui Shiming, it was obvious who was the better of the two, Ye Chen had even won fair and square.

“Brother Cui, are you okay?” Even though she said that, Ye Xuan did not sound that worried.

Cui Shiming waved his hand in the air, “I was careless this time. The next time we meet, I will have to kill him to relieve this hatred I feel. All of you, listen up! If you tell another living soul about this, you are dead.”

“Brother Cui, don’t worry, we will keep our mouths shut.”

“Yes! That brat must have known about the secret of the Shadow Cuts skill before, how else

would he be able to beat our brother Cui?”

After hearing these words, he felt slightly better, Cui Shiming turned his head to look at Ye Xuan, “Sister Ye, you are a member of Ye family, I am sorry but I will

have to kill Ye Chen. I hope you will not obstruct me.”

Ye Xuan replied calmly: “Life or death, it is only a warrior’s destiny.”

“Good!”

...

After arriving at Ye family , Ye Chen and Ye Hai went their separate ways.

The following days, Ye Chen did not go anywhere but put all his effort into training.

Although his Zhen Qi was already more stable than most of Condensing Reality Realm warriors that had broken through, in order to reach the Peak of Early Condensing Reality Realm, he would have to produce a lot of Zhen Qi before extracting them which was not easy at all; he would have to do it step by step without taking any shortcut, only then would he might be able to reach the next stage.

At night, the moonlight was as clear as the water in a river.

On a hill in his yard, Ye Chen sat with his legs folded in front of him; both of his hands had a low rank soul stones each, he rested them on top of his knees while he breathed out slowly but firmly. Gradually, he extracted the Yuan Qi from the soul stones.

The Yuan Qi from the soul stones was much purer than the Yuan Qi obtained

from the nature, because it had been sealed in the soul stones for a long time, it even grew a little bit of ling qi which was way more beneficial than just the Yuan Qi, the longer you were exposed to it, the sharper your mental acuity would be and the fresher you would feel; it had great benefits for a human body.

The Yuan Qi from the soul stones flowed through the meridians in Ye Chen’s arms and entered his body, the Zhen Qi tornado inside Ye Chen’s Dantian also sped up its spinning. It was like a meat shredder, shredding everything into pieces then putting them back together with the help of the Zhen Qi. It then followed the remaining Zhen Qi and started spinning, from which, it cleared out all the impurities.

One rotation!

Two rotations!

Three rotations!

...

Seventy-two rotations!

...

One hundred and eight rotations!

...

Two hundred and forty rotations!

Only when his meridians and Dantian began to hurt, and his muscles tightened and grow numb, did Ye Chen finally stop absorbing Yuan Qi. He sighed. If I could just continue absorbing and extracting Yuan qi endlessly, reaching the Peak of Early Condensing Reality Realm would not be impossible for me.

In actuality, Ye Chen was just being too greedy, if anyone else of the same cultivation had heard Ye Chen's thought, they would be extremely envious and jealous of him.

Because normally, it was already extremely hard for Early Condensing Reality Realm warriors to complete one hundred and eight rotations of Zhen Qi. Not many people could manage to complete even one hundred and fifty rotations, not to mention the two hundred and forty rotations that Ye Chen did.

It was all because his strong body that allowed Ye Chen to handle that large amount of Yuan Qi, while his strong soul allowed Ye Chen to be able to control it so precisely. It would have never been possible if either one of them was missing. Why could those people who had a great potential be able to train faster than other people? It was only because their bodies were much stronger than the normal human beings, and their mental fortitude was much stronger. As for people with great comprehension abilities, their mentality would be much stronger even if their bodies might be comparatively less stronger.

But of course, that was also why Condensing Reality Realm was not considered to be that significant. Once warriors reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm or higher, they would go into closed door training for months; some Astral Reaching Realm warriors would even go behind closed doors for years to train. But when they were finally come out, they would be unbelievably powerful and would be able to beat all the powerful people around the world easily.

Unfortunately, the higher the power level, the harder it is to advance. To go behind closed doors and train was done to stabilize their essence and filter out the impurities. However, it was extremely hard to have a breakthrough in their cultivation, if they didn't have enough training then it would all be pointless. There were a lot of powerful people who were able to defeat anyone they had met initially, but after their closed door trainings, they became nobody, and now people could not even remember their names.

As he put away the soul stones that still had some trace amounts of Yuan Qi left, Ye Chen slowly stood up, and as his body slightly shifted, he already landed in the little pond in the yard.

His feet touched the water, his body bounced up and down on the surface yet did not sink, a spectacle that could only be achieved by someone who had mastered a movement art to its peak stages.

Now that I have already stabilized the Zhen Qi, it will be impossible for me to have another break through for a while. I should start begin training the Tyrant Fist tomorrow.

Watching the moon for a little while, Ye Chen lost his interest in it, his body floated up from the pond, and disappeared in the air in the blink of an eye.

...

Days came and went.

Besides accumulating Zhen Qi every night, Ye Chen spent all his energy on



training the Tyrant Fist.

This fist art was indeed a low rank Earth Realm art which had high requirements on the trainer's body and the quality of Zhen Qi. If the body was not strong, then the trainer's arms would very likely be damaged by the power of the Tyrant Fist; if the Zhen Qi was not pure enough, then the power of Tyrant Fist would not only be decreased but would also damage the trainer's body, and if its usage continued in such a situation, it might cause blockages in one's meridians and ruin the trainer's body.

But despite all of that, Ye Chen had already managed to reach the early stage of this fist art and understood the essence of the art.

Finally, the day for him to go back to Sky Cloud Martial School had come.

And this time back, he hoped to become an inner disciple and be qualified to train in the top rank Mortal Realm skills within half a year of time. After six months, he would be able to go on the missions given by the martial school and travel the world. Rumor said that, if he was powerful enough, he might even be sent to a foreign country for a mission; however, it would be really rare since the Windy Nation was already quite large and had a plethora of missions waiting to be completed.

Also, the further it got from the Sky Cloud Martial School, the harder the mission would be. The leaders of the school never wanted to see their disciples lost in the middle of a foreign land without being able to know if they were alive or not.

## Chapter 53 – The Inner Disciple Entrance Test (Part One)

“Father, mother, don’t worry, I can take care of myself.” Ye Chen was holding the reins of his horse, they were on the main street of the Luo City, as he turned his head and said to Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing.

Shen Yuqing nodded, “If you run out of silver, send a letter back, and I will ask someone to send you some.”

“I have enough. Plus, I will receive a lot from the rewards for finishing school missions.” Ye Chen did not plan to ask his family for money at all because he felt uncomfortable to ask them .

Ye Tianhao had no choice and said with a huge smile: “Yuqing, Chen’er had grown up. He will earn his own money with his own hands, and we, as parents, should just give him some space. Chen’er, be safe, okay?”

“Yes! I will.”

Ye Chen nodded exaggeratedly, “I should get going, you guys should take care!”

Finished speaking, Ye Chen jumped up his horse as he waved goodbye, then his feet clenched the horse’s stomach and it started to gallop.

Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing watched him leave.

When Ye Chen almost reached the gate of the Luo City, someone rode up to

him.

“Ye Chen!”

Ye Chen turned his head, it was Ye Hai. “Where’s your mentor?”

“He is waiting for me in a small temple ten miles away towards north.”

As the two spoke, they rode their horses out of the city gates, rushing past the city guards who did not dare to stop them.

The small temple was in the north-east, while the Sky Cloud Martial School was in the south-east, so the two were not heading in the same direction.

“I got a little something for you, here.” Taking out a blue crystal ball from his storage ring, Ye Hai tossed it to Ye Chen.

Catching the blue crystal ball, Ye Chen asked: “What is this?”

Ye Hai and his horse was already ten meters away, he answered without even turning his head: “I don’t know, it looks pretty nice I thought you might like it.”

“Thanks!” Ye Chen shook his head, and held the blue crystal ball closer; he started studying it carefully.

The crystal ball was about the size of an eye; it was clear with a hint of blue shine under the sun which explained why Ye Chen thought it was blue when he first saw it. Aside from that, the crystal ball was very heavy, seemingly much denser than gold. It seemed like it was not made from crystal either.

Unable to figure it out, Ye Chen decided to put it aside for now and tossed it into his storage ring.

Orienting himself towards his destination, Ye Chen lightly pulled the reins and disappeared in the dust.

Unlike the azure horse he rode before, this time he had a dark brown horse which was worth more than sixty thousand silver and was able to run two thousand miles in one day. There were no more than twenty dark brown horses within the whole Ye family.

At that moment, the dark brown horse galloped at full speed flashing through the country like lightning through the sky. The surrounding scenery passed Ye Chen in the blink of an eye.

...

Six days later, Ye Chen arrived at the bottom of the the Windy Mountain.

Ye Chen walked towards the inner disciple examination court in the middle of the mountain, after he put the dark brown horse in the stable and paid the tuition fee for the year. Today was the day of the inner disciple entrance test, if he missed it today, then he would have to wait for another week.

In front of the court, the two inner disciples who were on watch duty were standing by the door. They saw Ye Chen coming towards them from afar, the disciple on the left could not help but say: "This is like the thirteenth person today. It seems like those outer disciples gained a lot from their trip home!"

“Hm, those people from before did not even stabilize their Zhen Qi yet, they obviously did not get it from training, they probably copped out and just took a condensing reality pellet.”

“A condensing reality pellet could help warriors liquidize their Zhen Qi faster, but it has a huge side effect which drastically decreases their chances of any future breakthroughs in their cultivation.”

Walking to the door, Ye Chen said: “I am here to take the inner disciple entrance test.”

“Go ahead! I hope you pass.” The disciple said disingenuously.

Ye Chen took a step and walked into the court unperturbed.

The examination lobby was cavernous, there were nine thick stone columns inscribed with vibrant dragon and phoenix carvings on each side. In the front was a large empty area which had a single thick wooden shelf, below the shelf hung a huge bronze azure bell that was three meters high that looked extremely heavy.

If Ye Chen guessed correctly, this should be the first test of the examination to be an inner disciple.

No matter if it was the Sky Cloud Martial School or any other martial institutions, just reaching the Condensing Reality Realm was not enough to become an inner disciple, you would also have to pass a few tests. Since there was a huge difference between actually achieving Condensing Reality Realm by

hard work and achieving it by taking the pellets, not to mention there was a huge difference in fighting ability as well between the two. In order to avoid accepting worthless students and to maintain a high standard for the inner disciples, martial institutions had to set all kind of tests just to make sure no one slipped through the cracks by luck.

As for the Sky Cloud Martial School, the first test to be inner disciples was located in this lobby. According to Wu Zongming, Ye Chen would have to ring the heavy bronze bell with one punch from a ten-step distance; if the bell did not make a sound, then he would be disqualified, otherwise, he could go onto the second test.

As for Zhang Haoran and Wu Zongming who had both reached the Condensing Reality Realm by themselves, they had passed the inner court disciples test without any effort.

“Are you here for the entrance tests? Come register your name here.” The staff handed over a piece of paper and a writing brush.

Ye Chen nodded, wrote down his name and information.

“Okay, now go join the queue!”

There were already thirteen people waiting there in a line, Ye Chen went and stood at the back of the line.

Finally, the examiner showed up.

The exam master who was in his fifties stood in front of everyone and scanned

the room, then frowned. ‘What happened? All the disciples testing this year all have weak Zhen Qi, did they all boost up their power level by taking pellets?’

“I don’t care how high your cultivation is, if you could not ring the bell from ten steps away, then you fail. If you want to try again, you will have to wait another three months.”

Finished speaking, the exam master took the name chart and said slowly: “The examination has officially started. Lin Changchong, you’re first!”

An ordinary-looking teenager walked out from the front of the line, stopping ten steps away from the bronze bell. After taking a deep breath, he threw out a punch, blasting out a wave of strong and fast wind.

However, the bronze bell did not move an inch. The exam master said lightly: “Disqualified. Next, Fang Xiaozhong!”

Hearing the elder, the teenager named Lin Changchong looked disappointed, he stepped back to the side with his head hanging down. He looked at the second disciple in line, secretly hoping he would not pass as well.

Fang Xiaozhong asked the exam master: “Could I use martial skills?”

“Yes.” The exam master nodded.

Lin Changchong’s eyes widened, he yelled: “Unfair! Why did no one tell me that I’m allowed to use martial skills?”

The staff on the side yelled back: “Impudent! No yelling in the examination lobby. Did you not check the rules before you came here?”

Lin Changchong was a little bit shocked, he did not dare to say another word.

“With your Zhen Qi, you would not pass even if you used martial skills. Okay, Fang Xiaozhong, you can start.” The exam master was not mad at all.

Fang Xiaozhong accumulated his zhen qi, his palms turned into claws, he waved them out in the air.

“Tiger’s Might Claw!”

Shoo!

His claws exuded a green aura the size of a bucket, it scratched the bronze bell heavily.

Somehow, the bronze bell still did not move an inch.

“Unqualified. Next! Zhao Hu!”

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in the lobby had changed.

“What the hell? Why is it so hard? Even martial skills could not make it move.”

“Not good, I probably would not pass either.”



All of the disciples remaining were all scared and started looking at each other as they did not know what to do. Only Ye Chen looked extremely relaxed and could not care less.

## Chapter 54 – The Inner Disciple Entrance Test (Part Two)

After Fang Xiaozhong, there were another three disciples that failed their test. Seeing this, the exam master was unimpressed.

“Next, Wang Xuemei!”

Wang Xuemei was about sixteen years old, her looks were quite homely but she looked determined. She responded to her name and walked out from the line before stopping ten steps in front of the ancient bell.

Studying the girl who just walked out, the exam master’s eyes brightened slightly. This girl’s Zhen Qi is still a little bit unstable, but it is obviously better than those five people from before, she seems to have trained it herself for a long time.

“Start!” The exam master’s voice sounded a little bit excited.

Wang Xuemei nodded, she put her right palm which was full of Zhen Qi in front of her chest, then threw it out like a lightning.

Buzz!

The ancient bell made a slight sound, but it was so quiet and happened so fast that a lot of people did not even hear it.

The exam master smiled: “Wang Xuemei, pass!”

“Phew!” Wang Xuemei let out a breath, she thought to herself that she was being a bit arrogant earlier when she thought that she could easily ring the bell without using any martial skills, she didn’t expect that the ancient bell would only slightly move, even she didn’t hear the bell ring clearly, not to mention the others watching.

Wang Xuemei seemed to have brought up the spirits of the remaining, four of the next seven people had also successfully managed to shake the ancient bell and passed the first test.

“Next, Ye Chen.”

Finally, the exam master had called Ye Chen’s name.

Leaving the crowd no time to even predict the results, Ye Chen casually walked a few steps forward, then stopped in front of the ancient bell while there was still quite a distance between them and threw out a punch.

Doooong!

The ancient bell started to vibrate heavily, the huge sound reverberating on and on unceasingly; it could even be heard from miles outside the examination court.

The two inner disciples who were guarding the door suddenly shivered. Who the heck was that? An outer disciple who just reached the Condensing Reality Realm could actually manage to shake that ancient bell like that?

Inside the lobby.

“Am I seeing this right? He was at least fifteen steps away.”

“No, at least sixteen steps away.”

“What kind of scary power? Maybe he had already reached the Condensing Reality Realm for a while now but just did not tell anyone?”

All the disciples kept discussing about Ye Chen, all their eyes were focused on him.

Ye Chen looked calm and relaxed. Hitting an ancient bell from a distance was nothing hard for him, it would be weird if he could not make it.

The exam master froze for a while before laughing: “Good, good! Pass... Pass!”

He said “pass” twice in a row, you could feel how surprised the exam master was.

As first test quickly finished, the second test began to commence, and those disciples who had failed the first test were asked to leave.

In the back of the examination lobby.

There was an open field about one hundred and fifty meters long. In the middle, there was a large sixty meter wide lake; and on each side of the lake,

there were wooden posts that were ten meters high. It looked like a wooden bridge that had its middle removed, which looked extremely strange.

“The second test is testing your movement arts. Movement art is all about the purity of your Zhen Qi. For this test you would have to start on the bridge on the right side, then float to the other side of the bridge. If you are able to even grab the wooden post on the other side with your hands, you will pass.”

Looking up, Ye Chen estimated the distance with his eyes, he realized that the gap in the bridge was the same as the width of the lake, which was sixty-six meters, to be precise. A normal Mortal Realm warrior would feel dizzy just by looking at it, not to mention flying across to the other side.

Just like he expected, all the other disciples except Wang Xuemei started to look pale.

“Sixty meters?! That is way too far! My Cloud Steps could only allow me to float for about fifty meters, I would not be able to go further than that.”

“Good for you, that you trained in the Cloud Steps movement arts. I trained in the Tiger Jump Art, I can only cover thirty meters with each jump... What am I going to do about the remaining thirty meters?”

Hearing the chatters around her, Wang Xuemei seemed very confident, the corner of her mouth angled up demurely.

The exam master was just about to say “begin”, when a group of inner disciples walked out from the exam lobby while chatting and laughing.

“What are you guys doing here?” The exam master said slightly irritated.

“Master, you know, there are not many school missions at the end of the year. And we are quite bored of training, and when we heard that there was quite a number people testing today, we came to check it out.” An inner disciple of the group who seemed to be very close to the exam master, said with a smirk on his face.

“Alright, you guys could stay if you want to watch, but don’t you dare affect them while they are testing, otherwise I will kick you out.”

“Don’t worry, when did we ever created trouble for you?”

The exam master nodded, he cleared his throat and said: “First, Wang Xuemei!”

Hearing him, Wang Xuemei’s feet touched the ground, then her body bounced up to the right side bridge like a ball. She took a deep breath before she started with a short run-up to the post then jumped up high in the air like a bird taking off.

Ten meters!

Twenty meters!

Fifty meters!

Fifty-five meters!

When she was only ten meters away from the other side of the bridge, Wang Xuemei ran out of Zhen Qi and her body fell from the sky rapidly. She was about to fail her test.

“Harmonious Art!”

At that breath-taking moment, Wang Xuemei yelled out in a low voice as her body inconceivably rose up up in the air again and landed on the wooden bridge.

An inner disciple commented: “Her ability to master the Harmonious Art to this level is quite impressive. This art allows the users to rapidly restore their Zhen Qi when they run out of Zhen Qi.”

After Wang Xuemei, it was the second candidate’s turn.

He had trained in the Cloud Steps arts, and when he used it, it was like he was walking on a floating cloud, extremely effortless and smooth. However, he had not yet completely mastered his martial steps, so he failed to cross the distance and fell into the pond with a huge splash when he was only five meters away from victory.

The third candidate was even worse, he only floated about thirty meters before he fell horribly into the pond, which caused the laughter among the crowd.

The fourth candidate had some good luck. At the end of jump, he somehow managed to struggle in the air and moved forward an extra half meter which just enabled him to hold on to the edge of the bridge and hang in the air.

The fifth disciple taking the test swallowed, then he said to the exam master: “Master, could I step on the surface of the pond?”

“Step on the pond?” The exam master sounded confused, as he knew that the wooden bridge was ten meters high, and jumping by stepping on the water would not be easy since the surface of the water was not solid like the ground.

“Since there was no rule against it, if you could make the jump, then I will let you pass the test.” The exam master nodded to agree.

His face showed joy, this candidate jumped up to the right side of the bridge, then he dived down towards the pond.

Splash! Splash!

It was like an insect touching the water, he stepped on the water at an extremely fast speed, his body looked like it had zero weight.

“Hehe, this should be the Floating Body Dharma! No wonder he had this idea, but it will not be easy to jump ten meters from there though.” A lot of the inner disciples recognized the martial art he was using, they all showed curiosity on their face, they wanted to know how he would make it through this test.

Ha!

When there was only five meters to the other side of the bridge, the candidate stepped extremely hard on the surface of the water with his right foot, and



brought a huge splash, then his body used this momentum and flew into the sky.

“It is the Water Burst Spell! No wonder!”

Ye Chen’s eyebrow twitched. He had heard before, that the Water Burst Spell could amass volumes of water in a short time, then make it explode using Zhen Qi to create a huge force. That was why that candidate could easily use the exploding force to push his body into the sky.

The exam master forced out a laugh, “Pass! Next, Ye Chen!”

## Chapter 55 – The Inner Disciple Entrance Test (Part Three)

All of a sudden, everyone's eyes focused on the last contestant Ye Chen.

Ye Chen did not feel any pressure as he jumped, smoothly leaving the ground as he extended his arms like a huge bird, before landing lightly on the wooden bridge.

Just that feat alone had already shocked all the other candidates.

“Start!” The exam master nodded. Ye Chen's excellent performance had already surpassed his expectations, and he was sure that with time, Ye Chen would definitely become one of the top inner disciples.

Looking at the other side of the bridge which was sixty-six meters away, Ye Chen felt it was too close since he could already walk in the air for about one hundred meters when he was at the peak of the Mortal Realm, and now that he had reached the Condensing Reality Realm, one hundred and fifty meters would be a piece of cake. If he could manage to train a top rank Mortal Realm martial art, reaching two hundred meters would only be a matter of time.

With only a whisper of his clothes, Ye Chen stepped out and flew. He extended his arms like a big bird taking off; his clothes floated in the air, his movements were extremely smooth and fast.

Shoo!

Within two blinks of an eye, Ye Chen had already landed on the other side of

the bridge.

The exam master yelled: “Good! Pass!”

“Brother Huang, this Ye Chen’s movement art seems to be as good as yours!”

“No, if we are just comparing movement arts, I think he has already surpassed me. My only advantage is that my Zhen Qi is slightly higher.”

“Oh my, an inner disciple can access top rank Mortal Realm manuals freely. By that time, I think only ‘Wind Rider’ Brother Feng could compete with his movement art.”

“You guys are overrating him if you intend to compare him with Brother Feng.”

Seeing that the second test had finished, all the inner disciples who were watching started to passionately discuss between themselves, all with different ideas.

The exam master looked at those inner disciples with a smile, “What? Feeling pressured? Besides him, also don’t underestimate Zhang Haoran and Wu Zongming who had just become inner disciples a few months ago. Their talent and potential are extremely rare, maybe one in ten thousand disciples.”

“I know that Zhang Haoran, he beat brother Guo who was famous for his brutal attacks six months ago when he just became an inner disciple, even now, there are still a lot of people talking about him!”

“He is extremely arrogant, but still, he has what it takes.”

Soon after.

The third test had begun.

In the back of the open field, there was another space which had the look of an ancient Greek coliseum. In the middle of the court, a round hole was dug out like a round swimming pool without water; and on the wall surrounding the hole on the ground, there were eight dark passages that had large iron bars blocking them.

“The third test is to battle a demonic beast. If you could hold on for the time it takes an incense stick to burn, then you pass the test and officially become an inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School.” The exam master said to the remaining four.

The disciple next to Wang Xuemei asked: “Master, I wonder what rank the beast is?”

“Rank 3!”

“Ah! Rank 3 demonic beasts!” The disciple’s face paled in a second. If the opponent was an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior, he would not be this afraid; but a rank 3 beast was a completely different story, because when compared to a human warrior, a demonic beast’s body was naturally stronger and had a strong intimidating killing intent. With the same cultivation level, a demonic beast would be much stronger than a human warrior.

The exam master sneered: “Are you afraid?”

The disciple did not know how to respond.

“If you are afraid of a rank 3 beast, how are you going to travel the world which is filled with more dangerous things than a demonic beast? You know, in this world, the fearsome things are not the demonic beasts, nor the strong warriors, it is human desire. People with a strong evil desire are ten times, even hundred times dangerous than demonic beasts. They kill without any emotions.” The exam master meant every word of his, and was trying to teach his young apprentices a life lesson.

Wang Xuemei gave that disciple a scornful look, and said: “Master, I volunteer to be the first one!”

The exam master quite liked Wang Xuemei, he smiled: “Since you are all just new to the Condensing Reality Realm, of course we would not use the very strong rank 3 beasts. The rank 3 beasts for this test are Iron Claw Demonic Wolf, Cheetah Tail Wolf, Blood Pattern Bear and the Black Shelled Cow.”

“They are indeed not very powerful, but they are still equivalent to a normal Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior!” An inner disciple said.

“Alright, the test officially begins. Wang Xuemei, you go first.”

Wang Xuemei followed the instruction and jumped down into the hole. Her eyes focused on the dark passages being blocked with iron bars, because she could sense that sinister auras emanating forth had locked on to her.

“Ready?” The exam master walked over to the control platform, and asked.

Wang Xuemei nodded.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

After the exam master pressed a button, iron bars in front a passage slowly lifted up, inch by inch, the darkness behind the bar was revealed.

Ahwooo!

The iron bar had not completely lifted up yet, but a huge dark shadow had already jumped out with a terrifying speed and moved towards Wang Xuemei.

“Wind Shirt Sword Art!”

Wang Xuemei did not panic, she took out two short knives from her waist and held them in a cross before slicing out towards the dark shadow.

Chin!

Sparks flew everywhere. The dark shadow revealed its true identity, it was a calf-sized demonic wolf with dark hair, its red eyes had a hint of green in them. Its huge jaw filled with its horrifying teeth made an unbearable sound. At that moment, its front claw touched the knife, clashing with Wang Xuemei.

“Piss off!” Accumulating Zhen Qi onto the short knives, Wang Xuemei yelled with a low voice. Her body suddenly twisted, and her knives started to spin.

Shoo!

The demonic wolf was extremely fast, it jumped away from Wang Xuemei's attack, then in the next second it jumped towards her again from a different angle. It was sly yet also cautious, and was full of natural murderous instinct.

Wang Xuemei seemed to have experience fighting against a rank 3 monster and seemed to know what she was doing. She was in control of the situation and did not try to take any risks. Basically, she had been using the classic strategy where she blocked all the attacks while looking for chances for her attacks hit. Her two short knives created a great defense line, protecting her body without any flaw. They kept clashing with the demonic wolf's claws and brought up sparks.

As human and beast fought, no one was losing, and no one was really winning either. Soon, the time it took for an incense stick to burn had passed.

"Wang Xuemei, entrance test passed! Congratulations! You are now an inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School." The exam master's right hand made a gesture in the air, and the iron claw demonic wolf was caught by an invisible hand. It was then sent back into the black passage as the iron bar was once again closed, blocking its way out.

Wiping the sweat off, Wang Xuemei was a little bit surprised. That iron claw demonic beast had been locked up for too long, which made it three times more vicious than usual, attacking every living creature it came into contact with. If it wasn't for her having the same kind of training at home, she might not have passed the test without getting hurt.

The good thing was that she finally made it, now that she had become an official inner disciple, she could access all the Top Rank Mortal Realm manuals and she would also be able to take on school missions in the future and travel the world with other inner disciples, building her own reputation.

After her was that male disciple who had embarrassed himself before, and his opponent was the Cheetah Tail Wolf which was famous for its speed and brutal attacks.

Within ten breaths of time, he had been wounded by the demonic wolf and fell on the ground. Thankfully, at that deadly moment, the exam master saved him, but sadly that also meant that he failed his test and lost his chance to be an inner disciple for at least three months.

Next was that disciple who had used the Explode Water Spell in the second test. While his movement art was not as exquisite as the rest of the group, his combat skills were definitely on par. The Blood Pattern Bear, that was not very quick with its movement, obviously could not injure him and instead, had been hit several times. But of course, with this level of attack, the beast could not be stopped at all.

After an incense burning time, the second inner disciple was selected.

“Ye Chen, it is your turn.” The exam master was pretty confident about Ye Chen. The only thing he was wondering about was whether if Ye Chen would actually beat the beast or pass by passing the time like the two before him.

Ye Chen did not know what the exam master was thinking and just jumped down into the hole without any hesitation.



## Chapter 56 – The Ranking Jade Wall

The passage was open, and a humongous dark shadow with an extremely powerful aura came out of it.

Moooooo!

The dark shadow growled, its voice shook the ground. It was a demonic cow covered in a black shell, its horns were as sharp as knives; its shoulders were two and half meters above the ground, its eyes were as large as bells; it was breathing loudly, and even its breath was visible. Its hooves were divided into claws that were shaped like knives; they had a cold icy shine to them.

“The Black Shelled Cow is the most powerful among these three beasts, it possesses an innate god-like strength, and an extremely high defense; it will be very hard to beat it!”

“I think he would probably try to hold on for an incense burning time.”

The crowd obviously did not think that Ye Chen could beat the Black Shelled Cow, as even some inner disciples found it hard to break through the demonic cow’s defense in a short time; not to mention Ye Chen, who had just reached the Condensing Reality Realm.

Unlike the Iron Claw Demonic Wolf and the Blood Pattern Bear, the Black Shelled Cow did not attack at once. Its right foot was digging into the ground, and its huge eyes were focused on Ye Chen while its body slightly lowered.

Tap! Tap! Tap! Tap!...

After a few seconds, the Black Shelled Cow suddenly let out some grey demonic Qi which wrapped around its whole body, leaving only its two bloody murderous eyes visible. Then, it moved its feet, and with a horrifying pressure, it ran towards Ye Chen, which looked like it planned to hit Ye Chen to death.

Right then, Ye Chen moved, his right arm's muscles tensed, his fist tightened and he was facing forward.

When the Black Shelled Cow was only half a meter away from him, Ye Chen growled, he threw out a punch to break through the demonic Qi; it landed heavily on its forehead.

Boom!

The hard rocky ground cracked open as the Black Shelled Cow's huge body smashed into the ground. There was blood all over its body, and its legs were twitching helplessly.

One punch knocked out the Black Shelled Cow.

Gasp!

All the inner disciples who were watching could not help but gasp in astonishment.

Wang Xuemei mumbled: "What a scary person!"

After a long while, the exam master finally praised: “Well done, with your potential and talent, making a name for yourself out there in the future will not be hard. You could perhaps even compete with those geniuses that belong to the other Martial Institutions, and bring glory to our Sky Cloud Martial School.”

Ye Chen was unperturbed, as if nothing out of the ordinary took place. In fact, he had only used seventy percent of his strength, a walk in the park for Ye Chen. He heard the exam master, and replied, “Thank you, master, you are too generous with your praise.”

“Whether I am merely praising you or stating the truth, that all depends on you and how hard you are willing to work for it in the future. Otherwise, even if you have a higher potential, you will still not be able to achieve much. In the past twenty years, I have seen many ordinary disciples that were able to climb above everyone else and make a name for themselves, and I have also seen many geniuses that have fallen into complete obscurity. I hope you are not the latter.” The exam master could not even remember how many times he had gotten his hopes up, only to be disappointed eventually. But he was still quite excited for Ye Chen, and he sincerely hoped for him to grow up well to become someone of great repute in the future.

“The inner disciple entrance tests has now officially ended. You three, follow me to receive your waist tags and robes for the inner disciples. The rest of you can just go back to what you were doing!”

...

In a room in the examination lobby.

“According to your size, choose three sets of inner disciple robes, and, in the future, if they are damaged or ruined, you can come here to exchange them.” The exam master opened one of the many rows of closets, as he addressed the three of them.

Ye Chen looked in the direction of the cabinets. The twelve closets were huge; there were dozens of white robes of different sizes neatly arranged in the shelves. There were labels indicating the sizes in front of each shelf.

The three knew their sizes well, so they quickly chose their gear.

The exam master brought the three of them to the armory to let them pick out a weapon of their choice.

Ye Chen chose a one-meter-long great sword named Hidden Cloud, which was of the same level as the Colorful Snow Knife from the Northern Snow Martial Academy, and the Viridian Glaze Sword from the Emerald Martial Palace; they were all great weapons to have. And Wang Xuemei chose two purple colored short knives, named Purple Delight; the other disciple was not very good with weapons, so he casually chose a dagger that could cut iron like mud.

Right then, the exam master took out three dark blue colored name tags that looked neither like iron nor like wood that were quite heavy.

“Remember, your name tag symbolizes your identity as an inner disciple, you should take good care of it; it also represents your status and can be a proof of your capability during your travels around the world. When you are in danger, flash this name tag, and it may be able to save your life. You should also remember that, if you are killed after losing your name tags, the Sky Cloud Martial School will be unable to do anything about your death.” The exam

master warned them.

“Yes, sir!”

The three nodded.

Picking up a name tag, the exam master accumulated Zhen Qi at the tip of his finger and started writing on the back of the name tag with his finger. The friction between his Zhen Qi and the name tag produced heat and soon there was some light blue colored smoke.

After he finished writing on the first tag, he picked up the second one...

Soon, all three name tags had a name on each of them, rendering them useless to anyone besides the owners.

As he took the name tag, Ye Chen subconsciously squeezed the name tag with sixty percent of his power to test how tough the name tag was. The result was out of his expectation; the name tag was undamaged as if nothing had happened. Ye Chen did not stop there, he accumulated all of his Zhen Qi in his hand and squeezed as hard as he could, along with his crazy strength.

A little bit of white smoke poured out of Ye Chen's hand, but the name tag was still in perfect condition without a scratch.

As he let go of his Zhen Qi, Ye Chen could not help but admire the exam master's power that had allowed him to effortlessly carve their names on the name tags. If those extremely powerful fingers ever landed a hit on his body, it will definitely leave a huge bloody hole.

“Now, follow me to the Ranking Jade Wall! Every inner disciple had been there at least once.”

Ranking Jade Wall?

The three of them had heard about it before, but none of them had never actually been there.

In the middle of the mountain, there was a place called the Cloud Riding Palace, it was where the inner disciples received their missions; and outside the palace, there was a huge square which was floored with white jade. There was a jade wall on the side of the square, which was five meters tall and three meters wide; it looked white with a hint of blue, on which a number of name tags were hung.

Right then, there were a lot of inner disciples standing under the jade wall with lifted heads as they studied the location of different name tags and the names present on them.

“Zhang Haoran has surpassed another ten people, he is now ranked two hundred and eighty-fifth.”

“That Wu Zongming is not bad either, he is ranked three hundred and thirty-third now.”

“The most impressive one is still Sister Xu Jing, she had gone from twenty-third rank among the core disciples straight to the eighth rank.”

Ye Chen and the other two walked through the chatters, and walked up to the jade wall.

“Greetings, Master Tang. Are these three new inner disciples?” Although the exam master was only an outer master, he was still extremely powerful, and could even compete with some of the low ranked inner masters. He was also very friendly, which was why he was very liked and well respected by people.

The exam master nodded, he said with a smile: “You guys will have to work harder now, some of them have great potential, and could definitely be ranked in the top four hundred.”

“Hehe, we are working hard already, you don’t have to worry about us, Master Tang.”

Ye Chen did not pay attention to their conversation, as he was studying the huge jade wall.

The wall was covered with name tags that were separated into twenty-nine rows; each row could have twenty name tags at most, and each name tag had a different name on it. Among these, Wu Zongming’s and Zhang Haoran’s names were not hard to find, they were on the third of the seventeenth row and the fifteenth of the fourteenth row, respectively.

The first and second rows were full of core disciples’ name tags that were all a blood red color, clearly stating their superiority; the third row was for the top ten inner disciples whose name tags were a shade of light red, representing their ability to challenge the core disciples and replace their positions on the wall; the fourth row and onwards were full of the name tags of inner disciples represented in dark blue, the same color as the name tags of Ye Chen and the two other

newly accepted disciples .



## Chapter 57 – Top Rank Mortal Realm Art Manuals

“All three of you, write your names on the name tags and then hang them at the end.” The exam master pointed at the empty slots in the last row and said.

Ye Chen followed the exam master’s instruction and took a blank wooden tag. Just like the others, he accumulated Zhen Qi at the tip of his finger and slowly carved his name onto it, and then hung it back in one of the empty slots of the last row.

The exam master massaged his temples, “I will not be briefing you about all the little things like the rules of the ranking and such, you guys could just go ask your fellow disciples, they will explain everything you need to know. As there is nothing else, I will take my leave then.”

After the exam master had left, the male disciple who had just become an inner disciple immediately asked the rest of the inner disciples present: “Senior Brothers and Sisters, my name is Li Sheng. I’d like to know what the use of this rank system is and how it works. Can someone explain this to me?”

One of the inner disciples explained: “To be honest, the ranking doesn’t really matter, as it doesn’t have any actual use; but if you really think that it’s completely useless, then you could not be anymore wrong. First, the ranking system encourages the disciples and increases their motivation to train, as no one would want to be at the bottom of the list; but not anyone can simply be placed at the top either, so if you want to obtain a better rank than anyone else, then you will have to put in a lot of work and effort to achieve it. Of course, there are some people that don’t really care whether they are placed at the bottom or top, but such people are really rare, it can even be said that such people are almost non-existent as it’s already really hard for us to even get here. And more

importantly, by the end of the year, the inner disciples who are ranked at five hundred or more would lose their status as an inner disciple and they will be sent back to be an outer disciple. If one wants to recover their status as an inner disciple, then he will have to wait for another six months. Before you guys arrived, there were already eleven inner disciples that were sent back.”

What a cruel competition!

Ye Chen carefully thought about this matter. It sounded as if it was nothing important, as only people that ranked worse than five hundred would be disqualified; so, as long as you were not placed at the end, you would be able to continue being an inner disciple. But the problem was that, all the inner disciples who were already in the danger zone would not simply go down without trying; they would probably do everything they could to be ranked below five hundred, and once a person in the bottom ranks gained a place in the top five hundred, someone else would be dragged down, which in turn would make him work even harder in order to be placed better. In this way, this vicious cycle will go on and on.

Eventually, all the inner disciples would be filled with an extreme sense of competition, leaving very few people that were able to hold their place.

Another inner disciple continued: “The process of the ranking is pretty simple, that is to challenge someone for a battle to win their place. There’s one condition though: you could only challenge people ranked in your row. For example, people on the twenty-ninth row could only compete with disciples from the twenty-ninth row. Once you achieve the first place of the twenty-ninth row, then you could challenge the inner disciples from the twenty-eighth row. Besides that, there is also a huge ranking competition for all the inner disciples, that takes place during the middle of the year. The whole ranking chart will be refreshed, as all those people who had been avoiding the competition all the time would have nowhere to hide.”

“Is that so?” Li Sheng took a glance at Ye Chen, full of envy. He knew that, with Ye Chen’s strength he could effortlessly obtain a place in the top four hundred, and was very unlikely to be eliminated; but as for himself, it’s really hard to even survive.

Right then, a female inner disciple who was quite attractive reminded them: “I recommend you guys to take on some school missions before you go challenging your fellow disciples. Because, the experiences of facing life threatening dangers and killing people have a huge impact on your battling skill, and also the inner disciples you challenge are not going to go easy on you.”

“Yes, it is always a little bit unpleasant when you are being challenged. The ones with good temper will probably let you go once they make you bleed a little, but those hot headed ones might beat you up so much, that you will have to stay in bed for a while, which happens quite often.”

All of a sudden, there were noises at the front of the square. Everyone followed the direction of the noise and looked over, there were two teenagers in blood stained clothes carrying another teenager; it was doubtful if he was alive or not.

“What happened to Brother Liang?” Someone asked urgently.

The teenager on the left wiped his tears, “Those disciple from the Purple Sun Martial Palace were way out of line. We were the first ones to find the mission target, but they stole it from us, and we had no choice, but to fight for it. Brother Liang tried to protect us, but ended up taking three punches and four kicks and was badly injured.”

“Fuck, those bastards from the Purple Sun Martial Palace, I will not let them get away with this. I will kick their asses the next time I meet them!”

“So brutal, not only had they stolen the mission, but also injured our people.”

Listening to all the chatter filled with anger, Ye Chen just started to feel the pressure of being an inner disciple. He would not only have to compete with his fellow inner disciples in the institution and try to be the best of them, but also had to fight with the disciples from the other martial institutions; and any careless mistake of his would cause him great danger. There's a possibility of him being badly wounded, or even being killed out there.

Of course, That was not the only danger. The warriors that belonged to various gangs, that had been hunted down by the martial institutions before, they were always looking for opportunities to mess with the disciples.

Even though Wang Xuemei saw all of it, she knew that she was not strong enough to do anything about it yet, she tightened her lips, turned her head and left in silence.

I should go to the Pavilion of Martial Skills first. Once he became an inner disciple, Ye Chen would have six months' time to train freely. Although he did not really want to wait for half a year, he definitely wanted to train in a couple of top rank Mortal Realm skills, as even his King Kong Fist and his Golden Swallow Art would become less useful as time goes.

In the Pavilion of Martial Skills.

“Master, we meet again.” This time, Ye Chen greeted the pavilion master first, and showed his inner disciple name tag.

The pavilion master said in surprise: “The inner disciple name tag! Atta boy!”

“Hehe, I just got it. Now, there will not be a time limit anymore for me to go up to the second floor, right?” Ye Chen laughed.

“Of course not. Go on!”

After saying that, the pavilion master stood there for a while, as he mumbled to himself: “This kid sure is a genius, he was only at Mortal Realm Stage 4 the last time he came. It hasn’t been that long and he’s already at the Condensing Reality Realm !”

On the second floor!

Standing by the entrance, Ye Chen thought to himself: from now on, I can stay on the second floor for as long as I want, so awesome!

Although there were many top rank Mortal Realm manuals, just one hundred or so all together, choosing one that suited him the most would not be that easy.

Naturally, he preferred to choose a martial art first.

Previously, the Pure Yuan Art had brought him all kinds of benefits. So, this time too, he decided to choose a Zhen Qi martial art like the Pure Yuan Art.

Although some other martial arts like the Twist Heart Spell had some special benefits like its twisted aura, it could only be used in close combat, so its general rating would not be as high.

“Purple Qi Three Flowers Spell, top rank Mortal Realm Art, contains seven stages in total. Once someone trained it to the third stage, a purple flower made of Zhen Qi would appear above his head; on reaching the fifth stage, there will be two of such flowers formed from Zhen Qi. Reaching the highest stage, that is the seventh stage, the person who trained this art would be considered to have completed his Zhen Qi training, and there would be three flowers then. He would also gain inhuman strength at this stage.”

“River Spell, top rank Mortal Realm art, contains seven stages in total. Once one mastered this art, they would have an endless amount of Zhen Qi along with extremely strong power; once they reach the final seventh stage, they would be able to accumulate the Zhen Qi from the surrounding water to increase the effect of his own attack power. If he is close to a huge water body like a river or an ocean, his power would be largely enhanced.”

“Wind and Thunder art, top rank Mortal Realm art, contains seven stages in total. Mastering the first four stages makes the person extremely fast and extremely sensitive to air flows allowing him to even ride in the wind. Once fully mastered, it could even allow him to use thunder during his attacks, allowing him to paralyze his opponents.”

After going through three martial art manuals in a row, Ye Chen thought to himself: these are indeed top rank Mortal Realm Martial Art, all three of them are very powerful, and way better than the high rank Mortal Realm art. The reason he could beat Huang Bingwen was only due to his power level not being high enough, otherwise there would be no way for Ye Chen to beat him. As for being able to beat Ye Tang and Ye Xuan, it was only due to his extremely powerful body strength which they all lacked, it was pure luck.

If there were only these three manuals he could choose from, he would choose the Wind and Thunder art, as it greatly benefited his fly art. When trained to the highest stage, he would even be able to use thunder during his attacks, which would be extremely useful for him.

But it was still too early for him to decide, as there might be even better arts that he hadn't seen among the rest of the manuals.

## Chapter 58 – Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art

On the second floor in the pavilion of the martial arts.

Ye Chen walked around the second floor, picking up and reading manuals before putting them back down.

Many of these manuals were actually quite good, each of them had their specialties. For example, some of them had a fast recovery speed, that was beneficial for long battles; some of them had strong Zhen Qi when in danger, that was beneficial for short fast-paced battles; some of them were great for defense, that was beneficial for warriors who preferred head to head battles; and some of them had special effects, such as the twisted aura from the Twisted Heart Spell.

All in all, any martial art manual that was ranked as a top rank Mortal Realm, would not be too shabby.

Ye Chen had almost gone through all of the manuals on the second floor before he finally found something he was quite happy about.

“Pure Jun Zhen Qi, top rank Mortal Realm Art with seven stages in total. According to this, it was the special martial art from the Clear River Sword Institution two thousand years ago. The first four stages were focused on training and sharpening Zhen Qi; the fifth stage could produce Qi light and kill people within a ten-steps radius; the sixth stage would improve even further, becoming capable of producing a Qi defense, combining both attack and defense. On the last stage, all the Zhen Qi of the trainer’s body could be combined all together and thrown as Qi swords, wounding people from a hundred steps away.”



“Great, I will take it.” Ye Chen felt that there was no need to continue searching, this Pure Jun Zhen Qi was very suitable for him.

After deciding on a martial art, the next thing to do would be to choose a movement art.

The Golden Swallow Art was only a high rank Mortal Realm, but it was really effective, and even Ye Chen would not dare to look down upon it. In another words, before, without the Golden Swallow art, his only trump card was his body strength, which he wished to keep concealed.

But now, he had the opportunity to choose a top rank Mortal Realm movement art; there was no way Ye Chen would let this opportunity go to waste.

Shadow Shifter!

Wind Rider Spell!

Seven Star Floating Cloud Art!

Crane Shadow Steps!

All the different kinds of movement art manuals were making Ye Chen feel dizzy.

The Shadow Shifter was pretty self-explanatory, it allowed a warrior to quickly shift his body within a short period to confuse the opponent. Wind Rider made a

warrior's body strong but light, capable of running as fast as the wind. The Seven Star Floating Cloud Art allowed a warrior to stand on seven stars and float in the sky and travel miles in minutes. Finally, the Crane Shadow Steps allowed a warrior to move so fast that he would become almost invisible.

After a moment, Ye Chen made up his mind and confidently chose the Crane Shadow Steps, just like when he had chosen the Golden Swallow Art.

Finally, Ye Chen picked up a new Fist Art manual. As for a sword art, Ye Chen did not need one at the moment since he had already mastered the Lone Peak Thirteen Swords which was as strong as a top rank Mortal Realm sword art when fully mastered.

After leaving the pavilion of martial arts, Ye Chen went back to his own little compound.

...

One and half month passed in the blink of an eye.

One morning, a thin layer of fog had covered half of the Wind Mountain.

On a cliff in the middle of nowhere, there came a sound of a man grunting from exertion.

A breeze blew the fog away, revealing a human figure standing in front of a huge black rock with the height of three meters.

The sound was coming from the human figure, and if you looked carefully, you would notice that the fog all around him could not get near him, it was like there was an invisible Qi bubble around him. Not only that, but all the fog that had come close was completely shredded into smaller pieces, almost like steam coming out of pot of boiling water.

The human figure was Ye Chen. His eyes shut as he concentrated on accumulating his Pure Jun Zhen Qi.

After a long while, Ye Chen finally moved!

He waved his hand, and an nigh-invisible Qi light flew out of his hand and landed on the huge rock.

Boom!

The granite chips flew everywhere, and on the surface of the huge rock, a two-meter long furrow was gouged out, the edges of the furrow were as sharp as a knife cut.

Boom! Boom! Boom! ...

That first Qi light had already been extremely powerful, but the subsequent Qi light were even more powerful. Each attack was narrow, long and sharp, bent like a saber, every attack landed precisely on the huge rock, leaving countless extremely horrifying deep fissures.

“Blade like Zhen Qi, is this the sixth stage of the Pure Jun Zhen Qi art?”

Looking at the huge rock with fissures everywhere, Ye Chen felt something stir inside him. Half a year ago, he would never have been able to cause this kind of destruction even if he had used all his power. But now, he could throw out hundreds of attacks without effort, and if those attacks ever land on a human being, they would just become diced meat.

Wanting to test the limits of his new martial art, Ye Chen took a deep breath, and his right hand formed a knife hand as he waved his hand in the air.

Crack!

A half-meter long Qi light was formed. In the blink of an eye, the huge rock was punched through, and tiny little cracks soon covered the whole rock.

Meanwhile, Ye Chen started to walk towards the huge rock.

When he was only one meter away, the surface of the huge rock slowly depressed before becoming a dark-brown-colored powder and shooting out, covering the ground.

As he took a step back, he could see there was a new oval-shaped hole on the surface of the huge rock, it was smooth like it had been polished.

“Good, this Qi light is pretty impressive!”

Ye Chen marveled at the so-called Qi light that was formed by countless sharp Qi, it would shred any object that came too close; if it was mastered to a high

level, no common weapon could compare and would definitely be shredded into iron dust if they clashed.

However, it was not be easy to master the Pure Jun Zhen Qi art to the sixth stage. During the past one and half months, Ye Chen had trained his Zhen Qi for a total of one hundred and eight times, and after each time, he would be completely exhausted and full of sweat.

But of course, all of this was worth it. The power demonstrated by his Pure Jun Zhen Qi art was more powerful than most Zhen Qi, and it was only at the sixth stage. Once he mastered the seventh and highest stage, his Zhen Qi could throw out Qi swords freely. By then it would be fully mastered, and his Zhen Qi would be able to easily kill his enemy a hundred steps away, its power was simply incomparable to any other martial skill.

Unfortunately, powerful martial arts were quite difficult to master. Ye Chen's comprehension ability could be considered to be one of best, but he could still not reach the seventh stage within the time he spent, not to mention the peak of the seventh stage, or the full completion of the Pure Jun Zhen Qi art.

Let's train the Crane Shadow Steps first!

According to the rumors, there was a huge mountain that was one hundred thousand meters tall on the west side of the True Spirit Continent. On that mountain, there were thousand-year-old magic cranes; their wingspan could reach more than a hundred meters wide, covering the sun. When they flew over the forest, branches would be snapped by the strong winds that followed their flight. When they flew over the sea, waves would reach more than one hundred meters high. When they flew past the desert, they would cause countless sandstorms and drown everything.

These magical cranes were not demonic beasts. Some said they were some deity's pet, and some said they were prominent ancient creatures, but all of the rumors only made them more mysterious. Every year, many people would journey west at least once in their life to try and catch a single glance of them.

Real or not, the legends of the magical cranes have existed for thousands of years, which was the basis of their name, the thousand-year-old magical cranes.

Two hundred years ago, a movement art genius journeyed to the west side of the True Spirit Continent like many others. After waiting for several years, he finally saw the magical cranes and although the magical crane that he saw only had a wingspan of only thirty meters, it was still as magical as the legends. The magical crane could easily crack open small mountains, its speed was so fast that human eyes could not follow it, and a single leap could reach ten miles.

Inspired by the majestic crane, the movement art genius spent another several years studying the magical crane. Day by day, he toiled away before eventually creating his own impressive movement art.

### The Crane Shadow Steps.

However, mortals have never actually seen the magical cranes, so they could not capture the essence of the art, resulting in the slow degradation of the Crane Shadow Steps. Eventually it was lowered to be a top rank Mortal Realm art.

In an accident, the Crane Shadow Steps art manual was retrieved by an inner master of the Sky Cloud Martial School and he stored it in the Pavilion of the Martial Arts for disciples to learn.

## Chapter 59 – The Crane Shadow Steps

Ye Chen heard about this legendary story from the pavilion master.

The pavilion master also happened to be a warrior who had trained in the Crane Shadow Steps. According to him, executing the Crane Shadow Steps with his peak Early Clasp Yuan Realm cultivation allowed him to traverse two hundred meters in one leap; it was faster than half the speed of sound, from that, you could tell how powerful the Crane Shadow Steps was.

However, even the pavilion master could not fully exhibit the Crane Shadow Steps art to its full potential, so he trained in a different low-rank Earth Realm movement art, called the Fleeting Body of Lightness Art. He could move two hundred and fifty meters each second, a full fifty meters more than the Crane Shadow Steps art.

“Two hundred and fifty meters...it is three times more the distance than mine.” Ye Chen felt quite accomplished with his movement art, since he could move eighty meters in the blink of an eye. A normal Mortal Realm warrior would not even be able to catch his shadow, but compared to the pavilion master, he was nothing. He would probably be killed in a single move.

Forcing a smile, Ye Chen knew he was being arrogant. There was no comparing his cultivation and the pavilion master's. Perhaps when he reached the Clasp Yuan Realm, covering two hundred and fifty meters in a single move would not be a big deal anymore.

Without reason to delay any longer, Ye Chen took out the Crane Shadow Steps manual from his storage ring and started to read it from the beginning.

There were three key factors for training the Crane Shadow Steps art. First was the body movement. Second was the method of accumulating qi. Third was the mentality. The body movement and the method of accumulating qi were quite self-explanatory, but the most crucial factor was the mentality. A cultivator must imagine himself as a magical crane, and combine the two as one. Only by being able to do so, could a cultivator display its full power and boost the speed up to the peak level.

It seemed quite easy, and since all that was needed was to use your imagination, anyone could do that. However, people that were truly capable of using their imagination and able to bring out the full potential of this art were extremely rare, even one in a hundred thousand might not be able to do so.

Considering the fact that humans were one of the most complicated organisms, its secrets were still not fully discovered. Only the warriors who had reached the fifth stage of the Spirit Ocean Realm could see through it, understand the true meaning of life and death, and able to apply it to themselves to slow down their life, enabling them to live for thousands of years. However, once one reached that level of power, every breakthrough in their training would have to go through a punishment from the gods, either the thunder tribulation, the fire tribulation, or the Yuan challenge. Each challenge and punishment were completely different and each change had different layers. If the warriors managed to survive it, then they could carry on learning about the true meaning of life and prepare for stepping into the legendary seventh power level. If not, then they would have disappeared completely into ashes and drifted into the wind, leaving no traces.

Legendary people like the Fake King, Mysterious Queen, Evil King, and the Dragon King were warriors who went through the challenge of life or death and had extended their life by thousands of years. They had fully reached their potential. If they were to learn the Crane Shadow Steps art, they would be able



to learn it in seconds, but for their status and power, they would not appreciate the Crane Shadow Steps for sure, even the magical cranes would not mean anything to them.

Of course, stimulating potentials was only one of the benefits of learning the true meaning of life, not all of it. And thousand years later, they would still die like the rest of us.

We shall talk about this at another time.

Thinking about stimulating his potential, even just for a little bit, Ye Chen sighed. He thought, no wonder so many people could not get the essence of the Crane Shadow Steps, it was because they had never seen the magical cranes. Without actually seeing them, how would they know their mentality and their habits, he was afraid he might end up being the same.

Whatever, without the mentality of the magical crane, it is still one of the greatest top rank Mortal Realm Movement art. Many people who really wanted to learn it, didn't even have the opportunity to get their hands on it.

After being slightly disappointed, Ye Chen brought himself back up, he knew the first thing he needed to do was to master the Crane Shadow Steps to its peak, and worry about the rest later.

...

Everyone always said there was no time in the mountains, which was true.

One-month passed by while Ye Chen was putting all his effort in training the

Crane Shadow Steps. Maybe it was because of the stimulating mentality, or the people who were active grew faster, Ye Chen who was only fifteen had grown from one hundred and seventy centimeters to one hundred and seventy-five centimeters. Without cloths, he looked slim but not skinny at all; he had a wide shoulder and a small waist, the muscle around his arm and chest were crazily strong. Standing there, he fully represented the masculinity as how it should be, even though he was only fifteen years old.

After one-month of training, Ye Chen had now already fully understood the Crane Shadow Steps, and his Pure Jun Zhen Qi art had also reached the peak of the sixth stage. His defensive qi light had changed from crystal clear to light blue, which largely enhanced its power.

Right now, he could use the method of accumulating qi from the Crane Shadow Steps and jump into the clouds in front of the cliff, and he was now able to use the defensive qi light to cut open a tunnel and come back onto the cliff midair like a true flying magical crane, even the gravity could not restrain his body anymore.

Right now, each jump of mine could reach one hundred meters, plus the protection of the defensive qi light, and the inner protection from the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, my power had increase at least one time stronger. If I encounter that Cui Shiming again, I could beat him in three moves, but he was only a normal Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, not a genius, a lot of his martial skills had not been mastered to its peak yet, which was nothing worth mentioning. If I meet a peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior with few fully mastered martial skills, it would still be probably pretty challenging for me to beat him, too bad there is no opportunities for me to test it, otherwise, I could finally know what kind of level my power had reached, and where my limit is.

Ye Chen thought to himself, but he could not find an answer.

He thought he was a genius, but in this true spirit continent, the things that were least lacking were geniuses. Before, there was the Mysterious Queen who had stepped into the challenge of life or death at her teenage years, being one of the top warriors, she was at the same level of the Evil King and the rest. Then, there was the four Childe of the Wind Nation. The reason they were referred as the Top Four Childe was because they were horrifyingly impressive in all kinds of areas, otherwise, they would not earn their reputation.

But of course, for the Top Four Childe of the Wind Nation, Ye Chen was only envious, but they were not powerful enough for him to be shocked. The Wind Nation was only a small nation in the South Zhuo area, there were twenty-four other small nations, ten medium nations and three huge nations in the whole south Zhuo area. Even a small nation like the Wind Nation had people like the Top Four Childe, you could imagine what kind of powerful warriors were out there.

Not only that, even the Rudra Nation did not care for Wind Nation, they consistently sent out armies to disturb the border of the Wind Nation, and asked their soldiers to disguise as robbers to rob the businessmen from the Wind Nation.

Besides the national power, there were also countless geniuses in the Rudra Nation, sometimes there were even more geniuses than most of other small nations, and they could compete with all the medium nations.

If it wasn't for the Top Four Childe holding up Wind Nation's reputation for the past few years, Wind Nation would already be a joke to other nations.

Ding! Ding! Ding!...

Right then, a sound of the bell ringing had come from the middle of the mountain, which spread miles and miles.

Ye Chen's eyebrows twitched. He knew that only the Floating Cloud Palace in the Sky Cloud Martial School would ring bells, just like the inner disciple entrance tests, although there was a huge difference between ringing the bell and smashing the bell.

It should be the Sky Cloud Martial School releasing school missions, anyways, I'll go check it out.

His figure blurred, the next second, Ye Chen landed on a huge tree a hundred meters away. Then, his body shifted, and disappeared completely.

## Chapter 60 – Killing Mission

Inside the great Floating Cloud Palace, there were hundreds of disciples and counting.

Walking into the palace, Ye Chen scanned the room. The palace still looked empty even though there were hundreds of people gathered in it. The ground was laid with whole pieces of blue steel stones, each side had nine blue and red stone columns each with flying dragons carved on them.

And beyond the stone columns, there was a jade wall every thirty steps that was full of papers.

“Ye Chen, you are here too.” A teenager also walked into the palace. It was Wu Zongming, he had already known that Ye Chen had become an inner disciple, so he didn’t seem surprised to see him there.

Ye Chen turned around and said, “After I trained for three months straight, I don’t think I can improve any more for a while, so here I am to check it out.”

Wu Zongming laughed: “I cannot even compare to you. I had trained for five months before I dared to take on a mission. Oh, right, this is your first time here in the Floating Cloud Palace, you might not know much about the school missions, let me brief you in.”

“Thanks, man!” Ye Chen was just thinking about asking.

“There are two types of school missions: one of them is a bounty mission from

outside parties. For example, if some small family would like something done, they would hire the martial institution, then the martial institution will rate the case before giving it to the disciples; the other one is from the martial institutions themselves, which is also called the inner school mission. The paycheck from inner school mission is not as high as the bounty mission but you can get a small amount of soul stones for it. So to tell which mission is which, all you need to do is to look at the paycheck, because the bounty mission only pays in gold, while the inner school mission pays in gold and soul stones.”

Ye Chen nodded.

“Also, according to the difficulty of the mission, they are all separated into different levels. The lowest level is the white rank mission which is suitable for Early Condensing Reality Realm warriors to take on, the next level is the grey rank mission, which is suitable for the Mid Condensing Reality Realm warriors; then there is the black rank mission, which will only be accepted by Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors. As for the master level rank above the black rank mission, it is not something we need to think of. Now, check out the color of those jade walls to tell the mission level from it.” Wu Zongming pointed at the jade walls in the palace.

Hearing his advice, Ye Chen looked over the direction Wu Zongming was pointing , and he realized the two jade wall close to the door were white, so the mission on it should be a white rank mission. According to the “left big, right small” rule of thumb, the wall to the left would be the school missions; and the wall to the right would be the bounty missions. After that, there were two grey jade walls, then two black jade walls which had the least number of disciples standing around them, only eight. Those disciples must be at Late Condensing Reality Realm. Among them, there were even core disciples seen.

Clearing his throat, Wu Zongming continued talking: “Besides that, within the same rank, the missions are then separated into different star ranks, from one to

five stars, with a five-star rank being the most difficult. With my cultivation now, I can only take on a three-star white rank mission. Otherwise, my life would be in danger, a five-star mission would be a suicide mission to me.”

Ye Chen asked: “Does that mean you can team up for a mission?”

Wu Zongming nodded and said, “Yes, that is correct. For example, I can only take on a three-star white rank mission, and if I want to take a four star white mission, I must bring one or two inner disciples with similar cultivation with me. Once the mission is completed, the individual pay could be even better than a three-star white rank mission, which would be a win-win to everyone.”

“Ah! Sounds good!”

After listening to Wu Zongming’s explanation, Ye Chen was very interested in the school missions, but did not feel like teaming up with others at the moment.

“Alright, I need to go say hi to those older disciples, I teamed up with them before.” Wu Zongming saw Ye Chen had already learned the basic rules, he would not continue to engage in bull shit pleasantries with Ye Chen.

Ye Chen thanked him once again.

After Wu Zongming left, Ye Chen walked over to the white jade wall on the right side first.

Just as he expected, the white jade wall on the right was full of bounty missions, they only paid in gold, no soul stones.

He read it from the top to the bottom.

On the first paper, there was a black skull drawing on it, and under the skull there were words written on it.

Mission: Kill the Skull Gang.

Crime Committed: Robbed businessmen, killed for goods, raped women, unforgettable crimes!

Analysis of cultivation: The leader of the Skull Gang is a peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior, the second and third in command are both Early Condensing Reality Realm warriors. There are around forty people and horses in the Skull Gang, with dozens of bows and arrows.

Mission difficulty: 5 stars

Mission rewards: Thirty-thousand gold

Suggestion: To be completed by five peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warriors or two Mid Condensing Reality warriors.

After he finished reading the paper, Ye Chen could not help but gasp. This five-star white rank mission is so damn hard! Killing a whole gang! Of course, the more people there are, even if they have one power level higher than the opponent, it might still not be enough. If you are reckless or careless, you might even get killed. No wonder it is recommended that it should be completed by five



peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warriors or two Mid Condensing Reality Realm warriors, if you were to go alone, it would just be a suicide mission.

But they were only suggestions for those disciples who were not talented or gifted. For geniuses like Ye Chen, taking challenges that were above their level was nothing new. If he took on this mission, Ye Chen was sure he had a ninety-percent chance to complete the mission.

However, if he took on this kind of difficult mission for his first mission, would it truly be a good idea?

Thinking about it for a moment, Ye Chen decided to give up the five-star white rank mission. It was not that he was trying to avoid the troubles, but rather being cautious. He decided to start with an easy white rank mission, then take on harder ones later when he had more experience.

“This mission is mine!” All of the sudden, a hand made a grabbing gesture in the air, then “swoosh” the piece of paper with the Skull Gang mission on it landed on the hand effortlessly.

Ye Chen turned his head, it was a tall teenager, with thick, black eyebrows. Standing there, the teenager had a great aura, pressuring all the disciples around him and pushing them, which made them had to step back. They yelled out of surprise: “Brother Wang!”

Brother Wang? Ye Chen was not familiar with the name, but the vibration of the Zhen Qi from that teenager was extremely strong, which meant he was at least a Mid Condensing Reality Realm Warrior.

With a light laugh, the tall teenager turned to leave.

Ye Chen was not bothered with what just happened, he put his attention back on the jade wall, scanning down the wall.

On the third row.

Mission: Killing Bloody Butcher!

Committed Crime: Raped women, killed countless people!

Analysis of cultivation: Peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

Mission difficulty: 3 stars

Mission rewards: Four-thousand gold

Suggestion: To be completed by two Peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warriors or a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

Ye Chen's eyes brightened. This is it!

## Chapter 61 – The Bloody Butcher

The Bloody Butcher's cultivation was equivalent to a normal Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior. Even though Ye Chen had just reached the Condensing Reality Realm stage, he was not afraid. To be honest, this mission was way too easy for Ye Chen.

However, Ye Chen had his reasons for picking this mission. This was his first mission, he did not want any screw ups, it had to be perfect. Once he had enough experience, he would choose more difficult missions, as there were always many missions available. It was not like this was the last mission he would ever do, so there was no need to hurry.

Tearing down the mission sheet, Ye Chen did not rush to leave, but instead turned to the white jade wall with the school missions.

The first row of the school missions were full of four-star white rank missions which were obviously easier than the missions like killing the whole Skull gang, and the reward was five thousand gold and two low rank soul stones, which did not seem like much when compared to the bounty missions.

However, a low rank soul stone was worth one thousand silvers, and it was really hard to buy even when one had enough money. Especially for those cultivators who were unaffiliated with any power, it was really hard to find even one. You could only buy soul stones in an auction, making each soul stone extremely precious.

That was exactly why those inner disciples who were lacking soul stones loved to take on school missions, even though the rewards were not much. Every time there was a school mission, it would usually be taken by someone immediately.

The first row of the white jade wall had ten mission sheets only a few moments ago, and there was only one left now, which would also probably be taken away soon.

Ye Chen did not need any more soul stones, and the white rank mission did not reward that many soul stones, so he was not interested in it at all.

When Ye Chen walked out of the Floating Cloud Palace, Wu Zongming happened to come out at the same time.

“Ye Chen, what kind of mission did you take?”

Ye Chen waved the mission sheet in his hand, “A three-star white rank mission.”

Wu Zongming laughed, “Same here, I also took a three-star white rank mission. I am going to kill a two-tailed cheetah in Wind Bell Valley.”

“A two-tailed cheetah? They are quite fast!” Two-tailed cheetahs were rank 3 demonic beasts. While their paltry fighting power was barely equivalent to a normal Condensing Reality Realm warrior, they had an extremely fast speed which made them a bit tricky to catch.

“That is true, I need to head back and start preparing, I will talk to you later.”

“Alright!”

After parting with Wu Zongming, Ye Chen realized it was still early, and he

started to walk down the mountain.

...

Dark Stone Town. A small town that was close to the dark stone mountains, in the middle of nowhere.

The whole town was not big, and there were no tall buildings. It was simply guarded with wooden bars, preventing low rank beasts' attack, since there were many demonic beasts out here in the woods.

On the road close to Dark Stone Valley, there was a teenager; He slowed down his horse.

"According to my research, the Bloody Butcher was here three days ago. Within a hundred miles from here, Dark Stone Valley is the only place he can be staying, unless he went somewhere else in the last two days."

The teenager was indeed Ye Chen. It had been one day and two nights since he had taken on the mission. During the past one day and two nights, he had not stopped once, and came all the way to the Dark Stone Valley three thousand miles away.

"Whatever, let's go in and check it out first."

He slightly tightened his legs, and rushed his dark brown horse towards the gate of Dark Stone Valley.

Inside Dark Stone Valley, Ye Chen got off his horse, and started walking as he held the horse.

The environment inside the valley was not that great, the ground was full of cracks and mud, the shops on both sides of the street looked very old and shitty, it seemed apparent that they had not been taken care of for a long time. Compared to Wind Town, this place looked like a village, which was obviously a completely different level.

Of course, Ye Chen did not care for the environment, he was here to kill the Bloody Butcher, and would leave soon.

In the middle of the valley, there was a two storey high restaurant. It was the most crowded place in Dark Stone Valley.

Second floor.

There was a huge muscular looking man sitting by the window. He wore dark brown colored clothes, his long wild hair laid on his shoulders, the knuckles from his wine-holding hands were massive, with thick calluses which made them look like black iron stones. As for his appearance, he looked horrifying. Countless knife marks on his face almost ruined his whole face, only his eyes were bright like light, full of murderous intent.

After having a couple of steaks and a glass of wine, the muscular man turned his head towards the teenager in purple who was sitting at the table across him, and asked: "Who are you? You've been staring at me for a while."

The teenager in purple put down the chopsticks in his hand, and asked: "You

are the Bloody Butcher?”

“Indeed!” The muscular man licked his lips.

“It looks like I am pretty lucky. Do you want to kill yourself, or should I do it personally? Pick one.”

Hearing him, the Bloody Butcher laughed: “A mere peak Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior dares to be this arrogant? You have underestimated me, the famous Bloody Butcher. Judging from your clothes, you must be a disciple from the Purple Sun Martial Palace, right? Too bad, today your journey ends here.”

He had killed countless people, and was constantly chased by disciples from different martial institutions, but somehow, he still survived. But last time, he ran out of luck, and ran into an inner disciple from the North Snow Martial Academy, who had the same cultivation as him and was hit by an extremely sharp Snow Storm sword art which had almost killed him.

Luckily, his brutal past wasn't for nothing, in the most critical moment, he fought back recklessly with nothing to lose. The North Snow Martial Academy disciple he was fighting lacked experience and had planned to slowly take apart the Bloody Butcher with a prolonged fight instead of fighting him head on. In the last attack, the disciple was killed by his palm attack, while the Bloody Butcher himself had taken dozens of sword attacks to his face, resulting in his current appearance.

The teenager in purple slowly stood up, “I have eaten and drunk enough. Since you choose to be stubborn, then don't blame me for being too brutal. Oh, I forgot to tell you, my name is Teng Yunlong and I am going to end your life.”

“Haha.” The Bloody Butcher stood up as well, but did not reply, staring at a place behind Teng Yunlong, where there seemed to be something more important than what was going on in front of him.

Teng Yunlong looked confused, and turned to look.

“Little brat, you are still too young.” The Bloody Butcher laughed in satisfaction, his right hand with huge knuckles was held up, it was full of bloody red light. He threw it towards Teng Yunlong whose head was still facing the other direction.

Teng Yunlong was furious, “Despicable!”

Teng Yunlong backhanded and threw out a palm attack towards the Bloody Butcher.

Boom!

A powerful wave spread across the room, shredding all the tables and chairs on the second floor. Some of the customers did not manage to avoid the wave and bled internally to death.

After the huge noise, Teng Yunlong was thrown out of the second floor window and landed heavily on that dirty street. All his clothes were torn apart and his face looked very pale.

The next second, the Bloody Butcher caught up to him, and threw out another



palm attack.

He yelled: “Butcher’s Blood Palm!”

The bloody Zhen Qi formed a huge palm in the air, pressing down towards Teng Yunlong, blocking all the Zhen Qi and blood inside Teng Yunlong’s body, who looked a bit out of it at the moment.

At this critical moment, Teng Yunlong bit his tongue, reached out with both of his palms full of purple Zhen Qi towards the Bloody Butcher.

## Chapter 62 – I Am Here to Take Your Head

“Great Yang Palm!”

Both of Teng Yunlong’s palms had accumulated a layer of purple Qi at a high temperature that heated the air around everywhere it went, like boiling water.

When the Bloody Palm and the purple Qi clashed, the air was suddenly violently twisted. A bright purple light exploded as it tried to break down the Bloody Palm. But the Bloody Palm was too strong and firm, in addition, it had the ability to corrode Zhen Qi. Once the purple light came in contact with the Bloody Palm, it started to melt like snow under a bright sun. Within just a few seconds, more than thirty percent of the purple Qi had already dissipated and the remaining seventy percent was also being corroded at a rapid pace.

Gag!

Teng Yunlong flew backwards with a surprised expression, as he opened his mouth and let out a mouthful of blood.

The Bloody Butcher would never let this kind of great opportunity slip by. His feet touched the ground, then stepped down as he chased after Teng Yunlong. He laughed arrogantly, “Although my Bloody Palm is only a top rank Mortal Realm skill, its specialty is to corrode Zhen Qi. Besides, you didn’t even have enough time to recover from your fall. You were probably able to use only about seventy percent of your full power, how could you be my opponent in such circumstances? Just die already.”

“Bloody Butcher, do you really think that I am a fish on the chopping board,

waiting to be slaughtered?” A vicious look flashed past Teng Yunlong’s face. While he was still in the air, he reached into his pocket and withdrew a pellet. It was about the size of a grape, its body was crystal clear while there was a burning red light that continuously twisted inside of it.

He swallowed it without hesitation and roared, his purple clothes started fluttering, while he started to accumulate all his Zhen Qi.

The next moment.

Teng Yunlong’s face turned to a shade of burning red, while his veins looked like earthworms as they were bulging under his skin, all the way up to his hairline.

The Bloody Butcher was shocked, “Heart Boosting Pellet!”

Crack!

The floor under his foot broke into pieces as Teng Yunlong managed to stop his body. A light red light appeared around his body, which brought along with it an oppressive aura that was comparable to a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

“That’s right, it is the indeed the heart boosting pellet. For fifteen minutes after taking it, all my Zhen Qi will be extremely stimulated, which is equivalent to boosting my power up by a level. Also, as long as the effect of the pill remains, I will have endless amounts of Zhen Qi. And all of my wounds from before have also been alleived.” While talking, Teng Yunlong’s right hand hovered around his Dantian as he slowly pulled it up like he was preparing for one last attack to make the best use of the pellet.

While this was happening, a large crowd had already congregated to watch the battle, which included a lot of travelers. Ye Chen was also one of them.

I didn't expect that the disciple from the Purple Sun Martial Palace would get here before me. This makes it a bit tricky now. But the good thing is that the Bloody Butcher is not that easy to handle. Although his cultivation level is only comparable to a normal Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, his experience makes him much stronger than that, allowing him to effectively use 110 percent, or maybe even 120 percent of his power. Even if it was a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior fighting with him, it would not be that easy to take him down.

Holding the reins of the horse in his hand, dozens of thoughts went through Ye Chen's mind.

Ye Chen came to a clear understanding of the situation as he saw the changes going through Teng Yunlong's body and heard the Bloody Butcher mention the heart boosting pellet. Teng Yunlong had a final trump card. The heart boosting pellet was an exclusive pellet from the Purple Sun Martial Palace, and only a few dozens are made each year. Each pellet was worth more than ten thousand silvers and it was the dream of many warriors to obtain one.

It seemed like Teng Yunlong really wanted to kill the Bloody Butcher no matter the cost, as he was willing to use a pill that was worth more than ten thousand silvers, while the reward for killing the Bloody Butcher was only four thousand gold. He would not be able to make any profit this way, and it would only be a worthless kill.

"Little Brat, it doesn't make a difference even if you took the heart boosting pellet, now die!"

He even has the heart boosting pellet, which means that the leaders of the Purple Sun Martial Palace pay a lot of attention to him, he might have even more valuable things on him.

Such thoughts went through the Bloody Butcher's head, his aura turned even more forceful, as he threw out a brutal palm attack towards Teng Yunlong.

Whoosh!

The air was torn apart by the bloody palm attack, while it brought up visible waves in the air.

At this critical moment, Teng Yunlong roared, and the red light around his body suddenly turned three times brighter. The resulting strong Zhen Qi vibrations shook all the doors and windows around, which made a scary creaking sound.

"You want to kill me? What a suicidal move."

Without backing down, Teng Yunlong's right hand drew a half circle in the air as a stream of purple and red Qi flow was formed into a light ball, which was then thrown out towards that bloody palm attack.

Boom!

The buildings on both sides of the street were filled with huge cracks. The resulting shock wave was powerful enough to kill a huge tiger, and spread out in

all directions. It blew over all the audience members who were standing far away, making some of them cry in pain.

The two people fighting had to back away three steps each, before starting to move forward again and to resume their deadly battle.

Boom! Boom! Boom!...

The wind from the palm blows continued to gust, moving back and forth, clashing and making unbearably loud sounds. The two continued their fighting from the east side to the west side, from the streets to the rooftops, there was no place that was unaffected.

After a long time, one of them suddenly backed out, and landed on the rooftop of a house.

It was the Bloody Butcher.

“Trying to prolong the fight? No way!” Teng Yunlong sneered, as he jumped towards his opponent, and threw out a palm.

The Bloody Butcher showed no signs to avoid the attack, but instead he slightly spread his legs, then lifted up his right palm, and took Teng Yunlong’s attack head on.

Boom!

Ah!

There was a cry after the huge sound, Teng Yunlong who was now badly wounded was pressed into the wall of the restaurant. His eyes widened as if he had just seen a ghost. He used all his energy left, and said: "You are so despicable, hiding your true cultivation level."

"Haha, I had already reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm half a month ago, I was just afraid that I might be chased by even more powerful people if this was known, so I hid my cultivation level. This way, I could not only live an easier life, but also have the opportunity to play with you so-called martial institutional disciples. Plus, I get to have all the great treasures that belong to you, so why not?" The Bloody Butcher took a break, then he resumed, "After getting all the treasures from you, I will leave the Windy Nation and head to another nation. As soon as I reach there, I will change my name, and then no one will ever find the Bloody Butcher, hahahahaha..."

Towards the end of his speech, the bloody butcher could not help but laugh in satisfaction. Although he had a strong cultivation, it wasn't enough to save him forever, as he had messed with a great number of women, including even a few daughters of some big families. People who want to kill him are almost countless, they could easily fill up the whole restaurant. But fortunately, he had survived even until now. Since he had already gained more than a few million of silvers, no matter where he went, he would be able to have a great life.

Teng Yunlong's eyes were wide open, he let out his last breath filled with regret. He regretted that he did not leave after the first signs of danger, he regretted taking on this mission, he regretted meeting this evil man.

If there was a second chance in life, he would rather choose to live, instead of risking it for so-called fame.

Even though he saw that Teng Yunlong had died, the Bloody Butcher threw another palm attack at his chest just to be sure. Then, he walked up closer and was just about to search through his belongings when he was interrupted.

“The Bloody Butcher is indeed as brutal as his reputation suggests.” A bright voice appeared out of the crowd.

The Bloody Butcher stopped in his steps, and looked over in the direction from where the sound originated from, while his face looked a little upset. “Who said that?”

“Someone who is going to take your head.”

Ye Chen slowly walked out from the crowd.



## Chapter 63 – Sword Out, Head down

The Bloody Butcher glanced at Ye Chen, who appeared to be about fifteen years old. He was wearing white robes and had a long sword hanging at his waist. The Bloody Butcher said in an icy tone: “It seems like a lot of people are interested in the mission to kill me. I have just killed an inner disciple of the Purple Sun Martial Palace, and there’s an inner disciple from the Sky Cloud Martial School here already. Are the inner disciples from the North Snow Martial Academy and the Emerald Martial Palace coming as well? Too bad that you are even more stupid than him. Even though you know that I am a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, you still say that you want to take my head. Are you just looking for death?”

If Ye Chen was a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior, then the Bloody Butcher would not even consider fighting him, and he would just escape. But, based on the thickness of Ye Chen’s Zhen Qi, he judged that Ye Chen was only at the Early Condensing Reality Realm, and hadn’t even reached the peak of that level. Although he felt that Ye Chen’s Zhen Qi was extremely pure and was as sharp as countless small knives, he did not care.

Ye Chen looked unfazed, he said: “As a Mid Condensing Reality Realm level warrior, to be able to disguise your cultivation level to appear as that of a peak of Early Condensing Reality Realm level warrior, you must have trained some kind of auxiliary art, right? I am very interested in it.”

Even though this kind of auxiliary art did not have any use in improving one’s cultivation level, it was quite useful compared to the other arts in some areas. The Bloody Butcher used it to hide his true cultivation level, and waited for his opponent to get careless before fighting back. It could also be used to disguise his cultivation and enter some places that had restrictions based on cultivation levels.

The Bloody Butcher frowned. A faint sense of danger arose in him from listening to Ye Chen's calm voice. Even though his instincts warned him that something horrible might happen if he continued to talk to him, he chose to ignore it. How is it possible? An Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior, even if he is a genius, wouldn't have what it takes to beat me. He is just like that inner disciple from the North Snow Martial Academy, no matter how strong he was or how valuable the pellet he had used is, I still managed to kill him. With such thoughts running through his mind, the Bloody Butcher sneered: "A dying man doesn't need to know more. Earth Explosion!"

As he was speaking, the Bloody Butcher stomped on the ground heavily. The ground suddenly cracked open and pitch black Zhen Qi could be seen erupting forth, twisting and spreading out all the way towards Ye Chen.

The next second!

Boom!

The tiny rocks on the ground were like weapons, they shot out in every direction, and hit everything within the radius of a twenty meters. All the buildings on either side of the street were filled with holes and cracks, the bodies of the spectators closer to them were also ridden with holes. They lifelessly fell down to the ground, with their faces filled with shock and their eyes wide open.

At the place where the explosion took place, there appeared a huge hole in the ground.

"Hahaha... if I, the Bloody Butcher, wanted you dead, you wouldn't be alive for a second more. In your next life, you should be careful of who you mess with."

The Bloody Butcher hadn't been this satisfied in a long time. It was all due to him being able to kill the two inner disciples continuously without spending too much effort. The only downside of it was that, his opponent was shredded to pieces during the explosion, and all of his gold notes and belongings would have been destroyed due to it. But the Bloody Butcher was only slightly upset about it, and he was soon back to being happy. When he thought of the millions worth of gold and other treasures he had already obtained, he felt that the small amount of gold that was destroyed wouldn't make much of a difference.

All those travellers who had been forced to move farther away due to the fight were all looking at each other confused as they did not know how to respond to what they just saw.

The Bloody Butcher is so damn strong! Even an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior couldn't take a single attack from him, and disappeared completely. Luckily, we were careful earlier and had moved farther away from them, otherwise we would also be dead.

Just as the Bloody Butcher was about to search Teng Yunlong's body, a tiny dot of sword light suddenly appeared in front of him, and all he could see was Ye Chen, in his white robes flash past him.

Shoo!

A bloody arrow passed through the Bloody Butcher's neck, and then continued for another three meters before it stopped.

"You didn't die!" Each word the Bloody Butcher was forced out, shooting out more blood from the hole in his neck.

Standing five steps behind the Bloody Butcher, Ye Chen put his sword back

into its scabbard, as he said lightly: "I was going to talk to you for a little longer, too bad."

A look of realization at the irony of his situation flashed past the Bloody Butcher's eyes. His head slowly tilted and fell off his neck, then his body collapsed as well, and his blood washed the floor.

Turning around, Ye Chen slightly shook his head.

If he fought fairly, it would take him at least three attacks to kill the Bloody Butcher, as his opponent's cultivation was even above Cui Shiming, and he had a lot of experience that even two of Cui Shiming could not compare to. However, the Bloody Butcher had underestimated him in the beginning, otherwise even if Ye Chen managed to stab him, it would have been blocked by his defensive Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen had forgotten that after training the Crane Shadow Steps, his speed had already reached an inhuman level. But now, he felt that the Bloody Butcher would have failed to even accumulate Zhen Qi in time to block him even if it was a fair fight.

The Bloody Butcher had been cautious his whole life, but in the end he lost his life due to his carelessness. Of course, no matter how careful he was, if Ye Chen decided to kill him, his life would not be his to keep. This was the absolute advantage of being strong.

All those travellers who hadn't remained stood there shocked with their mouths wide open.

All they saw was Ye Chen pull out his sword, and then in the next second the Bloody Butcher's head was falling off. They had no idea what happened in between.

Sword out, head gone!

How simple was that? What kind of skill was that?

It was just like those assassins, once they attacked, their targets would be dead without fail.

"This guy is very scary!" one of them said quietly.

The other guy said: "He reminded me of the Young Master North Snow, they are both very young and deadly."

"However, if he wants to reach the Young Master North Snow's level, he will have to surpass someone else first."

"Who is that?"

"Who else? The third ranked disciple of the North Snow Martial Academy, Lin Qi. Although his cultivation level is nothing special, he has always managed to do things normal people could not. Like beating Wu Wanshan in just ten sword attacks, or splitting a waterfall with one move, or killing a Burning Bird with just his oppressive aura. The leader of the North Snow Martial Academy even said that he had the best comprehension ability for saber intent among all the disciples, not even the Young Master North Snow had been given that kind of compliment before."

“Saber intent! Are you joking? Even a saber artist who had reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm might not be able to sense saber intent. It is extremely rare for anyone to be able to sense it. In the whole Windy Nation, only the leader of the North Snow Martial Academy is known to be capable of sensing it.”

“What cultivation are you, and what cultivation is the leader of the North Snow Martial Academy? Could he be wrong? Also, he only said ‘most likely’, not ‘certainly’.”

“That is true. But this guy’s cultivation level is way too low when compared to Lin Qi. If he wants to compete with Lin Qi, then he still has a long way to go.”

The travellers kept discussing and expressing their opinions. Ye Chen did not hear all those gossiping as all his attention was still on the Bloody Butcher.

As a wanted man for a bounty mission, he must have a lot of money. At least thousands of silver, perhaps even ten thousands of silvers, which was also an extra reward that those disciples were after. If he was lucky, he might become a millionaire overnight.

## Chapter 64 – The Evil Blood Martial School

Searching the Bloody Butcher's whole body, Ye Chen could not find anything valuable, only a few hundreds worth of gold notes and some silvers.

‘Am I really this unlucky? No, wait, this Bloody Butcher had mentioned earlier that he had gained a huge fortune from all those martial institution's disciples he killed, and he also said that he would leave the Windy Nation to go to another nation, so it is impossible for him to have only this little amount of money on him. There must be something else.’

Not believing that his luck was that bad, Ye Chen released his soul power, and searched the Bloody Butcher's corpe inch by inch.

Soon after.

Ye Chen's eyes brightened as his hands reached towards the Bloody Butcher's waistband.

There was something hidden in the waistband, something that felt like a ring. When Ye Chen's soul force came in contact with the ring like object, he could sense some spirit power.

‘It is a storage ring, no wonder.’ Ye Chen had to admit that he was very impressed with the Bloody Butcher, who had stored all his treasures in the storage ring and hid it in his waistband. If it was not for his powerful soul force, he would have most likely missed it and would have probably lost the opportunity to get rich.

There were a lot of people standing around watching. Ye Chen accumulated his Zhen Qi at the tip of his finger, and stealthily sliced open the Bloody Butcher's waistband and took out the storage ring. He put it into his own storage ring without even checking its contents.

As for Teng Yunlong's belongings, Ye Chen decided not to take any of them. He felt that it'd be troublesome, if the Purple Sun Martial Palace tried to find who was responsible Teng Yunlong's death and blamed it on him for possessing any of his belongings.

Finished with searching the Bloody Butcher's body, Ye Chen started to scan the Bloody Butcher's head. His face looked extremely horrifying. There were countless knife wounds that covered his whole face. Only his eyes were wide open, and they were staring straight at Ye Chen.

As he shook his head, Ye Chen took out a black fabric out of his storage ring. He reached out to the head using his Zhen Qi and brought it onto the black fabric. He then wrapped it up efficiently and tied a knot on top of it, so that it could barely be made out as a human head.

It was needed to be produced, for Ye Chen to prove that he personally killed the Bloody Butcher, so that he could get the reward from the Floating Cloud Palace.

"Young warrior, you can't just leave us like this. My restaurant has been ruined, and all those customers also lost their lives. What should I do now?" the restaurant owner who was in his late forties ran out and cried to him. He felt that since Ye Chen was a disciple from a marital institution, he probably wouldn't kill an innocent man.



Ye Chen frowned. The restaurant was ruined by the Bloody Butcher and Teng Yunlong, and those customers were killed by the after wave from their battle, of which neither could be said to be his responsibility. But now that the Bloody Butcher was dead, and as he had gotten all his money, Ye Chen felt that it wouldn't be right if he didn't make it up to the restaurant owner.

While such thoughts flashed through his head, Ye Chen took out two gold notes that were worth ten thousand silvers each, and said: "Here is twenty thousand silvers, it will be enough for you to repair your restaurant and make it up to those who had lost their lives. But remember this, only one thousand silver in this belongs to you, if you dare to take any more than that, you will be the next one to die."

The Black Stone Valley was located in the middle of nowhere, all the buildings here were old and rusty, so one restaurant was worth no more than one thousand silvers. However, it was harder to name a price for someone's life, if someone's rich, they could be worth more than thousands of silver, and if the person belonged to a famous family, then they would be a lot more valuable, as they already own a fortune.

According to the law of the Windy Nation, for each normal person who lost their life in an accident, their family would be compensated with five hundred silvers, which would probably be enough for their family to live comfortably for a span of ten years. Now that Ye Chen had taken out twenty thousand silvers, after leaving out the thousand silvers for the restaurant owner, the rest of the nineteen thousand silvers would be enough to compensate thirty-eight families, while the number of people that lost their lives was even less than that.

Maybe it was the misery of being poor, but most of the people who had lost their family member would rather take the five hundred silvers than have their dead family come back alive. Because at least the former could insure their life for the next ten years, they would even have money for their children to get

married, and maybe even repair their houses.

The owner of the restaurant kept nodding his like a little chick eating rice off the ground, “Young warrior, you don’t have to worry. With these many witnesses present, how would I dare to take more than I deserve?”

“I hope so.” Ye Chen agreed.

After he handed over the gold note, Ye Chen was just about to leave when all the surrounding mercenaries came up to him.

“Young warrior, you were so skillful. The Bloody Butcher had killed countless people. There were many people that wanted to kill him, but ended up being killed by him. Now that he is finally dead, there would probably be many people that would like to thank you.”

Ye Chen could not simply turn them away, he said: “You guys are flattering me. There is always justice, if I don’t kill him today, then someone else will do it later.”

“I admire you greatly young warrior. I wonder what your name is.”

Ye Chen knew that one’s reputation was bound to be affected while traveling the world, sometimes even if you were not interested in fame, other people would respect you for your deeds, eventually there would be no way to escape that pattern. So, Ye Chen thought that he might as well just accept it, and replied: “I am Ye Chen, an inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School.”

“Young warrior Ye, I am Two Blades Xu Shan.”

“Deadly Arc Sun Ruhai!”

“Iron leg Liu Wan!”

...

All of a sudden, all the mercenaries yelled out their names. As they already had a little bit of reputation for their names in this area, they felt that if they could be in good terms with an inner disciple from the Sky Cloud Martial School, then their reputation might increase a lot, and they might even gain more respect from people.

Ye Chen forced a smile. He knew that fame was not always a good thing, as it sometimes attracted trouble.

By the time he had gotten rid of all those people, it was already afternoon.

Ye Chen got on his dark brown horse, and then headed back.

On a street that was pretty much empty, Ye Chen took out the Bloody Butcher’s ring from his own storage ring and injected his soul power.

Ding!

A wave of Qi spread out, and Ye Chen could see the space inside the storage ring.

The space inside was about three square meters, equivalent to the size of a small room, which was filled with gold and silver. The golden light radiating all around made it seem extra bright.

There were about ten thousand pieces of gold and thirty something silvers on the floor, and also a pile of gold notes worth about sixty thousand right next to them. There was more than ten thousand gold on the whole, which was equivalent to a few millions of silvers. This was definitely a huge fortune.

Even Ye Chen's father was the clan leader, he only had about ten thousand silvers or so. Although he did not need to spend his own money as the clan leader, but it was enough to understand that this amount of money was a lot even for a clan leader.

Besides money and normal belongings , there were a couple of manuals placed on a small bookshelf in the corner.

Ye Chen's heart skipped a beat as he took out the manual placed on top of the shelf, from the storage ring.

On the cover of the manual, there were four huge bloody characters – Slaughtering Yuan Bloody Palm!

As he opened the manual.

“The Slaughtering Yuan Bloody Palm, top rank Mortal Realm skill, the Rudra Nation's seventh ranked martial institution, the Evil Blood Martial School's exclusive martial art. To train in this art, one has to absorb the rare bloody qi

present in the nature. The more it is absorbed, the stronger the its power will be. Once mastered, the warrior can easily break down the defensive Zhen Qi and kill an opponent at the same level.”

When it turned out to be a martial art that belonged to the seventh ranked Evil Blood Martial School of the Rudra Nation, Ye Chen had some concerns about it

‘ The Evil Blood Martial School is one of the best martial institutions in the Rudra Nation with its general rating even higher than the Emerald Martial Palace. it is an extremely brutal martial school, its disciples are also known to be brutal and dangerous. I wonder how this manual ended up in the hands of the Bloody Butcher?’

## Chapter 65 – Ghost?

On the back of his horse, Ye Chen shook his head. He placed the Slaughtering Yuan Blood Palm manual back in the storage ring. ‘Training this martial skill is too dangerous. The situation a martial institution is the most afraid of is for their martial skills to be stolen and spread out. Even if it is not directly related to you, learning their martial skills in this way will put you in deep trouble. If I learn this and they find out about it, my cultivation might be completely crippled by them. My individual strength is too weak when compared to a massive martial institution like the Evil Blood Martial School.’

As the Slaughtering Yuan Bloody Palm was only a top rank Mortal Realm skill, Ye Chen felt that it was not worth risking his life.

Ye Chen injected his soul power into the storage ring again, and took out the next manual present on the book shelf.

When he held it in his hand, he found that it was a secret manual.

“Earth Explosion, top rank Mortal Realm martial skill: A warrior accumulates all his Zhen Qi at their feet. When the Zhen Qi is sent out in the form of a special wave, it triggers an explosion. This secret skill has three stages. The first stage of the skill allows the user to trigger an explosion using Zhen Qi. The second stage allows them to inject his Zhen Qi into the ground, and it can later be subtly detonated when needed. The third stage allows his Zhen Qi to be projected under the ground to a long distance, and then it can be made to explode remotely. But, the consumption of Zhen Qi is very high in order to do this.”

‘Great’. Ye Chen was surprised. After he went through the manual, Ye Chen understood that the Bloody Butcher had only trained the martial skill to its first

stage. Even though this enhanced his attack power, if the opponent was fast and sensitive enough, he could easily avoid the attack. However, the second stage would be much harder to defend against, since the Zhen Qi would be hidden in the ground. If it was used to attack his enemy when he was at his most vulnerable state, it might even be possible to kill the opponent if his cultivation level was the same. The third stage could be said to be extremely powerful as one could hide their Zhen Qi underground for a long time, and could even send it a long distance away before detonating it remotely when needed.

Ye Chen was glad that the Bloody Butcher hadn't trained it to the third stage. Otherwise, even if he managed to kill the Bloody Butcher, he himself would have been heavily injured. This thought terrified him. In fact, he felt that if it wasn't for his extremely powerful soul power and high speed, he would not have been able to completely escape from the Bloody Butcher's attack.

Of course, a secret martial skill would be a few times harder to train than the martial skills of the same rank. Training the Earth Explosion skill would not be any easier than training a low rank Earth Realm martial skill. A person with low comprehension would probably not be able to reach the third stage even if they trained for ten years.

As he now had a secret martial skill in his hands, Ye Chen didn't want to waste this great opportunity. He decided to master it and make it one of his trump cards.

Finally there was the third and last manual.

"Hidden Qi Spell, low rank Earth Realm auxiliary skill, it has two stages. The first stage is useful at the Condensing Reality Realm level, it could be used to change the vibrations of the Zhen Qi freely, and hide one's cultivation by one level. The second stage is useful for the Clasp of Yuan Realm level, allowing one to hide

another level of cultivation. But, once the cultivation level is above the Clasp of Yuan Realm, the Hidden Qi Spell will no longer be effective.”

After he went through the manual, Ye Chen had a deeper understanding of it. ‘I shouldn’t underestimate the Hidden Qi Spell, just because it only has two stages. It is really common to meet opponents of the same cultivation level. If we are both at the first stage, then as long as my cultivation is slightly higher than my opponent’s, I will be fine as the opponent would not be able to see through my true cultivation level. However, on the contrary, if the opponent’s cultivation level is even slightly higher than mine, then my true cultivation level would be easily seen through.’

‘What a great martial art! I can use this until I reach the Clasp of Yuan Realm!’ Ye Chen was really happy to find that skill. He felt that it’d increase his chances of survival, if he managed to master it.

As for those that trained the Qi Discernment skill, he decided to ignore them for now. He felt that the chances of him meeting someone that knows that particular skill were too small. Unless one of the martial institutions decided to pass the Qi Discernment skill as a common martial art, it probably won’t happen. But, to do that, they’d have to have the secret manual first.

Then again, even if Ye Chen was to meet someone like that in the future, he was confident that he’d have mastered the Hidden Qi Spell to the peak of second stage by then. Even if the opponent had trained the Qi Discernment skill to its peak, he would only have a fifty percent chance to see through Ye Chen’s cultivation.

The dark brown horse ran at an extreme pace. In the blink of an eye, it had already covered a distance of ten meters. The scenery on both sides of the road rapidly changed continuously, leaving only a blur.



...

It was a starless night. There was only a half-moon present. The thick clouds that covered half of the sky moved slowly.

“It looks like it’s about to rain, I should find a place to rest for the night.” Ye Chen who was on top of the horse thought to himself. On the dark street, the clatters of a horse’s hoofs were heard from far away as they closed in.

He planned to travel all night, so that he could arrive at the Sky Cloud Martial School by the evening of the next day. But, it seemed impossible now.

He rode for a while longer, until he saw a few dots of light visible in the distance.

It was a village!

The village was not big. In the dim moonlight, Ye Chen accumulated Zhen Qi in his eyes, this allowed him to easily see the houses that had their lights on, and also identify which of the houses was large. Shortly after, he arrived at the gates of the village.

Ye Chen got off the horse and started walking in, while holding its reins.

The clatters of the horse’s hoofs had already woken up a couple of people. A lot of houses had their lights lit. The chattering among them got louder and louder, as they tried to find out who it was, that had arrived.

The doors of the houses right next to Ye Chen were opened, and a group of people burst out of them.

“Who are you! What are you doing in the Yellow Stone Village!”

“Don’t you dare do anything funny, we are not afraid of you.”

Ye Chen forced a smile. Suddenly, he punched the ground, leaving a massive hole in it, “I am only here for the night, for a place to sleep. I will leave tomorrow. With my strength, I could do anything to you if I wanted to.”

“Are you really here only for accommodation?” The head of the group who was topless, while holding a pickaxe in his hand, looked at the hole in the ground and asked carefully.

Ye Chen nodded, “Do I look like a robber?”

“Not really!” The man studied Ye Chen. He saw that Ye Chen was wearing a white robe, which was made from high quality materials, of which even a small piece would allow him to live for a month. He also noticed the great sword hanging at Ye Chen’s waist, and how young he was. With his clean cut appearance and innocent looks, the head didn’t believe that Ye Chen would be a robber.

As he let out a breath of air, the man yelled to the crowd: “Okay, everyone, you can all go home now. This young man is not a robber!”

Hearing him, most of the people turned and started to head back, only a small amount of people stayed to witness the drama.

The man didn't care for it, he said to Ye Chen: "I have a spare room at my house that you could stay for the night. As for the fee..."

Ye Chen took out a piece of silver and threw it in the man's hand, "Is it enough?"

"Enough, enough. Chunhua! Hurry! Clean up the guest room for the young warrior!" The man's face was full of smiles, as he yelled at his wife who was inside the house.

Ye Chen took a look around, and realized that none of the houses had a front yard, he said, "Where should I leave my horse?"

"Horse! Right, there is a big broken tree at the back of my house, you could leave it there!" The man glanced at the dark brown horse, and then pointed at the back.

"Okay."

Ye Chen held his horse and went there. Just like the man said, there was indeed a huge tree, that needed at least two people to wrap around it. But it was snapped in half, so Ye Chen was unable to see it when he was in front of the house.

Tying the reins, Ye Chen took out a huge pile of grasses from his storage ring, as he said to the dark brown horse: "Rest well tonight, we will have to travel

more tomorrow.”

The horse made a noise, which sounded like it agreed.

The dark brown horse let out two pillars of air out of his nose, and then started eating the grass.

Ye Chen was about to leave when he unconsciously noticed that something was different in the sky far away. Then he couldn't help but gasp.

“Is it a ghost, or...?”

## Chapter 66 – Five Ghosts and A Coffin

Under the hazy sky, a group of dark shadows flew past the clouds.

When they came a little closer, Ye Chen was finally able to see their real forms.

There were five ghosts holding a coffin, flying in the endless dark night. A normal person would have fainted upon witnessing this, imagining that they were there to take his soul and drag him to the deepest parts of hell. However, Ye Chen was a martial artist, who would even take on life and death challenges for his training. How could he be afraid of such trivial things?

He felt that the five human figures were not ghosts, but rather warriors who had trained some kind of special martial art, that allowed them to travel without an actual form.

“Clasping Yuan Realm warriors! They must be Clasping Yuan Realm warriors!” Also, from their odd Qi vibrations, he realized that their cultivation level should probably be higher than the Sky Cloud Martial School headmaster’s, maybe just slightly lower than Luo Xinglie’s cultivation level.” Ye Chen’s soul power was extremely powerful, he could just take a glance at someone and get an idea of their cultivation level. If he was unable to find it that way, he made a rough estimation by comparing their Qi vibrations with that of the people he met prior to them. That was why he chose to try and sense those white hazy figures’ cultivation levels by comparing them to people he met, as he was unable to directly see through their cultivation.

Ye Chen felt a cold sweat emerge down his back. He could not help but wondered ‘What the hell is in that coffin? A human? Or just a corpse? No way, five Late Clasping Yuan Realm warriors carrying a mere corpse? Are you joking?

There's only one explanation left, there should probably be a human in that coffin, a warrior whose cultivation is not any lower than the Clasp of Yuan Realm.

An Astral Reaching Realm warrior!

Ye Chen licked his dried lips, he didn't dare to move an inch. The Astral Reaching Realm warriors in the Windy Nation had been inactive for a long time. The strongest warriors known would certainly be the leaders of the five martial institutions. The leaders of the Emerald Martial Palace, the North Snow Martial Academy, the Purple Sun Martial Palace, the Rudra Martial School and the Sky Cloud Martial School, were all at the peak of Clasp of Yuan Realm and were known to be extremely strong. They rarely faced opponents that could rival their strength. But, that was only under the condition that those Astral Reaching Realm warriors remained inactive, otherwise even they would be powerless.

Suddenly, dark clouds covered the entire sky. Those five figures continued flying in front of the dark clouds while emitting a terrifying aura. As their white robes flew behind them due to the wind, they looked just like ghosts, or rather like reapers.

After they flickered across the sky, the five ghosts and the coffin completely disappeared in the distance, leaving only the dark clouds behind them, seemingly unreal.

Ye Chen wiped the sweat off his forehead, while still a little scared.

"Young warrior, what are you still doing outside? Your room is ready." the man said to Ye Chen through the window, as he was already inside the house.

“Alright.”

After taking care of the dark brown horse, Ye Chen turned to leave.

The guest room was not big, there was a bed, a table and a chair in the room; there was also an oil lamp hung to the wall. The shining orange colored light it emitted, barely brightened the room.

“You take a good rest. Call for me if you need anything, I will definitely fulfill your wishes.” The man stood by the door, while unable to hide his joy. He was still thinking of the five silvers! It was not expensive to live in the Yellow Stone Village. Five silvers is enough for his family to live very well for three months, instead of just barely surviving.

Ye Chen thought about it and said: “It might rain later tonight. You go find some people and build a shed for my horse. Here are ten silvers, give it to those who are willing to work.”

Finished speaking, Ye Chen handed over another two pieces of silvers.

“Okay, okay, I will go ask them. Only fools would not be willing to do it.” The man’s eyes were shining like diamonds, he took the silvers with great respect.

Ye Chen waited until the man left, then he waved his hand in the air, and the door closed by itself.

Sitting on the bed with his legs crossed, Ye Chen took out two low rank soul stones from his storage ring, and then started his daily Zhen Qi training.

In the last few days, although Ye Chen trained regularly and worked hard, he wasn't completely dedicated to it. When someone fully invested themselves in their training, they would do nothing else but train. They would get past or get rid of anything that hinders their training.

Ye Chen used to not take training seriously, since his training speed was already quite fast and he could absorb Yuan qi from two soul stones at once due to his powerful body. But, after what he had witnessed tonight, he became quite anxious. His instinct told him that something major would happen in the foreseeable future, which might affect the whole Windy Nation, or perhaps even the surrounding nations.

Even if it was just him thinking too much, it was always good to be prepared rather than ignore such warnings, because the latter would always end up with him being dead.

He urged his Zhen Qi to complete a whole circle in his body, one circle after another.

Late night!

Crack!

The two low rank soul stones in his hands had a few cracks on them.

As he slowly opened his eyes, Ye Chen gradually let out a long breath, his Qi shot out like an arrow and hit the opposite wall. Due to the impact, tiny rocks kept falling down from the wall.



“A normal Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior would use up a low rank soul stone in five days, and I use up two in four days, which is about two and a half times faster than the others. My Pure Jun Zhen Qi’s quality has improved, which means it requires more yuan qi to improve further.”

Discarding the cracked low rank soul stones, Ye Chen felt more thankful to the previous owner of the storage ring. If it wasn’t for those ten thousand low rank soul stones, he would never be able to absorb Yuan qi without restraint. Two low rank soul stones in four days which meant twenty soul stones in forty days, two hundred soul stones in four hundred days. And his requirements would keep on increasing along with his cultivation level. Normal people would never be able to afford that many soul stones.

Of course, the Ye family could. But, they would need explanations for a lot of things. First of all, he would have to explain why he used up all the soul stones two times faster than the others. This would need for him to reveal his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, which was the last thing Ye Chen wanted to do now.

The night went on, the broken moon was covered by the dark clouds.

Ye Chen did not even take his clothes off before he went to bed. But, he did not completely fall asleep and remained a little conscious.

Later that night, just like Ye Chen had expected, it rained heavily. Under the sound of the heavy rain pouring down the sky, no other sounds were audible. The rainwater washed away the impurities of the land

The rain lasted until the next morning.

Ye Chen could not refuse the man and his wife's request to wait until the rain thins down. So, he gave up on his plans to leave first thing in the morning, and sat down and had breakfast with them. They had a daughter who was only three years old, wearing simple little clothes, with big eyes that were full of spirit. She was eating from her little bowl without caring about anyone else. When she talked, her voice sounded extremely innocent and lovable, which was also why Ye Chen stayed for breakfast.

After breakfast, Ye Chen gave the little girl a jade, since she was so lovable. He felt that it was not worth much, as he had bought hundreds of them for training his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell. There were still a few of them left, that were worth thirty silvers each. He didn't care about the money, as it was perfectly suitable as a gift.

The little girl thanked him, Ye Chen smiled, and left the house.

At the gates of the village, Ye Chen jumped on his horse and disappeared into the distance.

## Chapter 67 – The Tragedy of a Fallen Institute

The sun was already below the horizon, the beautiful sunset illuminated the entire Windy Mountains in a shade of pink.

Walking out of the horse stables at the bottom of the mountain, Ye Chen organized his clothes and started walking up the mountain, along with some of the other inner disciples who had also just returned after finishing their missions.

On the way up, everyone was chatting.

“Brother Miu, I heard that you had taken on a four-star white rank mission? That is so impressive.”

“Brother Fang, you are flattering me too much. I only took the most easiest one, I was too scared to take on a harder one, unlike that Zhang Haoran.”

“Zhang Haoran is just a lunatic. He chose a three-star white rank mission as his first mission, the second one was a four-star white rank mission, the third time he actually chose a five-star white rank mission! I wonder if he could even make it out alive.”

“It would be quite hard. Although he is a genius who can fight evenly against warriors with cultivation level higher than his own, he would not be able to do so if he met another genius with a higher cultivation. Even a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior would have to be very cautious when it comes to a five-star white rank mission. If he is not careful, he might even lose his life. Last year, brother Yuan had lost his life on a five-star white rank mission.”

“Right, Zhang Haoran is probably in a dangerous position. But, if he could make it out, he would become unstoppable. The moments where you put your life on the line and fight for it, are very hard to come by. But, once you make it through such situations, your mental strength would grow rapidly.”

On the other side, Ye Chen was deep in his own thoughts.

He could not believe that after becoming an inner disciple, Zhang Haoran was willing to risk his own life, to get even stronger. It was almost as if he was treating his own life as a joke. Such people were actually the most terrifying, as they were not afraid of losing their lives, and would continue to chase after strength, regardless of anything else.

In a way, Zhang Haoran was very much similar to Ye Chen. He was risking his life to become stronger. He chose a three-star white rank mission as his first mission, in order to gain enough experience and get used to the process of completing a mission. Then he took a four-star white rank mission, which was harder than his first mission, to find his own limits. Once he reached his limit, he decided to take on a five-star white rank mission, so that he could break through his limits and get stronger.

Subconsciously, Ye Chen already saw Zhang Haoran as someone that could be named along with the top four young masters. This was not only because of his cultivation level, but also due to his potential and talent, his passion and determination to get stronger. Ye Chen actually appreciated and admired Zhang Haoran's determination. As for Ye Chen himself, he felt that he would also get stronger with time.

As soon as he arrived at the Floating Cloud Palace, Ye Chen went in and walked towards a side room.

“Sir, I am here to hand in my mission.” There were a lot of attendants present in the Floating Cloud Palace. These attendants did not have high cultivation levels, and they mainly helped the missions department in the Sky Cloud Martial School.

Sitting by the table, a middle aged attendant nodded, “Show me the mission sheet and the proof.”

“Here.”

Ye Chen placed the mission sheet and the head of the Bloody Butcher on the table.

The middle aged attendant looked at the mission sheet, and then opened the black cloth that had been wrapped around the head. He said after examining it: “Well done, it is indeed the Bloody Butcher, congratulation for finishing the job, your name?”

“Ye Chen.”

“Wait, let me have a look.” As soon as someone became an inner disciple, all their personal information would be sent to the Floating Cloud Palace to be stored for future reference.

Soon after, the middle aged attendant had found Ye Chen’s information.

He then took out a black booklet from the drawer, and registered Ye Chen’s

information and mission score.

Name: Ye Chen

Age: 15

Background: member of the Ye family, inner disciple

Inner disciple test result: Excellent

Mission score: Three-star white rank mission x1

“Take a look, see if there are any mistakes.” The middle aged attendant placed the black booklet in front of Ye Chen.

Ye Chen only took a glance before he nodded, “Yes, that is correct.”

“Alright, let’s talk about the reward. You might not know about this, since you had just become an inner disciple. According to the rules of the Sky Cloud Martial School, the school would take thirty percent of the reward from any white rank missions; twenty-five percent from grey rank missions, and twenty percent from the black rank missions. The reward for killing the Bloody Butcher is four thousand gold, after taking away thirty percent of it, you will get two thousand eight hundred gold.”

As he put the black booklet back in the drawer, the middle aged attendant explained.

‘Thirty percent of the reward, is indeed a lot. But it does make sense though, since the martial institution plays a major part in training you to be who you are now. It is now our turn to pay back to the school. Also, every mission seems to have a bonus income, which could sometimes be even higher than the reward itself. ‘

After receiving the two thousand eight hundred gold notes from the middle aged attendant, Ye Chen left the side room.

The next day, Ye Chen did not take on another mission.

Not the day after either.

On the third day after his return, the Floating Cloud Palace became crowded once again.

Zhang Haoran, who was presumed to be dead by everyone, came back completely covered in blood. His murderous aura could be sensed from faraway itself. This attracted a great deal of attention from the other inner disciples, and they came to check it out.

Wu Zongming who had just returned earlier saw this and gave a peculiar look. ‘At this rate, I will never be able to catch up to him. His determination is indeed shocking.

Cleaning the blood off his face, Zhang Haoran looked around the room, until he saw Ye Chen standing in the crowd. He laughed and said: “Ye Chen, I will be waiting for you at the ranking competition.”

“Who is this Ye Chen?”

“Why would Zhang Haoran wait for this Ye Chen? Is he even worthy of Zhang Haoran’s attention?”

Hearing Zhang Haoran’s words, a lot of the inner disciples were a little confused, as most of them had missed the battle between Zhang Haoran and Ye Chen. Everyone had been busy with their missions and training. So, they haven’t heard the rumors either. But, now that this happened, they would probably go ask around and learn of the whole story.

Ye Chen replied seriously: “Certainly.”

Time traveled fast, another half month went by just like that.

During the past two weeks, Ye Chen had only taken one four-star white rank mission, he had been training for the rest of the time. As for the reason why he didn’t take on a five-star white rank mission, it was because there were no suitable missions available. Some were too easy and thus ranked as a four-star white rank mission, or they were too difficult and required a longer time to complete. And most importantly, he felt that his Pure Jun Zhen Qi art was about to reach the seventh stage. This was very important to him because if he could soon reach the seventh stage, there would be an enormous increase in his training speed.

On the same day, there was a shocking news that travelled back to the Sky Cloud Martial School.

After enquiring a little, Ye Chen finally learned the whole story.



The Evil Earth Martial School present in the north-west of the Windy Nation had been exterminated. Eighty Clasp of Yuan Realm warriors were all killed, and thousands of disciples had either been killed or terribly wounded. Only a small number of people managed to escape this tragedy.

When he heard of this news, Ye Chen thought about the night when he witnessed the five ghosts carrying a coffin.

The Evil Earth Martial School was also a rank 9 martial institution like the Sky Cloud Martial School. However, the latter was the most powerful one among all the rank 9 schools, it could even compete with some of the rank 8 martial institutions. It was still listed as a rank 9 school, only because it needed a long time before its rank could be improved.

Otherwise, the Windy Nation would not list the Sky Cloud Martial School as one of the top five institutions present, when there were dozens of other martial institutions in the Windy Nation.

But still, the news of a rank 9 martial institution like the Evil Earth Martial School being exterminated, still shocked everyone.

## Chapter 68 – Five Powerful Warriors

In the Evil Earth Martial School, there were twenty-four inner elders, each of them with cultivation above the Clasp of Yuan Realm. In fact, the leader of the school, Jiang Tiansha, was known to be at the peak of Late Clasp of Yuan Realm, and used the rare weapon Moonshine Great Wheel. With his cultivation and that rare weapon, he was someone that even the leaders of top five martial institutions did not dare to underestimate.

Even with this kind of lineup, they had been exterminated in just one night. Ye Chen was now even more sure, that the person in the coffin being carried by those five warriors must have been an Astral Reaching Realm warrior. He felt that it wasn't someone who had just entered the Astral Reaching Realm either, as even someone at that level would not have the ability to exterminate a rank 9 martial institution, even with the help of five powerful Clasp of Reality Realm warriors.

Ye Chen shook his head, he knew that it wasn't really his business to be worried about such things. He was still not qualified to do so. All he could do now was to train harder to try and increase his own cultivation level, so that he could protect himself in the future.

The news of the fall of the Evil Earth Martial School had not only reached the Sky Cloud Martial School, but various other parties had also learned of it. Due to this, the entire Windy Nation was in shock.

Frozen Horror Mountains, where the Earth Horror Martial School was present.

The whole mountains were filled with corpses that belonged to the outer disciples, inner disciples, core disciples, attendants, outer elders, inner elders,

and the family members of the elders and the leader. They were all lying on the floor with their eyes wide open. It was extremely horrifying.

In the middle of the welcoming plaza, there was a human figure standing still, who looked extremely powerful.

However, if you looked more closely, you would realize that he was already dead.

On his muscular chest, there was a bowl-sized bloody hole from which his heart was taken out. His blood had been drained and dried out. It was thick and had a dark brown color.

If anyone saw this, they would definitely recognize that the standing corpse was indeed the leader of the Evil Earth Martial School, Jiang Tiansha.

A powerful warrior at the peak of Late Claspng Yuan Realm had his heart taken out. If anyone heard of this, they would definitely be scared.

...

No one knew exactly how long it had been there, but a red dot appeared from the east side of the sky.

It got brighter and brighter, illuminating its entire surroundings in a shade of red. If one looked a bit more carefully, they would be able to make out a human figure wrapped in that bright red light, moving towards this direction with an inhuman speed.

Shoo!

The red light landed on the welcoming plaza, it circled around the human figure for a couple of times and then completely disappeared.

“Exterminated in one night? Who did it?” The man put his hands behind him, he was in his forties. He stood there like a ferocious tiger looking down. He was indeed the leader of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Luo Xinglie.

Among the top five martial institutions, the Sky Cloud Martial School and the North Snow Martial Academy were the closest to the Evil Earth Martial School. After hearing the news, Luo Xinglie left the school at once, and travelled ten thousand miles, in the hopes of finding some clues, so that he could be a bit more prepared for the uncertain future.

He reached out his hand and made a grabbing gesture in the air towards Jiang Tiansha’s chest. He got a hold of some evil Qi still present inside the corpse, and forced it out.

Swoosh...

The evil Qi was extremely resilient, it kept corroding Luo Xinglie’s Zhen Qi. He sneered, and accumulated the red light in his palms and burned the evil Qi into nothing.

Before he was about to investigate more, Luo Xinglie suddenly raised his head, and looked towards the north-east.

Above the horizon, the white clouds were sliced open.

A human figure had been approaching at an inhuman speed, everything that was obstructing his way had been cut open by his extremely sharp Qi, including the shapeless air.

Tap!

The man landed just ten meters to the right of Luo Xinglie.

The man was clothed in white, his face was pale and clean-shaven; his hands were tucked behind his back. His posture was casual and relaxed, but one could still tell that he was extremely powerful.

“Xue Wuren, your saber intent is a lot better than three years ago.” Luo Xinglie studied the man in front of him carefully, and then said slowly.

The middle-aged man in white smiled lightly and said: “You never know, it might lose its sharpness one day. How about yourself? I see that you have reached the eleventh stage of your Major Luo God Art.”

Luo Xinglie didn't reply. The man in front of him was the leader of the North Snow Martial Academy, Xue Wuren, who had started training martial arts since he was nine, and reached the Condensing Reality Realm when he was sixteen, and the Clasp of Yuan Realm at the age of twenty-eight. From this, one would think that he was no genius. It might even seem that he was extremely ordinary. But what made him different was the fact that he was able to sense the extremely rare saber intent, when he reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm. Even now, nobody knew how powerful he really was.

Three years ago, Luo Xinglie had zero confidence in beating Xue Wuren. Now, after three years, he was even more certain of that fact. He had to admit that if they were ever to fight, his chances of winning would not be more than forty-five percent. Of course, he did have some secret martial arts that he hadn't shown yet, but he was also sure that Xue Xinglie had some.

Xue Wuren turned his attention to the corpse, and asked: "Have you gotten anything yet?"

Luo Xinglie let out a sigh, "Only a little. There was some evil Qi present in Jiang Tiansha's body. Even after half a month, it was still there in his body."

"Oh, I see."

Xue Wuren furrowed his eyebrows. The training methods of Evil Earth Martial School were different from the other martial institutions. They infuse evil Qi into their Zhen Qi to make it extremely powerful. Normally, the evil Qi could not be infused, since it was not something used by human beings, but rather demonic beasts. But, somehow the Evil Earth Martial School managed to master it and became the best school when it came to using evil Qi in Windy Nation.

"Who could kill the leader of the Evil Earth martial institution which was well known for his usage of evil Qi, with evil Qi? Why hasn't their evil Qi dissipated, even after half a month's time?"

"Also, look at his expression. He was shocked, but at the same time impressed. He encountered something that impressed him before his death. So, I think that some old monster might have come out of his nest."

As a Late peak Claspng Yuan Realm warrior, Luo Xinglie was excellent at observation, he was able to guess the truth from the smallest of clues, which was in such a huge contrast with his appearance.

Hearing him, Xue Wuren's face changed a little, but soon reverted back to normal. "An old monster coming out of his nest? Are you sure?"

"Eighty percent sure! Otherwise, who could have exterminated the whole Evil Earth Martial School in one night, that too with evil Qi better than Jiang Tiansha's?"

Xue Wuren nodded unnoticeably, then sighed: "If so, it is going to be a huge news for the Windy Nation."

Luo Xinglie sneered, looked up and said, "Tu Chongshan's here!"

"Long Biyun is here too. And also, huh, Zhuang Qixian, that bastard is not coming and instead, he sent some random elder here. He obviously did not take us seriously." Xue Wuren's sensitivity was not any lower than Luo Xinglie's. He looked up, and squinted his eyes.

In the south-east direction, a golden yellow-colored halo flew through the clouds, melting the surrounding air. It looked just like a huge fireball, that was shooting towards them. There were exploding sounds accompanying it, that could be heard continuously. They were extremely terrifying.

In the south, it started to rain. A gorgeous lady holding an umbrella walked towards them through the air. Although she was extremely fast, it somehow

looked like she was just taking a walk in the rain.

In the west, there was an elder stepping on lightning heading towards them. He looked quite proud, even though he was slower than the other two.

Shoo!

The gorgeous lady holding the umbrella arrived first, her hair was shining like a waterfall, her body was slim like a teenage girl's. The blue dress she was wearing, made it look like there were waves of water twisting around her body, so as to keep any dust away from her.

“You two are here quite early.” The beautiful lady put away her umbrella, and said with a smile.

Luo Xinglie said: “Your Godly Water Spell from Rudra Martial School was just as powerful as I heard it was. I, Luo Xinglie, have learned something today.”

The gorgeous lady was indeed the leader of one of the top three martial schools, the Rudra Martial School's Long Biyun. But, she was the youngest among them, still in her thirties. Her background was quite mysterious, no one knew where she was born or where she had learnt her martial arts.



## Chapter 69 – Reborn

Long Biyun half joked: “No matter how powerful the Godly Water Spell is, it could never compete with Tu Chongshan’s Sunshine Art, right? Of course, the Major Luo God Art isn’t exactly weak either.”

Both the Sunshine Art and the Major Luo God Art were fire element martial arts. The former was like a burning sun that could burn anything on this earth, with the power of its explosions, while the latter could be both Yin and Yang, tough and tender. With so many variations in one martial art, it allowed the practitioner to explore it by himself.

Xue Wuren shook his head and said: “Among all of us, the most mysterious one has to be you. Who dares to say that they could beat you for sure?”

“Regardless of anyone else, I cannot ever compete with Brother Xue’s sabre intent.”

It’s not clear, if it was just Long Biyun’s personality or if she was just trying to be humble, but she did not boast about herself, and kept praising the rest of them. However, Luo Xinglie and Xue Wuren would never dare to underestimate her just because of that, as it would not end well for them if they did. Previously, there was a Late peak Clasp Yuan Realm warrior from the Rudra Nation, who saw the extremely gorgeous and talented Long Biyun and became very interested in her. He wanted to marry her, but she kindly refused him. But he didn’t back out and instead suggested to have a battle to change her decision. If she lost, she had to be his woman, if she won, then he would immediately leave. It took only ten moves. In just ten moves, that powerful warrior from the Rudra Nation had been completely defeated, both physically and mentally. And to do this, Long Biyun did not even need to use her full power.

Since then, no one dared to underestimate Long Biyun. She was a really mysterious woman.

“Hahahaha, I, Tu Chongshan, am here!” A golden halo sliced through the sky, it did not seem to slow down even as it got closer to them. It was heading directly towards Luo Xinglie. All of a sudden, a burning heat wave spread across the whole plaza, it felt like a meteorite was heading towards them.

“Don’t you dare!”

Luo Xinglie squeezed his eyebrows, one could see that he was enraged. He extended both of his arms, and it looked as if he intended to catch that huge fire ball.

Boom!

It felt like the whole mountain was shaking. The after-effects of their clash blew away everything in their surroundings. The ground sunk about five meters. It had turned everything in a hundred metre radius to ruins. Everything around them had been shredded to pieces, including the corpse of Jiang Tiansha.

Long Biyun seemed to have seen it coming, she had built a blue colored defensive wall around her. This stopped the wave right in front of her, not letting it come any closer to her.

Xue Wuren turned furious, he stepped forward, accumulated the powerful sabre Qi and slashed in between them.

Chin!

The sabre Qi had managed to separate the two of them by force, but the power of the strike didn't seem like it diminished by much. It continued on its path and sliced the welcoming plaza in half, in a clean smooth cut. The top of the welcoming plaza slowly slid down, making a huge noise.

Shoo! Shoo!

Luo Xinglie and Tu Chongshan both jumped backwards.

Once his foot touched the ground, Luo Xinglie said in a low voice: "Tu Chongshan, what the heck is wrong with you? If you really want a fight, just pick the date."

"Haha, I haven't seen you for years, your Major Luo God Art seems to have improved! But it's too bad, just now I had only used the power of nine suns, if I had pushed it to the tenth sun, you would have definitely lost." Tu Chongshan patted down his sleeves, he did not seem to be sorry for his actions at all.

Luo Xinglie tried his best to control his temper and sneered: "So what if you have the power of ten suns? Do you think my Major Luo Zhen Qi is just a decoration?"

The two had always been fighting for as long as they could remember, neither of them were willing to back down. They could not even remember the reason they started fighting. But, they did not care about that anymore. It seemed as if the Major Luo God Art and the Sun Shine Art were born to be enemies, this in turn making their users arch-enemies for life.

Regardless of their hatred towards each other, both of them could not help but be impressed by Xue Wuren's strength. Although the reason that the sabre Qi being able to stop that attack earlier, was only due to it striking at the point of contact, the timing of the attack and the power in it were still extremely impressive. Besides that, both of them knew that Xue Wuren was the strongest when using the sabre intent, and earlier he was not at all serious.

"What are you doing? Now is not the time for fighting." Long Biyun walked over and tried to be the middleman.

Tu Chongshan laughed: "Since it's you, I will stop it. But, I wonder if Brother Luo would allow it."

"Huh, wait until we finish dealing with this matter, then I will show you my new martial art. Of course it all depends on whether you are brave enough to take it or not."

"Why not!" Tu Chongshan squinted his eyes.

Xue Wuren who had just thrown out an attack did not say anything. He actually wanted to see the epic battle between the two, since people at their levels rarely fought.

Soon, the elder who was stepping on light had arrived.

"Everyone, I, Gao Tianhe, am late." Even while facing the four leaders of the top four martial institutions, the elder was not shaken at all. In fact he was even a bit arrogant.

Xue Wuren frowned and said: “Where is Zhuang Qingxian?”

The elder cleared his throat, “The leader is now in closed door training, and was unable to attend. As for today’s business, you don’t have to be bothered about it anymore. We, the Emerald Martial Palace have already gotten the first-hand information of the situation.”

Hearing him, the four were all shocked, they all stared at Gao Tianhe.

Even though Gao Tianhe was at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm, he was still unable to handle being stared at by four powerful warriors. But, compared to what he was about to say, he felt that it was nothing. He took a deep breath, used all his strength, and said: “Half a month ago, some disciples from our martial institution while on a mission, saw five ghosts carrying a coffin. Then, half month later, once the news of the Evil Earth Martial School’s extermination broke out, we were able to connect the two. After careful investigation and research, we came to a conclusion. The Nine Evil Cult that was destroyed twenty years ago has been revived. This slaughter was probably committed by the 108th ghost warrior – Ghost Artist, who was the only person that enjoyed living in a stone coffin.”

Hearing his words, the four of them were shocked.

Long Biyun asked: “Is this really true?”

Gao Tianhe nodded slowly, “Would I joke around about this kind of important matter? But, it is still not that serious yet. We had all witnessed the fall of the Nine Evil Cult, the part of them that survived shouldn’t be too strong. If I am guessing right, they are currently trying to save their strength, so they probably

won't dare to attack the other big martial institutions in the Windy Nation. But, I cannot be sure about the other small martial institutions. For the next three to five years, we might have nothing to worry about. But after that, we will all probably have to face them."

Three to five years, who could be absolutely sure? Once they were finished with all the small institutions and gained enough strength and money, they might start going against the larger institutes.

Who could forget the horrors the Nine Evil Cult had caused? They were almost as strong as all the martial institutions in the southern region combined. If it was not for those powerful parties from other nations that came to help, all of the southern region might've ended up in the control of the Nine Evil Cult. When compared to the Nine Evil Cult, the Windy Nation could only be considered a little ant, while the top five martial institutions could not even be considered as ants.

As for the Ghost Artist, who was one of the one hundred and eight ghost warriors, he was not even considered strong in the Nine Evil Cult. But, in the Windy Nation, he could be considered to be unstoppable. He was relatively quiet, probably because he was badly wounded and still needed some time to recover. Otherwise, Evil Earth Martial School would not be the only school that had been exterminated. Even one of the top five martial institutions might have been exterminated by him.

Whoosh!

A cold wind blew out of nowhere, while everyone present looked extremely worried.

## Chapter 70 – Two-Star Gray Rank Mission

At night!

Ye Chen, who was sitting on his bed, opened his eyes all of a sudden. He raised his hand in the air and made a Qi sword by circulating his Qi. It was then shot out like lightning towards the opposite wall.

Shoo!

The wall was just like a piece of tofu. It was easily penetrated, leaving behind a tiny little hole.

“I finally reached the seventh stage of my Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art!”

Although the peak of sixth stage was just a small step away from the seventh stage, its power was on a completely different level. If the Qi light was used instead of normal weaponry, then the Qi sword would be a great sword. It could not only slice iron like mud, but could also easily kill a Mortal Realm warrior from even a hundred steps away, without much effort.

Stepping down from his bed, Ye Chen took a small leap, and then directly appeared in the yard in front of his room.

If one followed his gaze, they would find another sword hole on the half-meter-thick wall around the yard. This hole was exactly like the one earlier. Ye Chen didn't know where the Qi sword went, he only hoped that he hadn't hurt someone by accident.

...

The Second day morning.

In the Floating Cloud Palace.

“There are no more five-star white rank missions available?” In front of the white jade wall on the right side, Ye Chen frowned. He was planning to take on a five-star white rank mission to practice, and maybe make some extra money. But it seemed like the five-star white rank missions were extremely popular, and also quite rare.

Giving it some more thought, Ye Chen turned and walked deeper into the palace. He stopped in front of the grey jade wall.

“Dude, is he looking for death? Even the top two hundred inner disciples are very cautious about the gray rank missions. And he is only at the Early Condensing Reality Realm. How could he dare to take a grey rank mission?”

“Maybe he just came to take a look, I doubt he is brave enough to take it.”

A couple of inner disciples noticed Ye Chen, their eyes brightened, while they continued with their discussion.

Ye Chen did not care about their chatter. With his strength, he was quite confident that he could take on a gray rank mission. According to the difficulty of the missions, if the Condensing Reality Realm warriors could be divided into



fifteen stars, Ye Chen would definitely be ranked above five stars.

On that grey jade wall, there were a lot of missions.

Soon after, Ye Chen found a mission that he liked.

The third mission sheet on the fourth row.

Mission: Protecting the Lin Family's herb collecting team in the Red Blood Forest.

Detail: The herb collecting location is located in the deepest part of the forest, where a lot of rank 3 and 4 demonic beasts were seen.

Mission Difficulty: Two-star

Mission Rewards: Twenty thousand gold and ten Qi replenishing pellet

Notice: Five temporary guardians will be selected.

Ye Chen looked around, just as he expected, there were five other identical mission sheets. Someone had already taken one earlier. The same mission was probably issued to the other martial institutions as well, which meant that there would be a lot of people there for the mission. Ye Chen would have to fight with other candidates for the job.

Without any hesitation, Ye Chen reached out his hand and tore off the mission

sheet.

“What?! He really took it! That was a two-star grey rank mission!” All those inner disciples gasped.

“Huh, they only need five people, he will only be insulted if he goes there. I just hope that he would not make a fool of himself and embarrass our Sky Cloud Martial School.”

“The Purple Sun Martial Palace had always been a rival of the Sky Cloud Martial Institution, they would humiliate us any time they have a chance. Plus, there are also those arrogant Emerald Martial Palace disciples, the chances of him being chosen are almost none.”

With everyone staring in silence, Ye Chen walked out of the Floating Cloud Palace.

At the bottom of the mountain.

Ye Chen jumped on his horse and disappeared in the dust.

The Lin family was a small family in the Black Stone Town, with collecting herbs and producing medicine as their main business. They did not have many powerful warriors in their family, only two Early Clasp Yuan Realm warriors, and ten Condensing Reality Realm warriors. Compared to the top eight families, they could only be considered weak.

And that was why the Lin family decided to hire disciples from the martial institutions to help their herb collecting team, since there were so many martial geniuses among the disciples that could challenge people beyond their

cultivation level. A Mid Condensing Reality Realm disciple would probably be more powerful than a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior from their family, as they have way more powerful martial skills.

However, they were only a small family after all, so they did not have much money to spend on hiring . Finally, they decided that they would choose five temporary guardians.

In the afternoon.

Ye Chen arrived in the Black Stone Town after traveling continuously, he headed directly towards the Lin family, present in the north side of the town.

At that moment, it was quite crowded in the Lin family. About Ten talented young warriors were gathered in the training court. Among them, there were inner disciples in green who were from the Emerald Martial Palace, the Rudra Martial School inner disciples dressed in blue, and the Sky Cloud Martial School inner disciples in white. Besides that, there were a lot of other inner disciples from various other martial institutions. There were more than ten of them altogether.

With all the twenty people standing there, the people in Lin Family could not help but think, ‘if these people were all members of the Lin family, then the Lin family would definitely become a middle rank family in about a decade or so, it might even be possible to become a high rank family.’ Unfortunately, it was only a dream that would never come true.

“Everyone, our herb collecting team will leave for the Red Blood Forest tomorrow morning. So, the selection of the five temporary guardians needs to be done by tonight. Those who fail to be selected, we will not treat you badly,

you could stay and dine here, we will try our best to satisfy you.” The one who was speaking was the leader of the Lin Family, Lin Tiannan. He was an Early Claspng Yuan Realm warrior in his forties.

Hearing him, one of the inner disciples of the Rudra Martial School asked, “Leader Lin, I wonder what the rules of the selection are? Would you enlighten us?”

Lin Tiannan smiled and said: “Conducting individual battles is probably not practical, as we are short on time. So, I decided to go with the mixed battles. Check out the training court over there, you can see a white circle. Later, all of you will enter the circle, and then the battles will begin. Whoever gets pushed out of the white circle loses, and the last five people remaining would be the temporary guardians for this trip.”

Clearing his throat, Lin Tiannan spoke again: “Just to be fair, during the mixed battles, teaming up against someone and bullying them is strictly prohibited. All the battles have to be one on one battles, without interrupting the battles between other people. I hope you would remember the rules by heart.”

Everyone looked towards the training court, there was indeed a huge circle that was drawn with white paint. It had a radius of about fifteen meters, which could probably fit about twenty people in it. However, during the battles, the candidates might be affected by the after-effects of other people’s attacks, which would make this extremely hard.

“Good, challenging, I like it.” An inner disciple in green, who was from the Emerald Martial Palace nodded while he looked down at the rest of the crowd arrogantly.

The inner disciples from the Purple Sun Martial Palace did not want to back out, “Our Purple Sun Martial School has extremely powerful martial arts, especially suitable for such battles, hahaha...”

“Us, disciples from the North Snow Martial Academy are not afraid of anyone.”

“The Rudra Martial School isn’t afraid either.”

When it was the Sky Cloud Martial School disciples’ time to say something, everyone sneered at them, because all the Sky Cloud Martial School disciples that were present all seemed very weak. The most powerful warrior among them was only at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, and he had no reputation at all. Their existence here seemed to have no purpose whatsoever. Everyone felt that they were present there, only as mere decorations.

Besides the top five martial institutions, the disciples from the other martial institutions seemed to gradually lose their hope. But, when they saw the disciples from the Sky Cloud Martial School, they seemed to gain back some of their confidence.

“For the selection for the five temporary guardians, count me in.”

Right then, a firm voice originated from outside the training court.

Lin Tiannan looked towards the owner of that voice. But when he saw the speaker, he could not help but be disappointed. ‘What the heck is wrong with this Sky Cloud Martial School? Their disciples seem to be so weak. And this guy in front of me is just a plain fool, how could he dare to be so arrogant, when he is

only at the Early Condensing Reality Realm?’

## Chapter 71 – The Mixed Battles Begin

It was indeed Ye Chen. As he was not very familiar with the Black Stone Town, he got confused about which one of the routes was the short cut, so he was a bit late.

Fortunately, he asked someone for the route, otherwise he wouldn't have made it here on time.

Seeing that the selection had not started yet, Ye Chen greeted with his fists held in front of his chest, and said: "I am Ye Chen, an inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Greetings, leader Lin."

Lin Tiannan forced out a laugh, and said: "If you had arrived a little later, we would have started without you."

One of the disciples from the Purple Sun Martial Palace said sarcastically: "Actually, it doesn't really make a difference if you were able to make it or not. But now that you're here, you could at least stay here for free."

"Haha, if I remember it right, the Sky Cloud Martial School disciples love to take advantage of other people, now I can finally confirm the rumors." An Emerald Martial Palace disciple interrupted.

"You..." The disciples from the Sky Cloud Martial School were not happy at all. They were mad about the other disciples' allegations, but they were also mad at Ye Chen, for his arrogant speech.

The disciples from the North Snow Martial Academy and Rudra Martial School chose not to get involved in this. But, they kind of felt sorry for the disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School and particularly Ye Chen.

As for the disciples from other martial institutions, they could not be anymore happier, you could even see the gloating expressions on their faces.

Ye Chen sneered: "We will find out later, who is the one that likes to take advantage of others. Whatever you say right now is not even worth a fart."

"You are looking for death." Ye Chen's words provoked the Purple Sun Martial Palace disciples. A tall teenager who was about six foot high, walked out from the crowd. He was extremely massive, and looked like a bear with a thick neck. His arms were thicker than a normal person's thighs. It was clear that he was someone that chose to train his body as his priority. A burning heat rose around him, making him look like he was on fire. He then started walking towards Ye Chen step by step.

Meanwhile, a teenager walked out from the group of Emerald Martial Palace disciples. Although he looked just like any other teenager at his age, his aura was just as powerful as that tall teenager. His body flashed, and then appeared just three steps away from Ye Chen. Mildly transparent Zhen Qi was released like a thin layer of fog, it consisted of a mysterious power to explode.

The two stood right in front of Ye Chen, and continued to stare at him. They wanted to humiliate Ye Chen in public.

"Haha, this Ye Chen had managed to piss off both Wang Kunyang from the Purple Sun Martial Palace and Xiao Lie from the Emerald Martial Palace. It is not going to end well for him."



“Damn right, Wang Kunyang is at the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm, just a little step away from the Late Condensing Reality Realm. Also, he is well known for his ten thousand pounds strength, even a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior would not dare to fight him. That Xiao Lie is even more scary, his speed is inhumanly fast, and each of his attacks are extremely deadly. All his opponents either lost their body parts or were killed brutally. Hence, he got his nickname as the Dissection Killer. Everyone is terrified of him.”

“I don’t think it will happen though. Lin Tiannan, the leader of the Lin family, is here. How could he let that happen?”

“Well, that is true. It’s too bad then.”

During their chatters, Wang Kunyang’s and Xiao Lie’s aura had grown more and more stronger. They slightly lifted their heads up, and were looking down at Ye Chen.

Huh!

Ye Chen was just about to teach them a lesson, when Lin Tiannan appeared.

“Wait. The selection is about to start. Please, could you two wait until the mixed battles?” Lin Tiannan was having a headache right now, all these disciples were quite arrogant and very hard to control. The most frustrating part was that this disciple called Ye Chen, was way too arrogant. ‘Why did he have to mess with the disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace and the Purple Sun Martial Palace, everyone knows that they will never tolerate this kind of teasing. I guess he will probably suffer during the battles.

“Huh, I will let it go for now, since it’s the Lin family leader asking, but once the selection is over, I will make you fall on your knees and lick my boots.” Wang Kunyang spat on the floor, while he threw a dirty look at Ye Chen. He stopped emitting his aura, went back and stood with his fellow disciples.

On the contrary, Xiao Lie said in a creepy way, “I will have to admit that you are very lucky. If it wasn’t for leader Lin, I would have definitely broken your arm.”

Shoo!

Xiao Lie’s body shifted, and then appeared among the disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace, leaving only a vague shadow where he was standing earlier.

On the other side, all the disciples from the Sky Cloud Martial School were all chatting in low voices. They did not seem happy.

“What should we do? That Ye Chen is one of us too, letting him be bullied by other people, it doesn’t make us look good either.”

“What could we do? He chose to be arrogant, without our senior brothers and sisters here, we would all be going down if we interfere for his sake.”

“So frustrating! Why am I not more powerful?”

“Stop daydreaming, try and get selected first!”

Ye Chen who was just about to fight, turned expressionless. In fact, he was quite pissed off by their attitude. For the first time, he personally experienced the competition between the disciples of various martial institutions. However, he was not just any normal disciple from the Sky Cloud Martial School. He would not let anyone get away after messing with him.

“Dad, has the selection started yet?” At this intense moment, a soft and cute voice, that sounded like the chirping of a little bird or the ringing of a small bell was heard.

Lin Tiannan looked surprised, he turned his head and said, “Xue’er, didn’t I ask you to stay home?”

“I wanted to see how powerful those disciples are. Since I will be the leader of the herb

collecting team anyways, why not let me watch them fight?” Outside the training court, a young girl slowly walked in. She looked very pretty. She was wearing a pink dress, which made her look extremely slim and beautiful.

Forcing out a smile, Lin Tiannan introduced her to the crowd: “This is my little daughter Lin Xiaoxue, she will be the leader of the herb collecting team tomorrow.”

“Miss Lin, you don’t have to worry. With me – Wang Kunyang protecting you, your safety is ensured.” Wang Kunyang confidently patted his chest, and said loudly.

Lin Xiaoxue raised her pretty eyebrows, she said with a smile: “Well, thanks. But right now, let’s decide on the five temporary guardians!”

Lin Tiannan nodded, “The selection is officially started. Everyone please enter the white circle.”

Hearing him, all the disciples from the Emerald Martial Palace and Purple Sun Martial Palace entered the white circle first. Then they started staring at the rest of the disciples seriously. They seemed to be extremely confident that they would win. All the disciples from the North Snow Martial Academy were wearing white robes, they were just as powerful as the disciples from the Emerald Martial Palace and Purple Sun Martial School. Even though the disciples from the Rudra Martial School were always humble, no one dared to underestimate them.

When it was the Sky Cloud Martial School’s turn to go in, Wang Kunyang sneered, “What are you guys doing? As you would anyways be kicked out soon, I think you all are better off not entering. But, that brat has to come in here, as I don’t want to waste time looking for him later.”

Keeping their heads low, all the disciples from the Sky Cloud Martial School still entered the circle.

Since their cultivation levels were so low, the rest of the disciples were not bullied at all, as they felt that there was no point in doing so.

After everyone had entered the circle, Lin Tiannan took a deep breath and said, “The selection begins!”

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Just as Lin Tiannan’s words were out, all the people in the ring started to fight.

The powerful Zhen Qi converged in the ring like the rivers converge in an ocean.  
A couple of people had already been blown out of the ring.

## Chapter 72 – Three Punches

Lin Xiaoxue turned towards Lin Tiannan and asked, “Dad, you always say that the disciples from the Emerald Martial Palace and the North Snow Martial Academy are very powerful, then why did you send those mission sheets to other martial institutions as well?”

Lin Tiannan explained: “Whatever I think is not necessarily the right thing to do. We are only a small family, which means that we have to maintain a good relationship with all the martial institutions. If we send the mission sheets only to the Emerald Martial Palace and the North Snow Martial Academy, and the other academies later on come to know about it, then no other martial institutions would be willing to do business with us. Their disciples would hate us as well, some might even make trouble for us. So you have to remember this, any time if something involves the martial institutions, you should have to consider all of them, and never show any signs of partiality.”

“Yes, dad.” Lin Xiaoxue seemed to have a lot on her mind.

Lin Tiannan laughed: “This trip into the Red Blood Forest might be dangerous, but it is also a great chance to get to know all the disciples from all martial institutions. Among them, there might even be someone that is capable of becoming an inner elder in the future.”

“So, dad, who do you like the most?”

“Xiao Lie from the Emerald Martial Palace can be considered pretty good, but he is a bit too brutal, which might cause him problems in the future; Wang Kunyang from the Purple Sun Martial Palace has vast reserves of Qi, but he doesn’t seem to have good control of it. I cannot really judge the disciples from

the Rudra Martial School. As for the Sky Cloud Martial Scho... never mind. And in the North Snow Martial Academy, there is a disciple called Wang Feng, who seems pretty nice. He hasn't spoken so far, but if I am not mistaken, he is probably the most powerful among them all."

"Wang Feng?" Lin Xiaoxue seemed confused, she looked over in the direction of the ring.

By this time, there were about seven or eight people, that had already been pushed out of the white circle. Most of them were from small martial institutions, while there was only one disciple from a big martial institution, and he was from the Sky Cloud Martial School.

Boom!

In the crowd, a teenager from the North Snow Martial Academy with a cold look on his face, and a Rudra Martial School disciple, exchanged a palm attack. The moment their palms clashed, there was a huge shock wave, that spread in every direction.

All of a sudden, three more people had been blown out of the circle. But surprisingly, Ye Chen, who had the lowest cultivation level, stood still in the middle of the white circle, as if everything that was happening around him, had no effect on him.

Eh?

Both Lin Tiannan and Lin Xiaoxue were surprised.

Their attention was previously focused on that cold-looking teenager – Wang Feng, but Ye Chen’s performance soon caught their attention. ‘This guy... is not simple at all.’

There was another person who was also quite surprised by this, it was indeed Wang Kunyang.

He effortlessly kicked out a disciple from a small martial institution. Wang Kunyang then shifted his target, and ran towards Ye Chen, as he laughed maliciously and said, “Little brat, if you bow down in front of me and lick my shoes now, there might be a chance for you. Otherwise, today, I will make you vomit three liters of blood.”

The light yellow colored burning Zhen Qi suddenly expanded, Wang Kunyang took big steps and ran towards Ye Chen, while surrounded by a terrifying aura. He hid his right palm behind his waist, there was a yellow fire burning between his fingers.

“Try and take three of my punches, if you are still alive after that, then I will let you live.” Facing Wang Kunyang’s terrifying aura, Ye Chen was unperturbed. He had already made up his mind, that he would use his all against him; if the opponent could handle it, then it’s fine; if he could not handle it and died, then it only means that he was just asking for it. Since he would not be the first one that was killed in a battle, the Purple Sun Martial Palace could not openly look for trouble.

Wang Kunyang accumulated all his Zhen Qi, he tightened his right hand and threw it out towards Ye Chen, with the yellow fire wrapped around his whole fist.

“You are looking for death, Major Sun Burning Fist!”



Compared to Ye Jun's Burning Fist, Wang Kunyang's Major Sun Burning Fist was even more brutal and intense. His incoming fist attack looked like a huge sun that was about to burn everything in its way. All the disciples who were close to them, hurried to jump away from the attack zone to avoid being burnt.

Ye Chen stood still until Wang Kunyang's fist was just one meter away from his body. Then he also threw a punch towards the incoming palm. His fist was covered in a blue fire, and drew a beautiful angle in the air. All of a sudden, one could hear a tiger's roar, and see a blue dragon in the air, which was extremely shocking.

"Top rank Mortal Realm skill: Tiger Roar Dragon Fist!"

The two fists clashed accurately, the yellow and blue colored light infused together, while the fists kept clashing with each other, exploding and bringing up endless shock waves.

But what surprised everyone was that, it was Wang Kunyang who had given up first. All the clothes on his right arm were torn apart, showing his extremely muscular arm. However, over his well built muscles, there was a noticeable amount of blood coming out, while there were also some cracking noises due to his bones being broken.

The shocked Wang Kunyang was blown away, while he vomited a lot of blood.

"Where do you think you are going!"

Ye Chen did not want to let him off so easily. His feet touched the ground, and

then his body disappeared completely. The next second he appeared, he was already right next to Wang Kunyang's flying body. Maintaining the same speed, Ye Chen lifted his fist, and punched twice on Wang Kunyang's chest.

Boom! Boom!

His fist was five centimeters deep inside Wang Kunyang's body, the noises from his breaking ribs were loud and clear.

"No!" Blood shoot out of Wang Kunyang's mouth, he was no longer able to control his body. He was blown out of the white circle at an inhuman speed, and crashed into the walls of the Lin family field.

The whole wall was completely shattered and collapsed, it buried Wang Kunyang's body completely, no one could tell whether he was alive or dead at that moment.

Silence!

Complete silence!

Everyone present stopped whatever they were doing, and just stared at Ye Chen.

Leaving everyone no time to be shocked, Ye Chen turned towards Xiao Lie and sneered, "Didn't you say you wanted to break my arms and legs? Actually, I would like to know, if there is a difference between your definition of breaking arms and legs, and mine."

Lin Tiannan was extremely distressed, 'Is this Ye Chen planning to kill Xiao Lie as well?!'

Xiao Lie swallowed the saliva in his mouth, pretended to be calm and said: "You made a huge mistake today. Wang Kunyang was one of the favorite disciples from the Purple Sun Martial School. Now that you've killed him, you would not be able to live for long. If you choose to apologize now, you might still live. Otherwise, there is only death waiting for you."

Ye Chen did not care about his threats, "Do you know how many disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School, had lost their lives at the hands of their disciples? Our Brother Wu was killed by the disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace last year, brother Fei was disabled by them, Sister Miao was turned into a mentally disabled person by them. Now I had only knocked out one Wang Kunyang, and who dares to criticize me? I always believed that a dead genius is no longer a genius, only the ones alive count. Today, you cannot escape my three punches, but if you are still alive after that, then I will let you go."

Finished speaking, Ye Chen once again launched his Crane Shadow Steps. His body shifted, and moved towards Xiao Lie.

The instant Ye Chen disappeared in the air, Xiao Lie was more anxious than ever. He knew that he was not any stronger than Wang Kunyang. Since Wang Kunyang was unable to take even a single punch from Ye Chen, he knew that he would not be able to take it either. In that moment, he felt that the only way out was to use the advantage of his speed to escape. He could then wait for an opportunity to seek revenge in the future. He was extremely determined about this, as he knew that the disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace were always capable of finding ways to kill the disciples from other martial institutions.

Shoo!

Xiao Lie could not care any less about the selection; he ran towards the edge of the white circle. He thought, 'you want to hurt me? Keep on dreaming!'

"Stay!" Seeing that his opponent was about to leave the white circle, Ye Chen raised his hand in the air. Five sharp Qi swords shot out, and blocked Xiao Lie's way out.

## Chapter 73 – Flying Dragon in the Air

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The Qi swords were extremely fast; everyone could only see five thin lines streak past their eyes. They pierced Xiao Lie's chest, shoulder and waist, leaving tiny bloody holes as they passed through. Xiao Lie was frozen for an instant.

“Not good! He can actually form solid swords with his Qi!” Xiao Lie was quite shocked witnessing this. If it wasn't for him pulling back his body a little bit, there would have been way more bloody holes on his body, which might have even cost him his life.

“Jade Clear Qi Art!”

Xiao Lie was quite afraid of Ye Chen's Qi sword attacks and at once activated his Jade Clear Qi Art. It was a top rank Mortal Realm defensive art from the Emerald Martial Palace.

All of a sudden, a blue Qi layer with one meter radius, appeared around Xiao Lie's body. It looked just like a thin layer of crystal.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

The second round of Ye Chen's Qi sword landed on that Qi layer. The impact resulted in sounds similar to a metal striking against metal. The Qi swords could not move even one inch further into the layer and were completely blocked.

“Dissection Hand!”

After he successfully blocked Ye Chen’s attack, Xiao Lie threw out a claw attack.

Crack!

The ground was completely shattered due to the shock wave. The claws were made by shaping his Qi like a curved blade, with each of them extremely sharp. They came slicing through the air, attacking towards Ye Chen.

“Crane Shadow leaves no trace, one flying dragon in the sky!”

Ye Chen’s figure blurred as he moved towards Xiao Lie. He effortlessly avoided Xiao Lie’s attack, and appeared right above him. Without any delay, he immediately threw a punch right at Xiao Lie.

The strong blue light that appeared along with the loud roar of a tiger, was unbearably bright.

As soon as he adapted his eyes to the bright light, all that Xiao Lie could see was a flying dragon made of blue Qi, heading towards him. It was four meters long, and had sharp claws. Its attacks filled with a strong killing intent were directed towards Xiao Lie.

“If I am going down, I will take you down along with me!” Xiao Lie’s eyes were wide open, he stood still, with his both arms stretched wide open in the air. He looked like he was ready to take on the attack of that blue flying dragon.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

With each step Xiao Lie took backwards, there was a huge explosion below his feet. After ten steps, his whole body was blown high into the air, with blue light flashing around him.

“Two more punches!”

Ye Chen ignored the fact that the Tiger Roar Dragon Fist costs him a lot of Zhen Qi and threw out another two punches. The blue Qi dragon twisted around Xiao Lie, and completely swallowed him mid air. Then, it continued to fly high into the sky while carrying his body. It looked as if there were real dragons flying in the sky.

Boom! Boom!

The huge blue Qi layer exploded like fire crackers mid air, it even dyed its surroundings blue.

Shortly after the explosion, a human figure landed on the floor, close to where Wang Kunyang was.

“Whoo...” Ye Chen let out a huge breath of air. The Tiger Roar Dragon Fist was a top rank Mortal Realm fist art. He had picked this when he chose the Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art, and had already completely mastered it to the peak of the highest stage, half a month ago. The Flying Dragon in the Sky was the killing move of the Tiger Roar Dragon Fist Art. it used up a lot of Zhen Qi. Just three punches used up as much Zhen Qi as ten normal punches. It was also extremely powerful, and

was almost equivalent to a low rank Earth Realm Martial skill. But, Xiao Lie was a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior after all, he also had a defensive art like Jade Clear Qi Art. So, it would have been really hard to try and hurt him from a distance. If he had managed to avoid the first Flying Dragon in the Sky attack, he would have probably managed to survive the three punches with his defensive art.

Looking around, Ye Chen realized that there were a lot of people staring at him in shock, as if he was some kind of monster.

“Two Mid Condensing Reality Realm warriors couldn’t even take three of his punches? Did I see it wrong?”

“So strong! When did someone like this appear in the Sky Cloud Martial School? When he reaches the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, then he might not even be afraid of those Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors!”

“Definitely! challenging two geniuses beyond his cultivation, this kind of power is not just about the cultivation levels anymore.”

The remaining disciples from the Emerald Martial Place and the Purple Sun Martial Palace were full of various thoughts. But there was one thought that flashed through all their minds, ‘We cannot leave this guy alive, he will definitely become a strong threat in the future. I have to go back and tell senior brothers and sisters about this and get them to kill him. We cannot let him grow any stronger.’

The only people that were quite happy about what had happened earlier were obviously the inner disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Although it was extremely competitive within the school, it was never this intense and life-



threatening. Outside the school, the competition could be said to be ten times or even hundred times more intense. Sky Cloud Martial School had a lot of geniuses in the past, that were very talented, but had ultimately been killed by the disciples of other schools. It was very sad to lose them, in the name of competition. Now that there was another strong inner disciple from the same school, all the disciples would feel proud for just being in the same school as him. Otherwise, it would be just like what happened earlier. Even when they were being humiliated by the disciples of other schools, they would be unable to even fight back. That was extremely frustrating.

“Good job, Brother Ye!”

When three people get together, the strongest one is addressed as teacher. Although those disciples would not address Ye Chen as teacher yet, they would be glad to call him Brother.

[Ed note: It’s a saying, I was unable to come up with anything close. It roughly means that the strongest one is respected by the rest]

Ye Chen still looked the same, he turned to the remaining disciples from Emerald Martial Palace and Purple Sun Martial Palace, “Do you want to walk out of the circle yourselves, or should I escort you out?”

“I dare you!” One of them was unable to put down his pride and blurted out.

Boom!

That guy’s eyes went blurry, when Ye Chen’s fist landed on his body. His body flew out of the circle.

Seeing this, the rest of the disciples did not dare to say anymore, they jumped out of the white circle one after another.

“Ye Chen, you are so dead. My senior brothers and sisters will never let you get away with this.”

“No matter how powerful you are, you are merely an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior, you will be dead when you face a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior. Our Emerald Martial Palace will definitely send someone for you.”

When had those disciples from the Emerald Martial Palace ever been treated like this? They lifted Xiao Lie who was still unconscious, and left as they said those words.

There were only three disciples that had come from the Purple Sun Martial Palace, one was already on the brink of death, one was badly wounded, and the only one remaining was obviously unable to carry two people all by himself. So, he did not dare to say anything to Ye Chen. But he had been cursing Ye Chen continuously in his heart, and swore to himself that he himself would get his revenge for today's humiliation.

Lin Tiannan looked like he was having a very hard time. He asked someone to send Wang Kunyang and the other Purple Sun Martial Palace disciple, who was badly wounded into the inner yield. He planned to use their finest medicine to cure them. Otherwise, he was afraid that even the leader of the Purple Sun Martial Palace might blame them, and that would not be a good thing for the Lin family.

Inside the white circle, there were seven people remaining. Ye Chen, three

Rudra Martial Palace disciples, and three North Snow Martial Academy disciples.

Ye Chen had a pretty good impression of the disciples from those two martial institutions. At least, he did not hate them, so he said, “There are still seven of us left, we need to get two more out, I guess we should carry on with the selection.”

“No need.” A tall slim girl who seemed to be the leader of the disciples from the Rudra Martial School, said to the male disciple right next to her, “Brother Yang, your cultivation level is slightly lower, so step out.”

“Yes!” That male disciple did not even hesitate before he stepped out of the circle.

And the cold-looking teenager, Wang Feng, seemed to be the leader of the North Snow Martial Academy group, he also asked one of the weaker ones to give up the selection.

Finally, there were exactly the right amount of people left in the circle.

The tall teenager girl said to Ye Chen with a smile: “Brother Ye, you were quite impressive earlier. I, Yuan Xuemei was deeply impressed.”

Ye Chen did not seem too happy about her compliment, he said: “There are so many geniuses in the world, I am just one of them. I’m afraid to say this, but I don’t think that I am the best of those geniuses.”

Yuan Xuemei froze for a second, and then she laughed, “Interesting. It’s just as brother Ye said, there are indeed a lot of geniuses out there, that can fight

beyond their cultivation levels. But, there are not a lot like you. Also, you should be extremely careful, the disciples from the Purple Sun Marital Palace and the Emerald Martial Palace would not let it go easily. I heard that the Blood Craving Monster from the Emerald Martial Palace is also on a mission around here. Try your best to avoid him! Otherwise you might be in great danger!”

“Blood Craving Monster!” Ye Chen frowned a little. ‘That guy should be an inner disciple from the Emerald Martial Palace! How did he get that title?’

## Chapter 74 – Dangerous Red Blood Forest

Ye Chen asked, “How strong is this Blood Craving Monster?” He did not ask for that guy’s cultivation level, because when it concerned geniuses, cultivation levels were only trivial. It was not uncommon for a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior to beat a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior. So, the most important thing was rather his battle prowess.

Yuan Xuemei glanced at Wang Feng, and explained: “Brother Ye, I wonder if you ever heard about the three stages of the younger generation of the Windy Nation?”

Ye Chen shook his head. Maybe the disciples who had been travelling for a while might have known about it, but he was someone who had just become an inner disciple and had no powerful connections. So, he did not know much.

“Okay, I will explain it for you!” Yuan Xuemei organized her thoughts, and slowly explained.

“Although there are not as many geniuses as the other big nations in the Windy Nation, there are still quite a lot of them. In general, only the real geniuses would be included in this classification.

The first stage, which is the highest stage only has three people, Young master Emerald from the Emerald Martial Palace, the Young master North Snow from the North Snow Martial Academy and the Young master Duanmu from the Duanmu family. All three of them are considered the leaders of the younger generation of the Windy Nation. They are capable of competing with the top geniuses from other countries, and are eligible to attend the triennial competition for the Hidden Dragon Rank.

There are many people in the second stage. For example, the core disciple - 'Broken Palm' Liu Wuxiang – from the Emerald Martial Palace, the 'Stone Man' Shi Potian, the core disciple from the North Snow Martial Academy - 'Aggressive Blade' Yu Yue, 'North Snow Fast Blade' Lin Qi, Ouyang Lie from the Purple Sun Martial Palace, 'Golden Leg' Ouyang Ming. Our eldest sister and second brother from the Rudra Martial School, 'Lotus Goddess' Qin Yulian and the 'Rain man' Nan Gongyun; the core disciples from your Sky Cloud Martial School Zhu Mei, and 'Young master Hanshan' Luo Hanshan. Of course, the more people there are, the harder it is, to ignore the the difference in their strength. The most powerful one might easily defeat the weakest one. Yet, they are all named in the same stage.

I would not go into details about the third stage, as there are just too many people in it. Most of them are core disciples from all the martial institutions, who are mostly at the Late Condensing Reality Realm. They are very likely to become the mid rank powers of the Windy Nation in the future.”

Ye Chen frowned, “So this Blood Craving Monster is a stage-three genius?”

“Hehe, not exactly. He is below the three stages, but he is still one of the most powerful disciples. it’s just that his cultivation level is not quite there yet. it is not impossible for him to join the third stage.” Yuan Xuemei explained.

After hearing this, Ye Chen tried to picture a detailed power chart in his mind, from high to low. It was much more organized when compared to earlier, when he knew nothing about his fellow disciples’ strength.

As for the competition for the Hidden Dragon Rank that she mentioned, he had already heard about it before.

The Nan Zhuo region was the smallest region in the true spirit continent. However, this smallest region was still way bigger than the world Ye Chen was from. It had millions of miles of land, among which, there were three big nations, ten mid sized nations and twenty-four small nations, like the Windy Nation.

All the martial artists from different nations normally did not interact much, due to the distance between their nations. This made it very hard to get an idea of the strength of the martial artists in other nations.

Therefore, the three big nations decided to collaborate and set up a competition sixty years ago, in order to get a clear idea of the level of all the warriors from various nations.

The competition for the Hidden Dragon Rank was designed for the youngsters who were under twenty-four and with a cultivation level at or above Mid Condensing Reality Realm. It was held once every three years, with seventy-two contestants each time.

Although seventy-two might seem like a lot, it is actually very few. In Nan Zhuo region alone, there were billions of people living, so being selected as one of the top seventy-two would be the greatest honor. And as far as Ye Chen knew, in the last Hidden Dragon Rank competition, that took place a year ago, Young master Emerald from the Emerald Martial Palace was ranked sixty-eighth, while Young master North Snow and Young master Duanmu were not even in the rankings.

Of course, it did not mean that Young master Emerald was stronger than the other two, as sometimes you might just have bad luck and could encounter opponents with the exact skills to counter yours. In that kind of situation, even if you had the higher cultivation level, it would still not make much of a difference.

A lot of information flashed through Ye Chen's mind, he nodded at Yuan Xuemei, and said, "Thanks for the information, I will be careful."

Wang Feng who had been cold this whole time, suddenly said, "Even the Blood Craving Monster must have a weakness, if we could find it, then we could beat him with the minimum casualties."

Ye Chen forced out a smile, he knew that the disciples from the North Snow Martial Academy specialized in finding their opponents' weaknesses and making use of them to obtain victory, they would never give their opponents a chance to fight back. It's too bad that Ye Chen was not a part of the North Snow Martial Academy, as he knew that even with his powerful soul force, it would still be very hard for him to find someone's weakness and then attack efficiently. However, would someone like the Blood Craving Monster be beaten that easily?

Lin Xiaoxue saw that they were just standing there, instead of coming over to her. She decided to say something to get their attention, "Congratulations, you five would be the temporary guardians for tomorrow's herb collecting trip."

"Thanks!" Yuan Xuemei smiled back.

Lin Tiannan said, "I have already asked them to prepare the rooms for your arrival. Dinner would be served in the dining room; the servants would remind you about it. Also, the Red Blood Forest is quite dangerous, you guys should be fully prepared. Tonight, you should probably get a good rest."

"Thanks, Leader Lin."



The five did not dare to underestimate the Red Blood Forest, as they knew that it was full of demonic beasts. Rank 4 beasts were quite common there. Even if Young master Emerald encountered a Rank 4 beast, he would not be in an advantageous position. If he was not careful, he might even end up dead and would become part of the soil.

The sun went down soon after. After dinner, the five went back to their own rooms, and did not come out again.

A night passed without any words.

Second day morning.

The five of them followed the large herb collecting team and the guards from the Lin family, and headed towards the west of the Black Stone Town, where the Red Blood Forest was located.

...

In the eerily silent forest, everyone walked quietly. Everyone was anxious and alarmed, they kept looking at the dark corners. All those people carrying a weapon, held on to them tightly, and those who did not, silently accumulated their Zhen Qi, preparing for the danger they might face at any moment.

“Ahhh!”

Even though everyone was being extremely careful, they were still unable to dodge death. A Lin family guard suddenly fell down, his face looked green, and he kept spitting white foam.

Lin Xiaoxue frowned, she hurriedly walked over.

After carefully studying the surroundings, the group realized that there was a huge green spider crawling on that dead guard's neck. It was probably hanging from the tree when he walked past, then attacked silently when he was not looking, and poisoned him.

"It is the dark green poisonous dragon spider!" Lin Xiaoxue calmly stated. Although these spiders could only be counted as rank 1 beasts, they carried an extremely strong poison, which could even kill a Condensing Reality Realm warrior in a second. That was why, they were called the Death Envoys by the warriors that frequently travel through the Red Blood Forest. It meant that anyone bitten by these spiders could not be saved.

Ye Chen gasped unnoticeably. He did not think that the Red Blood Forest would be anymore dangerous than the Silent Hills. He had thought that, since he managed to survive in the Silent Hills, he would probably be able to survive the Red Blood Forest. However, he understood that he was wrong. The Red Blood Forest was not only full of huge scary monsters, but it also had tiny little deadly creatures. If it was him that was bitten by the spider, he also might not have been able to survive it.

## Chapter 75 – The Basin Full of Yuan Qi

“Miss, he is gone. Let’s move on!” The second commander who was in his fifties sighed and suggested.

Lin Xiaoxue nodded, she stood up and said: “Everyone, the Red Blood Forest is extremely dangerous, accidents like this are inevitable. But, please don’t worry, the dead did not lose their lives in vain. The Lin family will give one hundred thousand silvers to the victims’ families, and ten thousand silvers to the rest of you. Even If I die, it would still be done.”

“Miss, you are so nice! Now we can relax a little.”

“Yes, as a warrior, it is normal for us to get hurt. But, what we are the most worried about is that if we die, our families would lose their only support.”

There were only six Condensing Reality Realm warriors in the whole team of guards, the rest of them were all at the Mortal Realm. With their cultivation level, even if they killed demonic beasts everyday, they would still need a few months to make ten thousand silvers. However, it was impossible for them to do so, since no one with their strength would be able to survive in a place full of demonic beasts. In general, for a normal Mortal Realm warrior, it would take more than five years to make about ten thousand silvers. And, it was only under the condition that they did not die, since everyone had those moments when they were completely out of luck.

Now, Lin Xiaoxue had promised to reward their families one hundred thousand silvers if they were killed, which addressed all their concerns. They would not have to worry about their families even if they die. And, they would make ten thousand silvers if they made it alive. This lifted up their spirits.

“This girl has what it takes to be a great leader.” Lin Xiaoxue’s style impressed Ye Chen, he thought to himself.

...

The dead were no more, all that the rest of them could do was to carry on with their journey.

After walking for a while, the group seemed to enter a different world that was completely separated from the one outside the forest.

The Red Blood Forest did not betray its reputation. The group had encountered four waves of beasts’ attack on their journey.

The first wave was from three underground demonic mice, which were rank 2 beasts.

The second wave was from a large group of silver ring snakes, which were also rank 2 beasts.

The third wave was from five Scorpion tailed demonic wolves, which were rank 4 beasts.

During the third and fourth waves, no one had lost their lives, and they weren’t injured either. However, during the first and the second waves of attack, they had lost four men. If it wasn’t for Ye Chen reacting immediately, they might have lost more than half of their men.

The underground demonic mice were not very powerful. Normally, even a Mortal Realm stage 7 warrior could manage to beat it head on, without much effort. However, when it hid underground, it would become a Mortal Realm warrior's or even an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior's nightmare.

Among the Lin family guards, there was a Mortal Realm Stage 10 warrior, who was dragged into one of the deepest holes in the ground by the demonic mice. His miserable shrieks lasted for a long time before they stopped. The second and the third mouse were not lucky enough, they had targeted Ye Chen and Yuan Xuemei. They hadn't even managed to completely get out of the hole before they were killed by them. And the last one alive was scared away.

If the underground demonic mice had frightened the group, then the second wave had completely traumatized them.

It was a huge group of silver ring snakes, which were rank 2 beasts. Their heads were oval shaped, while their bodies were covered in black and white ring patterns. With their extremely thin tails, their whole bodies were about four meters long. They were as thick as a human hand. Although they were not as poisonous as the dark green poisonous dragon spiders, they were still capable of taking even a Condensing Reality Realm warrior's life. If one was bitten by them, he would lose his life due to lung failure, as it was extremely hard to be treated.

The silver ring snakes' attacks were pretty tricky. They attacked from the branches of the trees, from within the bushes, from under the falling leaves, basically from anywhere in their surroundings, which made it even more dangerous.

In the critical moment, the disciple of the North Snow Martial Academy, Wang Feng, executed the Storm Snow Sword Art. Its ice cold sword Qi managed to slow down the silver ring snakes, and sliced up all the closer ones. He stopped

almost half of the silver ring snakes all by himself.

Ye Chen and Yuan Xuemei weren't idle either, they used their special martial arts and killed all the silver ring snakes while maintaining a distance of about ten steps from them.

Unfortunately, they were unable to protect everyone. A herb collecting member and two guards from the Lin family guarding team were bitten by dozens of silver ring snakes, and instantly lost their lives.

Lin Xiaoxue's face turned quite pale. They were already in the deepest parts of the Red Blood Forest and there were more and more demonic beasts there. But, it was not the only reason she was concerned about. She was upset because there were too many people that had lost their lives, and that only meant that she would have to pay a huge amount of money. It was not that she was stingy. It was just that the Lin family had already spent one hundred gold and fifty Qi replenishing pellets for hiring the five martial disciples, which already amounted to about two hundred and fifty thousand gold in total, that is twenty-five hundred thousand silvers. Now that five people had lost their lives, it meant an increase of five hundred thousand silvers, and ten thousand silvers for each person alive. That increased it to more than three thousand and five hundred thousand silvers. If anymore people lost their lives, then it might even go beyond five million silvers.

For a small family like the Lin family, five million silvers was already a very huge number, that even shake their foundations. If they were ever pushed to a position where they couldn't even make both ends meet, then that was the end of a small family.

Biting her lips, Lin Xiaoxue hoped that this trip would turn out to at least be worth it.

After they walked another ten miles, Ye Chen suddenly felt that there was an increase in the density of Yuan Qi in the surroundings.

Lin Xiaoxue had also sensed this, she excitedly said, "We are almost near the herb collecting location! Let's go!"

"Yes!"

The group from the Lin family could not help but be a little relieved. They had been extremely tense since the beginning of the trip. They did not dare to relax for even a second, as they were afraid they'd become food for the beasts and would never be able to leave the Red Blood Forest to go back to their homes.

But there would be no gain without pain. If they could endure until the herb collection mission was over, they would go back happier than when they came in.

Moments later.

The group arrived at a huge basin. When they looked around, they saw that the whole basin spanned across a few miles. It was full of all kinds of medicinal plants, such as the Black Ring Plant, the Silver Bell Plant, the Golden Ball Iron Blood Grass, the Star flower, the Scorpion Flower... there were hundreds of valuable plants there. A thick layer of spirit Qi was concentrated in the sky. it was just like heaven.

"So many medicinal plants!" All the members of the herb collecting team were excited, their eyes brightened, and their breathing sped up. Although these

medicinal plants were not valuable individually, once there was a huge amount of them, they were worth a fortune. If they could manage to take them all back, they would be able to sell them all for at least one or two million silvers, without even processing them. Once they were processed and made into pellets, then they would be worth more than at least ten million silvers. Some of the extremely precious medicinal plant would even cost more than that. For example, some of the ingredients of the Qi replenishing pellet like the Golden Ball Iron Blood Plant were extremely rare. Each one was worth at least one thousand gold, which was more expensive than some of the finest weapons.

Lin Xiaoxue looked pleased, however, she did not let the excitement get to her head, she said, “Each herb collecting member should be protected by two Lin family guards. Spread out and if you encounter anything strange, do not decide by yourselves, ask me first.”

“Yes!”

On their way here, the guards had been working extremely hard. If they did not surround the herb collectors and protect them, even more people would have been killed. However, they felt that it was all worth it. Besides all the silver they were entitled to, they would also get ten thousand silvers, just for being alive. They needed at least a few months to make that amount of money.

After all the tasks were assigned, Lin Xiaoxue also joined the herb collecting team. She gasped when she discovered some very valuable plants.

Yuan Xuemei smiled, “The density of Yuan Qi is very high here. There might be some beasts around, should we five go check the surroundings?”

Ye Chen nodded, “Right. Let’s take one direction each!”



“Okay!”

They were being paid to do this, so they all chose a direction and went to patrol the surroundings. They could even pick up some useful plants on their way and keep them in their storage rings.

## Chapter 76 - The Appearance of the Spirit Fountain

Just like Yuan Xuemei expected, there were some demonic beasts hidden in the basin, such as the fist-sized Deadly Bees, Shape Shifting dragonflies, Iron Birds that always hid and slept in the trees, and the Rock Pigs that were easily provoked.

Luckily, all these beasts were not very high ranked, and there were not many of them. Therefore, only a few people were injured by them, and no one lost their lives.

During this, Ye Chen's Pure Jun Zhen Qi had proved its effectiveness. Its Qi sword could attack targets from a hundred steps away, with power equivalent to that of an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior. With it, he was able to easily save people in danger. He could also attack different places at the same time.

Shoo!

After he shot down the last two Deadly Bees with his Qi swords, Ye Chen looked like he had a lot going through his mind.

As they got closer to the center of the basin, the chances of coming across demonic beasts kept increasing. Also, those Deadly Bees that came out of the deepest parts of the basin were bigger by a third than the normal ones, and their speed could even compete with the birds flying in the sky. They were really hard to escape from.

"Everyone, you should start collecting from the outer part of the basin. When we are done here, we could go to the deeper parts." As Ye Chen used his Zhen

Qi, his voice spread across miles, everyone heard it clearly, as if he whispered in each of their ears.

Lin Xiaoxue spoke after him, “Ye Chen is right. You guys should start from the outer area of the basin. When you are done, gather over here.”

Actually, most of the members of the herb collecting team already knew that the deeper parts of the basin were not safe, even before Ye Chen’s reminder. Even though they knew about it, sometimes they could still not resist walking over when they find some valuable medicinal plants in the distance, and they would eventually walk deeper and deeper into the basin where it was extremely dangerous.

Yuan Xuemei’s patrol area was right next to Ye Chen’s, so every now and then, they would have chat for a short period of time. Right then, Yuan Xuemei suddenly said, “Don’t you think the density of the natural Yuan Qi here in this basin is a little too much?”

“Yes, a little, maybe it is due to the medicinal plants and this basin creating a Yuan Qi circulation cycle which was beneficial to the both of them. This probably increased the density of Yuan Qi in the basin.” Ye Chen thought about it, and he could not think of any other reason for it.

Yuan Xuemei shook her head, “No, it is different. It is normal for a basin full of medicinal plants to have thicker Yuan Qi. However, I have seen a basin larger than this, with even more medicinal plants, but the Yuan Qi was nowhere as thick as this.”

Ye Chen stared at her, “So you mean that there is another reason for this?”

“Probably! Let’s wait until we go a little more deeper, then we could check around.”

Ye Chen nodded. If it was really like what Yuan Xuemei had said, then it was necessary to check it out, as they might even find something valuable.

Time passed rapidly. It was almost noon by the time they finished collecting all the herbs in the outer parts of the basin.

Lin Xiaoxue put all the baskets filled with medicinal plants in her storage ring. She took out some pre-prepared food and distributed them to everyone.

“Miss! How was the harvest?” The second-in-command, captain of the herb collecting team could not help but asked.

Lin Xiaoxue smiled “I roughly estimate that the medicinal plants that we had just collected were worth more than three hundred silvers each. If they are made into pellets, then it will not be hard to make about three or four million silvers.”

“Great!”

The Lin family’s main business was manufacturing pellets. So, the more medicinal plants they brought back, the more money they could make. If they did not take enough plants, then even the workers would be affected, and their lives would would get tough.

Basically, their lives were closely dependant on the condition of the Lin family.

Walking towards Ye Chen and the rest of the group, Lin Xiaoxue said gratefully, “Thank you all for protecting us during this whole trip. If you are ever in need of some pellets, you could buy them from us Lin family, we would only charge you the cost of production.” Actually, it was only her being polite, she knew that none of the martial artists would lack that trivial amount of money. They only lacked extremely huge amounts of money. But, she felt that it did not matter. For the Lin family, the most important thing was to maintain a good relationship with all the martial disciples, as it would be very beneficial for the future development of Lin family.

Wang Feng replied casually: “Since we took the mission, we would naturally try our best to achieve good results. So, there is no need to thank us.”

Lin Xiaoxue seemed a little embarrassed. As a lady, she was bound to get married. She did not like those guys from rich families. Although they seemed extremely powerful on the outside, it was only due to the influence of their families. Without the support of their families, they were worthless. So, she always wanted to marry one of the martial disciples, geniuses like Wang Feng and Ye Chen. From their attitude and appearance, she felt that they must be some from big families, that never lacked money. Combined with their powerful martial arts, they would be the most ideal companions for all the teenage girls. However, during this trip, she discovered that Wang Feng was quite indifferent, and never let anyone get close to him. On the contrary, Ye Chen seemed very friendly. But she felt that beyond his friendliness, there was some brutality hidden. He kept everyone at a certain distance, neither too friendly, nor too cold.

Yuan Xuemei had a sharp observation, and combined with the fact that she was also a woman, she was able to clearly understand Lin Xiaoxue’s thoughts. But she still couldn’t agree with them.

There was nothing common between a warrior and a normal person, so it was very unlikely for them to get married.

In her opinion, Lin Xiaoxue was only at the Mortal Realm. If nothing happens, she could at most reach the Condensing Reality Realm in her lifetime.

However, at Wang Feng and Ye Chen's level, their biggest goal in life was to get stronger. They did not care about any other stuff. Even when they get to a certain age and needed to find someone, they would try and find someone who was at least at the same cultivation level. But, they almost definitely would not marry a normal person.

To be fair, Yuan Xuemei would not marry a normal person either.

If Wang Feng and Ye Chen knew her thoughts, they would also probably agree with her.

For them, no matter how pretty Lin Xiaoxue was, she could only be counted as a "normal" person, someone they would not be in touch with after this. There was no point in starting a romantic affair, when they already knew that they were completely different people.

Boom!

Right at that moment, the ground suddenly started to shake heavily, it seemed as if something was forcing its way out of the ground.

The next moment!

There was a huge white beam of light, about a few meters thick, that went all the way up into the sky, parting the clouds.

The Yuan Qi in the sky above the basin seemed to have thickened again. The Yuan Qi formed above them was so dense that it was almost visible to the naked eye. Every breath of Ye Chen seemed to strengthen his Zhen Qi.

Yuan Xuemei yelled, "A column formed by Yuan Qi, there must be a spirit fountain down there."

Hearing her words, Ye Chen and Wang Feng looked surprised. They could not believe that there was a spirit fountain under this basin. Generally, soul stones could be found where a spirit fountain was present, and soul stones were very essential for martial artists. However, they could not be sure about the size of the spirit fountain. If it was huge, then every big martial institution in the Windy Nation would start fighting for its ownership.

Ten miles away from the basin, three men in black lifted their heads at the same time.

"Yuan Qi had formed a column to the sky; the spirit fountain has appeared!"

"Should we go inform master Ghost? Every marital institution would soon be notified of the appearance of the spirit fountain."

"No need, Let's go there and use the secret martial art to cover the scent. Otherwise it would be too late, even if we notify master."

“Fair enough. We have no time to lose, let’s go!”

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The three of them turned into three dark creepy shadows, as they rapidly went through the dark forest. Their speed was inhumanly fast, and they disappeared in the blink of an eye.



## Chapter 77 – Low Rank Ghost Guard

Turning around, Yuan Xuemei said to Lin Xiaoxue, “Now, let’s take everyone to the deeper parts of the basin.”

“Okay.” Lin Xiaoxue also knew about the importance of the spirit fountain. However, she had no intentions to claim it, because with just the power of the Lin family, they could not protect it, even if it was the smallest spirit fountain. If they dreamt too high, she knew that would not end well for them.

Ye Chen, Wang Feng and Yuan Xuemei took the lead, while the two other martial disciples covered the back. The group of fifty people headed for the deepest parts of the basin.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!...

A huge amount of Qi swords were shot out; a large group of Deadly Bees could not even come close, before they were sliced in half mid air. All their body parts fell from the sky, as if they were raining from the sky.

Yuan Xuemei complemented: “Brother Ye, that martial art of yours must be the Pure Jun Zhen Qi art, right? I saw a Sky Cloud Martial School disciple use it once, but that guy could only shoot out Qi light instead of Qi swords. So I wonder, which stage of the art have you reached, Brother Ye?”

Ye Chen said: “You are flattering me too much; I had only managed to reach the seventh stage recently.”

“Ooh!”

Both Yuan Xuemei and Wang Feng were surprised. They knew that it was not easy to master a martial art to its highest stage. Normally, if a person could train their top rank Mortal Realm art to its fifth stage in two years, they would be regarded as extremely talented, if he could reach the sixth stage within the same amount of time, then he would be regarded as a genius; it was almost impossible for someone to train to the seventh stage in just two years.

The deeper they walked into the basin, the more demonic beasts they encountered.

Just after they managed to kill a group of Deadly Bees, three Green Shelled Lizards came out of nowhere.

“Drop Water Through the Stone!”

Yuan Xuemei, as a Rudra Martial School inner disciple, with her cultivation level at Mid Condensing Reality Realm, had great battle prowess. A thin sword appeared in her hand. She slightly shook her hand, and three thin sword lights shot out. Although they were really fast, somehow it gave people the impression that it was really slow.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

“Great sword art. The Drop Water Sword Spell from the Rudra Martial School lives up to its reputation.” Wang Feng’s voice sounded cold, but they still understood that his admiration for the sword art was genuine.

Yuan Xuemei said humbly: “It is nothing when compared to you guys.”

After they walked for a few miles, the group had finally arrived at the center of the basin.

The density of the Yuan Qi was at least two times thicker than the outer area. A thin layer of Yuan Qi settled everywhere, it seemed to have liquidized into Yuan Qi droplets. Unfortunately, the burst of the Yuan Qi light column had caused turbulence in the natural Yuan Qi. So, the Yuan Qi present there could not be used for cultivation. If the warriors tried to use it by force, it would break down their own Yuan Qi, which would only be detrimental to them. Otherwise, it would have been a perfect place to train.

After she studied the Yuan Qi light column, Yuan Xuemei shook her head, “It turns out to be a fake spirit fountain!”

“Fake spirit fountain? How do you know?” Ye Chen did not understand.

Wang Feng who would not generally speak much, said, “A fake spirit fountain means it is a spirit fountain that hasn’t completely formed yet, and there are no soul stones in it. Even if there are any, there would not be many, and the quality of the soul stones would not be that good either. However, for some of the small or mid level families, this would already be a great benefit. As for the method to distinguish them, it is very simple, all you have to do is to check the color in the middle. If the color was white with a hint of yellow, then it means it is a small spirit fountain; if it is white with a bit of orange, then it would be a middle spirit fountain; white with red, then it would be a large one. Legend says, there is also a white with purple colored top notch spirit fountain, but I don’t know if it is true or not.”

Yuan Xuemei who had travelled a lot, said, “I have indeed heard of the top spirit fountain, three hundred years ago, the Illusion King had found half of a top spirit fountain in the deepest part of an ocean, it was three hundred miles long, and fifty miles wide. The Illusion King brought it out of the ocean by force and brought it back home with him. It filled the whole mountain he was living with Yuan Qi. One could train at least a hundred times faster than normal in that place.”

Three hundred years! Brought out a whole spirit fountain full of Yuan Qi by force!!

Ye Chen could not help but secretly be shocked. Although he knew that a strong warrior who went through the challenges of life and death would be able to reverse their destiny and live for thousands of years, and all of those warriors were supposed to be unbelievably powerful. But, now that someone had voiced out those legendary tales, he was quite shocked. Ye Chen was still a little embarrassed by his lack of imagination.

The Yuan Qi light column continued for another fifteen minutes, then it started to weaken. Huge amounts of Yuan Qi spread out in every direction like a fountain, it nourished all the plants it touched.

Seeing this, everyone finally understood why the plants in this basin grew so fast and well. It was probably because of such regular bursts of the spirit fountain.

Lin Xiaoxue saw that the medicinal plants in the center of the basin were more valuable. She could not help but get excited. She told the members of her herb collecting team, “Now! Hurry! Let’s go harvest! And all the guards too, join if you could. But, everyone, please be careful!”

“Yes!”

Long before Lin Xiaoxue said this, all the members of the collecting team were already excited. They had never seen such large quantities of medicinal plant in their whole lives. They were extremely well grown and were very thick.

Ye Chen smiled. Even he was tempted seeing the amount of herbal plants present there. However, he felt that a true gentleman would not break his word. Since he had taken this mission, he should not do anything that he was not instructed to. But, there were so many plants here, it would not really make a difference even if he took some.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

Out of nowhere, three men completely covered in black appeared outside of the basin.

“The Yuan Qi light column has weakened. Let’s go check it out!”

“Wait, there are a lot of footsteps here. There must be a lot of people there.” One of them studied the surroundings, and stopped his companions from doing something reckless.

Another one of them, who seemed to have a short temper, kicked away a frightened black haired pig and said furiously, “Fuck! Who the heck are these people that dared to go there before us?”

“It should be one of the herb collecting teams from the nearby towns. See? All the herbs have been collected, and the process was also very efficient, it must have been done by professionals.”

“Herb collecting team... there shouldn't be any powerful warriors with them. So there is no reason for us to get worried.”

The three chatted for a while, and then they started to walk towards the deeper parts of the basin while following the tracks. They were neither fast nor slow, they maintained a constant speed, and moved noiselessly.

Soon, the view in front of them widened, the three of them had arrived at the center of the basin.

“It is indeed a herb collecting team. Did they not see the Yuan Qi light column? That's not possible, it could even be seen from a few miles away.”

“Maybe it is a fake spirit fountain? Fuck, what a waste of our trip.”

“Why would you think this is a waste of a trip? Didn't you see that girl over there? She looks pretty good. We had spent so many years in that Ghost Corpse Mountain, without even seeing a woman. Now that we have finally become low rank ghost guard and were allowed to leave the mountain. Why not make use of this great opportunity?”

“Hehe!”

The three exchanged a look, while a nasty expression appeared on each of their faces.

Shoo!

All of a sudden, a Qi sword attacked them from a hundred steps away. It was so fast that they were almost unable to avoid it.

“Go Die!” The man in black with a short temper did not back out, he threw out a palm attack to meet that Qi sword.

Pow!

The Qi sword exploded, and the noise alerted all the people that were close.

“You three gentlemen, this is not a place you should be in. Please leave at once.” Ye Chen, Yuan Xuemei and Wang Feng walked over, as they glared at the three men in black seriously.

The three men were very good at hiding their tracks, but how could they hide from Ye Chen’s extremely powerful soul force? Ye Chen discovered them the moment they set foot in the center of the basin.

## Chapter 78 – Ghost Corpse Zhen Qi

The one who was standing in the front had a dry and skinny face, his eyes were long and slender. One could clearly see his viciousness in those eyes. He laughed and said, “It’s always other people that choose to avoid us, we never had to avoid anyone. Little brat, judging from your clothes, you must be a martial disciple. Leave your storage ring, and break one of your arms, then I will let you live.”

“Were you the one that attacked me earlier? If you break one of your arms, I will not kill you, but you would have to leave that girl here. A female Condensing Reality Realm warrior must be really great to play with!”

The man in black that was quite fat said this, while there was a disgusting expression on his face.

“Maybe my junior disciples’ words weren’t clear enough, but try and understand that this is your only way out. Otherwise, you will all be dead.” The man in black, who seemed to be the most calmest one said.

On the other side, Lin Xiaoxue and the others all stopped what they were doing, they turned extremely pale on seeing those three. ‘Where did these three come from? They do not look like living people. What’s that extremely horrifying and evil aura they have? It’s almost like they’re demons.’

“Miss, they are not friendly people. I am afraid to say this, but this time we might have fallen in great danger.” The captain of the guarding team was also a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, so his vision was ten times better than Lin Xiaoxue’s. He was able to tell that those three men had better cultivation levels than him, especially that man who appeared to be extremely calm, he seemed to



be at the Late Condensing Reality Realm. He was emitting an extremely evil and deadly aura.

Lin Xiaoxue raised her hand, and said, “We shall wait and see.”

There were six Condensing Reality Realm warriors in the guarding team. If the five marital disciples were included, there were eleven Condensing Reality Realm warriors in total. Among them, the captain and the second-in-command were all at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm. Wang Feng, Yuan Xuemei and the other two martial disciples were also at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm level, which meant that they had four Mid Condensing Reality Realm warriors on their side. The advantage of numbers was on their side. If those three martial disciples could not deal with them by themselves, then they would all have to go against them together, and would have to fight them with numbers.

“Hahahaha...”

Wang Feng who had been quiet this entire time, suddenly started laughing, “Interesting, interesting. I had never seen anyone this arrogant before. Ye Chen, Yuan Xuemei, you guys pick one opponent each! But, give me the strongest one. I want to see if he has the ability to back his words.”

Ye Chen smiled: “Alright, I pick the one that looks like dried wood.”

“Then I will take the other one. Since he wants to play with women, I would like to show him how terrifying a women could be.” Yuan Xuemei did not look any different, but there was an undeniable hint of anger in her calm voice.

“People always say that the martial disciples are all extremely arrogant. Today I

met not one, but three of such arrogant disciples, seems like the rumors were indeed true. Kill them!” The man with the hideous face jumped, and threw out a punch. It was aimed at all three of them at the same time, and was extremely powerful.

“Your opponent is me.”

Yuan Xuemei slightly shook her hand, a thin sword appeared in her hand and sent out exceptional sword light, that clashed with the incoming punch.

Boom! Boom! Boom!...

The explosion continued to grow louder and louder. Soon, the two took their fight somewhere else.

Chin!

As he took his sabre out of its scabbard, Wang Feng’s eyes were focused on the leading man in black.

“Die!”

The sabre light was as white as snow, its power brought up a strong wind in its surroundings.

The wind and the “snow” combined together, blurring people’s vision.

As soon as the battle began, Wang Feng had already used the North Snow Martial Academy's exclusive martial art – Snow Storm sabre Art. Compared to Ye Tang, his Snow Storm sabre Art was way more cold and brutal. Once he started using it, everything in his surroundings seemed to have disappeared, only leaving that snow like sabre light that kept growing.

“Corpse King Fist! Break!”

Their leader was expressionless. Facing the incoming sabre light, he decided to throw out a punch and face it head-on.

All of the sabre light was shattered, and the snow storm completely disappeared.

The leader was neither happy nor mad, he threw out another punch.

“Great timing! Proud Snow Sharp Frost Art!”

Wang Feng held his sabre firmly, and waved it in a slightly tilted manner. An ice cold sabre light formed on the tip of his sabre. Along with its ice cold feeling, it fiercely sliced through the air.

The white light flashed through the sky, but still failed to hit its target. Their leader's right hand rested on the back of Wang Feng's sabre, while his left hand formed a fist and headed towards Wang Feng.

Boom!

Wang Feng who had decided to take the man's punch head-on had to back out ten steps to stabilize himself. He seemed to be having a tough time handling him.

Ye Chen frowned. 'This leader is quite tricky to handle! However, as one of the top inner disciple of the North Snow Martial Academy, he must have some cards up his sleeve that he was saving for such situations. So, the winner can not be determined yet.'

"Little brat, being distracted is the dumbest thing you can do in a battle! So die!" The evil man's body shifted, and turned into few beams of black light and rapidly attacked Ye Chen from various directions.

"Ten Flash Ghost Shadow!"

The black light spread out, and then its speed increased. There were eight figures of the evil man, all of a sudden. It was extremely frightening. Any ordinary person that walked past would have fainted upon witnessing it.

An unnoticeably high pitched sound was directed towards Ye Chen's ears. But, he was not too surprised with it. His body slightly leaned back, and then he completely disappeared.

Crack!

The ground was filled with scratch marks. The man fighting with Ye Chen looked surprised, his Ten Flash Ghost Shadows were aimed at Ye Chen from all directions. Even a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior would be confused by them, and would have become an easy target waiting to be killed. He had never encountered a Condensing Reality Realm warrior with a movement art better

than his own.

‘Is this for real!’

The man fighting against Ye Chen understood that it would be quite tough to handle Ye Chen. He performed the Ten Flash Ghost Shadows once again. However, unlike the previous time, this time, the black light consisted of a light grey colored layer of Qi. Everywhere it went, all the flowers and plants were instantly killed, the floor was cracked open, and a slightly foul smell spread out.

The surface of his Zhen Qi defense showed signs of corrosion. Ye Chen did not dare to take any risks, he activated his Pure Jun Zhen Qi and used it to protect himself. Countless sharp Qi swords were formed from the Pure Jun Zhen Qi and melted all the greyish white Zhen Qi that was approaching him.

“Break!” All the black light was combined. The evil man appeared behind Ye Chen, while his right hand covered in the greyish white Qi reached towards Ye Chen.

The next second!

A huge sound of explosion was heard by everyone that was present. Ye Chen’s defensive Qi layer was brutally cracked open. It now consisted of a huge hole, and Ye Chen himself was almost injured. Of course, the man in black was not having it easy either. The surface of his palm was stabbed many times by Ye Chen’s Qi light, his blood kept pouring out from those tiny wounds. It looked as if he had been stung by too many bees.

“AHHH!” The man in black was furious. While his fellow brothers seemed to have an easy time, he was the only one facing a very tricky opponent, who was only at the Early Condensing Reality Realm.

Without touching the ground, Ye Chen landed on a plant as if he was weightless, “Zhen Qi with corrosive effects... You guys are some awful men, aren’t you?”

“How dare you? You haven’t even seen the Ghost Corpse Zhen Qi’s true power yet. Once you witness it, You are a dead man, then I will kill you and claim your corpse!”

The evil man in black threw out another palm attack, a huge wave of white grey Qi suddenly appeared and continuously attacked Ye Chen like the waves of an ocean.

The ground was burnt and cracked open, all the medicinal plants were burnt to ashes. Everywhere the white grey Qi passed, there was only death in its wake.

Ye Chen sneered, “You really think I cannot kill you?”

He accumulated all his Zhen Qi. Ye Chen’s power kept increasing, and eventually his body started to float in the air, it rose above the Red Blood Forest. Meanwhile, he slowly threw out a punch as if he was pulling ten strong horses at the same time even though it was extremely tiring.

“Tyrant Fist. First movement: Tyrant’s ways!”

As soon as he decided to finish this as quick as possible, Ye Chen stopped hiding his true strength. He performed the low rank Earth Realm fist art that he had mastered recently – Tyrant Fist.

## Chapter 79 – Vacuum Killing Blade

Chin!

As Ye Chen threw out the punch, the surrounding air was being compressed. The friction between the fist and the surrounding air made an unbearably high pitched noise.

The incoming Ghost Corpse Zhen Qi tried to fight against it, but failed. It was instead sent backwards at an even faster speed. The Ghost Corpse Zhen Qi was completely restrained by the power of the tyrant fist. It was shrunk from its initial few meters size to a mere half meter width. It was just like a white light column tinged with grey.

“How could this happen? He was able to absorb and combine my Ghost Corpse Zhen Qi with his fist force?”

The evil man’s eyes were wide open, as if they were about to pop out of his head. They were full of shock and desperation. Leaving him no time to react, the beam of light passed right through his body.

His body was cut in half and then it went up in flames. Eventually there was nothing but ashes left.

“Brother Tian!” The man in black who was fighting against Wang Feng could not believe his eyes. Although his fellow disciple Tian was not as powerful as him, he was still undeniably strong. Even he would have needed to use hundreds of moves, if he wanted to win against him. Although there were many Condensing Reality Realm warriors at the Ghost Corpse Mountain, only the most talented

disciples could become low ranked ghost guards. They were then allowed to travel around the world to gain experience. He thought that with their strength, they could easily compete with the martial disciples and could kill them whenever they wanted.

But, the reality slapped him in his face.

He was completely shocked.

Wang Feng had no advantage in his battle so far. Right then, seeing that his opponent was distracted, he knew that this was a great opportunity for him. So, he attacked with his sabre without hesitation, as it brought up extremely fierce winds along with it.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The man in black who seemed to be the leader was a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior. Once he sensed that he was being attacked was, he activated the Zhen Qi in his body and brought out a greyish white colored halo. The halo blocked the strike from the ice cold sabre.

“Corpse King Fist! Die!” His eyes were bloodshot, as he threw out a punch at the incoming attack.

Wang Feng had already seen the Corpse King Fist. It was extremely powerful with the effect of corrosion and could even melt any Zhen Qi. So, he did not dare to face it head-on. His foot touched the ground and he started to fly backwards. During this entire time, the Colorful Snow Sabre in his hand did not stop at all. He sent out thirteen sabre lights, all at once.



The man in black did not care about Wang Feng's reaction. He bent over, and punched the ground.

“Deadly Locust Wave!”

The whole ground within thirty miles' radius started to shake. All the loose rocks on the ground were being tossed in the air as if they were alive. The next second, a two-meter-long greyish white colored Qi completely enveloped Wang Feng.

Ye Chen frowned, and was just about to step in and help.

However, it turned out to be unnecessary. Wang Feng who was holding his Colorful Snow Sabre sliced open the Qi encasing him, and stepped out of it. He sent out a sabre attack, then a second one, a third one, fourth one...

He sent out thirty-eight sabre attacks in a row. They combined with each other and formed a huge sabre Qi that was almost like a black hole. It sucked all the air in the surroundings, and created a vacuum space with no obstructions, increasing his slicing speed by more than three times. They all attacked the place the man in black was standing.

Crack!

The ground was sliced open. It left a deep mark, all the plants and flowers around it had fallen into the huge crack.

Ye Chen looked very serious. ‘What a scary attack’. Under this kind of attack, even the peak of third stage of his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell could not handle it. Only if he managed to enter the fourth stage, then he might have a chance to block it head-on. Otherwise, all he could do was evade it.

The inner disciples from the North Snow Martial Academy were definitely not easy targets. Their individual battle prowess was as good as people from the Emerald Martial Palace. In a way, they might even be stronger.

The man in black had completely disappeared from this world. There was nothing left behind, not even bones or ashes. The sabre Qi Wang Feng had created was way too fast and way too powerful, while his opponent’s speed was even worse than that of the man Ye Chen had just killed.

Gag!

As he spit out a mouthful of blood, Wang Feng’s face turned pale, and he was forced to drop one of his knees to the ground.

Stopping Ye Chen from coming to help him, Wang Feng said: “I am fine, it is just due to executing the Vacuum Killing Blade by force, it caused my Qi and blood to flow backwards. You go check on Yuan Xuemei!”

Vacuum Killing Blade!

What a suitable name!

Ye Chen nodded, and started to walk towards the other battle.

“Spring Rain!”

Beyond the well-grown bushes, Yuan Xuemei’s feet were not touching the ground. She was floating in the air as if she was weightless. The thin silver sword in her hand shook extremely fast. It was so fast that it was almost impossible for human eyes to capture. You could only see the beams of sword light it shot out. They were almost as numerous as raindrops.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The grass under that evil man’s feet had already been destroyed, it almost looked like it had been attacked by locusts. He was being forced to use a defensive art to protect himself from the rain like sword light.

“Summer Rain!”

After seeing that the man in black was able to block the first wave of sword light, Yuan Xuemei looked undisturbed. But her sword movements completely changed. The initial smooth and gentle strikes turned extremely rough and brutal now.

“No way! How could I be restrained?!” Facing the endless sword light, he was the one extremely clear about the power of the sword light. If the previous attacks were like the spring rain, then the attacks now were like summer rain, as they heavily poured down, they washed away his defense, layer after layer.

“Autumn Thunder!”

Leaving the man in black no time to fight back, Yuan Xuemei changed her sword movements once again. This time, her sword light contained the power of thunder, just like the rain in the autumn.

Cha!

The defensive layer was completely cracked open, the man in black yelled with great horror, "I give up! I will leave right now! Don't kill me! Please don't kill me!"

Ye Chen shook his head. Compared to the previous two, the man in black who looked the most fearsome and was full of murderous aura, turned out to be the most cowardly and vulnerable of them all. It was completely unlike how he portrayed himself. However, this had also displayed the complexity of human emotions. One's mentality can't be simply judged from their appearance. There were people who looked bright on the outside, but were extremely evil on the inside. There were some quiet and polite scholars who in reality were creepy and messed up in their heads. There were also people with great sense of justice, but do the most unethical things.

Yuan Xuemei had already decided to kill him. There was no reason for her not to. So, once again, the sword movements became faster, the mad thunder sword light buried the man in black completely.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

There were more and more holes appearing in his defense. Eventually, his defensive Zhen Qi was unable to handle the attacks anymore and broke down completely. The instant he lost his protection, he was shot through, and lost his life.

“Phew!”

As she let out a breath of air, Yuan Xuemei lowered her body, and once again her foot touched the ground. Her forehead was covered in shining beads of sweat.

Ye Chen smiled, “The Four Seasons Sword Art from the Rudra Martial School is indeed incredible. It’s too bad that I was unable to witness the most powerful winter sword art.”

“The Four Season Sword Art is an Earth Realm sword art, how could I get a chance to learn it? That was only the Four Season – Rain Sword Art. Compared to the real Four Seasons Sword Art, it is nothing. However, the fist art that Brother Ye had just used was really amazing! You could even absorb your opponent’s Qi and make use of it to attack, enabling you to take them down in a single move.”

Yuan Xuemei looked at Ye Chen with a smile.

Ye Chen shook his head and forced a smile. Trying to win with words against Yuan Xuemei was almost impossible.

On the Lin family side, everyone let out a huge sigh. All their palms were full of sweat. They had already prepared themselves to join the battle and face their death if needed. However, the martial disciples had lived up to their expectations and reputation. Although they looked like they were about to lose the battle, at the critical moment, they used extremely powerful martial arts, and ended up killing the three men in black. When they thought about their own strength, they knew that they didn’t even have the right to compare themselves with the martial disciples.

---

TL Notes :

Blade and Sabre denote the same weapon. So, they might've been used accordingly in the previous chapters..

## Chapter 80 – The Best among the Younger Generation

“Okay, everyone, let’s get back to our mission! We are running out of time, we have to get back before the sunset.” Lin Xiaoxu said, as she brushed the hair over her forehead and tucked it behind her ears.

“You are right, miss. I would never want to spend a night in the Red Blood Forest, I am afraid that I wouldn’t live to see the sunrise.”

“Indeed. The nights in the Red Blood Forest are ten times scarier than the day.”

“Come on, everyone, let’s hurry up.”

At the idea of spending the night in the Red Blood Forest, everyone’s faces completely turned pale. Even the six Condensing Reality Realm warriors in the guarding team were scared.

Leaving the Lin family guards and Lin Xiaoxue to their matters, Yuan Xuemei said to Ye Chen, “On our way back, we will have to depend on you, Brother Ye. Earlier, I had to use spring, summer and autumn sword arts. This had severely affected my meridians, I could only use seventy percent of my power now.”

Then, she glanced at Wang Feng who was sitting to the side, recovering his Zhen Qi, and said, “Wang Feng’s Vacuum Killing Blade was even more powerful and brutal. He was probably affected worse than me.”

Ye Chen nodded: “It’s okay, I got this.”

The first movement of the Tyrant Fist was not any worse than the Vacuum Killing Blade, it also had the same amount of strain on his meridians. It was just that Ye Chen's physical body was extremely strong. His strength had already reached fifteen thousand pounds. It could already be considered close to the human limit. From now on, increasing his strength by even a single pound would be extremely hard, unless he was able to improve his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell once again, and managed to reach the fourth or the fifth stage.

Those men in black robes were not carrying any storage rings. But, Ye Chen did not mind this too much.

Ye Chen found a clean place and sat down; he took out some low rank soul stones and started to recover the Zhen Qi that he had used up.

Time passed rapidly, and the sun started to go down.

Although there were a lot more herbs to collect, Lin Xiaoxue still decided that it was time for them to leave the Red Blood Forest.

It was not an easy trip back, but the number of demonic beasts they encountered was definitely lower than they had to face on their way in. Maybe during the night, the true horrors of the Red Blood Forest would probably reveal themselves.

By the time the group left the forest, the night had arrived. A half moon was present in the sky and the world had gone completely quiet.

Woo...woo...woo...



The group could vaguely hear a woman's crying voice from the deepest parts of the forest. They suddenly felt a chill go down their spine.

"Luckily we got out early! This Red Blood Forest is way too scary, no one had ever gone to the deepest part of the forest. I heard a few rumours that there are a lot of demonic beasts that appear during the night." The captain of the guarding team wiped the sweat off his forehead, as he said in an anxious tone.

The others also agreed with him.

Once they were out of the forest, the rest of their journey back home was easy. The group arrived at the crowded Black Stone Town, in less than an hour.

Ye Chen, Yuan Xuemei and Wang Feng stayed with the Lin family for the night. They left the Lin family house the next morning and went their separate ways.

...

Time passed by fleetingly for a warrior.

One month passed.

During this month, Ye Chen continued spending his days just like any other inner disciple. He would train for two days and would go on a mission for the next three days. He would spend the rest of the week on the road. This had become his routine.

Even though It looked like a boring way to spend his time, it was not. Ye Chen was able to learn more about the customs and cultures of all the places he visited. There were all kinds of missions. All the missions were not about killing people, sometimes there were even missions to deliver packages. One week ago, Ye Chen had delivered a letter to the a high-ranked general of the Windy Nation – Lin Zhenghao, who had given him a military bow as a reward. The arrows shot by that bow could even break through a normal Condensing Reality Realm warrior’s defensive Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen had just returned after finishing a one-star grey rank mission.

On the way up the mountain, some of the inner disciples who had also just come back from their missions did not rush to get back and report to the Floating Cloud Palace. Instead, they continued walking leisurely. They seemed to be talking about something.

“Did you know? Something big happened in the Emerald Martial Palace!”

“What could happen to the Emerald Martial Palace? Don’t tell me they had also been exterminated like the Evil Earth Martial School? It can’t be. Each of the top five martial institutions have some old ancestors holding down the fort. Even if it was those powerful warriors who had killed everyone from the Evil Earth Martial School, they would not dare to attack recklessly.”

“No, it’s not that. It is something concerning the younger generation!”

“Brother Fang, stop taking your time, and just tell us.”

“Young master Emerald had reached the Claspng Yuan Realm!” Although the

speaker's voice was not loud, all the inner disciples around him heard it loud and clear.

“What?”

“Young master Emerald had become a Claspng Yuan Realm warrior? Really? The first challenge for a warrior is to breakthrough the Condensing Reality Realm to the Claspng Yuan Realm. If it is not an extremely talented genius, it would take at least three to five years. Without talent, it is not uncommon for warriors to be stuck at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm.”

“That's right. Young master Emerald had reached the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm just a year ago. How could he have a breakthrough already?! Doesn't this make him the best among the younger generation? This also means that Young master Duanmu and Young master North Snow had been completely beaten.”

That inner disciple who was called “Brother Fang” said, “My mission was close to the Emerald Martial Palace, I heard about this news by chance. They said that the leader of the Emerald Martial Palace, Zhuang Qingxian, would come out of his closed door training to celebrate this occasion on the ninth of July. They had also invited all the other martial institutions.”

“Oh wow, seems like it is true. Young master Emerald is indeed talented. Few years ago, there were three other Young masters competing with him. Too bad, our second senior brother could not live up to the expectations, and had been surpassed by the other three. Now, only Young master North Snow and Young master Duanmu can compete with him.”

Hearing the news, Ye Chen was also very surprised.

Although there was only a small gap between the peak of the Late Condensing Reality Realm and the Clasp of Yuan Realm, it was almost impossible to have a breakthrough, unless you were extremely talented and determined. But once a warrior managed to reach the Clasp of Yuan Realm, he would even be able to fly, just like the birds in the sky. If they had huge reserves of Zhen Qi, even ten thousand miles would only be a day's trip. They could unleash massive amounts of power with only the tiniest movements; they would be able to kill a Condensing Reality Realm warrior as effortlessly as killing a chicken.

In other words, if Young master Emerald wanted to kill Young master Duanmu and Young master North Snow, it would only take him a couple of movements. And if he wanted to kill Young master Hanshan from the Sky Cloud Martial School, he could do it in a second.

He had become the best among the younger generation of the Windy Nation, and no one could compete with him.

That disciple continued talking, "Besides this, there is also a new core disciple in the Emerald Martial Palace. I heard that it is someone named Ji Xueyan. This girl is extremely talented, she reached the Late Condensing Reality Realm at the age of sixteen. She mastered a low rank Earth Realm martial art, and manage to beat a lot of the core disciples and became one of the top core disciples. Some even named her as one of the new top four disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace, along with Young master Emerald, 'Broken Palm' Liu Wuxiang and 'Stone man' Shi Potian."

"Ji Xueyan? Isn't she a member of the Ji family? I know about her, she has a great movement art."

Ji Xueyan!

Hearing them, Ye Chen looked the same on the outside. However, he felt great pressure. Right now, he was still only an Early Condensing Reality realm warrior. Although he could beat someone with a higher cultivation level than his own, he was not confident that he could take on a challenge from a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior. He knew that if he ever encountered a Late Condensing Reality Realm genius, then he would not have a chance.

I have to break through!

Ye Chen made up his mind, and increased his walking speed.

## Chapter 81 – Breakthrough

The so-called peak of Early realm, peak of Mid realm actually only meant that the warrior was stuck at a critical stage of his cultivation and was unable to have a breakthrough.

After ten days of severe training, Ye Chen had finally managed to reach the peak of Early Condensing Reality Realm, and was only a little step away from Mid Condensing Reality Realm. However, he did not want to stop at this stage. He knew that once he relaxed, even for a little while, he might lose his drive and would probably have to waste another month or two stuck there. That was something he could not afford to do.

So, he decided to try and reach Mid Condensing Reality Realm in full force.

Ignoring the pain in his meridians, Ye Chen fully activated his Pure Jun Zhen Qi, and forced all his Zhen Qi to complete the whole circulation. He also had a low rank soul stone in each of his hands, so that when he ran out of Zhen Qi, he could absorb the Yuan Qi from the soul stones and continue with his training.

The endless dark night was filled with stars, a bright moon was hanging in the sky, and looked extremely clear.

There was a light breeze in the air, that gently blew the leaves of the trees.

There was only silence at that moment.

All of a sudden, with the yard as the center, in a three hundred meter radius,

all the Yuan Qi in the surroundings started to move towards it. Gradually, the thickness of the Yuan Qi in the whole yard, started to decrease.

Whoo! Whoo! Whoo!...

The sudden change in the density of Yuan Qi caused disturbance in the flow of Qi in the surroundings. The mild breeze turned into a huge storm in a second, and even blew away the sand and rocks on the floor.

“Eh? Is someone trying to breakthrough?”

As soon as he became an inner disciple, Ye Chen had moved to a compound in the middle of the mountain that was specially allotted to the inner disciples. He was surrounded by other inner disciples with the same cultivation level. With only a fifteen meter gap from the next house, it was not surprising that other people noticed the changes in the density of Yuan Qi.

The density of Yuan Qi in their surroundings continued to decrease, as all the Yuan Qi headed towards Ye Chen's room. Even the roof of his house was broken down, as Yuan Qi forced its way through.

Ye Chen was on his bed, the color of his face switched between red and being pale continuously. Around him, in a one metre radius, there was extremely sharp Qi. It sometimes even knocked over the furniture in his surroundings.

‘The result of my hard work for the past few days will depend on this moment! Break!’

Ye Chen's face suddenly turned extremely painful, he ignored the pain due to

his unstable Zhen Qi, and absorbed a huge amount of natural Yuan Qi into his body, just like a snake swallowing a huge elephant.

Pop!

Almost at the same time, a spherical wave of transparent Qi spread out, breaking all the furniture and windows. It even left some huge cracks on the surrounding walls.

As he let out the rest of the natural Yuan Qi, Ye Chen's pain decreased a lot, and he sensed that the Zhen Qi in his Dantian seemed to have become stronger.

And this was the key moment which required perseverance and talent. People who did not have enough perseverance might have lost it by now and would be stuck at the peak of early Condensing Reality Realm; As for the people who did not have enough talent, they would be restrained by their own limits, no matter how hard they tried, they could not get any further than that.

Ye Chen had both perseverance, and talent.

All he needed now was to make the final leap.

Zhen Qi full circulation one hundred and eighty times!

Two hundred twenty times!

Two hundred fifty times!



Ye Chen had already gone beyond his own limits, he had already done two hundred and fifty full circulations; that was ten circulations more than his personal best.

But, he did not stop there. Ye Chen started to push his extremely powerful soul force, while he tried his best to control his Zhen Qi, so that it would not continue to be violent, which might even ruin the whole process. He then increased the speed of the circulations.

When he completed circulating two hundred and eighty times, the natural Yuan Qi inside his body was completely combined with his own Zhen Qi. It rushed back to his Dantian, just like little rivers rushing back to the ocean. It continued flowing with his old Zhen Qi.

Pop! Pop! Pop!

The Zhen Qi tornado in his dantian expanded by three times, and then eventually started to stabilize.

Only then did Ye Chen finally open his eyes. Suddenly, there was a bright light that appeared in the room, it was followed by lightning that flashed past his eyes. Now, he could finally manage to create lightning from nothing.

“I have finally reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm in ten days. I shall keep up the hard work and push all the way to the Peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm. It would definitely be full of difficulties, but I shall not give up!” Ye Chen slowly let out a breath of air, as a smile appeared on his face.

Being able to reach the Mid Condensing Reality Realm was not a simple

breakthrough for Ye Chen. He was able to beat Wang Kunyang, who was at the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm, when he was only at Early Condensing Reality Realm. Now that he had reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, he would not have to be afraid even if that Blood Craving Monster came looking for trouble. He had enough confidence to beat him. Of course, he would still have to be careful with those core disciples from all the martial institutions. Only the best of the best would be able to become core disciples. Some of them even mastered low rank Earth Realm Martial skills and arts. This made them extremely powerful. Ye Chen knew that he could not compete with them as he was now. But, even if he could not beat them, Ye Chen was confident that he could escape from them without being injured.

“Give me a little more time. When I am reach the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm, I would be able to compete even with the core disciples.” Ye Chen told himself.

...

The news of Young master Emerald reaching the Claspig Yuan Realm was heard by practically everyone in the Sky Cloud Martial School. They would chat about it whenever they had some time.

People might have been interested about it only for the gossip, but for Zhu Mei and Young master Hanshan, it was pure pressure, heavy enough to suffocate or even completely crush them.

No one with their strength would be happy about falling behind, as all they did was train everyday and dream about the day when they could manage to reach the top.

Right now, Young master Emerald had reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm earlier than them, which only meant that they had been beaten in a way.

And he would be considered the no.1 among the younger generation.

That kind of glory was what they had been dreaming about.

However, all this did not concern Ye Chen. Currently, he was gladly receiving his good friend Wu Zongming.

Wu Zongming rarely came to visit Ye Chen, so when he saw Ye Chen after a long time, he could not help but gasp. He asked with a hint of surprise, "You have reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm?"

Ye Chen said, "I just did, my Zhen Qi hasn't stabilized yet."

"I have to say, I really admire you. One year ago, you were only at the 6th level of the Mortal Realm, and now you are way beyond me and Zhang Haoran."

Even though Zhang Haoran was really talented, he had still not reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm. He was only at the peak of Early Condensing Reality Realm, Ye Chen already knew this.

"Oh! You probably already know that Young master Emerald had reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, right? Damn, the top four Young masters of the Windy Nation, huh? He was already fighting with the other three for the top spot last year, and now, he is the first one to breakthrough." Wu Zongming said with some dissatisfaction.

As he poured some tea for Wu Zongming, Ye Chen replied, "If the rest of them turn this pressure into passion, then it would not be impossible for them to catch up with Young master Emerald."

"Yah, but it would be hard!" Wu Zongming shook his head, he took a sip of the tea to cover his forced smile, "All these issues are still a long way away for us. There's no point in talking about them now. The reason I came here this time, was to ask you to come with me to the North-West Auction Plaza!"

Ye Chen asked in surprise, "One of the top five auction plazas of the Windy Nation?"

Wu Zongming nodded, "Yes, that is the one. The North-West Auction Plaza has been in the Happy Town for a hundred years now. It has longer history than some of the martial institutions. And as one of the top five auction plazas, they have the most valuable items. They also have some items that would benefit us warriors greatly."

"You probably heard about something, right?" Ye Chen asked.

"Hehe, every six months, the North-West Auction plaza would hold a small auction, and a big one, once every three years. Although this time it's only a small auction, there would be a lot of valuable stuff. I heard that three Zhen Qi Stabilizing pellets will be auctioned off this time."

Hearing him, Ye Chen got interested. The Zhen Qi Stabilizing pellet was a really rare pellet. It would increase the user's chances to breakthrough by fifty percent. It could be considered a better version of the Condensing Reality pellet. Currently, Ye Chen was doing everything he could to get stronger. So, the

auction sounded like a great idea to him. He felt that he might even find something else interesting in the market.

“Alright, I will go.”

Ye Chen agreed to go with Wu Zongming.

## Chapter 82 – Happy Town

The inner disciples must complete at least one mission per month. Even the core disciples had to do the same, unless they had approval from the authorities.

Fortunately, Ye Chen and Wu Zongming had each already finished more than one mission this month, so they did not have to worry about running out of time, they could even stay outside until next month.

The second day.

At the bottom of the mountain, the two of them jumped on their dark brown horses, and started traveling towards north-west.

Between the Sky Cloud Martial School and the Happy Town, there was a distance of twenty-eight thousand miles. The two of them would have to travel through four different cities, two mountain ranges and a huge basin. In fact the cities were not dangerous at all, they could even dine and get some refreshments there. But, the mountains and the basin were not safe places, there were dangerous demonic beasts, robbers and mercenaries residing in the darkest corners of these places. If they were not powerful enough, they would become the targets of all these people and demonic beasts, and it would be very unlikely for them to survive.

...

The sky was a shade of bright blue, with only a few white clouds floating around.

In the north-west basin, one could smell the stench of blood in the cool breeze.

“Haha, these thieves must have mistaken us with some weak travelers.” Wu Zongming said as he wiped the blood off his sabre with a black cloth, and laughed.

Sitting on the horse, Ye Chen looked at all the bodies of the thieves on the ground. Among the ten horse thieves, some were cut in half, while the rest of them had been decapitated. Their blood colored the grass red.

“We were only two people, and we even had the dark brown horses. They probably could not handle the temptation.”

“Yah, when they learned that we are from the Sky Cloud Martial School, one of them tried to escape. I guess these guys are frightened of martial disciples like us. However, this could not be said about those mercenaries. In fact, they might even target us more.”

Ye Chen nodded. Although the number of mercenaries out there was less than the horse thieves, every single one of them was extremely powerful. They could even compete with the martial disciples. Some of the lucky ones might have gotten some valuable martial manuals from their dead mentors, so they would not be lacking decent martial arts; and given their experience with fighting and traveling, they would actually be extremely strong.

They had already encountered a Mid Condensing Reality Realm mercenary earlier on, who had managed to push Wu Zongming off his horse with a single move. If he was allowed a second attack, Wu Zongming would have definitely been killed on the spot. Luckily Ye Chen was able to reach the man and killed

him, saving Wu Zongming.

“I heard that the Happy Town is the biggest town in the north-west. It is fifty miles large, with a population over ten thousand people. I wonder what it is like.” Getting back on the horse, Wu Zongming said as he looked into the distance.

Hearing him, Ye Chen thought about the world he was from. In the ancient times, a town with ten thousand people was already considered marvelous, while it was nothing when compared to the whole of True Spirit Continent.

Pulling the reins, the two clenched their legs, and continued with their journey.

In the evening, the sun was slowly going down, as it dyed the sky red.

Following the crowd, the two teenagers arrived at a huge river, beyond which a huge town was present.

The two were indeed Ye Chen and Wu Zongming. They had spent one day and two nights crossing the north-west basin until they finally arrived at their destination – Happy Town.

Behind the crowd, Ye Chen looked up, he saw three gold color characters carved on the gate.

“Happy Town”

Phew!



Ye Chen let out a huge breath of air. Even though he had already mentally prepared himself, he was still quite shocked at the size of the river surrounding the town. It was at least five times larger than Windy City, which was the nearest to the Sky Cloud Martial School. The town gate was thirty-three high, while the town wall was sixty-six metres high, with a large number of soldiers holding longbows guarding it. They continued with their patrols without any expression. But, there was a strong murderous aura surrounding them.

“We are here.” Wu Zongming seemed tired.

“Yah! Let’s go inside.”

Ye Chen saw that they were almost at the front of the line, so he jumped off his horse.

Holding the reins of their horses, the two of them walked up to the gate.

In front of the gate, there were two rows of soldiers in iron armor standing guard. Each one of them was extremely fit. Ye Chen could sense that they were all at the 6th level of Mortal Realm; and their captain was at the 10th level of Mortal Realm, really close to the Condensing Reality Realm.

“One silver per person. If you try to sneak in, be careful of my blade.” The captain of the guards was not in charge of the payment; he was only observing the people that walked past him.

Wu Zongming complained: “One silver? That is quite expensive. In Windy City, it is only fifty bronze coins.”

Ye Chen laughed, "You care about this amount of money?"

"Of course I don't, but it just seems like a little too much."

"The Happy Town is the no.1 town in the north-west, it might be good to charge a bit more. Otherwise, the town would be completely crowded." Regarding such issues, Ye Chen always thought a little bit more than other people.

"I guess that makes sense."

After paying their entry fee, they entered the town without any hassles.

The Happy Town was indeed the largest town in the north-west. Once they entered, they were completely shocked. In front of them was a street that was so wide that even ten horses could run on it freely. The shops on each side of the road were extremely luxurious, they almost looked like they were decorated with pure gold. In the distance, there were a lot of high buildings. Just like Luo city, the Happy Town also had a high tower, which was located in the center of the city.

"Marvelous." Ye Chen shook his head. If Happy Town was full of modern skyscrapers, Ye Chen would probably be less surprised. All these buildings in front of him were built by hand from scratch, without any help from the machines. This luxuriousness was not something the architectures in the modern days could achieve.

...

In the west of the town.

The Western Restaurant!

In a private dining room.

Ye Chen and Wu Zongming had ordered a table full of delicious dishes.

“I cannot believe this restaurant is doing so well that all the tables are full. But the dishes are really good, they certainly are better than the dried food that we had packed. I felt like I was going to get sick from it.” Warriors generally ate a lot. Soon, Wu Zongming had already finished three people’s worth of food.

Outside the private room, the waiter was bringing another dish.

“Sirs, this is on the house, please enjoy.”

The Western Restaurant had sixteen private dining rooms, all labelled with the name of a star sign. Only customers dining in the private rooms would receive such a great dish for free, other people would have to pay for it.

Ye Chen asked, “Excuse me, when is this North West Auction?”

The waiter was a little shocked. Only wealthy people would be able to go to an auction. ‘These two must be from some rich families.’ The waiter suddenly changed his attitude, “Two young masters, there are still two days until the auction. You are welcome to stay here in our hotel until then.”

“Still two more days, I guess we will have to wait! Here is your tip.” Ye Chen threw a silver at the waiter.

“Thank you, young masters. If there is nothing else, I will see myself out now.”

“Go on!”

Right after the waiter had left the room, the two of them heard an angry voice from the outside of the room.

“What?! The private rooms are full? Are you joking? Do you think I, Tang Manlou, should sit with the other low lives?”

“Master Tang, they are really full. Could you please wait for a moment? Some of them are just finishing up.” The waiter seemed terrified.

“Huh, I will give you a cup of tea’s worth of time to clean a room for me. Otherwise, I will make your life miserable.”

## Chapter 83 – Family Backgrounds

The waiter was extremely nervous. Since only rich and powerful people could sit in the private rooms, none of them would be happy if they were asked to leave. However, this master Tang was not someone simple either. He was one of the top eight youngsters of Happy Town. He also belonged to the Tang Family, which was considered to be below only the top eight families.

“Sir, please wait. I will go ask the owner.” The waiter did dare to make a decision on his own; he ran as fast as he could downstairs.

The young man in nice clothes sneered, he said to the beautiful lady right next to him, “I heard that there will be a lot of valuable stuff at the auction. I’m afraid, but a lot of other people had also gotten this information.”

The beautiful girl said, “My second brother disciple Ouyang Ming from the Purple Sun Martial School would be here.”

“Oh, Ouyang Ming would be here...” Tang Manlou’s face changed a little bit. Ouyang Ming, who had the title of “Golden Legs” was one of the top eight youngsters, just like him. However, Ouyang Ming was considered the top of the eight, and no one knew exactly how powerful he was. He was named in the second stage of the younger generation of Windy Nation.

“Besides him, ‘Fast Blade’ Lin Qi from the North Snow Martial Academy is coming too. I heard he is here for a great blade.”

This damaged Tang Manlou’s pride, because compared to the two people she

just mentioned, he was nothing.

Soon after, the owner who was in his sixties ran towards him.

“Ah, isn’t this our master Tang? What brings you here?”

Tang Manlou said impatiently, “Owner, clean up a room for me right now. I will be sure to pay you well for it, so don’t tell me there aren’t any rooms.”

“Easy, I will take care of it for you.”

“Alright.”

Dragging the waiter to the side, the owner asked in a low voice, “Li Lin, tell me about the guests in each room.”

The waiter nodded while lowering his body, and he said without thinking, “The eldest son of the mayor is in Sun room 1, the leader of Luo family is in Sun room 2, in Sun room 3 is...”

“Are you kidding me? Who asked about the sun rooms? Those are for the most important people, we can’t touch those. Tell me about the star rooms.” The owner smacked the head of the waiter, and yelled.

“Yes...Yes, sir!”

The waiter wiped the sweat off his forehead, “There was a middle aged man

sitting in star room 1, he seemed pretty powerful, he should be a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior. In the star room 2 is..., in the morning room 4 are two teenagers. I heard they are here for the auction.”

The owner did not say a word. He felt that all these people were quite powerful. However, the Western restaurant was located in the Happy Town, naturally, they had to please the locals as their priority. Even if those two teenagers in morning room 4 were some rich kids from some big families, it would not affect their business, as they had the Tang family holding down the fort.

“Go remove the guests from morning room 4, ask them to go to the restaurant on next street. As for all the food they had, tell them that it is on the house.” After thinking for a long time, the owner gave his orders.

The waiter was having second thoughts, “But...”

“What but? Go! Should I fire you instead? Don’t you forget, there are plenty of people that are willing to be a waiter in our western restaurant.”

“I will go! I will go! Don’t fire me.”

The waiter hurried to run to morning room 4.

Opening the door, the waiter rubbed his hands, and said in a quiet humble tone, “Two sirs, I hope you could give this room to the guests outside. All the food you had will be on the house.”

Wu Zongming was eating a fish when he heard the waiter. He rolled his eyes at

the waiter, “Are we not guests? As for the food being on the house, hahaha... What a joke. Ye Chen, they think we cannot pay our bill.”

Ye Chen sneered, “There are so many restaurants in the Happy Town, they can find a place to eat.”

“The owner said to ask you...” The waiter knew he said something wrong, he hurried to cover his mouth.

“The owner?” Ye Chen’s eyebrows twitched, a bright light flashed through his eyes.

Frightened by Ye Chen’s look, the waiter could not say another word. He had already cursed at Tang Manlou every way he could. ‘Why does he have to choose this time to come?! Making my life so hard... I quit, I quit! No! The paycheck here is way too good to quit...’

Outside the room.

Tang Manlou got a bit impatient, he yelled at the owner, “Is it not ready yet?”

“It won’t take long; I will go check it out.”

Arriving at morning room 4, the owner wanted them to leave, “Two sirs, I am very sorry, but this room was already booked a long time ago, you should go to another restaurant.”

Bam!



Wu Zongming slammed his chopsticks on the table, "Are you bullying us because we are not from here? I will sit here today, I want to see who would dare to make us leave?"

The owner forced himself to say this, "I think you should really leave right now, the guy outside is not someone you want to mess with."

"Who would that be? Bring him in, let us see."

"Um... you two, please leave!"

Since it was already said and done, the owner gave up any thought of taking care of this peacefully, he already knew that he would be offending one of them.

"I dare you!" Wu Zongming went hysterical.

Right then, the room door was opened again. Tang Manlou and that beautiful lady walked in, they had been waiting for too long and got impatient. So, they had decided to kick them out themselves.

Tang Manlou checked the two guys in front of him. He realized that they were only at Early Condensing Reality Realm and Mid Condensing Reality Realm, he said in an irritated manner, "You two, please. It is time for you to leave. Save yourselves some trouble!"

Ye Chen also carefully observed him, "I don't think you have what it takes to say those words."

Tang Manlou said sarcastically, "So brave of you. Happy Town is not like your home. Don't think you can be rude here, even if you are the king back at your home. Otherwise, don't blame me for not warning you."

"Oh, Tang Manlou, I have never heard of this name before, I would like to see how you are going to discipline us." Standing up, Ye Chen stared at Tang Manlou. It seemed like he was ready to fight.

The pretty girl shook her head. 'This person is way too arrogant, it seems like he has never been challenged where he came from. If he kept going against Tang Manlou, it is not going to end well for him.'

The owner sensed the intense situation. He was afraid that if they decided to fight, then his restaurant would be ruined. So, he said to Ye Chen immediately, "Sir, Master Tang is one of the top eight youngsters in the Happy Town, and the Tang family is also the top family around here. He is not someone you can mess with. Just listen to me, leave at once. Otherwise you might get hurt badly. It is not worth it."

Wu Zongming laughed.

Tang Manlou had already accumulated his Zhen Qi, and said in a cold voice, "What are you laughing about?"

"Comparing your backgrounds with Ye Chen, how ignorant! I would not even dare to compare my family with his, not to mention your Tang family."

The owner sensed the meaning behind his words, "I wonder where he is from,

sir?”

Wu Zongming said with a loud voice, “You all should hear this clearly. My friend here is the son of the leader of the Ye family, which is one of the top eight families. And we both are genius disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School. We are among the top disciples of the whole Windy Nation, not to mention the Tang family.”

The son of the Ye family leader!

The owner felt like he was about to faint. He had made a huge mistake. The Ye family, as one of the top eight families, was also very influential in Happy Town. They were not someone Western Restaurant could dare to mess with. And somehow, he previously thought that it was okay to tell them to leave. He regretted doing it, because if the Ye family heard about it, then they would never let him get away with it.

All of a sudden, the owner started sweating a lot. he did not dare to say another word.

## Chapter 84 – One Punch

Both Tang Manlou and the pretty girl were extremely shocked. Although the top eight families were not as powerful as the top five martial institutions, their influence in the Windy Nation was not something their family could compete with. As for the martial institution they were from, it did not matter much, since anyone who had a little bit of talent were joining a martial institution these days. It was nothing special if someone belonged to a big martial institution, unless they were the children of a martial institution's elder.

The pretty girl remained silent. It seemed as if she did not want to get involved anymore.

“Hehe, the Ye family from the top eight families is indeed powerful, but with your cultivation level, you would be nothing without the protection of your family.” Tang Manlou calmed down a little. He did not want to embarrass himself in front of the restaurant owner and the pretty girl, so he said casually.

Wu Zongming scorned at him, “And you are not using the protection of your Tang family? I think that without the support of your family, you would not even be considered one of the top eight youngsters of Happy Town.”

“You...you are looking for death.” A murderous thought flashed through his mind.

Ye Chen slowly walked in front of Wu Zongming, he frowned and said, “There is no point in talking. Let us exchange one punch. Whoever steps back, even if it is only an inch, they would have to leave Morning room 4. How about that?”

“For real?”

Hearing him, Tang Manlou was first surprised, but then he smiled. Earlier he was put in an awkward position. While his pride would not let him leave, he also did not want to be the one challenging them. However, his opponent turned out to be more arrogant than he expected. He wanted to exchange a punch with a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior, what a joke. Tang Manlou thought that his opponent was just looking down on him. Although he was not a core disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace, he was still one of the top inner disciples. How could he be afraid of just a Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior?

“Of course!” Ye Chen had never fought with a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior. He felt that this was a great opportunity for him to find out how he would fare against one. As for the possibility that he might lose, it never crossed his mind. When he was only at Early Condensing Reality Realm, he was able to beat Wang Kunyang who was at the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm with just a single punch. When he reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, his power had increased more than a little. So, even if he was facing a real core disciple, he would still want to exchange a punch.

Tang Manlou turned towards the restaurant owner and the pretty girl, “Good, you two could be the witnesses for me. I’m afraid, but someone will be eating their words in a while.”

The owner smiled at Ye Chen, but did not say a word.

“Okay.” The pretty girl Li Lin nodded and agreed. She obviously did not like Ye Chen, she just thought that he was being overconfident.

“Cut the crap, let’s start!”

Ye Chen did not dare to underestimate his opponent, he activated his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell to the peak of its third level. An unnoticeable jade like shine appeared on the surface of his skin. Even his clothes and hair looked like shining crystals.

Wu Zongming, the restaurant owner and Li Lin all stepped back to the corner, and made room for the two.

“Okay, today I will show you the power of Tang Manlou.” As he spoke, his powerful aura spread out. His fierce Zhen Qi burst out of his body, and shot to the sky. It seemed like the outcome of this battle was already set.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

Seeing Tang Manlou making such a huge effort, Ye Chen did not want to seem weak. Needle like Qi shot out of his body, piercing all the tables and the floor, leaving them with tiny little holes. It did not stop at that. The sharp Qi flow formed countless Qi swords, and hid in the air, ready to attack with just a single thought.

“Pure Jun Zhen Qi stage 7!” Li Lin thought to herself. As an inner disciple from Purple Sun Martial Palace, she fought plenty of inner disciples from the Sky Cloud Martial School, of which some had trained the Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art. However, they had only reached the peak of the sixth stage, and none of them had managed to reach the seventh stage. According to the rumors, Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art was the hardest martial art among all the top rank Mortal Realm martial arts of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

‘If this guy is given a little more time, he would definitely become a core disciple!’

But Li Lin still did not like Ye Chen, she just thought that he had a bright future ahead of him.

“Hehe, even if you had already mastered your martial art to the seventh stage, it is still useless in front of me. The gap between the Mid Condensing Reality Realm and the Late Condensing Reality Realm is not as simple as you imagined.” Tang Manlou did not seem to be worried at all. He slowly clenched his right fist, making his knuckles crack. It was like his hand was no longer made of flesh and blood. Instead, his fists looked like two whole pieces of jade that were rubbing together.

“Major Broken Jade Fist!”

His fist shone with a bright white light, Tang Manlou threw out a punch directly at Ye Chen.

Boom!

The punch had not completely made contact yet, but the whole building already started to shake a little. All the other customers looked very confused, and were wondering what had happened.

Inside Morning room 4, even the air was shattered to pieces like a broken jade.

Ye Chen completely ignored the change in the surrounding air, and he stood still where he was. With the protection of his defensive art, these little attacks

could not hurt him at all.

“Tiger Roar Dragon Fist!” When the incoming fist almost touched his body, Ye Chen started to move. He took a step forward, his right fist suddenly shone with an unbearably bright blue light, accompanied with a tiger’s roars. It sliced through the air, as the Qi flowed in the shape of a dragon.

Their fists clashed together.

The next second.

Including Li Lin, all the people present in the room were unable to see a thing, except the bright white and blue light invading each other. Then the light completely filled the whole private room.

Boom!

After a thunderous sound, the walls and the floor of the room started to crack, and all the tables and the chairs were completely shattered to pieces. But, the cracking noises did not stop for a while. It sounded like someone was brutally pushed back, and they knocked down something behind them.

After a few moments, the bright light disappeared gradually. As they looked around to check what actually happened, everyone’s eyes widened with shock.

“Tang Manlou had lost!” Li Lin gasped.

In that broken private room, Ye Chen stood still at the same place where he



was. The only thing that had changed was that the cloth covering his right arm was a bit ruined. And looking at the other side, a human figure was leaning against the wall. That tremendous power had left a huge hole on the wall behind him. There was blood dripping down his right arm and the corner of his mouth, his face looked extremely pale.

That human figure was indeed Tang Manlou.

“Piss off now.” Ye Chen said. Facing Tang Manlou who was beaten in just a single punch, he was not excited at all. He already had a strength of fifteen thousand pounds and had mastered his Tiger Roar Dragon Fist to the peak of its peak stage. With these two, it would be weird if he could not beat his opponent.

Actually, Tang Manlou was not as powerful as Wang Kunyang, who had ten thousand pounds’ strength.

“Good, very good. I will never forget this day.” Tang Manlou was not wounded that badly. He was a Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior after all. But the humiliation was almost killing him. He wanted to kill Ye Chen in every possible way.

Standing up, Tang Manlou dragged his body out of the private room. He did not even talk to Li Lin.

## Chapter 85 – The Godly Legs and The North Snow Fast Blade

Li Lin gave Ye Chen a deep look, and then walked out of the room, leaving the anxious restaurant owner standing in a corner.

He knew that he had to fix his mistakes, so the owner said with regret written on his face, “Master Ye, I lost my mind earlier due to money, and did things that offended you, I hope you could forgive me. There will always be an empty private room here waiting for you. So do you think you could...”

Ye Chen did not plan to punish the restaurant owner, he knew that the owner was just put in an awkward position earlier. Either way, he would have offended someone. Earlier, if he had not chosen to ask them to leave, he would have pissed off Tang Manlou.

“Don’t worry. I won’t give you a hard time. It’s just that we haven’t finished eating yet, find us a place, it’s okay even if it’s in the lobby, just don’t ask other customers to leave.” Ye Chen said casually.

“Yes, yes, I understand, I will see to it right away.” The restaurant owner was very grateful, he stepped out of the room while he continued to bow repeatedly.

After waiting until the restaurant owner had left, Wu Zongming looked around the broken room, he shook his head and said with determination, “Whatever it takes, we have to get a Zhen Qi pellet this time.”

Ye Chen said, “That stuff comes with certain side effects, but if we could take care of them, then it should be fine.”

For a warrior, training was a journey of no return, so no matter what method you chose, as long as your heart was firm, there was nothing to be worried about.

Soon, the restaurant owner found them a table in the second floor lobby, and he even personally served the dishes.

...

Two days passed in the blink of an eye.

On the third day.

Morning.

It was raining. The sky had a dark shade of grey. The rain completely washed over the land of Happy Town.

In the north side of Happy Town, a great building was located, it was square shaped with a height of about thirty meters. On its front door, there was a huge board, with five huge characters in gold – The North West Auction Plaza.

If one took a bird's eye view, there were a over a dozen lines formed from people lining up around the auction plaza. Some of them were walking along the streets or small lanes. Some were rich people, who were riding in sedan chairs; there were also rich wives being carried by low rank demonic beasts; there were young warriors riding on excellent horses. Of course, about seventy percent of the crowd were normal warriors.

Outside the gate, Ye Chen glanced at the huge characters written on the board, and walked in along with Wu Zongming.

“You are...?” The hostess who was standing in front of the gate had already sensed that they were not just simple teenagers. So, she walked up to them and asked at once, as people with different statuses were allotted different seating areas.

Wu Zongming said, “This is the son of the leader of the Ye family, and I am from the Wu family.”

“The Ye family, one of the top eight families... respected sirs, please come this way, I will show you to the vip rooms.” The hostess was actually glad she noticed that they were different, because in her profession, great observation was the key. Although she might not recognize everyone, as long as she could tell them apart from ordinary people, it meant that she was doing just fine. And the young warrior in front of her was surprisingly the son of the Ye family leader, who was definitely an influential person. Although there were a lot of Wu families out there, since he was with the son of Ye family, she was sure that he was definitely from the most powerful Wu family.

In front of them, the hostess who was in the silk dress twisted her waist as she walked. All she could think of while walking was about the rewards she might get, if her boss knew about this.

The auction plaza was huge, it was a lot bigger than the ones in the world Ye Chen came from. There were a lot of gold and crystals embedded on the walls around them, creating beautiful patterns, but not in a senseless way. Instead, they were arranged in such a way that they made people quite happy just by

looking at them.

Their room was located slightly to the left side, opposite of the auction stage made of stone.

The room was not big, and there wasn't much stuff in there. Only a couple of leather chairs made of demonic beasts' skins, a purple wood table with gold carvings on it was completely filled with fruits and snacks. There were also some landscape paintings on the walls.

"Respected sirs, if you need anything, you could ask me at anytime, I will be right outside." There was more than one hostess working here, and each one of them took care of one private room.

Ye Chen said, "Okay."

The hostess closed the door as she walked out. Wu Zongming threw himself onto the leather chair. It was really soft, and even had a hint of a delicate fragrance to it.

"It's always better to have a private room. I even get to sit in a leather chair made of demonic beasts' skin."

Ye Chen sat down on the leather chair right next to Wu Zongming, and laughed, "Is that all it takes to make you happy? You are the second son of the Wu family after all."

"Don't even bring it up. It would never be my turn to lead the Wu family. But, to be honest, I don't really mind it. I will just become an outer elder in the Sky

Cloud Martial School.” Wu Zongming said as he picked up a grape and put it in his mouth.

Ye Chen shook his head and did not say anything. He only had one goal, that was to become stronger, and to discover the secrets and the truths of the world.

The private room, just three rooms away from them was occupied by five young warriors.

The man sitting on the far left corner was none other than Tang Manlou, who was beaten by Ye Chen a few days ago. The pretty girl Li Lin was sitting right next to him this time too. As for the teenager in the purple gold robe who was sitting in the middle, he was eighteen years old. His eyebrows were thick and sharp like a blade, his eyes were bright, like two shining black crystals. He had very long legs, that were about four inches longer than normal people. When he sat down in the room, everyone present could sense the boundless pressure coming from him. He was obviously the leader of the five.

The two people sitting beside the teenager were wearing the same clothes as Li Lin, they were all purple, without any gold.

“Tang Manlou, I haven’t seen you for half a year now, you seem to be a lot stronger now.” The teenager said casually while stroking his storage ring.

Tang Manluo had a complicated look on his face, he said, “How can I compare with you, Ouyang Ming? You did not get your title ‘Godly Legs’ for nothing.”

“Of course, in Windy Nation, besides that Young master Emerald who had already reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, our Brother Ouyang is definitely one of

the top.” One of them said.

“Yah, yah. But I heard that this time, the third disciple from the North Snow Martial Academy, ‘Fast Blade’ Lin Qi is also coming here. I think that he is here for the same thing as you – that great sabre.” Sitting with Ouyang ming, he always felt inferior to him, so he brought up Lin Qi to tease him.

Ouyang Ming sneered, “‘Fast Blade’ Lin Qi, I will fight him one day. Then we will see whose sabre is fierce.” Although people knew him as the “Godly legs”, his blade art was also very powerful. It was just that there were too many people using a sabre. Everyone in the North Snow Martial Academy were great with sabres, so he chose to emphasize his legs more.

Right then, a human figure became visible through the crystal glass in front of the group.

The figure wore a white robe, which made his body look extremely straight and skinny. Although he seemed to be walking very slowly, the hostess was unable to catch up with him, and almost tripped. The figure gave people a very strong impression. But if you moved your attention to his face, then you would be a little disappointed. Because, he had a very common face, it was so ordinary that you might not even recognize him in a crowd.

“Lin Qi.” A bright light flashed past Ouyang Ming’s eyes. He subconsciously lowered his body, which resulted in the chair making deep cracking sounds.

As if he sensed the attention from Ouyang Ming, the figure turned his head. Their eyes met, and suddenly, the atmosphere in the whole room froze.

The hostess was very curious, because the wall was made of a special kind of crystal, that only allowed one to see from the inside, but not from outside. ‘Why does this disciple from the North Snow Martial Academy look like he just saw someone?’



## Chapter 86 – The Beginning of the Auction

Inside the private room, Tang Manlou did not look Lin Qi in the eye. However, he could not help but feel terrified when Lin Qi's eyes swept past him. He felt as if he was being cut by a knife, it almost felt like Lin Qi's gaze turned into solid knives and could cut the air and even wound people's souls. It seemed like it contained unbelievable power.

In the air, Ouyang Ming's eyes caught Lin Qi's, this clash brought up sparks and flames, neither of them wanted to back out.

After a few moments, they both separated their gaze.

“North Snow Fast Blade, huh.” Ouyang Ming sneered. But his face did not look good. Although he was not as powerful as Young master North Snow, he could still observe a few things. Even though it seemed like they were both evenly matched earlier, he knew that he had already lost. ‘No wonder the leader of the North Snow Martial Academy Xue Wuren thought that Lin Qi was the one who had the most probability to sense the blade intent.’

However, as long as Lin Qi had not sensed it, Ouyang Ming knew that he still had a chance to compete with him.

Outside of the room, Lin Qi remained expressionless. He continued walking, and stopped in front of the room that was right next to Ye Chen's.

Ye Chen suddenly frowned, he seemed to sense a powerful aura that was quite close.

“Ye Chen, what’s wrong?” Wu Zongming asked.

Ye Chen shook his head, “Nothing, I think the auction is about to start.”

“Yeah, everyone seems to have already arrived. Oh right, How much did you bring?”

“One hundred and eighty thousand gold.”

“You did not ask your family for any?” One hundred and eighty thousand gold was a huge fortune that normal people would not even dare to imagine. But for them, it was just normal. This time, they were there for the Zhen Qi pellets and some other treasures, Wu Zongming had brought three hundred thousand gold in total from his family. But, Ye Chen’s family was way larger than the Wu family. If Ye Chen had asked for some money, he would have definitely gotten way more than that.

Ye Chen laughed, “It’s more than enough. After all, I am here only to watch, I might not even buy anything.” The one hundred and eighty thousand gold was everything he had gotten from killing the Bloody Butcher and completing some other missions; it was already a lot of money. If he saw something he was really interested in, he still had about ten thousand low rank soul stones in his storage ring. Each one was worth around two thousand silvers, and ten thousand of them would make it twenty million silvers, which was two million gold. That was even more than the worth of some of those small families’ wealth.

“Hehe, you would regret not bringing enough money later.” Wu Zongming laughed.

Ye Chen did not really pay attention to the conversation with Wu Zongming. He was using his extremely powerful soul force to scan the other side of the wall, the room right next to theirs.

There was a young man sitting in the room.

He had an ordinary appearance, and was wearing white robes; he had an erect posture. All of his Zhen Qi was perfectly concealed, and it was rushing back to his body. He seemed to have reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, or at least was on the verge of breaking through.

‘The peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm... this guy should be “Young master North Snow”.’ Ye Chen could not believe that it was Young master North Snow, because according to rumors, Young master North Snow was extremely charismatic and good looking. He always had a smile on his face, which made him really popular among the female disciples, even in the Sky Cloud Martial School.

Lin Qi had no idea of Ye Chen scanning his room. But still, he felt alarmed about something, he turned his head and looked at the wall.

‘Did he sense me? No...he did not.’ Ye Chen noticed that Lin Qi’s eyes were not focused, and felt that he did not notice him.

Since there was no use in scanning any longer, Ye Chen took back his soul power.

Lin Qi sensed that the odd feeling had disappeared. He was a bit confused, but he did not give it much thought, as the auction had started.

An elder walked up and stood behind the auction table made of stone.

He clapped his hands, and all the crystals above the whole auction plaza lit up. The gentle lighting brightened the whole place, including the dark corners.

“Ladies and gentlemen, welcome to the North West Auction Plaza. I am a mid rank auction host Qian Zongchao. I assume most of you have never heard of me, but that’s okay, there’s no need to try and remember my name, since it might still be me hosting the auction the next time you are here.”

“Before we start, I would like to mention that if anyone has any valuable treasures they want to put up in the auction, you could entrust us with them now. We would separate them into four ranks, the low rank treasures will be charged with a ten percent service fee; mid rank treasures will be charged fifty percent as the service fee, we would charge you nothing for a high rank treasure. And as for the top rank treasures, we would even pay you in return for auctioning it here.”

After hearing him, people started to talk.

“Is he joking? Why would anyone auction their high rank and top rank treasures? How stupid!”

“Right, a single low rank treasure would make people fight. Even Clasp of Yuan Realm warriors and Astral Reaching Realm warriors would go crazy about a mid rank treasure. Don’t even mention high and top rank treasures.”

Ye Chen was also completely speechless; the auction plaza was grading

treasures similar to the grades of a storage ring. A low rank storage ring was equivalent to a low rank treasure, a mid rank storage ring was equivalent to a mid rank treasure. He did not dare to think about the high and top rank treasures.

The elder in yellow smiled, he did not say those words for nothing. He wanted to stimulate the crowd, as people do weird things when they were in high spirits, and that would be a good thing for the auction plaza.

“Alright, I don’t want to waste your time. The auction has officially begun. Please, bring up the first item.”

After he said that, a beautiful girl walked up from behind him, with a gold colored wooden tray covered with a bright yellow colored silk cloth.

The tray was placed on the auction table, and the elder in yellow revealed what was under the bright yellow silk cloth.

All of a sudden, a blue secret manual appeared in front of everyone’s eyes.

“The first item is a martial skill manual, called the Blue Yuan Palm, which is a top rank Mortal Realm martial skill. It is an exclusive martial art from the rank 8 Blue Yuan Martial School from a hundred years ago. Once mastered, the warrior’s palm could even turn a great sabre to ashes. It is extremely powerful! This can be said to be one of the most powerful top rank Mortal Realm martial skills.”

“The starting price is twenty thousand gold, at least one thousand gold increment with each bid.”

Hearing the elder's introduction, everyone in the audience seemed to be excited. Some of the warriors who did not belong to any martial institutions were especially excited. All the martial disciples, once they became inner disciples, they would be able to access all the top rank Mortal Realm martial arts. They did not even need to spend time to search for them. But unlike them, the rest of them had only trained high rank Mortal Realm skills, some of the unlucky ones only trained mid rank Mortal Realm skills, which was nothing when compared to those martial disciples.

"Damn, I need that. If I could train a top rank Mortal Realm martial skill, I will be a lot more powerful and I will never have to worry about not making money ever again."

"Those martial disciples would not fight for it, this is a good chance to get that manual. I have to get it!"

Through the crystal glass, Ye Chen saw everyone's reaction. He could not help but shake his head. Compared to all the martial disciples, those warriors really had a hard time. All they could get their hands on were basically rubbish. But according to the introduction, the Blue Yuan Palm seemed pretty powerful, it was probably more powerful than the Tiger Roar Dragon Fist, no wonder so many people had come to this auction.

"Twenty thousand gold." Someone could not wait any longer, and started the bidding.

As soon as the first bid was out, the whole auction plaza started bidding.

"Twenty-three thousand gold!"

“Twenty-five thousand gold!”

“Fuck, twenty-eight thousand gold!”

A warrior with a scary face stood up, “I bid thirty thousand gold, who dares to bid against me?!”

“Thirty thousand gold is nothing; I bid thirty-five thousand gold!”

Ye Chen was truly surprised. ‘No way! A top rank Mortal Realm manual could actually be bid for thirty-five thousand gold! Then what does my one hundred and eight thousand gold mean?’

## Chapter 87 – Half of the Blade

“Forty thousand!”

The scary looking warrior added five thousand gold at once, it seemed like he really wanted to have the manual.

“Damn, all I have with me is only thirty-eight thousand, I still need two thousand, if anyone of you could lend it to me, I will return in double.” Someone wanted to borrow some money from the warriors around him.

“I don’t care about two thousand gold, but if I miss a valuable treasure because of that, I will hate myself. So, sorry I can not lend you any money.”

“Good point, the small auction is held only twice a year. If I miss this one, then I will have to wait another six months. How could I lend you the money!”

No one wanted to lend any money to that warrior, since they themselves did not carry much. It would only be stupid to lend people any money here.

In the end, the Blue Yuan Palm manual ended up in hands of the scary looking warrior for the price of forty thousand gold.

“The second object, three sets of low rank soul stones, with each set containing one hundred pieces. Each set will be sold separately, the starting price of each set is twenty thousand gold. Each bid should increase no less than one thousand. Begin!”



The gold surfaced wooden tray was put on the table, and the elder in yellow revealed the item, as he said in a loud voice.

“What? Selling the low rank soul stones? I haven’t used a low rank soul stone for ages, this time I have to get a set.”

“With those low rank soul stones, I could probably reach the Late Condensing Reality Realm in a short time, they could be so helpful!”

“One hundred soul stones would last me more than a year.”

Off stage, all those warriors who did not belong to any martial institutions got extremely excited. They could not help but breath rapidly, staring at those low rank soul stones with their eyes red; they wished they could just run up the stage and steal them all.

“Twenty thousand gold!”

“Twenty-five thousand gold!”

“Twenty-eight thousand gold!”

“Thirty thousand gold!”

The price of the first set of soul stones increased rapidly, the elder on the stage was filled with smiles. The higher the bidding price, the better it is for his position in the auction plaza, and the more commission he would get.

Soon, the first set of soul stones ended up in the hands of an ugly warrior for a price of thirty-five thousand gold.

The bids for the second set of low rank soul stones started shortly after.

It might be due to there being only two sets of soul stones remaining, the warriors in the crowd who were still indecisive earlier could not wait anymore. So, they also joined the bidders with no regrets, making the second set of soul stones way more expensive than the first one. It reached thirty-eight thousand gold, and was bought by an older looking warrior.

When it got to the third set, the whole auction plaza went crazy. All the warriors who were unable to win a set of soul stones could not hold back anymore, they decided to use all their money to win the bid and get the last set of soul stones.

In the room.

Ye Chen was also surprised, he thought each low rank soul stone would cost two hundred and fifty gold at most, but he never expected it to reach almost four hundred gold. 'Does it mean all those ten thousand low rank soul stones in my storage ring are worth four million gold?!'

"Forty thousand gold going once, forty thousand gold going twice, forty thousand gold going thrice. Sold! Congratulation to this warrior!" The third set of soul stones had finally been sold as well, the elder in yellow let out a sigh. 'It seems like these low rank soul stones are very popular, too bad the lowest price for an item to be eligible is twenty thousand gold, otherwise the soul stones could be sold individually or ten stones per set. We could make a lot more money

that way.'

Waiting until all the low rank soul stone sets had been delivered to their new owners, the elder in yellow cleared his throat, and said in a loud voice: "The third item coming up is an ancient broken blade."

Swoosh!

The silk cloth was lifted, and the top part of the ancient blade appeared in front of everyone. Maybe it was because it was too old, the body of the blade still looked rusty and dirty under the crystal light, it could not look any worse than that.

"Fuck, what the heck! What is this?"

"Only a half... even if it was a mid rank treasure, it probably would not be worth much now. Who would want to bid on that?"

"Wait and see. Maybe there is something special about it, you never know."

The crowd was a bit confused, they all stared at the elder on the stage, waiting for him to explain more about the item.

The elder in yellow was already prepared for this, he reached out and picked up the half blade, and said, "After the examination conducted by our auction plaza, this half of the blade has a history of at least five hundred years. This means that it is a five-hundred-year-old antique. In addition, it was very likely a high rank great sword five hundred years ago. It was later on cut in half by someone for some reason, which led to its current look."

“A five-hundred-year-old antique! High rank great sword!”

“Damn, what a shame! If it was still in one piece, I think all of the most powerful people would definitely come here and fight for it.”

“A broken high rank great sword, without its spirit, what’s the use of that?”

“Maybe some of the antique collectors would want to bid for it. It doesn’t concern us anyway.”

“Yeah, we should just watch them fight over it. Look at that.”

Hearing the comments from the crowd, the elder in yellow forced a smile. ‘This half blade is indeed pretty useless; its only selling point is the five hundred years’ age. I hope it could sell for a good price. Of course, if it doesn’t sell I can do nothing about it. The first two rounds of the bidding had already made me look good, it all depends on what happens next.’

“This is the other half of the broken blade?!” In the room, Ye Chen’s eyes brightened, he stared at the blade on that stone table without blinking.

This half of the blade also looked rusty and dark, the width was exactly same as the one he bought in the Nine Feet Tripod Pavilion, even the broken part matched well. Only a small piece in the middle was missing, if he guessed it right, the two parts of the blade belonged together, but they were separated for some reason.

“Now, the bidding starts. The starting price is twenty thousand gold. It should be at least one thousand gold more for each bid.” The elder in yellow looked around, and yelled after taking a deep breath.

The auction plaza was in silence for a while.

“I call twenty-one thousand gold!” It was an elder who was in his seventies, he had a grey beard and was wearing an old-fashioned black robe.

Someone had recognized the elder. He was one of the top antique collectors in Happy Town. He had a great interest in odd things, and liked to put them in display for himself at his home. No one else was allowed to see his collection, not even his family.

In the room, Ye Chen did not rush to bid, he wanted to wait. If he went all out with the first bid itself, it might make some people curious.

The whole plaza was completely quiet, there was no one willing to bid.

The elder in yellow knew that it was time to loosen up the atmosphere, “Twenty-one thousand gold! Who wants to bid a higher price? Don’t forget, this half of the blade might be part of a high rank great sword, even if it does not have any spirit anymore, you never know what you could find in it. Besides, five hundred years is a long time.”

The whole auction plaza was still in silence.

Right then, Ye Chen raised up the board in his hand, “Twenty-two thousand gold.”

“Great, someone placed a higher bid, good eyes. Who wants to go higher? This is a one time opportunity!” The elder in yellow looked extremely excited, and said with a great passion.

“Thirty thousand gold.” This time, it was not the old collector, it was from Ouyang Ming who was sitting three rooms away from Ye Chen.

Tang Manlou looked curious, “Brother Ouyang, is this half of the blade that important?”

Ouyang Ming said casually “Not really, I just want to buy it as a part of my collection, as it is pretty cheap.”

## Chapter 88 – Low Rank Earth Realm Martial Skill

“Thirty thousand gold! Someone had increased the price again! What are you waiting for?” The elder in yellow sounded quite cheerful, the price had already reached thirty thousand gold, which was his target price. Now, even if no one bid for a higher price, he would already be quite satisfied.

The old antique collector raised his board once again, “Thirty-one thousand gold!”

“Thirty-two thousand!” Ye Chen followed up the price.

Ouyang Ming sneered, “Forty thousand!”

“I will give up, although it is something I’m interested in, it is definitely not worth that price. I might as well go buy some other antiques.” The old collector gave up on the bidding.

“You should have given up ages ago, it is only a half of the blade, why bother spending that amount of gold on it.” The warrior sitting beside him said while laughing.

“What do you know? Every antique has its value for research.”

“Alright, I don’t know anything about this stuff, unlike you.”

In the room, Ye Chen frowned before he raised the bidding price to forty-one thousand gold.

Wu Zongming asked, “Ye Chen, what’s wrong? There are still many valuable treasures coming up, there is no need to buy that crap! Do you really think you could find something from that blade? Without the spirit, that half blade is only worth the price of a normal greatsword.”

Ye Chen said, “Since we are in an auction, I should at least buy something, right?”

“Hehe, I cannot understand you sometimes.” Wu Zongming shook his head.

“Fifty thousand!” Ouyang Ming raised his board again, that amount of gold was nothing to him. He had been an inner disciple for years now, and had completed hundreds of missions. He had earned a huge fortune already. Even some of the mid-level families could not compete with him, so fifty thousand gold was really nothing to him.

The elder in yellow could feel that his heart was about to jump out of his chest. He couldn’t truly believe that the half blade which had been sitting in a dusty corner for all these years would be bid for fifty thousand gold. It was way beyond what he had expected, and it seemed like the two bidders were still planning to continue.

Below the stage, even though the crowd also found it strange, it was still not enough to shock them, as this kind of stuff always happens in an auction. For example, some worthless crap could be sold for an unreasonable price, while some of the truly valuable treasures could not be sold at all.



“Another two rich guys with too much money.” Someone said jealously.

“They must be martial disciples; these guys are so rich.”

“Ah, too bad we don’t have that kind of talent, otherwise we would be in a martial institution as well. We would at least be outer elders by now, how cool would that be?”

“Stop talking! They raised their bids again!”

“Fifty-five thousand!” Ye Chen added another five thousand gold.

“Sixty thousand!”

“Sixty-five thousand!”

“Seventy thousand!”

“Eighty thousand!”

“Ninety thousand!”

Ye Chen’s face did not look good, he thought that no one would want to bid for this half blade. He certainly did not expect it to reach ninety thousand gold. He could not understand if the other person was doing it to mess with him or if he really wanted it just like him.

Raising his board, Ye Chen said, “One hundred thousand!”

Gasp!

Everyone in the crowd could not help but gasped. One hundred thousand gold was not a small amount of gold, even a lot of Mid Condensing Reality Realm warriors who had worked for over a decade might not have that kind of money. As warriors have a lot of expenses, they would never be able to save that amount of money, as they need to buy pellets and such which were not exactly cheap.

“Although one hundred thousand gold is nothing to me, there is no need to raise it any further. I have no use for it and it would probably just end up in my collection. At least I managed to mess with that guy, he must be hurting a lot right now!” Ouyang Ming comfortably sat on the leather chair, and said with an unnoticeable smile on his face.

The Purple Sun Martial School disciple on his side tried to suck up to him, and said, “If we know who this guy is, we should ask him to treat us to dinner, since our brother Ouyang had been so considerate to him.”

“Yeah, after the auction, let’s go check who it is.”

Ouyang Ming said, “You guys don’t just assume things. I don’t want him to buy me dinner. But, if he could lend that half blade for a few days, that would be really nice.”

Hearing him, Li Lin forced a smile. She was hoping in her heart that the person who bought it would not try and fight against her second senior brother, as it would not end well for him. Among the younger generation of the Windy Nation,

there were not many people that could compete with Ouyang Ming.

“One hundred thousand gold going once, one hundred thousand gold going twice, one hundred thousand gold going three times. Sold! Congratulations to the guest in room no.7. This half blade would be in your hands in no time.” The elder in yellow could not help but smile wider, he looked as if he had just found a hundred thousand gold on the street.

Soon, a pretty girl walked in with the half blade.

“Damn, this shit is worth a hundred thousand gold!” Wu Zongming just glanced at it before he completely lost his interest in it.

Ye Chen took out ten gold notes that were worth ten thousand gold each, and handed them to the pretty girl. He then took the blade and placed it in his storage ring.

Ye Chen studied it with his soul force and thought, ‘These two pieces match just like I expected. However, there is still a tiny piece that’s missing, I wonder if I could get them all.’

He thought of the day he heard that laughter from his half blade, which left a great impression on him. He was sure that there was something about that blade, otherwise he would not have spent a hundred thousand gold for that piece.

“The fourth item is a Zhen Qi pellet. There are three of them here. I think you all know their effects well. It could increase a Condensing Reality Realm warriors’ chances to raise their cultivation level by fifty percent, with very few side effects.

Besides that, these pellets could be used three times continuously, the first time would increase the chances by fifty percent; the second would increase it by thirty percent; while the third time increases it by ten percent. Whoever buys all three pellets is almost guaranteed to raise their cultivation level, unless he had the worst luck possible.” The true battle had just started. Those were the pellets that Wu Zongming had been dreaming about. And this time, there were three of them together, which made it even more priceless, especially for those warriors with a lot of potential.

“These three pellets would be sold separately, with a starting price of thirty thousand gold each. Each bid should increase the price by at least two thousand gold. The bidding starts now.”

Wu Zongming could not wait for even a second more, he raised his board, “Fifty thousand!”

Ding!

All the people in the crowd felt a bit dizzy after hearing that price. ‘Who the heck is this, starting with such a high price, leaving us with no opportunity at all?’

The warriors who did not have enough money were really pissed. But there was nothing they could do about it, as they just did not have the money to continue bidding.

“Fifty-five thousand!” After a second of silence, someone started to follow up the price.

Wu Zongming smiled, “Seventy thousand!”

“Eighty thousand!” Some other martial disciple had also joined the bidding.

“One hundred thousand gold!” Wu Zongming carried on his bidding.

“One hundred and twenty thousand!”

“One hundred and fifty thousand!”

Eventually, the first Zhen Qi pellet ended up in Wu Zongming’s hands, leaving a lot of people in despair.

The bidding of the second pellet was not as intense. It was bought by a marital disciple for a price of one hundred and thirty thousand gold.

And the third pellet was also sold for a high price, it reached a hundred and sixty thousand gold. It was also bought by a martial disciple.

The elder in yellow was really pleased with the results, he cleared his throat and said, “Up next is one of the greatest items, it is a low rank Earth Realm martial skill manual.”

“What?! A low rank Earth Realm martial skill!”

“Are you joking?”

Everyone including the guests in the private rooms were extremely shocked.

## Chapter 89 – Who is richer?

“Do not be surprised! The fifth item is indeed a low rank Earth Realm martial skill manual. It belonged to a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior, who was pretty famous in the north side of the Windy Nation. But, I can’t share his name with you all, as it would be against the rules. So I will come to the point. This low rank Earth Realm martial skill is a leg art, called the Killing Tyrant Kick. Once mastered, each kick could part a river; if mastered completely, each kick could even break a hundred meters’ high mountain. Rumors say that once it’s mastered to its peak, even the air would no longer be able to restrict your movements, and the speed of each kick will reach an inhuman level. A distance of one hundred meters can be covered with a single step.”

Without wasting too much time by teasing the crowd, the elder in yellow gave the whole introduction, with not even a single pause.

Boom!

The whole auction plaza went crazy.

Stopping a river, breaking a mountain, travelling a hundred meters in one step, every single one of them sounded powerful by themselves, not to mention, the warrior would be able to do all of them if they could master this skill. This clearly revealed the huge barrier between a low rank Earth Realm skill and a top rank Mortal Realm skill.

Ye Chen did not show much interest when he heard the first two lines, as his tyrant fist could also do the same. However, the third line really impressed him,

being able to travel one hundred meters in just a single step was way more powerful than even being able to fly a hundred meters, as even that would require more than a single leg movement. Not only that, the Killing Tyrant Kick was not just about speed.

“This leg art is mine.” Inside the room, Ouyang Ming made up his mind. Although he already had a low rank Earth Realm manual, it was only a martial art. His kick art and sword art were all only top rank Mortal Realm arts, of course, they were all the best of the top rank mortal realm .

“The starting price is a hundred thousand gold. Each bid should raise it by at least ten thousand gold. May the bidding begin!”

“One hundred and twenty thousand!”

“One hundred and thirty thousand!”

“One hundred and fifty thousand!”

“One hundred and eighty thousand!”

The bidding price for the manual had already shot through the roof, completely shocking all those warriors who did not belong to any of the martial institutions.

Ouyang Ming sneered, he lifted his board and yelled, “Two hundred and fifty thousand!”



“Who the heck is in that room? Adding seventy thousand gold just like that? How rich is he?” Some warrior could not bear the curiosity and asked.

“I saw ‘God Legs’ Ouyang Ming from the Purple Sun Martial School walk in there earlier, I think it should be him.”

“No wonder. Among the younger generation of Windy Nation, there are only a few people who could compete with him in terms of wealth. Young master Emerald, Young master Duanmu and Young master North Snow would probably be the only ones that can.”

“In this auction, there is someone who could compete with Ouyang Ming. ‘North Snow Fast Blade’ Lin Qi is also here.”

“Lin Qi... I heard that he is expected to surpass Young master North Snow and become the No.1 disciple of the North Snow Martial Academy.”

“It may not happen any time soon, but no one can be sure about the future.”

As the discussion among the crowd continued, another bid had been placed.

“Three hundred thousand!”

The voice sounded deep and firm, it originated from room number two.

Ouyang Ming remained undisturbed, he said, “Three hundred and fifty thousand.”

“Four hundred thousand!”

“Four hundred and fifty thousand!”

The person followed up the price immediately, “Five hundred thousand!”

To be honest, Ye Chen was also shocked by that price, he thought, ‘The guy who is following up the price sounds quite firm, it should be a middle aged man. A middle aged man who can take out five hundred thousand gold should probably be a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior, as there are not many Condensing Reality Realm warriors that could take out five hundred thousand gold, other than those top warriors of the younger generation. The other guy was the one who competed with me earlier for that half blade, he is most likely a core disciple of one of the big martial institution and I probably heard his name somewhere. I just can not recognize who it is.’

“Six hundred thousand!” Ouyang Ming raised his voice.

“Seven hundred thousand!”

“Eight hundred thousand!”

“Nine hundred thousand!”

The other person did not back off either.

“Hehe...” Ouyang Ming started laughing, one could see the murderous intent on his face. This terrified both Tang Manlou and Li Lin. They knew that Ouyang

Ming was extremely angry. But, that middle aged man did not seem like someone that would just give up. He was most likely a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior. Unless the elders from the Purple Sun Martial School were here, there was nothing they could do to that guy.

Taking a deep breath, Ouyang Ming yelled, "One million and two hundred thousand gold!"

Right next to Ye Chen, Wu Zongming said bitterly, "This martial disciple is too rich. Although I have never heard his voice before, he most likely belongs to the top stage among the younger generation of the Windy Nation. Compared to him, we are way too poor. I almost feel sad."

"Complete a few more missions, and save up for a few more years, then you can also have that kind of money."

"After a few years, won't he have a lot more money? Never mind, cultivation is the most important thing, we could always make more money later, right?"

Ye Chen did not reply, he started thinking again. It was good to have a lot of money, there would always be these kind of auctions. One or two million gold was not enough then. Although he appeared to be doing pretty well, as he had those ten thousand low rank soul stones in his storage ring, if he was asked to exchange them for some money, he would probably think twice about it.

"One million and three hundred thousand."

The price still continued to increase.

Ouyang Ming bit his lips and said, “One million and five hundred thousand!”

“One million six hundred thousand.”

That middle-aged man remained the same from the beginning, without any emotional changes.

“Damn.” Ouyang Ming smacked the purple wooden table with his palm, his eyes were completely bloodshot. If it was not for that sabre he was planning to buy, he would not be this mad. If he spent way too much gold on this, he knew that he wouldn’t be able to win against Lin Qi, since the amount of gold they each had would probably be about the same.

“One million eight hundred thousand.” Ouyang Ming decided to fight for it again. He just hoped that his opponent would back off, otherwise once he reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, he would definitely kill him.

The calm voice was heard once again, “Two million.”

“If I don’t kill this man in the future, I will never forgive myself.” All the veins over his forehead had popped out, Ouyang Ming roared in a deep voice like a wild animal.

The elder in yellow could not care any less about that. All he cared about was the bidding price. The martial skill manual’s original value was only five hundred thousand gold, and it was estimated to not go beyond a million dollars. However, it had been bid for twice that price and reached two million gold. He could not be anymore happier than this.

“Two million going once, two million going twice, two million going three times! Sold!”

...

The peak of the auction had come and gone, the rest was very low key.

The North-West auction plaza had a different style compared to other places. It was separated into three rounds, the first round for setting the mood, and stimulating the crowd; the second round would have less valuable items but larger quantities. There would be dozens of them, of various prices, with the lowest being only twenty thousand gold, and the highest being over a hundred thousand gold.

All the warriors who did not belong to any martial institution were waiting for this moment, they continued to bid, and fought for the items they set their eyes on.

The third round had begun.

Unlike the first two rounds, the third round had extremely valuable treasures. The starting price of every single one of them was at least five hundred thousand gold. Some of them were way more valuable than that Killing Tyrant Kick manual.

“The sixty-eighth item, is a low grade treasure sabre, the Air splitter!”

The true highlight of this auction had just let go of its veil. Inside a private room, Lin Qi opened his eyes, that have been shut this whole time. His gaze was extremely sharp and felt almost solid. His eyes looked like they were emitting

two beams of sword light, It was extremely terrifying.

## ***Chapter 90 - Xu Jing***

The yellow-clad old man reached out and lifted the sheathed sabre from the gold colored wooden tray. He then slowly pulled it out.

Suddenly.

Its aura overflowed, cutting at people's souls. There were streams of light, resembling a meteor shower. The spacious auction stage suddenly turned extremely cold.

"Good sabre, this sabre is not the same as any simple low level treasure, it's level is extremely close to a mid level treasure." In the plaza, a hint of greed flashed in the eyes of an old man clad in gray.

Ye Chen noticed that the aura of the sabre in the hands of the old man clad in yellow was as strong as that of the treasure sword he obtained. It almost felt like the same

The explosive sabre aura soared to the skies, it was extremely sharp. This was a sabre that could be easily sold if they were short of money in the future. The auctioneer would gladly accept it.

"This sabre pierced the sky a hundred years ago, the sabre is about four feet two inches long, with a width of two inches at its widest point, its hilt was seven inches long. The sabre Qi will allow the person wielding it attack with twice the power. The starting price of the sabre is three hundred thousand gold, every bid

must increase it by at least fifty thousand gold.”

And the bidding began. The old man in yellow put the sabre back in its sheath and then placed it on the wooden tray. He looked around, and saw that everyone in the plaza was extremely shocked.

Someone in room number six raised the sign and shouted, “1 million gold”

The old man in grey also made a bid, “1.5 million gold”

Ouyang Ming was surprised when he heard that bid, but he did not plan to give up on this sabre. He raised his board, “Two million gold.”

“Have I heard it wrong? It already reached two million gold, and it’s only the third bid.”

“The ‘North Snow fast blade’, Lin Qi and Ouyang Ming have both made their bids, but I’m not sure who this other old man is.”

“I know who he is, that old man is known as ‘Old sabre master’, an initial Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior. He is quite a character, his blade skills were known to have killed an unknown number of people.”

“Old sabre master? I recall something that happened earlier this year, I think ‘the fast blade’, Wu Wanshan was his apprentice. However, due to some



unknown reasons, they parted their ways. I did not expect to see him here.”

“Now, Wu Wanshan’s strength is probably on par with the ‘old sabre master’, but the ‘North Snow fast blade’, Lin Qi is definitely stronger than him, his cultivation level is also higher. He can win against him within just ten moves.”

“Do not underestimate the ‘Old sabre master’. Even though he is old, he had been roaming the world for years, he must have a lot of hidden cards.”

Lin Qi calmly raised it again, “3 million gold.”

“This little brat is too rich, I will let you show off for now. When you walk out of Happy town, this sabre will be mine.” The grey-clothed old man was not willing to spend that much gold to get the sabre. He felt that it was a waste. He’d rather wait for someone else to get the blade. Then, he could secretly follow him and kill him to obtain the blade. He had done this a number of times before.

Seeing that no one other than Lin Qi was willing to compete, Ouyang Ming felt relieved. Following Lin Qi, he also raised the bid, by adding 1 Million, reaching a high price of 4 million gold.

“5 million gold!”, Lin Qi also bid, without even thinking. It was as if the gold was equivalent to stones to him, and such a small amount was not something that could affect him.

“5.5 million gold!” Ouyang Ming felt that he had underestimated Lin Qi, 5.5 million is the highest price he can bid. In fact, 30% of it was actually borrowed

from the 'Thunder hand', Ouyang Lie.

"5.55 million!" Lin Qi had also reached his limit, so he only raised it by fifty thousand gold.

Ouyang Ming turned towards the rest of them in the room and said, "Lend me all the gold you have, I will return four times the amount."

Li Ling said, "I bought two items earlier, I'm only left with twenty thousand gold."

"I also have twenty thousand gold."

"I have Thirty five thousand gold!"

After he borrowed from other people, Ouyang Ming had an extra hundred thousand gold. He decided to put everything in, and raised it again, "5.65 million gold!"

Lin Qi frowned. But, he recalled that his Sister, Mei has given him something before he left. She asked him to open it only at a critical moment.

After he opened and read it, a smile appeared on his face.

“5.7 million gold!”, Lin Qi raised it again.

Ouyang Ming was astonished, “How can he possibly have anymore gold?”, Tang Manlou and Li Lin felt that this price by the ‘North Snow fast Blade’ was as surprising as his fighting skills.

Finally, Lin Qi won the sabre.

“5.7 million gold, this price is too much.”

“Look, Lin Qi seems to be leaving.”

“I heard that he only came for the sabre. It is only natural for him to leave, as he already got it.”

“The ‘old sabre master’ followed him, does he want to kill him for the sabre!”

“It is possible, but does he not fear the North Snow Martial Academy?”

“You don’t know about ‘the old sabre master’, he does not stay in a place for long. He might escape to a different country as soon as he killed Lin Qi. Even the people from the North Snow Martial Academy might not be able to trace him.” Some of the people noted this, and whispered.

The absence of Lin Qi did not get much attention, and the auction continued. The seventy-ninth item was another low rank Earth Realm martial skill, but it was just a supporting skill, named Limitless Zhen Qi art, which helps overwhelm and

stabilise their own Zhen Qi. It might not seem attractive, but even some of the strongest warriors were worried about the stability of their Zhen Qi when they were going to rise their cultivation level. But, if they learn this skill, they might not have any difficulties in increasing their cultivation. Even while they were in a battle, their Zhen Qi will remain stable, and will be available continuously. This made this skill particularly fatal to the opponent, if he was someone with an equal skill level.

In every aspect, Limitless Zhen Qi art was more valuable than the Killing Tyrant Kick. Windy Nation had too many fighting skills, whereas Limitless Zhen Qi art was a rare supporting skill. Even in the big martial schools, there were only a few of such skills available.

The price had already reached two hundred thousand gold.

“Five hundred thousand.” The Clasp of Yuan realm warrior who had managed to get the Killing Tyrant Kick art, bid again.

Ouyang Ming sneered, “I was unable to get the sabre, I will definitely get this. The sabre will also be mine soon, that grey-clothed old man was obviously a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior. He followed Lin Qi to probably kill him. As long as he succeeds, I can just seize the sabre from that grey-clothed old man.”

After he calmed down, he raised the board again, “Three million!” The plaza turned quiet, even the Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior turned silent.

As there was no one competing with him, a smile appeared on Ouyang Ming’s face.

“Four Million gold!” A clear lady’s voice announced, lightly.

“It is sister Xu Jing.” Ye Chen said.

Wu Zongming was astonished, “Are you sure it is sister Xu Jing?”

Ye Chen nodded, “Yes, I talked to her once.”

“Sister Xu Jing is the eighth ranked core disciple. The rumor says that she is extremely strong.”

“She should be!” ‘I accidentally witnessed sister Xu Jing while she was training’, Ye Chen previously thought that he roughly knew her skill level. He thought that even though her strength was just around 3-4 thousand jin, her fighting ability was very strong. But, he felt that he might be wrong now. Her cultivation level was higher now, and she was also not using her full strength back then. She was using just 30% of her strength.

## Chapter 91 - Blown away in a single step

Xu Jing's sudden appearance made Ouyang Ming turn pale. He didn't know if it was due to him not checking the almanac before going out, but nothing was going well for him. He was not able to successfully obtain the Killing Tyrant Kick art and the treasure sabre. Now, even the Limitless Zhen Qi art was almost out of his hands.

"I don't believe I can't get the Limitless Zhen Qi art."

Ouyang Ming shouted loudly in his heart, and increased his bid to five million gold.

Xu Jing said to her junior sisters in a soft voice in her private room, "Lend me all the gold you've got."

"Senior sister, we will lend you all the gold we have, we cannot let that Ouyang Ming get the Limitless Zhen Qi art." The female disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School were all extremely pretty. They took out all the gold they had and passed it to Xu Jing.

After counting the gold, Xu Jing raised her head and said, "Six million gold!"

"Very good, six million gold, this has broken the record of this small auction plaza, anyone else who wishes to bid? A skill that can suppress the Zhen Qi like the Limitless Zhen Qi art is rarely seen. If you lose this chance, you might never ever get another." The yellow-clad old man continued to fan the flames from the auction stage.

However, no matter what he said, nobody placed a bid. The price of six million gold was really too much. Even though there were plenty of large clans in Happy town, none of them had the ability to have that much gold in hand. Especially since the Limitless Zhen Qi art was just a supporting skill that doesn't even increase their fighting power, spending six million gold to buy this did not seem worth it. Good steel must be used for making swords.

Xu Jing's thoughts were a little different, even though the Limitless Zhen Qi art seemed to be unable to increase her fighting power, she felt that it would be of great help in the future. After breaking through, she doesn't need to worry about her internal energy being unstable, this will decrease the time needed to stabilize her Zhen Qi and reach the next level.

Shaking his head, the old man in yellow thought to himself that six million gold would probably be the highest it could earn.

"Six million gold going once! going twice! going thrice! sold! Congratulations to the lady in room no twelve." Without any need for him to order, someone sent the supporting skill to her.

What made Tang Manlou and Li Ling surprised was that the angry Ouyang Ming actually calmed down. His gaze was deep and preoccupied, there was a weird glint in his eyes. It was unknown what he was thinking.

The next three treasures were also auctioned off at quite some high prices, but the highest was just four million and five hundred thousand gold. None of them were able to compete with the bids of the Air Splitter sabre and the Limitless Zhen Qi art.

The auction ended on a good note, and everyone inside exited one after another.

Opening the room door, Ye Chen came out, "Let's go!"

Wu Zongming was in good spirits as he put a grape in his mouth. He couldn't wait to get back to the Sky Cloud Martial School, so that he could take Zhen Qi pellet.

The two of them went out of the room, and were headed towards the exit.

"Little brat, so you are a disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School!" There were five youngsters standing at the entrance. There were both Tang Manlou and Li Ling, along with three others were they had never seen. The young man at the front was wearing a purple robe. His legs were quite long, and he was about 1.9 metres high.

Ye Chen calmly asked, "What is the matter?"

"Nothing much, our senior Brother Ouyang wishes to invite you to Fuxian Restaurant to have some wine, I hope you'll agree." One of them said in a menacing tone.

"Sorry, I am not free." Ye Chen took two steps to the side, and was about to leave.

The person once again stopped Ye Chen, "What? you won't give us this honor? That half piece of sword was let go by Brother Ouyang, otherwise, do you think you could have gotten it?"



On the side, Ouyang Ming sneered. He was not in the mood to bother with Ye Chen, he just wanted to know who bought the Limitless Zhen Qi art. After a little enquiry, he came to know that there were four people in that room, and three of them were wearing the uniform of Sky Cloud Martial School, while the other person wore a symbol of Sky Cloud Martial School. When he saw that Ye Chen was also from Sky Cloud Martial School, he thought of something.

Wu Zongming rolled his eyes and said, "Being unable to win something during an auction is only due to your uselessness, what does it have to do with us. Do you really think we need you to let us have something?"

"Hmn, Brother Ouyang thinks highly of you, that's why he invited you people, don't refuse a toast to drink a loser's drink," another Purple Sun Martial Palace disciple scowled.

Ye Chen first thought that it was Tang Manlou who instigated this, but it didn't seem like that now. He calmly said, "Get out of the way, don't obstruct us."

The two of them were about to flare up due to their anger when Ouyang Ming started speaking, "Among the younger generation of the Windy Nation, many of them wish to invite me over for some wine, but they can only dream. Today I am personally inviting you for some wine, you have to go even if you are unwilling to."

"What an arrogant tone, I'd like to see how 'the Godly Legs' Ouyang Ming would make us disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School accept your invitation."

From behind Ye Chen and Wu Zongming, Xu Jing's voice sounded out loud.

“Sister Xu.” Ye Chen and Wu Zongming greeted her by nodding their heads.

Xu Jing walked to the front, followed by three female disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

Ouyang Ming squinted his eyes. “Peak of late Condensing Reality Realm, is that why you have such a haughty tone? But, you are not good enough, only your eldest sister Zhu Mei has the right to talk to me in such a tone.”

“Sister Zhu is not here, there’s only I, Xu Jing.” Xu Jing was not tall, Ye Chen estimated that she was about 1.7 metres high. She was dressed in white, and had a beautiful body. Her presence was not any weaker than Ouyang Ming’s. It even had a hint of a dominating aura.

“Who are you to talk to Brother Ouyang like that?” The plaza entrance was quite big, about three or four zhang wide. There were no movements from the Purple Sun Martial palace disciples who were talking, but suddenly a palm attack was headed towards her. At the same time, scorching hot Zhen Qi formed a red colored ring around Xu Jing.

“Fall back.”

All of a sudden, Xu Jing took a step forward, even the space around her vibrated, making everybody restless as their blood and Qi roiled. In an instant, blinding golden light shot out, shattering the red colored ring, shocking her opponent as he started to spit some blood.

“How is she this powerful! Even though they are both at the late Condensing

Reality Realm, her opponent couldn't even take a single blow. He does not even have the right to fight with Sister Xu." Wu Zongming clearly saw everything. Xu Jing just took a step forward and her opponent's attack was completely nullified and he was spitting blood. He felt extremely shocked.

Ye Chen felt surprised too. After she entered the Late Condensing Reality Realm, sister Xu Jing was way more powerful than he imagined.

The entrance was a noticeable place, the commotion immediately attracted a lot of warriors and they completely surrounded them.

"Come and see, there's something happening between the disciples of Purple Sun Martial palace and the Sky Cloud Martial School."

"Ouyang Ming lost the bids again and again, how could he simply take it. He will definitely bother the owner of the Limitless Zhen Qi Art. It's a pity that there is no one among these Sky Cloud Martial School disciples, that's capable of going against him."

"That may not be true, that female disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School managed to beat her opponent in just one move."

"Ouyang Ming hasn't even made his move. When he does, she wouldn't be able to fight back."

Not just the other warriors, even the organisers of the auction have taken notice of this conflict. In just a few moments, the yellow-clad old man pushed through the crowd and came over, "Good day to you, the North-west Auction plaza prohibits all fights inside the plaza, please give us some face, or we will

have to clearly explain it in other ways.”

The yellow-clad old man was not only an auctioneer, he was also an initial Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior. As he spoke, there was a gush of Zhen Qi that turned into a formless wall separating them.

Ouyang Ming knew that it was impossible to make a move there, so he nodded with a smile and said, “It is not like that, I just wanted to invite them over for some wine. Since they have something else to do, I will not force them. Let’s go.”

After they left, Xu Jing said to Ye Chen and Wu Zongming, “It’s not safe to go alone, why don’t you come along with us!”

If even Ouyang Ming left, there was no reason for the rest of them to not leave.

Seeing that the issue was resolved, the yellow-clad old man had a wry smile on his face. The disciples of the big martial institutions were the best customers of the auction plaza, but they were also the ones who created the most trouble.

## ***Chapter 92 - Intercepted midway***

On the northwest plains, there were six people riding their horses extremely fast. Even the grass was being clipped due to the speed.

"It's hard to imagine that in just a year since the last time we met, you not only became an inner disciple, but also cultivated to the Mid Condensing Reality Realm." Xu Jing said lightly, as she rode along with Ye Chen,.

Ye Chen said, "It's nothing compared to you, senior sister. I think even Ouyang Ming will not necessarily gain an upper hand if he were to spar with you."

"I'm also not sure about gaining an upper hand when sparring with him. After all, he is at the peak of Condensing Reality Realm, his foundation is deeper than mine. Even senior sister Zhu Mei said that this person's intentions are not easily seen through. He is someone with a desire to challenge the three major young masters. Let's not talk about him anymore. You should be stronger than an ordinary Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, your whole body has an extremely strong aura. The essence of strength being emitted by your body is strong, this is something only seen if you have a strength of ten thousand Jin or more. " Xu Jing could see that Ye Chen was different with just a glance.

Ye Chen asked curiously, "How can you know that just by looking?"

"This is a secret technique that makes use of your spiritual blood, it can sense whether the opponent's spiritual blood is strong. In general, if the Qi essence is rotating around, it indicates the strength of at least ten thousand Jin, if the essence is smoky, it indicates the strength of at least hundred thousand Jin, and

is invincible to all other evil Qi. Anyone can detect it even without this technique. There's a legend that says that there was once a great powerhouse with a strength of a million Jin, the essence of strength was like a rainbow piercing through the earth and sky, bringing about nine days of hurricanes and disasters. No one knows whether it's true or not."

"There was really such a thing! I really am ignorant." Ye Chen marvelled in his heart, 'a million Jin strength converged in the small body of a human, how scary would it be? he would be able to crush everything in the world, uproot mountains and could even break the earth's crust.'

Xu Jing said, "It's not that you are ignorant, it's just that many people do not know of this. I only knew this because I read about this in some old book, it was recorded on it that ten thousand years ago, there was a sect called Boundless Strength Sect. Everyone in this sect would only train their physical bodies. Those with the strength of ten thousand Jin would only be eligible to be a janitor, those with thirty thousand Jin strength would be considered an outer court disciple, those with fifty thousand Jin strength would be an inner court disciple, those with eighty thousand Jin strength would be a core disciple. Outer Court elders would have the strength of at least two hundred thousand jin, Inner Court elders would have the strength of three hundred thousand jin, the sect leader and the few elders at the top all had strength of about five hundred thousand Jin or more. They were so tyrannical that they could even kill the dragon of the East Sea and the shark god of the West Sea."

Wu Zongming and the three female students were also listening intently, but they were unable to completely believe it in their hearts, 'was there really someone in the world that was able to train their physical strength to five hundred thousand and even up to a million Jin?'

"Where is this Boundless Strength Sect, did they perish?" Ye Chen asked.

Xu Jing nodded, "It seems like the heavens did not allow the existence of the Boundless Strength Sect, the whole mountain, which was the base of the sect was flattened overnight. Someone found a piece of dragon scale in the ruins, it was as big as a wash basin. It could even cut metal like mud. It had an unparalleled sharpness to it. Rumour has it that the dragon gods descended to Earth and exterminated the whole Boundless Strength Sect. That piece of dragon scale was said to have been left from the battle between the sect leader and the few top elders with the dragon god."

"Dragon god, that's exaggerating! That is a legendary existence who had overcome the constraints of life and death. Someone who could not die or perish, and could travel the whole world without any obstruction," one of the female students exclaimed.

Xu Jing gave her a look, "The vastness of the world is not something you can understand, even those strong people that had overcome the limitations of life and death have yet to realize the truth, let alone us."

Ye Chen smiled bitterly, his strength would be equivalent to janitor in the Boundless Strength Sect, not even an outer court, he really could not imagine how hard the disciples of the Boundless Strength Sect trained to achieve that level of physical strength.

Half a day went by, it was already afternoon.

They had already travelled with great speed to the central location of the northwest plains. If they looked ahead, all they could see was only a line where the sky and the plains seemed to converge. There were no boundaries as the

clouds slowly enlarged till they covered the sky over their heads.

"There are noises of horse hoofs behind us!"

Ye Chen focused on his ears and heard the noise.

Xu Jing nodded, "They came earlier than I expected."

Wu Zongming felt strange, and asked: "Senior sister, did you already know that someone was looking for trouble with us?"

"Ouyang Ming and the horse bandits of the northwest plains have an inextricable relationship, he would often borrow their hands to surround and kill off the disciples of the opposing sects. This isn't the first time and it won't be the last either, we just don't know which group of horse bandits this is."

"Damn, he even conspired with the horse bandits of the plains" The three female students felt angry.

Xu Jing looked towards the big black dots converging from all directions and said, "What's so surprising about this? Everyone has their own way of doing things, there are despicable and cunning ways, there are righteous ways, but there are also ruthless ways. There are just too many ways to get things done, but as long as the martial heart is clear without any demons, anyone can cultivate to the highest level, it's irrelevant with one's personality."

"Such deep insight." Ye Chen said under his breath.



Gallop gallop .....

They were able to hear the galloping noises emerging from the horses as they gradually became louder. Everyone was already able to see the clothing and appearance of the horse bandits riding towards them.

"When I say move, kill and break out of the encirclement. I will bring up the rear." Xu Jing's decisive tone was awe-inspiring.

"Senior sister!"

"Stop talking anymore nonsense, there are even experts of the Claspings Yuan Realm among them, do not underestimate them."

The horses were running very quickly, they were in front of them in just a few moments. There were more than fifty horse bandits. There were at least seven or eight of them with a strong presence, they were obviously warriors of the late Condensing Reality Realm. One of them had a face filled with a beard, with a lot more condensed Zhen Qi that was of unparalleled purity, he was definitely a Claspng Yuan Realm warrior.

Just when the horse bandits were about thirty paces away, Xu Jing ordered with her feminine voice, "Breakthrough, kill them."

Whoosh!

At the same time as she spoke, Xu Jing's body emitted a golden light. Ignoring the distance between them, she hit two warriors that were at the late condensing reality realm, each with a punch to their chests.

Ye Chen was not slow either, the crane shadow steps art was unleashed to its utmost potential, his whole body went out of sight and he disappeared into thin air.

Then, a horse bandit that was at the late condensing reality realm had his head burst into a mist of blood.

Wu Zongming and the three female students knew that they were weaker than other two, so they gathered and worked together to break through towards the West.

The leader of the Horse bandit group let out an angry roar after he saw that three of his capable men lost their lives in the blink of an eye. He sprang towards Xu Jing, while the thick and vigorous Zhen Qi scraped off a layer of the surface of the ground. He approached her like lightning.

"Demon God Killing Fist, shatter heaven and earth."

Xu Jing did not flinch or avoid the attack, both of her fists resembled a giant demon cutting across the mountains. They hit the horse bandit leader head on.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Even the surrounding horse bandits were affected, they were flung outwards due to the shockwave of the impact, and they spit out mouthfuls of fresh blood as they flew in the air.

Xu Jing had to take three steps back, but she still looked calm. However, her actions were extremely wild. Her white dress fluttered in the air, she attacked the opponent again with her most violent and strongest punch.

On the other side, Ye Chen was surrounded by three vice leaders of the horse bandit gang. Each of them was a late Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

"Kid, just die. Wolf Slaughtering blade!"

"Violent Lightning Spear!"

"Ghost's wails and Wolf's howls!"

The three of them used their most powerful attacks, as they wanted to kill Ye Chen by working together.

Ye Chen's figure became fuzzy and turned blurry, he continuously flashed and avoided all three of their attacks, Ye Chen's aura continued to increase as if it had no limits. He threw a punch to the side.

"Tiger roar Dragon Fist!"

The power of the punch even affected the earth and brought up a lot of dust.

Bang!

The ground exploded, the horse bandits with the late Condensing Reality Realm cultivation exploded to several pieces. Blood and other other organs flew everywhere.

"This kid is quite tricky. Archers, be ready."

At the sound of the order, arrows that were intense like a heavy rain were shot straight at Ye Chen, locking all of his escape routes.

Ding ding ding!

Suddenly, Ye Chen's whole body emitted a jade-like radiance; as soon as the arrows came in contact with it, they broke in half and were all bounced off.

## ***Chapter 93 - Highly Condensed Sword Qi***

Clang!

Faced with the dense rain of arrows, along with a couple of Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors on the side who were waiting for an opportunity to attack, Ye Chen did not dare to take them lightly. He immediately pulled out his [Hidden Cloud Sword].

[Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art] could increase the power of his sword arts. So, when the sword was pulled out, it had a snow white glint to it just like lotus blossoms. The sharpness being radiated by the sword, cut the earth around Ye Chen into pieces, there was no place that escaped this fate. This all happened at the same time, there were silhouettes of mountains hidden within the sword light with unparalleled sharpness. It looked extremely rich. When the two of them combined, it almost felt like the legendary Sword Mountain .

"Highly Condensed Sword Qi!"

The sword slashed out in a straight line, the sword light was extremely compressed. It formed a dense sword Qi and lashed out, its speed was so fast that even the air was cut apart like waves of water. All the natural Yuan Qi was in a havoc.

In their eyes, it didn't look like simple sword Qi, it undeniably felt like a whole mountain range that came crushing through. The idea that it cannot be resisted

was born in their minds and their aura immediately weakened up to eighty percent.

rip!

The flat ground was split apart, the horse robbers that were around or on that line were either cut in half or were completely crushed into a blood mist by the aftermath of the sword Qi. Even after their bodies disappeared, the sword Qi's momentum did not subside and continued to head towards the horse robber's leader who was suppressing Xu Jing.

"Sword Qi?" The horse robber's leader felt an abnormality, and turned his head to take a look. His heart and soul were completely startled, 'a warrior who was only at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm was able to condense such sword Qi? Wasn't this something only Claspings Yuan Realm warriors were capable of?'. Furthermore this sword Qi was not the same as any average sword Qi. It felt as if it contained huge mountain-like aura hidden within, with a desire to crush and flatten everything, it was already close to reaching the next level, just one step away from becoming the legendary sword intent.

After a few dozen moves, Xu Jing was gradually being suppressed by the horse robber's leader. But, she was also slowly getting accustomed to his fighting style. If she hadn't guessed it wrong, this man should be one of the leaders of the few horse robber gangs of the North West Plains. His name was Chi Kui, he stepped in the Claspings Yuan Realm a few years ago, his way of fighting was direct and daring. If it was not for her great strength, she wouldn't even be able to withstand three of his moves.

After battling for a while, Xu Jing saw that her opponent was distracted, she could not help but take a look to know the reason for him being distracted. In her line of sight, Ye Chen who was in a moon white long robe looked like a lone

man on a cliff. Although he was right in front of her eyes, he gave people the illusion of being faraway in the sky.

"This Junior-disciple brother of mine is quite amazing, there is a fierce aura in his sword Qi, if he was given enough time, he would be able to become an unrivaled sword artist in the future."

Chi Kui started laughing, he withdrew his left hand, and threw out a punch, and said, "You can be amazed as much as you want, but as a mere Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior, he's completely helpless against me, Mountain Shattering Punch!"

Kacha!

The aura of the sword Qi was destroyed first, then the sword Qi completely collapsed and vanished without a trace.

But, Chi Kui himself also stiffened, he felt a few wisps of silk-like sword aura enter through his arm, intending to harm his foundations. He would be able to neutralise the sword Qi's threat only after using a part of his Zhen Qi to suppress it.

Xu Jing understood Ye Chen's intentions, he wanted her to escape. After realizing this, the Zhen Qi in her body was used to the extreme, two concentric magical golden rings formed behind her head, one big and one small, one completely inside the other.

"Low Rank Earth Realm skill, [Golden Three Realm Art]!"

Ye Chen only took a look and recognized the technique that Xu Jing trained, it was the Low Rank Earth Realm Skill [Golden Three Realms Art], this technique was of unparalleled strength, the seventh stage was called Shocking Realm, the eighth stage was called Extreme Realm, the ninth stage was Astral Realm, these three realms combined to conquer everything and were unstoppable. Xu Jing clearly had trained it to the eighth stage, Extreme Realm. With the seventh and eighth realm combined, the power increased suddenly, just a single punch made Chi Kui take four steps backwards. There was also a thin stream of fresh blood on the edge of his lips.

"Break!" Not interested in extending the battle anymore, Xu Jing carried on with her movements, the burning golden Zhen Qi instantly blew apart those who were trying to block her. Leaving the horses behind, she flew towards Wu Zongming and the rest.

Over at Ye Chen's side, he was also unstoppable. He turned around and used the [Lone Peak of 13 Swords], each stroke was extremely forceful and was directed towards Chi Kui, who was striding towards him. Ye Chen drifted backwards at lightning speed, even his feet did not touch the ground.

With the help of Xu Jing and Ye Chen, Wu Zongming and the rest were finally able to fight their way out. They rode their horses and escaped from there as if they were escaping from hell, and faded away in a few seconds.

"Damn!"

Chi Kui was extremely angry and annoyed, he stormed to the place where he clashed with Ye Chen's sword skill and punched the ground, people standing on the side almost felt the ground tremble and even trees were shaken.



"Brother, what do we do now?" The vice-leader of the horse-mounted bandits asked seriously.

Chi Kui tried to calm himself down, he suppressed his unstable emotions and asked, "How many of our brothers have we lost so far?"

"A total of twenty-three. Except me, all the other vice-leaders were killed."

"Six late Condensing Reality Realm practitioners were killed, this really ticks me off!" said Chi Kui as he rolled his big, wide-opened eyes. Although the group of horse-mounted bandits only had fifty people, each of them could be considered veteran warriors. Especially the six vice-leaders, they had been following him for quite a few years as he battled across the North-West plains. They were the group of people he relied the most on. But, now that they died for him in this terrific battle, his heart was bleeding.

"Brother, I already told you not to go along with Ouyang Ming, he is one of the most treasured disciples of the Purple Sun Martial Palace, and is well taken care of. The martial school indeed gives us a lot of gold and treasure to repay us, but we sacrifice our lives in their fights. In the end they are the ones continuously increasing their fighting strength."

"I know that." Chi Kui was indeed a worthy leader of the Yi Fang Horse-mounted Bandit group. Although he was extremely furious with everything that happened, he still kept calm and said, "We have offended the Sky Cloud Martial School's disciples, we cannot have conflicts with the Purple Sun Martial Palace too. From now on, all of you decrease your contact with Brother Ouyang. For the moment, let's retreat from the north-west plains. We shall rest well, recruit a lot of new members and we could then make a comeback in the future."

"Yes, my leader!"

After they fought their way out of the encirclement, Xu Jing and Ye Chen rode in the same direction as Wu Zongming and the female disciples headed earlier.

Xu Jing took out a [Qi recovering pellet] and said, "The rest of the journey can be dangerous. This is a medical pellet that can help you recover your Qi."

Ye Chen had already heard of the renowned [Hui Xuan Dan (medicinal pellet)], it costs 3000 gold for a single pellet. This pellet could recover Qi ten times faster than the normal recovery speed. It was a necessity for high-level martial warriors. He took a glance at the pellet, and immediately swallowed it. He used his internal energy to move the Zhen Qi as he made use of the pellet. The almost stagnant Qi whirlpool in his dantian regained its recovery power due to the potency of [Hui Xuan Dan]. Zhen Qi started to flow to every part of Ye Chen's body and continued to infiltrate every small meridian in his body.

Previously Ye Chen first attacked with powerful punches, and then used the [Lone peak of thirteen swords], which caused him to consume a lot of Zhen Qi. Although his attack strength was very powerful, it cannot last for a long time as his cultivation was far weaker than the Claspng Yuan Realm warriors. After all, the capability of a Mid Condensing Reality Realm practitioner was still very low.

After seven days, the six people finally arrived at the Windy mountain, the base of Sky Cloud Martial School.

The next half month was no different from his previous routine, practice, complete a few missions and then repeat...

One day, Ye Chen accidentally heard some information obtained by one of his fellow disciple who was also at the auction. It was that the 'North Snow Fast Blade' Lin Qi had safely arrived at the North Snow Martial Academy. It was said that some people had also seen a man in a grey coat, with a painful expression and a broken left arm.

## ***Chapter 94 - The Broken Jade Reborn***

The clouds were raging like the seas. The wind blew furiously.

“You really want me to use my full strength to fight with you?” At a distant precipice, Xu Jing stood still, dressed in a white robe. She was not too tall and her body looked a little frail. But, no matter how fierce the wind was, she stood still like a majestic statue that had been standing tall for over a hundred years.

Ye Chen nodded, “I have been practicing a martial skill, it would help me improve if I could withstand a great amount of pressure. I need your help for this.” The skill he mentioned was the [Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell]. He had mastered this skill up to the peak of third level, but he was unable to make a breakthrough and reach the fourth level - The Broken Jade Reborn Stage. He thought hard in the past few days, and came to the conclusion that he might not be able to improve with just his own effort. He felt that he might be able to bring out his potential and improve the skill in a shorter time only by fighting with a stronger opponent.

“In that case, I will not go easy on you.” Xu Jing knew that Ye Chen was serious, even she was curious to know what the skill was. She was never a talkative person, so she did not question him further.

“[The Crossing Ocean Monster Slaying fist]!” Xu Jing placed her right leg forward, all the rocks in the radius of ten feet got crushed and the pieces rose in the air. She was extremely fast. She swiftly reached the place Ye Chen was standing at. Her punch aimed at Ye Chen was glowing with a bright golden light.

Ye Chen felt an explosive force from the punch. He did not dare to take it easy. He fully activated the [Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell], his skin shone with a jade like luster. His body started to shake, he started revolving his Zhen Qi to the max and punched at Xu Jing.

Clang!

The two punches fiercely clashed causing a shockwave to spread out. A large number of cracks spread out on the ground, like a large number of snakes crawling along a widespread surface.

“It is indeed true that your punch has the power of at least ten thousand jin.” Ye Chen did not use his combat skill to defend. Therefore, he felt dizzy and even his hands were shaking.

Xu Jing had no intention to halt the attacks. She threw her second punch right after that.

“[Mountain breaking fist]” Glowing with golden light, accompanied with a whizzing sound, she aimed at the left side of Ye Chen’s head. The punch was vigorous like thunder across the mountains.

Bang!

Ye Chen reached out his hand to take the punch, and his left hand came out from his waist to begin the counterattack.

"Well, I am going to use the power of the seventh stage of the [Golden Three Realms Art] now." After she overcame the force of ye chen's punch, an unreal ring of golden fire emerged behind Xu Jing's head, and the golden Zhen Qi in her body was being burnt. With the golden Zhen Qi and ten thousand pound jin power, she looked like she could destroy anything she wanted.

Ye Chen neither flinched nor avoided it, he laughed and said, " Senior sister, bring it on!"

A cold glint flashed in Xu Jing's eyes, at the twist of her feet the cliff's surface cracked open. Immediately after that, she punched with both her left and right fists, unleashing the same move that was used against Chi Kui.

Kacha!

The lustrous jade like radiance on the surface of Ye Chen's body collapsed, it was completely destroyed. His tall body that was as steady as a mountain had to take ten steps back to stabilize himself. His every single step was extremely heavy, there was a huge thud accompanying every single one of them.

"Good, again!" He once again activated the [Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell], Ye Chen ignored the taste of blood in his mouth and rushed straight at Xu Jing.

"Retreat!"

This sparring session was for Ye Chen to have a breakthrough, no fancy tricks were needed, only the impact of head on clashes was what he desired. So Xu Jing gave another punch just like the previous one, forcing Ye Chen to take another ten steps back.

"Again!"

Boom!

"Again!"...

After this continued for a while, his seven orifices were starting to bleed, the jade like radiance on the surface of Ye Chen's body was dark and bleak, it had the signs of disappearing at any moment.

But this only increased his fighting spirit, the essence of strength was rolling all over his body, even the gusts of wind could not blow it away, his tall body was unyielding, it was as straight as a javelin, with unparalleled sharpness, as if a piece of rough metal was being turned into a weapon with a sharp edge after going being polished a million times.

Xu Jing gasped in shock, 'Just what technique on earth did Junior brother Ye Chen train to take on dozens of my punches head on without falling down even

once! Instead, his body is showing signs of being reborn. Other than that, Junior apprentice brother's fighting spirit and mentality really resemble that of a great swordsman. He is slowly revealing his potential.'

She knew in her heart that this amount of training was still insufficient. So, the golden Zhen Qi around Xu Jing's body became even more radiant. Around the ring of light behind her head, another larger ring appeared, which signified the usage of the eighth stage of the [Golden Three Realms Art] - the Extreme Realm.

A punch blasted out, the mountain winds seemed to stop, even the waves of air seemed to halt, only the cliff could not withstand the force and was a little shaky.

"All Monster Slaying fist!"

Although the [Monster Slayer Great Fist Art] was only a Top rank Mortal Realm Martial skill, the power of the final stage was extremely close to a Low rank Earth Realm skill. It was just that it was too troublesome to execute. The user had to have trained the Golden Three Realm Art to its eighth stage, otherwise the user would be unable to withstand the strong backlash of the force and might even suffer some minor injuries. It was similar to Ye Chen's [Tyrant Fist Art], just a few less side effects.

The golden light was like a waterfall, attacking Ye Chen with an enormous amount of power that could even break through a mountain.

Puff!



The jade like radiance was unable to withstand it for even a moment, it immediately collapsed and was destroyed. Ye Chen only felt like the clouds were extremely fast, and there was a sweet taste in his throat, as large amounts of blood sprayed out, forming a mist of blood.

The fast moving clouds came to a stop, as Ye Chen's whole body sunk deeply into the ground, he was unable to move even a single finger. He felt extremely weak and dizzy.

Smiling bitterly, Ye Chen said weakly, "Senior sister, are you trying to kill me!"

"Chronic diseases need strong medicine to cure, it saves us the trouble." Xu Jing walked towards Ye Chen, she pulled his jaw open and popped a dark red pill into his mouth. She said, "This is the [Body Repairing Pellet] that I always use when I train my physical strength, its effect are really good. Don't move for a while, you might hurt your meridians. That would make everything worse."

Ye Chen did not hear the last few words, as soon as the [Body Repairing Pellet] entered his throat, it became medicinal liquid and flowed down. With his stomach as the center, the medicine's strength slowly diffused into his internal organs and the hundreds of veins in his body, and finally into the bones, it relentlessly forced out the impurities in his body.

Dark black impurities exuded from the surface of his body, which could not be anymore stinkier.

After an unknown period of time, Ye Chen slowly opened his eyes, there was a

bright flash in his eyes, it almost resembled an extremely sharp sword light, capable of penetrating anything.

"You stink, quickly go back and wash up!" Her slender and pale hands were pressed on to the rocks, Xu Jing accumulated her Zhen Qi and pushed it out which shook Ye Chen.

Ye Chen took a sniff and felt that he really smelled awful, he felt extremely embarrassed and said, "Senior sister, Thank you for your help, if you have any matters you need a hand with, I will never refuse."

"Go on, do you want to choke me to death with that stench." Xu Jing had no expression on her face.

.....

One week went by.

That night, Ye Chen was sitting cross legged on his bed, continuously practising the [Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell].

The jade like radiance on the surface of his body was bright one moment and dark in the next moment. It continued to flicker, sometimes its radiance was so

lustrous that it looked like the whole person was made of jade, sometimes it was dark and bleak like a rock.

Snap!

There was a slight inaudible noise, the jade covering Ye Chen's body started to break down inch by inch, then they were absorbed again into his body. Few seconds later, the jade turned into a white light, covering Ye Chen's body once again, but this time, it looked way stronger than the last time, almost diamond like.

Right then, Ye Chen had mastered the fourth stage of the [Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell] - the Broken Jade Reborn!

## ***Chapter 95 - Ancient Water Lake***

Ye Chen opened his eyes and jumped down from the bed. He did a set of [King Kong Fist] without using his Zhen Qi.

The punches made howling sounds, the furniture in the room and the wooden windows all vibrated until they crackled. In the end they all broke into pieces and were scattered all over the floor.

"My goodness, all of a sudden there's an increase of five thousand Jin to my physical strength, reaching twenty thousand Jin." Ye Chen immediately felt the substantial increase in his physical strength, his whole body felt as if it had limitless energy, he felt that he could kill five big buffalos with a single punch each.

Physical strength was unlike Zhen Qi, it was limited by the human body and its growth was slow. It was amazing enough that he had the strength of twenty thousand Jin, even warriors of the Clasp of Yuan Realm would not possess such a strong body, unless they trained with a set of body strengthening skills.

"Senior Sister Xu Jing must have used only seventy to eighty percent of her real strength that day, otherwise that final blow might have really killed me." As he thought of the power of the [Golden Three Realms art] and the [Monster Slayer Great Fist Art], Ye Chen somehow came to understand his own capabilities and did not arrogantly assume that the opponent really used all her strength.

That night was without any incident.

The next morning, when the sun was high up in the sky.

Inspired by the shining sun, Ye Chen came to the [Floating Cloud Martial Palace].

Inside the hall was only emptiness, there were just three or four people choosing their missions, it can be said to be deserted.

Ye Chen walked to the front of the wall with the [gray rank] missions and thought for a while. His eyes were fixed on the last mission in the first row, it looked like it was newly put up.

Mission: Go to the Ancient Water Lake, help the Qu Family find the missing boat.

Details: Ancient Water Lake has a dangerous place called the [Winding Path]. There are a lot of monsters in the water, along with an underwater whirlpool, it is extremely dangerous.

Task Difficulty: Five star grey rank.

Task reward: one hundred and twenty-two thousand gold.

"Ancient Water Lake, isn't it in the far north of the Windy Nation? Its quite far from here!"

Ye Chen had heard of the reputation of the Ancient Water Lake, it was said that this lake had a history of three thousand years. Initially, it was just a small

lake. But, when it suffered from a major earthquake, a radius of a thousand miles sunk into the ground. Along with more than three thousand years of rain water accumulation, it came to be the Ancient Water Lake.

In its early days, the [Ancient Water Lake] was not dangerous, but nowadays it was abnormally dangerous. It was as if the major earthquake had released some kind of ancient monsters that dominated the whole Ancient Water Lake, even turning some of the originally not monstrous fish and shrimp to some kind of monsters.

Ancient Water Lake had a large cluster of central islands, called the [Pan Shan Island]. The tribal family known as the Qu family which lived on the island were the ones that issued this mission. The Qu Family had a long history, they started living on the [Pan Shan Island] about three thousand years ago. Even though they knew that the Ancient Water Lake had many monsters, they never had the idea to leave that place and continued to live there all along.

Sometimes, a few geniuses would come from those islands, eager to leave the Ancient Water Lake and to make a name for themselves. It was said that there was an [Inner court Disciple] in the Emerald Martial Palace Valley, who was from the Pan Shan Island's Qu Family.

He did not dwell on it too much, Ye Chen tore down the mission notice and left the [Floating Cloud Palace].

At the foot of the mountain, he started to ride towards the North.

.....

Eight days later.

Ye Chen reached the vast expanse near the Ancient Water Lake.

Coincidentally, there was a small run down restaurant on the shore, with four black characters on the plaque, they were almost chipped away.

'Ancient Water Restaurant!'

Ye Chen patted the horse on its head after he dismounted, "You worked hard these past few days, I should change you when we go back later, you would have a life filled with suffering if you follow me."

It was a shame, but the Dark Brown horse was only reliable at the initial stages, as time went on, it couldn't fulfill his needs. It could only travel two thousand miles in a day, and three thousand if it was really forced to travel during the night too. Ye Chen planned to get a [Lion eyed half demon horse], it could cover a distance of three thousand three hundred miles in a day. If they travelled throughout the night, even five thousand miles was not a problem. The most important point was that the [Lion eyed half demon horse] was physically tough. It can continuously run for three days and three nights, it only needed to rest for a night to recover, and it would be lively again. It did not need the owner to take care of it at all. "Young Swordsman, it seems like you are headed to the Ancient Water Lake right! Why don't you come in and take a rest." The waiter saw that a customer came and greeted warmly.

Ye Chen nodded, "Take care of my horse."

"Sure, this way, please!"

The restaurant was more dilapidated than he expected, the walls were mottled, the table surface was rough and uneven, and even the chairs were pieced together and looked very shabby.

Ye Chen chose a chair that was pleasing to the eye and sat down, he ordered a few small dishes.

While eating, unexpectedly, there were hoof beats coming from the outside of the restaurant.

"Today seems like a lucky day, there are more guests coming."

The waiter's spirits were immediately lifted up.

Soon, a young man dressed in green walked in.

The young man in green frowned when he saw Ye Chen, "You are an inner-court disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School, are you going to the Pan Shan Island of the Ancient Water Lake?"

"Yes." Ye Chen could see that he was an inner court disciple of the [Emerald Martial Palace].

"Then you do not need to go, Qu Family matters should be handled by the members of the Qu Family."

Ye Chen lifted his eyebrows, "So, you are a member of the Qu Family."



"The member of the one hundred and sixty sixth generation of the Qu Family, Qu Ming." The young man in green sat down next to a table opposite Ye Chen.

"Sorry, since I accepted the mission, I will try to finish it."

Ye Chen did not intend to give up on the mission.

Qu Ming sneered, "I will remind you that this Ancient Water Lake cannot be crossed by just any boat, there is a distance of four hundred and fifty miles from here to the Pan Shan Island. At the slightest mistake, you will be dragged under water by the monsters, and would die without a complete corpse. The [winding path] is an even more dangerous place."

"There's danger in everything we do, how can we achieve great things if we fear everything."

They never had any conflicts before. After all, not every [Emerald Martial Palace] disciple was annoyingly proud.

.....

At the shore of the Ancient Water Lake, the lake water was surging. Lights were sparkling on it, at first glance, the skyline and the water surface seemed to have merged in the distance.

Qu Ming took a glance at Ye Chen and took out a piece of wooden log from his storage ring. It was as thick as his waist and had a length of about ten feet.

The wooden log was shot out more than a dozen feet away, it whistled through the air as it moved above the lake waters. Its movement was fast, but Qu Ming was faster. Even before one could see him do something, the moment the wooden log touched the water, he was already stepping on it, as if he was as light as a feather. He went farther and farther as he rode on the wooden log. Soon, there was only a small dot visible.

"Using a wooden log as a boat."

Ye Chen nodded, his eyes swept around, and soon found the small forest a few hundred meters away. It consisted of huge trees with thirty to forty feet length.

With a few flashes of light from the sword, a huge tree fell down.

Ye Chen feared that he might encounter monster attacks on his way and the wooden log could not make it, so he cut a dozen more, each equally thick and weighing several hundred pounds.

Ye Chen came to the shore and he did the same. He threw the wooden log out and stood on it.

The scenery on the both sides went by extremely fast. Ye Chen felt that his heart had never been this happy ever. For a brief moment, he felt that the sky was high and the earth was vast and he was free like a bird.

The wooden log's momentum ran out, Ye Chen ushered his [Zhen Qi] and erupted it at the rear of the wooden log, successfully turning it into a source of power.

Brawl! brawl!

Although he did not catch up to Qu Ming, he was not exactly slow. In addition, he felt that it was nice to view the scenic lake while standing on the wooden log.

After he travelled for over a dozen miles.

Under the water behind the wooden log, a huge shadow continued to follow him quietly.

## ***Chapter 96 - Ancient Water Python***

"Sure enough, the Ancient Water Lake is filled with dangers."

Ye Chen gazed at the waters in front of him, he heard the sound of water surface being broken in a rush, as many weird shuttle-shaped fishes jumped out.

These weird fish were three feet long, their whole bodies were covered with dark green scales, the chest fins and pelvic fins were long and wide. They resembled a bird's wings and were flapping violently as if they were flying.

Chi Chi Chi Chi Chi Chi .....

While they were still in the air, each fish opened its mouth and shot a lot of two inch long poisonous stingers with high intensity.

Even though Ye Chen did not recognize the species of that weird fish, he felt that those poisonous stingers cannot be underestimated, as they might even be able to instantly poison a warrior of the [Condensing Reality Realm] to death. Of course, after training [the fourth spell of the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell], it was almost impossible for the poisonous stingers to pierce his defense. But, Ye Chen did not intend to be passive and get beaten.

The protective Zhen Qi started to react, the intense poisonous stingers were all bent to pieces.

Clang!

[Hidden Cloud Sword] came out of its scabbard, and continuously flashed four times.

The next moment!

Four sword lights in the shape of a cross rushed out, cutting the weird fishes to pieces, it rained blood.

Before one trouble was settled, another one already came at him.

Suddenly, there appeared a giant wave behind him, a gigantic weird snake was looming in the wave, its monstrous aura was overwhelming and it was even stirring up many whirlpools.

This time Ye Chen recognized the weird snake's species, it was a top fourth level monster [Ancient Water Python], it had amazing strength and could even control the wind and water. It had an [Inner Monster Core] in its body, and some of them might even form a [Water Separation Core]. If its worn on a warrior's body, one could instantly double their evasion speed in water using their Zhen Qi. It was a rare exotic treasure.

Hiss!

[Ancient Water Python] opened its giant mouth and a thick column of greyish white water shot towards him.

Ye Chen frowned slightly, the [Hidden Cloud Sword] in his hand cut the air horizontally, a clear sword mark emerged, and the condensed sword light continued to cut as it flew out.

Crash!

The water column burst open, it began to rain heavily.

Ye Chen stood still, the raining water was sliced out of existence by the protective Zhen Qi even before it got within three feet of him.

The [Ancient Water Python] saw that the water column was unable to do anything to Ye Chen, it raised its head and hissed to the sky, its ferocious aura rushed to the clouds, causing a drastic change in the Qi of the surroundings. Large dark clouds accumulated in the lower layer of the sky, it was so dark that it was unsettling. At the same time, there were wild winds raging across the Ancient Water Lake, the currents were surging, and there were many huge waves. "Average top fourth level monsters shouldn't be this powerful! Unless this [Ancient Water Python] has an ancient monster's blood flowing through its veins, this is quite surprising." As Ye Chen already knew, this top fourth level monster could indeed summon raging winds. But, causing such changes in the weather of an area was very hard and is almost impossible unless it was a fifth level monster. Only then could it bring about such huge changes.

The wooden log under his feet was bobbing up and down under the influence of the currents. Ye Chen scoffed, he raised his right leg and suddenly stomped it.

Om!

The water ripples spread out, the water surface in a ten meter radius calmed down, even the waves stopped unexpectedly.

The [Ancient Water Python] howled pitifully, its gigantic body threw itself upwards, as if it suffered some serious assault.

After it flashed a few times, the [Ancient Water Python] fell back onto the water surface. But, it did not suffer any harm, instead it became abnormally angry, its long body was lashing out and beating around. Its tail which was about four or five feet long broke the water waves, attacking violently towards Ye Chen. Only the blurred figure of its tail was visible.

Ye Chen had a dignified expression on his face. The previous strike was just to maintain the stability of wooden log. At the same time he also used the skill [Explosive Earthquake Art] he got from the Bloody Butcher. The hidden force attacked the Giant water python silently. Even though that strike cannot kill it, he guessed that it could at least hurt it or make it back off. But, it did not happen as its defense was extremely terrifying. Even the [Explosive Earthquake Art] was unable to hurt it.

Its tail that was as thick as a tank was waving around, creating extremely sharp blades out of air that charged towards Ye Chen. He moved his body upwards and jumped into the air at the speed of lightning without any second thoughts.

Snap!

The wooden log was instantly smashed, just like a stick hitting the bean curd.

Mid-air...

Ye Chen took a deep breath. He struck four times with his [Hidden Cloud Sword] towards the [Ancient Water Python], aiming at its head, neck, abdomen and a seven inch part of its tail.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Except the strike aimed towards its tail, the rest of the strikes hit exactly at the place he aimed. However, the sharpness of the sword could still break through the python's scales and just a bit of its skin. Greyish-red blood spurted out and mixed with the lake water.

The python was really hurt, its greenish eyes turned wide and fierce.

It opened its mouth and there was a swirling visible in its throat.

Suddenly, half a meter thick jet of spiral water gushed out. It was being compressed again, and become thicker as it charged towards Ye Chen.

"Well, this monster is too powerful and i'm already at my wits' end."

As the spiral of water was too fast, Ye Chen could only blast it away with a forceful slap.

There was a hint of blood on the corner of his mouth. Apparently, he had also suffered some minor injuries.

It was the same for the Giant Python, it's giant body flipped around a few times in the water and was a little dazed. So, it was unable to immediately attack for the moment.

"It looks like it's better for me to go to the Panshan Island first, I can get the [Water Separation Core] later." Ye Chen applied some strength on the bending water column mid-air, resembling a taut bowstring and immediately left the spot without continuing his struggle with the giant Python.

This was not a natural bow, it was the water column which was used by Ye Chen as leverage to increase the 'initial speed' for him to fly out from there.

Whoosh!

Ye Chen opened his arms wide like a crane and left the area in the blink of an eye, headed towards the Ancient Water Lake.

.....

After half a day passed, Ye Chen finally saw a large island that appeared green and luxurious.

The island was circular in shape and was surrounded by a winding road. At the center of the island, other than a huge mountain, there were a lot of ancient buildings in the area surrounding it.

With a wry smile, Ye Chen muttered to himself, "Qu Ming should have arrived earlier! After all, he is more familiar with this lake than I am and could easily

avoid the dangers." He shook his head and right away used his Zhen Qi to move the wooded log faster.

Ye Chen did not fly directly to the mountain as it was impolite.

By following the trail, Ye Chen reached the Panshan Road. There were four men standing there.

"Who are you?" The man with a yellow face shouted loudly.

Ye Chen replied, "Gentlemen, I'm a [Sky Cloud Martial School] disciple who come here for a task."

"Any evidence?" The man asked.

Ye Chen hurriedly took out his martial school's publicly recognised token out and handed it to the man.

The man looked at it carefully and confirmed that it was the real token. He returned the token and said, "Please, please excuse me for offending you just now, warrior Ye. Come, please follow me to go up to the mountain."

Ye Chen nodded and followed the man.



## Chapter 97: The Curse of Qu Family

The road in Pan Shan island was circular in form. Even after a distance of ten thousand feet, it still continued a few hundred thousand feet. According to the man with a yellow face, if one who wished to reach the peak, they would need to follow the path of Pan Shan road. It was a thousand year old tradition with no reason.

With their fast pace, they reached the peak in an instant.

There were ancient buildings constructed on the peak of the mountain. Behind these structures, there was a greenish mountain which was hundreds of feet high. From the mountain, a beautiful waterfall flowed down and splashed into the pool in the midst of the structures.

“What a serene place.” Ye Chen secretly wondered. He had always been in the towns and cities, therefore, by coming to this remote place in the island, he felt extremely refreshed.

Following the old stony road, Ye Chen and the man with the yellow face reached a big hut situated in the center.

“Master, we have a visit from a disciple of the [Sky Cloud Martial School].” The man with the yellow face shouted.

“Bring him in.” A hoarse voice replied.

Ye Chen stepped inside the house.

An old man was sitting in the living room. He was around seventy years old, his skin color was yellow as well. It seemed like it was not due to malnutrition and was instead a naturally yellow. There was a green-shirted young man sitting there, Qu Ming, who had reached slightly earlier.

Qu Ming was surprised that Ye Chen could arrive on Pan Shan Island.

Walking to the middle of the hall, Ye Chen greeted, “I am a disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Nice to meet you, Master Qu.”

The old man nodded, “You got here after accepting the task?”

“Yes.”

“Well, with the help of two disciple, we have a better chance to seek for the lost ship.”

“I, Ye Chen will do my best for this.” During their conversation, Ye Chen felt hesitant and carefully probed the skill level of the old man. After finding out that the old man was only at the seventh stage of the Mortal Realm, he could not help but ask, “Master Qu, on my way, I saw that all the residents of Qu were below Condensing Reality Realm, what happened?” He couldn’t believe that a big clan could not bring out a warrior of the Condensing Reality Realm. Qu Ming from the family was a good example, if he could cultivate to the Clasp of Yuan Realm, he would become a clan veteran warrior.

The old man sighed, “Please have a seat.”

Ye Chen took a seat in front of Qu Ming and waited for the explanation of the old man.

“Qu family could also bring Condensing Reality Realm stage warriors here, but they could not survive in the island for even three months. Every warrior who had reached this level would either experience disasters or were killed by the demon. If not this, they would go mad and would then disappear. Therefore, when Qu Ming had reached the Condensing Reality Realm previously, I sent him away from Pan Shan Island.” The old man said slowly.

“Isn’t that weird?” Ye Chen took a long breath, astonished.

Qu Ming calmly said, “It’s true. My father went mad and died fifteen years ago without any symptom.”

The atmosphere in the hall turned solemn.

Ye Chen asked, “Couldn’t Qu Family leave Pan Shan Island and seek for a new home in another place? There must be a place suitable for the Qu Family.”

“Three thousand years ago, when the Ancient Water Lake hadn’t gotten that name yet, it was called the Green Lake. We, the Qu Family used to live near the Green Lake, the Pan Shan Island had not even formed then. However, when our clan members retrieved an artifact from a cave underwater, everything changed. An earthquake occurred, spanning across thousands of miles. The land completely changed, it turned into a deep pit after that terrifying incident. Three

months of thunderstorms almost submerged everything around the Qu Clan. In that life and death situation, an island fell down from the sky, replacing the big pit in the Green Lake. Our ancestors thought that this was a gift and mercy from the gods and decided to move the family to that island. That island is the Pan Shan Island of now, the Pan Shan Road was built later.”

Recalling the past, the old man said, “But after we moved to the Pan Shan Island, it was found that every warrior above the mortal realm would die in three months without exception. The strongest clan leader after our ancestor told us something before he died.”

“What did he say?” Ye Chen got interested.

The old man squeezed out word by word with all his might, “The Demon... The Curse..., just these four word.”

The Demon, the Curse!

Ye Chen felt a cold breeze blow on his back, he shivered. These four words seemed to possess a magical aura, even speaking them out was terrifying!

Qu Ming’s face looked pale, every time he heard these words, he would be overcome with fear. It was a something horrifying that existed in the blood in his veins, something that could not be dispelled, something that could not be forgotten.

The old man had a wry smile on his face, “Isn’t it frightening?”

Ye Chen did not flaunt his courage, he just nodded.

“When I heard these four words the first time, I was far more frightened than you. For a whole month, I could not fall asleep. I just felt as if there were shadows moving around, like ghosts roaring. But after a while, i felt numbed as I understood that as long as we did not cultivate to the Condensing Reality Realm, we would be alive and could lead a normal life.”

Here, Ye Chen gazed at the old man again, he had not yet answered to his question.

The old man continued, “We had indeed thought about fully moving the family, but we just could not successfully do it. The previous clan leader had

commanded the family to move out of the island before he died. Our men followed his orders and decided to leave. They formed three batches and planned to move out batch by batch. The frightening thing is that there was only one survivor from the first batch, the rest of them all encountered unexpected calamities and died in extremely horrible ways. The only survivor went crazy after the forlorn attempt to escape. Within three years after coming back to Pan Shan Island, he was also dead.”

‘Could not leave Pan Shan Island? But what about Qu Ming who had managed to move out of the island. There was something wrong, there was one survivor from the first batch of migration. Even though he died afterwards, it is a death due to severe depression. It should not be related to the Curse. This means that only one man was able to escape safely from the island without being affected by the threat of the Curse. This signifies a slim chance of survival, leaving hope for them. This is a community of hundreds and thousands of people, there must definitely be some exceptions.’ In a short time, Ye Chen had numerous thoughts go through his mind.

“Years passed, some of the young men slowly stopped believing the curse and started to try and migrate again. There were a few of them. But, once again, only one of them survived after going hundreds of miles away from the Pan Shan Island. Others all died miserably, no one could explain these phenomenon.” The old man said this with a fatigued expression.

Ye Chen almost got a complete idea of these incidents. Unbelievably, there was a terrifying disaster taking place on such a beautiful and peaceful island. There was an underwater cave, an island that fell from the sky and a cursed clan. This was so ridiculous and horrifying and completely unexplainable with normal reasoning. Maybe when he increased his cultivation to a higher realm, he might be able to resolve this confusion and this uncertainty. But, he did not dare to do anything for now as he was also afraid of getting infected with this curse on the Island. He would have no one to save him and would forever be unable to leave this place, unless he killed Qu Ming. But, he was not sure whether he could survive even after Qu Ming’s death as he was not from the same clan as Qu Ming. He might still die after three months.

## ***Chapter 98 - Winding Path***

While Ye Chen was still thinking, the old man asked with a glance, “If there is nothing else to discuss, are you willing to save my granddaughter from the Winding Path whirlpool? That is the location of the lost ship, my granddaughter has been trapped in there for nearly half a month now. Even if the food in the ship is sufficient, various other dangers might take place.”

Qu Ming stood up, “Old Man, please be at ease, I will go there for you and bring back Xin Ying.”

“Since there are still some people on the lost ship, we should not delay this any longer, let’s move!” Ye Chen stood up as well.

The old man nodded, “I will go with you, the iron wood vessel is ready to depart.”

On the North-West shore of the Pan Shan Island.

A long, black ship measuring fifteen meters in length and three meters in width was docked at the shore, the surface was shining with a dim light, it had a metallic lustre.

Ye Chen guessed that this must be the iron wood vessel. It was hard as metal and could resist a full-scale attack from a Mortal Realm warrior. The durability was good, it was also able to travel fast against the waves without the need to worry about being crushed by the surging waves.

“Master!”

Twelve Mortal Realm warriors from Qu family stood up in a row and shouted together.

The Old man waved his hand, “You guys should already know Qu Ming. And this is Ye Chen, a disciple from [Sky Cloud Martial School]. He will also be coming together with us to the Winding Path to save Xin Ying.”

Then, he turned to Ye Chen and Qu Ming, “Though their strength is inferior to yours, they are good at swimming and could even hold their breath for up to a quarter of an hour.”

Ye Chen was surprised. With his current power, he could easily hold his breath for a quarter of an hour, but these twelve people could do the same even though they were just Mortal Realm ninth Stage warriors.

Nearer to the Winding Path, the water current was even more strong and vigorous. Waves of water continuously hit against the iron wood vessel, making a soul-stirring noise.

.....

In the cabin.

The old man said, “The Winding Path is complicated, hidden within are innumerable whirlpools. Without good sailing skills, we can not pass it safely. Most likely, my granddaughter is trapped in the initial parts of the Winding Path. There is a small hill connecting with the lake that forms a flat sandy beach. Therefore, the ship can dock at this shore. Your task is simple, just kill any demonic beasts that approach the vessel to prevent it from getting deviated from the correct track.”

Ye Chen replied, “This is easy, I could fly over with my skill, I could then swiftly get out of the lost ship along with your granddaughter.”

The old man shook his head, “The true dangers of [Winding Path] are neither the currents nor the beasts, its the thick mist surrounding it. You could go alone, but you would easily get lost in the mist unable to get out ever. We can only find a way out by the changes of the flow of the currents.”

“I see!” Ye Chen nodded thoughtfully, he could not treat Pan Shan Island and Gu Shui Lake[Ancient Water Lake] with common sense. These were bizarre and unusual places.

Suddenly, the iron wood vessel shook intensely, as if something was banging against it.

A Qu family warrior rushed in, “Master, three demonic birds are approaching our ship.”

The old man nodded, “We can count on both of them.”

Ye Chen and Qu Ming looked at each other and walked out of the cabin.

On the deck, Ye Chen raised his head and looked up to the sky. Three huge, freaky looking birds were flying towards the vessel. The birds spread their wings up to five meters, the upper part of the wings were armed with a pair of sharp claws. Even though they had not reached yet, the burst of gale made by the wings fiercely shook the vessel.

“[Finger Star, Big Dipper]!”

Qu Ming moved two of his fingers closer. A vague and dim light started to glow at the tip of his fingers. Then, he quickly pointed the fingers seven times at the void and drew a full figure of the Big Dipper.

Splash! Splash! Splash!

Without a minute of delay, the three demonic birds were trapped into a big net that was formed by the Magic of Big Dipper. With several bloody holes on their bodies, the three demonic birds slowly fell into the lake water.

Ye Chen smiled, "Good technique!"

"Just an insignificant technique, it isn't terrific enough." Qu Ming smiled

At this moment, one of the Qu family practitioners shouted out, "We're almost reaching the [Winding Path]. All of you hold onto something so that you would not be thrown out of the deck."

In the blink of an eye, the ship suddenly shook, it almost looked like it might capsize. The other Qu Family practitioners had been prepared for this and clung to the things that were stable and held onto them well. Only Ye Chen and Qu Ming were indifferent, their feet were firmly fixed on the deck. Even with the ship shaking fiercely, it was difficult to make them lose their balance.

Qu Ming's body was very flexible, it appeared that he had a very good sense of balance as his body didn't move at all even with all the irregular movements of the hull. In fact his body was slowly moving according to the movements of the

hull, his position changed bit by bit to let his body get used to this. This made Qu Ming to seem relaxed, he appeared to enjoy those movements.

But when he looked at Ye Chen, his eyes narrowed.

Ye Chen stood without grabbing anything to stabilize himself. He was very calm, stable and steady. His body seemed to be part of the hull shaking and swinging, it appeared as if it was impossible for him to be thrown out of the deck.

"A very good Qi skill!" Qu Ming had an extraordinary ability to make discerning judgements, he immediately realized that Ye Chen's attainments with his Qi skill was very high, and his practice of Qi skill was far too unusual.

With a faint smile, Ye Chen was about to speak. But suddenly, he frowned, "There is a water monster following underwater!"

Ye Chen shifted his body and moved to the edge of the ship, a punch with shining blue light was thrown downwards.

Roar!

[Tiger roar Dragon fist]

The monster swooped down, but the punch continued to drill underwater.

Next moment!

The huge monster's corpse floated up, there were large tub-sized holes on its upper and lower abdomen. Blood continued to flow incessantly from these holes.

Qu Ming looked at the monster corpse and apprehensively said, "The water monster is very good at hiding its [demonic Qi] and is proficient in stealth attacks, how did you perceive it?" If Ye Chen had not been there, Qu Ming knew that it would have been nearly impossible to kill the water monster in advance. He would have become aware of it only after the monster attacked people and exposed its [demonic Qi]. By then, even though the ironwood ship would still be undamaged, it would've definitely been driven off course. If that happened, they



would've had to expend a great deal of effort in order to get back onto the normal route, undoubtedly wasting a lot of time.

Ye Chen of course would not say that it was due to his powerful soul force which could freely explore any object around him. Thus he literally made up a reason, "Actually, even though the water demonic beast is proficient in stealth with its [demonic Qi] well hidden, due to its huge body structure, no matter how quietly it moved underwater it would still create subtle changes in water flow. Now you know how I found it."

Qu Ming nodded quietly, Ye Chen was right. The larger the body, the higher the water resistance that the body needed to overcome. Nevertheless, Ye Chen's perception was just too strong, he could even detect the subtle changes in water flow, it was definitely admirable.

As they went deep into the [Winding Path], the frequency of disturbance of the hull became more and more vigorous. Sometimes it would tilt to the left, sometimes it would jump up all of a sudden and sometimes it was peaceful. It felt like there was an underwater vortex sucking the ship making the hull move abruptly, this could almost make a normal person's heart jump out.

Finally, the ship came near a half-submerged summit.

On the beach, there was a ship docked. The place was full of mist, but it was faintly discernable, with a deathly still atmosphere.

When the ship was just approaching the beach, Qu Ming and Ye Chen with their feets pointed lightly on deck, hopped and flew like two big birds with unbelievable speed.

Clap!

Both of them stood on the deck of the ship, feeling that the atmosphere had changed.

"Xin Ying! Are you there?" Qu Ming finally voiced out.

Whuuuuu! Whuuuuu!

Other than the sounds of the blowing wind, there were no other sounds audible.

Both of them were afraid of missing something, they opened the door and went into the cabin.

After a moment, both of them came out from the cabin.

Ye Chen looked up at the mountain, and said to Qu Ming, "Perhaps they took refuge in the mountain."

Qu Ming nodded, "This is the only possibility. Let's wait for master and the others first."

## Chapter 99 - Sea Serpent (1)

When the ironwood ship docked, the old man brought twelve people along with him and walked towards them.

Qu Ming said, "Master, Xin Ying is not up there."

"Not up there?" The look on the old man's face changed, he turned towards the Qu Jia(Qu family) warriors, "There are twelve of you, divide into three groups and start searching that mountain."

"Yes, Master Qu!!!"

Twelve Qu Jia(Qu family) practitioners, each formed their own groups and went up the mountain in three different directions.

At this time, Ye Chen said, "Master Qu, you just go with Qu Ming, I'm fine with going alone."

"Alright boy, so let's do it that way!" The old man did not underestimate Ye Chen. Along the way, Ye Chen had shown his strength and skill, he was comparable to Qu Ming, there was no reason to deny Ye Chen's ability.

After separation, Ye Chen trailed along the most desolate looking pathway to go up the mountain.

On his way up the mountain, a [Poisonous Water Scorpion] appeared and rushed towards him. Ye Chen hit the scorpion with all his strength using his fist without any second thoughts, its fluids flew everywhere, but his speed did not decrease at all. After several breaths, he had disappeared into the fog shrouded mountain.

In the mist, there was a shadow of a human figure, every time it stepped on the ground, it moved very fast releasing a long and clear breath.

Suddenly, a mountain near Ye Chen started to move, unexpectedly it was a [Rock beast] with a rock-like shell, when it opened its giant mouth, an arm-thick red shadow rushed towards Ye Chen, it was just as fast as lightning!

"It seems like you are seeking your own demise!"

Ye Chen's [Hidden Cloud Sword] was unsheathed instantly, the sharp sword and the red shadow struck together.

Qing! Qiang!

The red shadow was cut off and brownish blood spurted out.

Looking carefully, the tongue was actually one zhang ( 3.2 meter) long and its root was still in the Rock beast's mouth, it was just like a frog's tongue. The rock beast wanted to roll Ye Chen up using its giant tongue and suck him into its mouth. It was definitely a crafty and sinister move.

As that one strike did not hit its target, the Rock beast immediately moved back and squeezed into the mountain cracks.

Ye Chen did not want to let it flee. This time, he flew up and kicked the rocky ground.

Bang!

The rock beast was abruptly blown out together with its rock shell.

His sword flashed, the Rock beast with its high defense eventually fell down. Its abdomen was cut and a large hole was visible. Its viscera were all sliding out with an extremely strong pungent odour.

Since Ye Chen was not interested in its anatomy, he disappeared in the mist without turning his head back.

The mountain was not too huge, he soon came to the hillside.

When he got to the hillside, he first saw a stone bridge. Under the stone bridge were clouds of heavy mist rolling about, it was unfathomable. Across the stone bridge was a large piece of flat land. Beyond the flat land there was a stone door. The door was three Zhang and three feet high, two Zhang (one zhang is 3.2m) and eight feet wide. The door was closed, exposing only a trace of a crack, with light being projected from the inside illuminating the fog, making it colourful and dazzling.

"There are people in here." Ye Chen hesitated for a moment and then stepped on the bridge.

Crack!

The stones on both sides of the bridge unbelievably came to life, struggling free from the stone surface and started moving step by step towards Ye Chen.

"Shanluan diezhang!"

Confronting these many Stone beasts, Ye Chen resorted to one of the superlative techniques in [Lone Peak of Thirteen Sword Skill] which was extremely fast and widest range of attack.

To defeat the stone beasts. The sword flickered, releasing layer upon layer of sword light to slide through...

Cha! Cha! Cha!

One by one, the Stone beasts were chopped into pieces and scattered around. When Ye Chen was about to leave, something staggering happened. All the pieces of these stone beasts distorted mildly and then vanished into mist, mixing into the surrounding environment, without leaving any trail.

it was really bizarre and weird!

Ye Chen's eyes flickered, his mind went blank.

A moment later, Ye Chen took a deep breath, he grabbed his sword firmly and swepted towards the stone door.

The stone door was thick. Ye Chen thought that even if the stone door could be broken down, it might probably lead to the collapse of stone chamber along with it, it was an unwise action.

By focusing and converging twenty thousand pounds of force in his arms, Ye Chen squeezed his hands into the crack at the middle of stone door and

struggled to push it to make an opening.

Boom!

The stone door slowly opened. A big hall that was filled with shining light came into his view.

The hall was really luxurious, there were eighteen roots of golden pillars on both sides of the room, they were about six feet high, consisting a smooth surface without any carvings and such. The central hall's ground was covered with a red carpet that lead to the seat of honour. At the seat of honour, a middle-aged man was sitting. His eyes gently closed, he had a stable and deep breath. On both sides of the red carpet, there were another six middle-aged men. Although they did not look as imposing as the man sitting on seat of honour, they still could not be underestimated, they had an overbearing aura.

"Who are you, young man?" The middle-aged man sitting on seat of honour asked as he opened his eyes. His eyes had a hint of lightning, yet they also looked really a natural. He was clearly a [Clasping Yuan Realm] warrior.

Ye Chen replied, "Good day Master, I'm here to search for a person. Does Master know any girl that ever came here before?"

The middle-aged man gently said, "Have a seat first, young man."

"Yes, Master." Ye Chen felt a bit strange, but he couldn't really describe what it was. So he just did what the Head said and sat at the right side of the red carpet.

The Head's eyes flashed, he waved his towards the stone door and it slowly closed.

"Is she a young, artless, pure-hearted girl, around fifteen or sixteen years old?"

Master Qu never described the appearance of his young granddaughter to Ye Chen, but he nodded, "Yes, did you ever see her, Master?"

"Yes, she was trapped at the foot of the mountain. It was me who saved her life. She is now in the small room near the corridor over there, you can take her away." said the Head. He looked like a reasonable and nice man.

"I can take her away? you really mean it?" Ye Chen restated the last sentence by The Head with a suspicious look.

"Why? You don't want to take her away?"

"Oh, no, I do want to take her with me." Ye Chen stood up and slowly walked towards the small room beside the hall through the sidewalk. At the same time he pushed his soul force to the limit, to be alert in case of any sudden attacks.

But it did not make any sense, the Head continued to sit still in his seat without a single movement, even the other six middle-aged men also sat there motionless without saying a word. There was a table on which some meat was served. But it seemed like it had never been touched by anyone ever. All of sudden, a strange atmosphere filled the hall.

As he came to the door of the small room, Ye Chen suddenly turned around and looked at the Head. The Head had a sinister and treacherous look in his eyes, he then concealed the evil look in his eyes when Ye Chen looked at him and asked, "What's it now?"

"Nothing, I just think it is funny." Ye Chen pulled out his sword and sneered.

Hmph!!!

The Head answered in a dead voice, "Me letting you take this girl away from here is already giving you face. Don't tell me that you want a fight, you are just a Condensing Reality Realm practitioner, I can destroy you anytime, so don't be foolish."

Ye Chen gave a faint smile and said, "Really? If you can kill me, is there any need for you to deceive me? If what I guess is right, once I enter into this room, I will die."

"So presumptuous! Get out from here, now!" The Head waved at one of the golden pillars, it shot towards Ye Chen who was not far from there. A thunderstorm like sound broke the calm atmosphere as the pillar broke away from the ground. Normal humans couldn't even resist the force of this pillar, after all, this pillar was six feet six inch high and half a meter thick. With the power of a Claspng Yuan Realm warrior, the pillar was far more dangerous than any other weapon. It could penetrate mountains and could even kill a late Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

At this time, if it were any other person, he would certainly move back and

shelter himself in that small room to avoid being hit by large stones. But Ye Chen did not.

His eyes were very clear and did not have any intention to dodge. He held the [Hidden Cloud Sword] in his right hand and pointed it directly at the pillar.

Crack!

The stone pillar shattered and dispersed into fog.



## Chapter 100 - Sea Serpent (2)

"Sword Qi Condensed Mountain!"

The stone column broke. Ye Chen parried his sword with a cold look in his eyes and made a crescent-shaped stroke that flew towards the Head.

Puff!

The Head had never expected that Ye Chen would not have any intention to avoid or back off from the attack. Ye Chen broke off the stone column and immediately launched an attack at the Head, who did not seem to even react as the sword cut his body.

Fog swirled around and the shape of Head's body changed rapidly, from a person into a lizard-like monster with four dark red, disgusting tumors on its head. It opened its mouth and the whole hall was filled with fog and was being swallowed into its stomach.

Ye Chen looked around, the previous luxurious hall was actually a dirty cave. Those six middle-aged men were actually just skeletons with black skulls, sitting there on the floor. Moreover, there were a large number of bones of the dead piled up at the side all the way to the seat of honour, it was the red carpet from before.

When Ye Chen looked back, he saw that the small room at the sideways of the hall was actually a cave, about few feet in size. Below the cave was a giant pit which was filled with steaming greyish liquid and vaporizing sticky bubbles. Once the bubbles burst, the air that was stored inside the bubbles corroded the cave walls leaving behind large charred marks.

Although he knew that everything that happened just now was all just an illusion, Ye Chen still could not help but take a deep breath. If he had not noticed everything earlier and fell into that greyish liquid, there would not be anything left of him. The most terrible thing was, if he was not mistaken, this lizard-like monster was supposed to be the rare Sea Serpent monster that lived on the True spirit continent, it loved to eat the brains of humans and take people's memories as its own. Using those memories, it would create a mirage according to the

memories in its mind and would disguise it as a vivid dreamland, causing humans to be unable to point out the real from the illusion.

Sea Serpent monsters could undergo evolution, and could even be divided into different levels of strength based on the number of tumor like bumps that grew on their head. If there was only one bump, then it was a Stage-One monster. If there were two then Stage-Two, four then it was a Stage-Four monster. Yet, Ye Chen was not even afraid of it, because when compared to other monsters at the same level, Sea Serpent monster was the weakest one.

"Where is the little girl?" Ye Chen gazed at the monster.

The monster growled with its small eyes full of malice.

Ye Chen wrinkled his eyebrows and suddenly remembered that Sea Serpent monsters could actually not speak. Only in the world of illusion, did people think that it could speak with humans, while in fact it was actually people's imagination in addition to the atmosphere and condition, the monster never actually speaks though.

"In that case, there is no use in keeping you alive." The previous stroke already injured the sea serpent monster, making it lose control of its mirage Qi. Unafraid of the monster's mirage Qi, Ye Chen stomped and released his internal energy, a stroke of three swords attack flew towards the monster.

Bang!

The monster was pushed by the forceful internal strength from the three swords attacks and slammed against the cave walls. Suddenly the monster opened its mouth to spit out a cloud of fog that was burning like a flame towards Ye Chen.

"Let me destroy your mirage Qi!"

Ye Chen did not dare to face directly with the fire suspecting a fraud. He then retaliated back with a powerful Zhen Qi palm and all of a sudden, the flames mixed with his palm's Zhen Qi and returned back to the Sea Serpent monster.

A horrible scream was heard.

The monster's abdomen was hit, it now had a hole that was bleeding and

dispersing a stinky smell.

"It's really a trick!" The palm hit itself had no attribute, but it could still integrate with the monster's attack unexpectedly causing the monster to be severely injured.

However, Ye Chen did not know that the mirage Qi of the Sea Serpent monster contained five different kinds of vitalities and vitality of fire was one of them. The fire ray just now was the essence of fire that was stored in the monster's body. Once blown out, it was difficult to increase it again. Since Ye Chen was difficult to defeat, the monster used mirage Qi to conceal the fire before taking it back halfway through once it spouted out the fire power, it was just to give people an illusion.

If Ye Chen was being careless, there was a great possibility that he would have fallen miserably for a very simple trick.

This monster had wisdom level comparable to that of humans, cunning and insidious. It is indeed a nemesis to the humankind.

Ye Chen's pupils shrank to a point, he was determined to kill. This monster absolutely should not be kept alive or else misfortunes or incessant calamities would happen.

"You, Die!"

Ye Chen shouted out loudly, at the same time he waved his fist and sword and struck at the monster.

Snip! Snap! Bang!

The Sea Serpent beast sank down to the ground, motionless just like a broken gunny sack. To prevent anything unpredictable from happening, Ye Chen attacked a few more times. It was only after the monster became a deformed corpse did he stop.

Ye Chen walked to the side of Sea Serpent monster's corpse and took out a fist-sized core from the monster. It was misty white and overflowed with fog, just glancing at it was enough to cause hallucinations, truly a terrible thing.

Ye Chen took a large jade box from the storage ring and put the monster's core

in it. Only after placing the jade box inside did Ye Chen sigh with relief. He then looked around, hoping to find any traces or clues for his mission.

Earlier in that dreamland, the monster was able to describe the characteristics of the master's granddaughter, meaning that it should have seen her before, but had no idea whether she was still alive or not. If anything had happened to her, there was nothing that Ye Chen could do, after all, this had been dragged on for too long. Besides, that treacherous Sea Serpent monster was not a vegetarian, human brain was its favourite...

Wait, it was not true. Ye Chen suddenly shook his head.

"The sea serpent monster could not speak, everything that happened in the dreamland was just my imagination. Just how did it know the features of the master's granddaughter? Could it be that that was my own memory, that monster hallucinated me and made me hear what I want to know, meaning that no matter who, as long as he or she is in the dreamland, everything will seem very true and real, including the content of the conversations as whatever a person wants to know would be answered by themselves."

With a wry smile, Ye Chen had to hand it to the monster, if not for his high alertness and being doubtful of things in his surroundings due to his abnormally powerful spirit power, perhaps he really would have been tricked by the monster with its evil magic.

After a careful search, Ye Chen left the cave after confirming that no traces could be found.

Outside the cave, the ground was overgrown with weeds, just like a wasteland. The stone bridge was just a piece of fallen stone. As for the gully, it was real and below it was the lake water.

Ye Chen followed the road that he came from before and went down the mountain.

After a moment.

The ship was in sight. There were a dozen people standing there, including a young girl in yellow dress. The girl was very beautiful, temperamental and clean.

That girl was actually the master's granddaughter, Qu Xinying.

"Ye warrior, I have found my granddaughter!" The old man, Master Qu smiled.

Ye Chen touched his nose, "That's great."

Qu Ming asked, "Did anything happened over at your side?"

"No, everything was fine." Ye Chen did not want to overcomplicate the matter. Since all of them came here just to find Qu Xinying, there was no need to mention the Sea Serpent monster.

"Good, let's go back! It's getting late." The old man nodded.

The Iron Ship was stopped near the shore, everyone boarded the ship and began to sail back based on the route they followed to arrive.

On their way back, they met with a lot of demon beasts and it became more dangerous as it was almost late in the evening. Fortunately, there were Ye Chen and Qu Ming who helped in protecting the Ironwood Ship, so they did not go out of the correct route.

When the last ray of daylight died in the horizon, they finally reached Panshan Island. The whole night passed without a word!

On the morning of the second day, Ye Chen took his leave.

As for Qu Ming, he seldom came back, so he was going to stay for a few days, after all, the curse of Panshan Island would only occur between the second and the third month. The first and second month would be safer. Plus, he had been back for only a day.

The Ancient water lake was glittering with sunlight, he stepped on a trunk and moved forward rapidly.

"This coming June is the Sky Cloud Martial School's inner disciples ranking martial tournament, I have no idea how powerful those top ten great disciples are." His white robe was fluttering.

Ye Chen peacefully pondered as he stared entrancingly at the beautiful lake's scenery.

**Chapter 101 - In June**

Half a day later, Ye Chen made his way ashore.

Shockingly, the shopkeeper and the servants at the shore of the Ancient Water Lake had disappeared. The horses owned by Qu Ming and him were missing as well.

The black horses ridden by them were valuable. They cost about sixty thousand gold each making it a hundred and twenty thousand gold for the both of them. One could lead a wealthy living for the rest of their life with that amount of money. With that amount, one could become a landlord of a small manor with a few wives and a lot of servants. In short, he could have everything in a time of peace.

“I hope you guys will continue to live with good luck, and never ever get caught by me.” Ye Chen did not care much about the horse, but he was disgusted by the thievery. He would send them for a lifelong prison sentence if he ever caught them.

Ye Chen walked farther in a flash.

.....

Ancient Spring Town.

The Inn of the Flower Fairy. The inn-keeper was a pretty woman aged around twenty five years. Her husband was a renowned blade master in this area. She was a top genuine Condensing Reality Realm fighter as well, named as the Flower fairy. Since she operated the inn, the business went smoothly and her fame had gone up as high as that of her husband.

On the second floor of the inn, people were gathered and were having drinks, chatting and making a dalliance towards the woman.

“Mistress, your man has not fought for years, could I know the skill level of his sword?” One of the women with a famous husband asked the inn-keeper.

The Flower Fairy smiled, “I am not sure as well, but refer to him, he could split the Golden River with just a slash.”

“A Slash to cut the Golden River!” The customers were shocked. The Golden River was a big river near to the Ancient Spring Town that was hundreds of meters. Even if the slash was made at a shallow part, it was still amazing. He could be considered to have a high-level skill comparable to the strength of early Claspng Yuan Realm or even mid Claspng Yuan Realm.

The Flower Fairy was satisfied with the reaction of the crowd. Throughout the operation of her inn business, there were a number of people who yearned for her. Without the fame and strength of her husband, there might even be someone daring enough to molest her. She needed to warn the people of this.

“You have a good husband. He could reach this level at twenty six which is comparable to the disciples of the big clans.”

“No...” While the Flower Fairy made her denial, she saw a handsome white-robed man sitting near the window.

At that moment, someone said, “This june, the ranking Competition of the Sky Cloud Martial School will be taking place. I wish to take a look at it.”

“I wish to witness it as well, it’s too bad that I am not invited.”

“Inviting you? Keep dreaming of it. Even some of the Claspng Yuan Realm fighters are not invited. If you are a relative of an elder of the martial school you will probably have a tiny bit of chance.”

“I am just simply talking about it. By the way, did your husband get invited, Mistress Fairy?”

The Flower Fairy nodded, “The invitation was accepted ten days ago. But he is in secluded meditation, I am afraid that he might not make it.”

The name of her husband was Song Qingyun with a nickname as the Sky Cloud’s blade master. He reached the Claspng Yuan Realm at twenty-one. His skills with the sword were aggressive. He was famous in the Heavenly Windy Nation, which allowed him to witness the ranking competition of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

“It is a great honor to get invited. It is normal for the Sky Cloud’s blade master to be invited. In this area, only old cripple and that Pei Zhongli of Five mountains could be invited.”

“Pei Zhongli? Is he the father of one of the top ten disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School Pei Shaoqing?”

“Yeah, the Pei Family has a good reputation in this area. Pei Shaoqing has also lived up to expectations by joining the Sky Cloud Martial School at the age of twelve and then getting promoted to a inner disciple at thirteen. Now he is sixteen and ranked five in the top ten.”

“Pei Shaoqing is indeed splendid, but do not get deceived by his gentle attitude. He is fierce and brutal when fighting.”

“He could reach up to top three or even make it up to the championship without effort.”

“His friend, Li Kuang who has the name as the Ghost Sword should not be messed with either. He is rumored to have obtained an Earth level skill. Even if he has only learnt a part of the skill, he could outshine the others.”

The Ghost Sword, Li Kuang!

The man in the white robe straightened up hearing the dialogue. From the clear conversation, he made a note of Pei Shaoqing. Comparatively, the Ghost sword attracted more of his attention. He heard from others that Li Kuang had a unique way of using the sword. The style was far different than the normal combat skill. He did not learn about the usual combating skill from the Sky Cloud Martial School. Coincidentally he got an inheritance from a dead sword master and learnt the Nine Sword skills of ghosting. With this sword skill and promising fame, he is known as the best sword fighter in the top ten disciples.

The handsome man was Ye Chen. Since he lost his black horse, he moved even faster, covering a distance of three thousands miles every day. Therefore, he stopped at the Ancient Spring Town to take a break.

“I already understand the way to use the sword Qi, but the skills of the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords are slightly lower in level. This will be a disadvantage to me. Hopefully I can get some prizes good enough to cover this in the ranking competition!?” The best skill Ye Chen had was still the fist technique, Tiger roar Dragon fist. Even though he could use the sword Qi well, he was not confident about winning against the Ghost Sword, Li Kuang.



Even though Pei Shaoqing has a higher reputation than Li Kuang, Ye Chen still was more interested in a swordsman like Li Kuang.

“The ghost sword, Li Kuang is not the best. No one could be compared to the Blood shadow sword, Meng Chong. He is the only man able to achieve a total of thousand wins in the Sky Cloud Martial School which even some of the core disciples could not achieve. He might take the first place of the top ten disciples again this year and might even go as far as to challenge the core disciples. With his combat skill, he has no problem in becoming among the top fifteen in the ranking of core disciples.”

“You are right. He is the only one capable of securing the first place. Others can only compete from the rank two to rank ten. But there might be some newer disciples involved in the competition. It will be an intense fight.”

“Gosh, I will request my uncle for an invitation card tomorrow. He has a close relationship with an elder of the Sky Cloud Martial School. I might have hope to witness the competition with that invitation.”

“My cousin’s teacher has come from the Sky Cloud Martial School, hopefully they can bring me as well.”

The crowd got more interested to watch the competition after the conversations.

Meanwhile...

Ye Chen had his lunch, he conveniently put an amount of ten gold on the table and walked to the ground floor of the inn.

A swordsman unintentionally looked at the mark of Cloud on his robe and whispered, “I can not believe there is actually a disciple from the Sky Cloud Martial School here.”

There were a lot of people wearing white robes and Ye Chen was maintaining a low profile most of the time. Therefore, the crowd was only alerted of his existence as a disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School after being notified by that man.

The Flower Fairy secretly smiled. She already knew Ye Chen's identity earlier. By sensing his cultivation level, she found that he was just at the mid level of Condensing Reality Realm, so he might have a lower chance to compete for the rankings of top ten inner disciple. Nevertheless, she would know this by witnessing the ranking competition with her husband, she could only hope that her husband would end his meditation in time.

## ***Chapter 102 - Blood Shadow Sword***

After he submitted his quest in the Hall, Ye Chen went to the Ranking board to check.

There wasn't much difference in the rankings for that month. The rankings remained the same. This situation occurred due to the concentration on the upcoming Ranking Competition in June. They were not going to fight until the competition, there they could determine their true strength.

Looking at the lowest part of the rankings, Ye Chen smiled. His rank was number one when counting from the bottom. The others were concentrated on the upper parts of the ranking.

“Fine, I should get a ranking in the top ten in this Ranking Competition so that I would be able to avoid the trouble of challenging others later on.” Ye Chen did not mind his ranking since the Rank Competition was a fair competition that did not consider the current ranking.

But for now, the most crucial task was to train harder as his cultivation level at the mid Condensing Reality Realm was considered to be too low. He needed to at least raise it to the peak of mid Condensing Reality Realm. Then, he would not need to fear anyone in the competition.

At night, Ye Chen trained in meditation.

In the morning, Ye Chen sat on the cliff to increase the sword Qi.

In the afternoon, Ye Chen would strengthen his body's durability under the waterfall.

The days passed. The days of June approached.

In the forest behind the Windy Mountain.

Beside a rocky mountain.

A half-naked man, around two meters tall was standing. His sight flashed with a strong muscular body frame. His aura was more violent than the demon beasts. Anyone who was gazed by him would have a feeling that there was an ancient beast staring at them, it was simply frightening.

Roar!

The burly man released a roar as his muscles shook. His joints and bones were making a string of popping sounds, as if there were dozens of people shooting arrows together.

The ground was heavily stepped upon until it burst. The burly man stretched his hand and suddenly hit a rock.

Rumble!

A twenty meter high rock that was roughly seven meters wide was broken into pieces, scattering and flying in all directions.

His breath and face were normal even after heavy training. The burly man grinned to himself, "The Ranking tournament is about to begin. I, Xiao Ye, would never lose to anyone. I would be the first among the disciples to challenge Xu Jing to determine who will be the best in the Sky Cloud Martial School."

There were a total of thirty six peaks in the Sky Cloud Martial School that are the places designed for the training of the elders.

One of the thirty six peaks was Mt. White Cloud

An old man in a white robe told a young man, "Li Yun, if you are promoted as an inner disciple, then you could make me your teacher. In these three years, You have not gone out on any missions, you also did not participate in the Ranking competitions. But this time, you need to take part in the tournament. Else, the Clan Master and the other elders would think that I am just dragging you along without providing you the any training."

The young man replied coldly, "Don't worry master. I will prove to the others that I can beat these disciples even without having any training outside."

The white-robed old man shook his head, "Do not underestimate the others. Even though your current strength would be comparable to the top five disciples, it would still be dangerous for you to compete for the top three. I know that the Ghost sword, Li Kuang and Pei Shaoqing have the strength to be ranked in the top three. The Blood shadow, Meng Chong, has strong combat skills which surprise even me, you might not be a match for him."

The cold young man replied, "Master, you did tell me before that one can always fight to be the best and be at the top, if not, there would be no more meaning in this."

"Hehe, I did say this before, then you can try your best to get the first rank! Your strongest opponent would probably be the Blood Shadow, Meng Chong. The second strongest would be the Ghost Sword, Li Kuang. His sword skills are unpredictable. He did not learn any of them from the skills in the Sky Cloud Martial School. He will be a strong threat to you, you must be cautious of him. Do not lose to him in sword skill."

"I would not lose to anyone in sword skill."

The old man in the white robe nodded. If they were only evaluating the sword skill, there were very just few who could beat his pupil. He had developed a unique style with the sword during his training in these last three years, without following the standard training path. If he was given sufficient time, he could even be equal to the top disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Zhu Mei.

"Fine, you have been in closed door training for the last three months, now show me your true strength."

Yin!

The sword was unsheathed. The cold looking young man made some slashes towards the sea of clouds.

Silently.

The sword light was divided into thirteen parts. Every strike was completely equal in length without any differences as if they were cloned from the same strike.

The white robed old man's eyes flashed with astonishment, "Fourteen Sword Lights! I never imagined that your sword lights have reached the highest state."

If there was someone here, he would be quite confused. There are only thirteen cuts, but why are there 14 sword flashes.

[Oolong River], Sunflower Water Branch!

In the last three months, there was a newly established small faction called the Sunflower Water Branch. The sunflower Water Branch had three chiefs, all of them are at the peak of Condensing Reality Realm. The head chief had already touched the edge of the Claspings Yuan Realm. He might only require one or two months to reach the Claspings Yuan Realm.

In addition, the Sunflower Water Branch has seventy-eight late Condensing Reality Realm Warriors, twenty mid Condensing Reality Realm Warriors and forty to fifty Initial stage Condensing Reality Realm Warriors. There were also several hundred mortal Realm warriors to increase strength and act as cannon fodder.

The Sunflower Water Branch's entrance door was loudly split in half, a stubborn wild youth strode into the room.

"People of the Sunflower Water Branch, come out to die."

Crash!

At least a hundred people surrounded the youth. After that, a few dozen elite fighters at the Condensing Reality Realm came over for backup.

"How dare you come and cause trouble at the Sunflower Water Branch, you are looking for a death wish. Kill!!!!"

After a burly man spoke, the tall and strong youth disappeared in the sea of people.

"Haha, you can all die"

The blood soaked sword weaved around in the huge crowd. Everywhere it went, there were dozens of people whose bodies were split in half, blood scattered in all directions. Not one could last a few rounds, no, not even a single round. Even the condensing reality realm elites could not stand against the strength of the tall and strong youth's sword.

"How can someone be this frightening! just who is he?"

"I know, he is the Sky Cloud Martial School's Blood shadow sword, Meng Chong, run!" Some people saw through the tall and strong youth's sword skill, their faces filled with terror.

"[Kill all the living], die for me "

The tall and strong youth laughed arrogantly. His laughter was accompanied by the strong killing intent that shot through the skies. After that his frightening blood-red sword tip flashed again. Ten people were killed every time his sword was swung and a mark of the sword was left on the ground.

Blood flowed like rivers, all members of the Sunflower Water Branch were almost annihilated.

At this moment, three people rushed over. They were the Sunflower Water Branch's three chiefs. The weapon used by the head chief was a Xuanhua axe, the vice chief used a rod, while the third chief used a broadsword with magnificent strength.

The tall and strong youth came out from the middle of the corpses and slashed with the sword towards the three chiefs.

Puchi! Puchi! Puchi!

The three chiefs with their cultivation at the peak of Condensing Reality Realm were dismembered instantly under this one sword attack. The bloody red sword tip passed through their bodies and made a huge opening at the Sunflower Water Branch's great hall.

"All of them collapse at the first blow, this is so boring" The tall and strong youth shook his head and turned to leave, his white robes did not have even a trace of blood.

## Chapter 103 – Halfway to Sword Intent

There was a huge stone in the lake under the huge waterfall.

Ye Chen sat on the rock with his legs tucked under his body, the Hidden Cloud Sword was in its scabbard and on his laps. He was drifting in and out of this bliss, where he could forget about everything, including himself.

The loud sound of the waterfall hitting the rocks did not affect Ye Chen at all. In his senses, the world was no longer the same, the sounds had completely disappeared, the waterfall seemed to fall slower and slower, eventually it all moved in slow motion, moving inch by inch. From time to time, few drops of water would splash out, they looked like the brightest crystals under the sunshine.

When the waterfalls completely froze in time, Ye Chen suddenly opened his sharp eyes.

He took out his sword, swung it in the air and made a slicing motion!

The whole movement was completed smoothly, without any hesitation or restraint.

Suddenly, the waterfall in front of him was sliced in half. It started to fall in two streams, as if it was supposed to be.

Boom! Boom!

With loud sounds, the water started to fall on the rocks once again.

“Only half a step away from reaching sword intent, too bad, it would be the hardest part ever, it requires a lot of training for a long time.” With that sword attack, Ye Chen almost sensed the sword intent, but he still could not manage to see through it completely, so it could only be counted as half step to sword intent. That was still a big gap from the true sword intent.

Swoosh!

He let out a breath, it was like fog and shot out like an arrow at the same time, Ye Chen slowly stood up, he slightly shook his body which wore off his half-step



sword intent, other people could hardly notice it.

After enjoying the view for a while, Ye Chen went back the way he came earlier.

Outside the yard, Wu Zongming saw that Ye Chen had come back, he laughed, “It is so hard to find you.”

Ye Chen said, “There are only three days left to the Inner Disciple Ranking Competition, I just wanted to improve my skills as much as possible.”

“You are not aiming for the top ten inner disciples, are you?”

“Yes, more or less.”

Wu Zongming opened his eyes wide, “Really!? The top ten inner disciples are the closest in strength to the core disciples. Some of them can even compete with the core disciples, and most importantly, they are almost all Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors, with the power to instantly kill normal warriors in the same power level.”

The top ten inner disciples were the most powerful of the inner disciples of the whole martial institution, each of them was a martial genius with high talent and comprehension ability and mentality. They might not be able to compete with the core disciples yet, but as long as they had enough time, no one could really say how far they could go. So for any martial institution, the top ten inner disciples were just as important as the core disciples, they would never be ignored or underestimated just because of the temporary gap between their power levels.

Ye Chen shook his head and laughed, “Since when have you become so unambitious? It is only the top ten inner disciples. I heard that there were always a couple of people being kicked out of the top ten position, and someone new would join in. “

Wu Zongming opened his mouth, but he did not know what to say. He also felt he was being a little bit unambitious. He remembered when Ye Chen was brave enough to challenge Zhang Haoran who was at the peak of Mortal Realm Stage 10 when he was only at Mortal Realm stage 6, and now he had already reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, there was no reason forbidding him from

becoming one of the top ten inner disciples. He knew he had thought about it as well.

“You are quite right. I used to be the first ranked outer disciple, so I never had much pressure before. But once I became an inner disciple, I was surrounded by talented warriors; with my power level and potential, I was never the top again, so I chose to hide my true feelings and planned to take small steps as that was the safer option. Now that you mentioned it, I just realized why the gap between me and Zhang Haoran has been growing, it is because I lost my passion and motivation, and became an ordinary member of the inner disciples.” If it wasn’t for Ye Chen, Wu Zongming would never have realized it. But he had witnessed Ye Chen’s improvements, and he knew that it was not just a coincidence for Ye Chen to reach where he was right now, he understood that he should really learn from him.

Wu Zongming’s satisfaction from reaching the Mid Condensing Reality Realm by taking the Zhen Qi pellet had disappeared completely, he sighed, “I just had an enlightenment. I thought I could use the Zhen Qi pellet to decrease the gap between us, but now, I think it has only brought us more and more apart. At least my passion and determination is not as strong as yours.”

Ye Chen opened the gate of the yard and invited Wu Zongming to come in. While he was walking, he said to him, “Actually, talent is just like a stepping stone, it can make you look taller than other people. But if you want to become even taller, it is not enough just with your talent, you would have to find your own path and walk your own way.”

Wu Zongming forced a smile, “The ‘path’ and the ‘way’ is still far away from me, I have no idea what kind of state you have already reached.”

“Oh, by the way, what are you here for?” Ye Chen asked.

Wu Zongming tapped on his forehead then said, “I almost forgot why I am here. The ranking competition is in three days, and we have to take the draw now.”

“Already?”

“Yes, except the top ten inner disciples from last year, everyone else have to draw lots, and register their names. Otherwise, it would take way too long on the

day of the competition.”

“That is true, then let’s go!”

On their way there, Ye Chen got to know a few things about the competition. The contestants of the inner disciple ranking competition were separated into ten groups, and each group contained about fifty people. The top ten inner disciples would be among them as well. There would be ten rounds of competitions within each group. Only the top three of each group would have the chance to take part in the final competitions where they would be competing against each other for the top ten inner disciples rankings for this year. And the rest of the contestants would be ranked by the number of times they had won.

In the Martial Arts Plaza.

There was a huge drawing box in the middle of the plaza, with two registration staffs standing right next to it.

By the time they reached, there were already a lot of inner disciples there.

“Damn, what bad luck! How did I end up in ‘Ghost Sword’ Li Kuang’s team?”

“You call that bad luck? I got ‘Blood Shadow’ Dao Mengchong on my team. Who could beat him? There is no way other than to give up if I ever have to face him.”

Ye Chen was at the back of the line, he looked pretty confused.

Soon, it was his turn.

He reached his hand into the drawing box, and took out a skinny wooden board. It read, “Group 7, No.28. Ace contestant of the group: Feng Ping.”

Right next to him, the registration staff wrote down Ye Chen’s name and his number.

After drawing the lots, the two left the crowd. Wu Zongming asked, “Which group are you in? Who is the ace contestant?”

“Group 5, Feng Ping.”

“Feng Ping!” Wu Zongming froze a little, he carried on talking, “He is ranked sixth in the top ten inner disciples. He has a crazy good movement art, rumor

says he could walk on wind as if there is no gravity. He is one of the trickiest ones to compete with. Luckily, I did not get him, otherwise I am afraid that I would not even be able to touch the edge of his clothes.”

Crazy good movement arts!

Ye Chen was interested. Movement arts were his advantage as well, he wondered how good this Feng Ping was.

As for Wu Zongming, he was in third group, with an ace contestant called Xiao Ye, who was ranked even higher in the last inner disciple competition. He was ranked higher than Pei Shaoqing and Li Kuang. He had also mastered great defensive arts and attacking arts, due to that he got the title “Mad man”.

After leaving the plaza, the two went their separate ways.

On the third day.

The night before the day of competition, Ye Chen had finally reached the peak of the Mid Condensing Reality Realm and had increased his Zhen Qi by three times. Meanwhile, his Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art had also reached the peak of the seventh stage, where he could almost form his Qi swords into solid objects, it was way more powerful than the sword light.

Now that everything was done on schedule, it was time for the ranking competition.

## Chapter 104 – The Beginning of the Ranking Competition

Ding! Ding! Ding!

In the morning, the joyful sound of the bells came from the Martial Arts Plaza on the Windy Mountain, one after another, the ringing sound could be heard miles away.

On the way up the mountain, all the talented warriors joined the group from different directions.

Among these people, there were leaders of some small martial institutions, leaders of some big families, chief commander of some security companies, heads of some gangs, chairmen of a few unions, and even some of the mayors from the cities close by. There were also some of the top warriors in the world.

“Leader Lu, nice to see you here!”

“Of course, I would never miss this. The Sky Cloud Martial School is the No.1 martial institution in this area, our small institution can never compete with it, so this time I brought some of my top disciples with me to watch the competition. I hope they can learn something from this.”

“Hehe, I also brought two young warriors from the union, I want to show them what a real genius is, and put them back in their places.”

“Fair enough!”

Most of these people knew each other from way back, although they did not normally hang out, every time they got together, they would walk together and chat a little. And during their chatters, you could really tell who was the most powerful person of the group, because only the strongest one would be surrounded by others, instead of him sucking up to the others.

In the living area of the inner disciples, Ye Chen closed the gate behind him, and then started to walk towards the crowd.

“So many people!” After arriving at the plaza, Ye Chen was a bit surprised.

Last year, he had to lie in bed for a month after the fight with Wang Gang,

because of that, he missed the chance to watch the competition. So it was his first time seeing ten thousand people gathered in the Martial Arts Plaza.

There were ten huge platforms, and each platform was round in shape, with a height of three meters. Combined with the other platforms, it formed a flower pattern, which looked very delicate and classy. Around the ten platforms, there was a circle of VIP seats, and above those VIP seats, it was the audience seats. From far away, the whole Martial Arts Plaza looked like a wok, the bottom of the wok was where the competition took place, and the walls of the wok were the seating for the audiences.

“Ye Chen, here!” There was an open space between the platforms and the VIP seats, a big group of inner disciples were standing there. Wu Zongming waved at Ye Chen from there.

With firm steps, Ye Chen walked over.

Wu Zongming said excitedly, “The third platform and the seventh platform are right by each other, so we should just wait here together. But right now, I am a bit nervous, you see, all those people in those VIP seats are very important people, even your dad is here.”

Ye Chen followed Wu Zongming’s view, and spotted his father Ye Tianhao sitting in the VIP seats, along with his mother Shen Yuqing.

Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing smiled at Ye Chen, you could see the expectation and proudness in their eyes. They had never imagined that their son would be able to attend the Sky Cloud Martial School Inner Disciple Ranking Competition, and even if they did, they would never have thought their son to be anywhere else besides the bottom of the ranking. But now, everything was different. They knew that Ye Chen had already reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm, plus his talent in martial arts, they were confident that he would be in the top two hundred.

Ye Chen gave them a confident look so that they would not worry about him, then he looked away.

Right then, almost all the inner disciples had arrived, except the top ten inner disciples.

All of a sudden!

All the outer disciples sitting in the audience started to cheer.

“The top ten inner disciples are here! The one in the middle is the ‘Blood Shadow Blade’ brother Meng Chong, right?”

“Next to brother Meng Chong, it is the ‘Iron Fan’ Yi Qing, brother Xiao Ye, sister Zhou Ruo, brother Pei Shaoqing. They look so powerful!”

Just like the others, all the inner disciples looked over to the ten people present in that direction.

These ten people were indeed the top ten inner disciples. Some of them had an incredible aura with murderous intent,; some of them were two meters tall, looking like ancient demonic beasts, some of them had a smile on their face and looked extremely friendly, some of them looked like they were floating on the ground and some of them were expressionless, looking extremely cold.

The ten of them walked together, bringing up an extraordinary wave of pressure towards everyone in the audience. All those powerful people in the VIP seats were also attracted by them and turned their heads to them.

“So powerful! They can control people just by their auras.” Wu Zongming gasped.

Ye Chen smiled a little, he did not feel much different. After looking around, he realized that most of the people around him had lost their confidence. Of course, there were a few people who were even more excited after they saw the top ten disciples. ‘As long as I could beat them, I can be one of them! What is life about, besides being successful? Who doesn't want to be at the top and be admired by others? And being one of the top ten disciples could be a great starting point.’

Since the platforms were in different directions, all the top ten disciples went on their separate ways. The ones walking towards Ye Chen were the ‘Flying in the wind’ Feng Ping, ‘Mad Man’ Xiao Ye, and Zhou Ruo. They maintained three steps gap from each other, neither too close, nor too far.

“I don’t see anyone powerful over here in our groups!” Feng Ping looked around and said to Xiao Ye and Zhou Ruo.

Xiao Ye had his hair down, covering his shoulders, which made him look extremely wild. He said, “They are still too young, in the past five years, the craziest time was when only three people were pushed off the top ten. Normally, it would be a surprise if two people are off the rank.”

Feng Ping moved his eyes away from the group, he did not really care who he was about to battle with, since warriors below the Late Condensing Reality Realm were very unlikely to be in the top ten. Over the past five years, only the core disciple Xu Jing had broken this pattern, even Zhu Mei was at the Late Condensing Reality Realm when she got in the top ten, before she became a core disciple.

Zhou Ruo said casually, “Don’t be too careless, you might trip yourself. It is not impossible for Sky Cloud Martial School to have another sister Xu Jing.”

Wu Zongming said to Ye Chen in a low voice, “You missed the ranking competition the one before last year, sister Xu Jing who was only at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm and had never lost a battle. She ended up being the top of all the inner disciples. Only when she became a core disciple had Meng Chong finally gotten the chance to be ranked first.”

Ye Chen nodded, he still hadn’t gotten a chance to see how powerful Xu Jing was, even when she was in the North-West Basin, she did not seem to be using all her strength. So it was really hard to imagine where the limit of her power was. Not only her, every single one of the top ten inner disciples were extremely powerful, they all had the power to instantly kill any normal warriors at the same power level, so it was extremely hard to cross-levels and beat them, almost impossible.

Changing his tone, Wu Zongming continued to talk, “However, Meng Chong was still not very strong until last year. Now he is unstoppable. Someone said that his strength might already be able to match with the top ten of the core disciples. He is just waiting to finish the ranking competition and then he can go become a core disciple.”

While the two of them were talking, the head elder of the Sky Cloud Martial School walked to the platform in the middle with extremely light steps.

After clearing his throat, the head elder said loudly, “Everyone, welcome to the



annual Sky Cloud Martial School Inner Disciple Ranking Competition. Just like the previous years, all the contestants will be separated into ten groups, with an ace contestant as No.0 in each group. They would be joining the competition within each group after five rounds, all the battles before that would be counted as a win.

The competition is conducted by taking random draws. The one whose number had been drawn out had to come up to the platform and battle until there is a winner. In addition, the competition uses a scoring system, each battle you win will earn you two points, a battle with a tie earns you one point, if you lose then there will be no points for you. The people with top three scores in the team would be able to attend the final battles, and fight for the title of top ten inner disciples.”

“Without further ado, the ranking competition can officially begun.”

The plaza was once again filled with chatter, it only got louder and louder.

After nodding his head in satisfaction, the head elder flashed back to his seat among the other masters of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

Right next to each platform, all the attendants had already started drawing lots.

“The first group, No.3 against No.9.”

“The second group, No.5 against No.23!”

“The third group, ...”

After hearing their numbers, some of the inner disciples walked up the platforms and started the battles with their opponents.

## Chapter 105 – Easy Wins

Coincidentally, Wu Zongming was one of the contestants in the first battle of the third group. His opponent was just like him, at the Mid Condensing Reality Realm.

“Burning lava fist!”

On the stage, Wu Zongming yelled, while he jumped up and threw a punch at his opponent.

Pow!

The burning sparks splashed everywhere, making that inner disciple back out a few steps.

Wu Zongming had just gained some advantages in this battle, he did not want to let his opponent have any opportunities to fight back, he activated his top rank Mortal Realm Skill Burning lava fist art to its extreme. Ten fiery shadows of the punches shot at the same time, leaving his opponent nowhere to hide, which eventually made Wu Zongming the winner of the round.

Off the stage, Wu Zongming said in high spirit, “Great, the first opponent is not very strong.”

“This is only the first round, don’t show off too much of your strength.” Ye Chen reminded his friend.

“I know, don’t worry.”

A battle normally lasted a few minutes, there were rarely any cases of the contestants having about the same strength, making it tough to determine the winner.

Some of the groups had already finished their first round of the competition, and started their second round.

“The seventh group, No.8 against No.28.”

Wu Zongming said, “Ye Chen, it’s your turn.”

“Yes.”

Ye Chen nodded and jumped onto the seventh platform.

“The peak of the Mid Condensing Reality Realm... it seems like I am pretty lucky.” Ye Chen’s opponent was a teenager with thick eyebrows, he held a huge blade with an interesting angle. There was visible yellow Qi flowing around the tip of his blade, making it look extremely powerful.

Ye Chen was pretty speechless, that teenager was also at the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm, he was wondering what that luck his opponent mentioned was.

“Lose!”

The teenager with thick eyebrows suddenly jumped towards Ye Chen, the hard stone floor under his feet was filled with cracks as he moved. He waved his huge blade that obviously was not light as he ran towards Ye Chen.

Ye Chen shook his head, he waved his right hand casually. Although he looked like he spent zero effort, his whole arm was slung at such high speed that it almost disappeared. He easily flicked the huge blade off his opponent’s hand. However, his opponent still thought his blade was right where it was and carried on his attacking movement.

Swoosh!

There were still five steps between the two of them, the teenager without his blade failed to attack, he said in confusion with some dissatisfaction, “Where did my blade go!?”

Ye Chen pointed to the left.

The teenager with thick eyebrows looked over, he saw his huge blade was plunged into the ground at the edge of the platform, it was still shaking.

He could not be anymore embarrassed that that, the teenager took out his blade and jumped off the platform with his face reddened. Inside his head, he had cussed at Ye Chen using every nasty word he could think of.

Without any surprises, Ye Chen had won the battle, which gave him two points.

The second round, the third round... all the way up to the fifth round, Ye Chen

had beaten all his opponents without spending much effort, which gave him ten points in total.

Wu Zongming had lost his fourth battle, he got eight points in total.

On the other side, Zhang Haoran who had just reached the Mid Condensing Reality Realm was in group ten. He had also won five battles continuously, earning ten points.

Huang Bingwen who had battled with Ye Chen before seemed to have increased his power level, he had only lost one of the five battles he had been in, which gave him eight points, just like Wu Zongming.

After all the fifth round battles had finished, the head elder announced that there would be a half-an-hour break, which allowed everyone to regain some of their Zhen Qi and energy.

On the east side of the VIP seats, Ye Tianhao said to Shen Yuqing with a huge smile, “Chen’er is doing pretty good! I can’t believe that he had won five battles continuously, he seemed very relaxed as well.”

Shen Yuqing was also very happy as she said, “We had been worrying for nothing. In the past six months, our Chen’er has grown so much! There is definitely hope for him to get in the top one hundred.”

“Indeed, let’s wait and see!”

Thirty minutes’ break was over just like that, the competition began again.

Unlike the first five rounds, the next five rounds would include the ace contestant. If the remaining contestants were able to avoid the ace contestants, then it would be really lucky for them; but if they ever encountered them, then they would just have to tough it out.

This time, Wu Zongming was very unlucky. Although he did not get stuck with the ace contestant, he had encountered an inner disciple at the Late Condensing Reality Realm. After taking ten attacks, he had finally lost.

On the contrary, Zhang Haoran had carried on without losing, which gave him twelve points in total.

Huang Bingwen lost a battle, he still had eight points.

In the sixth and the seventh round, it was once again Ye Chen's turn.

"Hehe, little brat, your record of winning would be broken now." The speaker was a teenager with crooked eyes, who was about seventeen years' old, it was regarded as pretty old among all the inner disciples. In the extra time, he must have accumulated a lot of battling experiences, that allowed him to be in the top two hundred.

Shoo!

This time, Ye Chen decided to attack first. He used his [Crane Shadow Steps] and disappeared in front of his opponent. The moment his opponent saw Ye Chen again, all he could feel was the sharp pain on his chest, a powerful force hit him and pushed him all the way off the stage.

After landing heavily on the ground, the teenager with crooked eyes looked shocked and confused, he could not believe what had happened. He wondered how powerful this Ye Chen who had beaten him with just one move was.

"Feng Ping, this junior brother seems a little different! He seems to be hiding his true strength." Zhou Ruo glanced at Ye Chen and then casually said to Feng Ping.

Feng Ping shook his head and laughed, "Compared to the other inner disciples, he is pretty strong, but with me here, all he could do is lose."

Xiao Lie said, "Although he would not be able to beat you, there is hope for him to be in the top three of the group."

After another round of battles, it was time for the ninth round.

"No. 0 against No. 24!"

"Your turn." Xiao Lie said with his arms wrapped in front of his chest.

Swoosh!

A light breeze swept the floor, Feng Ping's shadow slowly disappeared from where he was standing. He had already appeared on the stage.

"Such a fast movement art! When did he get up there!?"

"No wonder they call him the 'Flying in the wind' Feng Ping, the style of his

martial art is almost like the wind, with neither a shape nor any shadows.”

All the inner disciples around could not say a word more.

Ye Chen slightly frowned, although Feng Ping had crazy speed, the thing which worried him more was Feng Ping’s ability with the wind, he combined himself with the wind and became one with it, which largely increased the quality of his movement art. It also created this confusing illusion, of course, Ye Chen had seen through it.

“Brother Feng, my name is Gao Liang, I appreciate this opportunity to fight against you.” The square-faced teenager knew that there was a huge gap between them, so he said with great respect.

Feng Ping nodded, “Bring on everything you’ve got! I will take it easy.”

After he heard him, the square-faced teenager looked very serious, he got his sword out of its scabbard, and waved it in the air. Suddenly, he attacked Feng Ping.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The great sword vibrated a little halfway through, it formed four sword shadows, each of them extremely sharp. They sliced open the air, bringing up crazy amounts of Qi along with them.

Seeing that the tip of his sword was just about to stab Feng Ping, happiness flashed past the square-faced teenager’s face.

Right then, Feng Ping moved, his body leaned back a little, keeping the same distance between him and the tip of the sword. He just kept floating backwards like that.

“How could this be happening?! My stabbing speed could not catch up with his movement art!?” After he kept chasing for about ten meters, the square-faced teenager just could not stab his opponent, no matter what. The happiness he had felt before disappeared completely as if it never happened.

Feng Ping lost the patience to keep playing with his opponent, he flicked his fingers at the sword.

Chin!

Even though it was just the slightest amount of power, the square-faced teenager found himself barely holding his sword. All the sword light he managed to form earlier had been shattered within a second, his plan of attacking through air had completely failed.

The next second, he could feel the kick on his chest. Blood burst out of his mouth, he could not help but be pushed off the stage.

“Brother Feng, bravo! He hasn't lost one battle, and all his opponents were beaten without any effort. Exactly how powerful are those top ten inner disciples?!”

“Very powerful! Brother Feng was not even being serious.”

“It looks like there is no one that could beat brother Feng, even that No.28 Ye Chen is definitely not his opponent.”

## Chapter 106 – The Weird Battle

Off the stage, Wu Zongming turned his head and said to Ye Chen, “Ye Chen, you are about to face Brother Feng, be careful! His movement art is way more powerful than he makes it look.”

“I know, don’t worry.” Among all the people in the crowd, Ye Chen saw it more clearly than anyone else. However, about the movement art, he really did not have to worry about his opponent.

In the seventh round of battles, Wu Zongming, Zhang Haoran and Huang Bingwen had all lost. Wu Zongming and Huang Bingwen had lost because they were not as powerful as the opponents and Zhang Haoran had lost because he encountered the “Ghost Sword” Li Kuang who was one of the top ten inner disciples.

Li Kuang had totally lived upto his reputation. With just one sword movement, he had beaten Zhang Haoran.

Technically, the power gap between the two was almost ignorable, Zhang Haoran was also one of the top geniuses in the Sky Cloud Martial School who was not easily beaten. But this time, he could only blame his lack of luck. Li Kuang was famous for his unpredictable sword arts, if there was even a tiny gap between him and his opponent, then his opponent would have no chance to avoid his sword attack. That one sword movement was almost inevitable.

Zhang Haoran who had lost the battle kept staring at Li Kuang, he could not believe that he failed to take one attack.

Li Kuang turned around, while he was walking down the stage, he said casually, “Train for another year.”

“Below the core disciples, brother Li Kuang is the No.1 sword artist.”

“Now that I have time to think about it, I think that one sword attack was too scary, it was way too fast for our eyes and senses to follow. Although it was incredibly fast, somehow it gave people an illusion that it was too slow. If it was me, I think I will just go crazy on the spot.”



“Brother Li is indeed very powerful, but you guys, look over there.” An inner disciple pointed at another platform, there were two people on there prepared to battle.

The rest of the inner disciples started their quiet chatter.

“It is the ‘Two Spears’ Brother Dong Haohua who is No.9 of the top ten inner disciples. Who is his opponent? How come I’ve never seen him before?”

“Me neither.”

“He seems to have come out of nowhere. Is there someone like him among the inner disciples?”

On a platform.

A teenage boy with no expression had his right hand on his sword, he took it out and waved it in the air.

Swoosh!

Six sword light flashed out, covering Dong Haohua’s whole body.

Dong Haohua smiled with confidence, waved both of his spears from left to right. The spear shadows shattered the sword light without any effort, and it did not stop there. It attacked towards his opponent.

All of a sudden.

Dong Haohua froze where he was, he looked down, and noticed there was a huge tear in his clothes on his chest, there was blood all over it.

“I lost. What is your name?” Dong Haohua knew, if it wasn’t for his opponent letting him live, he would be long dead by now. But what he did not understand was that he had already shattered the six sword shadows, then how did he get attacked?

“Li Yun!”

Leaving only two words, the teenager without any expression left the stage.

“Beating the No.9 inner disciple brother Dong Haohua with only one sword movement! How unbelievable! Since when did we have this kind of character among the inner disciples?”

“Even brother Dong had been beaten with just one sword attack, this Li Yun could probably compete with brother Li Kuang. I just don’t know who would have the better sword arts.”

Not far away, Li Kuang squeezed his eyes, staring at Li Yun’s back.

Finally, there was one member of the top ten inner disciples who had been beaten. A lot of the inner disciples who had lost hope were now expecting to see a second one, and then a third...

Soon.

At the group eight platform, someone else had beaten the No.10 inner disciple “Iron Legs” Song Fei.

Although Song Fei was only the tenth rank inner disciple among the top ten inner disciples, it was only because of his head-on battling style.

His opponent was also someone training leg arts, with only three kicks, he had beaten Song Fei. The first kick shattered Song Fei’s kick shadows, the second kick had broken Song Fei’s defensive Zhen Qi, and the third and the last kick was only a gentle touch on Song Fei’s chest, which left a deep foot step. It looked effortless and very gentle, but it was indeed opposite to that.

If it was only that, it would not be this shocking for him to win. The inner disciple who had beaten Song Fei was called Tie Feng, he was nineteen years’ old which was pretty old for an inner disciple. He was commonly regarded as a hard worker with limited talent. But this time, his battle style had completely changed, it was like a moth that had turned into a butterfly.

“This young man is a late bloomer!”

In the masters’ seats, someone made a comment.

Couple of masters sitting right next to him nodded, “Hard work could make up for the flaws, sometimes when a warrior who lacks natural talent works hard, he might just figure it all out. This young man is worth putting effort in.”

“Hehe, it is not like we have never seen any late bloomers before, but this time is way more shocking than any other time. It is almost like a different person.”

Wu Zongming asked Ye Chen, “Ye Chen, what do you think? How come I think

that those three kicks were extremely simple, but I cannot figure it out why brother Song Fei could not handle them.”

Ye Chen slowly let out a breath, “That’s Shi!”

“Shi?” Wu Zongming did not follow.

Ye Chen explained, “The so-called Shi is actually very mysterious, which cannot really be explained by words. Put it in a simple way, is that he had sensed the meaning of nature, and combined the power of the nature with his kick arts. So that is why his kick art seemed so ordinary but somehow unstoppable. After all, human beings are like ants in front of nature.”

Wu Zongming was not sure if he understood it or not.

When the competition reached the end, the contestants with high scores would only gain more, and the ones with low scores would only seem to go lower and lower.

So far, Ye Chen had gained eighteen points which made him the top of the group, the same as Feng Ping.

Finally, the competition reached the final round, the tenth round.

“The first round, No.0 against No.28!”

Once the attendant had announced the result, the inner disciples around Ye Chen started to cheer. In the nine rounds before, they had all witnessed how strong Ye Chen was. It was not hard to see as someone rarely won nine rounds continuously. Besides the eight ace contestants, only a few people had accomplished that. Actually, if Ye Chen did not have to face Feng Ping, he might have won ten rounds. He would be ranked first along with Feng Ping and could have entered the finals. But now, it seemed impossible for it to happen.

While the crowd was prepared to get disappointed, Ye Chen walked on the stage.

In front of him, Feng Ping said in a relaxed manner, “You are pretty good.”

“You too.”

Ye Chen’s reply had shocked everyone else. ‘Brother Feng is only pretty good!? Is he joking? He cannot be this arrogant, can he?’

“Hehe, it is not good to be this arrogant. Let me test your limits!” Feng Ping approved Ye Chen’s strength, but it did not mean that he thought Ye Chen had what it takes to win against him. His body flashed, and disappeared in the air, almost as if he had melted and become a part of the wind.

Ye Chen did not flinch. He waved his fist towards the left, the power of his fist and the extraordinary power of his opponent’s strengthened fingers clashed against each other, making a horrible exploding sound.

Sooner, Feng Ping’s attacks had become stronger. Countless finger lights attacked Ye Chen from different directions. He was still with the wind and did not reveal himself.

“When comparing movement arts, who was I ever afraid of!?” As he spoke, Ye Chen also disappeared in the air, leaving those finger lights to attack the stage ground.

Pop! Boom! Swoosh!

You could only see that the fist shadows and the finger lights kept clashing together. As both of them were traveling too fast and were attacking in weird ways, one could only make out their figures for a split second.

“So freaking weird! How can we see them!? I cannot believe this Ye Chen is so powerful. Obviously, he had been hiding his true power.” Someone could not help but yell out.

“Brother Feng Ping probably hasn’t used all his true power yet... has he?”

## ***Chapter 107 - Finals***

“Hundred Thousand Burning Flames.”

Feng Ping pointed his finger in the air and used a fire attribute martial art. The fire beam cleaved the air with a loud noise.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Ye Chen’s figure was torn to pieces. It was just his afterimage that was formed due to his extreme speed.

“Is that all you got?” Ye Chen talked to Feng Ping from behind.

Feng Ping was irritated and then spun towards him. The fire beams were being cast from his fingers in every direction, they broke the edges of the stone pillars.

Ye Chen took a sharp glance and quickly evaded the attacks. They were not used all at once, but in a consecutive manner. With his speed and body control, Ye Chen managed to rush a distance of five steps towards Feng Ping.

“How could this be possible? Why can’t the beam hit him?”

Including Xiao Ye and Zhou Ruo, the disciples were stunned in amazement with their mouths wide open.

They understood well that with just speed alone one could not make that many evasions from the beams as the gaps in between the beams were so small that they could be neglected. As the beams were in disorder, one could only evade the attacks with good eyesight, a strong spirit, continuous stamina, high speed and good reflexes.

In the elder’s gallery, the first Elder smiled, “This kid is good, there might only be a few that can surpass him in terms of speed.”

The second elder nodded, “Yes, even Feng Ping’s speed could not be underestimated, but his speed is comparatively inferior to Ye Chen.”

“Haha, we have three disciples with such high potentials, it is a blessing for our school!” The third elder could not stop himself from having a smile on his face.

On the arena, Ye Chen ended the fight with a punch towards Feng Ping that sent him out of the stage.

“Ye Chen wins!”

The referee was shocked and then shouted loud to announce the winner.

Without much complacency, Ye Chen flashed and then stood beside Wu Zongming.

Wu Zongming was excited, “This is so great, even Feng Ping’s speed is inferior to yours.”

“He could not understand the essence of wind but he had the speed of wind.” Wind had no form or shape. If Feng Ping could learn this, naturally Ye Chen could not win against him in terms of speed.

Feng Ping got away from the arena distracted. His loss in terms of speed had a huge impact on him. He was so arrogant with extreme confidence earlier and assumed that he could easily knock out Ye Chen.

The tenth match had ended.

The judges spoke out the result.

“For group Seven, the highest score is Ye Chen with twenty marks, followed by Feng Ping, eighteen marks, the third is....”

For the group elimination, the first three highest scorers would be qualified for the next round, therefore Feng Ping was not eliminated.

Swiftly, the results were announced for the other group stages.

Wu Zongming was eliminated due to continuous losses in the group stage. Zhang Haoming is ranked second in his group with a single loss. Meanwhile, Li Yun and Tie Feng advanced as the top scorers in their groups.

Although the competitions were remarkable, they had to get their lunch since it was now noon.

The first elder stood up and made an announcement that the next matching would be held in the afternoon.

In the dining hall.

“It is so unexpected. We had three new but strong disciples in this session of the tournament, Li Yun, Tie Feng and Ye Chen.”

“Li Yun’s sword skills are so aggressive. Until now, I could not figure out how he defeated Brother Dong Haohua.”

“Tie Feng is good as well. He was so stable, he defeated Brother Song Fei with just three attacks.”

“In your opinion, does Ye Chen have any other abilities apart from his speed?”

“He probably only has his speed. But to defeat him, his opponent must at least be ranked six in the top ten.”

“Yes, no matter how fast he is, if he could not attack, he can’t win against someone like Brother Li Kuang.”

“Yeah, other than Brother Feng Ping, Brother Dong Haohua and Brother Song Fei, the other seven people from the top disciples have not yet used their full strength, they have not even demonstrated seventy percent of their true strength. To defeat them, one needs to be strong in every aspect.”

“We need to stop the discussion, I am so excited that I can’t even have my meal now. I truly wish to watch the final match, the top ten disciples will surely use their true powers. These will be the best fights for the top disciples!”

Afternoon.

The Martial Plaza was filled with excitement again, it was even a few times more than it was that morning.

In the middle of the stage, the first elder explained in a loud noise, “The last stage of the matches will be the elimination and the ranking matches. We will eliminate up to twenty people in the elimination and the remaining ten disciples will fight to determine their rank in the ranking matches.”

Below the stage, Ye Chen understood well. There were ten rounds for the elimination, simultaneously taking place on three arenas. However, the disciples would not be fixed on any of the stage. By random distribution, they would be fighting on any of the arenas.

Therefore, after the ten matches of elimination, the top ten with the highest scores would be the new top ten disciples in this session of tournament.

After being selected as the top ten disciples, they would need to participate in the complicated ranking matches to determine their rank in the top ten.

“Now, let the battles begin” The first elder raised his voice by using Zhen Qi.  
Bang!

From the auditorium, people they were cheering to support their preferred disciples.

“First arena, Song Fei versus Jiang Hao!”

“Second arena, Li Yun versus Wu Yuan!”

“Third arena, Meng Chong versus Feng Ping!”

The results of the first two battles were predictable. It might be quite interesting since the battle in the third arena was between two people from the previous top ten disciples. A big applause was given to the third battle.

The six selected disciples got to the arenas.

As expected, Song Fei and Li Yun had beaten their opponent easily and got their first two marks.

At the same time, the battle for the third arena had not yet started.

Feng Ping was looking at Meng Chong with a serious look on his face. As one of the previous top ten, there were two people that he did not want to encounter. One was the Ghost Sword, Li Kuang while the other was the Blood Shadow, Meng Chong.

The Ghost Sword, Li Kuang had an unpredictable weapon skill. Warriors inferior to him could not pose any threat to him. And Meng Chong was scarier as he had top attributes in all aspects, making him undefeatable.

But Feng Ping was reluctant to just surrender, even though he could not win against Meng Chong. He was one of the previous top ten. It would be an embarrassment if he could not even take one attack from Meng Chong.

Meng Chong joked, “Feng Ping, are you thinking of ways to counter a single



attack of mine?”

“You can give up on trying. Your strength is far lower than mine.”

Walking step by step towards Feng Ping, Meng Chong touched the shaft of his blade with his right hand.

Flash!

Feng Ping got nervous and dashed to the side. His body disappeared from everyone’s sight.

“You can not escape from me!”

Almost no one could see how Meng Chong made his slash, but a red slash did cut rapidly.

A moment later, Feng Ping showed up. A long cleave was made on his dress from his chest until his waist.

“Haha!”

As he laughed loudly, Meng Chong made his way down the stage

## Chapter 108 - One leg move the wind and the clouds

“Even if Feng Ping lost to Ye Chen in term of speed, his speed is still quite good when compared to other disciples. But he could not even escape from a single slash from Brother Meng Chong, the gap is truly large.”

“This year, Brother Meng Chong has become even more fearful.”

Hearing the conversation of the crowd, Ye Chen frowned. The Blood Shadow, Meng Chong, was strong. His attack was simple, but it had cut at a tremendous velocity. With a weapon skill of such simplicity, he managed to deal such massive damage.

Therefore, in a fight with Meng Chong, one could not rely much on their weapon skills, unless his skill level was far overwhelming than Meng Chong.

The moment Meng Chong left the arena, all the disciples that were competing in the top ten ranking fights looked towards him in fear.

Yi Qing, a thin looking disciple with nickname of Iron Fan, made a wry smile, “I thought that I might be able to surpass him this year, but sadly I have been left behind even further.”

At his side, Song Fei asked, “Were you ranked second in the previous ranking matches?”

“The previous rankings are no longer important, the gap has increased. His power has reached the level of some of the best core disciples.”

“The core disciples.” Song Fei sucked in a cold breath. He understood how strong the people in the top ranks of core disciples were. Although they were also at the peak of late Condensing Reality Realm, anyone from the core disciples could easily defeat him with a single attack. If it was a person who had good rank among them, he would be an abnormality that was extremely hard to defeat.

Ye Chen got selected to fight in the fourth match. The name of his opponent was Yang Lie.

By this time, his opponent quickly went up the arena and swiftly moved back in order to be a huge distance away from Ye Chen, so that he could keep Ye Chen from disappearing from his sight.

Ye Chen shook his head, he made a wry smile and stood still in the arena.

When he was around thirty steps away from Ye Chen, Yang Lie stopped and released three sword beams from his blade towards the position of Ye Chen.

His body moved aside quickly and evaded the beams. Ye Chen stomped on the ground and released a hidden force towards his opponent.

“Explode!”

Bang!

The ground under Yang Lie exploded, causing him to be thrown away from the arena.

This move was out of everyone’s expectations, they thought that Ye Chen would defeat his opponent again with speed.

The victory of the fifth match was taken by Zhang Haoran. Even if he had lost to the Ghost Sword, Li Kuang, he was still strong and powerful, he defeated his opponent within ten attacks and obtained two marks.

The following matches were dull without much suspense. They were unsightly as it was just the stronger ones bullying the weaker ones.

“The ninth match, Pei Shaoqing versus Tie Feng.”

Hum!

With the announcement of the referee, the crowd shouted wildly in ebullience.

Pei Shaoqing had a better rank than the Ghost Sword, Li Kuang in the previous ranking matches. He looked polite and easy to get along. Only a few knew that his attacks were fierce like a demon. Even his friend, Li Kuang had a slight fear of him.

Tie Feng was someone that could be described as a disciple with lesser talent that matured slowly. He was stable and steady like a mountain, he defeated Song Fei with just three kicks with his well known leg art.

Both of them could be said to be equally strong and could only find out the stronger one among them by fighting.

“Tie Feng, please do not get too harsh with me!” Pei Shaoqing smiled.

Tie Feng replied sincerely, "Sure!"

Looking at Tie Feng's expression, the crowd felt amused and had some laughs. But that was not because of hatred or dislike, they admired his diligence with which he continuously practiced that lead to him sharpening his skills just like a magnificent grandmaster.

Pei Shaoqing's smile ceased and he got nervous. He had an intuition that Tie Feng would be hard and really difficult to deal with. To win this match, he would probably need to bring out all his power and unleash his full strength.

Unwittingly, his palm turned greenish-purple. With a loud shout, he rushed towards Tie Feng like a demon and tried to hit him with his palm.

Wuuu! Wuuu!

The air was torn apart by the force. A piercingly wild shriek, that sounded like a ghost's cry was heard. The disciples nearby were terrified, their faces turned pale with fright.

Tie Feng was daft with his attack. However, when he made his move, everyone knew that the Pei Shaoqing's momentum was unable to effect him.

He bent his body and raised his right leg. With these movements, his energy and spirit rose up as he accumulated a storming force in his body.

"Smash!"

One powerful kick had caused Pei Shaoqing's palm strength to collapse. The tremendous force caused him to resist the force with all he had. But as one of the disciples that ranked amongst the forefront of the previous top ten disciple rankings, Pei Shaoqing still had enough strength to make a sudden attack by rotating his body in a semicircle around Tie Feng.

"[Summon the demons over the mountains and plains!]"

A purplish-blue wave appeared after one forceful strike from Shaoqing, the sky suddenly darkened and its dark clouds were overwhelming and completely shrouded Tie Feng. People that could overcome this must be really strong.

"I'm afraid, but Tie Feng can't withstand this!"

"Senior Brother Pei Shaoqing is not like Song Fei, he is not that easy to deal

with."

"Hmm. I just don't know how many strikes Tie Feng can take ..."

Ye Chen's view was different from others. Since Tie Feng had unleashed his first strike causing his internal power to grow stronger and stronger, Pei Shaoqing would most probably be in danger if it goes on like this.

Indeed. Confronting the powerful purplish-blue wave, Tie Feng opened his mouth wide and shouted out.

The thunder-like voice was so powerful that it felt as if it shook the whole atmosphere.

"[A kick to conquer the world]!"

Tie Feng stood in the centre of the platform, his momentum continued to increase, he struck out with a powerful yet stable kick.

Suddenly a howling gale appeared, along with the tremendous strike of the kick, and struck the purplish-blue wave.

Crack! Crack!

The whole platform felt like there was a huge storm accompanied with thunder, people couldn't even see the things happening in front of them.

In the next moment, a figure flew out upside down with blood spurting out of his mouth into the air.

It was Pei Shaoqing!

"Unbelievable, Tie Feng won!"

"Just now how many strikes did Tie Feng use, did you see it?"

"It was five I think, maybe nine times!"

"But how come I could only see the shadows of his moves..."

Ye Chen smiled faintly. Tie Feng was indeed very powerful, there were only a few people that could surpass him. For now, only Meng Chong could confront him. Of course, in a fight, anything may happen and the one with the greater strength may not necessarily win.

At the V.I.P platform, all the elders of the martial school smiled at each other. It seemed like Tie Feng was far more excellent than what they thought, the attacks displayed a moment ago were really exciting.

When the gale subsided, Tie Feng got off the fighting stage calmly and smiled patiently.

In this regards, the spectators were totally speechless as they felt that the fight was not that easy.

The competition continued.

The next few fights were not as strong as the previous one as some overwhelmingly strong ones were matched against the weak ones. There was no trace of suspense.

However in the last match of the first round, Iron Fan, Yi Qing, had pleased the spectators with a joyful battle. Once he flicked his fan, numerous shadows of his fan were released making it look like dancing butterflies. It was so dreamy and surreal that it made his opponent fear fighting against him.

-----  
-----

## Chapter 109 - Fight against Ghost Sword, Li Kuang

The second round matches made everyone speechless. Out of 15 rounds, 11 had early conclusions. Their strength was extremely oppressive.

Ye Chen's match was not in these eleven, but it was not too far off. His opponent was Dual Spear, Dong Haohua. His skill was not bad, it was just that his opponent was Ye Chen. He was defeated in just three to four strikes by Ye Chen without showing his real capability.

There were two exciting matches in the third round, one of it was the duel between two female disciples from previous top ten rankings and another one was the duel between Xiao Ye and Li Yun.

The two female disciples were Zhou Ruo, the "Peach Blossom Hand" and Qiu Ruodan, the "Color Sword".

Zhou Ruo was ranked fourth, her strength was exceptionally strong. Her tiny hand was seemingly soft, but it could cause Qiu Roudan who was ranked eighth to immediately vomit blood and be forced to withdraw from the battle, thus she lost the game.

The duel between Xiao Ye and Li Yun was very intense, one of them ranked third in the previous top ten rankings, the other one was a new rising disciple with great skill. Both of them fought like raging fire and refused to give ground to other, even the platform was almost completely destroyed by them.

Xiao Ye had terrible strength in attack and defense, ordinary swords would not be able to break his Qi shield and he could even shatter the air in front of him with a punch, making Li Yun unable to get near him.

As for the Li Yun, although he was a new rising disciple, he could not be outdone, he had strength comparable to the third ranked Xiao Ye, it was a close match. His skill in controlling his fencing with the hidden sword light was excellent, reaching the acme of perfection, making Xiao Ye be wary of his every move.

At last, as the match continued for a long time without any result, the elders declared it a tie.

The fourth and fifth rounds were filled with wonderful battles, the disciples who watched from the viewing platform were very happy and excited about them.

The third game in the sixth round of battle. Meng Chong with his Blood Shadow Blade versus Yi Qing with his Iron Fan.

"Last year's first and second rankers are finally confronting each other, I have no idea who will be the better one."

"You idiot! Of course Senior Brother Meng Chong is stronger."

"The match has not yet started, how do you already know? Plus, Senior Brother Yi Qing's Iron Fan skills are awesome, how could he lose?" This was said by a female disciple who strongly supported Yi Qing.

Few people who stood next to her kept glaring at her and whispered: "Another fangirl is here!"

On stage.

Yi Qing opened up his Iron Fan, smiled at Meng Chong and said, "Last year when I fought you, we were able to fight for a few dozens of strikes, I'm afraid but this time it may not happen."

"Why do you lower yourself?" said Meng Chong, "Or do you think that I'll let my guard down for you."

"Ha Ha!" Yi Qing laughed.

"Come on, I know you must have some tricks already and probably 80% of them will be used to deal with me." Meng Chong quite recognized Yi Qing's capability. Yi Qing had already fused his techniques with actual combat principles perfectly, making it look beautiful yet not too gaudy and modern. It was really impossible to beat him easily.

Meng Chong stepped forward at a slow yet stable pace and got closer to Yi Qing with his energetic aura spread out which was strongly felt by Yi Qing.

When he was about to take his tenth step, Yi Qing moved. He knew that if he did not do so, there was no way to back out once he let his opponent find the best spot to attack,.



When the Iron Fan fluttered, one by one, the magic fan's shadows appeared randomly, as if a big bag filled with butterflies was torn open letting all the butterflies fly out, straight towards Meng Chong.

"Break!"

Meng Chong bent his body down, rushed forward and cut apart the bunch of shadows.

Putchh!

This one strike had caught the weakest point of the [Countless Fans Shadow skill], the blood red blade with the sharp light was brisk, it already appeared in front of Yi Qing in the blink of an eye, unbelievably fast.

"This is a fast moving blade skill, stable yet quick and light. I have no idea how this fares against North Snow Fast Blade Lin Qi." Watching Meng Chong's blade skill, Ye Chen suddenly remembered Lin Qi who he coincidentally met at the Northwest Auction Field. Both of them were known for their quick and agile blade skill, but he felt that Meng Chong was still a bit less skillful when compared to Lin Qi.

Shaking his head, Ye Chen clearly knew that he had to work harder as there were people stronger than Lin Qi, like Young Master North Snow and Young Master Duan Mu and not to forget the top of Heavenly Wind Nation's' younger generation - Young Master Emerald.

Qing! Qiang!

Though the great impact force of the red blade was pushed off by the iron fan, it was still too powerful, it sent Yi Qing bouncing out.

"Good, if you can withstand my first strike, let's see about the second and third strikes." Meng Chong seemed to be gaining spirit and became more and more energetic. His blood red blade skill slashed out and formed a huge net covering Yi Qing.

Yi Qing tried to protect himself with the Iron Fan. Nevertheless, the dreadful blade skill was able to make his whole body numb and it also increased his blood pressure.

"The seventh blade!" This last strike was so fast and it finally cut Yi Qing changing the situation completely.

Yi Qing slowly kept away his Iron Fan, "I still can't defeat you." Just now Yi Qing was about to use a strong attack, but due to Meng Chong's Brisk Blade skill, his unique skill became completely useless. He realised that his attack skill was yet to be perfected, otherwise it won't be so easy for Meng Chong to find its fault. Everything had both its advantages and disadvantages. Through this battle, he was able to find its defects.

Meng Chong smiled, "I had to use the seventh blade to completely defeat you, excellent."

Wu Zongming, who stood beside Ye Chen sighed, "I wonder if there is someone that can defeat Senior Meng Chong." He then took a glance at Ye Chen, who gave him an unfathomable feeling. Till now nobody knew his real strength, maybe he can defeat Meng Chong.

Of course, Wu Zongming was not really sure about that.

"I don't know, let's see how it is going to progress" Ye Chen did not do anything to interfere.

Soon, it was the end of the sixth round of battles.

So far, only five of the remaining participants had an unbeaten record, they were Blood Shadow Blade - Meng Chong, Peach Blossom Hand - Zhou Rou, Ghost Sword - Li Kuang, Tie Feng and also Ye Chen.

Although Xiao Ye and Li Yun did not lose, they had a draw and thus accumulated one point less.

After the seventh round of battle, one more participant was eliminated, it was Peach Blossom Hand-Zhou Rou. She was unlucky that she had to fight Iron Fan - Yi Qing, she finally lost by just one move after about 100 strikes. Even so, the spectators were stunned by the battle.

As people anticipated the eighth round of battles, it finally began.

The first three matches were wonderful. When it came to the fourth match, the crowd of spectators cheered loudly.

It was a fight between Ye Chen and the Ghost Sword - Li Kuang.

Compared to this round, there was not much anticipation for his matches that morning. But, as Ye Chen continued to maintain his total victory, his popularity also continued to soar, the number of his supporters continued to increase, some of them were his martial school's disciples.

In the VIP seats, Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing were almost breathless.

It might seem a bit exaggerated, but this year's Sky Cloud Martial School's Inner disciple ranking was one of the most thrilling events in their lives. Each time Ye Chen fought, both of them would be worried for a little while, until the duel ended. They did not dare to see Ye Chen lose the match. Although Ye Chen's previous achievements were quite satisfying and had made them proud of him, there were no parents who did not want their children to be better. Fortunately, so far, they had witnessed Ye Chen's victories again and again, it seemed as if it was quite easy for him.

However, it was different this time. Ye Chen's opponent was the Ghost Sword - Li Kuang with his unpredictable fencing. So, it was still unknown whether he could surpass Li Kuang.

## ***Chapter 110: Comparing Sword Skill***

“Senior Brother Ye Chen is indeed dangerous! But, Senior Brother Meng Chong and Senior Brother Li Kuang were also restraining their strength, even Senior brother Feng Ping lost at the hands of these two.” The rest of the disciples slowly began to put the two words ‘senior brother’ in front of Ye chen’s name indicating that they had come to recognise Ye Chen’s strength.

"Well, let’s see if Senior Ye Chen can take Senior Li Kuang’s Ghost Sword first strike. Even if he could, there are still the second and third strokes from the Ghost Sword."

Ghost Sword Li Kuang had an unpredictable sword skill. Just a little mistake in their counterattack would let his opponent have difficulty in resisting his sword attacks, only those who had equal or higher skill and strength level when compared to him could fight for victory and defeat him.

On the fighting platform.

With a cold look in his eyes, Li Kuang stood straight like a sword.

On the opposite side, Ye Chen looked calm and undaunted.

"Generally, ordinary warriors will not be able to withstand my second sword. But, you seem to be quite skilled and capable, perhaps you will be able to make me use my third sword?" said Li Kuang, as he coldly glanced at Ye Chen.

Ye Chen said, "Are you sure? I advise you to better go all out."

"Do you think you are able to make me go all out with just your capability?" Li Kuang's gaze turned colder. He felt that Ye Chen’s words were an insult to his capability.

Both of them were separated by thirty steps, one had a cold look in his eyes, the other looked extremely calm. The spectators looked like they had stopped breathing, they were staring at the fighting stage with their eyes wide open.

Hum!

With a flash of a faint radiance, the Hidden Cloud Sword appeared in Ye Chen’s

hand, he answered coldly, "If you don't go all out, you will not have any chance to win."

Almost all the spectators were stunned.

"What! Senior Brother Ye Chen too uses a sword? It is the same weapon as Senior Brother Li Kuang."

"This is too astonishing! Doesn't this mean that Senior Brother Ye Chen never treated the previous matches seriously?"

"It's exciting to watch fights between two great swordsmen."

When Ye Chen took out his sword, it amazed the whole audience present. They all knew that a swordsman without a sword in his hand would be greatly limited in his fighting strength. Only with the treasured sword in his hand would he be able to display his full strength.

The elders nodded, "Interesting!"

Ye Chen's hand gripped the Cloud Hidden Sword tightly and his imposing aura was fully released. His eyes that were as sharp as sword light, stirred up people's hearts while a stream of sharp Qi was dispersed from his body.

However, Li Kuang was shocked to find that Ye Chen was also a swordsman. After all, Ye Chen felt like just any ordinary person a moment ago. Even his aura was nothing special. As far as he knew, a swordsman would have some presence of his sword Qi. For example, the sword point, their Qi sharpness, coldness, and some other things. Li Kuang was not the one that should be blamed for not being able to see it, it was Ye Chen who had the capability to hide it. One must be a swordsman with great attainments to be able to hide his capabilities to such an extent.

Unfortunately, he didn't know that Ye Chen had practiced the [Qi restraining technique] to a very high level. This skill was not only effective in hiding his cultivation level, even his aura could be concealed, making people unable to see the real situation. Not to mention Li Kuang, even some Clasp of Yuan Realm practitioners would not be able to tell.

"It is really good that you are also a swordsman. This battle certainly will be more interesting by defeating a swordsman. I hope that you will be able to

persist longer.” With his hand holding the hilt of the sword, Li Kuang poured his Qi into his sword

Li Kuang started the battle with his superb skill!

Shiu!

Li Kuang moved. His entire silhouette swept towards Ye Chen just like a sharp sword that just left its scabbard.

In the blink of an eye, their distance was reduced to only five steps.

“!!”

At this moment, Li Kuang drew out his sword. As the sword was unsheathed, it brought out a slow distortion in the black sword light surrounding it. In fact it was fast, it resembled a nightmare. This attack made people unable to tell at which point it would attack the opponent.

Zhang Haoran’s face turned pale. After all, he was defeated under this very sword. The painful memories of feeling helpless that were hidden deep in his mind overwhelmed him.

Clang!

Ye Chen also took out his sword under the crowd’s tense gazes. He positioned his sword at an impossible angle.

Moreover, Ye Chen’s sword light was extremely thin, it was the simple type that represented the peak of sharpness.

Crush!

Li Kuang’s first sword was parried off and flew back without achieving anything. But, he didn’t really mind it, he wanted to use his second sword to completely suppress his opponent.

But to his surprise, Ye Chen started his counterattack

“[Reach the pinnacle]!”

[The Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords] was just a top rank mortal level skill in the hands of other swordsmen, but the power of the strike when used by Ye Chen was a few times greater. The sword point was headed straight towards Li

Kuang's chest.

This forced Li Kuang to step back and use the back of his sword to defend himself.

Ye Chen quickly took this opportunity and continued attacking Li Kuang with his sword skill.

Ye Chen's eyes were sharp as he moved his wrist, a sword light that was overlapped layer upon layer in a small range quickly headed towards Li Kuang.

"What?" The sword light that descended towards Li Kuang was like a mountain. As the mountain range transformed into a mountain peak, it made a huge impact in his mind.

Li Kuang couldn't defend the hard strikes and jumped high to avoid the hits. He tried to take back the initiative by cleaving downwards at Ye Chen.

Chang! Chang! Chang!.....

When both the swords came in contact with each other, there were sparks flying everywhere. The shockwaves disturbed and damaged everything in their surroundings.

Their moves were just too swift, most of the audience couldn't even see them clearly.

"What a great battle between these two swordsmen! Every single strike can take their life if they can't react fast enough!"

"Ye Chen performed well by defending against Li Kuang's first strike easily, he is even able to hold the initiative in the battle!"

In the audience, Pei Shaoqing and Qiu Ruotong were standing together.

Qiu Ruotong said, "Seems like your friend is in danger."

Suddenly, Pei Shaoqing laughed confidently, "Hah! Don't judge a book by its cover! Li Kuang's ability and skill improved a lot within this year, I expect that he will defeat Ye Chen with his 7th sword. He only the used 3rd sword of the Ghost Sword Skill until now."

"But I think Ye Chen also hasn't gone all out yet."

Li Kuang took a few steps back after landing. He then said, "I admit, you are indeed eligible to make me go all out, but it's impossible for you to defeat me! It's time to show you my actual strength!"

Li Kuang stepped forward as he was slowly surrounded with a huge dark wave. His black sword shone with a horrific light.

"Soul Drain!"

This time, Li Kuang did not hold back. He knew that the skills below the seventh sword would not be able to hurt Ye Chen at all. Only the seventh sword would be able to defeat him to the extent that he would have no ability to fight back.

The huge dark wave approached Ye Chen along with the black sword. Ye Chen wasn't afraid of it. He closed his eyes, and when he reopened, his gaze resembled sword light. It was like a few streaks of lightning tearing through the void.

"Break through!" When Ye Chen swung his sword, all the nearby inner disciples were frightened. Their swords sheathed at their waist started to vibrate, it felt as if they wanted to unsheath themselves to integrate with Ye Chen's sword strike.

An elder exclaimed loudly, "Sword intent! This is unexpectedly sword intent, how can this be?"



## Chapter 111 – The Rising Reputation

Of all the famous warriors of Windy Nation, only the leader of North Snow Martial Academy, Xue Wuren had fully sensed blade intent. No one knew if there was someone else that achieved the same. Just like blade intent, sensing sword intent was also extremely hard. At least until now, there had been no one in Windy Nation that had been proven to have learned the sword intent. And among the younger generation, only a few people had the hope to ever learn it. Zhu Mei from the Sky Cloud Martial School was one of them.

However, no one had expected that in an Inner Disciple Ranking Competition, a “nobody” would display sword intent, that every sword artist would be dreaming about. How shocking!

“No, he hasn’t yet achieved the true sword intent, it could only be referred to as half-step sword intent.” In the VIP seats for famous warriors, a man in blue said slowly.

Right next to him, a beautiful young lady in pink seemed to be confused, “Half-step sword intent?”

The man in blue explained, “I once met a sword artist who had achieved sword intent in Rudra Nation. I can still remember his power that allowed him to cut the air itself. After I returned, I swore to myself that I would gain my own style of sword intent one day. However, in the past few years, I had only grasped a little bit of the sword intent. But I did improve my power rapidly.”

The beautiful young lady suddenly thought to herself, “No wonder my husband had improved so fast in such a short period of time, it turns out that it was because he was extremely motivated.” Even though her husband had tried so hard, he still could not even sense the sword intent, and now a sixteen year old boy did it. It had to be said, sometimes a few days of hard work of a genius was equivalent to a few years of hard work of others.

The beautiful young lady was indeed the wife of the owner of Flower Fairy Restaurant in Ancient Spring Water town, “Flower Fairy”. Right next to her, was her husband, “Blue Clouds” sword artist – Shen Lang.

Boooom!

During their chatters, the battle on the platform had gotten very intense.

The sword Qi combined with the half-step sword intent was four meters' long. It cut open that sword Qi and that horrifying black sword light as if it was a piece of tofu. Then, the remaining sword Qi kept on going, leaving huge terrifying cracks on the ground. Eventually, it went right past Li Kuang and disappeared into thin air.

The next second.

The rock wall in front of the VIP seating started to wobble, it was being chipped.

Li Kuang was completely frozen, he just stood where he was. Just a second ago, he felt that death had gone right by him. If it was not for his opponent who had decided to let him live and purposely changed his attacking angle, that sword Qi could have cut him in half, turning him into a bloody mist leaving no bones behind.

Gag!

Suddenly, a chunk of blood forced its way out of Li Kuang's mouth. It turned out that although the sword Qi had not even touched him, that half-step sword intent had roiled the Zhen Qi inside of him. After letting out that chunk of blood, he surprisingly felt better.

"Ye Chen wins!" The elder on the side just came back to reality and yelled with a loud voice.

Putting his sword back in his scabbard, Ye Chen turned and walked off the stage.

In the elders' seats, the head master let out a long breath, "Although it was only half-step sword intent, it is not certain yet that he would actually be able to learn it completely. But, his chances of success are ten times better than others."

"So young and he has already sensed half-step sword intent, he has endless potential. In the future, he might become one of the top four warriors of our Sky

Cloud Martial School.”

“But we will still have to observe him, let’s see how loyal he is.”

“Naturally.”

Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing could not be anymore happier than this. The Duanmu family had Young Master Duanmu, and now their Ye family had a genius who sensed half-step sword intent. They could definitely catch up to the Duanmu family in the future, maybe even go beyond them and become the top of the top eight families.

The other people were also full of various thoughts. With today’s battle, Ye Chen was bound to become famous. Within days, his name would be known by everyone in Windy Nation.

Some people were happy for him, some of them were planning on how to get him.

A middle-aged man who wore navy blue robe with a sword scar on his face closed his eyes, murderous intent flashed in his eyes. He thought ‘This guy should be ruined, otherwise once he grows strong enough, the Sky Cloud Martial School would outdo the Purple Sun Martial School and would compete with the North Snow Martial Academy and Emerald Martial Palace directly. He would be extremely dangerous.’

If someone knew his thoughts, they would definitely be surprised as this guy did not even belong to a martial institution. He was only a rogue warrior called Zhu Lieyang, who was already extremely famous a decade ago. Right now, he was at the peak of Early Clasp of Yuan Realm.

However, if the leader of the Purple Sun Martial School knew about this, he would certainly not be surprised. Zhu Lieyang had been an intelligence master of the Purple Sun Martial School for a long time, he was especially in charge of collecting all kinds of information around the world. In the meanwhile, he would take care of all the business that the Purple Sun Martial School could not do.

Before, Zhu Lieyang had already killed a lot of martial disciples with great potential so that they would not be a future threat to the Purple Sun Martial School.

“Ye Chen, you are a dead man walking!” Zhu Lieyang laughed evilly in his head, without showing it on his face.

The competition continued. But in the audience’s eyes, it had become plain and boring.

A little distance away, Song Fei looked towards Ye Chen, and said to Yi Qing, “It seems like only he can compete with Meng Chong this year.”

Yi Qing said, “With the help of his half-step sword intent, he is indeed very strong. However, if he wants to win against Meng Chong, it would still be quite hard. Of course, both of them have already reached the core disciple level, so, the top ten inner disciple ranking competition is not very important for them. After all, this is only between the disciples of Sky Cloud Martial School, there are still the top four martial institutions out there. And outside of Windy Nation, there might even be countless powerful martial institutions. So, you have to see the big picture, being strong now and here does not mean anything.”

Song Fei sighed, “Yes! The top of our generation in Windy Nation, Young Master Emerald is only 68th on the Hidden Dragon Ranking. And who knows how many more talented geniuses would appear in the rankings next year?”

The eighth round was soon finished.

There were only three people that won all their battles, they were Meng Chong, Tie Feng and Ye Chen.

There were five people who had not lost any battles.

The ninth round, the ninth battle.

The “Blood Shadow Blade” Meng Chong against the “Mad Man” Xiao Ye.

Xiao Ye laughed, “Meng Chong, this time, your no.1 position is shaking.”

“It is only half-step sword intent. On the true spirit continent, the warriors who have learnt the sword intent and blade intent are not the only ones that can rule the world. I, Meng Chong, do not need to learn the blade intent to win against anyone.” Meng Chong did not care at all whether Ye Chen had learned the sword intent or not. For him, only defeating every opponent he had ever encountered could make him improve his blade skill to his limits. And that was enough.

Finished speaking, Meng Chong released his aura.

“What a man... he completely ignored my trap.” Xiao Ye was planning to use Ye Chen to make him feel shaken, and distract him, he did not expect that Meng Chong would be so determined and even somehow motivated by it. But, Meng Chong was actually right, learning the sword intent was indeed a great way to become strong, but there were various other ways as well. And Ye Chen did not train for long after all, his cultivation level was still below them, so there was really no need to worry too much about him.

“So, let’s fight!”

Xiao Ye yelled, while he threw out a punch with the power of thunder.

“Break!” Meng Chong started to run. A long blade appeared out of nowhere, it shone with a bloody red blade light as the Qi flowed and attacked Xiao Lie.

Ting!

Xiao Lie was indeed last year’s third ranked inner disciple, he was great at fighting head-on. He threw out a punch, and shattered the blade light without any effort.

“The second blade attack!”

The bloody red blade light appeared once again, rushing to the air, dyeing the sky red.

Xiao Lie did not back out, he didn’t even move at all. Both of his hands drew a half circle, Qi flowed in front of his chest as he willed it, it clashed with the blade light.

Boom!

The shock waves spread in every direction. Xiao Lie backed out three steps, a little bit of blood came out of the corner of his mouth.

Off the stage, Ye Chen thought, “Xiao Lie is supposed to be more powerful than Li Kuang, but he could only barely block Meng Chong’s second blade attack. It seems like it would be pretty tricky to win against this Meng Chong.”

## Chapter 112 – Ancient Beast Martial Art

“The third sword attack!”

The long blade in Meng Chong’s hand flashed in the air before it disappeared completely. All of a sudden, a bright blood red blade light started to shine. With an incomparable sharpness, it headed towards Xiao Ye.

“So fast!”

Xiao Ye only saw a flash in front of his eyes, and in the next second, the sharp blade light appeared a meter away from him.

Right then, there was no time to escape, not that it was his style. But, if he decided to go head-on, then he was doomed to vomit blood and fall back. Meng Chong’s third blade was not that simple to block. Earlier, even “Iron Fan” Yi Qing could only protect himself from being injured.

Boom!

Xiao Ye bent his body, a blue-ish halo spread out from him, a huge Zhen Qi arm expanded from his shoulders. It threw out a punch and clashed with that incoming blade light.

The two made contact and created an explosion that covered a circular area, it extended in every direction.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

All the stone columns in the surroundings started to crack, they looked like they would break even with the slightest breeze.

Meng Chong stopped his attacks and did not attack again.

Right then, the chatters among the audience started once again.

“A pair of Zhen Qi arms extended out of Senior brother Xiao Ye’s shoulder! Unbelievable!”

“The Zhen Qi arms were not like normal human arms, they are more like the forearms of a demonic beast. You could almost see the scales made of Zhen Qi. The palms were exactly like a beast’s claws, and they were so strong, with only a

single punch, they were able to block Senior Brother Meng Chong's third blade attack."

"It seems like Senior brother Xiao Ye did not use his full strength when he was fighting against Li Yun, he must've been saving his energy for his fight against Senior brother Meng Chong."

A light flashed past Li Yun's eyes, but he did not say anything.

Pop!

An even more surprising scene took place.

Above Xiao Ye's left shoulder, there was a green Zhen Qi arm. And the green Qi was boiling like a burning fire.

"Meng Chong, I haven't shown anyone my [Ancient Beast Martial Art] before, you are the first one to see it." Wiping the blood off his mouth, an excited expression flashed past Xiao Ye's face, he found this [Ancient Beast Martial Art] in a ruin by luck. There were a total three volumes of this skill. All he had was only the first one, so it was still incomplete. But it was still unbelievably powerful, it could even compete with low rank Earth Realm martial skills.

Ancient Beast Martial Art!

Ye Chen had never heard about this kind of martial skill, it seemed like this Xiao Ye had indeed been quite lucky!

Meng Chong studied the Zhen Qi arms, he said without any interest, "I don't care what kind of Ancient Beast Martial Art you learned, in my eyes, you are only a man who is about to lose."

"I'd like to see you try." Xiao Ye was already two meters tall, along with the extra two huge Zhen Qi arms, he looked like a giant. Endless pressure was being emanated from his body, even the wind in the plaza seemed to be frozen.

As his answer, Meng Chong sent endless bloody red blade light towards him, all the blade lights were like many half moons, sharp and pointed.

The twisting blade light cut even the air into pieces as they attacked Xiao Ye.

Xiao Ye laughed, he did not move or back out.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The two Zhen Qi arms tightened into fists, they punched towards the incoming red blade lights as if they were solid objects. All of a sudden, the red and green Qi splashed everywhere, the scene was surprisingly pretty.

“Break!”

Meng Chong appeared along with that red blade light, more blood red light suddenly formed above his right arm, extending all the way to his long blade. He waved it in the air.

Pooch!

The blue Zhen Qi arm over Xiao Ye’s right shoulder was cut off and was blown ten meters away. It was shattered into pure Yuan Qi, and melted into the air.

“Brother Xiao Ye has lost an arm!” Someone yelled out.

The others still kept quiet, they did not want to miss any of the great moments.

Xiao Ye was very pale. That Zhen Qi arm was formed from Zhen Qi, it consumed a lot of his Zhen Qi. Now that one of them had been cut off, the total amount of his Zhen Qi had decreased by about one-third, while the rest of Qi roiled inside of his body.

“On to the next one!” Meng Chong did not take a break, his long blade kept moving as it twisted in the air. It attacked towards the other green Zhen Qi arm over Xiao Ye’s left shoulder.

Chin!

This blade attack seemed to have hit an iron shell, it created a huge spark. If you looked closely, you would notice that the blade had only gone halfway through, it was unable to cut all the way through it.

Xiao Ye brutally pushed himself to control his roiling Zhen Qi and blood. His own two human arms formed a circle in front of his chest, he then pushed out a ball of Zhen Qi that was surrounded with blue light.

Meng Chong’s long blade was still stuck in that green Zhen Qi arm, he was unable to get it out at all, while that Zhen Qi ball was just about to reach his



chest. He knew that he could not hold back anymore, so he tightened his left hand as he growled. A blood like lightning shot out from the gap of his fingers, making a crackling sound.

Pop!

The Zhen Qi ball was just like a broken air balloon, it disappeared in the air.

Ye Chen shook his head. Xiao Ye was doomed to lose, but it was already pretty good that he was able to push Meng Chong to use his true power.

“Break!”

The long blade kept going and finally it cut off the last green Zhen Qi arm. However, this green Zhen Qi arm was very odd. When it broke, it immediately exploded into a million sparks, it grew into a huge fire once the wind touched it.

Whoosh!

Meng Chong realized that the situation was not good. He leaned his body back, and the position he was standing earlier was burned to fragments.

Blood came out of his nose and mouth, but Xiao Ye did not seem to be that frustrated, he said, “I lose!” The two Zhen Qi arms had burned two-thirds of his Zhen Qi, including the Zhen Qi ball from before, he had barely any Zhen Qi left in his body, so there was no need to carry on this battle.

Letting out a breath of air, Meng Chong said, “You are the first one to push me to this extent.”

“Hehe, same here. After this, you are going to fight against Ye Chen for the next round. His half-step sword intent does not seem simple, let’s see how you are going to beat him.”

Finished speaking, Xiao Ye jumped off the stage.

By the time this battle came to an end, the battles at the other two platforms were also finished.

The next two battles were not very interesting, the contestants were both very weak, with low scores. They were inner disciples who were doomed to be eliminated. Among them, one was Zhang Haoran. It was already pretty hard for him to get this far.

Finally, the last round of competition had begun.

After the audience waited until the seventh battle, the strong contestants appeared once again.

And this battle was between Ye Chen and Tie Feng.

One of them was the genius sword artist who had learned the half-step sword intent, the other one was a symbol of someone who slowly got stronger with practice. Both of them had maintained a complete winning record. No matter who won, there would be one less on the win-only list. If nothing went wrong, the other person would be competing with Meng Chong for the first rank among the inner disciples.

A lot of people had their own judgments on this matter regarding who was more powerful among Ye Chen and Tie Feng. According to the previous battles, it was really hard to judge. Ye Chen's sword Qi was very powerful, but Tie Feng's ability to combine Shi into his leg arts was also quite powerful.

Tie Feng laughed with an innocent face, and said to Ye Chen, "Please advise me."

"Alright." Ye Chen nodded. To be honest, Ye Chen was quite nervous about Tie Feng. Tie Feng did not seem to have shown much of his true strength until now, so Ye Chen had to find it out himself.

## Chapter 113 – Half-step Sword Intent against Major Aura

On the stage, the two stood facing each other with a distance of fifty steps between them.

It might be due to him feeling that Ye Chen would not be easy to handle, but Tie Feng did not wait and let Ye Chen make the first move. For the first time, he attacked first. He slightly lifted up his right leg, a huge amount of aura was absorbed by his body. Suddenly, the air flow above the plaza started to act up, bringing up wind storms.

In front of him, Ye Chen's white robe started to flutter in the wind, like a little boat in a stormy ocean. However, once he drew out half of his [Cloud Hidden Sword] out, all of the wind over the plaza was cut in half. On Tie Feng's side, the storm continued, while over Ye Chen's side, it was almost calm.

Compared to the huge Martial Arts Plaza, the two of them were as small as ants. But right now, the enormous plaza seemed to be barely holding the two, it looked like it would break down any second.

"Brother Tie Feng is about to perform his leg arts again, I wonder if brother Ye Chen can handle it or not?"

"Brother Ye Chen's sword Qi is unbreakable, I am afraid, but he could cut open brother Tie Feng's attack with one sword attack."

"I bet that brother Tie Feng is going to win, one thousand gold, you in?"

"Why not? I bet two thousand gold on brother Ye Chen!"

"I want in too!"

"And me..."

In the audience seats, some of the outer disciples started high stakes betting. For them, it could prove that their judgment was right while they could also make some money, so why not? As for losing, they did not think about it.

Seeing what was happening on the platform, Pei Shaoqing said casually, "That kick attack was very impressive. Fighting against him is like fighting against the

whole universe.”

“That powerful?” Qiu Ruotong was surprised by his words. She and Pei Shaoqing seemed to be very close.

“If not, I would not have lost that easily. He had left me with no chance to fight back, I think only Meng Chong would be able to break that huge Aura!”

Qiu Ruotong thought that Ye Chen also might be able to do it, but she did not say anything as they were about to find out.

“[One leg moves the wind and the clouds]!”

A thunder like roar came from Tie Feng as he leaned backwards. He kicked out, turning the nature’s aura into his own, and influencing Ye Chen’s side.

Pop!

The peaceful aura that Ye Chen had created before had been broken, the fierce Qi flow headed towards him once again with an even stronger power. It was so powerful that some of the inner disciples could barely stand still. All of them were scared seeing how powerful the attack was.

“Break!”

Swoosh!

Mid air, the crystal clear sword Qi flashed for a second before it disappeared, Tie Feng’s major aura was suddenly broken down like a popped balloon.

“Brother Tie Feng’s major aura is cut off! Brother Ye Chen is indeed impressive!” All the inner disciples who were supporting Ye Chen looked excited.

“It seems like half-step sword intent is stronger.”

“Brother Ye Chen is really a genius. One man and a sword, he could even cut through that major aura!”

In the VIP seats, ‘Blue Cloud sword artist’ Shen Lang said seriously, “This guy can even cut through major aura? I am afraid he is not far away from learning the true sword intent.”

Tie Feng’s innocent expression had completely disappeared, he stared at Ye

Chen seriously. Ye Chen was the first person who had made him feel pressured ever since he learned using the major aura. The so-called major aura surprisingly looked extremely weak in front of Ye Chen. It looked like he would have to go fight head-on.

“[Climate Influence]!”

Tie Feng floated in the air. A lot of natural major aura was absorbed into his legs. He continued throwing heavy kicks towards Ye Chen, it looked like he was doing so effortlessly.

The Qi flow around the two of them started to increase and become intense. In front of those incoming kick attacks, Ye Chen felt like a mountain that could bury him was headed towards him. But, he looked extremely calm, as if it was all nothing. Without hesitation, he waved out his Hidden Cloud sword and attacked dozens of times. Each sword attack shot out a three-meter-long thick sword Qi. They were sharp and shapeless, it looked like they were determined to tear apart the space itself in front of them.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

All the sword Qi rushed towards the sky, they broke through all those kick attacks smoothly. They were so sharp that they were almost unstoppable.

Tie Feng suddenly changed his expression. The Zhen Qi inside his body suddenly started to boil up, the aura in his legs also increased rapidly. Wave after wave of Qi continued to clash with the surface of the stage. The stage started to crack open, even the stone columns on the edge of the stage started to break down, bringing up large amount of dust in the air.

A lot of people changed their mind about who would win the battle, because that attack of Ye Chen was so amazing that it had easily broken down Tie Feng's major aura. Right now, seeing that Tie Feng started to accumulate qi and was preparing to release an even stronger attack, they could not help but worry about Ye Chen. Because no matter how strong his sword Qi was, there was probably a limit, how could it be able to compete with that endless natural major aura?

“Break!”

At that critical moment, Ye Chen did not hold back anymore. His Hidden Cloud sword was waved towards the sky, it looked slow but it was actually moving at an inhuman speed. The second the tip of his sword reached the top, the half-step sword intent shot out like a thin layer of fog.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Out of nowhere, all the swords of those inner disciples around were forced out of their scabbards and they joined Ye Chen's sword attack. With power that could even break apart a huge mountain, they attacked towards Tie Feng who was mid air.

Kong!

A huge horrible sound was heard, Tie Feng's aura was broken by Ye Chen once again. But this time, blood shot out of his mouth and he was blown away.

"Such horrifying sword attack. It even took all our swords away."

"In the future, if a sword artist ever encounters brother Ye Chen, I am afraid but it would not end well for him. The sword attack with half-step sword intent is just way too powerful, all his opponents would probably just lose control of their own swords."

"There is Ji Xueyan in Emerald Martial Palace, and we have brother Ye Chen in our Sky Cloud Martial School. Too bad that we don't have someone that could compete with Young Master Emerald."

Standing still on the ruined platform, Ye Chen waved his sword to the side, all those swords in the air looked as if they were controlled by strings, they fell off the sky and plunged into the open ground neatly in front of those inner disciples.

"This is mine."

"And mine."

All those inner disciples who owned those swords went up and collected their own swords.

Tie Feng landed on the ground, he said respectfully, "That last sword attack was so amazing, I never thought that the half-step sword intent could be this powerful."

Ye Chen smiled slightly, “Your leg aura was also very powerful. If you were a tiny bit more powerful, even I would not be able to do anything about it.”

“Hehe, the major aura is so abstract and unreal. I learnt it due to a random opportunity. There is no way that I could have a breakthrough in the next one or two years. So I can only try to improve my skills. But you have to be careful about Meng Chong. His blade attack is way too powerful, the half-step sword intent still doesn’t seem like it could take him down.”

“Indeed.” Ye Chen nodded. ‘In front of absolute power, no matter how great your skills are, they are still useless. Right now, the half-step intent is still a little bit unstable, it is nothing compared to the true sword intent.’

Since Tie Feng had lost, it meant that only Meng Chong and Ye Chen were left in the people who had a winning-only record. In everyone’s opinion, no one else had the chance to compete for the championship anymore. It would probably be one of these two.

After the ninth round of battle, there were only six battles in the tenth round.

The six battles after that were surprisingly intense. Some of the inner disciples who had hopes of getting a spot in the top ten did not hold back, they performed their best martial arts and tried to fight for a higher rank.

Unfortunately, the gap between their strength was just too big, even if they bid their own life, it would still not make much of a difference.

The tenth round had finished.

Meng Chong and Ye Chen were both no.1 at the moment with their no-loss record, they had twenty points. Li Yun had one tie, so he had nineteen points, rank 3; “Iron Fan” Yi Qing and Tie Feng who had both lost one battle had eighteen points, they were both at rank 4; the “Mad Man” Xiao Ye lost one battle, one tie, he had seventeen points, at rank 6; following them were Zhou Ruo, Pei Shaoqing, “Ghost Sword” Li Kuang, “Color Sword” Qiu Ruotong.

There were three people who had been pushed out of the top ten, they were Feng Ping, Dong Haohua, Song Fei who all had less than fifteen points.

## Chapter 114 – Fighting for the Championship (Part One)

Nevertheless, the new top ten inner disciples had been established, the last year's top ten were already history.

This year, the most famous ones were without a doubt Li Yun, Tie Feng and Ye Chen. These three stood out among hundreds of inner disciples they defeated many of the powerful inner disciples with their amazing martial arts. Towards the end, they had even defeated some of last year's top ten inner disciples.

However, among the three of them, Ye Chen definitely was the most powerful one. With his peak Mid Condensing Reality Realm cultivation, he had beaten every opponent that he had encountered, he had also learned the half-step sword intent that was every sword artist's dream. With such high comprehension, his reputation among the younger generation could almost compete with that of the core disciples.

But of course, the competition had not finished yet. There was still the ranking competition left.

Even though the ranking competition seemed very complicated, it was actually very simple. The contestants would only have to compete with the other nine contestants in the top ten once, the results were still based on the scoring system. As for any two people who had already fought before, they would not need to fight again, the result of their previous fight would be taken into account. For example, Ye Chen had beaten Feng Ping, Dong Haohua and Tie Feng, so he would have six points right now, and he would have to compete with six other people including Meng Chong.

For this competition, the Sky Cloud Martial School had prepared five hundred revitalizing pellets. Each contestant could take one. After taking it, it would refresh the user mentally and physically, even the little wounds and injuries would be healed in a short time.

After a half-an-hour break, the headmaster saw that the ten disciples looked lively again, he announced the start of the official ranking competition of the top ten disciples.

Ye Chen's first opponent was the "Color Sword" Qiu Ruotong, she chose to



give up that battle. As everyone had already witnessed what Ye Chen could do, she felt that there was no point in wasting her time and energy.

Ye Chen's second opponent was Pei Shaoqing, who had also chosen to give up.

His third opponent was Zhou Ruo.

"Although there is not much hope of winning, I still want to fight with you." Zhou Ruo who had the most friendly face landed on the platform like a feather.

Ye Chen nodded, "Let's fight then."

Pow!

Right from the beginning, Zhou Ruo used all her strength, pink colored Zhen Qi appeared around her body. She attacked towards Ye Chen with all she got. Compared to her previous relaxed battling style, she completely changed her attacking strategy. Even before the arrival of her palm attack, the stone column behind Ye Chen already broke in half.

"Such domineering palm force!" A different expression flashed past Ye Chen's face, he did not wait for another second before waving out his sword with the half-step sword intent.

Pow!

Under the influence of the half-step sword intent, Ye Chen's attack was extremely powerful. With only one move, it had broken through Zhou Ruo's palm attack, and continued towards her.

Zhou Ruo tried to form a pink colored Qi shield, but she was still blown away.

Ye Chen followed up, he sent out another sword attack.

Zhou Ruo bit her lips, "If I cannot hurt you with this next attack, I will give up!"

As she said this, Zhou Ruo made some seals with her hands, wave after wave of Zhen Qi accumulated rapidly. Eventually, it formed a huge pink bird with its wings extended in the air. It was as fast as lightning, it was almost impossible for the human eyes to catch sight of.

"So fast! I did not expect Sister Zhou Ruo to have hidden her strength." Some of the inner disciples who were watching the battle said surprised.

The “Iron Fan” forced a smile on his face. When he was facing Zhou Ruo, she did not use this attack; of course, he also had some powerful martial arts he hadn’t used yet. Zhou Ruo also probably knew about that.

The huge bird made of Zhen Qi was just about to hit Ye Chen.

Ye Chen still looked relaxed, other people might not be able to follow the movements of the Zhen Qi bird, but he could, thanks to his powerful soul power.

A silver string of light flashed in the air.

The Hidden Cloud sword in Ye Chen’s hand pointed at the weakest part of the Zhen Qi bird. All of a sudden, the huge Zhen Qi bird became extremely unstable. Suddenly, with a ‘pop’, it started to disperse in the air.

Zhou Ruo was shocked by Ye Chen’s sword skills, the Blue Bird Spell was extremely fast in its attack, and Ye Chen took it down with only one sword move. And he was even able to find the weakest spot of her Zhen Qi bird. What kind of observation and control would someone need to achieve that?!

Forcing a laugh, Zhou Ruo said, “I will have to admit, only you can compete with Meng Chong, I lose!”

The next battle was Li Yun’s, since fighting continuously was very exhausting and might have a huge impact on their fights. Also, Ye Chen’s next opponent was Xiao Ye, he was someone that would definitely not give up voluntarily, that meant a ‘tough fight’ for Ye Chen.

Qiu Ruotong knew that she would not be able to win against any of the ten disciples, so she chose to give up.

Pei Shaoqing and Li Yun started their fight.

After fighting for ten moves, Li Yun used his exclusive martial art – the [splitting sword light]. He shot out fourteen sword lights continuously, in it two separate kind of sword lights were present, one visible, one invisible. Eventually, he won against Pei Shaoqing.

Then, it was time for the battle between Tie Feng and Yi Qing.

The two of them had really similar power levels, they had fought for more than a hundred moves But, towards the end, Tie Feng who had the support of the

natural aura became stronger and strong, and his kick attacks got more and more powerful. Yi Qing even used his most powerful moves, but he was still not able to gain any advantages. With no other choice, Yi Qing chose to give up as he knew that he would definitely lose even if he continued to fight.

Many battles started and ended in this manner.

Soon, it was 'Blood Shadow Blade' Meng Chong's turn, and his opponent was Li Yun.

Li Yun attacked without a word. He shook his hand slightly and fourteen sword lights shot out.

"Break!"

Meng Chong and his sword were one with each other, his blood red blade light was indestructible, it easily broke the incoming sword lights. As for the hidden invisible sword light, it was shattered with his one punch.

Li Yun roared, and then another three sword lights shot out.

These three sword lights were indeed huge; they could almost cover half of the platform. They headed towards Meng Chong like lightning.

Meng Chong did not hesitate. A blood red light came out of his arms and went into his long blade. He sent out three blade attack continuously and broke the incoming sword lights. Then, he punched at Li Yun's protective Zhen Qi layer.

Boom!

The blood red lighting brightened. Blood shot out of Li Yun's mouth, and he was blown off the stage.

"Meng Chong's lightning punch is getting more and more powerful!" Yi Qing saw what had happened, and said to himself.

Meng Chong got off the platform, Ye Chen and Xiao Ye went up.

"If you want to challenge Meng Chong, you would have to win against me first." Xiao Ye bent his upper body, a blue-ish light started to get brighter. Two huge Zhen Qi arms expanded from his shoulders, one blue, one green. The blue one looked almost transparent, while the green one was surrounded with Qi flows, it looked like burning fire.

Like a giant, Xiao Ye ran towards Ye Chen with huge steps, and threw out a punch.

“Tyrant’s Way!”

Out of everyone’s expectation, Ye Chen did not use his sword. He formed a fist with his left hand, a black light started to shine around it. He threw the fist towards that incoming punch.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Xiao Ye unbelievably stared at his blue Zhen Qi arm breaking off inch by inch, it turned back to its original yuan qi form and dispersed in the air, it eventually disappeared completely.

“Break!”

Xiao Ye did not back out, he threw out the green Zhen Qi arm that was even more powerful than the blue one towards Ye Chen.

Ye Chen yelled quietly, “[One and Only Tyrant]!”

Boom!

The fist that was covered in black light was thrown out. All the Qi flow behind it was sucked into it, just like Tie Feng’s major aura.

Xiao Ye had to back more than ten steps taking that attack. The green Zhen Qi arm looked like it was about to break. He could not help but be shocked, knowing that the green Zhen Qi arm was a level higher than the blue one, it had five times more power, but it could still not handle a single punch from Ye Chen. There was no point in fighting any longer.

Xiao Ye took back the green Zhen Qi arm into his body and waved his hand, “I quit. You are too powerful.” Finished speaking, he turned and walked off the platform.

## Chapter 115 – Fighting for the Champion (Part Two)

“If he could beat Senior brother Yi Qing, then the next battle would be between Senior brother Meng Chong and Brother Ye Chen.”

“Senior Brother Yi Qing probably would not win against Senior brother Ye Chen, since he had already lost against Senior brother Tie Feng.”

“That’s true. If Senior brother Meng Chong manages to win again this year, there probably will not be many rewards for him, since they had already given him a low rank Earth Realm fist art – the Lightning Fist; but if brother Ye Chen wins, then he would definitely get that low rank Earth Realm martial manual.”

During their chattering, the battle carried on.

Actually until now, although the ranking had still not been decided, it had basically already been roughly established. The ranks one and two would be Meng Chong or Ye Chen without any surprise. The ranks three to five would probably be among Tie Feng, Xiao Ye and Yi Qing.

The first battle, Li Yun had lost to Li Kuang.

The second battle, Pei Shaoqing had lost to Zhou Ruo.

The third battle, Yi Qing had lost to Xie Ye.

...

The ninth battle, Meng Chong walked on the stage.

Tie Feng shook his head, “I am not his opponent, I give up!”

All of a sudden, the whole martial art plaza burst out into chatters. With Tie Feng giving up his chance, it meant Meng Chong would battle with Ye Chen earlier than expected. This was no doubt the most exciting battle of the whole competition, the highlight of the day.

On the east side of the VIP seats, there were a row of teenagers sitting. The oldest of them all was only nineteen, and the youngest was only sixteen. They wore different clothes, but they all had an exclusive cloud symbol on their sleeves representing the Sky Cloud Martial School.

These people all had a great density of Qi. Half of them could compete with Meng Chong, while the other half had gone beyond Meng Chong. Sitting there, they were chatting casually, without being disturbed by the battles, giving people an indescribable pressure.

“Jing Jue, among the two of them, who do you think would win?” In the group, a good-looking teenager asked the cold-looking teenager.

The cold-looking teenage boy said without emotion, “Boring!”

The former forced a laugh, “Why do you have to be so cold!” Turning his head, he asked the teenager in blue, “Brother Luo, what do you think?”

The teenager in blue was indeed the second ranked disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School – Luo Hanshan. He looked down, thought for a second and said, “I think, it might be Ye Chen.”

“Oh? Why do you think so?” Another teenager sitting right next to them looked surprised.

Luo Hanshan said, “Meng Chong gives people the impression of an unstoppable sharp blade. But if a blade is too sharp, it might be easy to get bent which might be a flaw, on the contrary, Ye Chen is like a huge lake, so deep that you could not see the bottom of it. From the beginning of the competition till now, he had not once lost control of the situation. So I deduce that they would definitely fight a long battle. But Ye Chen would be the last one standing. Of course, this is only my opinion, we would have to wait and see the result.”

The good-looking teenager laughed, “Brother Luo, you are always so good at analyzing. But I agree with you, we will wait and see.”

A teenage girl in white who was sitting on the eighth seat said, “Meng Chong would definitely lose.”

At the top seat, the teenage girl who had plum blossoms embroidered on her cloths teased, “Xu Jing, this is the first time I've see you make a comment!”

Xu Jing said nothing.

The rest of them looked at Xu Jing with different emotions, some of them were anxious, some of them were admiration. She had just become a core disciple last

year, and right now she was already at rank eight. Plus, she looked like she was still holding back, if she wanted to try, it was not impossible for her to get in the top five.

The inner disciples who were sitting right below the VIP seats kept turning their heads and looking at them, thinking, “Those seats were for the core disciples. One day, I would definitely sit among them.”

Five of the ten platforms had been ruined.

Ye Chen and Meng Chong stared at each other on a platform that was still in good condition.

Shoo!

The long blade was taken out of its scabbard, Meng Chong attacked first. The sharp bloody red blade light cut open the air, attacking towards Ye Chen who was not far away.

Chin!

Before anyone could realize it, Ye Chen had already taken out of his sword, and sent out sword qi to block that blade light.

“Take another ten of my blade attacks!” Meng Chong looked passionate, like a wild horse without its reins. He kept sending out blade attacks without any restraint. The bloody red blade light spread out in all directions, aiming for Ye Chen.

Ting! Ting! Ting!...

All of a sudden, the whole platform was covered by the crystal clear sword light and the bloody red blade light. The two of them were nowhere to be seen, they were way too fast for the human eyes to follow.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The two human figures both flew backwards, then back at each other again.

“Awesome! Among all the inner disciples, you are the only one who could handle my eleven blade attacks with full power.” Meng Chong had not felt this satisfied for a long time, Ye Chen’s power made him feel passionate, full of desire to win. He knew that if he could win against Ye Chen, he would definitely make

some breakthrough.

Ye Chen said, "Let's continue."

"Yes! Come on!"

Finished speaking, the two went at each other again. The blood red blade light made contact with the sword Qi, they kept clashing against each other. Soon, this platform was also ruined and shattered into pieces.

Around the stage, all the inner disciples had their eyes wide open, they did not know what to say.

Besides the first clash between the two of them on the stage, they could neither clearly see them nor could they tell who was winning or who was losing during all the fighting,; all they knew was that their attacks just kept getting more and more powerful. In the end, the shockwaves caused by the clashes between the sword qi and blade light was so terrifying that they just kept ruining the platforms. The two of them were nowhere to be seen, only the sword qi and the blade light continued to fight from this platform to another, from the ground to the sky, from the air to the ruins inside the ground. They were everywhere, and anywhere could be their fighting location.

One hundred attacks!

Two hundred attacks!

Three hundred attacks!

Five hundred attack!

The two had exchanged five hundred attacks and there was still no clear winner. Ye Chen's half-step sword intent could not beat Meng Chong's blade aura, and Meng Chong's fast blade attack could not hurt Ye Chen either. Right then, it was not about the power level anymore, it was more about the determination and endurance. Who could endure longer would win the battle.

"One thousand attacks... still no winner, how terrifying!" One inner disciple looked at the sky. Right then, the sun was coming down the west. The beautiful sunset had dyed the whole plaza red, making the battle look even more fascinating and intense, everyone in the audience could not help but gasp.



“Yes! If the others could handle brother Meng Chong’s ten blade attacks, it would already be impressive. But brother Ye Chen had fought with him for more than one thousand attacks!”

“I wonder who would be the one laughing at the end.”

All of a sudden!

The bloody red blade light and the crystal clear sword Qi kept clashing together, shooting for the sky. Wave after wave continued to spread in all direction, shattering all the broken platforms into ruins.

The crowd looked over, they saw the sword in Ye Chen’s hand had blocked Meng Chong’s long blade, the two had stopped there.

“Lighting in the Sky!”

Meng Chong formed a fist with his left hand, he suddenly punched towards Ye Chen’s head.

Ye Chen made a sound, he also threw out his left fist which was covered in black light towards the incoming attack.

Crack!

It sounded like lighting that had struck the ground. Both of them flew back from the impact.

“Again!” With the protection of his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, Ye Chen stepped on the platform which had completely broken then he jumped towards Meng Chong.

Meng Chong threw out another punch.

Boom!

The two clashed, then separated. Tiny bit of blood dripped out of Meng Chong’s mouth.

In the core disciples’ seats, Luo Hanshan sighed, “Ye Chen won, Meng Chong is still not powerful enough.”

“Being able to fight till now, he was already pretty good. But this Ye Chen is so powerful! Winning continuously until now, even Meng Chong could not stop him

from rising up.”

## ***Chapter 116 - Rewards***

“Again!” A blood-red light appeared around Meng Chong, he threw a punch towards Ye Chen, which made a huge thunderous sound. He seemed very determined.

Sizzle...

After Meng Chong had thrown out that punch, Ye Chen felt a surprising amount of lighting accumulating, which made his skin feel numb and made all the hair on his body stick up into the air. He knew he should not get hit by it, otherwise even his Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell would not be able to protect him from getting hurt, since lightning tended to ignore all types of defensive arts.

“Tyrant’s Empire!”

Having performed the third movement of his Tyrant’s Fist art, a pile of thick black light was brought out by the power of his fist. It formed into an umbrella shaped defensive layer that appeared in front of Ye Chen, which managed to successfully block the invasion of the lightning.

Boom!

The broken platform under the two was divided into two parts, one was full of electrical sparks, and the other one was filled with a dark light.

Meng Chong spit out a chunk of blood, which was hit by electricity and evaporated. His body was blown back by a hundred meters, it then eventually landed heavily on the marble floor.

Crack!

The floor cracked as he stepped on the ground.

On the other side, Ye Chen also flew out for seventy meters or so, denting the floor on his way.

However, the winner was obvious.

Looking down at his right arm, Ye Chen was secretly a little terrified. 'If I didn’t use the third movement of my tyrant fist, I would never get away this easy.'

The Tyrant Fist Art had four different movements. It belonged to the heavy attack category which was able to allow the user to absorb his opponent's Qi. However, it only worked on opponents that were weaker than the practitioner.

The first movement was called "The Tyrant's Way", which allows the user to absorb the opponent's Qi and turn it into his own Qi. However, it only worked on the weaker opponents and not the stronger ones.

The second movement was called "The Lone Tyrant", which was a defensive & an attacking art. At the moment of the opponent's attack, it allowed the user to absorb a certain amount of natural Yuan Qi and melt it into the fist power that was almost like an aura that could mentally pressure the opponent.

The third movement was called "The Tyrant's Empire", which was a type of body boosting art. After throwing out a punch, an umbrella shaped black light would form a layer of defensive blockage. Blocking the opponent's Qi attack, while his own fist power could attack his opponent without restraint.

As for the fourth movement - "The Tyrant's Qi", Ye Chen still did not have enough Zhen Qi to support it. Unless he was in a life threatening situation, he should not attempt to use it currently, otherwise if his Zhen Qi was to be burned out completely, he would not be able to protect himself afterwards.

Letting out a deep breath, Ye Chen looked at Meng Chong who was far away.

Meng Chong stabbed the long blade in his left hand into the ground, then he laughed and said: "What a great fight! Today you are slightly more powerful, but we still have plenty of time. We will see who will be the last one laughing."

"I will wait for you." Although Ye Chen had said that, he would not be careless about it either. Until now, all those people he had surpassed had never been able to catch up with him. For example, Wang Gang from the beginning, or Wu Zongming, Huang Bingwen, and Zhang Haoran, etc. If he was ever to be caught up by someone, how could he ever catch up to the top four childe, and walk out of the Wind Nation?

The world was a large place. A warrior's path to success was like a boat in a river, if you did not move forward then it only meant that you were just moving backwards. If one day, you were to be caught up to by someone, then you would need to do some serious thinking about your path.

With Meng Chong losing, Ye Chen was basically the No.1 inner disciple. All the other disciples who had yet to fight against him could not do much anymore.

Chattering was heard among the audience and VIP seats.

Luo Hanshan said: “The most important contest of the marital institution is the inner disciple ranking competition. After becoming one of the top ten inner disciples, you would be able to enter the core disciple competition. However, I think Ye Chen and Meng Chong already have the power to be in the top of the core disciples. Tie Feng and Xiao Ye were also not bad, you guys should really watch out for them.”

Some of those core disciples that were in the bottom of the ranks said: “Brother Luo, don’t worry, it’s not like this past one year hasn’t taught us anything, we will let them know of our power.”

“That’s right. Even though that Ye Chen and Meng Chong might be a bit tricky, if the others want to become core disciples, they would have to come across me.”

Luo Hanshan smiled a little bit. There were always twenty-four core disciples in the Sky Cloud Martial School. If a new disciple entered, one of them would have to be eliminated. And no one would be willing to lose their place among the core disciples.

The following days would also be full of competitions.

As for himself, he would also try to challenge Zhu Mei when it was the right time to do so. Luo Hanshan glanced at the beautiful teenage girl who was wearing clothes with flower patterns on it.

When the last shine of the sunset disappeared in the sky, the ranking competition finally came to an end.

According to the score, at the first place was Ye Chen who had a continuous winning record, he defeated nine people and had a score of eighteen points; the second place was Meng Chong, with sixteen points; third place was Tie Feng, with fourteen points; fourth place was Xiao Ye, with twelve points; fifth place was Yi Qing, with ten points; sixth place was Zhou Ruo with eight points; seventh place was Li Kuang with six points; eighth place was Li Yun with four points; ninth

place was Fei Shaoji with two points, and finally in tenth place was Qiu Rupeng, with zero points.

When the rankings were released, Ye Tianhao laughed brightly and said: “My Chen’er is the No.1 inner disciple in the Sky Cloud Martial School now! He will be the first genius of our Ye family. The third leader of the Ye family. And Ye Tang, Ye Xuan... no one is going to be able to catch up to him.”

Shen Yuqing said with a straight face: “Look at you. Now our Chen’er is going to compete with all the other core disciples from different martial institutions, you shouldn't ruin his reputation.”

“Haha, I'm just too happy right now!”

Some of the influential people sitting around them started to put their fists together and congratulated them: “Congratulations! Leader Ye, your son is so young and he has already learned the half-step sword intent. He will definitely become someone great in the future.”

“Leader Ye, let’s catch up sometime in the future. We should have a drink together or something.”

“My son is not talented at all. Leader Ye, you should ask your son to give my son some pointers.”

Ye Tianhao was in a great mood, he said: “You guys are only flattering my son. But if you would not mind, I would like to invite you all to come to Ye family as guests. We will definitely treat you all well.”

“Yes, of course.”

All of those influential people had their own plans, but regardless of what they thought, Ye Chen’s reputation really was going to spread further after today.

Having learned half-step sword intent at the age of sixteen, he was extremely impressive. Not only in the Wind Nation, even in the whole south Zhuo region, this would not be a bad record to set.

But obviously, some wished for Ye Chen to grow faster, while others wanted him dead before he could grow. It was not just Zhu Lieyang that had such thoughts.

For them, killing a genius when he just started rising was easy, but once the genius grew, it would not be easy at all, so they had to do it as soon as possible.

The headmaster of the Sky Cloud Martial School stood up slowly, “The inner disciple ranking competition has now officially finished. We are now going to give out the rewards. Rank 7 to 10 would receive three hundred low grade spirit stones; the fourth to sixth place receive six hundred low grade spirit stones. The second and third place receive one thousand low grade spirit stones, and the first place will receive two thousand low grade spirit stones and a Low rank Earth Realm martial manual. Besides that, the elders have decided to bring the first place inner disciple along with them to congratulate the team at Emerald Martial Palace on the ninth day of July.”

“To the Emerald Martial Palace... oh well. That is a great place to learn, no warrior there would be weak.”

“By then, all those powerful warriors will be gathered together in one place, like the top four child, or those top core disciples.”

“I'm just afraid that it won't be that easy. All those martial institutions will secretly compare themselves to each other. I heard that each of the top ten inner disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace have the power of a core disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School. No wonder they would want Ye Chen to come along.”

“Oh! Even if Ye Chen is not as powerful as his opponents, with his half-step sword intent alone, he won't bring shame to the Sky Cloud Martial School.”

“No wonder.”

The elder's thoughts could not be hidden from those powerful warriors and others that were out there and who were already used to all the plotting and planning.

## Chapter 117 – Shocking Cloud Sword Art

Two thousand low grade spirit stones and a Low rank Earth Realm manual!

Ye Chen couldn't say that he wasn't moved.

Two thousand low grade spirit stones would be worth about nine hundred thousand gold if they were auctioned at the north west auction field. A low rank Earth Realm manual could even be sold for millions. Most of the small families in the Windy Nation might not be able to buy even if they were to spend every silver they possessed.

But of course, with the power of the first ranked inner disciple, it was definitely worth the price. And most of the big martial institutes had more martial manuals than they would ever need. It would be strange for them to not have some special martial arts manuals given their few hundred years of history.

However, Ye Chen knew that even if other people were willing to spend millions of gold just to buy the manual, the leaders of the Sky Cloud Martial School still would not allow it.

Special martial arts would never be permitted to be learnt by outsiders.

But hearing the last part of his rewards, Ye Chen was a bit surprised.

Follow the congratulatory group to the Emerald Martial Palace next month?

Even though that was out of his expectations, he did not really care about it. Since it was already arranged by the elders, all he needed to do was follow them.

...

The Silent Hills.

In those massive mountains, there were places that were filled with miasma all year long. In the deepest parts of the mountains, there were beasts constantly roaring, it was extremely terrifying.

Even though the burning sun was in the sky, its golden sunshine was completely blocked by the fog. If one looked around, there were a few rays of light that made it through, filling the fog with colors. It was strangely pretty.



This was the deepest part of the Silent hills the natural Yuan Qi here was extremely rich. But due to the miasma, warriors were not able to train here without hurting themselves.

Over a little mountain which had been cut in half by something before, Ye Chen stood with his hands behind his back. He wore an old long sword around his waist.

He looked down. In the fog few hundred meters away, two huge shadows kept clashing against each other, producing huge noises.

Ahwoo!

A frightening roar was heard. Then ten huge trees were knocked down, and a house-sized demonic wolf attacked in Ye Chen's direction. It had no hair on its body, rather it was covered by sharp brambles, making its body seem three times larger than it actually was. Its bloody red pupils looked like they were about to bleed.

"Bramble Demonic Wolf, top rank 4 beast." No matter how strong the wind was, Ye Chen stood still, only his cloths were blown by the wind, making noises.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The ground continuously shook, a Silver Grey Demonic Cow that was even bigger than the Bramble Demonic Wolf walked out of the fog. Its stone cold eyes locked on to the Bramble Demonic Wolf first and then it looked towards Ye Chen.

Mooooo!

The Silver Grey Demonic Cow growled. The fog started to twist intensively, all the leaves on the ground started to shine due to electricity, and then were all burnt to nothing.

Ye Chen was slightly surprised. It was a rare Silver Electra Demonic Cow. That was an existence that was even more dangerous than the Bramble Demonic Wolf. No wonder the Bramble Demonic Wolf couldn't beat it.

The two beasts were the size of a house each. Their beast Qi levels were through the roof, bringing up terrifying tornados.

“Two top rank 4 demonic beasts? This should be good for my training.”

If other people knew Ye Chen’s thought, they would definitely think that he had gone mad. Demonic beasts were always stronger than the warriors of the same level. Even if a martial genius were to meet them, they might not necessarily win against them, not to mention, there were two top rank 4 beasts right in front of him. They were equivalent to warriors at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm.

The Bramble Demonic Wolf looked at the Silver Electra Demonic Cow cautiously, it slightly lowered its body. Its survival instincts told it to destroy every human who came here. But the Silver Electra Demonic Cow in front of it was way more dangerous than this human. If they weren't careful, they would be dead.

Ahwoooo!

The Bramble Demonic Wolf roared at the Silver Electra Demonic Cow, it seemed to be sending a message.

After a long time, Qi flow infused with electricity came from the nose of the Silver Electra Demonic Cow, one of its hoofs stomped on the ground twice before it came rushing at him.

Shoo!

The Silver Electra Demonic Cow’s huge body did not slow it down at all, it turned into a huge silver lightning bolt, rushing towards Ye Chen who was on that little hill.

Meanwhile, the Bramble Demonic Wolf also attacked towards Ye Chen, its body ran towards the little hill without stopping.

“Piss off!”

Ching!

The Hidden Cloud Sword was taken out of its scabbard, its movement was unpredictable. Its attacks easily landed on that Silver Electra Demonic Cow.

The demonic cow looked shocked, its huge body was blown away, knocking down a lot of ancient trees in the process.

Boom!

The hill beneath Ye Chen's feet was also knocked down. The Bramble Demonic Wolf jumped out of the ruins, it opened its mouth. a pile of black Qi with ice cubes shot out.

Ye Chen's feet lightly touched the broken stone that had yet to fall on the ground and his body shot up into the sky, his sword Qi was like a flying dragon. It attacked brutally towards that Bramble Demonic Wolf.

The demonic wolf was just like the Silver Electra Demonic Cow, it had not expected Ye Chen to be this good at his sword art. Its body turned in the air, it hit towards the falling huge stone to avoid the sharpness of Ye Chen's sword Qi.

"Unpredictable as the clouds, how could you escape from my attacks?"

Ye Chen threw out a punch to break the black Qi of the Bramble Demonic Wolf. Those countless ice cubes were shattered completely by the power of that one punch and became ice chips raining down the sky. However, hidden behind this, the sword Qi twisted, it was somehow like those soaring clouds in the sky, having no limitation to its shape. It attacked the back of the demonic wolf at a strange angle.

Crack!

A few brambles were cut in half, the Bramble Demonic Wolf lost its balance, it landed on the ground heavily and created a huge hole.

Pop!

A silver ray of electricity shot from the side. It was from that Silver Electra Demonic Cow that just would not give up. Its speed was like lightning, burning all the air it touched to vacuum.

"(Clouds have No Limitation)!"

Ye Chen waved a huge sword Qi into the air, it was extremely intense. Everywhere it went, the air was absorbed, creating endless explosive power.

The demonic cow opened its mouth and spurt out a ray of electricity, it then clashed with the sword Qi.

BOOM!

The electricity completely dissipated, and the sword Qi stabbed into the forehead of that demonic cow, leaving a horrifyingly huge cut, blood kept pouring from the wound.

The next second, the demonic cow lost its balance, and fell to the ground. It felt like the earth shook. Even the remaining electricity leaked out, burning all the ground to black ashes.

Jumping up from the ground, the Silver Electra Demonic Cow looked at Ye Chen cautiously, it did not dare to attack again. Although its defense was very powerful, it was still not powerful enough to ignore his sword Qi. It would still die if there was more sword light. To the side, the Bramble Demonic Wolf subconsciously leaned closer to the Silver Electra Demonic Cow, it looked like it was preparing to attack along with it.

“Low rank Earth Realm sword art, indeed impressive.” Landing lightly on a huge ancient tree, Ye Chen looked down at his sword, thinking to himself.

It had been half a month since the the ranking competition. Two weeks ago, Ye Chen had picked a sword art from all those low rank Earth Realm manuals, called [Shocking Cloud Sword Art].

Clouds were unpredictable, and the Shocking Cloud Sword Art was also like that. Each movement, each routine, were all full of changes. Even those that train in it were also unable to control it, not to mention their opponents. Besides, the Shocking Cloud Sword Art was also a very brutal sword art. Each sword attack had horrifying power in it, it was ten times faster and even more powerful than the Lone Peak of Thirteen Swords.

After mastering it, Ye Chen headed towards the deepest part of the Silent hills by himself. He had wanted to test the power of this sword art on those demonic beasts. And this battle proved that it was indeed very powerful.

## ***Chapter 118 - The Horrible Dark Light***

Nearby, the Silver Electra Demonic Cow and the Bramble Demonic Wolf roared at the same time. They attacked at the same time from different directions towards Ye Chen. One of them was like a bolt of lightning, while the other was like a pile of dark smoke.

Boom!

The ancient tree was completely blown out of the ground along with its roots and tons of mud.

Ye Chen was already in the air, he sent out another sword Qi.

Shoo!

One of Bramble Demonic Wolf's hind legs was deeply cut. Its body fell on the ground and slid out for hundreds of meters due to the counter force. Eventually it hit another ancient tree and came to a stop.

The demonic wolf stood up and shook its dizzy head, then it stared at Ye Chen with slight fear in its eyes.

'This human doesn't seem to be very powerful. However, up until now, neither the Silver Electra Demonic Cow nor I have been able to hurt him. Instead, it was my leg that became so badly wounded. At this rate, I'm afraid the silver demonic cow and I will both die before we are even able to hurt him.'

The silver demonic cow also looked like it was planning to back out. However, the Bramble Demonic Wolf had not backed out yet, so how could it?

"I already have a basic understanding of my Shocking Cloud Sword art. Now it's time to get rid of them." Earlier, Ye Chen had yet to use his half-step sword intent. Those sword Qi attacks that he had used were only the normal ones.

Ye Chen turned around and waved his sword in the air twice. Two sword Qi together with the enhancement of his half-step sword intent were thrown out.

Boom! Boom!

A sword hole appeared on both the silver electra demonic cow's and the Bramble Demonic Wolf's heads. Then their huge bodies fell to the ground like

mountains breaking down.

The lifeless demonic beast corpses were not as hard as one would imagine, it was easy to cut open. Inside those two corpses, there was a bowl sized pellet, a rank 4 top beast inner pellet which was worth ten thousand gold. Ye Chen put them both in his storage ring, along with other valuable demonic beast materials.

After doing all that, Ye Chen stood up straight, he looked towards the deepest parts of the Silent Hills.

That was the true forbidden place. A few decades ago, there were a couple of powerful parties that had sent tons of warriors into the deeper parts of the forest to look for some rare medicinal plant. Unfortunately, they ran into a rank 7 Demonic Ghost-faced Cow, only one person out of those one hundred people made it out alive. But he also died in the following days from the excessive beast Qi in his system. Ever since that event no one dared to go in there any more.

‘Rank 7 demonic beast?’ Ye Chen could not imagine. It was almost equivalent to an Astral Reaching Realm warrior. Not to mention Ye Chen, even the leaders of the top five martial institutions could not handle one casual attack from it. However, the validity of the rumor had still not been confirmed. Besides the rumor, no one had really ever witnessed it, even that person who had made it out alive, he had already lost his mind, so his words could not really be counted.

Ye Chen shook his head, he turned his body and jumped onto an ancient tree ten meters away. After another few flashes, he disappeared completely.

Shortly after Ye Chen left, a human figure appeared through the fog.

Pop!

A middle-aged man with a blade scar on his face landed his feet lightly on the floor. He saw two dead beast corpses on the floor and could not help but swear.

“I finally managed to see where this little brat had went, who would have expected that he would head for the deepest parts of the Silent Hills. There it is so foggy that human eyes can't even see through it. Standing here hundreds of steps away, I'm not even able to sense any scent. Otherwise how could I let him get away so easily? I will definitely kill him on the spot.”

This was indeed the guy from half a month ago, the middle-aged guy with a blade mark on his face who had watched the Inner Disciple's Ranking Competition of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Zhu Lieyang who was also the Intelligence Master of the Purple Sun Martial Palace.

He had sent people to watch the Windy Mountain, waiting for an opportunity when Ye Chen was out alone so that they could go kill him for good.

However, he had never expected that he would have such bad luck that once Ye Chen left the mountain he would head for the Silent Hills straight away, and even into the deepest parts. When Zhu Lieyang found out about the news, he could only follow Ye Chen to try his luck, hoping that he would be able to run into him.

“Little brat, well, this time you only had good luck. But next time, you are dead for sure.” Zhu Lieyang’s eyes were full of murderous intent.

Ho!

Right at that moment, a terrifying roar came out of nowhere. The next second, the sky was suddenly covered in dark clouds.

“What a scary beast Qi! It is at least a rank 6 demonic beast.” Fear appeared on Zhu Lieyang’s face and he hurried to escape.

In the far distance.

A thick beam of dark light shot out. Everywhere it went, the trees were shattered, the mountains were cut through. A deep mark was carved on the land by that dark light, and it kept going further.

It was so fast that Zhu Lieyang did not even have time to escape. He yelled and a bright light suddenly appeared around him, wrapping him in the center.

Boom!

The bright light was shattered on the spot. Blood came out of Zhu Lieyang’s mouth and his clothes were also badly damaged.

“Bastard, this demonic beast definitely came for you.” Zhu Lieyang traveled without a sound, he definitely did not attract any unwanted attention. But after some thought, he realized that it must have been Ye Chen fighting against the

beasts that had attracted all the powerful beasts in the deeper parts of the hills, and that he had been the one to take the blame for it.

He could not care about his badly wounded body, he accumulated all his Zhen Qi and turned into a burning light that went shooting towards a far distance. Meanwhile he also threw a dark red pellet into his mouth.

After a while, the owner of the dark light finally appeared. Its huge body stood in the middle of the mountains, with a height of ten meters, surprisingly it was a huge dark-colored snake.

If the clouds disappeared right that instant and someone looked down from the sky, they would see this crazy scene.

A huge gap had appeared on the ground that started ten miles away and continued until this place. This meant that the dark light had been shot from a distance of ten miles. This was a horrifying power. If it had been a little bit faster, it was questionable whether Zhu Lieyang would have survived or not. However, the distance should also not be ignored, the power of the attack would have certainly decreased due to it.

The huge dark-colored snake sensed that the scent had disappeared, so it used its huge head to hit the hill that was beside it. The hill shook a little and few huge gaps suddenly appeared all over the cliff, making cracking noises.

It started to travel back to where it had come from, while crashing against all the trees that it encountered.

...

Among the thousands of mountains, there was a great valley where there were beautiful trees and sceneries.

In a yard of a house next to some lake, three teenage girls were sitting together and talking.

“Sister Ji, do you know about the Inner Disciple Ranking Competition of the Sky Cloud Martial School?” The round-faced teenage girl in green said suddenly.

A beautiful teenage girl with a cold vibe said lightly: “Oh? I don’t think there are many people in the Sky Cloud Martial School that are worth noticing.”



The good-looking teenage right next to her nodded and said: “The Sky Cloud Martial School is at the bottom of the top five martial institutions, the so-called top ten inner disciples are only at the level of the slightly-more-powerful inner disciples of our Emerald Martial Palace. And the top ten inner disciple in our Emerald Martial School are all at the level of the core disciples in the Sky Cloud Martial School, there is no comparison.”

The round-faced teenage girl said: “I heard that in this year’s Inner Disciple Ranking competition, two new geniuses had appeared. One of them is named Meng Chong, and the other one is Ye Chen, both of them have power comparable to some of the top core disciples.”

“Ye Chen!” Both the beautiful girl and the good-looking girl looked at the round-faced girl in shock.

The round-faced girl asked with curiosity: “Yes, why?”

“How good is that Ye Chen?”

“He has beaten the last year's top ten inner disciple, Meng Chong, and earned the first place. I heard he is very powerful .”

The beautiful girl was slightly shocked at first but then she became relaxed. ‘The top ten inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School? so what? She is now one of the core disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace. There is still no comparison.’

The round-faced girl said again, “That Ye Chen was not only powerful but he had also sensed half-step sword intent. Right now, everyone in Windy Nation is talking about him.”

“What!?”

The beautiful and the good-looking teenage girls both looked shocked. They unconsciously believed that it was just someone with the same name, because there was just no way that it could be the Ye Chen they had known from before.

## ***Chapter 119 - The Wind Vulture***

The time passed by extremely fast.

There were only ten days left before the ninth day of July and that brought Ye Chen to wonder why they hadn't started to leave for the Emerald Martial Palace already.

There were seven thousand miles between the Emerald Martial Palace and the Sky Cloud Martial School, even if they used the beast blooded horse - Ghost Eyed Jade Lion - and travelled without any stops, it would still take them thirteen to fourteen days to get there. And by now the time was obviously running out.

Just like that, another five days passed.

Ye Chen had stopped caring about it, since the leaders did not seem to care there was no reason for him to go through any stress over it. After all, it was not like he really even wanted to go to the Emerald Martial Palace.

The seventh day of July!

Ye Chen was training his Zhen Qi in the yard. He was only a step away from the Late Condensing Reality Realm, although it was quite impossible for him to have a breakthrough within this short period of time, he would still like to try, because he could not ignore the difference between the peak of the Mid Condensing Reality Realm and the Late Condensing Reality Realm. He would be much more confident if he had the same level of power as his opponents, even if it was the North Snow Childe or the Duanmu Childe.

Crack!

The low rank soul stone in his hand split apart and turned into two useless parts.

Ye Chen opened his eyes and disappointment showed on his face. With the amount of power he has now it was still too hard for him to have a breakthrough, he would still need a while before he could reach the Late Condensing Reality Realm.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Someone knocked on the door to his yard.

Ye Chen thought it might be Wu Zongming so he casually yelled: “Coming!”

When he opened the front door of his yard, a teenager in black that he had never seen before was standing there.

“I am the attending disciple. The headmaster asked me to notify you that it is now time to leave for the Emerald Martial Palace. Now, if you would please join the group waiting in the Welcoming Plaza.” The teenager said without any emotions.

This left Ye Chen with a look of surprise. ‘Now? Can we really make it there in two days?’

He shook his head and replied: “Okay, I will be there in a second.”

After the attending disciple left, Ye Chen went back to his room, prepared some clothes and essentials, tidied the room up a little and then headed to the Welcoming Plaza.

In the huge welcoming plaza there were four people standing.

The two people in the middle was the headmaster, who was already in his sixties and the fourth master, looking extremely bulky. They both had a deep Qi that felt almost as deep as the ocean depths. Luo Hanshan who was wearing blue, was standing right next to them, along with Xu Jing that was wearing white.

“Headmaster! Fourth master!” Ye Chen greeted the two masters.

The headmaster smiled at him, “Ye Chen, have you had any improvements in the last month?”

Hearing this the bulky fourth master also showed a smile. They had heard about Ye Chen’s superlative comprehension ability and of the fact that he had still been at the Mortal Realm Stage 6 a year ago. Now he was already at the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm within one year. Not only that, they had also heard that he had mastered all the martial arts he had learned to their peak.

That was also why they decided to bring him with them to the Emerald Martial Palace this time around. They wished that he would bring some pride to the Sky

Cloud Martial School. Otherwise, they would have brought along another core disciple, since when compared to the top five core disciples, Ye Chen was still a little weaker.

Ye Chen said, "I have gained many improvements, but I've only just mastered the Cloud Storm Sword Art."

"Having a breakthrough in your level of power is not something you can rush. What...? You've mastered the Cloud Storm Sword Art?" The fourth master nodded slightly, then his face froze and stared at Ye Chen in shock.

Ye Chen nodded. There was no point in hiding this kind of thing. Especially now that he was under the spotlight, it would be impossible for him to hide anything for long, so he might just as well say it now.

Luo Hanshan was also secretly shocked. 'He mastered the Cloud Storm Sword Art in just one month?! He's so gifted! The Cloud Storm Sword Art is a low rank Earth Realm Sword Art. You give a normal person five years and he might not ever be able to master it. Even me, I would still need at least half a year to master it. In the whole Sky Cloud Martial School, only Zhu Mei might be able to master it in just three or four months.'

When compared to him the gap in talent was too obvious.

The headmaster could not quite believe it, "The people who mastered the Cloud Storm Sword Art have a powerful cloud storm aura when they fight against someone..."

He had not even finished his sentence when Ye Chen, still looking calm, suddenly changed his aura. An unreal sword appeared out of nowhere, and he gave people the feeling that his whole body had turned into a sword itself, waiting for the moment to attack.

"It indeed is the Cloud Storm Sword Art. And he could perform it so easily..." The head master exclaimed. He realized that he had completely underestimated Ye Chen, but how could he really understand a martial genius that had managed to learn the half-step sword intent?

Among the three people, only Xu Jing was not shocked.

Shoo!

Right at that moment, a sharp bird cry came from the top of the Wind Mountain, it sounded very high-pitched and powerful.

Ye Chen followed the sound and he was quite surprised by what he saw.

On a steep hill, a huge beast was flying towards them. It was an extremely muscular beast, with wings that were ten meters long. It was covered in dark blue feathers and reflected with a metallic shine under the sun's light. The bird's claws looked like they could even pick up a house and were also bent like iron hooks.

Luo Hanshan introduced the bird to Ye Chen: "This is our guardian spirit beast - the Wind Vulture."

"The Wind Vulture?"

Ye Chen had heard this name before. In the far east of the Windy Nation, there was the Devil Grasslands, and on that grassland, there were countless demonic beasts. Among them half beast - the Ghost Eyed Jade Lion - was the most famous one. However, the people who lived near the grassland did not agree with that. In their eyes, the most famous one could only be the king of the Devil Grassland, the rank 5 beast - Wind Vulture.

The Wind Vulture could travel forty thousand miles in one day. It came and went like lightning. And It was ten times faster than the half horse beast. It was the best beast to travel by when one had somewhere they urgently needed to be. But it was also very hard to catch one. Although it was only a rank 5 beast, almost equivalent to a Mid Clasp Yuan Realm warrior, even a Late Clasp Yuan Realm warrior wouldn't be able to catch up with it. And even if they manage to capture it somehow, it was extremely hard to train it.

Ye Chen never expected that the Sky Cloud Martial School actually had a rank 5 beast - Wind Vulture. No wonder they were not worried about getting to the Emerald Martial Palace on time. It would only take the Wind Vulture two days to get there. That would not only save them a lot of effort, it could also make the Sky Cloud Martial School look good.

Woo! Woo!

The wind was blowing heavily and the Wind Vulture landed in the middle of the

Welcoming Plaza.

The headmaster said: "Let's all hop on!"

With the speech over, his body shifted, it then appeared on the back of the Wind Vulture.

He waited until everyone had gotten onto the beast, and then warned, "Remember to try to stabilise your body, the Wind Vulture is extremely fast."

Luo Hanshan said as he laughed, "The headmaster is correct, the first time I travelled on the Wind Vulture, I had almost fallen from of the sky. Its speed is unbelievable."

Hearing him, Ye Chen and Xu Jing would not dare to underestimate it. They both secretly started to accumulate their Qi.

The Wind Vulture's wings shook a few times in the air. Then its legs stepped on the ground, its body was like an arrow shooting out into the sky. It hid its wings behind its back to decrease the obstructions. It flew at such a high speed that it almost reached the speed of the sound. Sitting on it felt like sitting on a rocket, the incoming air was like sharp knives, slicing at the skin.

Ye Chen accumulated his defensive Qi in order to avoid being sliced up.

Soon, the Wind Vulture had flown into the deeper parts of the clouds.

## ***Chapter 120 - Hurrying along the journey***

Beyond the thick layer of clouds, the Wind Vulture was flapping its enormous wings. In just a moment it had darted hundreds of meters away, the shrill and lingering sonic booms it left behind weren't able to reach the group's ears as the Wind Vulture was flying faster than the speed of sound.

Head Elder and the Fourth Elder both stood straight in the front of the Wind Vulture's back. They were like two stable and gigantic mountains, they blocked most of the wind pressure going past them for Ye Chen and the other two disciples. Otherwise, just the fierce airwaves caused by this supersonic speed alone could easily blow them off the vulture's back, and they would have to fall from such a terrifyingly high altitude.

"Junior brother Ye, you have to mentally prepare yourself for this journey to the Emerald Martial Palace. I believe you are aware as to why the administrators have sent you along with the elders this time." Xu Jing's voice abruptly sounded in Ye Chen's ears due to a Zhen Qi transmission.

Ye Chen nodded and responded, "Why didn't senior sister Zhu Mei come along?"

"All of the first ranked core disciples of the four famous martial academies aren't going to attend unless they manage to step into the Early Clasp Yuan Realm, and reach the same level as Young master Emerald."

"Ah, I understand!" After a brief thought, Ye Chen realised that if senior sister Zhu Mei had come along, people would have certainly compared her with the Young master Emerald. But if she declined to attend, people could only compare those second ranked disciples and the other talented disciples of the famous martial academies.

At this very moment -

"A large group of Flesh beasts are ahead of us! Be careful, don't let them catch you with their mouths!" Fourth Elder sent his warning to Ye Chen and the other two disciples with a Zhen Qi transmission.

Flesh beasts?

Ye Chen was slightly surprised. Flesh beasts were an unintelligent species that floated high up in the air, they were shaped like huge meatballs and every one of them had numerous frightening mouths. Normally, first-grade Flesh beasts had three mouths, second-grade flesh beasts had six mouths, while third-grade flesh beast would have nine mouths, and so on.

Flesh beasts usually lived absorbing natural Yuan Qi, but occasionally, they also fed on living creatures.

Before Ye Chen could recall more information regarding this group of horrible creatures, a tremendous group of disgusting and gigantic meatballs appeared from the vast ocean of clouds ahead. These meatballs were all a brown-red, entirely covered in gross mouths that had thick and sharp teeth.

The largest one was as big as a small mountain, while the smallest one was the size of a buffalo. These meatballs would float in the air, and drift along with the wind. Every time something comes across them, they would open those numerous mouths and release a massive suction force and suck those poor creatures into their mouths.

“Sky-torcing palm!”

The Wind Vulture had been flying at an amazing speed, seeing that it was about to come close to the group of Flesh beasts, the Fourth Elder let out a resonant growl before he pushed his palm forward.

Followed by a series of thunderous booms, a large number of flesh beasts exploded, and were then burnt into puffs of ashes. The violent airwaves even tore the thick layers of cloud apart.

Ye Chen was silently shocked, he couldn't help but exclaim within his mind, 'Late Clasp Yuan Realm warriors are indeed extraordinarily powerful, even a careless move of theirs seems to shatter the ground!'

Suddenly, the Wind Vulture began swaying intensely and was rapidly slowing down.

The people standing on the vulture's back turned around and saw that one of the mountain-sized meatballs had sneakily arrived right behind them, with its enormous mouths widely open, it sucked the clouds and the air into its mouths



in spirals. The Flesh beast's body was like an endless black hole, it was something that could devour everything in the world.

Ye Chen and the other two disciples were relatively weaker, and were about to be pulled off from the vulture's back due to immense suction force.

The Head Elder made his move.

He raised his right hand, joined his forefinger and middle finger and then swiftly waved it across the air.

Along with a slight puffing noise, a beam of purple and golden light darted out. It was as sharp as a sword and it directly cut the meatball in two. The cut was perfectly smooth without the slightest bit of coarseness.

The Fourth Elder said in admiration, "fifth-grade Flesh beasts have a greater defensive power than even real mountains. It seems like your [Purple Light Finger] has already reached the peak stage. With this, you can even cut a real mountain as easily as cutting through air."

"Eh, I spent over ten years to achieve the peak stage of this medium rank Earth Realm martial skill, I am not comparable to those talented kids." said the Head Elder with a bitter smile.

Ye Chen couldn't help but begin sweating slightly, obviously the Head Elder was talking about himself.

Hearing the Head Elder's words, Fourth Elder was struck speechless once more. He had met all kinds of geniuses, but never had he heard of anyone who could learn a low-rank earth realm martial skill within a month, what a freak.

.....

In another ocean of clouds, a hazy and white stream of light had been darting at lightning speed. In the blink of an eye it had already appeared a mile away.

Looking closer, one could find that the stream of light was actually a gigantic white bird, which was both muscular and strong. It had a pair of dark yellow claws hidden beneath its belly.

Four people were standing on the white bird's back. The two standing at the front were both over forty years old and were wearing white cloaks decorated

with golden edges and had snowflake patterns on their sleeves. Standing behind them were two young men.

The one to the left was tall and sturdy, he was a head and shoulder taller than the one standing beside him. He had a fierce and aggressive look on his face, the expression in his eyes was like a beam of roaring sword light given off by a heavy and solid blade.

The other young man looked quite ordinary and was also wearing a white outfit. If one was only judging by his appearance, they probably wouldn't even recognise him in a group of young men. However, once you looked right into his eyes, you would realise that he was in no way someone ordinary. That pair of crystal-like eyes possessed a dangerous, soul-gripping power that was releasing a faint yet forceful sword light, seemingly about to transform into sword intent. This young man was none other than the 'North Snow Fast Blade' Lin Qi. As for the sturdy young man, he was the second ranked core disciple of the North Snow Martial School, named Yu Yue, who also known as the 'Aggressive Blade'.

"Our North Snow Martial School never liked competition. However, even though we don't like competition, it will be a great shame if we were to fall behind others. Therefore, the two of you will have to fight harder." said a seemingly simple and honest middle-aged man that stood to the right, in front of them.

Yu Yue grinned and responded, "I admit that I am not yet powerful enough to be Zhuang Fei's opponent. But, when it comes to the younger generation warriors of the Windy Nation, I, Yu Yue, will not be afraid of any of them."

By this time, the other middle-aged man who had whiskers on his face and who seemed to be the leader of this small group sighed and said, "In the recent years, our North Snow Martial School has become more and more anaemic. No talented disciples have been discovered in the ranking competitions among the inner disciples. Unlike us, the Sky Cloud Martial School is now treading in its fortune. Lately, one of their disciples has even attained the half-step sword intent."

Lin Qi's eyes shone when he heard this. He was recognised by their leader, Xue Wuren, as the one who had the most hope to attain sword intent. Now he heard

that someone had already attained half-step sword intent and was merely a step away from achieving the real sword intent. More or less, the passion for battle was silently growing inside of his heart. Excitedly, he began having expectations for the fight between that person and himself.

Rainwater was ceaselessly clattering against the ground.

A loach-shaped black scaled beast was moving in the thick layers of clouds. Every time, it would pop out from a cloud and dive back again, the next time it popped out, it would be hundreds of meters away from where it had been the last time around; given its enormous size and terrifying appearance, ordinary people would probably see it as a legendary evil dragon that had come to destroy this world.

“Junior Sister Yuan, you have improved quite a lot during these past few months, otherwise, they wouldn’t have allowed you to come along to the Emerald Martial Palace together with us.” Among the five people standing on the black scaled beast’s head, was a tall and slim young man who was holding an umbrella as he said to the tall and slim girl with a smile on his face.

If Ye Chen was here, he would certainly recognise this girl. She was Yuan Xuemei, who had once teamed up with Ye Chen to complete a task for the Ling Family.

By now, her Zhen Qi vibration was much greater than a few months ago, apparently, she had achieved great improvement.

Giving a faint smile, Yuan Xuemei responded, “I assume that the elders just want me to go out to expand my vision and attain some experiences. Besides, no one can ever bully me when you, junior brother Nangong is around.”

“Why does every single one of our Rudra Martial School’s girls have such a great gift to talk, only I am a lousy talker.” said the young man with the umbrella.

“Hehe!” Yuan Xuemei chuckled.

Abruptly, an ear-piercing beast roar came from afar, even shocking the entire ocean of clouds.

One of the Rudra Martial School’ elders standing in the front raised his head and gazed forward, but failed to see even a shred of an afterimage. He then

murmured to himself, “It should be the Double-headed King Bat of the Purple Sun martial school, quite fast!”

Hundreds of miles away from the black scaled beast was a black and red double-headed, gigantic bat, with a wingspan of over ten meters, it swiftly darted across the sky.

Standing on the bat’s back were four people, one of whom was Godly Legs’ Ouyang Ming from the Purple Sun Martial School, who had a conflict against Ye Chen in the Northwest auction market. The short and scrawny young man standing beside him looked very average, even a bit ugly in stark contrast with Ouyang Ming.

Breaking out from the thick and dense clouds, the bat carried those four people and went swishing off towards the Southwest.

## Chapter 121-Numerous mountains and lakes, lingering fragrance of the emerald

July 8th, in the afternoon.

The Wind Vulture darted out of the thick layer of clouds and reduced its speed to less than the speed of sound.

Ye Chen only felt the world in front of his eyes suddenly light up when numerous mountains and lakes came into his sight.

But soon, his eyes popped out and his mouth was wide open in shock. Within a radius of over thousand miles, mountains and hills reached all the way up to the sky. Some of these mountains were lofty and majestic, some were covered in verdant and thriving green, some were shaped like gigantic, magnificent dragons and some looked like crouched tigers. Dense natural Yuan Qi had condensed into a light and thin fog, coiling around the mountaintops, as if the entire area was a fairyland.

Located between those mountains, were numerous, different-sized lakes. Looking down from above, some smaller lakes were only as big as fingernails. Those lakes with varying colours spread all over the area, one couldn't even tell the exact number of them in their first glance.

In the middle of this area, tens of steep mountains together turned it into a valley, that was of a beautiful verdurous colour, just like an enormous piece of naturally formed emerald, which was exquisite and elegant yet spectacular. Looking into the valley, one could see hundreds of different-sized lakes and buildings standing orderly around those lakes. The inner scenery and outer environment of the valley served as foils to each other, shaped into a quite special formation.

"Such an earthly paradise!" Ye Chen curved his lips upwards and let out a few words.

Luo Hanshan explained to him, "In total, there are one-thousand three-hundred and twelve mountains and nine-thousand eight-hundred lakes located near the Emerald Martial Palace valley, that's why this area has been known as

‘Numerous mountains and lakes’; apart from this, on those mountains that form the valley, you can find a special kind of stone, named 'scented fragrant emerald'. This kind of stone has been inexhaustibly releasing a nice scent, that is called ‘lingering fragrance of the emerald’. These two features combined together, into the well-known phrase - ‘Numerous mountains and lakes, lingering fragrance of the emerald’. Once you mention this phrase, all Windy Nation’s warriors, even warriors from other countries, would all immediately think of this rank 7 martial arts academy, Emerald Martial Palace.”

“‘Numerous mountains and lakes, lingering fragrance of the emerald’, hmm, it does make people wonder about this place.” praised Ye Chen.

The head elder let out a cold snort and said, “This place is indeed an earthly paradise, however, the Emerald Martial Palace is not the original owner of this valley. Three-thousand years ago, the rank 5 martial institution, Hills and Streams Academy used to occupy this area.”

“That’s right. Back then, the Emerald Martial Palace was only a small institution, even without rank. The first leader of the Emerald Martial Palace accidentally discovered the ancient site of the Hill and Streams Academy, found the fragmentary book ‘Hills and Streams’ in it. According to that book, he severely cultivated for over ten years, and shocked the entire world when he showed what he had learned. In this way, he laid a solid foundation for the Emerald Martial Palace.” said the Fourth Elder, with an admiring and passionate tone.

‘Hills and Streams’, a fragmentary book.

‘Sounds marvellous!’ Ye Chen silently exclaimed in his head.

The Wind Vulture swiftly flew past countless mountains and lakes and arrived at the entrance of the Emerald Martial Palace valley.

The entrance was a flat area, hundreds of zhang in radius, quite a few famous warriors were walking into the valley in groups, through this entrance. Among those warriors, some powerful ones came on demonic beasts just like the Sky Cloud Martial School’s people did, but apparently, their demonic beasts were far weaker than the Wind Vulture.

[TL note: Zhang, a unit of length. 1 zhang = 3.33 meters.]

A fierce gale swooshed up against the ground where the Wind Vulture landed.

An outer elder of the Emerald Martial Palace and four attendant apprentices walked over and said, “Welcome! Welcome, our honoured guests! Please forgive us for not going outside to welcome you!”

The Head Elder set the Wind Vulture free, smiled and said, “It seems that we have arrived ahead of the others.”

“Haha, the Sky Cloud Martial School is quite high-profile lately! You guys have won the first prize of everything, but, what is the point of being the first in such trifling matters?

A double-headed, gigantic bat carried a group of people and swished over in the air. A middle-aged, sturdy man, who seemed to be the leader of the group, said loudly.

Hearing this man’s words, the Fourth Elder’s face instantly filled with displeasure. This seemingly middle-aged man named Zhu Li, was the same age as the Head Elder. Because of the special martial art he had been practising, he looked only about forty years old, and especially energetic.

Taking a deep breath, the Fourth Elder also responded in a loud voice, “I didn’t believe it until I heard this. Well, it turns out that your Purple Sun Martial School’s people are indeed, all loud speakers. I heard your roar from over ten miles away.”

“Having a loud voice is not a bad thing at all, I’m just afraid that someone doesn't even have the power to raise his voice to this degree.” The double-headed bat landed on the ground, Zhu Li, who first walked down from the bat’s back with his head held high, seemed proud and aggressive.

“Look, the Sky Cloud Martial School and the Purple Sun Martial School are having a verbal fight again!”

“Among the five famous martial institutions, the Sky Cloud Martial School and the Purple Sun Martial School have the deepest hatred towards each other. The problems between them have never been solved, I heard that when the five institutions encircled and annihilated the remaining forces of the Nine Evil Cult, the Purple Sun Martial School had entrapped the Sky Cloud Martial School,

making them lose many of their powerful disciples, resulting in them being downgraded into a rank 9 institution only a few years after that. However, the Sky Cloud Martial School was not a pushover either, they released fake information, and lured the former leader of the Purple Sun Martial School to the gathering spot of the Nine Evil Cult's remaining forces, directly causing his cruel death."

"I haven't heard this secret story before! No wonder these two powerful institutions never tolerated each other."

Quite a lot of surrounding people began whispering to each other.

Usually, the Emerald Martial Palace's people would love to see two institutions go head to head, even start a life-and-death fight; however, this was the Emerald Martial Palace's valley, and the celebrating banquet will be hosted tomorrow, if these two powerful institutions start a fight in this situation, the Emerald Martial Palace would be very humiliated. Therefore, a few Emerald Martial Palace's outer elders hurriedly said, "My honoured guests, your accommodations have already been arranged, please, follow me."

Zhu Li snorted scornfully, then turned around and left. Ouyang Ming, standing behind Zhu Li, threw a complicated glance at Ye Chen.

On the Sky Cloud Martial School's side, the Head Elder slightly loosened his anger filled face and said to Ye Chen and the others, "Let's go inside."

After both the Sky Cloud Martial School and the Purple Sun Martial School's people left the entrance area, it suddenly started to rain from the sky and drenched a large area. Along with the rain, a black-scaled demonic beast carrying the Rudra Martial School's group of people arrived at the entrance.

.....

Inside the Emerald Martial Palace valley, numerous lakes laid in front of Ye Chen's eyes, and they were all as calm as mirrors.

"The Emerald Martial Palace has certainly proved itself to be worthy of a rank 7 institution, this is a genuine fairyland on earth."

"Look at this, compared to this place, my hometown is totally like a poor hillock, they are definitely not on the same level."



“All the lotuses in these lakes can’t actually be the precious herb- ‘Pure Cyan Lotus’, can they? Oh, and those fishes, they are all rare ancient species!”

Listening to people’s praises, Ye Chen had to admit that judging only from the environment, the Emerald Martial Palace valley was far more beautiful than the Sky Cloud Martial School’s Windy Mountain, compared to this magnificent valley, the Windy Mountain wasn’t even worth mentioning. He wondered how the environment of the North Snow Martial Academy, which was also a rank 7 institution was.

Many people had come to offer their congratulations. The less influential people were mostly arranged in exquisitely built houses around the outer circle lakes in the Emerald Martial Palace valley, while slightly more powerful people were arranged closer to the central area, that had much better scenery; as for the Sky Cloud Martial School’s people, as one of the five famous institutions, they were directly arranged in the central most area, near the main building of the entire valley.

Ye Chen inadvertently glanced at the broad roads between the lakes, and abruptly, an inconspicuous change appeared in his expression as a light flashed across his eyes.

In the front, there was a group of young people, they were wearing green outfits and had been laughing and talking. Judging from their Zhen Qi vibrations, they were no weaker than the top ranking inner disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Two among these young people had immeasurably great Zhen Qi vibrations, obviously, they had reached the level of Sky Cloud Martial school’s core disciples.

A girl who stood to the left side of the group had a stunning body shape and a breathtakingly beautiful face. Like a secluded orchid in a mysterious Valley, every single move of hers could seemingly move those male-disciples’ hearts. The man standing by her side was tall and handsome, he had a noble temperament, and was surrounded by a faint kingly aura. He did not seem like an ordinary person.

Luo Hanshan, who had been standing beside Ye Chen, recognised the girl, whose name was Ji Xueyan. She was one of the Ji Family’s disciples and had visited the Sky Cloud Martial School with ‘Broken Palm’ Liu Wuxiang half a year

ago. Judging from what happened that day, the relationship between her and Ye Chen was quite complicated.

“Junior brother Ye, here is our accommodation, let’s go take a look!” said Luo Hanshan while patting Ye Chen on his shoulder.

Ye Chen turned his eyes away from that girl, while the expression on his face remained unchanged.

Guided by an outer elder of the Emerald Martial Palace, the five of them walked towards a luxurious mansion, located beside an enormous lake.

From a distance, Ji Xueyan saw that familiar silhouette and then slightly frowned. The handsome male disciple standing beside her asked thoughtfully, “Junior sister Ji, is something wrong?”

“No, nothing wrong, Senior brother Shi.”

Ji Xueyan was sure that that person was no one else but Ye Chen. She didn’t think that within only half a year, Ye Chen, who was only at Mortal Realm stage 6, could achieve his current level; she wouldn’t be so surprised if that was all. But, apart from his swift improvement in cultivation, surprisingly, Ye Chen had also sensed half-step sword intent that every sword artist would dream of. Within just a few days, Ye Chen’s name resounded almost throughout the entire Windy Nation, nearly every single warrior had heard his name. Ye Chen’s sudden raise in fame even caught up with that of some of the top core disciples of all powerful institutions

## ***Chapter 122-Shi Potian***

The luxurious courtyard was called Green Willow, it had one main yard and seven smaller yards.

Ye Chen lived in one of the small yards on the Eastern side.

The yard had been cleaned thoroughly. The whole surrounding corners were clean without even a single fallen leaf being left in the area while the flowers and plants in the small flower garden at the centre were all carefully trimmed. The tables and chairs were all smooth, shiny and spotless, they gave off a delicate fragrance.

Ye Chen went out after looking around for a bit.

When he passed by Xu Jing's small yard, he heard the intermittent sounds of wind and thunder coming from inside. Ye Chen only smiled. Xu Jing had always kept to herself and would seldom take the initiative to come and talk to other people. She would keep practicing no matter what happened. Xu Jing nodded towards him in greeting after she saw him.

Ye Chen took a step to leave as he did not want to disturb her.

Outside the courtyard a sparkling lake could be seen. Every hundred metres surrounding it, a luxurious courtyard like the Green Willow was present. At the lakeside, the willows were planted in a row. The willow twigs were in contact with the lake water. They were swayed by a gentle breeze forming ripples in the calm lake.

“Emerald Martial Place is indeed worthy of being a rank 7 institution, even their guest accommodations are so nice.” Ye Chen murmured while taking a deep breath full of fresh air, he felt the natural Yuan Qi that was contained in the air was also much denser and purer than it was in the Windy Mountains, this also made it much easier to turn it into Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen watched the scenery for a moment and was just about to return to his courtyard to practice.

“Ye Chen.”

A tall girl was walking along the lakeside. She was the Rudra martial school disciple, Yuan Xuemei.

Ye Chen smiled at her, “Long time no see, how did you know that I was here.”

“Guests from all the top-ranked institutions stay around this lake, I saw you just as I was walking out of my yard,” Yuan Xuemei said as she stopped three meters away from Ye Chen.

Ye Chen nodded his head before he exclaimed in surprise, “It seems like you have reached the late Condensing Reality realm, congratulations!”

“What congratulations are you talking of, it should be me congratulating you instead. Your progression is quite fast, not only have you reach the peak of Mid Condensing Reality Realm within just a few months, you have also managed to comprehend the half-step sword intent, this makes me seriously jealous,” said Yuan Xuemei as she let out a long sigh, her face was mixed with envy and admiration, “such comparisons are rather odious, aren’t they?”

Ye Chen touched his nose, “News travels quite fast.”

“Of course!” said Yuan Xuemei while she showed the whites of her teeth to Ye Chen, “Apart from everything else, the news about you comprehending half-step sword intent was just too shocking. Even our Rudra Martial school’s leader praised you as a genius, he said that you’re a promising sword artist of the Windy Nation, and that you’ll most likely comprehend sword intent.”

“You seeking me was probably not just to come and praise me!”

When Yuan Xuemei heard that, she told the reason she was looking for Ye Chen, “How did you comprehend the half-step sword intent, can you share your experience with me?”

Just like Ye Chen, she was also a top-ranked inner disciple of her own institution, if she could gain a little bit of his experiences regarding sword intent, her power would definitely improve, besides, it would be extremely helpful in her path to comprehend sword intent and to break into the higher levels in the future.

She hadn't really thought much about it at first, but Ye Chen was the only one that had ever approached the half step sword intent. It was better to inquire

about it rather than waste time struggling to understand it by herself.

Ye Chen smiled bitterly in his heart. She'd originally come to inquire about sword intent.

"I was also ignorant about sword intent. However, I indeed have something to say if we speak about experience."

"Can you say?" Yuan Xuemei's eyes lit up.

Ye Chen said, "The jing, qi and shen should be fused perfectly at one point, and then the force should be channelled out of your body through the sword. I think this is the basis of obtaining sword intent."

(ED: apparently, jing, qi and shen are three energies of chinese medicine...)

Naturally, he didn't want to say too much. These words had ancient meanings and they also contained his own understanding. In short, they were ambiguous and were filled with a deep profound mystery. Even words can't explain it.

Yuan Xuemei was lost in thought for a long time, she finally recovered while feeling very pleased,

"Thank you very much! I feel that to comprehend sword intent, I need a clear state of mind, maybe I can comprehend it then. Don't worry, I won't tell anyone about this."

Even if Ye Chen didn't care, she would never open her mouth. Selfishness is the nature of human beings. The less people who can comprehend sword intent, the more superior one could feel.

Ye Chen was surprised, 'Is her comprehension that good?'

He actually didn't know that even though True Spirit Continent was prosperous in regards to grade 6 martial arts, many of them were only illustrated. Just by listening, one might not be able to understand much. The things that Ye Chen had spoken were very easy to understand. Due to this, Ye Chen became a highly skilled person in Yuan Xuemei's eyes.

"I don't want to take advantage of you without giving you anything in return. This is a foundation sword law that I accidentally obtained. This book might be ordinary and may not have much value. Nevertheless, it can still provide

guidance for a swordsman.” Yuan Xuemei took out a small book from her storage ring and handed it over to Ye Chen.

Ye Chen looked at it, the book cover was engraved with two ancient characters 'Sword Law'.

“Okay, I will take my leave first to comprehend it.” Yuan Xuemei was scared that if she did not hurry, the state of realization she just had might disappear. So, she immediately went back.

Ye Chen looked at Yuan Xuemei’s departing figure. Carrying the ‘sword law’ book, Ye Chen went back to the Green Willow mansion.

The main building of Emerald Martial Palace was located deep inside the valley beside a crescent-shaped lake.

It was different from the other buildings as it was extremely luxurious and magnificent. It was entirely built from precious stone materials, and also occupied a broad piece of land.

“Junior Sister Ji, do you want to come in and have some tea?” Outside the yard, the seemingly noble male disciple invited Ji Xueyan.

Ji Xueyan shook her head and responded, “Thank you Senior Brother Shi, but I think I’ll just head back for now.” she then turned around and walked right away.

The young man who was called ‘Senior Brother Shi’ by Ji Xueyan, had his face instantly darken, he then abruptly threw a punch to the side, and knocked a huge hole in the wall.

“Senior Brother Shi, my name is Cui Shiming.” A series of footsteps came in from behind him.

‘Brother Shi’ turned around and responded while frowning, “What do you want?”

The approaching person was Cui Shiming, who faced a crushing defeat against Ye Chen not so long ago, he looked to be about seventeen years old and was also quite handsome. He gave a fake grin and seemed as if he was a bit afraid of the one standing in front of him.

That young man, called ‘Brother Shi’, was not just an ordinary core disciple, he

was one of the four top-ranked core disciples of the Emerald Martial Place. He was as powerful as Liu Wuxiang and was only slightly weaker than their oldest Senior Brother, Young Master Emerald who had already stepped in the Clasp of Yuan Realm. In the Emerald Martial Palace, this young man could almost have whatever he wants.

“Senior brother Shi, do you fancy Ji Xueyan?” said Cui Shiming with a huge grin.

“Mind your own business, or don’t blame me for not showing any mercy.” Shi Potian responded with a dark face.

“No, no, Brother Shi, you misunderstood me,” Cui Shiming hurried to explained, “I would never dare!”

“So what do you mean exactly?”

“Brother Shi, have you heard of Ye Chen?”

“Sure, that famous Sky Cloud Martial School disciple, the one who managed to comprehend the half-step sword intent. What does this have to do with him?”

“Brother Shi, I assume that you don’t know yet, “ said Cui Shiming in a very low voice, “he is the one who was once engaged to Ji Xueyan.”

“Him!” yelled Shi Potian. He did know that Ji Xueyan had once been engaged, and that the engagement had already been canceled. However, he just didn't have any idea about who that person was.

“Indeed, Ye Chen is that Sky Cloud Martial School disciple who was once engaged to Ji Xueyan. Back then, he was only a useless dumb thing, and Ji Xueyan didn’t even want to take a glance at him. But now that guy has become a genius, and has even gained the half-step sword intent, we can’t tell for sure if Ji Xueyan would now look at him with different eyes or not.”

## Chapter 123 – The Sword Law

Hearing him, Shi Potian remembered that just an hour ago Ji Xueyan had had a strange expression on her face, now he thought that it must have been due to her seeing the Sky Cloud Martial School disciple Ye Chen.

Thinking of the fact that the two were once engaged, Shi Potian could not help but feel jealous and angry. The woman he liked was not allowed to be related to anyone in any way. Even if that relationship was already long gone, he was still very upset about it.

'This Ye Chen, I'm going to teach him a lesson.'

Looking at Cui Shiming, Shi Potian asked, "You also have some unfinished business with him?"

A ferocious look flashed past Cui Shiming's face, "That guy is very evil and cunning. He tricked me and beat me once, embarrassing me in front of my Senior Sister Ye Xuan."

He had liked Ye Xuan for a long time now. Previously, they were pretty close; but ever since he was beaten up by Ye Chen, Ye Xuan would only greet him coldly when they see each other, this really hurt his feelings. He wished he could travel back in time and kill that Ye Chen.

Shi Potian sneered, he knew that Cui Shiming hadn't told him the whole story, but he wouldn't say anything about it.

"You should leave now!" Shi Potian said firmly.

Cui Shiming said in confusion, "Brother Shi, are you going to let him off the hook that easily?"

"Let him go? What a joke. At tomorrow's celebrating dinner, when all those disciples from different martial institutions are going to compete against each other, I will challenge him. I will embarrass him in front of everyone, maybe even make him lose his mind, then I can rightfully wound him or even kill him." If the time was right, Shi Potian would go and kill Ye Chen right now. With his power level, it should be manageable, the so-called half-step sword intent would be



nothing in front of true power.

Cui Shiming was frightened by the tone of Shi Potian. He thought of all those people who had gone against Shi Potian, they had either been killed or they were so badly wounded that they could never practice martial arts again. He could not help but feel satisfied. 'Ye Chen, if you want to blame someone, then you can only blame yourself for being so arrogant and embarrassing me in front of sister Ye Xuan. Wait until you are completely ruined, then I will take care of you... hahaha...' Cui Shiming thought to himself.

Waiting until Cui Shiming left, Shi Potian said to himself, "Sister Ji, I will let you know that he is still the same guy. Even if he had comprehended the half-step sword intent, he is still a loser in front of me. Huh!"

...

The night arrived and the stars filled the dark sky.

Inside the lakes in the Emerald Martial Palace, there was a bright moon, while the clouds looked like lotuses around it.

Having turned on the crystal light in his room, Ye Chen was reading the sword law.

The sword law was not a martial art manual; it was about ancient sword artists' understanding of the sword arts. Some of the theories were pretty easy to understand, but some of them seemed very abstract with each sentence needing quite a long time to think about.

There were some theories in the sword law that were not even about sword intent, they were about a warrior's attitude, about what kind of attitude would help you get into your best mental state, what kind of attitude would get you the opportunity to have a breakthrough. There were even people that talked about the sword intent, but it all seemed a bit unreal.

"What a great book!" Ye Chen couldn't help but praise the book.

Although this sword law would not directly help improve his fighting power or his sword arts, it would provide plenty of theory and knowledge. Warriors should never underestimate theory, because even though warriors might become powerful without such theories, they would never become a great master. To

become a great martial master, they would have to have a great deal of knowledge. They would need them to stand out and create their own sword style and theories. Only then would they be able to use all of their passion, and move to the higher ground.

Fully attracted to the content of the sword law, Ye Chen completely forgot about the time.

Outside of the yard, the moonlight was crystal clear and the stars were shining in the sky.

All of a sudden.

A wave of heavy wind blew in from far away and disturbed the peace inside the yard.

The head-master and the rest of the masters who were all resting looked confused, because for a second, they sensed that something sharp had gone past them, but when they tried to sense it, there was nothing. It seemed to be an illusion.

Xu Jing who was sitting in her training posture opened her eyes, she subconsciously thought about Ye Chen, then she closed her eyes and decided to ignore it completely.

The sword law was only thirteen pages long. Although Ye Chen was taking his time and reading very carefully, he still managed to finish reading the book in under half an hour.

“Eh?”

Coming back to reality, Ye Chen felt that his mind had been cleared up.

Placing his palm on the Hidden Cloud Sword, Ye Chen sensed that something mysterious was about to shoot out from the bottom of his heart.

It was his sword intent!

Putting in some thought, Ye Chen realized that his half-step sword intent had become even more stable.

By reaching his current level, he had already entered the hardest time yet, it would take more time for him to have any breakthroughs. Therefore, even the

slightest improvement would be very obvious.

Now that he had taken one step further in his half-step sword intent, there was only one thin veil separating him from the true sword intent. Once a cool breeze was to blow on it, that thin veil would be lifted, and the essence of the sword intent would reveal itself.

Letting out a deep breath, Ye Chen talked to himself, "I didn't expect that one simple 'sword law' book could make such a big difference, it had saved me a lot of time I would've had to spend training. In the future, as long as I keep trying, I can definitely comprehend sword intent in no time. I owe you a thanks, Yuan Xuemei!"

Right then, if Yuan Xuemei knew that Ye Chen had gained such huge benefits from the sword law book, she would be shocked. She had spent a lot of time on this book, but she was not able to see what was so special about that book, it had only helped her make her battling style more practical, that was all.

Standing up, Ye Chen opened the window and admired the moon for a while.

Soon, Ye Chen closed the window when he felt that he had calmed himself, and started his daily Zhen Qi training.

One night without any words.

The morning of the second day.

A thin layer of fog covered the lake, making it look very holy.

The quiet Emerald Valley gradually became louder and louder.

The leaders of some important parties who couldn't make it by the night before had slowly arrived. The whole place looked ten times more magnificent than the Sky Cloud Martial School inner disciple ranking competition, since the Emerald Childe reaching the Clasp of Yuan Realm was a much more important event.

If nothing else happened, the Emerald Childe would become the most important person in the Emerald Martial School, and his reputation would not have any less of an impact than that of the leaders of the top five martial institutions.

“In the celebration dinner, all those great disciples from different martial institutions will certainly start some competitions. It will be a great chance to witness the battles between the greatest geniuses of Windy Nation.”

“Too bad that those top disciples will not be here tonight, otherwise it would have been the greatest event ever!”

“It is pretty good already, that ‘North Snow Fast Blade’ Lin Qi, and ‘Stone Man’ Shi Potian are not any weaker than the North Snow Childe. Only the Emerald Childe who had just reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm would be able to beat them all, the rest of them are basically on the same level.”

“Now that you’ve mentioned it, it is true. It is pretty terrifying to think about it, isn’t it? In the other big martial institutions, it would be great to have at least one genius who is at the level of those martial childe, but there are people like Liu Wuxiang and Shi Potian in the Emerald Martial School. Plus, that Ji Xueyan who just rose up recently, there are three of them.”

“Yes, the Emerald Martial School has never had a lack of geniuses. Although Liu Wuxiang and Shi Potian had been listed in the second stage among the younger generation of the Windy Nation, everyone knows that they are at the top of the second stage, constantly challenging the Duanmu Childe and the North Snow Childe who are both in the first stage.”

On the large lane in-between the lakes, some people who had just arrived were chattering.

## Chapter 124 – The Emerald Childe

In the Green Willow Mansion.

After refreshments, Ye Chen went to the main yard of the Head Elder's house.

In the open ground, Luo Hanshan and Xu Jing were already there waiting.

Shortly after, the Head Elder walked out of the lobby along with the Fourth Elder. The Head Elder studied the three of them, and then said, "Let's go!"

On the road.

The Head Elder reminded Ye Chen, "When you compete with someone, don't make it personal and allow them to get you all worked up. Remember, you represent the whole Sky Cloud Martial School, not just yourself."

"I understand." Ye Chen nodded.

Luo Hanshan who was walking on the side, laughed: "Unless someone specifically targets you, I don't think there will be anything embarrassing that will take place tonight. Plus, you have me and your Senior Sister Xu Jing to back you up."

Right now, Luo Hanshan was different from how he was half a year ago. Back then, he had just recovered his title as a martial genius and he had an urge to prove himself, that was why he agreed to that three palm attacks battle; but the Luo Hanshan now was friendly, calm and confident.

"Hanshan, I know that you had a big breakthrough in the past six months, but don't underestimate Liu Wuxiang and Shi Potian. Those two are not simple." The Fourth Elder interrupted.

Luo Hanshan said, "Don't worry, Forth Elder, I know what I'm doing."

The main buildings of the Emerald Valley were blocked from the outside world by a huge river. There were three great stone bridges across it, they were sixty meters long and fifteen meters wide, they could fit ten horses side by side at the same time and it would still not seem crowded.

At the moment it was filled with people who were walking on these stone

bridges, all of them were headed towards the Emerald Valley.

After they crossed the bridge, an Outer Elder of the Emerald Martial School welcomed them.

“Welcome, the celebration dinner will be held in the Baohua Plaza, please follow me.”

The Head Elder nodded and followed behind him.

Shortly after, the Baohua Plaza mentioned by him appeared before the group. It was a thousand meter wide plaza, decorated in white with just a hint of blue. It had a slight shine to it and seemed to be made of huge pieces of emerald, it was extremely grand.

The seating had already been settled. One third of the people were already seated, and the rest started rushing to their seats.

“This way.” The Outer Elder of Emerald Valley brought the group from the first table to the second. The first table was reserved for the people from the Rudra Martial School, and the one in front of them were the tables for the North Snow Martial Academy and the Purple Sun Martial School. From this, it could be seen that the Sky Cloud Martial School had been placed last in the top five.

The Head Elder did not make a fuss about this, he just nodded and sat down.

The Fourth Elder, Ye Chen and the rest of the group sat down in turn.

Ye Chen turned his head, and saw Yuan Xuemei who was smiling at him, looking very pretty. At the opposite side, the very tall Ouyang Ming was checking out Luo Hanshan, which brought a smirk to his face, then he looked at Ye Chen and his scornful expression became even more apparent.

“Second Brother, is that Hanshan Childe really that powerful?” An ugly-looking teenager who was sitting next to Ouyang Ming asked.

Ouyang Ming said casually, “Why are you bringing up things from the past? He's no longer at the level of the other childe, the Hanshan Childe has become a joke.”

“I think, the Windy Nation should rearrange their top four childe. The Emerald Childe is not on the same level anymore; Hanshan Childe should be kicked out as

well. Then there will be two places left in the top four childe. Eldest Brother and Second brother, you should be able to make it. I had already thought about your titles too, Eldest Brother would be called the Thunder Childe, and you would be the Godly Kick Childe.” The ugly-looking disciple was pretty good at paying compliments, so he praised without hesitation.

Ouyang Ming slightly froze 'The ‘Godly Kick Childe’, that sounds pretty good...' All of a sudden, he straightened his expression and pretended to scold the ugly-looking disciple, “Watch your mouth. How could I deserve the childe title?”

The ugly-looking disciple knew that Ouyang Ming was not actually mad at him, so he said, “I am only telling the truth, Second Brother, it’s just that you showed your talent a little late. If you can beat the Hanshan Childe today, you could definitely be in the top four childe!”

“I will definitely beat the Hanshan Childe, I just hope that he could at least make me use all of my strength.” Ouyang Ming squinted his eyes.

On the other side, Ye Chen unnoticeably sneered. With his powerful soul power, he had heard every single word of their conversation. 'This Ouyang Ming and that ugly-looking teenager are just too arrogant. Not to mention the Hanshan Childe, even the ‘North Snow Fast Blade’ is not that simple to take down.'

By the time that the red sun rose from the east, the plaza was already almost filled. Only the leaders of the Emerald Valley had yet to arrive.

Shortly after, the door to the palace on top of the Baohua plaza opened and a group of people walked out.

The person walking in the front was about forty years old and looked very handsome. There was a long beard on his chin, and he presented more of a scholarly vibe than that of a brutal warrior, leaving a perfect first impression.

“Leader Zhuang, how are you!”

“Leader Zhuang, congratulations!”

Below, all the powerful leaders from various parties stood up and greeted with their hands held together.

The middle-aged man's face was full of smiles. He waved and asked everyone to sit down. He had an indescribable aura that made it apparent that he was indeed the leader of the Emerald Martial School – Zhuang Qingxian.

Ye Chen frowned slightly. Without knowing the reason, once he saw Zhuang Qingxian, he couldn't help but think of Yue Buqun from those xianxia novels he had read before.

There were eight Inner Elders following Zhuang Qingxian on both sides, they all looked mysteriously powerful. 'They could definitely compete with the Head Elder, the two in the front might even be more powerful than our Head Elder.'

They were followed by the top three core disciples of the Emerald Martial School. They were Liu Wuxiang who looked extremely cold, Shi Potian who had a classy taste, and the extremely beautiful Ji Xueyan.

Then there was another male disciple who had extremely pale skin, and an appearance that was prettier than most women. An evil light flashed through his eyes.

Zhuang Qingxian waited until the group of people found their seats, then he said in a loud voice, "Today is the celebratory feast for my son - Zhuang Fei. Thank you all for coming all the way to the Emerald Valley. I, Zhuang Qingxian, am pleased to have you all here!"

"No, leader Zhuang, we should thank you for inviting us."

"Yah, the no. 1 martial institution of the Windy Nation, how could I not come?"

"The celebratory dinner is about to start, why haven't we seen your son yet?"

Zhuang Qingxian laughed, he was happy with the atmosphere. He knew that after today the Emerald Valley would be able to significantly strengthen its position as the tyrant of the Windy Nation, standing above all the other four martial institutions.

"Everyone please wait for a bit; my son should show up at any second."

As he spoke, a young figure walked out of the palace.

It seemed like he had an invisible aura that was attracting the whole crowd,



everyone looked towards him.

The teenager was about eighteen years old. On his clean cut face were a pair of bright eyes like the stars in the sky; his body was slim and tall, he wore a green robe, looking very tasteful. Each step he took was as if it contained some magic, shaking everyone's hearts.

Seeing him, Lin Qi's eyes burst out with a strong desire to fight, but it soon calmed down. In the eyes of Ouyang Ming, there was more jealousy and ambition than there was a desire to fight. He tightened his fist.

As for Luo Hanshan, he seemed very calm. No one knew what he was thinking. But Ye Chen could sense that he was sighing with emotion.

No need to say who that teenager was.

It was indeed the Emerald Childe – Zhuang Fei himself. The No.1 existence among his generation in the Windy Nation.

## Chapter 125 – The Battling Performances

“Emerald Childe, what a great warrior. Although he is only at the Early Claspng Yuan Realm, he gives people the pressure of a Mid Claspng Yuan Realm warrior. He has endless potential.” One leader that had a high cultivation level from a powerful party exclaimed.

“Leader Wang, you haven’t heard, right? When Emerald Childe reached the Claspng Yuan Realm, he was ambushed by a mid-rank ghost guard, the Ghost Corpse Artist, yet he killed him with just a single palm attack.”

“Mid rank ghost guard! Remember back in the day when the Nine Ghost Cult was still around, the Ghost Corpse Artist was one of the one hundred and eight ghost warriors. His ghost guards were so powerful that they were all top geniuses. Being able to become a mid-rank ghost guard, he would have at least been at the peak of the Early Claspng Yuan Realm!”

The more powerful you became, the harder it was for you to cross-level challenge other warriors. It was not hard for warriors to cross-level defeat other warriors when they are still at the Mortal Realm. But once the Condensing Reality Realm was reached, it became difficult to beat opponents who were even one cultivation level higher. And once they reached Claspng Yuan Realm, it would be very hard to beat someone that is at a higher realm. In addition, to be able to become a mid-rank ghost guard, they would all be martial geniuses, who were also able to cross-level challenge other warriors.

Having heard the conversation, the crowd looked at Emerald Childe with even more respect. Most of them were at the Mid Claspng Yuan Realm, barely anyone was at the late Claspng Yuan Realm, which meant that they were not confident enough to compete with Emerald Childe.

Emerald Childe scanned the crowd. He stopped at Luo Hanshan, then he said, “Thank you all for coming to my celebratory dinner. I, Zhuang Fei, feel honored. In order to show our gratitude, there will be a lot of amazing shows held tonight, I hope they will entertain you all.”

Then, he said some other things that were appropriate to the event. After that

he then stood back and let the leader of the Emerald Valley – Zhuang Qingxian take charge.

Zhuang Qingxian walked to the front and said in a loud voice, “Without further ado, the celebratory feast shall now begin.”

All of a sudden.

The place was filled with music, there were people playing the drums and various string instruments, it created a great atmosphere.

Then, some beautiful maids brought out breakfast and tea.

After the morning tea, the show had officially started.

The first act was called the candle blowing.

On the stage, there was a short bulky middle-aged man who was at the Early Condensing Reality Realm. He laid out thirteen burning candles on the ground in an “S” shape. Then, he walked ten steps back, and slowly accumulated his Qi.

The crowd had never seen something like this before, so they all seemed pretty interested.

Whooo...

The short bulky man used all his strength and blew out a pile of white Qi. The white Qi resembled flying darts; it easily blew out the first candle. Then it changed its direction of travel and blew out the second one... and then the third one...

When the thirteenth candle was blown out, the crowd started clapping. The applause was so loud that it sounded like thunder.

“Good, brilliant.”

“It is pretty impressive for an Early Condensing Reality Realm warrior to be able to do this.”

Normally, the Qi that was blown out travelled in a straight line, this was common knowledge. Although it was easy for a Claspng Yuan Realm warrior to do so, no Claspng Yuan Realm warrior would want to perform on stage like this, as it would be considered boring to see a powerful warrior do such an easy trick.

Ye Chen clapped his hands slightly. 'It was indeed amazing. He probably trains a martial art that allowed him to extend his Qi. Along with a long period of training, it should not be hard to do so.'

The show just got better and better. A lot of people in the crowd had been fully attracted to it. There were still some people who were chatting as they continued watching the shows. When they became thirsty, there would be all kinds of fruits and drinks right by them. And if they had any other needs, they could ask the beautiful maids at any time.

Soon, it was already noon.

The lunch was very sumptuous, there were all kinds of dishes, as long as you could see them in the market, you could see them here; the ones you could not see in the market, you could also see them here. And the alcohol was the Blue Ocean, the top rank famous alcohol in the Windy Nation, it was worth three thousand silvers each bottle.

Luo Hanshan took a sip of the wine and then said, "After lunch, the true business here will finally start."

"Don't be careless." The head elder only said those three words.

The three nodded, Xu Jing suddenly said to Ye Chen, "Shi Potian and that Emerald Martial Palace disciple had been checking you out. Be careful."

Ye Chen said: "I know."

He was already wondering why there was murderous intent in the way Shi Potian gazed at him, even though they had no personal issues with each other. Although he hid it very deeply, it could still not get past Ye Chen's powerful soul power. And the other person should be the No.1 inner disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace. He seemed to be targeting Ye Chen in particular.

On the side, even though the fourth elder kept to himself, he was actually more concerned than anyone else.

Luo Hanshan used to be one of the top four childes. Right now, it was still unknown whether he still had the strength to compete against other childe, he might even struggle when he faced against those second ranked disciples from different martial institutions. The fourth elder wasn't even sure exactly how

powerful Xu Jing was among the core disciples. But in other martial institutions, people like the “North Snow Fast Blade” Lin Qi, the “Stone Man” Shi Potian, were all already acknowledged to be at the child level of power.

The good thing was that they had Ye Chen in the Sky Cloud Martial School. Although he still had a lot of space for improvement, as long as he did not lose too badly, he would be able to save them from embarrassment with his half-step sword intent.

As all of these thoughts went through his mind, the fourth elder looked at Ye Chen with a gaze filled with excitement and expectation.

...

The sun shone brightly in the sky, lighting up the ground and everything on it. In the Baohua Plaza.

The crowd’s expressions were full of excitement; they were all waiting for the finale.

Zhuang Qingxian cleared his throat and laughed, “I think everyone knows what is coming up next. That is right. It is indeed the battling performances between the disciples from the different martial institutions and powerful parties. They are supposed to be just performances of battling so it is strictly forbidden to go overboard. If anyone breaks these rules, I will have to punish you personally in the place of your teachers. Also, the battles should be consented, if your intended opponent would not like to take up the challenge, you can’t force them to do so. But of course, I personally strongly encourage you all to try it.”

“Leader Zhuang, we have been waiting for this moment since the beginning, let’s start already!”

“Leader Zhuang, the time goes so fast, let’s begin while it is still fun!”

Seeing some people excited, Zhuang Qingxian laughed, “Okay! The battling performances have officially started! Which one of the young warriors would like to come on stage first?”

That ugly teenager from the Purple Sun Martial School stood up, he walked to the open ground and greeted, “I am Zhang Qing, core disciple of the Purple Sun

Martial School. I would like to challenge the core disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Xu Jing. Xu Jing, do you dare to battle with me?"

Zhang Qing had a cousin called Zhang Guo, who got into a conflict with Xu Jing during a mission. He was badly injured by her. The rest of the disciples in the Purple Sun Martial School could not let it go since they were rarely disadvantaged. Plus, as one of the top ten inner disciples, it was unacceptable for Zhao Guo to be wounded like that. Ever since then, the powerful disciples of the Purple Sun Martial School kept looking for trouble with Xu Jing, but they did not expect for her to be that strong. No one among the inner disciples could beat her, which was extremely embarrassing.

Right now, there was an opportunity right in front of him. Zhang Qing wanted to teach Xu Jing a lesson for his cousin.

"Why not?" Xu Jing who wore white robes stood up and slowly walked up the stage.

Zhuang Qingxian said, "Good, you two, try to control your power. It does not really have to have a winner, just show us what you have learned and accomplished, that would be enough."

Then, he stepped back and sat back on that huge chair that was present behind him.

## Chapter 126 – The Purple Sun Fire Sword

In the middle of Baohua Plaza, Xu Jing and Zhang Qing stood at a distance of thirty steps from each other.

“Although this is just a performance, that doesn't mean I will hold back. I hope that you can at least last a little bit longer.” The surface of his storage ring flashed and a huge purple sword appeared in Zhang Qing's hand. This sword was almost half a human's height, the body of the sword was very thick making the sword look very heavy.

Xu Jing didn't take out any weapon, she casually said, “Against you, I only need ten moves to win.”

Zhang Qing's expression froze slightly and then he sneered, “Okay, good. I would like to see just how you are going to beat me in ten moves, just don't end up biting your own tongue.”

“Cut!”

Zhang Qing held his sword with both his hands, and then raised it high up in the sky. Beams of purple-red light accumulated at the tip of the sword, and then attacked towards Xu Jing who was in front of him.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

Three burning sword lights shot out, burning all the air around them.

There was no expression on Xu Jing's face. A huge circular halo of fire accumulated behind Xu Jing's head, looking exceptionally bright. With the help of the halo, Xu Jing's Qi increased rapidly. She then continuously threw out three punches directed at the incoming sword lights.

Boom!

The explosion sounded like fireworks. The sword lights shattered into pieces before they could even close the distance to Xu Jing's position to one meter, triggering a huge wave of Qi as they shattered.

“You're going to lose!”

Naturally, Zhang Qing did not expect the three sword lights to be able to beat Xu Jing. If he had actually managed to beat her with just that, then there wouldn't be any fun to it. The moment Xu Jing shattered his sword lights, he stepped out and turned into a shadow and attacked her from a different direction.

The heavy sword made a horrifying high-pitched sound as it tore the air apart. It was not hard to imagine just how powerful the strike was. Even with the protection of the defensive art, it would be almost impossible to directly block this attack.

Chin!

The crowd stared in shock as Xu Jing reoriented herself and threw out a punch covered in golden light directed at the sword body itself.

The huge sword in Zhang Qing's hand was almost blown away. Although his sword was not a low rank treasure sword, it was definitely one of the top swords in the normal rank. Seeing that his sword combined with his aggressive Zhen Qi was still not enough to fight off Xu Jing's punch, he was immensely shocked.

"Piss off!"

Xu Jing's punch blew away the huge sword in his hand, an almost-solid golden light appeared around her and continued to spread rapidly.

BOOM!

In this critical moment, a six-sided purple Zhen Qi shield appeared around Zhang Qing. With one side facing the front, and the other five faced different directions, completely protecting Zhang Qing.

But he still underestimated the power of the golden light. Even after the shield appeared, he was still pushed backwards.

Ye Chen smiled unnoticeably. Frankly, he was not at all worried about Xu Jing as he knew that Xu Jing had not even used half of her power yet. And the most impressive part about her was that she could display power comparable to 80% of her power or sometimes even 90% by only using 60% of her power.

Of course, Zhang Qing also had not used all of his power, but it would be really



really difficult for him to beat Xu Jing.

“What the heck is Zhang Qing doing? Why hasn’t he used all his power yet?” On the side where the disciples from the Purple Sun Martial School were present, Ouyang Ming who was sitting on his chair frowned and said.

The ground of Baohua Plaza, that was as hard as steel cracked open. Zhang Qing stopped his body and said in a low voice, “You are someone who is worthy of me using all my power.”

As he finished speaking, a purple-red light appeared around Zhang Qing’s body. It was like a burning fire, it continued to turn hotter and hotter. Eventually, it followed Zhang Qing’s hands and was absorbed into the huge sword. The sword looked like it was on fire, it was almost as bright as the sun in the sky.

“The Purple Sun Fire Sword!”

Zhang Qing sliced down with his huge sword, the purple red light then turned into another huge sword that was ten meters long, and came attacking towards Xu Jing.

That unbelievably huge sword was way too powerful, it drained all the air in front of it, an unbearably loud sound that resembled a wave of water crashing against something shook the whole plaza.

“This sword attack is pretty powerful, it looks like his opponent is about to lose.” At the Emerald Martial Palace's table, Shi Potian was sitting calmly. He looked like he was enjoying what he was seeing.

Luo Hanshan looked a little bit worried, Zhang Qing’s power was indeed out of his expectations, and it wasn't an easy martial skill either. It was specifically targeted at those warriors who preferred head-on clashes, and unfortunately, Xu Jing was indeed that kind of warrior.

“Brother Luo, don’t worry. Sister Xu Jing will definitely win. Until now, it was only an appetizer for her.” Ye Chen said.

“Oh! I sure hope so.”

Luo Hanshan did not know why Ye Chen was so confident about Xu Jing, but it

would definitely be great if she could win.

“Lose!”

Zhang Qing accumulated all of his Zhen Qi into one sword attack, his face looked a little bit flushed.

Right in the instant the Purple Sun Fire Sword was sent out, Xu Jing’s eyes turned fierce.

A wave of golden light shone and another ring of fire accumulated behind her head, covering the first ring.

Luo Hanshan yelled out in a low voice, “The eighth stage of the [Golden Three Realm Art]!”

With the help of the two halos, Xu Jing’s Qi increased by three times, the thick golden light had completely turned solid, shooting to the sky.

Crack!

Holding her two hands forward, Xu Jing blocked the huge purple sword, giving it no space to move. She then accumulated her power, and the huge sword shattered in the blink of an eye. Zhang Qing was blown away and blood came spitting out of his mouth.

“Three moves, this is all you've got.” Xu Jing said calmly as if nothing had happened.

“You!” Zhang Qing stood up from the floor, he spit out another chunk of blood after hearing her.

Zhuang Qingxian glanced at Xu Jing with surprise in his eyes, he said in a loud voice, “Great! The first battle is finished, who else wants to go?”

Shi Potian stared at Ye Chen, he communicated via Zhen Qi with the good-looking teenager sitting right next to him, “Cheng Jun, you get up there and have a go at that Ye Chen. If you cannot take him down, then I will have to do it myself.”

He wanted to go up himself, but after giving it some thought, he realized that it was not that good of an idea. Ye Chen had just become famous, and he was still not yet an official core disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School; on the other

hand he was already one of the top four core disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace.

So even if he won, it would still be frowned upon. Letting the No.1 inner disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace Cheng Jun go up there would be better, although he was not a core disciple yet, his power could still be ranked amongst the top fifteen of the core disciples. If there were no surprises, it should not be too hard for him to beat Ye Chen.

Cheng Jun, who was even prettier than some of the women replied, “Brother Shi, Ye Chen had only learned the half step sword intent, his cultivation level is not high, there’s no need for you to go up there yourself, I can take him down with ease.”

Shi Potian nodded, “Remember, you shouldn't let him go too easily.”

“Don’t worry, I have trained the '[Inborn Splitting strength]', each attack will make him lay in bed for at least half of a month. As for the rules, they only said we should be polite. Are we really supposed to restrain our power and fight like children? Wouldn’t that be too boring?”

Shi Potian nodded lightly, then looked at Ye Chen with an evil grin, he thought, ‘it seems like there is no need for me to do this myself. Cheng Jun could break you easily.’

“Leader, I would like to challenge Ye Chen from Sky Cloud Martial School.” Cheng Jun stood up and walked onto the stage.

Zhuang Qingxian laughed, “Okay, you are the No.1 inner disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace, and Ye Chen is the No.1 inner disciple from the Sky Cloud Martial School, perfect.”

“Ye Chen, do you dare accept?” Cheng Jun looked at Ye Chen.

## **Chapter 127 - Breakthrough**

Everyone instantly focused on Ye Chen.

All the leaders of powerful institutions who had watched the Inner Disciple Ranking Competition in the Sky Cloud Martial School already knew about Ye Chen. As for those who didn't, they began talking about him.

"Ah, is he Ye Chen? He looks so young!"

"He comprehended half-step sword intent at such a young age, how magical is that!"

"His potential will allow him to directly catch up to young master Emerald once he gains the true sword intent. It is a shame as he is not quite there yet."

"Hm, that young man who is top ranked inner disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace, Cheng Jun has such strong Zhen Qi vibration, it's obvious that he has already reached the late Condensing Reality Realm. Since Zhuang Qingxian let him take on this fight, he must be quite powerful, perhaps he is now at the same stage as those top-ranked core disciples."

"Hm, Emerald Martial Palace's top-ranked core disciples are all quite talented, it would be reasonable even if Ye Chen was to lose this fight."

Most people didn't think Ye Chen would win this fight, it's just that they all believed that he would definitely have a bright future. After all, he was the first among the younger generation warriors to comprehend the half-step sword intent. As long as he had enough time, there is a large chance that he would gain the true sword intent.

Ye Chen slowly stood up and directly walked into the arena without saying anything.

"You have comprehended the half-step sword intent, that is quite impressive, but you have to remember that this world is ruled by the ones who have the strength to rule. After all, no one really cares about what you have perceived or comprehended." Seeing that Ye Chen had walked up so quickly, Cheng Jun gave a cold, scornful smirk and slightly raised his head, looking down on Ye Chen.

Ye Chen responded blandly, "You're right, in the end strength is all that

matters. You are barely worthy of me having to use my full strength.”

“Such a big mouth, don’t ever think that you can be compared to me just because you’re the top inner disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School. With your current cultivation, you would only be an average inner disciple in our Emerald Martial Palace.” Without any concern for those elders from Sky Cloud Martial School, Cheng Jun tried hard to depreciate the average level of Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciples.

The Head Elder had an angry expression on his face. The Emerald Martial Place was becoming more and more arrogant and aggressive, even a small inner disciple dared to look down on them. Previously, they had talked such crap only behind their backs. But now, Cheng Jun had dared to do so right in front of the Head Elder’s face.

The Head Elder let out a cold snort, simultaneously sending out a great amount of Clasp of Yuan Realm Zhen Qi, all the surrounding people immediately sensed the Head Elder's anger.

Zhuang Qingxian threw a sideways glance at the Head Elder, then yelled to Cheng Jun, “Everyone has their own evaluation, how dare you just talk like that?”

Although Cheng Jun didn’t realise that Zhuang Qingxiang was a bit annoyed, he clearly understood that one should not push anything too far, therefore, he instantly cupped his hands and slightly bowed to surrounding people and said, “I’m just a straight-talking young man, our honoured guests, please forgive me.”

After that, Cheng Jun turned back to Ye Chen, staring at him with a fierce look and continued, “Let's just let the results of this fight prove my words!”

Followed by a sudden buzzing noise, Ye Chen's storage ring sparkled, and the Hidden Cloud Sword appeared in his hand. He slowly pulled the sword out and pointed its tip at Cheng Jun. Ye Chen responded with a frosty tone, “If I can’t beat you up with less than five attacks, count it as my loss.”

Everyone was shocked once they heard Ye Chen make this declaration.

The Head Elder’s face instantly darkened. Before they came, he had particularly talked to Ye Chen about not acting on impulse without using due

consideration. In this place, Ye Chen was not only representing himself as an individual, but also acting on behalf of the entire Sky Cloud Martial School, therefore, he had to think about the school first and foremost. How could he forget all of this immediately after stepping onto the arena?! Defeat Cheng Jun with less than five attacks? How could it be that easy? If he failed to do what he said, the others would definitely despise him, seeing him as an arrogant, boastful person.

“Junior brother Ye, don’t be so impulsive!” Luo Hanshan couldn’t help but speak out.

“He’s probably not.” Xu Jing let out a few simple words.

Fourth Elder said with a bitter grin, “You don’t really think that Ye Chen could win against that boy with less than five attacks, do you? If I’m not wrong, this Cheng Jun is at least at the same stage as those top core disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace. Although I don’t want to admit it, merely judging from his Zhen Qi vibration, he could easily compare to rank 6 or 7 amongst our Sky Cloud Martial School’s core disciples.”

Except for the leaders of a few powerful institutions, all the other younger generation warriors also shook their heads. They all thought that Ye Chen was being way too arrogant, especially Shi Potian, who even sneered silently. If he hadn't said this, losing the fight would still not have been much of a big deal to Ye Chen and the Sky Cloud Martial School. But since he already said it, it would be a great shame if he failed to achieve it. Shi Potian now believed that this Ye Chen was even more stupid and arrogant than he had imagined.

Ouyang Ming scornfully smiled and said, “What a reckless kid.”

On the Rudra Martial School’s side, Yuan Xuemei had been frowning at Cheng Jun since a long time. She seriously wished that Ye Chen could beat him up in less than five attacks, even though it didn’t seem possible at all.

“You asked for this!”

Cheng Jun’s clothes fluttered in the air even though there was no wind present. Meanwhile, beams of cyan-purple light darted out from his body. He slightly moved and the ground under his feet started cracking. In the next moment, he dashed out swiftly. It was as if his entire body was as sharp as a

sword; he straightened his palm and fingers into a dagger shape and abruptly hacked down towards Ye Chen.

Followed by a puffing noise, the air was split apart by the dazzling, cyan-purple light blade that zipped out from Cheng Jun's palm towards Ye Chen at lightning speed.

Ye Chen stood perfectly still not taking even a single step back. His flat expression suddenly became fierce and waves of faint yet powerful sword Qi swooshed out of his body; his body seemed to have transformed into a sword that was as light as a cloud, yet accumulated with power, it seemed as if it would soon burst out with an incredibly destructive attack.

“The first attack!”

Ye Chen lunged with his sword, right after which his entire body became hazy. The silhouette of the sword was hazy as well; both he and his sword now looked like drifting clouds in the sky that had broken free from the constraints of their former entity.

Crack!

The cyan-purple light blade darted through Ye Chen's hazy silhouette and left a deep mark on the ground; at the same time, Ye Chen's sword had almost reached Cheng Jun's chest.

“What the hell is this?!”

Cheng Jun was deeply shocked. He didn't think that Ye Chen's attacking method and sword skill would be so weird. He clearly saw his light blade dart right through Ye Chen's body, but he failed to even touch Ye Chen with that powerful sword blade.

Both shame and anger flashed across Cheng Jun's face, he almost madly began activating his Zhen Qi.

“[Natural purple crystal Qi]!”

Cyan-purple Qi began gathering towards Cheng Jun, forming a purple crystal like protective screen in front of him. The screen was crystal clear, and was formed by eight flat sections; every edge of that screen was releasing a faint

purple light, firmly shrouding Cheng Jun's body among the streams of coiling purple airwaves.

Ye Chen didn't change his attacking method at all, he lunged with the Hidden Cloud sword once again. This time, the sword Qi contained the terrifying half-step sword intent, it made the sword silhouette to seem clearer than before.

Puff!

The purple crystal protective screen shattered almost immediately. It seemed as if that crystal screen couldn't even slightly block the hazy sword silhouette.

"What?! The natural purple crystal Qi is broken?!" Shi Potian yelled as he tightly gripped the teacup that he had just lifted in his hand; the tea cup was instantly crushed in his hand and hot tea splashed everywhere.

The '[Natural Purple Crystal Qi]' was a usage of the '[Natural Great Destructive Power]', which was one of the low-grade Earth level martial arts of Emerald Martial Palace, it was as powerful as Liu Waxiang's '[Blue Murderous Qi]'. In terms of destructive power, the 'Natural Purple Crystal Qi' was more powerful than the 'Blue Murderous Qi'. Ordinary Condensing Reality Realm warriors might not be able to break the 'Natural Purple Crystal Qi' even if they were to use all of their power. But just now, 'Natural Purple Crystal Qi' was easily broken by Ye Chen with just a single attack.

Young master Emerald's expression changed slightly, he was surprised by the power half-step sword intent had.

"Go to hell!"

Cheng Jun let out a loud roar, the 'Purple Crystal Screen' surrounding him grew thicker than before, and managed to slow down the hidden cloud sword; at the same time, Cheng Jun's right hand swung towards Ye Chen's head bringing along a fierce airwave, it seemed as if it could even cut the sky into two.

A sharp gust of wind raised Ye Chen's hair, he growled out as well.

"Lone Domination!"

Boom!

Within a moment, Ye Chen absorbed all the surrounding Yuan Qi and injected



it into his left fist. Along with an incomparably great and violent power, Ye Chen's fist crashed against Cheng Jun's palm.

The expected thunderous boom did not occur, nothing was shattered or sent flying by the great impact waves. Everyone only saw a stream of black light and a cyan-purple crystal light clash and devour each other.

Some relatively weaker young talents even felt a bit uncomfortable, as if they were clearly aware that the thunder was coming, but all they could see were the dazzling bolts of lightning, none of them could hear even the slightest bit of thunder. This feeling was so weird and it brought a sense of anxiety to these younger warriors.

At this very moment, the earth-shaking boom finally burst out.

Both the black light stream and the purple crystal screen suddenly shattered, countless fragments darting in every direction. It was an astonishing and terrifying scene.

"What a great power!" Leaders of those powerful institutions moved one after another, each releasing thick Qi to defend their own regions in order to prevent the strong explosion's waves from causing any further destruction. Instantly, huge amounts of air ripples emerged on all of those defensive walls.

Ye Chen and Cheng Jun swiftly darted away from each other once their bodies made the slightest contact. While still in the air, Ye Chen once again waved his sword.

"Limitless Fierce Cloud!"

A huge stream of sword Qi came swooshing out towards Cheng Jun, wherever it swept across, even the air itself was cleared out. This amazing Sword Qi seemed as if it would crush everything in its way.

"Damn it!"

Cheng Jun became enraged. He gathered all of his Zhen Qi into his right palm and then hit the stream of sword Qi.

Followed by a sudden series of sputters, the Zhen Qi gathered on the edge of Cheng Jun's palm was completely wiped out. The fierce sword Qi had even

damaged his meridians, making him spurt out a mouthful of blood.

“Incredible! Chen Jun is injured after only three attacks, will he really be defeat by that Ye Chen in less than five attacks?!”

“But Ye Chen only has two attacks left, Cheng Jun can certainly hold on, can’t he?”

“Well, it will be so embarrassing if he couldn't even hold on. Earlier he had ridiculed the Sky Cloud Martial School, if he got beaten by Ye Chen so soon after he said something like that... it would be the same as receiving a huge slap right on his face!”

Seeing that Ye Chen had hurt Cheng Jun, everyone was shocked.

“Ye Chen, are you still trying to beat me in only five attacks? In your dreams! I will make you regret even trying!” yelled Cheng Jun. His eyes had already turned blood-red at that moment. He forcibly used his Zhen Qi to crush the sword Qi which had intruded into his body; after that, he walked towards Ye Chen taking one step after another, a large area of cracked ground was left behind him with each step he took; and with every step forward, the natural purple crystal Qi that was surrounding his body continued to suddenly grow thicker than before. When he took the seventh step, the Natural Crystal Qi condensed into a blade like silhouette, with a dazzlingly sharp edge.

Cheng Jun had forcibly broken into the eighth level of the [Natural great destructive power]. It was beyond his current limits, but it allowed him to condense the Purple Crystal Qi into the silhouette of a blade.

“Break!!”

Facing Ye Chen, who stood far away from him, Cheng Jun raised his right hand high and then hacked down.

Woosh!

That blade silhouette darted out along with Cheng Jun’s movement. A violent airwave brought up by that blade's purple light cut a deep fissure in the arena; even the surrounding air was split by the shockwaves, it instantly rippled like water and then suddenly exploded into violent and sharp gusts of wind.

“The eighth-grade of the [Natural Great Destructive Power]! He can certainly beat that Ye Chen now!” Shi Potian fixed his eyes on the arena, he couldn’t wait to see the bloody scene of that Ye Chen being torn apart by that purple blade silhouette.

Ouyang Ming showed a complicated smile. He had always thought that Ye Chen who had gained the half step sword intent at such a young age would become a threat to him sooner or later. It would be a nice end to the story if Cheng Jun could take him out here in this arena.

Xu Jing and Luo Hanshan both slightly frowned. By now, she wasn’t so sure that Ye Chen could defeat Cheng Jun anymore. After all, Cheng Jun’s breakthrough had happened way too fast and in an unexpected manner. No one would have ever thought that the stress and the sense of shame he felt would push him to break into another stage.

Compared to him, it could be said that Ye Chen was really unlucky.

Facing this terrible attack, Ye Chen’s Zhen Qi automatically burst out from his body. He somehow felt that an invisible obstruction deep within his dantian had been broken, and his Zhen Qi began to gather at an amazing speed; the surrounding natural Yuan Qi poured into his body in huge streams.

Just like Cheng Jun, Ye Chen made a breakthrough as well! But unlike Cheng Jun, he broke into the Late Condensing Reality Realm.

Sensing the great amount of Zhen Qi fluctuations inside his body, Ye Chen raised his head and showed a fierce gaze. Sword Qi darted out from his body once again, and this time, everyone’s eyes felt a piercing pain.

## ***Chapter 128 - Duel***

Luo Hanshan murmured in shock, “Did Brother Ye just break into the Late Condensing Reality Realm?”

Just then, Cheng Jun had forcibly stepped into the eighth level of the Natural Great Destructive Power, it already gave a huge shock to Luo Hanshan. After all, such things were truly rare, stress couldn’t always urge warriors to achieve a breakthrough, otherwise, entire world would be thrown into chaos as people would start deadly fights every single day. The stress could only provide an opportunity for warriors to achieve a sudden improvement, however, he never thought that Ye Chen would achieve a breakthrough right after Cheng Jun, additionally, what Ye Chen had attained was an improvement of cultivation, he had directly broken into the Late Condensing Reality Realm from the Mid Condensing Reality Realm; moreover, judging from his vast, perfectly stabilised Zhen Qi vibrations, it seemed that his Late Condensing Reality Realm cultivation was even more solid than many ordinary warriors of the same level.

Hah!

Taking a huge step forward, he suddenly released streams of fierce airwaves. Ye Chen’s entire body seemed to have merged with the eye of a storm, from where shocking amounts of sword Qi rose directly up into the air.

He gripped his sword in one hand, while the other hand simply swung down in the air.

“My sword!”

“What the hell! Why did my sword fly out on its own?!”

Many Emerald Martial Palace’s inner disciples had been watching the competition, and quite a few of them carried swords. But just now, all of their swords flew out automatically, they darted towards Cheng Jun together with the great stream of Sword Qi that was being let out by Ye Chen.

A couple of inner disciples who were relatively stronger managed to grab ahold of their swords, however no matter how hard they tried to control their own sword with their Zhen Qi, those swords still continued to shake so intensely that

it almost threw those disciples into a panic.

An Emerald Martial Palace's inner Elder let out a cold snort while he slightly waved his hand in the air. As soon as he made this move, the connection between Ye Chen's sword Qi and all the other swords was instantly cut off.

Without all those extra swords, the huge stream of sword Qi released by Ye Chen seemed to be slightly less terrifying, yet it was still incomparably fierce. A tremendous white coloured airwave was brought up by the sword Qi and followed closely behind it, it was as if there was a flowing cloud that was swiftly changing forms and pushing the sword Qi forwards.

Crack!

The sword Qi and the blade silhouette clashed against each other. In the very next second, the blade silhouette was cut into two, while the sword light which had shrunk by about thirty percent still violently bumped against the protective purple crystal screen around Cheng Jun's body.

A stream of fresh blood spurted out and a bone-deep wound appeared on Cheng Jun's chest. This was only because the sword Qi had suddenly changed its route and rose up into the air the moment it touched Cheng Jun's body, otherwise Cheng Jun would have long since been killed.

Puff!

Once again, Cheng Jun let out a mouthful of blood, which also contained faint streams of sword Qi that even cracked the ground. Cheng Jun's face instantly turned deathly pale, his body started swaying as if he was going to kneel on the ground.

Suddenly, a silhouette darted over, it landed beside Cheng Jun and held him.

That was one of Emerald Martial Palace's inner elders.

"Four attacks, he defeated Cheng Jun with only four attacks. In the final attack, he also showed slight signs of the true sword intent, didn't he?"

"Hm, I think so. I too felt a sharp stream of sword Qi that seemed to pierce right into my heart, I just thought it was only an illusion."

"I heard that once true sword intent is released, it could vanquish all kinds of

evil energies!”

“What kind of special talent does he have, how on earth did he manage to touch upon the true sword intent before all of us?! So unfair!”

Some people were surprised by Ye Chen’s achievement, some exclaimed out, and of course, most of these people were jealous of him. At their age, stepping into another stage would become very difficult, therefore, they could only strengthen their strength in other aspects. Without a doubt, sword intent and saber intent have both been desired by all the warriors, if these two non-physical objects could be purchased with wealth, these people would definitely give out whatever they had to obtain them.

On the Sky Cloud Martial School’s side, the Head Elder and Fourth Elder had both been unnecessarily alarmed, but instead they now both showed delightful smiles. Ye Chen’s outstanding performance had already been witnessed by everyone, after they get back to the Sky Cloud Martial School, they would certainly report this to the leader.

Luo Hanshan shook his head, he looked at Xu Jing and said, “Amazing, he is indeed amazing. Perhaps, he can come out of the Windy Nation along with us to go to the South Zhuo area to fight against those extremely talented younger generation warriors, what do you think?”

Xu Jing didn’t answer his question, instead she threw out a question of her own, “Now, you’re also a Child-level warrior, aren’t you?”

Luo Hanshan remained silent, but his eyes started shining brightly.

The inner elder who was holding Cheng Jung had already cleared all of the remaining sword Qi out of Cheng Jun’s body. Seeing Cheng Jun’s horrible wounds, the elder abruptly turned to Ye Chen and yelled harshly, “This was just a competition, but you launched your attack so maliciously! Let me teach you how to be a nice and decent man!”

Boom!

The area shook intensely, Ye Chen couldn’t help but take a series of steps backwards. The Head Elder suddenly showed in front of him and smashed the aggressive stream of power with a single slap and yelled back at that inner elder,

“Cheng Yue, don’t you dare push this too far! Ye Chen has already shown mercy! Do you really think that our Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciples are all pushovers?!”

“You!!” That Emerald Martial Palace’s inner elder named Cheng Yue, was Cheng Jun’s grandfather, and had always had great expectations of him. Today, seeing that Cheng Jun was defeated by Ye Chen with only four attacks, and was also injured quite seriously, Cheng Yue only felt blood surging to his head, and nearly lost his mind in his rage.

Zhuang Qingxian gave a complicated glance at Ye Chen, then shouted out at Cheng Yue, “Aren’t you ashamed enough yet? Just take Cheng Jun and go take care of his wounds.”

After Cheng Yue took Cheng Jun away, Zhuang Qingxian took a long and deep breath, then said in a resonant voice, “All competitors should remember this, don’t push things too far in the arena. I hope you can restrain yourself, don’t lose yourself in the fight.” Just now, Ye Chen had shown mercy and spared Cheng Jun’s life, therefore, Zhuang Qingxian couldn’t say much about it, otherwise, he would probably give others an unjust impression, which would not be good for his reputation.

The competition carried on. The competitors were all talented younger generation disciples from other powerful institutions, while the top-ranked younger disciples from the most influential institutions still thought that it was not time for them to step into the arena yet.

Shi Potian was now very displeased. He had just glanced at Ji Xueyan and found that she had been staring at Ye Chen all the time and didn’t even notice his gaze. This made Shi Potian feel that he was being completely neglected. Previously, although Ji Xueyan never showed any particular interest in him, she had at least given him enough respect; in his eyes, their relationship was quite close, and there was a chance for that girl to fancy him. But now, that small hope was completely gone.

“Ye Chen, you shouldn't think that you’re marvellous just because you've defeated Cheng Jun. You can’t even imagine how great the true Childe-level power is. After a few more fights, I will let you know the difference between us,

then you will know what despair feels like. I will destroy your half-step sword intent and make you beg for your death.” Shi Potian’s expression remained unchanged, but deep inside, he was roaring in rage. He already had a plan that could completely crush Ye Chen’s confidence. Sword intent possessed by an unconfident sword artist could easily vanish, not to mention that Ye Chen hadn’t yet gained the true sword-intent.

As he viciously glanced at Ye Chen, Shi Potian’s eyes were filled with an evil aura.

Among Emerald Martial Palace’s inner disciples, Ye Xuan was sitting on a chair, she stared at Ye Chen with her eyes popped out as if she couldn’t quite believe what had just happened. Just now, if the inner Elder hadn’t made his move, her sword also would have certainly flown out and merged with Ye Chen’s Sword Qi. She couldn’t understand how that Ye Chan, who always used to be so dumb and had such poor talent, suddenly become so talented, And he had been growing more and more powerful, now he almost reached the peak among all of the Windy Nation’s younger generation warriors.

“Junior Sister Ye, he won’t be able to enjoy his victory for long, next Senior Brother Shi will surely teach him a good lesson.” Next to Ye Xuan, Cui Shiming said in a low voice.

Ye Xuan briefly paused and then responded, “It isn’t that easy, is it?”

“You’ve misjudged Brother Shi. Not to mention Ye Chen, even Young master North Snow from the North Snow Martial Academy and the Young master Duanmu from the Duanmu family can’t be sure that they could win against Senior Brother Shi. Brother Shi is now a true Child-level martial artist, he only lacks a title.” Cui Shiming was quite proud when he said this. He clearly knew that once Shi Potian launched his attack, he would definitely make his opponent pay a heavy price. As for what that price would be, he could only wait to find out. However, he also realised that he had to cultivate even harder than before. This Junior Sister Ye Xuan was also pretty talented. In terms of power, she was currently as strong as him, which meant that she could probably surpass him in the near future, this also brought him some sense of crisis.

“I, Yu Yue, am challenging Rudra Martial School’s core disciple, Nangong Yun.”



After another fight ended, Yu Yue, the 'Aggressive Blade' abruptly walked out, and challenged Nangong Yun, who was also known as the 'Rain Man'.

"Aggressive Blade, Yu Yue, before Lin Qi showed his talent, Yu Yue was recognised as the second ranked disciple among all North Snow Martial School's younger generation disciples."

"Yu Yue's blade skills are incomparably violent, although Lin Qi's is much more mature than before, he still won't win against Yu Yue easily."

"However, that 'Rain Man', Nangong Yun is also pretty talented. It is said that he was tutored by the leader of the Rudra Martial School himself, and had been practising the '[Heaven Holy Spring Spell]'."

"Heaven Holy Spring Spell? Isn't that the early stage spell of the legendary [Godly Water Spell] secret art, the most powerful martial art possessed by the Rudra Martial School?"

People began whispering to each other excitedly. Although the competition between Ye Chen and Cheng Yue had been fantastic, it was not a Childe-level fight.

At present, except for Young Master North Snow and Young Master Duanmu, the martial artists who had truly gained Childe-level power were Shi Potian and Liu Wuxiang from the Emerald Martial Palace, Qin Yulian from the Rudra Martial School, Zhu Mei from the Sky Cloud Martial School, Ouyang Lie from the Purple Sun Martial School and Lin Qi from the North Snow Martial School; all the others who had nearly achieved Childe-level were only just nominated. 'Aggressive Blade' Yu Yue and 'Rain Man' Nangong Yun were two of them.

Of course, the recognised Childe-level martial artists were not more powerful than these nominated disciples by a hundred percent, and the nominated Childe-level disciples might be able to completely defeat recognised Childe-level martial artists; regarding this, people could only take guesses based on small clues, and none could actually be sure without a real fight taking place.

Nangong Yun walked out with a friendly smile and said, "Yu Yue, I knew that you would challenge me, we still haven't ended our fight from half a year ago!"

"Exactly, between you and me, we have to find out who is the winner this time.

Nowadays, there are just too many talented people, if we don't work harder and break past our limits, there won't be a place left for us at all." Yu Yue was over two meters tall, and looked especially sturdy. He stood straight and had a fierce aura spreading out from his body, as if his entire body had transformed into a solid and sharp blade that could swiftly launch a deadly attack anytime he wanted.

Nangong Yun responded seriously, "In that case, let's begin. I wish that I can achieve a breakthrough in stress as well."

"Madness Blade!"

Like a roaring tiger, Yu Yue took the first step forward. From tens of steps away, he split the air and came darting towards Nangong Yun along with a hazy silhouette of a blade.

Clang!

Nangong Yun waved his hands in the air and let out Zhen Qi that looked like water streams, which then transformed into tens of beams of sword light in the air and swished towards the blade silhouette.

Seeing Nangong Yun's move, Ye Chen praised with some surprise, "What a stunning skill! He condensed his Zhen Qi to resemble water-like qualities, but much heavier than real water. A drop of that kind of Zhen Qi water would probably weigh hundreds of kilograms, I'm afraid even tens of these drops can be unstoppable."

Luo Hanshan was a knowledgeable person, he explained to Ye Chen, "The leader of the Rudra Martial School is quite a mysterious woman, no one knows where she came from. Without any signs, she suddenly rose high in the world of martial artists and then founded the Rudra Martial School, one of the five famous institutions. The top grade martial art possessed by the Rudra Martial School is called 'Magic Spring Spell', it is incredibly magical. It's said that at the peak stage of this spell, a drop of Zhen Qi water can weigh ten thousand kilograms, and that the martial artist could even control the rain with this spell; for example, he or she could instantly raise the amount of rain in a certain area. This Heaven Holy Spring Spell is the early-stage of the Magic Spring Spell, although it's only as effective as twenty percent of the Magic Spring Spell, it's

already terrifying.”

Ye Chen nodded. He had heard about the leader of the Rudra Martial School before, although she was a woman, she was no less ambitious than any man, and she single-handedly turned the Rudra Martial School into one of the top five famous institutions. In terms of comprehensive strength, the Rudra Martial School was even slightly better than the current Sky Cloud Martial School. Nevertheless, the Sky Cloud Martial School was actually more powerful before, it was just that it had been trapped by the Purple Sun Martial School and had lost many of its powerful disciples, it had also been downgraded from the rank 8 to rank 9; the current Sky Cloud Martial School was still trying to recover from that.

Facing the heavy Zhen Qi water streams, Yu Yue showed absolutely no fear. He raised his solid and gigantic black blade and madly hacked down at those water streams, even causing those Zhen Qi water streams to splash everywhere.

“The Eighth Mountain-Smashing Style!”

Suddenly, Yu Yue leapt high into the air and simply swung his blade down.

Followed by a loud sizzling noise, Nangong Yun’s Zhen Qi water streams were split off layer by layer. The openings in water streams expanded quickly, and drops of Zhen Qi water even fell on the ground and pierced countless deep holes in the ground.

“Water Screen Unification!”

Nangong Yun took three steps backwards, crossed his fingers, and then pushed his palms forward.

Along with a loud clattering water sound, the remaining water streams quickly merged together into a water sphere which bumped against Yu Yue’s blade, forcibly pushing Yu Yue over ten steps back.

## Chapter 129 - The Purple Qi in the East

“Alright, the [Heaven Holy Spring Spell] had indeed lived up to its reputation. Now, take my second attack!”

Yu Yue took a step forward, which cracked open the floor, the power in his body continued to increase in an aggressive manner. He twisted his wrist and threw out another blade attack.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The blade attack was like a lightning bolt slicing through the sky. The distance of twenty steps was covered in the blink of an eye.

Nangong Yun did not dare to ignore the attacking power of the blade light. The water waves around him suddenly increased, they carried the power of an ocean. They formed a defensive layer between the blade light and himself.

Boom!

The liquidized Zhen Qi was splashed everywhere. Each drop had an unbelievably strong attacking power, it was enough to kill a normal Mid Condensing Reality Realm warrior.

“[The Mountain Cracker: third movement]!” Yu Yue was about to perform the third movement.

“Yu Yue, you think you can beat me?! [Water Wolf Ten Shadow Kill]!”

Without any delay, Nangong Yun drew another full circle in front of him with his right arm. The water-like Zhen Qi came out and formed countless wolves, they started to brutally attack Yu Yue.

Crack!

A devious looking wolf jumped on Yu Yue and took a bite on his defensive Zhen Qi.

Yu Yue laughed and then shook his body. The next second, that Zhen Qi wolf disappeared completely. Without skipping a beat, he cleaned out all the other Zhen Qi wolves using his blade.

“[Water Wolf Hundred Shadow Kill]!”

The first attack was only a preparation for the second attack. With enough time, Nangong Yun intensified his aura, even his friendly face started to look cruel. Both of his hands started to draw circles in the air. The ocean-like Zhen Qi water wave was compressed into a small clump and was then thrown out.

Whoo! Whoo! Whoo!

The half-man-sized water ball suddenly exploded. Ten huge wolves were aggressively running towards Yu Yue, this terrified the rest of the young warriors present. They could not help but think how they would be instantly killed if they were the ones facing those attacks.

Yu Yue could not look any more serious. His opponent was way more powerful than he had expected. However, his brave personality made him fearless. He thought about it and ran towards the attacks.

“Mountain Cracker: the fourth movement!”

“Mountain Cracker: the fifth movement!”

“Mountain Cracker: the sixth movement!”

“Mountain Cracker: the seventh movement!”

He threw out four blade attacks continuously. Most of those Zhen Qi wolves were shattered instantly, only a couple of them were left. However, the situation was even more intense than before. Nangong Yun’s Qi had increased even more aggressively.

Boom!

The ground started to shake. The water-like Zhen Qi around him kept expanding, it looked like some horrible creature was about to be born to destroy the world.

‘I should not wait any longer!’

Yu Yue could feel a chill crawling up his back. He knew that if he waited any longer, it would not end well for him. He accumulated all the purified Zhen Qi into his arms, and then held them high up in the air. The sudden aura created a huge air flow, which then turned into a gigantic whirlpool.

“Mountain Cracker: the eighth movement!”

He threw out a blade attack. The Qi flow around Nangong Yun was cut into two parts, it almost turned them into solid objects. From that, one could tell how powerful that blade attack was.

Nangong Yun's robes started to dance in the air, he suddenly twisted both of his hands.

"Tiger Shark Attack!"

Boom!

The water-formed from Zhen Qi was finally shaped into a twenty-meter-high terrifying tiger shark. It shook its head and tail, while swallowing down that blade light as well as Yu Yue himself.

Ouyang Ming could not help but gasp. 'How the heck is even this Nangong Yun so powerful? Besides, in the beginning of the fight, weren't they evenly matched, he had almost been beating Yu Yue like a punch bag.'

"Turning Zhen Qi into solid objects... indeed impressive." It was also Ye Chen's first time to see this level of fight, it was not something a normal Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior could compete with.

Pop!

The Tiger Shark's tail suddenly exploded, a blade light stabbed into Nangong Yun's defensive Zhen Qi layer.

Nangong Yun's face went pale all of a sudden, blood leaked out of the corner of his lips. He could not help but back out for more than ten steps.

He looked over to Yu Yue's side.

Right then, one could see him standing there like a champion, with blood all over him. He had just used all his power to fight off that tiger shark.

"You are so much more powerful than half a year ago." Nangong Yun said slowly.

Yu Yue showed his teeth as he laughed, "Too bad I lost..."

He didn't even manage to finish his sentence before he spit out a huge chunk of blood.

Nangong Yun shook his head, “I had also just run out of energy. Let’s just call it even.”

“I had lost! There’s no argument in that. Who do you think I am? Train as hard as you can, because the next time, I will not be beaten!”

It seemed like Yu Yue was seriously wounded, he struggled a little as he turned to leave.

Nangong Yun smiled, and returned to his seat.

“Your blade attack had only slightly missed, otherwise you would have been able to take out that Zhen Qi tiger shark.” When Yu Yue sat down, Lin Qi who was sitting right next to him suddenly said.

Yu Yue froze a little, he looked at Lin Qi with a complicated look.

The head master of the North Snow Martial Academy smiled as well, although Yu Yue had lost, but he had at least wounded Nangong Yun which was not bad at all. And they had Lin Qi, who still hadn’t started yet.

Shi Potian was slightly surprised by Nangong Yun’s power, but he did not care much about it. In this competition, there were only two people he wanted to beat, one of them was Luo Hanshan, who used to be one of the top four Childe. Once he was able to beat him, he would be able to officially get the Childe title, otherwise it would not be proper. But, he was fairly confident about it, he knew that he was only lacking a ceremony of some sort. Of course, before everything else, he would have to take care of Ye Chen, and destroy the half-step sword intent, making his life miserable.

Unfortunately, it was not the time for that yet. If he rushed to challenge him, then it would be very suspicious, people would think that he wanted revenge for Cheng Jun. Then it might give his opponent an excuse to refuse to take up the challenge, he might even say that he had used too much of his energy and still needed time to recover, those who did not know any better would believe him and might even support him.

If Shi Potian decided to kill someone, he would not leave his opponent with any chance to back out.

‘I will let you live for a little bit longer.’ Shi Potian tried to control his temper.

The competing performance was a great opportunity for those disciples from different martial institutions and powerful parties to learn, it not only let them feel the pressure, but it also offered opportunities to achieve breakthroughs. Even if they were not able to have any breakthroughs, it would at least prepare them for their future improvements.

Right then, a martial disciple pointed at Yuan Xuemei for a challenge. Everyone turned their attention towards him, he was wearing yellow robes with a black snake pattern on his sleeves.

It represented the Black Snake Martial School – one of the four rank 9 martial institutions of Windy Nation.

It turned out that this disciple was the top disciple of the Black Snake Martial School. He knew that he had no chance of winning against top disciples from other martial institutions. Only Yuan Xuemei who was not as famous seemed to be an easy target. If he was able to beat her, then he would gain good reputation since being able to beat an outstanding disciple of a big martial institution was not something everyone could do.

Yuan Xuemei just smiled. She was waiting for someone to challenge her so that she could show people that she was not someone to be messed with.

“[Spring Hit]!”

She threw out a sword attack. The sword light was like rain drops as they landed lightly on the opponent’s defensive Zhen Qi layer.

Pop! Pop! Pop!

That sword attack seemed extremely light and weak, but it actually carried surprisingly powerful energy. That disciple’s defensive Zhen Qi was like a piece of tofu, it was filled with holes in no time and eventually disappeared.

Ye Chen’s eye brows rose, he recognized that Yuan Xuemei had just performed the [Four Season Sword Art] from the Rudra Martial School. It seemed like that after she had made a breakthrough in her power level, her martial institution decided to focus on training her, and taught her the Four Season Sword Art making an exception, instead of the [Four Season Rain: the Sword Art].

After exchanged ten moves, the top disciple of the Black Snake School did not



even manage to touch the edge of Yuan Xuemei's robes; on the contrary, he looked terrible, and was forced to drop out of the competition.

All of a sudden, the whole plaza turned quiet as they saw Ouyang Ming, the second ranked core disciple of the Purple Sun Martial Palace walk onto the stage.

"It's Ouyang Ming! Another Childe level disciple."

"I wonder who he is going to challenge, is it going to be Liu Wuxiang from Emerald Martial Palace? Or Shi Potian?"

"Impossible. The Purple Sun Martial School and the Emerald Martial Palace had been quite close lately, and their disciples had been hanging out together quite often, it is very unlikely for them to challenge each other. I think, he is going to challenge Luo Hanshan from the Sky Cloud Martial School, the Hanshan Childe."

"Eh, how did I not think of that?! Although Luo Hanshan is not as powerful as when he was at his peak, he still has his reputation. Without beating him, it is impossible to steal his title."

Hearing the chattering around him, Ouyang Ming sneered at Luo Hanshan, "Luo Hanshan, today is the time for you to hand over your Childe title. Stop hoarding it."

Luo Hanshan walked onto the stage without any expression, he said, "I never cared about the Childe title. However, if you want to take something from me, you would have to ask if I would like to give it to you or not."

"Haha, do you think it is still two years ago? With your power now, you are no longer qualified for that title, you should let the people who are worthy to have it." Ouyang Ming sneered.

"Since you are so confident about it, then come and get it. However, I am afraid that you would not like the result."

Luo Hanshan stood thirty steps away from Ouyang Ming, he was wearing blue robes and had nothing in his hands. He looked just like any other guy in the street. But when one looked closer, they could see that he had the aura of a huge mountain that had survived for centuries, waiting to take on whatever that

came at it.

Ye Chen said to Xu Jing, "It seems like brother Luo had hidden it quite well."

Xu Jing said, "You can see it?"

"Only an instinct. Although I don't like Ouyang Ming, he does have powerful Qi. I am afraid this is going to be a tough battle." Ye Chen scanned the two on the stage with his soul power, he could sense the completely different aura being emitted by those two. If you said that Luo Hanshan was a peaceful huge mountain, or a rock at the bottom of the ocean, then Ouyang Ming would be a mad volcano, waiting for a moment to explode and burn everything around him.

"If you are able to handle this kick without backing out, then you are eligible for me to use my full power." Ouyang Ming's body slowly floated into the air, which gave people the impression that he was extremely relaxed. However, once he threw out a kick, that feeling had completely changed. That kick was like the outburst of a volcano, that aggressiveness made everyone present feel that something bad was going to happen.

"This kick, I will take it!"

Luo Hanshan's pupils suddenly changed color, a bright purple light poured out and formed into a bridge-like purple Qi behind his back, and continued to spread. It looked like it was going to bring something horrible.

"The ninth stage of [Purple Extreme Art]! The Purple Qi in the East!"

The head elder's eyes widened, as he said word by word.

Hearing him, Ye Chen started to think. The [Purple Extreme Art] was one of the most fascinating low rank Earth Realm Martial Arts in the Sky Cloud Martial School. The eighth level was known as the [Purple Eye Ice Heart], and the ninth stage was known as the [Purple Qi in the East]. Once someone reached the ninth stage, there would be purple Qi visibly being absorbed into their body which would massively increase their fighting strength. Rumour had it that once someone reached the peak of the ninth stage, they could even bring out a bunch of lotus flowers made of purple Qi, which could be used as a defensive art.

## Chapter 130: Dragon Beheading Kick and Great Monument Kingly Punch

A series of thunderous booms rose in the air. That was just a simple kick, yet, it managed to release waves of long-lasting violent power that roared towards Luo Hanshan. Luo Hanshan stood perfectly still and thrust both of his arms forward. Large amounts of Yuan Qi that had been absorbed by the purple Qi, condensed into a gigantic millstone. It blocked the streams of power released by that kick, it was as tremendous as a volcanic eruption.

In the next moment, a dazzling purple light burst out, it was so bright that people couldn't even directly look at; thunderous booms came right after that, and even intensely shook the entire area.

"He did it! Lou Hanshan blocked the attack!"

"Judging from what happened just now, Luo Hanshan had achieved the ninth-level of the [Purple Extreme Art], no wonder he was so confident about fighting against Ouyang Ming."

"Young Master Hanshan began shining again, it seems like he wouldn't let anyone take his Childe title away!"

"You're right, after all Luo Hanshan has built a solid foundation before, even if he had been temporarily surpassed, he can definitely last longer than ordinary martial artists when it comes to a battle."

Although most of the people were shocked, none of them felt too unexpected about Luo Hanshan's performance. He was the famous Hanshan Childe, how could he be weak? Besides, as he tried to push Luo Hanshan back with only a single kick, it more or less made it seem that Ouyang Ming had been looking down on Luo Hanshan. But then again, no one knew exactly how much power Ouyang Ming used.

Liu Wuxiang, who had once competed against Luo Hanshan with three moves, showed a faint smile. 'Back then, I only used eighty percent of my power, now you're finally qualified to have an even fight against me.'

The Purple Sun Martial School's Head Elder now had a very dark face. He previously thought that Ouyang Ming could definitely win against Luo Hanshan, but he never thought that Luo Hanshan would suddenly become as powerful and

potentially dangerous as he was before. Although his cultivation stayed at the same level, he abruptly achieved the ninth-level of the Purple Extreme Art. Fortunately, he hadn't reached the peak level of the ninth-level yet, otherwise, once he made a connection with the Purple Lotus, he would become nearly invincible unless his opponent was at a much higher level than him."

"The Sky Cloud Martial School is rising again!" said another Purple Sun Martial School's elder with worry.

Their Head Elder snorted coldly and responded with a Zhen Qi transmission, "Zhu Lieyang was prepared to kill that kid named Ye Chen, but he was lucky and managed to survive. This won't happen the next time. The next time, we'll let him kill this Luo Hanshan as well. We will just kill these damn kids for good, so that the Sky Cloud Martial School can never rise again, and we will tread on them forever."

"Exactly, once the Sky Cloud Martial School rises, they will definitely cause trouble for us, so we have to prevent that from happening."

Their voices had been condensed into a slight stream of power, and weren't transmitted out, however, Ye Chen sensed a fierce killing intent from them.

"Those two old things must be planning something awful, I'm not exactly sure if they're targeting me." Ye Chen fixed his eyes on the arena, but he had still been thinking about all the possibilities of those two elders' plans. He was quite confident about his senses, he could grasp even the slightest trace of killing intent directed towards him. Nevertheless, Late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists were extremely powerful, that killing intent was emitted for only a brief moment before it completely disappeared.

With a bitter smile on his face, Ye Chen slightly shook his head. He was still way too weak and was only at the lowest level of Windy Nation's martial artists. Only Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could protect themselves well. Currently, if anyone tried to launch a deadly, sneak attack at him, he couldn't even resist.

Thinking of this, Ye Chen couldn't help but feel slightly lost.

Even though Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could freely and confidently travel across the Windy Nation, they might be as vulnerable as children in the South Zhuo Area or another part of the True Spirit Continent. Beyond the

Clasping Yuan Realm, was Astral Reaching Realm. An Astral Ream Realm martial artists could smash a mountain with a single slight move, he could easily destroy a small institution; and above the Astral Reach Realm, there was Sea of Soul Realm, martial arts in this realm could be said to be amazingly powerful. They each possess a tremendous amount of power, that could even slightly change the landforms, and their Zhen Qi was inexhaustible like water in an ocean. Beyond that, it should be Life and Death Realm, martial artists in this realm could each rule a piece of land, such as the Void Emperor, Evil Emperor, Mysterious Queen and Dragon Emperor. These people were the true domineering characters of this True Spirit Continent, they could move mountains and oceans according to their will. And the most frightening matter according to legends was that all Life and Death Realm martial artists were extremely hard to kill. As they already possess an insane rate of self-healing, they could even rebirth from a single drop of blood; in other words, even if a single piece of flesh or a drop of blood was the last thing of a Life and Death Realm martial artist was the only thing that remained in this world, he or she could still rebirth from this piece of flesh or the drop of blood. It was hard to imagine exactly how terrifying these people were.

Nevertheless, even Life and Death Realm martial artists had to continue cultivating themselves. They all wanted to break into an even higher level, and achieve that legendary, mysterious realm, it was still way too far away from Ye Chen. He couldn't even imagine about that realm, even if he tried to imagine, nothing would come to his mind.

Getting rid of all these thoughts, Ye Chen felt that his spiritual state seemed to have improved a little bit, and the stabilised Zhen Qi contained inside his body had now gradually begun surging again.

“Can ambitious people go further than others?” pondered Ye Chen.

On the arena, Ouyang Ming didn't continue attacking, his scornful look had also now turned to a cautious look. He had used ninety percent of his full strength when he launched that kick, but Luo Hanshan managed to completely block it and didn't even take a single step back, that was indeed amazing.

“Not bad! You managed to block my attack!” said Ouyang Ming as he tried to accumulate as much power as he could.

“Now it’s my turn.” said Luo Hanshan with a frosty tone and a pair of shining eyes.

“Great Monument Kingly Punch!”

Without any more words, Luo Hanshan took a step forward and launched the move. His entire body was instantly wrapped up in a thick layer of purple smoke, while a heavy punch was thrown out towards Ouyang Ming along with an earth-shatteringly powerful strength.

Along with a wave of popping noise, the air was shattered layer by layer. A gigantic hand gripped a purple monument, and swooshed towards Ouyang Ming. Within a moment, the airwaves surrounding that monument paused, and then completely shattered.

“It’s [Great Monument Kingly Punch]! The leader taught Luo Hanshan this as well!” Delight showed up on the Fourth Elder’s face. Normally, each core disciple could only be taught one low-rank Earth Realm art. All institutions had been strictly preventing their own martial arts from spreading out. The other reason was that it was already difficult to train one art for those disciples. Practicing two arts at the same time was very unadvisable, usually, this could even make a talented disciple an average one. It was far better to master one art first, and then learn others later.

Since Luo Hanshan had been allowed to learn his second low-rank Earth Realm art, the Leader should have already known that he had achieved the ninth-level of the Purple Extreme art, and was qualified for learning the second art. However, not every disciple had the chance to learn the second art. The institution would first determine the loyalty of their disciples. To some disloyal disciples, no matter how talented they were, the leader would never teach them a secret martial art. On the other hand, the institution would neither stop disciples from practising martial arts that were found outside of the institution, at most, some elders would remind them that mastering one art was way more important than learning many different arts.

The Head Elder felt slightly relieved. With the Great Monument Kingly Punch, Luo Hanshan could basically fight against any Childe-level opponent.

“Break!” Ouyang Ming threw out another heavy kick, a stream of blazing

power transformed into a gigantic blade and struck on the monument and the hand.

Clang!

The hand briefly paused while the monument showed signs of cracking.

However, Ouyang Ming's kick was blocked once again.

His face instantly went dark while all of his Zhen Qi suddenly burst out from his body, it directly rose into the air, shining in a dazzling manner.

Ouyang Ming leapt into the air and turned his body, he then heavily kicked that gigantic hand and that monument, which were condensed from Zhen Qi.

“Dragon-beheading Kick!”

Followed by a loud cracking noise, the Great Monument Kingly Punch was broken, while all of Ouyang Ming's power was squeezed out of his body.

“[Blade and kick unification]!”

Seeing this, Ye Chen frowned. He had heard that Ouyang Ming's blade skill was as good as his kick skill long ago. But to a martial artist, being good at every skill might not be a good thing. Instead, one must focus on a particular skill for a period of time, for example, Ye Chen practised both fist skills and sword skills, his fist skill was even slightly better. But currently, he mainly focused on his sword skill, the fist skill had become a secondary. Ye Chen's primary and secondary skills were clearly distinguished.

However, he didn't think that Ouyang Ming could create a unique method that allowed him to combine his blade skill and kick skill. In this way, his blade skill and kick skill could merge into one, support each other, and he could become more powerful than before. Ye Chen was just wondering if Ouyang Ming had created this unification method himself, or if this was only due to the natural quality of the Dragon-beheading Kick, as a martial skill.

Even after breaking the Great Monument Kingly Punch, Ouyang Ming didn't stop. His silhouette flashed swiftly across the air, and then launched tens of fierce kicks in a row.

Lou Hanshan neither stepped back nor dodged them, he simply launched the

Great Monument Kingly Punch once again, it thunderously clashed against the fierce power streams released by Ouyang Ming and even shattered the sky.

“Lou Hanshan, just give up!”

Ouyang Ming stomped his foot hard against the ground sending himself into the air and then launched another full-strength kick.

A resonant and shrill dragon roar resounded throughout the sky.

This kick directly transformed into a terrifyingly gigantic blade that had been coiled around a broken, faint dragon silhouette, which let out an ear-piercing howl. Younger martial arts that were not yet powerful enough were struck severely by this sound, they suddenly felt dizzy and sick, as if all of their powers were drained out within a moment.

Ouyang Ming was very confident about his Dragon-beheading Kick. In fact, the blade skill and kick skill he had been practising were originally unified, he just forcibly split them up for faster improvement. It was not as Ye Chen had expected, he had not created this unification method himself. With his current power, he was nowhere near the level of creating martial arts or skills himself. If he could, he would have become a legendary martial artist long ago, and except Young Master Emerald, who had already stepped into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, not a single one in Windy Nation would be able to evenly fight against him most of the martial artists in this nation wouldn't be able to take even a single move launched by him.

“The Purple Qi! Great Monument Suppression ! ”

The huge, bridge like stream of Purple Qi behind Luo Hanshan suddenly grew even thicker and denser, it was about to wrap around his entire body. Behind that Purple Qi stream, an over ten meters tall monument seemed to suppress the entire space; from the purple monument, countless dead warriors' corpses crawled out while roaring hoarsely, it was as if they were trying to struggle their way back to the living world, and bathe under the sunshine once again. This scene of horror almost shocked all the people present.

“What the hell is...Which stage is this skill at? So, so terrifying!”

“Even if ten of us joined hands, we wouldn't be able to fight against them! A



single move launched by either of them would probably crush us into nothing!”

“It’s...just amazing, I couldn’t even imagine this! I thought I was powerful enough to compete against them, but now, I realised that I was talking idiotic nonsense.”

All those young talents from top-ranked institutions were now dumbfounded, they couldn’t even imagine that someone in the Condensing Reality Realm could release such terrifying power. Even some early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists couldn’t be that powerful! In other words, these two young martial artists on the arena could even fight against early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists, and they could even kill them, despite the level difference.

Not only those young talents, even those core disciples from the few top-ranked institutions had their eyes popped out, they weren’t even blinking, as they didn’t want to miss any slight move on the arena.

Clang!

The gigantic blade that was coiled around the dragon silhouette heavily hacked against the purple monument, and let out a sky-shaking boom.

Nearly half of the purple monument was hacked off, cracks quickly extended on its surface.

Fortunately, the purple monument eventually managed to block this full-strength kick launched by Ouyang Ming, a peak-level advance Condensing Reality Realm martial artist, otherwise, Luo Hanshan would have certainly lost.

Luo Hanshan’s straight back was slightly bent, however, his facial expression remained unchanged. His fierce gaze fixed on Ouyang Ming through the silhouette of the purple monument.

## ***Chapter 131 - Fast Blade and Stone Man***

Seeing Luo Hanshan's bland face, Ouyang Ming was instantly enraged.

"Dragon-Slaughtering Style!" Growled Ouyang Ming.

Along with a resonating voice, he launched a blade-sharp sideways kick. The fierce airwaves tore the air apart and hacked at the purple monument producing long and shrill swishing noise. Right in the next moment, the dragon silhouette appeared once again, but it had already broken into a few parts.

A cracking noise came from the purple monument along with which the monument was quickly covered in cracks, it then suddenly exploded.

At that very moment a silhouette darted out from the shattered monument's silhouette. A gigantic hand grabbed the monument and then blocked Ouyang Ming's kick that had come swooshing down in the air.

"Great Sky-shattering Monument!"

"Try to shatter my Dragon-beheading kick!" Ouyang Ming sent had thrown two more kicks towards the stone monument continuously. Due to the counterforce, his body was now floating in the air. Seeing that Luo Hanshan had rushed over, he showed a vicious grin and then launched the Dragon-Slaughtering Style. It was the most violent movement of the Dragon-beheading kick. The frightening amount of power stream released by him swept across the air along with a shrill swooshing sound, seemingly capable of directly crushing Luo Hanshan's soul.

Boom!

Luo Hanshan was struck down to the ground, and took over ten steps backwards. However, Ouyang Ming also didn't manage to take advantage, he was sent flying back into the air and nearly fell over, until he finally landed on the ground and staggered.

"Just give it up!"

"Great Monument Suppression!"

Without any hesitation, the two of them started another round of fighting. Storm-like attacks were madly thrown out one after another. Ouyang Ming's

Dragon-Beheading Kicks were incomparably fierce, they were almost as powerful as any of the medium-grade Earth Realm martial arts, every kick he threw out could make people feel a deadly sense of danger. In others' eyes, he could even win without a fight.

As for Luo Hanshan's Great Monument Kingly Punch, although it was slightly weaker than the Dragon-Beheading Kick, his Purple Extreme Art was extremely magical. At the ninth stage of the Purple Extreme Art, the martial artist was able to form a connection with the Purple Qi allowing them to increase the effectiveness of his or her art. Therefore, Luo Hanshan could now fight evenly against Ouyang Ming without being disadvantaged.

Three-hundred moves!

Five-hundred moves!

After they had made their six-hundredth move, Zhuang Qingxian realised that he couldn't let the two of them continue fighting like this. Judging from the current situation, they would probably have to make over two-thousand moves if they really wanted to determine the winner. However, the both of them were in relatively at the lower stages of cultivation, so, forcibly using over two-thousand moves could easily cause them to die from exhaustion, even Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could hardly release more than two-thousand moves during a single bout.

After letting out a massive stream of power and separating the two of them, Zhuang Qingxian stood up and said, "You two, just stop here! This is just a performing competition, determining the winner is not necessary."

Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder nodded. He had already realised that Luo Hanshan could never win against Ouyang Ming on that arena, but of course, neither could Ouyang Ming defeat Luo Hanshan. It would all be meaningless if they continued to fight like this.

The Head Elder of the Purple Sun Martial School snorted coldly, with a darkened expression.

Lou Hanshan didn't launch another attack, and only slowly let out a long breath, then said blandly, "It seems that you can't possibly defeat me today."

“You couldn't defeat me either.” Ouyang Ming responded while suppressing his boiling blood.

“We will end this fight in the future, you’re welcome to challenge me for the title of Childe anytime you want.” After he finished saying this, Luo Hanshan walked back to his seat.

Zhuang Qingxian retracted his stream of power and then continued, “Anymore challengers?”

“Leader, allow me.” Liu Wuxiang, who had remained silent all this time, walked out and said.

Zhuang Qingxian seemed to be slightly surprised, he asked, “Wuxiang, who would you like to challenge?”

Liu Wuxiang’s pair of cold eyes fixed on Lin Qi’s body, he then said, “I have heard that your blade is very fast, even faster than the Young Master North Snow’s blade, I was just wondering if it’s true.”

Lin Qi stood up and responded, “You will lose.”

“It’s still too early to say that, don’t you think?”

“My blade is based on its speed, I will either be defeat by faster speed, or I will be the one to defeat others with my speed, there is no another possibility.” Lin Qi’s bland, ice-cold and expressionless face looked even colder than Liu Wuxiang's.

“I think I've heard about this before, now I would like to take a shot at you all the more.” Liu Xuxiang showed a great passion for battle, the fierce aura created by him was no worse than the aura created by Ouyang Ming and Luo Hanshan, it was even slightly stronger.

He walked towards Liu Wuxiang step by step, then stopped thirty steps away from him, and then took out a blade from his Storage Ring.

Ye Chen’s gaze changed slightly. He noticed that Lin Qi hadn't chosen to fight using the low-grade treasure sabre. Instead, he was using the Air splitter sword, it seemed that Lin Qi would like this fight to be fair, and was planning to defeat Liu Wuxiang with nothing else but his true power.

“Just show me what you can do!”

Cyan streams of airwaves rose from Liu Wuxiang's body which seemed to be especially sharp and dense, just like a chainsaw. The air that made direct contact with these cyan air streams instantly twisted even letting out loud sizzling noise.

Clang!

At the exact same moment that Lin Qi pulled out his sword he had already disappeared. A straight and bright stream of white light suddenly darted out and fiercely clashed against those coiling cyan airwaves which were protecting Liu Wuxiang.

Puff!

That layer of dense cyan airwave was easily cut apart, while Liu Wuxiang didn't even have enough time to react.

“So fast!”

Liu Wuxiang's pupils instantly shrunk, at the same time, he was also deeply shocked as if he had been struck by a tsunami. Even though he had already known just how powerful Lin Qi was, and had heard that Lin Qi had probably already reached Young Master North Snow's level, he would never have thought that Lin Qi would be this fast. He was so shocked that even his reaction speed was slightly slowed.

Not daring to waste another moment, Liu Wuxiang immediately strengthened the cyan layer of flowing airwaves surrounding his body, which then seemingly turned into a powerful full body armour that he could automatically wear on his body. That armour looked incomparably thick and solid, it had huge, sharp horns thrust out from its every single joint; at first glance, Liu Wuxiang looked like a legendary ancient devil. It was nearly invincible.

However, followed by another series of ear-piercing metal clashing noises, Lin Qi's fast blade struck down once again.

No one could grasp his silhouette, people could only see a dazzling white stream of blade light sweeping across the air which then hacked on Liu Wuxiang's cyan armour that was condensed from Zhen Qi, over and over again.

“Thirty-first move!”

Boom!

A dense, almost solid blade light exaggeratedly extended tens of meters long, and suddenly punctured Liu Wuxiang’s waist and then came out from his back.

Silently taking out the blade and then putting it back into its sheath, Lin Qi walked back to his seat.

“What happened? The fight hasn't ended yet, is it?”

“Has Lin Qi realised that he can't defeat Liu Wuxiang and decided to not go on?”

While people were wondering why Lin Qi was acting in a strange manner, Liu Wuxiang’s cyan armour suddenly burst out with a wave of popping noises, and then exploded into a cloud of smoke. Soon, it dissipated into the air, only leaving behind a pale silhouette standing in the arena.

The entire area instantly fell into a deathly silence. But right in the next moment, waves of shouting and exclamation rose into the air.

“Liu Wuxiang lost!”

“With only thirty-one moves, Lin Qi has defeated him!”

“Liu Wuxiang is a recognised Child-level Martial Artist, but he was just defeated by Lin Qi, doesn’t that mean that Lin Qi is already at the same stage as Young Master North Snow and Young Master Duanmu? Or is he perhaps even more powerful than those two Young Masters?”

“He is indeed the ‘Fast Blade’, extremely fast, without any useless extra moves.”

Yu Yue curved his lips upwards. These people probably didn’t know that back in the North Snow Martial School, Lin Qi had already competed against the Senior Brother, Young Master North Snow; they had fought evenly and the winner had not been determined. But in Yu Yue’s eyes, Lin Qi had won, because he was still improving and never stopped.

Lou Hanshan spoke a few words, “The ‘North Snow Fast Blade’, is exactly as his name states.”

“Look through all of the martial arts in this world, all solidness can be broken, only speed is without a fault. High-speed does not merely mean being fast, it also means to have a great attack force. When the speed reaches a certain stage, even a leaf or a piece of paper could slice open an iron armour, and kill a person without even being noticed.”

Ye Chen who had seen everything more clearly than anyone had noticed that Lin Qi's attacks were not too powerful. But, once they were enhanced by his speed, his sword was able to cut Liu Wuxiang's armour open easily. Additionally, every time he launched an attack, he had aimed at the weak spots of that armour and he had also been prepared for the final attack.

Hearing his words, Luo Hanshan and Xu Jing both turned their heads around and looked at him, as if they were pondering something. This was the very first time they had heard such a simple and straightforward theory.

Fourth Elder and the Head Elder glanced at each other in confusion, they couldn't understand how Ye Chen could at such a young age, know all these and come to a conclusion with such a straightforward and reasonable theory.

The 'Rain Man', Nangong Yun from the Rudra Martial School shook his head and said, “Unbelievably fast. This man should be the most powerful one among us all, except for the three Young Masters, no, perhaps only Young Master Emerald can surpass him.”

“Senior Brother, is he really that good?” Yuan Xuemei asked in shock.

“He has already comprehended the profound concepts behind speed. To him, every one of his moves can be extremely fast. If anyone intends to defeat him, that person has to be even faster than him, or in a much higher stage. Of course, there might also be some other ways, but I can't see that far yet.”

After this fight, everyone had gotten a deeper impression of Lin Qi. Although he didn't have a title of Childe, people had already started seeing him as one of the next generation of Childe.

After watched the fight between Lin Qi, the 'North Snow Fast Blade' and Liu Wuxiang, the ordinary fights suddenly became a bit boring. Everybody began expecting another marvellous competition.

Then the last fight ended.

Shi Potian stood up. It was time.

People curiously looked at him, wondering who he was going to challenge.

“Ye Chen, you’re quite powerful, and you’re one of the few young talents of the Windy Nation. I am just wondering if you are willing to accept my challenge. But of course, it will be totally fine if you don't, it would just be a great shame for me.” Once he stepped onto the arena, Shi Potian flattered Ye Chen. With these ‘nice’ words, it was more likely that Ye Chen would accept the challenge and then he could destroy Ye Chen’s half-step sword intent, as he had planned.

Just as he thought, no one found anything unreasonable about his challenge. They could still see the scene where Ye Chen defeated Cheng Jun, and had come to learn how talented he really was; maybe he was still too young to confront more experienced martial artists like Shi Potian, but he was definitely qualified for this fight. After all, this is just a performing competition, not some sort of a deadly duel.

“Sure.” Ye Chen knew nothing about Shi Potian’s plan, so he only nodded and responded.

A slight curve appeared at the corner of his mouth. Shi Potian silently let out a wave of vicious laughter in his head. Finally, this is the moment he had been waiting for. He was now just wondering what Ye Chen’s face would look like, after this fight ends.

The two of them stood face to face.

In the very next moment!

A dazzling, multicoloured, crystal-like light spurted out from Shi Potian’s body. Within this light, there were pure golden light streams perfectly merged with the crystal light. This made Shi Potian’s body look like a golden, jade and crystal statue. Even his skin, hair and eyes became multicoloured and were stunningly shining, as if his body was not made of flesh and blood anymore.

“Magical Glass Spell, ninth stage, Golden Glass Body!”

“The [Magical Glass Spell] is the most powerful one among the Emerald



Martial Palace's defensive arts, once the artist achieved the ninth stage of it, he or she would become nearly invulnerable. Any kind of weapons, even flame and water can't harm their body. He is now many times more powerful than even similar levelled demonic beasts, he was almost invincible."

"With this Golden Glass Body, Ye Chen doesn't have no chance of winning against him. Hm, I'm just wondering how many moves he will be able to last."

Ye Chen gave a measured glance at Shi Potian's body, he nodded and said, "I have been practising a defence art recently, I would like to find out which one of our arts is more powerful."

As he spoke, Ye Chen abruptly shook his body, releasing a dazzling light. However, that was not a crystal like lustre, instead, it was more like the lustre of jade. It seemed as if Ye Chen's body was instantly covered in a layer of jade, the lines of his muscles and the shapes of his face had become even more determined. It was like an exquisitely crafted statue, carved from a top-grade jade piece.

[Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell], the fifth level!

[Golden Steel Jade Body].

## ***Chapter 132 - Heart-Refining***

Shi Potian raised his eyebrows, sneered in his head and thought, 'Trying to compete with my Golden Crystal Body with some random defensive art? That's recklessly stupid kid.'

“In that case, let's find out what you can do.”

Leaning his body forwards, Shi Potian's speed immediately raised to its limits, leaving shreds of pure gold afterimages behind him. In terms of speed he was only slightly slower than Lin Qi, by less than just ten percent.

Less than three meters away from Ye Chen, Shi Potian crooked his right arm and then launched a great punch.

This punch was simple and straightforward, it contained a condensed yet tremendously powerful stream of power, and it caused an especially ear-piercing noise that caused a great deal of pain in their ears.

Ye Chen showed no signs of stepping back. Instead he also took a step forward and threw out his own punch.

Thud!

The two of them both stepped back quickly and temporarily lost the control of their bodies.

“Damn! Not even the slightest bit of power contained in their punches has gushed out, all of it's been throw at each other!”

“In terms of strength, the two of them are at the same stage. But, I'm not sure if Shi Potian has used his full-strength.”

“To be honest, I truly can't tell which of them is stronger. Their powers were both burst out at the exact same moment that their bodies made physical contact, so it's hard to tell unless you are in the fight yourself.”

Instantly, people started whispering among themselves.

Shi Potian stopped stepping back, and showed a slightly shocked expression on his face. He was called 'Stone Man' by others, not only because of his great defensive power, but also because of his amazing strength. Without using any of

his Zhen Qi, he had once killed a rank 3 demonic beast bare-handed. He even dared to challenge a rank 4 beasts with just his punches alone. However, this Ye Chen who was a couple of years younger than him, possessed great talent when it came to sword skills and had already comprehended the half-step sword intent; moreover, now it appeared that he also had an amazing defensive power. How was this even possible?

From Shi Potian's aspect, the more outstanding Ye Chen was, the more he wanted to destroy Ye Chen's confidence and make Ye Chen live in shame for the rest of his life.

"Let's find out how many of my punches you can take!"

Speeding up again, Shi Potian darted up to Ye Chen and then he launched a new torrent of punches. That golden shining fist of his left countless shreds of afterimages in the air, and for every single punch he released, he would use all of his strength.

Ye Chen certainly didn't show any fear at all and launched his own attacks.

After a hundred moves, Shi Potian let out a malicious grin and then yelled out.

"Take this!!"

'He's not going to defend?!' Ye Chen frowned and thought.

Shi Potian seemed to have completely given up on his defense, and crazily increased his attacking speed. If he fought directly against him, he would inevitably suffer a few attacks; but if he does not launch a counter attack, he would fall at a disadvantage, after all, even the firmest defense would eventually show its weakness.

After pondering briefly, Ye Chen also decided to give up on his defense, and launched another series of heavy punches with his pair of jade-like heavy fists.

Bang!

Bang!

Both of them were struck by a punch that even sent up puffs of sparks up into the air.

Shi Potian began laughing in a vicious manner. That punch seemed to have had

absolutely no effect on him. He dashed out once more and launched his attacks at Ye Chen.

As the series of thunderous punches continued, even Ye Chen and Shi Potian had no idea about how many punches managed to strike their bodies, they only felt waves of fierce shocks from every corner of their upper bodies; even their heads had been struck by those punches a few times. Compared to them, the younger generation talents who had been watching the display were dumbfounded. The only thing they knew was that the two men in the arena had been fighting against each other in an insane manner, both of them were only attacking as if they were both actually fierce wild beasts at this moment, neither of them bothered to defend against those attacks. It seemed like, the one who could deliver one more punch than the other, would be the one to win the fight.

“What a pair of lunatics! If anyone was to encounter one of them in the arena...how horrifying would that be?! Both of them have amazing defensive power...”

“Neither of them could break the other’s defense, not to mention us! We can only tickle them!”

“I know about Shi Potian’s defensive art, it’s called Magical Crystal Spell, but what is that Ye Chen’s defensive art? How can it be so powerful, it's not at all weaker than Shi Potian's!”

After a long confrontation, Shi Potian slightly lost his patience. Ye Chen seems to be more powerful than he had previously imagined, and he probably wouldn’t have too much advantage only with this Golden Crystal Body. So, he would have to try and use something else if he wanted to defeat him.

“[Heavenly Strike]!”

Shi Potian leapt up into the air while his pair of golden fists suddenly began shining in an even more dazzling manner than before, he then abruptly struck down towards Ye Chen.

“Finally, he used a martial skill!”

Against Shi Potian’s attack, Ye Chen launched the second movement of the [Tyrant's Fist], Lone Domination. All the surrounding Yuan Qi was instantly

drained by his fist and merged with his power.

“Go!”

What shocked Ye Chen was that, for the very first time, his Tyrant’s Fist was being suppressed by another fist skill. The stream of power released from his punch, that had always been so destructive, was now shattering bit by bit, as if someone had placed a string of bombs inside it.

Woosh!

Ye Chen immediately took tens of steps backwards.

Shi Potian closely followed him and instantly threw out another heavy punch.

The Tyrant's Fist was being suppressed, so Ye Chen could only pull out the Hidden Cloud Sword. He swung his sword with all of his strength, and then used the half-step sword intent.

Followed by a loud series of clashing sounds, the great stream of power contained in Shi Potian’s punch and the fierce Sword Qi violently crashed into each other. Neither the Sword Qi nor the punch's power could suppress the other.

“The [Heavenly Strike] is also a low-ranked Earth Realm fist skill, yet, it is capable of suppressing most other martial skills. The shocking amount of explosive power contained in the Heavenly Strike can be triggered with only a single slight touch, it is indeed amazing.” Lou Hanshan was well informed of martial arts for a long time. As a very experienced martial artist, he recognised Shi Potian’s fist skill with a single glance. Ye Chen’s sword Qi could resist that punch only because of the Sword intent. The sword intent naturally contained fierce power, if the sword Qi merged with it was launched by the sword artist, it would certainly become more solid and destructive.

“Try resisting this!!”

Now, Shi Potian had finally used his most powerful martial art. He clenched his fists, and swiftly launched a new round of attacks with both his fists. His pair of bright shining fists swooshed forward like a pair of roaring dragons, as if they were darting out of the ocean filled with rage; his punches seemed to be capable of shaking the entire world.

Boom! Boom!

An eye-piercing golden light shrouded half of the plaza, the great power contained in the punches was perfectly hidden, only thunderous booms so great that they could even drive people crazy, rose directly into the air. Meanwhile, sharp encompassing airwaves pressed down towards Ye Chen.

This was the first time that Ye Chen had an encounter with an opponent that was so hard to deal with. But after a brief thought, he realised that this was totally reasonable. Shi Potian was one of the four core disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace who was at the same stage as Liu Wuxiang; except for Young Master Emerald, who had already stepped into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, it seemed that among all the younger generation martial artists, the 'North Snow Fast Blade', Lin Qi was the only one who could definitely beat him. As for Ye Chen himself, he had just broken into the Late Condensing Reality Realm. Although his Zhen Qi was stable and solid, it wasn't as pure as the Zhen Qi of the peak Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors, and could only barely compete against ordinary martial artists in Late Condensing Reality Realm. Facing Shi Potian, his only advantage was the half-step sword intent.

Sword intent!

"I have no choice but to launch that move now."

Within a moment, Ye Chen had stopped hesitating and made up his mind.

His left foot took a step forward, Ye Chen raised the sword in his right hand high into the air and merged his entire mind with the Hidden Cloud Sword; right after that, he swung the sword down.

Puff!

Not a single person could describe how fast this move was, because before they could clearly see exactly what move Ye Chan had made, a streak of thick and solid sword Qi had already been sent out. This sword Qi streak was as fast as lightning, it condensed into a white beam of light in the air and then swiftly darted into the golden light surrounding Shi Potian.

Quietly, the Golden light was split in two and the punching power was entirely wiped out, just like a thin layer of snow evaporating under the scorching

sunlight.

Crack!

A new wound appeared on Shi Potian's ribs area, blood instantly came gushing out.

He didn't even know how it had happened.

"What, what sword skill is this? How could it be so fast?!" After Ye Chen launched that move, the arena fell silent once again, then finally, somebody couldn't help themselves and yelled out.

Elders from all the powerful institutions showed confusion on their faces, none of them could tell what exactly had happened. Only Yuan Xuemei seemed to be pondering something with her brows furrowed, and then her look abruptly changed in an exaggerated manner as if she suddenly saw something unbelievable. She slightly opened her cherry-like lips, and paused for quite a long while.

"It's the '[Heart Refining]'" said Zhuang Qingxian word by word with a darkened face.

"Leader, what is 'Heart Refining'?" Liu Wuxiang hurriedly asked.

"In the ancient legends, a sword artist had once created a special sword art for the sake of achieving revenge. This special sword art had only had one move called 'Heart Refining'. In order to launch this move, one has to be extremely focused, they should have unified his spirit, body and soul, but that was only the first step; the second step was even more strict, it requires the sword artist to see the sword as a guide, and then release all of his power through the sword within one moment, to harm, or even to kill an enemy, who was more powerful than the sword artist himself. However, after launching this move, the sword artist would feel weakness and exhaustion for a while. Normally, none of those ordinary sword artists could launch this move, except those who has the innocent heart of a child or have already comprehended the true sword intent. This Ye Chen has already touched the edge of sword intent, no wonder he had managed to launch this move."

When he was explaining to Liu Wuxiang, Zhuang Qingxian was also wondering

where Ye Chen had gotten the manual of 'Heart Refining'. After all, to learn the legendary sword skill wasn't as easy as it sounded like, with just a little bit of carelessness, he could push himself too far and be possessed by his inner devils or even hurt himself. It was very dangerous.

Yuan Xuemei understood this clearer than anyone else, because in that manual she had given to Ye Chen, there was a chapter which had introduced the 'Heart Refining'. However, that was only a brief introduction, not a specific guiding manual at all. She was also wondering how Ye Chen had actually managed to learn that powerful sword skill. He couldn't just have practiced according to the brief introduction using his own guesses, could he? But how could he manage to make that move and deliver it with such great effect?

"How could this even happen?" Shi Potian stared at Ye Chen.

His 'Heavenly Strike' was way more powerful than he had just shown, if Ye Chen didn't have any other skills, he could certainly defeat Ye Chen within ten moves. Just ten moves! But Ye Chen made that surprising and destructive move, that single move straight away disabled him from continuing the fight. Shi Potian had never even seen it coming.

Ye Chen's face looked slightly pale, but not as bad as Zhuang Qingxian's was.

Indeed, he had learned this 'Heart Refining' from that manual Yuan Xuemei had given him. The theories stated in that manual had shared features with sword intent, the main difference had been that, sword intent could stay activated for a relatively longer period of time, while the 'Heart Refining' could not. The greatest effect of the 'Heart Refining' was to allow the sword artist's power largely increase in a moment and kill the enemy with that surprise move.

Puff!

Shi Potian let out a mouthful of blood and couldn't keep standing straight anymore. His Golden Crystal Body was broken, it was very harmful to him. Without resting for at least three months, he probably wouldn't recover to his peak state. At this moment, he was even weaker than an early Condensing Reality warrior.

An emerald Martial Palace's inner elder voluntarily walked up and took Shi Potian out of the arena.



On the Purple Sun Martial School's side.

"This kid is horrible. Does he have any other secret abilities that we don't know about? Is Zhu Lieyang powerful enough to deal with him? Will he survive again this time? If so, it will be a lot more difficult to kill him in the future." The Elder who sat beside Zhang Qing sent his voice to the Head Elder of the Purple Sun Martial School using Zhen Qi.

The Head Elder snorted scornfully and said, "Don't misjudge Zhu Lieyang, he had already killed quite a lot of geniuses, a few of them were even more powerful than this Ye Chen. Besides, we only need to warn him about this 'Heart Refining' move. After he uses that skill, I assume that he won't have too much power left anyway."

"Exactly! Why didn't I think of this? This skill is indeed effective, but it'll certainly have some side effect."

Sitting straight on his seat, Ye Chen's face looked even paler than it had before. Nevertheless, deep down he was sneering all this time. His soul power was extremely strong, therefore, to launch the 'Heart Refining' was actually not such a big deal for him. Although he now seemed to be exhausted, he was just pretending, in order to prevent some hidden troubles in the future for being too outstanding. If he really needed to, he could even launch the 'Heart Refining' three or four times continuously.

## ***Chapter 133: Four-Winged Black Devil Bug***

With Ye Chen's competition against Shi Potian done, almost all the outstanding disciples of the top five martial institutions' had engaged in the competition, at this moment, the rest of them showed no more intention to fight.

"Junior brother Ye, are you okay?" Seeing that Ye Chen's face was turning more and more pale, Luo Hanshan thought that he was not that well after forcibly launching the 'Heart Refining' move.

Ye Chen shook his head and responded, "No big deal, Brother Luo, you don't need to worry about me."

"In the future, you should not use this skill too often. It's way too dangerous, either you could kill the enemy with it, or the enemy would kill you after you are exhausted."

"I understand, thank you, Brother Luo."

Lou Hanshan was a nice person, he was patient, humble, generous and always encouraging towards other disciples, he never liked to put on airs just because he was the second top-ranked disciple or the leader's son. He would always make people feel warm.

Luo Hanshan grinned and continued, "You're a treasure of our Sky Cloud Martial School, how can I not worry about you?"

Hearing his words, the Head Elder and the Fourth Elder grinned as well.

The sun was almost setting, and the competition neared its end.

Zhuang Qingxian stood up and said, "My honoured guests, although the competition is over, our celebratory dinner is just going to begin. Hopefully, you will all attend the celebratory dinner tonight."

"Sure, we rarely come to this beautiful Emerald Valley, and we're not at all in a rush to go back home."

"Well, since Leader Zhuang has kindly set a dinner for us, let's just have some fun together!"

“Of course, Leader Zhuang, we will certainly attend the dinner.”

The dinner was very rich, and everyone was enjoying those delicious dishes with pleasure.

In a secret meeting room of the Emerald Martial Palace.

The meeting room was brightly lit, Elders of the top five martial institutions had been sitting straight in that room.

Sitting in the main seat, Zhuang Qingxian took a glance at all the elders present, and began talking.

“I called this meeting because I have something important to announce.”

The Head Elder of the Rudra Martial School was a beautiful lady, who looked around thirty-five years old. She asked, “I’m just wondering what kind of important thing it is, is it something concerning the top five martial institutions?”

“About the top five martial institutions?”

Once the pretty lady let the question out, all the others slightly frowned, they seemed to be pondering something.

Zhuang Qingxian nodded and said, “It’s indeed regarding the top five martial institutions, however, at this moment it’s not too serious. Half a month ago, the intelligence department of our Emerald Martial Palace by chance found a branch stronghold of Ghost Corpse Mountain. Although they didn’t manage to get in, judging from the outside defenses, without a doubt it’s one of the Ghost Corpse Mountain’s important strongholds, which was set up especially for training a new generation of ghost guards.”

A branch stronghold of Ghost Corpse Mountain!

Ghost guards!

Everyone gasped when they heard this.

The devastation of the [Evil Earth Martial School] was still vivid in their minds.

The Ghost Artist was one of the one-hundred and eight great ghost warriors of the Nine Evil Cult, he was immeasurably powerful. Although he hadn’t recovered

from his serious injuries yet, and wouldn't reach his peak level, the leaders of the few top-ranked institutions could still never fight against him evenly, not even if they join hands. The Ghost Artist used to live in the Ghost Corpse Mountain. Although the Ghost Corpse Mountain was destroyed during the great battle, the name of the Ghost Artist remained and became a banner of his force.

Except for the five ghost slaves, who had been loyal and devoted to him since the beginning, the Ghost Artist also had large groups of ghost guards under his command. Those ghost guards were divided into four grades, the low-grade ghost guards were the weakest among them, comparable to Late Condensing Reality Realm martial artists; medium-grade ghost guards comparable to Early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists; high-grade ghost guards comparable to Mid Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists; above the high grade, there were top-grade ghost guards, who were as powerful as Late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists. Every grade of ghost guards had a group leader, who was the most powerful one among the ghost guards of that grade.

If the things were this simple, these leaders wouldn't have to worry too much like this. After all, recovering his peak-level was not going to be that easy for the Ghost Artist, and even training ghost guards could not be done within a short period of time.

However, the reason why Ghost Artist could rank above the average among the one-hundred and eight ghost warriors was not because of his personal power, instead, it was due to his ghost guards training skills. He gained a secret book from an unknown source, which had recorded a mysterious method that could largely stimulate the potential of the human bodies. The secret method recorded in that book could allow the powers of ordinary people to improve at the rapid pace of those legendary geniuses, and make them achieve a certain stage within only a couple of years. But of course, what came along with this magical improvement would be huge side effects. Because of the overdraft, all ghost guards who had cultivated themselves according to that book could never survive over forty. A very few of them, who manage to have their fortieth birthday, would suffer a bad physical failure. It was like gathering and using their whole life energy within a short time, in order to achieve an amazing level of power.

Due to the above reason, every single one of those ghost guards in the Ghost Corpse Mountain was brutal and evil, they all tried to enjoy their lives as much as they could before forty, nothing else mattered to them.

“Leader Zhuang, do you think we should, um, destroy this branch stronghold?”

“Exactly, we can never leave a chance for the Ghost Corpse Mountain to raise again. By all means, we have to weaken them as much as we can before the Ghost Artist fully recovers. Otherwise, in a few years, all five top-ranked institutions, even the entire Windy Nation will have to face a real disaster.”

As the most powerful one among the five top-ranked institutions, aside from keeping the other four institutions under control, the Emerald Martial Palace was also responsible for eliminating all possible crisis for the Windy Country, if not, the Emerald Martial Palace itself would be the first one to suffer.

Sky Cloud Martial School’s Head Elder nodded and responded, “Indeed, I agree with Leader Zhuang’s suggestion. Do we have a plan yet? And here is another thing, we don’t yet know exactly how strong that branch stronghold is, I’m afraid that some unexpected situation might take place if we launch the attack rashly.”

Purple Sun Martial School’s Head Elder snorted scornfully and said, “When did the Sky Cloud Martial School become so cowardly? It’s nothing but a branch stronghold of the Ghost Corpse Mountain, how powerful can it be?”

The Fourth Elder, who was tall and sturdy, responded, “Why don’t you, the Purple Sun Martial School go ahead and spearhead the attack?”

“We’re facing a common enemy, the five top institutions should stick together. If we spearhead the attack, that would be a violation of the rule, don’t even mention that.” The Purple Sun Martial School’s Head Elder glared at the Fourth Elder of the Sky Cloud Martial School, and said while his face slightly twitched.

Seeing the two of them arguing, the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder shook her head and said, “Let’s just listen to Leader Zhuang.”

Zhuang Qingxian briefly pondered and said, “I think, each of our five top-ranked institutions should send out a group of warriors and jointly attack the branch stronghold. Among each group, the number of Late Claspings Yuan Realm warriors should be no less than three, Mid Claspings Yuan Realm warriors no less

than seven, and over a hundred Early Clasp Yuan Realm warriors. Of course, we can also take some of the disciples and let them attain some battle experiences.”

“Good, let's just do this! When should we launch the attack?” The North Snow Martial Academy's people had always been vigorous and fast, just like their sword skills.

“Eighth August!”

Zhuang Qingxian then continued, “Tomorrow morning, you all have to be extra careful and cautious when you head back, I suspect that we have Ghost Corpse Mountain's people mingled in, who might launch a sneak attack at you.”

If they were not facing the Ghost Corpse Mountain, a formidable common enemy, Zhuang Qingxian would never remind them in such a kind manner. However, all the people present were top-ranked elders of the five top-ranked martial institutions, and that would be a great loss for the entire martial art world if any one of them dies; besides, it would also be disastrous if those talented disciples, who could possibly become the pillars of their institutions be murdered.”

In consideration of the long-term and overall situation, Zhuang Qingxian had to remind them, otherwise, if any of these institutions were truly attacked on their way back, some of them would certainly have doubts about the reliability of the Emerald Martial Palace, and it would be much more difficult to form a union of the few top-ranked institutions. As for the Emerald Martial Palace itself, as the tyrant of the Windy Nation, losing one or two inner elders or talented disciples wouldn't be that much of an issue, therefore, Zhuang Qingxian was not too worried about that.

Late at night.

The starlight dimmed down, the moon was hiding behind the thick clouds.

The world turned deep and dark.

A flying bat that had four wings and shaped like a chopstick, rose into the air from the yard of a luxury mansion, and then disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Inside the Green Willow Mansion, where the Sky Cloud Martial School's people

were staying, Ye Chen began reading the Sword Law once again from the beginning under a crystal light.

He had learned quite a lot from the competition between Shi Potian and himself. Through that, he gained a deeper understanding of sword skills. Fights between other younger generation talents had also taught him a lot. He realised that he was still far away from his limits, therefore, he was now trying to get more out of the Sword Law book.

Along with every page he turned, Ye Chen's eyes shone brighter and brighter.

In other accommodations, all younger generation martial artists who had attended the competition this afternoon were not sleeping. Just like Ye Chen, they had gained a lot in regard to their primary martial arts, as long as they could completely digest these comprehensions, they would certainly achieve some great improvements and would be able to surpass their opponents who were at the same level as themselves.

Deep in the night, the Emerald Valley was peaceful and quiet.

.....

At dawn, Ye Chen and the others from the Sky Cloud Martial School came to the entrance of the valley, prepared to leave.

Followed by a shrill whistle that contained a fierce stream of Zhen Qi, the Wind Vulture darted over from a mountaintop not so far away, and landed in front of the five of them.

Hopping on the vulture's back, the Head Elder said in a low voice, "Conserve your strength and store up your energy during our way back, be prepared to fight any moment."

"Head Elder, what is going on?" asked Luo Hanshan in surprise.

The Fourth Elder shook his head and responded, "Don't ask, maybe we're just worrying too much."

Hearing this, Ye Chen's and the other two' expression slightly changed. 'Is something big happening? Last night, during the dinner, the two elders were called out for a meeting by the Emerald Martial Palace's leader, this must be the

reason.’ thought Ye Chen.

The Wind Vulture swiftly rose up into the layer of clouds and raised its speed to supersonic, and then darted out like a lightning bolt.

In the afternoon.

The Wind Vulture had already travelled over twenty-thousand miles away from the Emerald Valley.

An odd-shaped flying bug that quickly flew past the Wind Vulture, instantly caught Ye Chen’s attention. Soon, he found a couple more of such bugs. Those bugs were tiny, and the Wind Vulture had been flying at lightning speed, therefore, neither did the Head Elder nor the Fourth Elder notice these bugs.

After he found the ninth bug, Ye Chen couldn’t help but ask out, “Head Elder, what are those bugs?”

The Head Elder turned around and took a glance at Ye Chen, he found that he seemed quite serious, so he hurriedly ordered the Wind Vulture to stop and quickly checked the surroundings. Immediately, he found a chopstick-like flying bug.

“Come over here.”

The Head Elder raised his hand and said, and that bug was attracted to his palm easily as it let out high-pitched screams, it seemingly had no power to resist.

The bug was about four inches long, thin and black, it had four pairs of thin, black and shining wings. Its head was round, covered in thick compound eyes, it looked extremely weird and scary. At that moment, the chopstick bug which had been struggling hard on the Head Elder’s palm, seemed to have broken out of the screen of Zhen Qi.

With a single glance, both the Head Elder’s and the Fourth Elder’s faces went dark.

“Four-Winged Black Devil Bug.” said Fourth Elder, word by word.

“What? Do you mean the Four-Winged Black Devil Bug raised by the Ghost Artist, one of the one-hundred and eight Ghost Warriors? It’s said that these



bugs can fly amazingly fast, and can be used to spy, besides, they can even fight against third-grade demonic beasts with their tiny bodies.” said Luo Hanshan in shock.

He was the son of the Sky Cloud Martial School’s leader, therefore, he knew quite a lot about the great war against the Nine Evil Cult, this allowed him to recognise these bugs once he heard the name.”

“Exactly, just get ready to fight! Every single move of ours is already under the enemy’s watch, I assume that they’re not far away from us!” said the Head Elder in a harsh tone.

## ***Chapter 134: Silver Light Thunderbolt Bomb***

Before the Head Elder's voice faded, shrill swishing noises came from afar.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Three silhouettes stood on clouds, drifting up and down along with airwaves.

"Hehe, all five of them are here." All three of them were in black outfits that had golden edges, and long cloaks decorated with patterns of ferocious ghosts. At this moment, the middle-aged one, who seemed to be the leader, fixed his eyes on the Wind Vulture and laughed in a cruel, creepy manner.

The Head Elder clearly knew that these three people were none other than the ghost guards from the Ghost Corpse Mountain, however, in order to be sure he still asked them.

"Who are you?"

"The people who are going to harvest your lives!" said the leader.

At the same time, he suddenly pulled out a long sword and swung it forward.

Puff!

The thick layer of cloud was torn apart by a fierce stream of power, while a gigantic streak of sword Qi that was over ten meters long swiftly flashed across the air and appeared right in front of the Wind Vulture.

"You sneaky bastards!"

The Head Elder growled out, his hair and moustache fluttered in the air. He then pointed his finger at the streak of Sword Qi.

Followed by another sudden puffing noise, the streak of Sword Qi was punctured and instantly shattered.

"Sky Scorching Palm!"

Seeing the enemy launch another attack, the Fourth Elder also immediately made his move. His scorching red palm hacked out in the air, even evaporating a large piece of a cloud.

"Kill!"

The leader of the ghost guards launched the counterattack right away. He pressed his right palm in the air, and a tens of meters long black stream of Zhen Qi swooshed out of his palm. It easily crushed the palm attack of the Fourth Elder, it then came roaring towards the Wind Vulture and the people standing on its back, like a fierce dark cloud.

The Head Elder had been fighting against another ghost guard. Seeing that the sky suddenly darkened, he instantly realised what was going on. He stamped his feet on the Wind Vulture's back in a calm manner; along with his move, the vulture quickly descended below the cloud.

The Zhen Qi attack almost scratched the Wind Vulture's body, and continued to shatter a huge piece of cloud. Great shockwaves spread out, stirring up a tsunami of clouds.

“Don't even think about running!”

The third ghost guard, who hadn't yet launched his attacks yelled out as he darted down and blocked the Wind Vulture's way.

The Head Elder's face went even more dark, he ordered the Wind Vulture to dive at its highest speed, intending to bring this fight to the ground.

A great gale blew across them. The human silhouettes, which were as small as ants, continued to enlarge rapidly.

When they were about a thousand meters high from the ground, a gigantic hand condensed from Zhen Qi suddenly pressed down at a shocking speed; the shrill noise of air splitting was as loud as thunder, and as terrifying as the collapse of a mountain.

The Wind Vulture was a powerful fifth-stage beast, it shook its wings and increased the speed once again. It dodged the gigantic Zhen Qi palm and left an arc in the air in a breathtaking manner.

Finally, the Wind Vulture landed on a flat mountaintop.

“You three! Don't get separated! Han Shan, release the Silver Light Thunderbolt bombs if it's necessary!” said the Head Elder once the vulture landed.

Lou Hanshan seriously nodded and said to Ye Chen and Xu Jing, “Don’t worry, we can just stay aside and watch, they can’t harm us.”

Ye Chen was not too worried about his own safety. Surely, the school must have given the two elders quite a lot of life-saving treasures, since they were sent out. As for that Silver Light Thunderbolt bomb the Head Elder mentioned just now, although Ye Chen hadn’t heard about it before, judging from the Head Elder’s words, it sounded quite special.

Boom!

The mountain suddenly shook. The Head Elder and the leader of the Ghost guards had already started their fight. Both of them were powerful Late Clasp Yuan Realm warriors, every single move of theirs could shake a mountain. Some demonic beasts living in the surrounding areas that didn’t manage to flee in time were all turned into meat paste.

On the other side, the Fourth Elder and the Wind Vulture had each started fighting against a ghost guard.

Although the Fourth Elder was not as powerful as the Head Elder, as a Late Clasp Yuan Realm warrior, and with the medium grade Earth Realm martial art, Sky Scorching Palm, which could burn and detonate anything with a slight touch, his battle effectiveness was no worse than the Head Elder. As for the Wind Vulture, even though its power was only comparable to a Mid Clasp Yuan Realm warrior, with its amazing speed, it could certainly keep the enemy busy for a while.

A great fight that involved five human warriors and a beast happened right in front of their eyes, but Ye Chen and the other two disciples could only stand aside and watch.

Lou Hanshan brought up the topic, “The Ghost Corpse Mountain seems so impatient, it seems like it won’t be long before the Ghost Artist fully recovers.”

“Ghost Artist?!” Ye Chen and Xu Jing turned their heads towards Luo Hanshan simultaneously.

Lou Hanshan explained, “Once, there was a huge, powerful sect in the South Zhuo Region, named Nine Evil Cult. The leader of the Nine Evil Cult had a

hundred and eight great Ghost warriors under his command, and the Ghost Artist was one of them. The Nine Evil Cult continued to grow more and more greedy, it attempted to occupy the entire South Zhuo Region and enslave all the institutions in that area. Without any choice, all the other institutions gathered together and started a year-long war against the Nine Evil Cult, and finally exterminated the cult twenty years ago. Powerful people in that cult were either killed or ran away, I suppose, the Ghost Artist was injured back then.”

Was this even real?!

Ye Chen hadn’t heard about the Nine Evil Cult, because he was very young. A lot of people in the martial art world might have already known this story.

But this Nine Evil Cult sounded way too powerful. To occupy the entire South Zhuo single-handedly, it should at least be a rank 5 institution! Thinking of this, Ye Chen was shocked once again.

“What about the Ghost Artist?” asked Xu Jing.

Lou Hanshan gave a bitter smile and responded, “He was at the Late Astral Reaching Realm at his peak. At this moment, I assume he is at the early Astral Reaching Realm. Otherwise, he couldn’t possibly wipe out the Evil Earth Martial School during a single night.”

Hearing this, both Ye Chen and Xu Jing gasped in shock.

Late Astral Reaching Realm martial artist!

Martial artists at this realm could completely destroy thousands of zhang tall mountains with a single move, while Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could only destroy hundreds of meters tall hills; they were not even at the same level. If the Ghost Artist was to recover his peak strength, not to mention a single institution, all the five top-ranked institutions would probably be exterminated, even if they fought back by joining hands. The difference was too huge, and could never be made up with numbers.

“Sky Ghost Mark!”

“Purple Light Finger!”

Up in the air, a mountain-sized dark and gigantic hand made of Zhen Qi

bumped against a purple beam of light. Instantly, the surrounding air exploded and swooshed out in huge streams. Even the afterwaves of this great explosion could kill an ordinary early Claspig Yuan Realm martial artist; as for Condensing Reality Realm martial artists, they couldn't even survive for a second under the shocking waves of such a terrifying explosion.

At this moment, Ye Chen sensed a wave of slight swishing noises, from all directions.

"Some people are coming over."

These three disciples stood on the mountain top and looked down. Soon, they saw tens, and then more than a hundred dark silhouettes rapidly moving towards the mountaintop.

"Get ready to fight!" Lou Hanshan sounded as calm as usual.

In about ten blinks of eyes, the first enemy, wearing a black outfit, appeared on the mountaintop. The Zhen Qi vibrations of this man were great, revealing his Early Claspig Yuan Realm cultivation.

"Kill!"

That man gave a vicious grin, he then suddenly rushed towards Ye Chen and the other two without any hesitation.

Lou Hanshan shook his head, and then threw out a silver bomb that clashed against the Zhen Qi shield around that man's body, along with a loud swish.

Boom!

Dazzling silver lightning bolts burst out in the air, within which, the man in a black outfit was immediately turned into a puff of smoke; only a ten-meter deep, huge pit was left on the burnt, black ground.

Ye Chen couldn't help himself as his eyes popped out in shock. This Silver Light Thunderbolt bomb is way too powerful! An Early Claspig Yuan Realm martial artist was struck into nothing, without any chance of resistance! In other words, as long as you had a couple of Silver Light Thunderbolt bombs with you, you could almost kill any early Claspig Yuan Realm martial artist in a second.

"We don't have too many Silver Light Thunderbolt bombs, after killing those

powerful ones, we have to deal with the others ourselves.” said Lou Hanshan seriously.

“Even better.” Xu Jing seemingly had been expecting a good fight.

Soon after, another two enemies in black outfits rushed up, they were also Early Clasp Yuan Realm martial artists. After all, warriors who could move so fast were all at relatively higher cultivation levels, while lower level warriors fell behind.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

A series of booms shook the entire mountain. As one fell, another rose. Only one of those people in black outfits moved swiftly, he managed to dodge the explosion and survived; all the others were torn apart by the string of explosions. That survivor was still injured by the fierce explosive wave, he lost a leg and was badly weakened.

“Great Monument Kingly Punch!”

Lou Hanshan’s eyes suddenly shone as he launched the first punch.

A gigantic fist condensed from Zhen Qi gripped a purple monument and directly crushed the injured one, into a cloud of bloody mist.

At this very moment, Luo Hanshan completely released his fierce killing intent. He completely seemed like a god of slaughter. Not even a trace of that kindness remained on his face.

One after another, more enemies rushed up the mountain.

Pop! Pop!

Two blazing, fiery circles suddenly appeared behind Xu Jing’s head, simultaneously, the ground under her feet began to crack. She threw out a couple of punches and each killed a Late Condensing Reality Realm enemy.

Ye Chen also moved quickly. His Hidden Cloud Sword was pulled out. Along with the Sword intent, he released an enormous stream of Sword Qi right away.

That Sword Qi was like a killing machine, with only a slight touch, those enemies in black would be torn to pieces, all the blood and internal organs that flew out of their bodies would instantly be crushed into puffs of bloody mist by the Sword Qi.

“Kid! You’re seeking your death!!”

Two peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors circled around Ye Chen. These two were much more powerful than the rest of their enemies, they were no worse than Cheng Jun, the top-ranked Emerald Martial Palace disciple.

However, Ye Chen had already broken into the Late Condensing Reality Realm. With his current power, these two enemies were not a big deal to him. Without saying anything, he released the power of the Hidden Cloud Sword. Corresponding with the Crane Shadow Steps, his entire body seemed to have transformed into a hazy, drifting cloud that darted around the two men in black. Fierce gusts of Sword Qi swooshed across the air, squeezing blood out of the two men’ bodies.

Puff!

Puff!

The heads of those two men suddenly flew into the air, as blood surged out of their broken necks in huge streams.

“Kill!” “Kill!” “Kill!” “Kill!”

More and more enemies continued to show up on the broad and flat mountaintop. Among them, some were of average level, some were at the same level as Cheng Jun, even one or two were almost at the Child-level. The only fortunate thing was that almost all Clasp of Yuan Realm enemies were killed by the Silver Light Thunderbolt Bombs thrown out by Luo Hanshan earlier, or else, even if the three of them could hold on for a while, it would be extremely hard to survive.

“Astral Realm!” Under the great pressure, Xu Jing’s potential finally erupted. She activated the ninth stage of the Golden Three Realm Art. Once it was activated, another, even more dazzling fiery light ring appeared behind her head. That ring was half the size of an adult, and was shining with a bright golden



light. It made her look like a legendary ancient female warrior, who was as powerful as a hurricane.

Before the three enemies who attempted to attack her sneakily, could make any reaction, they were all struck dead due to the terrifying power released by Xu Jing. Their upper bodies even exploded.

The Golden Three Realm Art was unimaginably powerful.

In the meanwhile, Luo Hanshan had activated the ninth stage of the Purple Extreme Art. A purple air stream appeared behind him, extending into the air like a long bridge. With that purple air stream, Luo Hanshan's power had a large increase. He launched the Great Monument Kingly Punch again, and this time, he was nearly invincible. Everywhere he walked, all the enemies were struck dead without a chance to fight back. Even one who was almost at the Childe-level was beaten by Luo Hanshan with only three punches.

Even though Ye Chen's Zhen Qi was not as powerful as Luo Hanshan's or Xu Jing's, he had the Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell. He had reached the fifth stage of this spell half a month ago and gained great defensive strength. With his current defense, even someone almost at the Childe-level couldn't possibly hurt him. He still felt that it was not enough, so he activated the Qi defence of the Pure Jun Zhen Qi Art as well. In this way, he had double protection, one for the inside and one for the outside.

## Chapter 135: Injured severely in an explosion

Puff!

An enemy fiercely hacked at Ye Chen's defensive layer with a long blade, this made the defensive layer instantly dim down.

Ye Chen didn't even turn his head around, he only swung the sword backwards and swiftly cut the enemy's head into two sending streams of red blood and smashed white brain matter up into the air.

"Kill this kid! He has comprehended the half-step sword intent, we can't let him live!"

"Exactly! Kill him! Lord Ghost Artist will certainly reward us! He might even teach us more powerful martial skills!"

"Kill!!"

Ye Chen, Luo Hanshan and Xu Jing had already killed over twenty ghost guards, however, more and more ghost guards continued to come onto the mountaintop. In the span of a breath, two to three enemies would rush up and join the fight. Seven to eight among these ghost guards had their eyes fixed on Ye Chen, filled with a fierce killing intent.

"King Corpse Punch!"

"Flashing Ghost Shadows!"

"Devil Sword!"

"God and Ghost Claws!"

Every one of these ghost guards had their own martial skills that they had mastered, and each of them sent out waves of violent power towards Ye Chen.

"Clouds have No Limitation!"

Ye Chen also launched his counterattack as. A tremendous streak of Sword Qi tore apart those power streams that had already merged into one; after that, the remaining force of that sword Qi swooshed across the group of ghost guards.

Followed by a series of puffing noises, the bodies of the three ghost guards

who were in the middle of the group had suddenly been sliced into a few parts and was distributed on the ground. Even the protective Zhen Qi of all the others had been shattered by the afterwaves of the Sword Qi, this made them cough up huge amounts of blood.

“All Evil Creatures Die!”

On the other side, Xu Jing released an enormous, roaring stream of pure golden fire, it swept across the air in a dazzling manner. All the ghost guards within five zhang radius were all struck down by the flame’s power, unable to struggle back up from the ground.

“Great Monument Suppression!”

Seeing more and more ghost guards reaching the mountaintop, Luo Hanshan finally activated his Zhen Qi. A huge cloud of, even more dense purple mist burst out of his body. Meanwhile, he crossed his fingers and abruptly launched a heavy punch directed downwards with both of his hands. Along with his movements, an over ten meter tall, gigantic purple monument pressed down from the air, it immediately smashed four ghost guards. Faint purple shockwaves spread out, sending all ghost guards that were rushing over in an attempt to encircle Luo Hanshan, flying into the air as they vomited blood.

In the air, the leader of the ghost guards was enraged when he saw this. He gritted his teeth and pressed his palm down. Instantly, the tens of meters wide, dark palm that was condensed from Zhen Qi, swooshed down and almost shrouded a larger part of the mountain. Ye Chen, Luo Hanshan, Xu Jing and many ghost guards were all in the Zhen Qi palm’s attack range, it seemed that the leader of the ghost guards was going to kill all of them together.

“Ah!! Run!!”

Seeing this, all the ghost guards on the mountaintop howled out as they immediately turned around to flee in all directions.

Boom!

The ground sank about three feet. Most of those ghost guards failed to survive, and were all shattered into clouds of bloody mist, not even leaving a piece of bone.

Thin blood streams gushed out of Ye Chen, Lu Hanshan and Xujing's mouths, ears and noses. All three of them were shocked and even slightly frightened. This attack was launched by the leader of the ghost guards, who was thousands of meters away from them, high in the air. The attack didn't even strike them directly; however, their bodies couldn't endure even this amount of the huge pressure. If this terrifying attack actually struck their bodies, none of them would survive.

Abruptly, Luo Hanshan let out a resonant growl.

"Break!"

A dragon-eye sized, pure transparent crystal ball appeared in his hand, which contained a sphere of red light within it. At the first glance, one would probably think that the crystal was red.

Activated by Luo Hanshan's Zhen Qi, that crystal ball suddenly exploded.

In the very next moment, eye-piercing red light broke out from the crystal ball and formed a light shield and firmly enveloped Luo Hanshan, Ye Chen and Xu Jing. That light shield was a foot thick and had dense red power streams flowing inside it.

The huge Zhen Qi palm pressed on the light shield and caused crunching sounds, as if that light shield would break at any moment and they would all be smashed by that gigantic palm.

Nevertheless, the light shield had eventually made it, and the Zhen Qi palm gradually dissipated in the air.

"This is?" Ye Chen's expression slightly changed. That dragon-eye sized, red crystal ball, took out by Luo Hanshan just now, was almost exactly the same as Ye Chen's blue crystal ball. And that blue crystal ball was given to him by Ye Hai.

Did these two crystal balls have the same origins? Can his blue crystal also explode into a protective light shield? What was the name of this kind of crystal ball? Did Ye Hai know how to use this crystal ball? Within a second, a series of questions flashed across Ye Chen's mind, he hesitated for a while, but he didn't ask Luo Hanshan about that crystal ball.

The leader of the Ghost guards seemed as if he couldn't believe that the Zhen

Qi palm had actually failed to kill the three kids. With his Late Claspng Yuan Realm power, he could even kill three early Claspng Yuan Realm warriors from thousands of meters away, not to mention three Late Condensing Reality Realm kids. However, that light shield that appeared suddenly was way too powerful, it even managed to wear down the Zhen Qi palm, and ruined his plan.

“Purple Light Paradise!”

The Head Elder was extremely frightened after he saw what had happened just now. If the Leader of the Ghost guards had successfully killed these three kids just now, he had no idea how he could have explained this to the leader of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Luckily, Luo Hanshan had quite a good life-saving treasure with him, and managed to save all three of them from this deadly danger. Thinking of this, the Head Elder activated his Zhen Qi and released a fierce beam of purple light.

The Ghost guard’s leader paused only for a brief moment before he swiftly moved and dodged this purple light beam.

Followed by a loud puffing noise, a bottomless deep, thumb sized hole appeared on the ground - the mountain seemed as if it was entirely pierced by the purple light.

Ninety percent of the light shield’s power was consumed when fighting against the Zhen Qi palm. Therefore, it quickly became thinner and then transformed into pure Yuan Qi, dissipating into the air.

Lou Hanshan wiped off the cold sweat from his own forehead. They were so close from death just now. Fortunately, Luo Xinglie had given him a Yuan Guang ball before he came. Yuan Guang balls were found five-thousand years ago, in the remaining site of the Puppet School, a legendary, super powerful, rank 5 institution. They had also found the manufacturing instructions of the wooden guards from the same place.

“Are you guys okay?”

Ye Chen had great amount of soul power that perfectly protected him from the strike. Except for a little bit of blood that was pressured out from his ears and nose, he was all good. As for Xu Jing, she was protected by the powerful golden fire, so she was also not injured.

“Good, good.”

At this moment, only a few ghost guards were still alive on the mountaintop. Most of this group of ghost guards died under the gigantic Zhen Qi palm launched by their own leader, so unworthy. But of course, to Luo Hanshan, Ye Chen and Xu Jing, this was the best result. Otherwise, they would have had to spend a lot more effort to kill all those ghost guards. After all, the three of them were only Late Condensing Reality Realm martial artists, they had very limited amount of Zhen Qi, that could only support them for a quick fight. If the fight lasts too long, problems would certainly occur. Although they had loads of medicines that could replenish consumed Zhen Qi, they couldn't consume too much of them continuously. They had already taken it a few times earlier, if they do that again, a possible reduction of Zhen Qi would happen to them, and they could also suffer a Zhen Qi turbulence inside their body.

After killing off the last few ghost guards on the mountaintop, each of them took out a piece of low-grade spirit stone and began absorbing Yuan Qi contained in it, to replenish their consumed Zhen Qi.

Caw!

On the other side of the mountaintop, the fight between the Wind Vulture and another ghost guard continued. The Wind Vulture swiftly flew around the ghost guards ceaselessly scratching him with its sharp claws, while the ghost guard with the sword maintained the same method of counterattack. It was that every time he found a weakness of the Wind Vulture, he would immediately let out a fierce stream of Sword Qi and always came close to hurting the vulture.

“It's not going to work. This bloody bird moves way too fast, and can always dodge my attack. This will never end if I keep attacking it this way.” seeing what had happened to the other ghost guards, this one clearly realised that he had to end this fight as soon as he could.

After another ineffective attack, this ghost guard's face turned vicious. He stared at the Wind Vulture and completely stopped moving, only floating in the air.

The Wind Vulture hovered around in the air for a few times, and then suddenly darted towards the ghost guard from his left side at lightning speed. Even with

such a short distance, the Wind Vulture had still raised its speed near the speed of sound.

Puff!

The Wind Vulture easily ripped apart the protective Zhen Qi of that ghost guard, and pierced its sharp claws into his body, as if it could tear his entire body into pieces in the next moment.

“Die!!”

The ghost guard suddenly swung his sword and hacked at the Wind Vulture’s body.

Blood shot out like a rain. The Wind Vulture let out a shrill howl, then fell off the mountain.

“Hehe, today is the day you all die!” The ghost guard had no spare time to launch another deadly attack at the Wind Vulture. Instead, he burst out his Zhen Qi and dove down to the mountaintop in a few blinks of an eye.

“Great Monument suppress!”

“Clouds have No Limitation!”

“All Evil Creatures Die!”

The giant purple monument, huge streams of Sword Qi and bright dazzling golden light together headed towards that ghost guard. They all simultaneously made their move and drew back as fast as they could.

“Won’t work.”

The ghost guard slightly waved his long sword, easily shattering the monument, and dissipating the Sword Qi and the golden light. None of these attacks achieved any effect against him.

Nevertheless, this was all planned. Suddenly, four silver iron balls appeared around the ghost guard, each of these silver balls was connected to Luo Hanshan through a faint and thin wisp of Zhen Qi.

“Go!”

Along with Luo Hanshan’s voice, silver lightning bolts roared out from all four

silver balls, quickly forming an enormous silver sphere that surrounded the ghost guard.

Lightning bolts like countless silver snakes dazzled across the silver sphere, letting out loud sizzling noises, that even made Ye Chen feel his scalp go numb and made all of his fine hairs stand up.

Previously, Luo Hanshan had thrown four Silver Light Thunderbolt bombs on the mountaintop, forming a huge square formation that surrounded the three of them. If any enemy they were unable to fight against showed up, they could immediately withdraw and let the four bombs launch a surprising and deadly attack. This ghost guard who had just injured the Wind Vulture and intended to attack them, was slightly weaker than the other two, who were fighting against the two elders. He was at the Mid Clasp of the Yuan Realm. His opponent was the Wind Vulture, except for its amazing speed, the vulture apparently could not harm this man, and was trapped by him. It fell off the mountain and its current situation was unknown.

“Silver Light Thunderbolt bombs could kill early Clasp of the Yuan Realm warriors, and could severely injure Mid Clasp of the Yuan Realm warriors. Although I have thrown out four bombs all at once, the distance was too long, the enemy might survive this. We should still be careful.” said Luo Hanshan with a serious face. The last four bombs were used up, if the enemy survived, they could only fight against him by risking their life. Streams of Zhen Qi poured out of Luo Hanshan’s body once again, obviously, he was preparing for a deadly fight.

The three fiery light rings behind Xu Jing’s head grew even brighter, as she fiercely gazed at that silver lightning sphere.

Ye Chen had already unified his Zhen Qi and soul power, preparing to make the ‘Heart Refining’ move. He believed that under the explosive power of four bombs, the enemy would certainly be severely injured, and as long as the enemy was wounded, his ‘Heart Refining’ move could definitely worsen that wound. If they were lucky, he might even be able to kill the enemy directly.

Pop!

The silver lightning sphere suddenly broke, showing the silhouette of the ghost guard. His body was entirely burned, no colour of skin could be seen on his face



now. Wisps of smoke rose from the bigger wounds, spreading out along with the scent of grilled meat.

“Bastards! I will make you regret this!!” the ghost guard slightly moved his body, but he seemed to have choked on his own blood that was about to spurt out from his throat. The blood surging out of his body was immediately evaporated by the remaining lightning power, so he only coughed out a mouthful of white smoke. He raised his head and stared at the three young martial artists with a pair of devil-like, blood-red eyes.

## ***Chapter 136 - Blood Devil Disassemble Magic***

Ye Chen made his move first. He swung his sword and released a thick stream of white light, which struck the ghost guard's body. However, that stream of sword light only left a bone-deep wound on that man's body, and failed to go any further. From under the ghost guard's skin, a layer of blood-red light emerged, that had not only stopped the sword light from further affecting him, but also immediately devoured the sword light.

The attack launched right after Ye Chen's was Xu Jing's [Devil-Slaughtering Punch]. Waves of eye-piercing golden light flashed across the air and clashed against that blood-red light, letting out muffled sizzling sounds.

"Purple Qi, Great Monument Suppression!"

That bridge-like, enormous stream of purple Qi rushed back into Luo Hanshan's body. After that, Luo Hanshan burst out with a loud roar and crossed his fingers, throwing a heavy punch in the air directed towards that ghost guard. At the exact same moment, the bright shining purple monument roared down from the air, it seemed to be capable of shattering the layer of blood-red light and smashing that ghost guard into nothing.

Boom!

But, the purple monument was shattered instead.

The ghost guard's skin began cracking, and the blood light darted out from those cracks. It was thick and dense like lava streams that gushed out of the ground. Flushed by those streams of blood-red light, the purple monument immediately broke into a few pieces, and then turned into pure Yuan Qi.

Boom!

This thunderous boom didn't come from the broken monument, instead, it came from the mountain itself. Signs of breaking had already shown up after that area had been blasted by those four bombs. And just now, the same area was once again struck by the sword Qi, fist power and the purple monument continuously, so it finally collapsed. Along with the ghost guard, a small part of the mountaintop fell down, and soon disappeared.

In the next moment, sky-shaking, thunderous booms suddenly rang out. Along with them, the entire mountain toppled towards one side. Obviously, the ghost guard detonated himself in the air, collapsing the entire mountain, how powerful was that!

Ye Chen, Xu Jing and Luo Hanshan instantly leapt into the air. Fortunately, all three of them were able to fly for a short while. Looking down from the air, they saw that the mountain had completely collapsed while airwaves rushed around fiercely in a random manner. Countless gigantic rocks completely buried the ghost guard, and piled up into a small hill.

“So close. I didn’t think he could use the Blood Devil Disassemble Magic, created by the Blood Devil himself.” said Luo Hanshan as he let out a long sigh of relief. It was only luck that had helped them survive this.

“The Blood Devil? Was he also one of the Nine Evil Cult’s one hundred and eight great ghost warriors?” asked Ye Chen.

“He indeed was. The Blood Devil was ranked higher than the Ghost Artist among the one hundred and eight. Fifty years ago, he was a core disciple of the Evil Blood Martial School, he then betrayed the Evil Blood Martial School and joined the Nine Evil Cult. He was extremely powerful, and came to be known as the Blood Devil.”

Ye Chen didn’t even want to imagine how powerful the Nine Evil Cult used to be. Each of the one hundred and eight great Ghost warriors were already insanely powerful, and above them, those higher level commanders must have been even more terrifying. But, no one knew how many of them had died and how many had survived. As for those who had managed to survive, no one had any idea whether they were planning to raise again like the Ghost Artist or not.

“Retreat!”

The ghost guard leader saw that the ghost guard had been smashed by the collapsed mountain, he realised that he could not harm this couple of Sky Cloud Martial School’s people in their current situation. Therefore, he threw another punch towards the Head Elder as he gave out the order to retreat.

Woosh! Woosh!

The remaining two ghost guards were both elite warriors. Even though they failed to defeat the Head Elder and the Fourth Elder, they could still run away pretty easily. Within a single moment, they had already moved miles away.

The Fourth Elder intended to chase them, but he was stopped by the Head Elder.

“Don’t go. They can’t do anything to us at this moment, besides, we can’t kill them anyway.”

“Damn! Such a refreshing fight! These two should be top-grade ghost guards of the Ghost Corpse Mountain, am I right?” The Fourth Elder had passionately fought for quite a while, and now his blood was still boiling. It seemed like he could immediately take part in another great fight.

“After eighth August, you can have as many fights as you want. I’m just afraid that you would be sick of battles by then.”

“Never!”

While talking, they rushed towards Ye Chen and the other two disciples.

Seeing that all three of them were safe, the Head Elder sighed in relief. He nodded and said, “Good, since you have all survived such a difficult fight, after we get back you will certainly see improvements with a little bit of work.”

“Head Elder, what is this about? Is the Ghost Corpse Mountain planning on launching attacks on all top-ranked institutions?”

“Not yet.” responded the Head Elder, “I assume that right now they’re only trying to weaken us. However, I can’t be sure about how long this situation would last. Maybe in a year or two, the Ghost Artist will recover to his peak level and that will be the time when a great war starts.”

“A year or two? So quick!” Lou Hanshan frowned and said.

“Don’t worry too much,” said the Fourth Elder with a grin, “Even if the war starts, we won’t be alone. The Emerald Martial Palace is much more anxious than us. Besides, we don’t have to be afraid of them even if they are stronger than before. After all, all the top-ranked institution have Grand Elders behind them. Once these institutions fall into a deadly crisis, those Grand Elders will

make their move.”

Grand Elders!

Ye Chen’s eyes popped out. Judging from the Fourth Elder’s tone, these Grand Elders sounded even more powerful than the leader himself, could they be Astral Reaching Realm martial artists? No wonder the Ghost Artist did not dare to directly attack the few top-ranked institutions, and had instead been perfectly hiding all along, he should probably be afraid of their combined attack.

They had never forgotten about the Wind Vulture, they went down together and searched for it.

Beside a pile of rocks, the Wind Vulture lay on the ground with a horrible, bloody wound on its body. It was trying to struggle back up from the ground, but its injuries were quite severe. This made it fail quite a few times.

The Head Elder sighed and took out over ten bottles of liquid medicine from his storage ring. He unplugged all those bottles, then activated his Zhen Qi, and mixed all the liquid medicine together, he then poured it evenly on the Wind Vulture’s wound. Visibly, the bleeding stopped and the broken muscles began squirming, they seemed to be growing back.

“We can’t stay here for long, let’s first find a place to stay, we will wait for the school to send us another Wind Vulture.”

As he was speaking, the storage ring on the Head Elder’s finger sparkled, and right after that, a wooden crow appeared in his hand. That crow was made from hundreds of tiny pieces of black wood, and it appeared amazingly lifelike. It had a pair of bean-sized beady eyes that were shining like gemstones.

The Head Elder quickly pressed a spot on that crow’s body, and instantly a groove-shaped hole appeared on the crow’s belly. The Head Elder then put a milky white stone into that crow’s body.

If Ye Chen was not wrong, that piece of stone should be a mid-rank spirit stone. It was rare and extremely precious, it equalled fifty pieces of low-rank spirit stones.

The spirit stone supplied energy to the wooden crow, which allowed the crow’s eyes to suddenly shine. It then began intensely flapping its wings and rose into

the air, and then darted in the direction of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

Seeing Ye Chen's confused face, the Head Elder smiled and explained, "This is a puppet crow, one of the works made five-thousand years ago by the powerful rank 5 institution, Puppet School. This crow can fly around thirty-thousand miles a day, it is only slightly slower than the Wind Vulture. The source of its energy is spirit stones, but it has to be mid-rank spirit stones. All kinds of low-rank spirit stones could only support it for a short while."

"Does it know the way back?" asked Ye Chen.

"Classified." responded the Head Elder while shaking his head.

These five people temporarily settled down in a city, thousands of miles away from the collapsed mountain. Three days later, people from the Sky Cloud Martial School arrived. Not just one or two people, a whole batch of inner elders rode on four Wind Vultures and arrived at the place they stayed.

Hopping on the Wind Vultures' backs, all of them headed back to the Sky Cloud Martial School right that night.

.....

Under a waterfall, a silhouette sat with his legs crossed.

That was a young man, with a bare upper body. His muscular back was perfectly straight, and his entire body was surrounded by an unspeakably fierce aura. No matter how hard the waterfall struck his body, he would never bend his body, not even a little bit.

Thunderous roars of the waterfall continued to sound louder and louder, they resounded throughout the entire area that had the radius of a few miles.

Abruptly, the young man seemingly slightly raised his right arm. Following his movement, the waterfall suddenly stopped falling, and instead, curved upwards and rushed to the sky. It roughly transformed into a gigantic sword made of water, shining with a multi-coloured light under the sunshine. It was truly magnificent.

"Go!"

Followed by a resonant shout, the giant water sword surged towards a

mountain.

The mountain was punctured along with a thunderous boom. The water sword that rushed there completely shattered, it turned back into streams of water and surged back out of the mountain.

Slowly letting out a breath, the silhouette stood up and turned around.

That was no one other than Ye Chen.

He gave a faint smile. It had been quite a few days since he got back to the Sky Cloud Martial School. During the last couple of days, he had been doing nothing else but cultivating himself under the waterfall.

Finally, he had just achieved some improvement. He thought that he wouldn't be able to transform a waterfall into a sword with his current power, he guessed that he would require at least Clasp of Yuan Realm cultivation to achieve that, as only Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists would have such huge amounts of Zhen Qi within their bodies. However, he managed to do it when he was still only a step away from the true sword intent.

But soon, Ye Chen's smile disappeared as he let out a long sigh.

"To attain true sword intent is harder than I thought! Without a good opportunity and the right moment, I might be trapped in my current stage for a long time. How on earth should I attain the true sword intent?"

Ye Chen almost felt the existence of the sword intent, it was like a real, precious sword had been placed in a room, and he only needed to lift the door curtain to grab that sword, he could then take it out and make it his own; however, even though he could clearly perceive the existence of the sword and the door curtain, he always felt like he was lost in a dream, and that he could never reach that door curtain. The more he wanted that sword, the more difficult it became to reach that curtain. Sometimes, Ye Chen even felt that all these were not real, and that he never even got close to the true sword intent. But, such thoughts would be denied by him right away. After all, even if all those thoughts were indeed delusions, delusions would never happen without a corresponding reality.

Ye Chen wasn't too disappointed, he understood that things like the true

sword intent couldn't be comprehended that easily. In the right moment, it would just show up right in front of his eyes. Except for the fact that he failed to comprehend the true sword intent, the rest of his cultivation went perfectly well.

During these few days, Ye Chen had not only stabilised his Late Condensing Reality Realm power, he also digested all of his battle experiences that he gained in the past few weeks. He used those experiences to increase his own battle effectiveness and efficiency. The Hidden Cloud Sword Skill, Tyrant's Fist and Crane Shadow Steps, he had achieved great improvements regarding all three of these often used martial skills. At this moment, he could launch his attack more flexibly, without being limited by any fixed patterns.

Currently, Ye Chen could have an even fight against Shi Potian, who had mastered two powerful martial arts without even using his 'Heart Refining'. Without a doubt, this was a huge step forward.

After all, Shi Potian was recognised by the martial world as a Childe-level martial artist, being able to evenly fight against him meant that Ye Chen's power also reached the Childe-level. In other words, Ye Chen had almost reached the peak grade among all the younger generation martial artists. If he included the 'Heart Refining', Young Master North Snow, Young Master Duanmu and the 'North Snow Fast Blade' Lin Qi probably would be the only three, who were able to evenly fight against him.

Of course, Ye Chen didn't want to use the 'Heart Refining' too often, all in all, personal power was the most important thing.



## ***Chapter 137 - Defeating Meng Chong again***

“Ah! Senior brother Ye! We didn’t know that you were here!”

While Ye Chen was pondering, three female disciples showed up not too far away from him. They were all about fourteen years old, young and lively. Seeing Ye Chen’s bare upper body, they quickly turned their heads around and their faces instantly blushed.

Ye Chen smiled bitterly. In his world, a man being with his upper body bare was quite normal, but things were different here in this world. His storage ring sparkled and a neat outfit immediately appeared in his hands.

Putting on the clothes, Ye Chen asked the few girls, “Are you looking for a cultivation ground?”

“Yeah! Senior Brother Ye, were you taking a shower here?” Among the three girls, the moon-faced one was the most adorable, and she was also the only one who didn’t turn her head around just now. However, that was only because her eyes were blocked by the other two.

“I was cultivating here. If you like this place, it is yours now.” After he said this, Ye Chen leapt high above the waterfall, and soon disappeared without leaving a trace, after he flashed a few times.

“Ha! I told you that Senior Brother Ye is quite nice, you just wouldn’t believe me!”

“Haha, Brother Ye has a good body, and he is so talented.”

“Senior Sisters, why did Brother Ye run away?”

.....

Going to the Floating Cloud Palace every three days had become a habit to Ye Chen. In fact, he wasn't always going for missions, his main purpose was to read those big or small news about the recent events around the Windy Nation, from the list of missions. It was much better than not knowing anything that was happening out there.

As he walked past the Ranking Jade Wall, Ye Chen took a quick glance at it. His

name was still the first one in the third line. Names on the first line and the second line belonged to the twenty-four core disciples. Of course, as long as he wanted, he could also become a core disciple anytime, and his rank would also be quite high, at least in the top four. However, he didn't plan to do so yet, as he was not quite sure if he could win against Zhu Mei, who was known as the 'Secret Fragrance Sword', unless he uses the 'Heart Refining'.

"It would be meaningless if I can't become the top-ranked core disciple." shaking his head, Ye Chen walked into the palace.

"Look! Senior Brother Meng Chong is back!"

"I heard that he accepted a three-star black mission this time, it seems that he has already completed it!"

"Compared to his performance in the Inner Disciple Competition, Senior Brother Meng Chong has indeed achieved great improvement, I just wonder if he is now more powerful than Senior Brother Ye Chen."

The surrounding inner disciples began talking as they fixed their eyes on Meng Chong, who was standing nearby.

Meng Chong seemed to have not realised that he was now the focus of the rest of the disciples in the hall. He only said something to Ye Chen, who was standing in front of the palace entrance, "You and me, we will determine the winner on the Martial Plaza. I hope you have had some improvements since then."

"As you wish." Ye Chen turned around and responded.

Usually, Ye Chen wouldn't challenge others, however, when someone challenged him, he would usually accept. Even if he wanted to refuse, he would have to find a reasonable excuse for that, otherwise, if everyone refused such challenges, there won't be any competition among disciples, and the Ranking Jade Wall would lose its function."

Once Ye Chen gave his response, the surrounding disciples became excited.

"Brother Meng Chong once again challenged Brother Ye Chen! It's big news! Go tell the others!"

“It’s been a month since the last fight between them, both of them had improved quite a lot in the past month, it’s going to be a splendid fight!”

“It looks like Brother Meng Chong is not willing to become a core disciple until he defeats Brother Ye Chen!”

Within a few minutes, most of the Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciples had heard about this news, they immediately rushed to the Martial Plaza. Soon, over a thousand disciples had gathered in the plaza. Among them, around two to three hundred were inner disciples who didn’t have any missions, and the rest were mostly outer disciples. A few core disciples had come as well, they intended to find out what level Ye Chen and Meng Chong had achieved.

Ye Chen and Meng Chong slowly walked up the platform located in the middle of the plaza.

“It’s been a month since the last time I met you, if you didn’t have any huge improvements since then, you will probably lose.” Meng Chong seemed calmer than before, it was as if he was accumulating a fierce fighting aura inside his body.

Ye Chen gave a measuring glance at Meng Chong, he then shook his head and said, “You have indeed improved, but the difference between you and me is getting larger and larger.”

Meng Chong snorted scornfully and responded, “We will find that out later, and you will certainly want to take those words back.”

A sharp gust of wind fluttered Ye Chen’s hair and clothes.

“Bring it on!” said Ye Chen.

Clang!

Meng Chong’s long blade roared out of the sheath, it slashed towards Ye Chen at lightning speed.

“Soaring Blood Light!”

As he darted towards Ye Chen, Meng Chong gripped the black hilt of his blade with both his hands and swiftly swung the blade. Because of the amazing speed, his arms seemed to have merged with the air, leaving only a blood-red blade light

flashing across each other, shrouding the entire platform. Those streams of blade light completely sealed the space around Ye Chen, blocking all the directions leaving him no way to dodge. He could only try to face the attack head on.

“Wow! Amazing! How will Brother Ye deal with that?”

“I suppose he could only fight against it, right?”

“The last time, if Brother Meng Chong had been this powerful, he would have definitely been able to keep his position as the top-ranked inner disciple. Of course, if he can defeat Brother Ye Chen this time, he will once again become the top-ranked inner disciple.”

“It won’t be this easy, will it? Brother Ye has gone to the Emerald Valley and met so many powerful people, how could he not have any improvements after that?”

Most of these disciples had no idea about the fact that Ye Chen had defeat Cheng Jun and Shi Potian back in the Emerald Valley. Only those core disciples knew a little bit about that. However, in one or two days, this news would absolutely spread out, and no one would be able to imagine how sensational it would be.

When the stream of blood-red blade light reached its peak level, Ye Chen made his move.

Swoosh!

No one clearly saw how Ye Chen pulled out his sword, they only sensed that a thin wisp of white Sword Qi that was as thin as a wire, flashed across the air; and in the very next moment, Ye Chen’s silhouette had already moved across the stream of blood-red light and appeared right behind Meng Chong.

Clang!

Puff!

The long blade flew away from Meng Chong’s hands, and got stuck in a stone pillar in the corner of the plaza. After that, Meng Chong’s cloth near his ribs were ripped apart; the cut was extremely smooth, as if the cloth was cut by a scissor.

As he put the Hidden Cloud Sword back into the sheath, Ye Chan blandly said, “Your blade skill is not bad, but I have already stepped into a higher level, so you can’t rival me anymore.”

Too powerful, he was way too powerful. Meng Chong thought ‘I had absolutely no chance of fighting back. At this moment I can’t even evenly fight against him I definitely wouldn’t have believed this back then, but now I have to. Because this has already happened to me.’

Meng Chong was overwhelmed by this sudden loss, it made him pause. All the other disciples who had been watching the fight were also dumbfounded, their eyes popped out and their mouths were wide open, they remained with that expression for quite a while.

The plaza fell into a deadly silence. When people realised what had happened, Ye Chen had already left.

“Damn! What have I seen?! Brother Ye Chen defeated Brother Meng Chong with only one move! One-move! How powerful would he need to be to do that?!”

“It’s overwhelming, the difference between them is too huge!”

“No one among the inner disciples would be able to take Brother Ye Chen’s place.”

“Even my scalp went numb once I thought about that! Brother Meng Chong could defeat the rest of the top-ten inner disciples with a single move, but Brother Ye had actually, just defeated him with a single move.”

Hearing such conversations, the few core disciples glanced at each other.

The time passed by peacefully, like a flowing stream.

Twenty days just went by, and the August had arrived.

During this period of time, Ye Chen had never stopped his cultivation. The amount of Zhen Qi in his body was gradually reaching the peak of the Late Condensing Reality Realm, almost reaching Luo Hanshan’s level. As for his sword skills, he himself didn’t know what stage he had achieved, perhaps he could only find that out if he fought against a powerful Childe-level opponent.

Compared to his personal improvement, recently, something huge took place in Windy Nation.

There was a spy in the Purple Sun Martial School, one of the five top-ranked institutions.

This spy's cover identity was an inner elder of the Purple Sun Martial School, but in fact, he was an elite warrior under the Ghost Artist's command. He had been hiding in the Purple Sun Martial School for a whole fifteen years. Recently, he betrayed the Purple Sun Martial School for no reason and killed an inner elder and three outer elders. This news shocked all the big institutions throughout the entire nation.

Ye Chen didn't know much about the details, but all the core administrators of the big institutions should probably know about them clearly. The plan to attack the branch stronghold of the Ghost Corpse Mountain on the eighth of August was also ruined due to this spy in the Purple Sun Martial School. He came to know about the plan and sneakily sent the information to the Ghost Corpse Mountain. But, another elder found him doing that and they instantly started to fight; later, three outer elders also came to help. However, this spy was incredibly powerful, he killed all four of them within a very short amount of time and ran away from Purple Sun Martial School.

In the main meeting room of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

At this moment, a group of Inner Elders had been discussing something else.

"Leader, the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is about to unlock this October, we should come to a decision regarding the disciples we want to send there, so that we can tell them to prepare for it." said the Fourth Elder.

Luo Xinglie looked at the elders and asked, "Do you have any ideas?"

The Head Elder cleared his throat and responded, "The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region only unlocks once every ten years, this opportunity is extremely precious. Every time after the trials in the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, nearly ten percent of those younger generation martial artists step into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, therefore, we have to send our best disciples. As a rank 9 institution, we can only send four disciples. In my opinion, Zhu Mei and Luo Hanshan have to go, and Xu Jing as well."

“What about the last one?”

“I think Ye Chen is good.” said the Fourth Elder.

The Head Elder nodded, he was also thinking the same.

Hearing this, a few Inner Elders immediately shook their heads and said, “Although Ye Chen is talented, and has already comprehended the half-step sword intent, his level is not as high as the other three, we can’t give an explanation to the others if we send him to the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region.”

“Indeed, the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is a historical region, every single quota of disciples is an extremely precious opportunity to us. We can’t afford to waste it, so we have to send disciples who have a chance to break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm.

“I think the ranked three core disciple, Tao Xiaofeng is a good choice.”

“Jing Yan, the fourth-ranked one is also great.”

The Head Elder blandly glanced at the others and continued, “Tao Xiaofeng and Jing Yan both are indeed talented, but they are not as amazing as Ye Chen. Even if they did manage to break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, they could only be counted as elite, but they could never kill an enemy who is at a higher level than themselves. However, Ye Chen had already comprehended half-step sword intent, this means that he could definitely attain the true sword intent with enough time. In this situation, do you understand which level he will achieve after he steps into the Clasp of Yuan Realm?”

“This...”

The few elders who disagreed with the Head Elder couldn’t come up with anything to say at the moment.

Lou Xinglie announced his decision.

“The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is in the vast desert in the middle of nine nations, and is hundreds of thousands of miles away from our Sky Cloud Martial School. We have no time to lose, these few disciples should leave in half a month. They are Zhu Mei, Luo Hanshan, Xu Jing, and, Ye Chen.”

Hearing the last two words, the Head Elder and Fourth Elder glanced at each other, both of them had a grin on their face.



## ***Chapter 138: Attained the Sword Intent***

In the main meeting room of the Emerald Martial Palace.

Zhuang Qingxian had been sitting in the main seat with a pondering look, after quite a while, he said, “Elder Lan, do you mean that we don’t need to send our best disciples?”

Elder Lan was the Head Elder of the Emerald Martial Palace, and was eighty years old. Although he wasn’t a particularly powerful martial artist, to the Emerald Martial Place, Elder Lan was an absolutely necessary pillar. However, because of his age, he had become quite conservative regarding many things. Regarding the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, he was the representative of the few who held an opposing view.

“Leader, at this stage, our Emerald Martial Palace had already been sitting in the tyrant’s position of the Entire Windy Nation, this means that we don’t have to take this risk. After all, the death rate is extremely high in the region. Thirty years ago, six hundred and forty-five disciples from the nine nations were sent to that region, but only four-hundred and fifty of them managed to come out alive; twenty years ago, among six-hundred and thirty disciples that went in, four hundred and eleven of them walked out; ten years ago, six hundred and sixteen disciples were sent in, only three-hundred and seventy survived. All these numbers clearly show that the death rate is rising every decade, I’m afraid that it will go beyond fifty percent this time.”

Once Elder Lan announced the numbers, all the other elders, who were prepared to convince him, turned silent. “Indeed, the death rate in the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is truly high, and if we send the most elite disciples of the Emerald Martial Palace to that place, it would be highly possible that half of them will die or become disabled.”

To the Emerald Martial Palace, that would be a severe loss.

Another inner elder of exact opposite views stood up and said, “Leader, and Elder Lan, you can’t just put it that way. We can’t be cowardly because of the high death rate. If I’m not wrong, all the other four top-ranked institutions will send their best disciples. As long as those disciples come out, each of them

would have definitely attained amazing improvements to their strength, it is most likely that they would even break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm. Then, the advantages of our younger generation martial artists would be completely gone.”

“Elder Liu is right, it’s time to let our kids see some real blood, if possible, I would like to send my nephew to the region.”

“The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region only unlocks once every decade, it’s a precious opportunity and we can’t just waste it!”

“Ten percent of those disciples who have managed to survive in the region would break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm. It means that thirty out of three hundred disciples would become Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists.”

The Second Elder, sitting beside Elder Lan said, “Leader, I think we can make some compromises. Our Emerald Martial Place is a rank 7 institution, so we can send eight disciples to the region. For these eight disciples, we can select four of our best disciples, as for the rest, we can just select the lower ranked talents. In this way, even if we lose the most of them, it won’t be too harmful for us.”

Hearing this, Zhuang Qingxian came to agree with this elder. As the domineering institution of Windy Nation, they definitely didn’t need to put all of their best disciples at risk, the best result would be to send some for the sake of improvement and some for the sake of safety.

“So, how do you think we should arrange this?” asked Zhuang Qingxian.

After taking a glance at Elder Lan, the Second Elder responded, “The top-ranked disciple, Zhuang Fei, has to go. As an Early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, he could even fight against warriors who have Mid Clasp of Yuan Realm strength. If he is present, the rest of our disciples will be safer, and he can also serve as a deterrence. As far as I know that Rudra Nation have the most Clasp of Yuan Realm disciples among their younger generation martial artists, they have four of them. White Mystery Nation and the Sky Serpent Nation each have three, the other five nations are just like our Windy Nation, only have one to two younger generation Clasp of Yuan Realm disciples. We have to consider the safety of our disciples who are going to enter that region as much as we can.”

At this moment, even Elder Lan began nodding, it seemed like he agreed with

the second Elder.

“Liu Xuxiang and Ji Xueyan have to go too, they both are promising and would probably step into Clasp of Yuan Realm. Shi Potian has not yet recovered, so he shall stay in the valley; instead of him, we can send Liu Xuan, who was ranked fifth among the core disciples. The other four can be selected from the core disciples who were ranked below top-ten.”

“Good, let’s just do what the Second Elder said, no need for any further discussion.” said Zhuang Qingxian, he seemed quite satisfied with this suggestion.

In the North Snow Martial Academy’s main meeting room.

Xue Wuren clasped both of his hands behind his back and said, “We don’t need to waste any more time on this, all eight of them should be our best disciples. I don’t want to wait for another ten years.”

Just like his blade skills, Xue Wuren had always been a decisive person. No one could ever change his mind once he had decided on something.

All the others silently stepped out of the meeting room with bitter smiles on their faces.

A short while later, eight young martial artists walked in. The first three were a young man with a long and pure white outfit, who seemed kind and gentle; Lin Qi, who was known as the ‘North Snow Fast Blade’; and Yu Yue.

“Leader.” said the three young people with respect.

“Good,” said Xue Wuren while nodding, “Nothing much, I called you all here because I wanted you to know about the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, and the things that you need to pay attention to.”

“Leader, I heard that the ancient region is invisible, is that true?” asked the gentle young man.

“The region is located in a different spatial dimension before it’s unlocked, it is indeed invisible, it couldn’t even be sensed with spiritual power. This time you will enter that region, but you have to remember this, don’t ever push anything too far. Your main purpose will be the stable improvement of your own strength,

you can never be too greedy. The second thing is that, don't make an enemy out of everyone. You have to understand that an innocent man might become a sinner to the others if he has a treasure with him. When you gain something that is attractive to other people, you should either kill the others immediately or give up this object, just do not make yourself a public enemy. Otherwise, not only would you lose your life, you might also entangle your fellow disciples."

The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region had lots of lost treasures in it, such a legendary powerful weapons, magical medicines, and secret books of martial arts. The reason why the five top-ranked institutions grew more and more powerful was that, every ten years they would each send a batch of disciples into that region. After these disciples come back, the treasures and the valuable manuals accumulated in each institution would become more splendid than before. Of course, those disciples would be awarded a certain amount of spirit stones according to the value of the treasures or the manual they contributed to their institution.

.....

In the yard, Ye Chen sat under a tree with his legs crossed, he stayed perfectly still.

This was a Pale Mystery tree, it was quite common in the Windy Mountains. Leaves of this kind of tree begin falling off in July, during mid-September, even a slight breeze would blow a couple of leaves off the tree.

After a couple of hours, tens of withered leaves had fallen on Ye Chen's hair and shoulder.

A series of light footsteps came from the outside, it sounded pretty far away but it got closer and closer.

"Is Ye Chen home?"

"Please? Is Ye Chen home?"

Ye Chen didn't answer.

Along with a creaking noise, the person at the door pushed the door open and walked in.

The one who had walked in was an attendant disciple. All attendant disciples were once inner disciples. According to the rules, all inner disciples who fail to step into the Clasp of the Yuan Realm before the age of twenty-four would be transferred to the Attendant Department, they would then become a warrior or an administrative member. Of course, they would each have a chance to become an outer elder once they break into the Clasp of the Yuan Realm. That was the most important matter to them.

This attendant disciple was about twenty-five years old, and was at the Late Condensing Reality Realm. Compared to most inner disciples, he was quite powerful, he was almost no worse than the top-ten inner disciples. Soon, he found Ye Chen sitting under the tree, and then slightly frowned.

When a martial artist was cultivating by himself in such a manner, any kind of disturbance was basically not allowed. If someone interrupted a martial artist's cultivation at a crucial moment, the martial artist might want to kill that person.

Letting out a helpless smile, the attendant disciple stood to the side and waited, he didn't let out even the slightest noise.

Swoosh

A great gale suddenly blew across, leaving tens of leaves, fluttering in the air.

Ye Chen opened his eyes, he had a sharp and dazzling gaze.

That attendant disciple was about to say something, but he suddenly saw something that made him completely dumbfounded. He saw Ye Chen sweep across the air with his piercing, sharp gaze, and immediately, the leaves in front of Ye Chen, that had drifted down from the sky, were cut into two, then into four, then into eight, and then they were turned to powder.

"Sword intent! Legendary sword intent!"

The attendant disciple screamed inside his own mind. Although he was only an ordinary attendant disciple, he still knew a little about it. Whether it was from the ancient books or from people's tales, sword artists who attained the sword intent could all hurt their enemies with invisible entities, such as a slight stream of air. With the sword intent, the sword artist could even turn a stream of air into a dangerous weapon and could take his enemies' lives away without even

being noticed, just in the way Ye Chen had attached the sword intent with the air in front of him with his gaze, and easily sliced those leaves.

“What?”

Ye Chen stood up, shook those leaves off his body and then asked.

“The leader called you.” said the attendant disciple politely.

“Lead the way.”

Ye Chen’s expression seemed quite bland. During these days, his desire to comprehend the sword intent had become less urgent. After his daily cultivation, he would always sit under the tree and meditate to free his mind and temporarily forget about this world and himself. Maybe because of this undemanding spiritual state, he had finally broken out of the half-step sword intent and comprehended the true sword intent that all sword artists desired. By now, both his cultivation and his soul power had improved in quality, as for the exact level he had achieved, even he didn’t know.

“Sure!”

The attendant disciple sounded very humble. He didn’t really need to particularly show his respect towards the inner disciples or the core disciples, but facing Ye Chen, he couldn’t help but express his respect and admiration. In this world, all powerful people were respected, even legendary geniuses would show an appropriate amount of respect when facing powerful people at high levels, because reckless disrespect might be dangerous to themselves.

Guided by the attendant disciple, Ye Chen came to the main meeting room.

Zhu Mei, Luo Hanshan and Xu Jing were all in the meeting room, along with a few inner elders. The school leader, Luo Xinglie was sitting in the main seat.

“Leader, and elders.” Ye Chen cupped his hands and saluted.

Luo Xinglie nodded to him.

“Tomorrow you all will leave for the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, before that, I want you to know that the inner space of the region can be very complicated and unpredictable. You might find a palace inside of a mountain, a tomb underwater, or a treasure mine under the ground. As for the methods to

enter all those places, they are plenty. Sometimes, a tree can serve as an entrance, sometimes you might need to move a gigantic piece of rock, or sometimes you may need to just jump off a mountain to enter a certain space. All in all, anything could happen in that region, so you have to be extra careful and stay calm, do not panic.”

“Yes!”

The four selected disciples nodded and said.

Lou Xinglie then continued, “The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region has a lot of treasures and secret manuals buried in it, for all the valuable objects that you might bring back, the school will award you with an equivalent amount of spirit stones. For example, you can get fifty pieces of low-grade spirit stones for a top grade Mortal realm secret manual, three-thousand low-grade spirit stones for a low-grade Earth Realm manual. Medium-grade Earth Realm manuals are extremely rare, they are difficult to find even in the ancient region, but each one can get you thirty-thousand mid-grade spirit stones. Now you should have an idea of the exchange rate. Of course, you can still learn the martial arts recorded in those manuals that you found, even after you contribute them to the school. But you can’t teach those arts to anyone else. Do you all understand?”

“Yes!”

Although Ye Chen was slightly surprised by the value of those treasures and the generous exchange rates of the school, he clearly understood that the ancient region was not a playground. Disciples from all nine nations would enter that region, this meant that killing would be hard to avoid, especially for those who carried valuable treasures with them.

## Chapter 139: Thunder Freer, Scorching Ancient Desert

A group of people set off the next morning.

This time, the escort team was especially huge, it included ten inner-elders and fifty outer-elders, all of them riding on eight Wind Vultures.

Three days later, the group left the Windy Nation.

“Outside the Windy Nation, danger can be found everywhere, we all have to be extra careful.” The Head Elder let out a resonating voice using his Zhen Qi.

“Yes!”

Some elders who have been to the South Zhuo Region understood this more than the others.

Wind Vultures were amazingly strong and powerful. They were each carrying eight people as easily as carrying air, and still maintained supersonic speed all the way. However, any living creature would eventually get tired, therefore, the Head Elder would usually find a place to take a rest every two days, and then they would continue on their journey.

Dazzling lightning bolts flashed across the air while ear-piercing thunder resounded throughout the sky, but the group of Wind Vultures maintained their perfectly stable flight. They were fifth-grade demonic flying beasts, which could fly under any sort of weather.

Luo Hanshan raised his head, he took a glance at the sky and then said as he grinned, “I heard that there are three layers of sky above our world, the first one is called Amazing Sky, it contains the four natural elements, which are lightning, fire, water and the wind, the inner space is extremely violent, any martial artist under the Astral Reaching Realm would be completely crushed in there; the second layer of the sky is called Extreme Void, not even Astral Reaching Realm martial artists could survive there; the top layer is called Above Heaven, where any human being, except the Life and Death Realm martial artists, would absolutely die, even their souls would vanish.”

Amazing Sky, Extreme Void, Above Heaven!

Ye Chen glanced at Xu Jing and said, “Senior sister, your Golden Three Realm



Art was created based upon these three layers of sky, wasn't it?"

Xu Jing responded blandly, "How can the Golden Three Realm Art even be compared with the three layers of the sky? It's far from being comparable to them."

Followed by a sudden and thunderous sizzling noise, a lightning bolt abruptly struck towards Ye Chen and the others standing around him. The Head Elder raised his hand and snuffed the lightning bolt and said, "As long as we're not in the Amazing Sky layer, these lightning bolts can do us no harm, so don't worry."

"The True Spirit Continent is indeed interesting, there are too many things that I don't know about yet." Exclaimed Ye Chen in his mind. In the world where he came from, almost anyone could be killed by a slight strike from lightning, and the lighting in that world was far less powerful than the lightning found in the True Spirit Continent. After all, that world barely contained any natural Yuan Qi, while this world was filled with dense and pure natural Yuan Qi, these two worlds were not even on the same level. Just now, a fierce lightning bolt had been snuffed out by the Head Elder so easily, that it had seriously shocked Ye Chen.

As the thick layer of clouds was blown away, it started to rain. Fortunately, the Wind Vultures had been flying above the layers of clouds, this allowed the group of people to not have to worry about the rain.

A while later, the air in front of the group suddenly became violent.

Visibly, a huge, hazy, grey gale swooshed straight down from the top. Inside of it, there were dazzling lightning bolts and electric currents surrounding a faint silhouette of a human.

"Astral Reaching Realm martial artist! Let's take a detour!" The Head Elder's expression instantly changed, as he said while he directed the Windy Vulture to turn in the air, it seemed that he did not dare to go straight towards that place.

The gale suddenly dissipated as all those lightning bolts also dimmed down, then a human silhouette suddenly appeared right in front of the troops. It was a middle-aged man of an average height, he had pale skin, and was wearing a large blue cloak with small lightning bolts sparkling on his hair. He was giving off a pressure that directly reached their souls, this made all of them not even dare to think about resisting.

“Who are you?”

“Sorry for the disturbance,” said the Head Elder with a pale look, he cupped his hands and politely greeted the man, “I am the Head Elder of the Windy Nation’s Sky Cloud Martial School.”

“Sky Cloud Martial School!” The middle-aged man laughed out and said, “So you’re from Xian Yunzi, the old bastard’s school, ha, him and me, we're old friends, you can just call me Thunder Freer.”

‘Thunder Freer! What a potent name!’ thought Ye Chen.

The Head Elder loosened his face and then said, “Ah, Senior Thunder Freer. I have heard about you from the Grand Elder while I was still a young man, it’s said that your Great Heavenly Lightning had once shocked the entire South Zhuo Region!”

Thunder Freer showed the whites of his eyes and responded, “Well, that old bastard, Xian Yunzi always exaggerates. I was nothing tens of years ago, back then, the Nine Evil Cult was ruling this world, and I could do nothing but run as far as possible. Ah, are you heading to the Scorching Ancient Desert? These few kids are not bad, you should focus on cultivating them.”

Ye Chen and the other three were the best disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School. Except for the Emerald Martial Palace, they were not weaker than the disciples from any of the other three top-ranked institutions. Thunder Freer saw through them with only a single glance, this made him continuously nod his head.

“Thank you, Senior. We are indeed heading to the Scorching Ancient Desert. The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region only unlocks every ten years, so it’s a precious opportunity.” said the Head Elder. The Head Elder was an old man, while Thunder Freer only looked to be less than fifty years old, but when the two of them were standing face to face, the Head Elder acted more like a junior.

“Good, I’ll continue purifying my Zhen Qi, you should just continue with your journey.”

Thunder Freer said as he waved his sleeve and then transformed into a wave of lightning bolts that darted straight up into the air, tens of thousands of meters

high from the ground. He even tore apart the upper layer of air currents as he went past them.

A series of ear-piercing sizzling and popping noises leaked out from the ripped part of the upper layer. If one looked into it, they would be able to see fierce lightning bolts dazzling and roaring, it would instill fear in anyone's mind.

“Let's go.”

The Head Elder took a long and deep breath, and then ordered the Wind Vulture to start moving again.

After the journey started once again, the Head Elder abruptly started talking.

“You may think that Thunder Freer is less than fifty years old, but in actuality, he is over a hundred years old. As for the reason, it's simple, once a martial artist steps into the Astral Reaching Realm, if they do not suffer any severe disasters, then he or she could easily live up to two-hundred years. Therefore, they will usually be twice as old as they seem to be.”

“Is it that difficult for high-level martial artists to break into the higher levels? Thunder Freer is over a hundred years old now, but he still hasn't stepped into the next level yet.” Ye Chen asked.

“Countless martial artists live in this True Spirit Continent, ninety-nine percent of them are stuck under the Clasp of Yuan Realm, and among the rest of them, ninety-nine percent are stuck under the Astral Reaching Realm. This clearly shows that it is extremely difficult to break into the higher levels. Of course, there're always a few amazing geniuses in every generation. For them, breaking through to the higher levels is as easy as eating and drinking. For example, the Mysterious Queen, who was the only one who managed to break into the Life and Death Realm in a hundred years, she was one of the few marvellous geniuses among her generation. Within just a few decades, she has domineered over a piece of land and declared herself a queen, it was a pure legend. As for those who used to be as influential as her, although none of them managed to reach her level, most of them have reached the Sea of Souls Realm.”

Zhu Mei, whose outfit was embossed with lively plum blossoms, grinned and said, “Although talent is important, fortune is also necessary. Otherwise, one could never reach the top even with amazing talent. Brother Ye, this time, the

Heavenly Dream Ancient Region can barely serve us as a good chance, if we can encounter some fortune in that region, we might gain results comparable to years of industrious cultivation.”

Ye Chen nodded, he agreed with Zhu Mei. She was right, fortune was essential, if he wanted to breakthrough as fast as he could. In fact, fortune can also be considered a resource, as long as you have enough resources, you could certainly improve rapidly and gain a solid foundation, but if you didn't have the resources, you would also fall to the level of ordinary people once your talent has run out.

.....

A boundless desert became visible under a bright sunshine.

The extremely high temperature seemed to twist even the air. The sand seemed as smooth as a mirror.

“This Scorching Ancient Desert existed since the ancient times, the air in this area is filled with pure and violent natural Fire Yuan Qi, and hurricanes of fire Yuan Qi appear quite frequently. We can't stay for too long above the clouds, let's go down!” Once the group arrived at the desert, the Head Elder ordered the vultures to descend.

Hot streams of wind blew across them. Even after being protected by Zhen Qi, everyone in the group still felt some heat. However, this was only the edge of the desert, in the central area, the temperature could be ten times higher than this place.

It should be mentioned that sometimes bad luck could truly turn easy things into something extremely troublesome.

The Wind Vultures flew for less than five miles under the layer of clouds and streams of roaring flames roiled down from the air and shrouded the group.

“A fire Yuan Qi hurricane! Let's break it together!”

As he growled out, the Head Elder straightened his body, kept his feet apart as wide as his shoulders, he took a deep breath and then thrust his finger up towards the sky and swung it downwards.

Followed by a loud noise that sounded like a piece of thick cloth being torn

apart, a stream of fiery gale was cut into two by a purple light beam, and dissipated.

At that moment, the Fourth Elder did not dare to even slightly move. He cultivated Fire Zhen Qi, it meant his Zhen Qi could possibly aid this fire Yuan Qi hurricane. While facing enemies, he could use this as a great advantage, but now, he might grill all the others with a single move.”

The other elders each launched their own moves and sent waves of power steams into the air that stopped the hurricane from expanding and gradually devoured it. Ye Chen also let out a stream of power, but what then struck him was that his power stream was evaporated by the extreme heat before it even approached the hurricane.”

Breaking out from the hurricane, every single one in the group was soaked in sweat and was gasping for air. The Wind Vultures also didn't have an easy time inside that hurricane, even some of their feathers were burnt. Fortunately, none of them had been hurt.

This desert was seventy to eighty hundred miles in radius, it was much broader than the Windy Nation. But according to the legends, this desert had been way larger than it was now, it was over five-hundred-thousand miles in radius, and in this desert, there used to be one country, called the Scorching Ancient Kingdom. But that kingdom collapsed, and the desert had been shrinking year by year, leading to what it looked like now.

From a large distance away, they saw a cyan rainbow standing straight on the ground and pierced directly towards the heaven, it seemed like a pillar in the sky.

“The cyan rainbow has appeared, that means the ancient region will unlock in three days from now. Let’s first find a place to stay and wait.”

With his amazing eyesight, the Head Elder saw that quite a lot of people have arrived near the rainbow.

Soon, the Wind Vulture landed.

Ye Chen raised his head, and looked at the cyan rainbow. That rainbow was as gigantic as a mountain, but he couldn’t tell how it had formed. The place where the rainbow was rooted in the ground, a faint, closed door of light was present,

it was thirty-three zhang high and fifty-five zhang wide.

Surrounding the rainbow, thousands of people have built their tents. These people were dressed in different styles, some in neat yellow robes, some in black outfits, some in blue and some in white or purple. Those different patterns on their sleeves showed that these people came from different institutions.

By now, the Emerald Martial Palace's people had already arrived. Among all the institutions of Windy Nation, they were the closest to this desert. Of course, they were only relatively closer. They have also had to travel at least hundreds of miles, after all, just the distance between the edge and central area of this desert was seventy to eighty miles. Eight of their disciples have come, and Ye Chen knew three of them, they were 'Young Master Emerald' Zhuang Fei, Liu Wuxiang and Ji Xueyan.

As he turned his eyes away from Emerald Martial Palace's people, Ye Chen's pupils suddenly shrunk.

So many elite young martial artists.

Almost all of the hundreds of young martial artists from all the institutions were in the Late Condensing Reality Realm, over eighty percent of them were at or above the pre-Childe-level, fifty percent were at Childe-level, and tens of them looked as powerful as Lin Qi, they were clearly at the same level as Young Master North Snow.

This wasn't the only thing that made Ye Chen so surprised, he also found quite a lot of Clasp of Yuan Realm young martial artists among these people. He had seen seven or eight of them at the first glance, and he assumed that more of them would arrive later.

## Chapter 140 – The Gathering of the Geniuses from the Nine Nations

Luo Hanshan looked really serious as he said, “Brother Ye, we must be careful on this trip to the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, a lot of young powerful warriors on the Hidden Dragon Ranking have come.”

“Young warriors on the Hidden Dragon Ranking?” Ye Chen’s eyebrows twitched, he remembered that Zhuang Fei had been ranked 68th last year in the Hidden Dragon Ranking. Of course, he had only been at the peak of the Late Condensing Reality Realm back then.

Luo Hanshan said, “In the Hidden Dragon Ranking last year, all the warriors who were ranked fiftieth and more were all at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm, while the ones that were ranked up to the fifties were all at the Early Clasp of Yuan Realm, and the top ten were all at the peak of the Early Clasp of Yuan Realm; while the top three were all at the Mid Clasp of Yuan Realm.

They represented the top of the younger generation of the North Zhuo region. They might even be stronger than the older generation. Especially the top three, I heard that with their power they could already compete with the top five leaders of our Windy Nation.”

“The top three could compete with the top five leaders?”

Not just Ye Chen, even Zhu Mei and Xu Jing looked surprised. All their eyes landed on Luo Hanshan, who was the only one in the Sky Cloud Martial School that had attended the Hidden Dragon Ranking in the past decade, although he had eventually been eliminated.

Luo Hanshan nodded heavily, “If you've never watched the Hidden Dragon Ranking, you would not know how powerful they are. If you are in the top ten of the Hidden Dragon Ranking, you will have the title of North Zhuo region’s monstrous talent. And the top three can already compete for the title of worldwide genius, if they have the luck and the opportunities, they might even be able to enter the Sea of Soul Realm and maybe even the Life and Death Realm. They are the most powerful generation of the past century. When I say that they could compete with the top five leaders, it was already one and half year ago, god knows how powerful they are now.”

“That powerful?” Zhu Mei was pretty relaxed, she had never thought too highly of herself, even though she was the Eldest Sister disciple of Sky Cloud Martial School. But, as a person with such status, she still had her pride. Even so, she could not help but frown when she heard his words.

“I know that you won't believe me right now, but you have to know that the top three of the Hidden Dragon Ranking came from the top three nations in the North Zhuo Region. They have an inhuman comprehension ability, and the martial arts they trained were ten times better than ours. And they never lack any resources. Just from these three factors, you could probably already imagine the level of their power.”

‘Compare to them, my power now is definitely not enough!’

Ye Chen let out a breath, he asked, “Brother Luo, who are those powerful warriors from the Hidden Dragon Ranking?”

As his eyes focused at the group on the east side, Luo Hanshan said, “The man in the blood-red robes with the gold colored designs on it is Mo Wuxue from the rank 7 martial institution in the Rudra Nation – the Evil Blood Martial School. He’s twenty-two years old right now and was ranked fifty-four in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. People call him the ‘One bloodless blade’. I heard that one year ago, he had reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, which was even earlier than Zhuang Fei. His blade art is just like his title, brutal and efficient.”

Ye Chen followed Luo Hanshan’s line of sight. Seven hundred meters to the east, among seven disciples dressed in blood-red robes, a pale-looking teenager was particularly noticeable. He was wearing blood-red robes with a gold colored design, he was slim and tall, his gracefulness had a hint of evil and murderous aura, and looked extremely dangerous.

“This man is dangerous!” Ye Chen had an extremely powerful soul power, which was especially good at observing various auras. Due to this, he could tell that this Mo Wuxue was even more powerful than Zhuang Fei. If Zhuang Fei was a strong and relaxed fighter, then Mo Wuxue was a huge furious snake, once he attacked it would be the time for his opponents to die.

Afraid of attracting Mo Wuxue’s attention, Luo Hanshan soon turned away and looked towards a person on the north-east side, “That person is called Yuan



Hengying, he is also from a rank 7 martial institution in the Rudra Nation – the Sky Eagle Castle, he is twenty-three years old now, and was ranked 59 in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. He was also known as the ‘Killer Eagle’. His cultivation level was about the same as Mo Wuxue, but he was more brutal. Mo Wuxue kills for the sake of killing, and he does it for fun. Both of them are monsters, rumor says that the people they have killed are countless, and they are now both Clasp of Yuan Realm warriors.”

This time, Ye Chen had already spotted Yuan Hengying. It was not that he had a higher cultivation level, in fact the truth was that Yuan Hengying was actually not as powerful as Mo Wuxue, it was just that he had an extremely powerful murderous aura, no matter how hard he tried to hide it. There was an old saying in the True Spirit Continent, “If you kill one thousand opponents, your murderous aura will grow as well”, it meant that a warrior’s murderous aura would continue to increase as he killed people. When a warrior killed more than ten thousand opponents, his murderous aura would turn into Evil Qi. The Evil Qi would not only increase the warriors’ fighting strength, it could also pressure his opponents mentally. The only person in the Sky Cloud Martial School who managed a thousand kills was Meng Chong. Although his real power was not actually higher than any of the others, his murderous aura had boosted his sword arts, and allowed him to kill his opponents in just one attack. However, compared to Yuan Hengying, it was like an ant being compared to an elephant, they were not at all on the same level.

Touching his nose, Ye Chen thought to himself, ‘This is a true killer right here! He had probably killed more than ten thousand people! However, Mo Wuxue is almost at the same level, seeing that his murderous aura is starting to change into Evil Qi, he must also have killed about six or seven thousand people already!’

Ye Chen could not help but let out a forced smile. Until now, he had only killed less than fifty people, and they had mostly been for the missions.

Ye Chen had stared at him too long, Yuan Hengying in the dark robes turned his head, and then smiled for a second. His white teeth looked kind of creepy under the reflection of the sun.

Suddenly, Luo Hanshan and Zhu Mei turned quite pale. Yuan Hengying’s Evil Qi was too strong, even though it was just one glance, it had an aggressive impact

on other people. People who were not strong enough might have puked out blood, because if the Evil Qi was to accumulate in the human body, it might do even worse damage.

The weird thing was, when Xu Jing saw his horrible look, she looked just the same as always, still carrying that peaceful expression.

As for Ye Chen, with the help of his half-step sword intent, it would be impossible for Yuan Hengying to hurt him with the Evil Qi as the sword intent could cut through any evil.

Yuan Hengying looked a little bit surprised, He saw that only two out of the four people were affected by his Evil Qi, and the other two were not at all affected. It would have made sense if the unaffected two were Clasp of Yuan Realm warriors, but they were only at the Late Condensing Reality Realm.

‘Hehe!’

‘These kind of people are the best ones to kill.’ Yuan Hengying licked his lips.

After a while, Luo Hanshan was finally able to calm himself, he was afraid of looking at Yuan Hengying again, so he carried on introducing the other young warriors from the Hidden Dragon Ranking.

“Cai Yueyao, from the rank 7 martial institution of Rudra Nation – Moonshine Martial School, she was ranked 64 in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking, she is known as the ‘Moonshine Phoenix’. She uses the [Water Moon Slim Sword], which allows her to hurt people with the minimal effort.”

“Lu Shao, from the rank 7 martial institution of White Wonder Nation – the White Deer Cave. He was ranked 61st in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. When it comes to speed, he could be ranked within the top thirties. He could kill people in the blink of an eye without even being detected.”

“Hong Qianjun, from the rank 7 marital institutions of White Wonder Nation – Mountain Martial School, he was ranked 69th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. He has the title ‘Thousand Pound Palm’. His palm strength had reached beyond one thousand pounds, it’s just like a mountain pressuring down on a human. People who are not as strong as him would be beaten with a single touch, without any chance to fight back.”

“Xue Heng, from the rank 7 martial institution of the Sky Snake Nation – The Invisible Martial School, he was ranked 57 in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. He was called the ‘Invisible Hand’, he is proficient when it comes to killing people without being noticed. Most of the time, his opponents would have already died before they even realize that it was him that has killed them. So, there is rarely someone who is not terrified when they fight against him.”

“ ... ”

Luo Hanshan introduced eight people in a row, he then stopped and said, “There are three huge nations in the North Zhuo Region, ten medium nations, and twenty-four small nations. Even though the disciples from nine nations that had come this time are a lot, there are only thirteen of them in the Hidden Dragon Ranking. Rudra Nation as the top of the twenty-four small nations has four warriors that were in the Hidden Dragon Ranking; the medium nations – White Wonder Nation and the Sky Snake Nation – are behind the Rudra Nation, they only have three of them. And our Windy Nation have the Emerald Child, Zhuang Fei, which adds up to eleven people. And the rest of the five small nations only have two people all together. Of course, the Hidden Dragon Ranking was already one and a half year ago, god knows how many more powerful warriors have appeared since then. There might be other new Clasp of Yuan Realm warriors appearing in front of us, you never know.”

‘The Rudra Nation is not simple!’

Ye Chen had already heard ages ago about how powerful the Rudra Nation was. As the top of the twenty-four small nations, they had more geniuses than the normal medium nations. A normal medium nation would have five times more land than a small nation, and within a normal medium nation, there would be hundreds and thousands of martial institutions, competing with each other aggressively. A normal small nation would never be able to compete with it, but Rudra Nation was an exception.

Zhu Mei nodded, “In the Hidden Dragon Ranking, the three big nations had taken up forty percent of the places, the twenty-four small nations had taken up thirty percent, and in that thirty percent, the Rudra Nation had taken up twenty-five percent all by itself. Even if the medium nations are included, the Rudra Nation could be ranked 4. Hence their reputation in the North Zhuo Region.”

“However, among all the young powerful warriors present, there seems to be no one ranked fiftieth or higher.” Ye Chen said suddenly.

Zhu Mei and Luo Hanshan glanced at Ye Chen with a weird look on their face.

Luo Hanshan forced a laugh and said, “Brother Ye, don’t you realize? Ninety percent of the people who were in the Hidden Dragon Ranking were all from the rank 7 martial institutions. Only one or two were from a rank 8 martial institution. None of them were from the rank 9 martial institutions. And even the rank 7 martial institutions could be separated into different ranks. The Emerald Martial Palace and the North Snow Martial Academy could only be counted as normal rank 7 martial institutions. The Evil Blood Martial School, the Sky Eagle Castle and the Moon Shine Martial School from the Rudra Nation can be regarded as medium rank 7 martial institutions. The true powerful martial institutions are mostly from the medium nations, so even if they don’t have many powerful warriors, the quantity of warriors is way higher, that is why they could be ranked in the top fifty. And the three huge nations are even more impressive, besides the rank 7 martial institutions, there are even rank 6 martial institutions. The top ten of the Hidden Dragon Rank were all from rank 6 martial institutions, without exception.”

Ye Chen said, “So, only the powerful martial institutions can produce the most powerful disciples, even in Rudra Nation.”

“Yes, that is the logic. Although there might be exceptions, it does not prove anything, it could only mean that they were lucky. However, if the exception joined an even more powerful martial institution, he might become even more powerful.”

Luo Hanshan suddenly looked at Ye Chen and said, “Actually, you can be counted as half a monster. If you manage to fully comprehend the sword intent, then you would truly be counted as a monster. Too bad that you don’t have enough time to grow, otherwise it will not be impossible for you to compete with the geniuses in the Hidden Dragon Ranking.”

Hearing him, Zhu Mei glanced at Ye Chen with admiration, “Comprehending the sword and blade intent is something that every sword artist and blade artist dreams about. Even among those monsters in the Hidden Dragon Ranking, rarely

anyone has ever learned it. I have to say, you have plenty of potential in this area.”

Ye Chen laughed. He had already fully comprehended the sword intent, but he was still trying to get used to it.

Ho!

AHWOOO!

SHOO!

In the desert, ten huge demonic beasts have flown over from different directions. A lot of people were on those beasts; they were obviously from other martial institutions.

“The last two warriors from the Hidden Dragon Ranking are here.” Luo Hanshan said slowly.

## Chapter 141 – The Opening of the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region

Shoo! Shoo!

Even though the beasts hadn't landed yet, two young figures had already jumped off, they were as fast as lightning.

One of them was as bulky as a mountain, he was at least two meters and two inches tall which was even bigger than Xiao Ye; the other one looked more feminine, his eyes shone with a cold light, like a poisonous snake waiting for an opportunity to attack.

“Lin Yue, the top disciple of the rank 7 martial institution - Tiger Dragon Mountain from the Elephant Mountain Nation; Wei Dongshe, the top disciple of the rank 7 martial institution – Blue Bamboo Martial School from the Thousand Thread Nation. Those two have already reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, they were ranked 70th and 66th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking.”

Listening to Luo Hanshan's words, various thoughts filled Ye Chen's mind. Among the thirteen warriors of the Hidden Dragon Rank, there were only two of them who haven't reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, but even they should not be underestimated, since it was already a matter of one and a half year ago, and they managed to be in the Hidden Dragon Ranking with the power of the peak of Condensing Reality Realm. Their fighting power was probably even more powerful than the North Snow Child and the Duanmu Child. Not to mention that one and a half year had already passed since then.

In contrast, the cultivation level of the children in the Windy Nation was less impressive.

“Hehe, so many people have already come. There seems to be a lot of familiar faces.” Lin Yue twisted his neck, making the bones produce cracking sounds.

Wei Dongshe scanned the crowd, and then sneered, “Besides the people from the Hidden Dragon Ranking, the rest are all losers. I hope they won't encounter me, otherwise I will kill them all.”

“I see that you are still full of murderous intent. But I would watch out for Zhuang Fei if I were you. In the Hidden Dragon Ranking, you punched him quite badly. This time, I think he will come seek revenge.” Lin Yue added fuel to the

fire.

“He barely counts as an opponent. I will gladly satisfy his needs.”

Although the two of them weren't talking too loudly, most people with good hearing had already heard their conversation.

On side of the Emerald Martial Palace.

A couple of core disciples seemed to be pissed off by their comments.

“This guy is so arrogant. Does he really think he could win against our Senior Brother without any struggles?”

“Whatever, our Senior Brother has already reached the Clasp of Yuan Realm, he will lead the Emerald Martial Palace to the next level. Who is he to stop him? How ignorant.”

Zhuang Fei stopped their chattering, he said without any emotions, “I will kill him once I am in there, so stop talking.”

“Yes!”

The disciples all stopped chattering at once as requested.

The night soon came.

The night time in the [Scorching Ancient Desert] was colder than expected, there was even a layer of ice that formed over the surface of the sand, it was as hard as iron.

“Damn desert.”

Some of the martial disciples who just came out for the bathrooms could not help but shiver and curse at the cold weather.

In the thick tent, Ye Chen was sitting with his feet tucked under his body.

Right now, his Zhen Qi had almost reached the peak of the Late Condensing Reality, it was still lacking some stability which forbid him from pushing it all the way through to the next level.

On the True Spirit Continent, different people trained in different ways. Some of them preferred to accumulate Zhen Qi for a big improvement, while some would rather improve step by step; there were also people trying everything they

can to reach the one realm that they got stuck at for an unbearably long time due to them burning away all of their Qi.

Currently, Ye Chen belonged to the second group of people. He trained one stage at a time, with both his feet on the ground. It was not because he did not want to be like the first type, but rather that he really didn't have the time to accumulate progress since his real training time had been less than two years, there was no way for him to compare with the others. As for the third type, the downside of it was that it costs too much, rarely anyone would choose that option.

The good thing about taking one step at a time was that it allowed one to master their power faster, and use hundred percent of their power to its limit, without wasting anything.

It was one silent night.

Noon of the second day.

More people from other martial institutions had arrived, which included the Purple Sun Martial School, North Snow Martial Academy and the Rudra Martial School from the Windy Nation. Of course, it also included the only rank 9 family from the Windy Nation – the Duanmu Family.

“So many powerful warriors.”

Ouyang Lie and the group gasped, their pride suddenly disappearing.

As he took a glance, Ye Chen was slightly shocked, because Yuan Xuemei was also here. ‘I don't think she was even ranked in the top six of the Rudra Martial School! But she did have great comprehension, maybe the leader of the Rudra Martial School wanted her to have more opportunities.’

“Another group of people coming to die.”

Yuan Hengying and Mo Wuxue sneered.

On the third day.

A red sun rose up from the east, dyeing the Scorching Ancient Desert in a blood-red color.

“The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region will be opening in half an hour, hand over



all your storage rings.” The Head Elder gathered the four of them and said.

Luo Hanshan looked curious, “Head Elder, why?”

The Head Elder laughed, “You will have to blame me for this. I forgot to mention it earlier, the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is located in the gap between spaces where a small universe was formed. However, the universe there is unlike the one we are in, it rejects all foreign objects. The storage rings are made of space crystals which will be especially strongly rejected. If you bring it with you when you enter, they will be crushed into ashes by the huge pressure of the space.”

The four of them immediately understood, they took off their storage rings and handed them to the Head Elder.

Putting away the storage rings, the Head Elder said, “Don’t worry, the storage rings are your personal belongings. Without your permission, we will not look into them.”

‘I sure hope so!’ Ye Chen was really worried that the Head Elder would check his storage ring, because he had stored more than ten thousand low grade spirit stones, and a low rank treasure blade, and another mid rank spirit stone. He had no idea how valuable his belongings were, but he had never seen any Inner Elder wearing a mid-rank storage ring.

Ye Chen forced a laugh. ‘Maybe I am just being paranoid, why would the Head Elder take my storage ring? It is almost impossible. ‘

Of course, Ye Chen was not ashamed of it. His motto was to be careful and cautious. If he did not have this habit, he would have made huge mistakes by now. Even if he trusted them, there was no need for him to share every single detail about himself with them.

The cyan rainbow got brighter and brighter, that surreal light door had become solid as if it was made out of crystals, hiding itself in the cyan light.

Half an hour passed by in the blink of an eye.

Boom!

The light door opened slowly, the loud noise terrified people.

The Head Elder let out a deep breath, he then said with a serious face, “You should all enter now. But remember, no matter where you are transferred to, keep calm, and do not panic!”

“Yes, Elder.”

The four of them were about to enter the door.

Shoo!

“Haha, the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is controlled by you martial institutions, how come we can’t enter? Today, no one is going to stop me.”

Two human figures flew towards the light door extremely fast, bringing up the sand behind them. They were so fast that their speed was almost close to the speed of sound, making a loud high-pitch sound.

‘Two Mid Clasp Yuan Realm warriors!’

Ye Chen stopped, he was surprised that they had managed to hide with everyone watching.

The most bizarre thing was that all those Elders from different martial institutions did not stop them. Some of them shook their head with pity, but most of them were sneering.

Sizz!

Sizz!

Then, something shocking happened. The two of them were like moths that were attracted to the flame, they were burnt the second they touched the blue shine, leaving nothing behind, not even the storage rings on their fingers.

“Fools, if everyone could enter, it would not be just the two of you. All those powerful warriors from different martial institutions would have already gone.”

“The rules of the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region are really weird, only people who have a bone age that is not older than twenty-four can enter. Even those powerful warriors who are in the Life and Death Realm and are able to change their bone ages could only barely do it.”

A lot of people who had sensed what had happened with their soul power

started talking. Ye Chen suddenly understood why those elders did not try to stop them, it was because they already knew this would happen. However, it was not hard to understand though. The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region had been discovered for a while now, all those martial institutions should have quite a good understanding about it, or else they would not let their best disciples enter without hesitation.

“I am going to enter now.”

The top disciple of the Evil Blood Martial School, Mo Wuxue made the first move. His body turned into a bloody shine and entered the light door, and then completely disappeared.

It was almost at the same time that the other powerful warriors from the Hidden Dragon Ranking followed after him, they entered the light door extremely fast accompanied by various colored Zhen Qi, creating quite a beautiful scene.

Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!

The next second, it was like a plague of locusts, six hundred martial disciples rushed to the light door all together. Some of them started to fight with each other, and exchanged palm attacks.

“Let’s go in as well!”

Seeing that everyone had already gone in, Luo Hanshan could not wait any longer, so he jumped towards the light door.

“What a view!”

It was Ye Chen’s first time seeing so many young powerful warriors gathered together, he could not help but make a comment. Then he shook his head, followed Xu Jing and calmly entered the light door.

“Ouyang Lie, Ouyang Ming, the two of you don’t forget: kill every Sky Cloud Martial School disciple you meet, do not let them go easily. If the conditions allow, you can join the other martial institutions and assassinate them, especially that brat called Ye Chen.” The Purple Sun Martial School Elder passed the message to the top disciple Ouyang Lie and the second disciple Ouyang Ming with his Zhen Qi.

An evil light passed through Ouyang Ming's eyes, he then responded with his Zhen Qi, "Don't worry, Elder. Even if you did not remind us, I would still take out the top four disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School. As for that Ye Chen, although it will be tricky, it won't be impossible, there will be a time when he will have to fight against someone tough."

"Good. That was exactly what I meant." The Purple Sun Martial School Elder sneered.

Ouyang Lie said without hesitation, "As long as I am there, those four would not be coming back alive."

"If so, I am counting on you then."

Shoo! Shoo!

The two of them entered the light door with their unspeakable purpose.

The other four Purple Sun Martial School disciples also followed them.

On the side of the Sky Cloud Martial School, the Fourth Elder noticed those mysterious movements, he passed on the message to the Head Elder with his Zhen Qi, "Those bastards from the Purple Sun Martial School are not planning something evil, are they?"

The head Elder said, "From the moment they entered the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, everything is in their hands. We will have to believe that they will make it out alive. It would be nice if they could kill some of the Purple Sun Martial School disciples before coming back."

"Huh, Luo Hanshan and Xu Jing are pretty brutal when it's necessary; Zhu Mei is still quite soft on people. As for Ye Chen, I could not quite get a read him, I wonder if he would go easy on people or not."

"Don't underestimate Ye Chen. In the critical moments, he would be more brutal than anyone else."

Once he entered the light door, Ye Chen felt the space around him twisting, he could not see or sense anything, even though his eyes were open the whole time. Then, his body became lighter and lighter, it was like he was traveling through time, the speed was inhumanly fast.

He had no idea how long it had been.

Ye Chen appeared in a huge marshland. Besides the grey bubbly marsh around him, there were some weird looking giant trees, and also some odd sizzling sounds.

## Chapter 142 – Killing in the Marshland

“Golden Tip Silver Snake Plant!”

As he looked around, Ye Chen’s attention was grabbed by something on the land ten meters away. It was a grey-colored rough land. And in the middle of that land, there was a little plant that was filled with silver colored scales. On the top of that plant, there was a hint of gold-colored light, with a slight glow.

“This medicinal plant should be worth fifty thousand gold, it is extremely rare. So lucky, and how random is it to see this here.” Ye Chen would have to admit that he was a bit surprised. A plant of that price would be almost impossible to find. If it was refined into a protective pellet, it would be worth at least five million gold. Then it would be something that even Clasp of Yuan Realm warriors would fight for.

Without any hesitation, Ye Chen waved his hand in the air. That [Golden Tip Silver Snake Plant] landed in his hands as he willed. However, before he could study it more carefully, that rough land suddenly started to rise. It was divided into three parts. A cold light came together and focused on him.

That was no rough looking ground, it was an alligator-looking demonic beast. Splash!

The beast jumped out of water, its ten-meter-huge body attacked towards Ye Chen along with its rotten smell. It opened its huge mouth in the air, and you could see its endless sharp teeth within.

Ye Chen did not panic at all, he instead punched at the beast’s head.

Chin!

His ten-thousand-pound strength along with his purified Zhen Qi could only make the beast take a few steps back, it could not even wound it a little.

“Die!”

With the first punch ending in no result, Ye Chen sent out another punch towards the beast’s stomach, bringing up a wind which made his cloths flutter in the air.

Shoo!

This punch not only consisted his thousands of jin strength, it also had an unbreakable sharp light, which punched right through the beast. Its blood soaked the whole marshland.

Ye Chen took out a black bag with gold colored lace. He placed the extracted beast core along with the jade box carrying the Golden Tip Silver Snake Plant into the bag.

He tied up the bag and put it around his waist. Ye Chen's body then flashed and disappeared into the marshland.

He did not walk far before another danger appeared in front of him.

Ten bird beasts that resembled the shape of snakes jumped out from the huge trees on the both sides of the marshland. They attacked Ye Chen from different directions, while making weird sizzling sounds.

"Tyrant's fist!"

Ye Chen threw out a punch. A black light formed an umbrella and covered Ye Chen's body. The horrifying weird bird beasts crashed into the black light as if it was an invisible wall, they were all bounced back by the after wave of the punch. Blood spilled from their beaks and their wings were broken. They started to fall into the marshland making it look like it was raining birds, they slowly sank to the bottom of the marsh.

"The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is still just the way it was in the ancient times. Even the beasts were from the ancient times, no wonder they are so unbelievably strong!"

According to the level of the Beast Qi, Ye Chen was able to identify that the alligator beast was a rank 4 beast, and the weird-looking bird beasts were rank 3 beasts without any effort. However, compared to the demonic beasts outside, the beasts here were at least three times or more powerful. That was not all, they also had extremely tough defences which was the reason they were not easily killed by the tyrant's fist.

Without knowing how big the marshland was, Ye Chen had already walked for more than half an hour, but he still hadn't seen the edge of the marshland.

During his exploration, he had encountered countless ancient demonic beasts. Just earlier, a cow-sized snail beast had shot a pile of sticky fluid towards Ye Chen. It was not only sticky like the super glue, but it was also filled with poisonous gas. If it hadn't been for Ye Chen's excellent reflexes that allowed him to avoid the attack while holding his breath, he would have been badly injured.

Eventually, this snail beast was decapitated by Ye Chen with a single sword attack. It was also the first time that Ye Chen had to use his sword since he arrived in this marshland, one could tell from this how powerful that snail beast was.

Stepping on the branches of a tree, Ye Chen balanced himself. He turned his head and looked at the dark burnt ground ten meters away.

On that flat ground, there was a broken stone stele, the carvings on it had been smudged.

And right in front of the stone stele, there was an iron stick inserted into the ground, leaving only one meter of it still outside.

‘Huh?’

Ye Chen's eyes brightened. He could sense that there was a spirit in that iron stick. A normal weapon would not have something like that, so he was certain that it was a great weapon.

Although he preferred a treasure sword, he was not going to ignore other weapons. In the market, a low rank treasure weapon could be sold for at least a few millions of gold, maybe even three hundred million gold if it was of good quality.

Using the Crane Shadow Step Art, Ye Chen disappeared into the air. When he appeared again, he had already arrived in front of the stone stele.

He reached out and grabbed the iron stick, and then pulled it out with force.

Boom!

A red flame shot to the sky, burning all the trees in the surroundings to ashes.

This was not an iron stick, it was a dark iron spear, with the length of two and a half meters. There was a mysterious pattern on the spear's body. And the top



part of the spear had four sides to it, there was a gap between each part. At a glance, it looked like there was a helix flame burning on top of the iron stick.

“Low rank Treasure spear, it is definitely valuable!”

Ye Chen could sense that there was a burning aura floating inside of the iron spear. Even the slightest Zhen Qi could make this burning Qi shoot out and wound people. However, compared to the Tiger Head treasure Blade in his storage ring and Lin Qi’s Air Splitter Blade, it was still lacking something. The treasure weapons have the reputation of having their own power, like the blade Qi inside the Tiger Head treasure blade did, even a Mortal Realm warrior could use it to its best. As for Lin Qi’s Air Splitter Blade, it was probably the same. And this Low rank treasure Spear contained the power of flame. It would be a perfect match for a warrior who trained the fire attributed Zhen Qi.

Holding the iron spear, Ye Chen frowned.

‘Such a huge spear, where should I put it? I can’t just hold it in my hand for the rest of the trip, can I?’

‘It’s such an inconvenience without my storage rings!’

Ye Chen shook his head and forced a laugh.

Thousands of meters away, four or five martial disciples that were spread out in different places saw that there was a flame sparkling ahead, and their eyes brightened. They then started running in that direction without hesitation.

‘Someone is coming.’

Ye Chen was just about to leave when his body froze. After ten breaths, five martial disciples appeared around him, they were all from different martial institutions of different nations. They were all staring at the Low rank treasure spear in his hand, their intentions needed no explanation.

“Brat, put down that spear.”

“Cut off one of your arms, then I will leave you alive.”

“What a treasure! It is not something you should have.”

The five came closer and closer, they all wanted to be the one to get their hands on the spear.

Ye Chen sneered. The five were all warriors at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm. From their Zhen Qi, three of them were at the pre-Childe level, and the other two were already at the Childe level.

“If you want this treasure spear, it will cost you your life.”

There was no murderous intent or an evil aura in Ye Chen’s Qi. His Qi only had sharpness, it was an unstoppable sharp Qi.

“You are looking for death!”

The martial disciple who was closest to Ye Chen started to attack. He threw out a palm attack. A huge Zhen Qi palm headed towards Ye Chen.

These attacks were not powerful enough to make him take out his sword. Ye Chen held the iron spear in his hand, and then stabbed out with it.

Boom!

The burning flames stabbed through the Zhen Qi palm and pierced his neck.

Bam!

The head flew out, the neck turned dark due to the burn.

“He has the Low rank treasure spear, let’s attack together!”

The remaining four people were quite shocked.

“He will never know how he died.”

He stabbed out again, the spear attacks were like the endless mountains. It was Ye Chen performing the [Lone Peak of the Thirteen Swords] with a spear.

The martial disciple who was trying to attack Ye Chen from behind did not even get close before dozens of black holes appeared on his body. The deadliest one was on his forehead, because of which half his head was blown away.

One spear attack for one martial disciple, Ye Chen did not even stop for a moment to take a breath. The iron spear continued stabbing in different directions, the red flame burst to the next level. It heavily attacked the left side of another person’s waist.

With a cracking sound, that man’s body was cut in half, and he then fell into the marshland.

“Run! This guy is definitely not a normal Late Condensing Reality Realm warrior!” The remaining two people finally realised that Ye Chen was not someone they could possibly mess with. Normally, a warrior holding a Low rank treasure weapon could only fight at most two opponents of similar cultivation at once, it was almost impossible to kill three people at the same time. It would have to be someone who had extremely powerful fighting strength.

But it was already too late for them.

One of them was slower and was shot in the head by Ye Chen; while the other made it a hundred meters away. However, he didn't even get to feel lucky before he realized that his chest had been stabbed through by the burning spear. The next second, he was nailed to the tree in front of him.

The huge tree went up in flames, and the sparks from the fire burst everywhere.

As he walked over to take out the spear, Ye Chen thought to himself, ‘For me, the childe level is no longer a threat. I guess you all were just unlucky.’

Ye Chen did not leave at once, he suddenly turned around.

“I think it's time for you to reveal yourself. Don't you think so, my friend?”

Shoo!

A human figure jumped out and landed on the stone stele in the middle of the marshland.

“Great. With only a Low rank treasure spear, you were able to kill five martial disciples with the same cultivation level. If it is possible, I don't want to kill you. But you will have to cut off one of your arms. As for that treasure spear, it will be my souvenir, how about that?” The new company was a teenager who was in his early twenties. He had thick eyebrows and big brown eyes, he had an extremely evil aura. A poisonous snake had just appeared earlier, he just stepped on it and split it in half.

‘Killing a rank 3 ancient beast in a second! He seems strong.’

Ye Chen could tell that his opponent was not simple. In the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, the rank 3 ancient beasts had extremely strong defense, which

even his Tyrant's Fist could not break through. But his opponent could somehow kill it with zero effort. Without any surprises, this guy might even be as powerful as those powerful warriors of the Hidden Dragon Ranking.

“With just you alone?”

If it was before, Ye Chen would not be so confident of winning against him. But now it was different.

The teenager laughed creepily, “I was ranked 75th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. Too bad, the Hidden Dragon Ranking only considers up to the seventy-second rank. But if you compare me with those other normal Peak Late Condensing Reality Realm warriors, then you would die horribly for your lacking judgment. I could kill those people in the blink of an eye.”

“Do you want to live or die, make your decision.”

Chin!

Stabbing the iron spear into the ground, Ye Chen took out his sword, “I will kill you in one sword strike.”

“Ah, why are there so many people who want to die so urgently? Don't worry, I will not let you die instantly, I will first cut off your four limbs, and then plug them into a tree.”

Casually saying such creepy words, Qiu Heng lightly stepped on a stone with his right feet.

Boom!

The stone exploded and his body has already jumped towards Ye Chen. Although he was still in the air, his powerful attack had already cut those huge trees around Ye Chen in half. The edges of the cuts were so smooth that it was like glass. In comparison, not even Shi Potian's attacks could do this, they were at completely different levels.

‘This Qiu Heng is unbelievably strong!’

“One sword!”

Ye Chen did not react to his opponent's attack. He shook his head slightly, and threw out a casual sword attack.

“What the heck? How can I see the back of my body?” Qiu Heng could feel that his body was drifting away from him. He could see the back of his body while his opponent started to put away his sword and turned around, this weird sensation terrified him.

## Chapter 143 – The Tomb (Part one)

He was killed too fast. Perhaps even in the end, he probably did not manage to figure out how he died.

However, this was no longer any of Ye Chen's business, he was only in charge of the killing part.

He had a treasure sword around his waist and held the Iron Spear in his hand. Ye Chen's feet slightly touched the ground, he then floated up to the tree branches like a gust of blue smoke. He flashed again and then completely disappeared.

Chichichichichi

Once Ye Chen left the area, countless bugs came out of the marshland and devoured Qiu Heng's body and head, leaving nothing behind, not even the bones.

...

The marshland Ye Chen was present was not the only where place such deaths took place. In some other places the killings were even more brutal.

In the endless mountains.

The bloody Qi rushed towards the sky.

"Run! 'One bloodless blade' Mo Wuxue is coming!"

"What?! Mo Wuxue?!"

"Fuck! We are so dead!"

Outside an ancient-looking cave, seven martial disciples ran out while crying. Some of them even used some self-sacrifice spells just to speed up a little bit, someone even threw out exploding pellets behind him.

"Since you are already here, why are you all rushing to leave?"

The air wave that was brought up by the explosions was torn apart. Mo Wuxue who was wearing gold colored cloths walked out from it, he sneered and threw out a blade attack with his thin bloody red blade.

There was no obvious blade light or any blade Qi, one could only see a blood red line drawn by his blade. However, those running disciples' heads fell off one by one without spilling even one drop of blood. It seemed as if there was an invisible power sealing all the blood from coming out, it was extremely bizarre.

One Bloodless blade. Killing people without spilling a single drop of blood. It was indeed the power of the Head Disciple of the Evil Blood Martial School, the 54th ranked contestant of the last Hidden Dragon Ranking.

At the same time in another place.

Right next to a lake.

Yuan Hengying looked towards the people who really wanted to flee but were too afraid to do so, and said in a vicious manner, “Besides the disciples from the Sky Eagle Castle, there is only one result for you if you come across me, Yuan Hengying. That is death.”

Hearing this, these people looked extremely pale. They had found a Fish Dragon Plant which was worth seventy thousand gold. The last thing they had expected when they were fighting against each other was that the most terrifying warrior in the whole nine nations – Yuan Hengying – would come there. Yuan Hengying had the title ‘Killing Eagle’, he killed every opponent that he ever encountered. When comparing the reputation, he might be even more famous than the ‘One Bloodless Blade’ Mo Wuxue, since the latter only killed for the sake of killing. So, if you did not purposely try and mess with him, there was a huge possibility that you could walk away alive. However, Yuan Hengying was way different, he would kill when he was in a good mood, he would kill even more when he was in a bad mood; he would still kill when he was just calm. In other words, he did not need a reason or a certain mood to kill. Once you encounter him, you could only hope that he was in a weird mood that he would let you walk away alive. Otherwise, your chances of living might be even lower than for a dead tree to come back to life in spring.

Clearly, the Killing Eagle was in his normal state right now, which meant that he would kill.

“However, I have changed my mind – I will give you three breaths time instead. Whoever could run away within that time, I will let him live.” Yuan Hengying really enjoyed this kind of atmosphere, where he got to play God and had control over other people’s lives. This would not be his first time doing so.

‘Three breaths of times! Then I will live!’

Everyone’s eyes brightened. Most of them were at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm, within a breath’s span they could cover more than one hundred meters. The ones with faster speed could even cover two hundred meters. With three breaths worth of time, there might actually be a chance for them to survive.

“And? Why are you still here? I might change my mind any second.”



Yuan Hengying licked his lips, as a murderous intent flashed through his eyes.

“Run!”

Under the pressure of being killed, everyone present accumulated their Qi to its limits, they started flying out with a speed faster than ever.

After the first breath, the slowest person was already one hundred meters away.

After the second breath, the slowest person was already two hundred fifty meters away.

After the third breath, the fastest person was already one mile away.

“Eagle Pack Broken Soul!”

Yuan Hengying yelled hysterically. He placed both of his hands in front of his chest, and then pushed them out aggressively.

Shoot! Shoot! Shoot!

Shoot! Shoot! Shoot!

...

The dark blue colored Zhen Qi formed dozens of Zhen Qi eagles. They flew out in different directions all starting from Yuan Hengying, as fast as lightning.

“Ah!”

As a scared cry came out, the slowest martial disciple's head was cracked open by the claws of the Zhen Qi eagle, his body slid out dozens of meters, without making a sound.

Then it was the second martial disciple, the third, the fourth... then there was only one left, who had already ran over one thousand meters.

“Not bad, you could even make it that far, but if you think you could really run away from me then you are just dreaming. Eagle Pack Formation, Hit the Sky!”

All the Zhen Qi eagles combined together and turned into a gigantic eagle, which waved its wings. Then, two dark blue Qi blades shot out.

At that moment, that martial disciple seemed to have sensed his death

approaching. He took out a dark red iron ball. It was a Red Light Fire Ball which was just as valuable as the Silver Light Thunderbolt Bomb, it could easily kill a warrior at the peak of Early Claspng Yuan Realm. But obviously, he would not dare to target it at Yuan Hengying, he threw it towards the Qi blade that was headed towards him, while yelling, “Explode!”

Boom!

The red light brightened and then exploded, the two Qi blades were shattered in a second.

“Yes! I’ve dodged the bullet.”

He seemed relieved, both his mood and his body relaxed a little.

Shoo!

Out of nowhere, another Qi blade shot towards him and went right through his head.

“You...”

The martial disciple died without being able to shut his eyes.

Yuan Hengying landed on the dead body lightly, and said calmly, “I told you, all the people who encounter me have only one ending, no exceptions. The three breaths of time thing was just a joke, don’t take it seriously man.”

As he waved his hand in the air, three Red Light Fire Balls flew out from the dead body’s pocket and landed in his hands. He sneered and then disappeared in the air.

...

The marshland was extremely dangerous, sometimes being fast was not a good thing.

Just earlier, Ye Chen had already learned that, he had to slow down to only sixty percent of speed to try and conserve some energy.

As one spear attack went through the beast that had come out of nowhere, Ye Chen stood on the branch of a huge tree. He was looking over towards the distance, but there was nothing ahead.

“Is this the end?” Ye Chen frowned.

Without much hesitation, his body floated forward, and then he started to fly like a bird.

This was a dark cliff, in which was the marshland; while out of this was just emptiness. It was complete emptiness. It was as if there was a barrier that was blocking the space outside, making it invisible to the human eye.

Ye Chen remembered that the Leader of the Sky Cloud Martial School – Luo Xinglie once said that the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region was a magical place. The entrance of a treasure cave could be in a mountain, or under the water, or it might even just be at the bottom of the cliff. Ye Chen hesitated for a second, and then took a leap.

He trained the Crane Shadow Step Art, which allowed him to float in the air for a long period of time. If there was anything unexpected down there, he could just come back up anytime he wanted. If he did not want to give it a try, there was no other way to go besides turning back, which might waste a lot of his time.

Time was money, especially in the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region.

When he fell about five hundred meters downwards, Ye Chen realized that he was still nowhere near the bottom. With all the clouds reducing the visibility around him, he decided to fly back up.

But right at that moment, the space below him suddenly started to shake dramatically. It formed into a whirlpool which sucked Ye Chen right in.

Pop!

His feet touched the ground, Ye Chen finally managed to let out the breath was holding.

Just like the Leader had said, the entrances could be anywhere. It all depended on if you were brave enough or not, because if he did not jump it would mean that he would miss a great opportunity.

He slowly let out a deep breath and started to scan the surroundings.

After studying his surroundings, he realized that he was in a dark stone-like

hallway. And on each side of the hallway, there was a small stone platform every hundred meters. Arm-thick candles were laid in the middle of the platform, they continued to flicker, sometimes bright and sometimes dim.

With the enhancement of the sword intent, Ye Chen was not terrified of such dark creepy places, he started to walk deep into the hallway.

After he walked about a few hundred meters, there was another path to the right side of the hallway. He could almost hear someone talking in it.

“It seems like I am not the only one here!”

Ye Chen gave it a little thought and then stepped into the path without making a sound.

At the end of the path, there was an ancient luxurious lobby. The crystal light at the top of the lobby looked like it had never gone out before. Its soft and warm shine gave the whole place a feeling of safety. Ye Chen looked down, on the side of the lobby, there were three doors. On each door were carved different things. At the moment, there were a bunch of martial disciples who were fighting against each other, trying to be the first one to enter the doors.

“My Head Brother disciple is Xue Heng, the 57th ranked contestant of the Hidden Dragon Ranking. Whoever messes with our Invisible Martial School would be killed! So piss off already!”

“Huh! I am a disciple from the White Deer Cave, our Head Brother disciple is Lu Shao. Everyone else should just leave.”

“In this Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, none of that matters. If I kill you right now, no one would ever know who actually killed you. Don’t be silly, die now!”

The exploding sounds of Qi was heard from different parts of the lobby, shaking the crystal light at the top, it looked like it was about to fall down any minute.

Ye Chen was planning to stand back and watch, but he could hear that there were people approaching from behind. If they were only normal martial disciples, he would not care at all, all he needed to do was to kill them all. However, the footsteps of the person approaching had a magical sound, which was filled with power. Even Ye Chen could feel the pressure.

‘An Early Claspng Yuan Realm warrior!’

A thought flashed through his head, Ye Chen took one step out of the pathway and into the lobby.

Shoo!

The fighting stopped for a beat, everyone’s attention landed on Ye Chen.

After seeing the cloud pattern on Ye Chen’s sleeves, some of them started to sneer.

“Sky Cloud Martial School from the Wind Nation... a disciple from a rank 9 martial institution dares to come here, I don’t think he knows how to spell death.”

“I have never killed anyone from the Sky Cloud Martial School, but I have killed a disciple from the North Snow Martial Academy, it was so easy! I really wonder how those people were trained.”

“Let’s kill him first.”

“Yah!”

These people had been fighting for a long time without a result. Now that Ye Chen was here, they all started to approach him with a murderous intent, it was almost as if Ye Chen was already dead to them.

Ye Chen sneered. ‘A bunch of idiots. If it was not for that person in the pathway, I would have already taken care of you. But let’s just wait for a bit for now.’

“Die!”

Those people had not even started attacking yet and the air flow in the pathway had already changed. A huge Zhen Qi fist suddenly shot out of the pathway. It was extremely pure and as powerful as a mountain.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Almost half of the people present were killed by the after wave. Their bodies were blown to the side. Even then, the power of the Zhen Qi fist hadn’t dissipated, eventually it shattered a huge column into pieces.

## Chapter 144: The Tomb (Part Two)

“Such great power!”

Ye Chen raised his eyebrows. All the people present were either at pre-Childe-level or at the Childe-level, but they couldn't even handle a single punch, and even half of them were killed or injured right away.

“Ah! A powerful martial artist who was at the top of the Hidden Dragon Ranking is coming in!”

“This fist strength is as great and heavy as the mountains...It's Lin Yue, ranked 70th in the Hidden Dragon Ranking.”

“Run!!”

During every journey into the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region, more than sixty percent of the disciples that died were killed by powerful martial artists who had topped the Hidden Dragon Ranking, only a small part of them have died while hunting ancient demonic beasts. In the eyes of those ordinary disciples, these martial artists in the Hidden Dragon Ranking were all killing machines, therefore, they have to immediately run away as soon as they see one or they would certainly die.

No one noticed who had taken the lead, but all the surviving people suddenly started to yell and began fleeing in all directions. Soon, only Ye Chen and seven to eight dead bodies were left in the hall.

A series of clear footsteps came closer and closer, along with which a muscular silhouette appeared in Ye Chen's sight. That man was over two meters tall, and as sturdy as a hill. He was none other than the top-ranked disciple, named Lin Yue, from one of the rank 7 institutions, Dragon and Tiger Martial School, of the Elephant Mountain Nation; he was also the one ranked 70th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking.

Lin Yue took a glance at all those dead bodies lying on the ground, he then turned around and looked at Ye Chen, he asked a bit surprised, “Why aren't you running?”

In his eyes, Ye Chen was nothing special, he was just an ordinary advanced

Condensing Reality Realm martial artist that hasn't even achieved the peak level yet. With his own Early Claspng Yuan Realm power, he wouldn't pay any attention to a kid like this.

“Why should I run? I'm also interested in the treasures in there.”

“Hehe, you look quite confident, but people who are weak yet still remain ambitious always end up dying fast, they don't even have a chance to stand out from the crowd.” said Lin Yue with both his hands held behind his back. He didn't even take a good look at Ye Chen. He was not at all worried that Ye Chen might launch a surprise attack.

“You can find out whether I'm weak or not.”

Ye Chen clearly knew that the only way to prove himself is to show his power, otherwise, others would only see him as a pushover, and would never end up taking him seriously.

Lin Yue's expression slightly changed. This kid clearly knew that he was someone in the Hidden Dragon Ranking, yet, he was still acting so confidently, he didn't understand where Ye Chen get his confidence from. 'Does this kid really think that he can evenly compete against me? Or is he just being stupid and reckless?' thought Lin Yue.

‘It can't be that he is just a stupid and reckless boy, otherwise, why would his institution send him into this region? Just for letting him get himself killed?’ thinking of this, Lin Yue laughed out.

“Good, you sound brave enough. If you can take a punch from me, I, Lin Yue, will never stand in your way.”

“A punch? Sure.”

Ye Chen was also not planning to start a huge fight against this Lin Yue, because he wasn't sure that he could kill this guy. Of course, this guy could not kill him either.

Clang!

Ye Chen pulled out the Hidden Cloud Sword. At that moment, his appearance seemed to have changed entirely. A fierce and powerful aura suddenly shrouded

him, it then began condensing and purifying; finally, Ye Chen looked like a shining sword that had been silently accumulating power and was about to pierce through the entire universe.

“Such a sharp sword aura. Hm? No, it felt a bit like sword intent. Has this kid already comprehended the sword intent?”

Lin Yue didn’t want to believe that Ye Chan had already attained sword intent, instead, he thought that it was just some special aura due to a certain kind of martial skill. As he pondered this, Lin Yue abruptly let out a loud shout and threw out a heavy punch.

“Break!”

Before the roaring stream of fist power was entirely released, the ground had already cracked open and sank in, while the walls near him began to let out creaking sounds and then suddenly started to collapse.

This punch was powerful enough to kill an ordinary Early Clasp Yuan Realm martial artist, or to shatter a hundred meter tall mountain. It was truly amazing.

Ye Chen’s hair and clothes fluttered backwards, it looked as if he was going to be blown away and be crushed by this swooshing, gigantic stream of power at any moment.

Gazing at Lin Yue with a pair of piercing eyes, Ye Chen swung the Hidden Cloud sword.

Puff!

A thin beam of sword light appeared in the air, swishing straight towards the stream of fist power. At that moment, even the bright crystal light in the hall seemed to have dimmed down, only a dazzling beam of sword light remained visible.

Followed by a series of sizzling noises, hundreds of thunderous booms rose in the air within a moment, the sound was so loud that it could even destroy people’ eardrums; after that, another even greater boom burst out, and both of them were sent flying backwards.

“Sword intent, this is true sword intent!”



Stabilising his body, Lin Yue looked at Ye Chen surprised.

While flying backwards in the air, Ye Chen pushed the sword back into its sheath in a practiced manner, and then nimbly landed on the ground. He then raised his head and said, "Thank you."

Lin Yue responded, "As I said, I will not step in your way. But you shouldn't think that you can do whatever you want with only your sword intent. During the last Hidden Dragon Ranking, I've met quite a few disciples who have comprehended the sword intent, however, none of them managed to achieve the top place."

"I am certainly aware of that."

Ye Chen was way smarter than that. He never thought that sword intent would make him invincible, he didn't even believe that he could kill this Lin Yue with it. Sword skills were only one part of a whole three-thousand kinds of martial art forms that existed within the martial world, and the sword intent was only a small accomplishment in the sword skills; gaining the sword intent didn't mean that he was already powerful enough to look down upon the rest of the world.

After all, all those legendary martial artists that could stand above the whole world had unbelievably high achievements in their cultivation. However, none of them had managed to step into the top realm and make an eventual breakthrough.

Neither of them wanted to continue this fight, and were about to each open a door among the three closed doors when another series of footsteps came closer.

These footsteps sounded extremely regular, the interval between every two steps was exactly the same. It sounded like the person was capable of doing this as soon as he was born, yet, it also sounded like he was intentionally walking in this manner. If you had to describe it with one word, it would be 'duplicate', indeed, only this world could perfectly explain the crazy regularity of his footsteps.

Although neither of them saw the incoming person's face, both Ye Chen's and Lin Yue's expression immediately changed.

“This man must be powerful, and these footsteps sound so familiar.” Lin Yue knitted his brows, trying to recall.

“It’s Yin Wuqing! People call him ‘Prince Devil’!” Lin Yue abruptly shouted out in a low, strained voice.

‘Prince Devil’, Yin Wuqing!

Ye Chen quickly searched for information regarding this ‘Prince Devil’ in his head. He was the top-ranked disciple of the Sky Serpent Nation’s rank 7 institution, Brute Devil Martial School, and was ranked 45th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking. Among the thirteen Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists that came here from all nine nations, he was one of the two, who hadn’t yet broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm.

“I think he hasn’t broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm yet, has he?” Ye Chen had already asked Luo Hanshan about this. Luo Hanshan had told him that almost all of the top-50 in the Hidden Dragon Ranking were in the Clasp of Yuan Realm, then how did this Yin Wuqing obtain a rank in the top 50? And that was even a year and a half ago.

“Haven’t you heard about the ‘Prince Devil’ before? Even early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists should be afraid of him. Even the ‘One bloodless blade’, Mo Wuxue and the Killing Eagle wouldn’t want a direct confrontation with him.”

Ye Chen shook his head. He had only recently stepped into his current stage and didn’t know much about the news of outside world, maybe the four young masters of the Windy Nation would know more than him.

“The Brute Devil Martial School is the same as the Evil Blood Martial School, both of them worship evil powers and their disciples all practice dark arts. This Yin Wuqing’s Martial art is even more special, it is called ‘Earth Devil Body Strengthening’. This martial art mainly focuses on the cultivation of human body, it allows the martial artists’ body to become as solid as metal, and it can never be harmed by any kind of weapons, or even flames or water. Apart from this, martial artists who practice this art can only improve very slowly, however, every step forward means a breakthrough. That is a terrifying art with which Yin Wu Qing defeated a few early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists and managed to rank in the top 50 of the Hidden Dragon Ranking. By now, even though we have

all broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, no one dares to despise him.”

“Do you know which realm the Earth Devil Body Strengthening belongs to?” asked Ye Chen.

“I heard it’s a mid-grade Earth Realm martial art.” said Lin Yue.

‘Ah, a mid-grade Earth Realm art, no wonder. It’s higher ranked than my Pure Jade Body Boosting Spell, I think the art our school leader, Luo Xinglie’s cultivated is also a mid-grade Earth Realm art.’ thought Ye Chen.

As the footsteps stopped, a young man appeared in Ye Chen’s and Lin Yue’s sight. This young man was neither too tall nor too short, he had a slim body shape that even seemed a bit scrawny. However, in Lin Yue and Ye Chen’s eyes, he was nowhere close to a scrawny young man. Just by standing there, he made both Lin Yue and Ye Chen feel that he was an extremely dangerous martial artist, it was as if he was a weapon instead of a human being.

“Lin Yue, are you going to stop me?” said the young man while staring at Lin Yue with a frosty gaze.

Lin Yue laughed out loud and responded, “How dare I stop you, the famous ‘Price Devil’? We have three doors here, let’s each take one.”

“Why? Is this kid qualified as well?” said Yin Wuqing as he turned his head towards Ye Chen.

Lin Yue shook his head and said, “Don’t misjudge him, he had already comprehended the sword intent. Just now, he faced a punch from me with a stream of Sword Qi, and the winner was not determined.”

“Ah, in that case, he is indeed qualified.” Yin Wuqing seemed a bit surprised. After all, all the people who had managed to attain the sword intent were absolutely fierce and powerful, he had met a few of them during the Hidden Dragon Ranking, and because of that, he would not dare despise Ye Chen.

“Good, let’s all mind our own businesses. I, Lin Yue, will not be afraid of anyone anyway.” While speaking, Lin Yue walked towards the middle door.

Yin Wuqing walked towards the right door.

Ye Chen didn’t care which door he opened, as he wouldn’t know what was

inside before he opened it.

“Hm?”

Lin Yue seemed to be having a problem. In front of the door, an invisible layer was blocking his way, preventing him from opening the door directly.

“Just break!”

Lin Yue immediately threw out a punch. Tremendous amount of fist power swooshed out and condensed into a sharp stream which bumped against the screen.

Followed by a buzzing noise, the power stream stirred up waves of ripples on the screen, yet, the screen remained unbroken.

Lin Yue refused to believe that he couldn't break this screen. He activated his Zhen Qi and threw out another three punches in a row.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The invisible screen shook in an intense manner, it then twisted and seemed to be on the verge of shattering. Seeing this, Lin Yue launched the fourth punch right away and finally broke the screen.

On the other side, Yin Wuqing had a scornful grin, he raised his slim and beautiful hand, and directly punched the screen in front of his door, without using even a trace of his Zhen Qi.

Pop!

The invisible screen was punched hollow by his hands, before it bounced back. Then, Yin Wuqing made the second and third move.

He didn't release the fourth punch, instead, he buckled the hollowed area of the screen.

A shrill cracking noise pierced into Ye Chen's ear, along with which, that invisible screen was directly torn apart by Yin Wuqing. Ye Chen was seriously shocked by the monster-like power of this guy, it even made his heart start beating loudly. Silently, Ye Chen admitted that this 'Prince Devil' was indeed much more powerful than himself.

After Lin Yue and Yin Wuqing walked into their doors, Ye Chen pulled out the Hidden Cloud Sword and hacked three times on the same spot of the invisible screen.

Puff, the invisible screen shielding the door in front of him was easily broken and quickly dissipated.

Carrying the iron spear, and holding the sword with his right hand, Ye Chen pushed the door open and walked in.

There was nothing but a black coffin that was right in the middle of the room.

“Is this place a tomb?”

Ye Chen got a weird and bad feeling. That coffin seemed strange, it was as if something horrible was hiding in it.

“Ah!!”

At this very moment, a hoarse growl came from Lin Yue’s room, following that, there was a ground-shaking fighting noise, which even shook all three rooms and the entire hall.

Creak

The thick coffin lid suddenly moved a little bit aside, leaving a slight gap, from which, two green light beams darted out, it was exactly like the gaze of a malicious ghost.

## ***Chapter 145: Martial Zombies***

Ye Chen frowned. This pair of green light beams were filled with viciousness and cruelty, they seemed extremely evil; besides, these green light beams also contained a special kind of power that could paralyse people, which made Ye Chen feel powerless. However, after all, he was someone that comprehended the sword intent, which was capable of resisting and eliminating all kinds of evils. He just snorted coldly and instantly cut off the connection between the green light and himself.

Boom!

The coffin lid suddenly flew into the air as a human silhouette stood up from the it.

“Cut!”

Ye Chen immediately made his move.

Clang!

Sparks flew out when he attacked the human-shaped creature’s body, a fierce move launched by Ye Chen couldn’t even hurt it a little bit.

The human-shaped creature then let out a shrill and resonant howl, it leapt into the air and swiftly darted towards Ye Chen; it simultaneously straightened its arms to resemble a pair of sharp blades and they swished in Ye Chen’s direction.

This room was dark and didn’t have any source of light. However, with Ye Chen’s powerful soul force, he could still grasp the body shape and the appearance of this human-shaped creature. He wouldn’t have been startled if he hadn’t done so, because he found that this thing was in no way close to a human being. Clearly, it was a dark coloured zombie, with a dry and wrinkled body, it had a metal-like lustre, and a pair of green, shining eyes, which didn’t contain even the slightest trace of human emotions. All that remained in that pair of eyes was evilness, cruelty, creepiness and the desire for fresh blood, you could find all kinds of evilness in those eyes.

The zombie seemed to be a bit inflexible, but it still moved swiftly. Ye Chen

leaned his body to the side and he instantly moved more than ten meters back.

In the next moment, the thick and solid walls were pierced and torn apart by that pair of blade-like arms of the zombie. After that, the zombie turned its head around, and fixed its green glimmering eyes on Ye Chen's face.

Ye Chen didn't hesitate at all as he swung his sword down twice in a row. Two fierce streams of sword Qi burst out simultaneously, they darted towards the pair of eyes of the zombie. Ever since Ye Chen comprehended the true sword intent, both the speed and effectiveness of his moves had largely improved, they were no worse than moves launched by an Early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist.

The zombie was not an easy opponent either, it reacted to the attack within a moment. It bent its head backwards and dodged the sword Qi on the left; the Sword Qi on the right also missed its target and only managed to hit its cheek.

There were a few sparks as the sword Qi made contact with its face. But, the attack only left a faint mark on its cheek.

"What kind of zombie is this? Even sword Qi wasn't able to harm it!" Ye Chen clearly saw that when the sword Qi hit its face, a layer of green light emerged on its skin and neutralized most of that sword Qi.

The zombie seemed to be enraged by Ye Chen's attack. Without hesitation, it widely opened its horribly smelling mouth and spurted out a sphere of green light towards Ye Chen.

The broken wall was instantly corroded by the green light sphere, this also made Ye Chen feel extremely sick.

Ye Chen was forced out of the room due to that, he got back into the ancient luxurious hall. As he turned his head around, he found that both Lin Yue and Yin Wuqing had also stepped out, and their opponents were also zombies.

"What awful luck, these things are martial zombies." said Lin Yue. His sleeves were ripped apart, it seemed like he had a fierce fight back in that room. Earlier, when he walked into the room, he didn't see anything there, so he directly opened the coffin; however, a zombie darted out from the coffin and nearly pierced its arms into Lin Yue's chest. If Lin Yue hadn't activated a defensive



martial skill before he entered the room, he would have long been ripped to pieces.

“Martial zombies?” asked Ye Chen.

Yun Wuqing said, “Under certain circumstances, a martial artist’s Zhen Qi might not disperse even after they die, and would mix together with the Qi that only belongs to dead creatures. If these two kinds of Qi mix together, they can preserve the body from decaying. At this stage, if a living martial artist appears around this dead martial artist, the abundant vitality and Zhen Qi of the living martial artist can activate this dead martial artist’s body, and would allow it to mutate into a martial zombie, whose only instinct is to slaughter and devour. Martial zombies are incomparably strong, their bodies are even more solid than the demonic beasts of the same level. If I am not wrong, these three used to be Early Clasp Yuan Realm martial artists, which means that they’re now fifth-grade martial zombies. But they have just completed their mutation, and can’t activate their corpse Qi yet.”

Lin Yue nodded and said, “Exactly. It’s said that the Ghost Artist, one of the one hundred and eight great ghost warriors of the Nine Evil Cult, was a martial zombie himself. But, he was different from ordinary martial zombies for some particular reason, and he somehow gained his intelligence back. He is even more sinister than human beings, and the frightening thing is that he is able to turn living martial artists into martial zombies, he calls those zombies ‘Armoured Corpses’. Ranking them from low grade to high, they’re Iron Armoured Corpses, Bronze Armoured Corpses, Silver Armoured Corpses, Gold Armoured Corpses, and may even go higher.”

“The Ghost Artist is a zombie?” This was the first time Ye Chen heard about this. He had heard about the Bronze Armoured Corpses once, when he was completing the mission for the Ling Family. He had encountered a group of Ghost Guards under the Ghost Artist’s command, one of them threatened to turn Ye Chen into a Bronze Armoured Corpse. That must be martial zombies they were talking about.

“They’re coming out, be careful! Don’t let them scratch you, or you’ll be poisoned!”

As he was speaking, Lin Yue's clothes started to flutter even though there was no wind. He abruptly launched a heavy punch, sending out a stream of power that swiftly condensed into a gigantic cauldron, which swooshed towards one martial zombie.

Clang!

The room-sized caldron, condensed from Zhen Qi was immeasurably heavy, it directly forced the zombie down into the ground, making it unable to crawl back out; the zombie could only let out waves of shrill howls.

“[Earth Devil Shattering Hack]!”

Yin Wuqing had been perfectly controlling his Zhen Qi all this time. A stream of Zhen Qi formed a sharp-edged, faint, purple-colored light loop on the edge of his hands; he moved extremely fast and fiercely hacked at the neck of another martial zombie.

This move was extremely shocking, it directly sent the zombie flying in the air and it then loudly thudded against the ground. A large wound appeared on its neck, but not a single drop of blood was present.

The last zombie howled out as it leapt high, it darted towards Ye Chen who gripped his sword and had been standing still all along.

“I have been expecting you!”

“[Unlimited Fierce Clouds]!”

Ye Chen raised the sword high, he then injected a stream of Zhen Qi into the sword, this stirred the air surrounding the sword and even formed a swiftly spinning whirlpool.

“Hack!”

He launched the move. A gigantic stream of sword Qi as sharp as a huge blade that even seemed to slice the air into two was sent out. It was accurately aimed at the zombie's neck, the sword Qi roared towards the zombie.

Puff!

Pieces of muscle that were as solid as iron flew out from its body. Ye Chen's sword Qi left a bone-deep wound on the zombie's chest and sent its heavy body

flying. The zombie then smashed against a stone pillar, the pillar collapsed immediately and the zombie fell down, it was then suppressed by a giant piece of stone.

The gigantic cauldron condensed from Lin Yue's Zhen Qi began swaying, Lin Yue gave a bitter smile and said, "This won't work, although these three zombies can't yet activate their corpse Qi, they each possess fifth-grade defensive power and strength, we can't possibly take them out within a short period of time, we can only barely suppress them."

"Martial zombies are more powerful than you think, one of the seventh-grade martial zombies raised by our Brute Devil Martial School had once killed an early Astral Reaching Realm martial artist." said Yin Wuqing in his typical frosty tone.

Almost everyone in the martial world had heard that the Brute Devil Martial School had been raising martial zombies. Therefore, Yin Wuqing could directly tell Ye Chen and Lin Yue this horrible story. After all, the Brute Devil Martial School was one of the most powerful few among all the rank 7 institutions, it is even stronger than the Evil Blood Martial School. Regular rank 7 institutions can't even be compared to the Brute Devil Martial School.

Looking at the martial zombie that was crawling out of the pile of stones, Ye Chen felt helpless for the very first time. He thought about using the [Heart Refining], however, he eventually decided not to. This was not a life and death moment yet, so he did not need to expose his saved secret skill; besides, he was sure that both Lin Yue and Yin Wuqing had their own hidden skills, they just didn't use those skills because they wanted to keep some moves to themselves unless definitely required.

Not only that, Ye Chen was not certain that [Heart Refining] could guarantee the martial zombie's death, it could at most allow him to seriously injure it; if he had to use [Heart Refining] more than once continuously, too much power would be consumed. Therefore, he felt that it was not a wise choice to use [Heart Refining].

"Die!"

Ling Yue couldn't suppress the zombie any longer, so he instantly used one of his secret skills and detonated the cauldron.

Waves of explosive power shook the entire hall, a few fist sized rocks even fell down from the roof, and quite a few crystal lights dimmed down.

That martial zombie that had just struggled back up from the ground was once again sent flying backwards, it fell down beside the dead body of a disciple.

However, the thing that shocked all three of them was what happened in the next moment. The martial zombie ripped off one of the dead body's arms and thrust it into its mouth, it then began wolfing it down, it even let out a series of sounds of bones cracking. Blood splashed everywhere and the bone cracking noises resounded throughout the entire hall.

The other two zombies were also attracted by the scent of blood, they each grabbed a dead body and began chewing.

Yin Wuqing's expression suddenly changed as he yelled, "Don't let them devour too much blood and flesh. Once they get enough energy, they would become real fifth-grade martial zombies and activate their corpse Qi, it would vastly improve their power!"

"Kill!!"

Yin Wuqing darted towards the few zombies as he yelled out. Countless bean sized, faint black scales emerged from his white and tender skin. They made him look way more creepy and horrible than those zombies. At that moment, he indeed looked like a devil.

Boom!

The zombie near him was directly sent up, and was then struck by four punches and five kicks while it was still in the air. It let out high-pitched, resonant wails as it flew.

"[Double Cauldrons Challenge]!"

Hearing Yin Wuqing's words, Lin Yue realised how serious the situation was, therefore, he instantly increased his Zhen Qi usage. Streams of yellow-colored Zhen Qi rose straight into the air. Lin Yue clenched his fists and quickly swung both of his arms inwards.

Boom! Boom!

Two room sized, gigantic cauldrons surrounded a zombie that had been wolfing down a dead body, and then suddenly bumped against each other. Shocking waves spread out immediately, they swept across the surrounding area and tore all the dead bodies to pieces.

By now, it had swallowed quite a lot of the dead body's flesh and blood, thick green streams of air started to spurt out from that martial zombie's body and wrapped around its entire body. Nevertheless, the pair of gigantic cauldrons were extremely powerful. Fierce, huge streams of Zhen Qi released by the pair of cauldrons madly shook and clashed against each other, ceaselessly crushing the martial zombie's body.

"In that case, we can only crush these zombies' defensive power bit by bit."

Except for the Heart Refining, Ye Chen had another skill that he rarely used. This skill was not as destructive as the 'Clouds Have No Limitation' yet. After practicing for a long-time, Ye Chen found a new way of using it. Now, he wanted to try it out on this zombie.

As he briefly pondered, the fierce sword Qi released from Ye Chen's body started to grow stronger. It also contained a part of the sword intent in it.

Taking a step forward, it seemed as if Ye Chen was slowly raising his arms, yet, he swiftly launched a move.

"Highly Condensed Sword Qi!"

Bang!

Not only did a tremendously thick stream of sword Qi strike the zombie into the air, it also pressed it against the wall and disabled it from moving anymore; moreover, the sword Qi showed no signs of dissipating even after that. Instead, it began coiling around the zombie's body, over and over again.

"What sword skill is this?!"

Watching the sword Qi continuously crushing the zombie's defensive power, Lin Yue couldn't help but widely open his eyes as he gasped in shock.

Yin Wuqing also gave Ye Chen a glance. Previously, he indeed admitted that Ye Chen was powerful and a martial artist with potential, and did not want to get

into a conflict with Ye Chen. But now, he sincerely didn't want Ye Chen to become his enemy. Earlier, he thought that Ye Chen had already shown all of his abilities, he never expected that Ye Chen also had some secret moves saved, just like Lin Yue and himself; besides, who could tell for sure if Ye Chen had other more powerful skills or not?

‘This man should never be despised!’ this was how Yin Wuqing thought about Ye Chen.

The martial zombie struggled as hard as it could, however, the sword Qi was as heavy and powerful as a mountain, it firmly pressed the zombie against the wall just like a piece of meat on the chopping board, it even lost the power to resist.

## ***Chapter 146: Flame suppression***

Ye Chen tried extremely hard to keep holding the sword and maintain the posture. That stream of sword Qi was connected to his Zhen Qi, which meant that every single moment of the sword Qi would consume a huge amount of Zhen Qi, therefore, he wouldn't be able to do this for too long. If he was alone in this place, facing only one martial zombie, he could surely try a little harder and kill that zombie for good, but sadly he was not; in the current situation, he couldn't be sure about what other unexpected things might happen after he uses up all of his Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen put the sword down, and the enormous stream of sword Qi dissipated along with it.

As for that martial zombie, which was pressed into the wall, it now looked to be completely out of shape. Its body was nearly cut into two by the sword stream while its dark internal organs and pure black spine were now clearly visible.

Aoo!!

This martial zombie abruptly howled out, at the same time, green airwaves spurted out from its pure black body, they slowly got its broken chest back together, and then began resealing it.

"How can I let you do that?"

Ye Chen curved his lip upwards as he pulled out the iron spear that was on his back. After that, he lifted his body and stood on his tiptoes, he then suddenly darted out like a fire-red stream of light.

Boom!

The iron spear directly pierced into the martial zombie's broken chest along with a raging flame that wrapped around the zombie turning it into a human-shaped torch.

A series of loud sizzling noises came from the flame. The flame seemed to be able to restrain the zombie's body. As Ye Chen continuously injected his Zhen Qi into the flame, it started to grow larger, hotter, and even started to melt the

zombie's body. The zombie now seemed just like a burning candle, with a sticky liquid dripping down from it in thick streams.

Ye Chen's eyes shone. Earlier, he was wondering if the flame could suppress the zombie for a little bit, but he didn't think that it would work this well, its effects were even better than his full-strength sword attack. Generally, flames shouldn't have such an immense effect, but it's probably due to the iron spear being a Low-rank Treasure and the flame contained in it being more powerful and violent, this allowed it to even melt the zombie down.

Seeing this, Ye Chen stopped thinking about finding other solutions, he gripped the spear with both of his hands and firmly nailed the zombie to the wall.

Waves of howls suddenly burst out from the zombie. It was already severely injured, and by now, its body was already filled with scorching flame.

"Damn! Martial zombies are afraid of fire! Now I've got it!"

Lin Yue yelled as he took out a handful of exploding pellets.

Exploding pellets were not that powerful. Even from a short distance, one exploding pellet could only hurt an Early Clasp Yuan Realm martial artist, but can't kill them. They were also way weaker than Silver Light Thunderbolt Bombs and Red Light Fireballs. However, they were one of the most common weapons in the martial world at present. The only reason for that was that the exploding pellets could be produced in small batches, while the manufacturing methods of both Silver Light Thunderbolt Bombs and Red Light Fire Balls had already been lost. This meant that every time someone used a Silver Light Thunderbolt Bomb or a Red Light Fire Ball, the total amount of these two kinds of weapons would be reduced. Last time, those Silver Light Thunderbolt Bombs that Luo Hanshan had were probably everything the Sky Cloud Martial School had, and since Luo Hanshan had used up all of them, the school wouldn't have any more left in the storage, and neither could they produce any; unless an ancient tomb that had Silver Light Thunderbolt Bombs buried inside was found.

Nevertheless, the exploding pellets were not too easy to get either. Among all of the nine nations, only a few institutions had the manufacturing method of the exploding pellets. The Dragon and Tiger Mountain, where Lin Yue came from, was one of them. As for the other institutions, they could only purchase the



exploding pellets at a high prices if they need them. No institution would try to snatch this manufacturing method, after all, the Dragon and Tiger Mountain was a mid-grade rank 7 institution, even if a peak grade rank 7 institution tried to snatch the manufacturing method from the Dragon and Tiger Mountain, they have to prepare to suffer severe losses, and maybe even destruction; rank 6 institutions would never think about destroying a rank 7 institution for the mere manufacturing method of exploding pellets, they might have something much more powerful than exploding pellets, all in all, the power and wealth of rank 6 institutions were great and difficult to imagine.

While another martial zombie was busy howling madly, Lin Yue swiftly threw a handful of exploding pellets into its mouth. The howl suddenly stopped. Except for a few pellets that bounced back against the zombie's face, all the others had been swallowed straight away by the zombie.

Boom, boom, boom boom boom...Within a single moment, countless earth-shaking booms burst out from the zombie's chest, along with which, wisps of fiery lights spurt out from the zombie's ears, nostrils, mouth and eyes, while streams of smoke came puffing out.

Yin Wuqing paused for a second. He either didn't have any low-rank treasure weapons that contained a fierce fire power or something effective like the exploding pellets, it seemed that he could only deal with the last zombie using pure violence.

Without too much hesitation, Yin Wuqing took out a pair of black silk gloves that were shining with a frosty lustre, and put them on his hands. As he slightly activated his Zhen Qi, a pair of dark, purple, thickly saw-toothed, arc-shaped Zhen Qi blades emerged, and attached to the edges of his palms.

This pair of gloves were also a low-rank treasure, named 'Gold-tearing Glove', gifted by the leader of his institution. He had hardly used this pair of gloves because he believed in his own power.

He moved as fast as a lightning bolt, and fiercely hacked at the zombie's neck, where it had been wounded by him once before. The old wound had by now almost entirely healed, only leaving behind a faint mark; Yin Wuqing then hacked again at the original wound and it broken again and was now twice as big as

before, the zombie's head was nearly about to fall off.

Ye Chen clearly saw the moves made by both Lin Yue and Yin Wuqing, he gave a faint smile and injected a huge stream of Zhen Qi into the iron spear. The zombie was forcefully suppressed all this time and couldn't even move an inch no matter how loud it howled, almost half of its iron-like solid body had melted down and it now hardly had its human-shape.

“Go!”

Almost there. Ye Chen swallowed a round pill that could quickly replenish his consumed Zhen Qi, and then abruptly flicked his wrist. Following his move, the roaring flame exploded inside of the zombie's body.

The zombie's broken body was finally struck into pieces, it then fell on the ground and melted into puddles of sticky liquids.

“My two friends, I'm leaving now.”

Ye Chen didn't know Lin Yue and Yin Wuqing well, neither did he plan to explore this tomb along with them, therefore, once he took out one of the three zombie, he immediately prepared to leave.

“Ha, good, this tomb is huge, we better go our separate ways.”

Lin Yue was about to destroy another martial zombie, hearing Ye Chen's words, he laughed out loud and seemed to not care about it at all.

Yin Wuqing remained silent. If he had been the first one that managed to take out a martial zombie, he would definitely have done the same. This tomb was enormous, and would have more treasures hidden in it.

“Good then, I'll see you guys around.”

Ye Chen flashed across the hall, he then moved into a tunnel and soon disappeared.

Lin Yue turned his head around and said to Yin Wuqing, “I assume that more changes will take place in the next Hidden Dragon Ranking, Yin Wuqing, your strength seems a bit low now.”

“You should be worrying about your own position! This Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is one of the four inherited ancient regions, the other three are

under the control of institutions from other nations. When all those legendary regions are unlocked one by one, I assure you, many more people will step into the Clasp of Yuan Realm.”

“Hm, you’re right. The Hidden Dragon Rankings have risen and fallen multiple times since the beginning, now it seems to be thriving. Marvellous talents from all the institutions have all gathered together, without any great and special abilities, we can never stand out among our generation.”

.....

The path extended in all directions. While he was moving, Ye Chen saw quite a lot of dead bodies of disciples from different institutions. Some of them had been killed by each other, some had their brains eaten by some unknown creatures, and some had been smashed against the wall, and became a pile of bloody paste, emitting a dense scent of blood.

“This Heavenly Dream Ancient Region unlocks every ten years, every time it opens, it offers an opportunity, and also creates disasters. Before this, at least half of the entrants had managed to come out alive, but this time, keeping the death rate under fifty percent might only be a dream. No wonder the others say that all powerful martial artists tread on a sea of blood and a mountain of corpses, and have taken countless lives.”

As he sighed lightly, Ye Chen realised that in this martial world, only continuous improvement could ensure one’s safety, unlike those ordinary people who had been living happy and peaceful lives, but when faced with wars or natural disasters, they could never protect themselves.

Of course, even if natural disasters and wars did not exist in this world, Ye Chen would still be unwilling to live an ordinary life. He had only seen a corner of the world of martial artists, and was still far from experiencing any of the really interesting things. In his view, it would be a great shame if he couldn’t live an exciting life. Apart from that, in his world there was a common saying — ‘as a living person, you need to be outstanding, and when you die, you should still be mighty as a ghost’. Wherever he lives, Ye Chen would always want a splendid life.

While thinking of this, Ye Chen arrived at the entrance of a broad tunnel.

At the end of the path, there was a stone gate, guarded by a pair of fierce-

looking stone beasts. A candle was placed on each beast's flat heads, with a dim candle light blazing over them.

Ye Chen gasped slightly and pulled out the Hidden Cloud sword as he walked towards the gate step by step.

Swish!

From a small and dark hole to the side, a slim and cold shining silhouette suddenly darted out towards Ye Chen's face.

"Die!"

With his keen senses, Ye Chen swiftly attacked and pierced the sword through the creature's head.

Puff!

The creature fell to the ground, it screamed out loud and immediately fled away.

"There are so many weird things inside this tomb." Ye Chen clearly saw the appearance of that creature when it showed up, it was a monkey-shaped, scrawny and hairless creature. Ye Chen's attack only left a shallow wound on its face, it barely did any harm to it.

Right in the next moment, seven to eight monkey-shaped creatures launched their attacks at Ye Chen. Just like the first one, all of them were injured and fled right away. They let out waves of screams, making the dark tunnel feel even weirder than before.

Ye Chen abruptly stopped, thirty steps away from the stone gate, he hacked to the side.

A dazzling stream of sword Qi fiercely clashed against the engraving on the wall.

Crack!

It shattered, and from it a gigantic monkey-shaped creature that had a deep sword cut across its chest came swooshing out.

"Demonic beast? Zombie?" If Ye Chen was not wrong, those smaller monkey

shaped creatures and this gigantic one were all zombies, and had all been sealed inside the wall by someone. They were woken up by the smell of fresh blood that was being released from Ye Chen's body, and broke out of the wall, intending to eat some of his fresh flesh.

This monkey-shaped creature was enormous, it was over three meters tall and was also hairless, it had iron-like solid skin and muscles, and could seemingly perfectly withstand the sword Qi.

The zombie beast let out a shrill scream and swung its claws towards Ye Chen's face.

Puff!

It moved incredibly fast, Ye Chen swiftly gripped the iron spear that automatically flew out from his back, and he then directly thrust the spear into the zombie beast's widely opened mouth.

“Go! Go! Go!”

Thunderous booms came along with Ye Chen's voice, and the zombie beast hurriedly stepped backwards. The dark and hard skin on its face was broken and was melted by the flame bursting out of its own mouth, disabling it from fighting back.

Ye Chen generated another stream of power in his arms, and pushed the zombie beast back into the wall with the iron spear and burnt it down.

Seeing the zombie beast die, Ye Chen pulled the iron spear out, he turned around and walked up to the gate.

There was a handle beside the gate, Ye Chen grabbed it and pulled it downwards.

Followed by a rumbling noise, the stone gate slowly opened and exposed a room.

A bookshelf was placed on one side of the room, it had a few old books.

Ye Chen walked straight to the shelf, he picked up one of the books and began reading, “‘Scorching Sun Heart-Ripping Claw’, Low-rank Earth Realm Claw art, powerful enough to melt metals.”

He put it down and picked another one, Ye Chen continued reading, “‘Mysterious Lunar Finger’, Low-rank Earth Realm finger martial art, with one move, the enemy’s blood will be frozen, internal organs and meridians will also be injured...”

## Chapter 147: Kill three with one move

In total, there were three Low-rank Earth Realm martial art manuals and five top-rank Mortal Realm martial art manuals on the shelf, if he was to trade all these for spirit stones, he would get nine-thousand, two-hundred and fifty low-grade spirit stones, almost equal to Ye Chen's entire savings, which without a doubt was already huge.

Packing those manuals, Ye Chen glanced around the room.

"Hm?"

A one-foot long, yellow calabash was tied with a red line and was hanging on another wall.

Ye Chen crooked his fingers towards it, and instantly, the yellow calabash fell down into Ye Chen's hands. Ye Chen slightly shook it and heard a small rubbing noise that was probably made from some small objects within.

"Pills?"

Without thinking too much, Ye Chen hurriedly unplugged the calabash and a dense aroma immediately gushed out.

He took a round pill in his palm and gave it a close look. That round pill was about as big as his little finger, it looked like a crystal, with a faint yellow lustre, and emitted an extremely delicate aroma. Ye Chen took a single breath of that aroma and even felt some improvement in his Zhen Qi.

Although he failed to identify the name and effects of these pills, he clearly knew that they were certainly special.

He packed the calabash as well, and once again looked around the secret room. After finding nothing else of value, he slightly let out a sigh and started walking out.

This tomb was incredibly large and had countless paths crossing over each other, only god knew exactly how many crossroads were present in this tomb, it was a typical maze.

At first, Ye Chen was still very curious about this tomb, but towards the end of his search, he started to get sick of those complicated paths. Anyone would feel

annoyed if they had to blindly move around in such a dark tomb, with routes filled with such tedious turns; besides, the treasures buried in this tomb were not as many as Ye Chen expected, he had already been really lucky to find the secret room.

As he walked past a junction in the path, a beam of sword light suddenly darted over.

“Die!”

Without even sparing a glance at the enemy, Ye Chen swung his sword in that direction.

Followed by his move, a disciple thudded against the ground, with his hand pressed on his own neck and eyes wide open.

Ye Chen found a low-rank Earth Realm martial art manual in that disciple’s bag, and let out a bitter smile. This guy was also probably stuck inside this tomb, but at this stage, instead of trying to find an exit, he intended to kill Ye Chen and seize the valuable stuff he was carrying. So, Ye Chen could only say that he deserved to die.

On the other side of the tomb.

Boom!

A wall collapsed along with Lin Yue’s yell, “Damn it! Where the hell is the exit?!”

He had not been as lucky as Ye Chen, and had only found a low-rank Earth Realm manual and three to four top-rank Mortal Realm manuals, and nothing else. Even worse, when he had finally prepared to leave, he realised that he couldn’t even find the way out, and was completely stuck inside the tomb.

“I don’t believe that there’s no way out in front of me!”

Lin Yue began moving straight forward in rage, without any concern, he shattered every single wall that appeared in front of him.

Compared to Lin Yue and Ye Chen, Yin Wuqing seemed to be a lot calmer.

He took out a tiny, exquisite wooden mouse from his inner pocket, and put a small piece of low-grade spirit stone in the mouse’s belly.



Cheep!

The wooden mouse instantly activated, it turned around and ran towards another direction. Closely following the mouse, Yin Wuqing quickly arrived at the intersection where he had come in from. Another wooden mouse was left there in a corner, and it now stuck together with its partner, the one that had guided Yin Wuqing to that place.

“This pair of Lovesick Mice are indeed amazing.” He picked up the two mice and walked into the gigantic swirl and soon disappeared.

Two hours later.

Finally, Ye Chen found his way out. Although this was not the same entrance as the one he had come in from, he couldn't care about it, he just stepped out immediately.

Swoosh

A gale of wind roared across his ears. Ye Chen opened his eyes and found that he was in a boundless empty space, there were only drifting clouds surrounding him. As he headed downwards, the earth was quickly enlarging in front of him - meaning that he was dropping swiftly.

It turned out that he was in the air, to think that there was such a magical and unexpected exit from the tomb.

Launching the Crane Shadow Steps, his body instantly turned much lighter and nimbler; in the meanwhile, he raised his arms, and glided towards a highland in the distance.

A little further from the highland, there was a vast basin, in the middle of which, a fight was taking place. Three people had encircled someone, it seemed that they intended to kill him. The grassland under their feet was already stained by blood.

“Yuan Hengkong, I have given you what you wanted, don’t push this too far!” The disciple, who was encircled by the three people was wearing a blue outfit. He was none other than Luo Hanshan.

One of the three people, who seemed to be the leader among them, proudly laughed out loud and yelled, “I want that treasure, and also want to kill you, what can you do about it? You can only blame yourself for being too weak!”

“You’re just taking advantage of the fact that you’ve more people, if you’re really that brave and powerful, just fight against me by yourself. If I lose, I will die and will have nothing more to say about it, but if you lose the fight, I won’t kill you. How about that?” Luo Hanshan said with a serious, darkened face. He clearly realised how bad his current situation was, he would certainly die if he let this fight carry on like this; he could only wish that Yuan Hengkong would accept his challenge, so that, in a fair fight, he could find an opportunity and leave much more easily. As for killing this Yuan Hengkong, he didn’t even think about that. This guy was the younger blood brother of Yuan Hengying, who was also known as the ‘Murderous Eagle’. Yuan Hengying was a complete conservator, not to mention his blood brother, even if you kill his dog or one of his chickens, he would definitely intend to slaughter your entire family for revenge, and if he

were to kill his younger brother, it wouldn't be a wise decision.

Yuan Hengkong responded scornfully, "Why would I give up my advantage, do you think I'm an idiot? Cut the crap, just go and kill him!"

Followed by his order, the three of them, each launched their moves towards Luo Hanshan.

"The Purple Qi, Great Monument Suppression!"

Facing three enemies who were all about as powerful as himself, Luo Hanshan activated all of his Zhen Qi, and made a broad bridge of purple Qi that extended from his body into the air, through which, the purple Qi would provide an inexhaustible power to him. Right after that, Luo Hanshan released an enormous purple monument to shield himself.

Along with a series of thunderous booms, the attacks launched by the three enemies violently shook the purple monument and left countless cracks on it.

"Break!"

As a core disciple of the rank 7 institution, Sky Eagle Castle Martial School, although Yuanheng Kong was way less powerful than his brother, he was still an absolutely fierce martial artist. Holding a pair of huge purple-golden hammers, he madly struck the monument.

Crack!

The purple monument that was condensed from his Zhen Qi shattered and dissipated into the air, while Luo Hanshan, who was shielded by it before, now had streams of blood gushing out of the corners of his mouth.

"Die!"

Yuan Hengkong laughed out again as he swung his hammer towards Luo Hanshan's head.

"Get lost!"

Luo Hanshan suddenly growled out as his eyes popped out and threw a solid punch right towards the hammer.

Clang!

Sparks were sent into the air, while an earth-shaking shock wave spread out in all directions, even weeding the grassland.

At this moment, another disciple sneakily moved behind Luo Hanshan and abruptly launched a palm attack towards his back. The palm attack directly ripped apart his protective Zhen Qi and firmly struck his back.

As he let out a mouthful of blood, Luo Hanshan's face turned even paler, it seemed that he was injured internally.

“Try and take my hammers!”

Yuan Hengkong had a malicious look, he took a step forward and then leapt high into the air; at the same time, his purple golden hammers released a dazzling golden light, while they were once again swiftly swung towards Luo Hanshan's head.

Puff!

At this extremely dangerous moment, a sharp stream of sword Qi darted over from afar, and hacked at Yuan Hengkong's hammers.

Both his hammers were forced out of his hands, shocking him pretty badly. He hurriedly stepped backwards once he landed on the ground, and then turned to join the other two.

Luo Hanshan turned around and took a look, and said in surprise, “Ah, Junior Brother Ye!”

A young man nimbly landed beside Luo Hanshan, that man was none other than Ye Chen. As he glanced at Luo Hanshan, Ye Chen furrowed his brows and said, “Senior Brother Luo, you're hurt.”

“Compared to my life, these wounds are nothing.” seeing that Ye Chen had showed up, Luo Hanshan silently let out a long sigh of relief. The possibility of him surviving was now rising rapidly, as the two of them could join hands and fight back. At least, they could now launch a proper counterattack, instead of him standing there alone, coughing out blood and letting his enemies decide his fate.

Moreover, Luo Hanshan didn't have a clear idea of how powerful Ye Chen was.

At the current stage, he only felt that the power released by Ye Chen had been growing more and more fierce, and was already much stronger than it had been before. By his estimation, Ye Chen had reached the same level as the ‘North Snow Fast Blade’, Lin Qi.”

Yuan Hengkong threw a glance at Ye Chen and found that he was just a Late Condensing Reality Realm disciple, he grinned evilly and said, “We have another one who wants to die. Just now, you sent my purple golden hammers flying, so now I’m going to smash your head in, tear you into five pieces and spread you all over this land.”

“Brother Yuan, he has a low-rank treasure weapon with him, let’s kill him and get his weapon!”

“Exactly, look at that huge fat bag tied around his waist, it must be filled with treasures!”

Yuan Hengkong picked up his hammers from the ground and said, “Be patient, this guy is already dead in my eyes. As for the treasures, I can share some if he has a lot.”

“Thank you, Brother Yuan!”

Ye Chen sneered and said, “Well, I’ll spare you from death if you can take a single move of mine.”

“What a stupid and reckless boy!”

“How dare you?!”

“Such big talk, you’re about to die anyway!”

All three of them showed fierce murderous gazes as they activated their Zhen Qi and darted towards Ye Chen.

“Slash!”

Ye Chen’s left foot stepped forward, and he then swung his sword downwards.

Puff!

A huge stream of sword Qi flashed across the three disciples’ waists, then slashed into the ground, it then left a tens of meters long and a few meter deep

cut, sending up clouds of shattered plants and soil.

Right in the next moment!

Bodies of all three of them suddenly split up, and then fell to the ground in pieces.

“What the...?! You killed all three of them with a single moment, and-and with only one move?!” Lou Hanshan was extremely shocked and very excited when he saw this, that he even got choked and began coughing. Although he had always known that Ye Chen was powerful and talented, he would never have thought that he could be so amazing at this stage. He had killed three equally powerful disciples with a single move, even Lin Qi couldn’t possibly achieve this level, perhaps someone three times more powerful than Lin Qi could do it! However, Ye Chen had not yet stepped into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, so how could he be so powerful?

‘No, that move launched by him just now had dragged all my attention, even my soul and spirit power. Can it be, can it really be...has Brother Ye comprehended the sword intent already? The sword intent that is pursued by all sword artists?!’ thought Luo Hanshan.

“Brother Ye, is-is that sword intent?” Luo Hanshan hurriedly asked.

Ye Chen nodded.

“Ah-ha! I thought so! No wonder you could kill all three of them with a single move! Sword artists who possess the sword intent are able to defeat higher level enemies as easily as they eat and drink, the others couldn’t even imagine that!” Lou Hanshan was sincerely happy. As the son of the Sky Cloud Martial School’s leader, he had always been thinking of the school’s future. Now, one of their disciples turned out to be such an amazing genius, someone who could certainly improve the overall power of the Sky Cloud Martial School in the future.

“However, you have just killed Yuan Hengying’s brother, it’s not going to be easy to deal with him.”

After his wave of excitement and delight, Luo Hanshan began to worry about it. The ‘Murderous Eagle’, Yuan Hengying was far more powerful than his brother, Yuan Hengkong. If he came to know that it was Ye Chen who had killed

his brother, he would absolutely chase Ye Chen to the end of the world, no matter where Ye Chen went. Apart from that, although Ye Chen had already attained the sword intent, and was now surprisingly powerful that he was able to easily kill any disciples below the Clasp of Yuan Realm, he probably still couldn't rival Yuan Hengying yet.

“This is a completely empty place, I have also already chopped them, what's the big deal?”

“You're right, let's just move away from here as quickly as we can!”

Luo Hanshan didn't want to spend another second in this place, as he was afraid that someone else might see Ye Chen and himself standing there right next to the three dead bodies.

Soon after Luo Hanshan and Ye Chen left, a human silhouette walked out from behind a big tree, he chuckled and said, “If I meet Yuan Hengying later, I can use this, and force him to not kill me.”

## ***Chapter 148: Deracinate magical light***

In a thriving woods.

Luo Hanshan slowly let out a long breath that had a slight scent of blood, he then opened his eyes and said, “My internal injuries can’t possibly recover within a short period of time. Fortunately, I feel that about seventy to eighty percent of my power has now recovered.”

“No rush, this Heavenly Dream Ancient Region was unlocked not that long ago, we can wait for a few days.” said Ye Chen.

“Earlier, if you hadn’t shown up in a timely manner, I would’ve been long dead by now.” Thinking about what had happened earlier, Luo Hanshan’s heart was still fluttering with fear.

Ye Chen responded with a grin.

In the next few days, Ye Chen and Luo Hanshan hung around in the ancient region, they looked for any valuable stuff during the daytime; during the nights, Luo Hanshan would sit still in meditation to heal his wounds, while Ye Chen would focus on absorbing Yuan Qi from spirit stones, he was trying to reach the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm.

That morning, after they finished their meditation and opened their eyes, they saw a magnificent, multicoloured stream of light that swooshed up from the East, thousands of miles away, it seemed to connect the heaven and the earth.

“The Heavenly Dream Battle Palace is opening!”

Ye Chen nodded. The most precious things in the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region were not those treasure weapons, ancient martial manuals or spirit medicines, instead, it was the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace, which could help martial artists break into higher realms of cultivation. Normally, you wouldn’t even find a trace of it, and it would only appear and open at a certain time period. Some say that a certain amount of bloodshed was required for the opening of the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace, which was not completely unreasonable. Over a hundred years ago, in order to prevent the high death rate, those top-ranked institutions once came to an agreement to forbid their



disciples from carelessly starting deadly fights against one another, and those that broke the agreement would be severely punished. As a result, even until the disciples were automatically sent out of the ancient region, the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace did not open.

“The Heavenly Dream Battle Palace is about to open, Brother Luo, Let’s go!”

“Okay!”

Both of them leapt up into the air and flew towards the multicoloured light stream.

Once the multicoloured light stream appeared, all the disciples from different institutions immediately saw it.

“Haha! The Heavenly Dream Battle Palace finally opened! As long as I can get in there, I have one chance in ten to break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm!”

“I have already been stuck at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm for a whole year now, this time I have to break through!”

“Hm, you few old douches have been troubling me constantly, when I become a Clasp of Yuan Realm warrior, I’ll first crush you all.”

“Yeah, just say whatever you want. You can soon find out how I will destroy you in the Heavenly Dream Palace.”

Whether they had been exploring the ancient region alone or in a deadly fight against others, most of the disciples instantly dropped everything in their hands and rushed towards the multicoloured light stream as fast as they could.

Airwaves as sharp as blades, swished across their faces.

Ye Chen and Luo Hanshan looked like two gigantic birds, as they swiftly flew across the air; occasionally, they would briefly land on a mountaintop to take a short break, and would then fly back into the sky.

As his ears slightly shook, Ye Chen lowered his head and saw what was happening down on in a valley.

Beside a crystal clear stream of water, a young girl was confronting against a young man.

The young girl's forehead was covered in sweat, and had tens of smooth rips on her clothes, they seemed to be made by a sword. Judging from those cuts, it looked like the one who had cut her clothes might have been perfectly controlling the power, those cuts had only reached her clothes, and not even a little bit of her skin was harmed. As for the young man, he carried a sword, with a proud smile on his face, his clothes were extremely clean, it looked like he was pretty confident about winning this fight.

"Little beauty, you are indeed not a bad martial artist, but sadly, It's me, Young Master Chun, you're facing right now. You should just give up on fighting back and try to be a nice girl." The young man wore a vivid green outfit, his eyes were filled with pride and desire, a pair of narrowed eyes were fixed on the girl's exposed skin as he licked his own lips from time to time.

The girl's face looked frost-cold as she said, "I never thought that a disciple from a decent and famous institution will do such an evil and sneaky thing. I'd rather die instead of submitting to you."

"Hehe, you can't die that easily in front of me!"

The young man gave an evil grin as he flicked his wrist and suddenly launched a move. A fast stream of sword light darted out, it transformed into a warm and gentle gust of wind that was capable of making people powerless and distracted. When the girl realised what had just happened, the sword held in the young man's hand already reached her neck, the cold and sharp sword edge was only half an inch away from her main blood vessel.

In the air, Luo Hanshan said to Ye Chen, "This guy is the top-ranked disciple of the Sky Serpent Nation's rank 7 institution, Extreme Lunar Cult, Hidden Dragon Rank 72, he is obsessed of messing with girls. God knows how many ordinary girls and female disciples from those famous families or institutions have been harassed by him. He stays unpunished only because his grandpa is the Head Elder of the Extreme Lunar Cult."

"Since he is nothing but a sluttish douche, why don't we just chop him." said Ye Chen expressionlessly while he pulled out his sword and hacked down.

Beside the river, Young Master Chun was about to grab that girl with his hands, but he suddenly felt a bone-deep cold, and after that, he completely lost

consciousness, forever. Behind him, the rapidly flowing stream was suddenly split into two by an over ten-meter long cut, that had abruptly appeared on the ground.

The girl perceived something and instantly activated her Zhen Qi and leapt back.

In the very next moment, Young Master Chun's body split up from the middle; the cut was as smooth as the edge of a mirror. In the meanwhile, blood splashed out in huge streams.

"Someone's here?!"

The girl raised her head in confusion, showing a breathtakingly beautiful face. That was Ji Xueyan, a core disciple of the Emerald Martial Palace. She saw two silhouettes swiftly flash across in the air above, they soon became barely visible, but she still recognised Ye Chen at the first glance and had also sensed his Zhen Qi that was way more fierce than ever before,

As she bit her own lip, Ji Xueyan had an extremely complicated look on her face. She clearly remembered that a year ago, she told Ye Chen that, dragons would never cohabit with snakes, therefore, she and Ye Chen could never be together. Nevertheless, judging from the current situation, what she said was indeed true, just that she had become the weak snake while Ye Chen had grown into a powerful dragon, who had soared into the sky, freely pursuing his goal. Thinking of this, Ji Xueyan bit her own lip harder and let blood gushed out in slight streams.

Thousands of miles might sound incredibly far and would take ordinarily people at least half a month to travel, yet the Condensing Reality Realm martial artists only needed half an hour to cover that distance.

As he stably landed on the ground, Luo Hanshan raised his head and said in surprise, "This multicoloured light stream has even covered the huge lake that has a radius of ten miles, no wonder we could see it so clearly even from thousands of miles, it was as if it was right in front of our eyes."

More and more disciples arrived, and gathered around the lake.

"The Heavenly Dream Palace must be under this lake, let's go down there

directly!” A core disciple from a famous institution didn’t stop by the lake and instead darted straight into the light stream.

Something horrible happened in the following moment. The magnificent, beautiful multicoloured light stream was so destructive that the disciple who had darted into it didn’t even let out a howl before his body was silently torn apart, it then quickly melted down and merged with the light stream itself. The others who had been following him couldn’t stop their bodies immediately, some had their arms dissolved by the light stream, some had their heads devoured, while some had half their body melted in that light stream. Not even a single drop of blood shed out of their wounds.

“Eradicating magical light! This is Eradicating magical light!”

Someone shouted out loud.

Hearing this, Luo Hanshan frowned and explained, “Eradicating magical light only exists in the third level of the sky - Above Heaven, I never thought it would appear here as well. If this truly is the Eradicating magical light, even Sea of Souls Realm powerful martial artists wouldn’t be able to move through it, only Life and Death Realm martial artists could get into the light stream and remain alive with their powerful protective Qi, but that would still be risky.”

“Is this Eradicating magical light really that powerful?” When he saw this dreamy multicoloured light stream, Ye Chen did not think that it was harmful, but it turned out that more beautiful things might be more dangerous as well, you could easily fall into a beautiful trap without even a chance to defend yourself.

Luo Hanshan nodded and responded, “There are many kinds of Yuan Qi existing in this world. Under certain circumstances, two different kinds of Yuan Qi could merge together and become an incredibly destructive Qi; some of these powerful merged Qi could transform further, into magical lights. Some magical lights are able to heal wounds, some could boost energies, while some are unimaginably powerful and violent, such as this Eradicating magical light, anything or anyone shrouded by it would immediately and entirely vanish from this world, not just the body, but even the soul.

While they were talking, over a hundred people have already gathered around

the lake, and the number was continuously increasing.

“Luo Hanshan! Brother Ye!”

Two slim silhouettes swished over and stopped beside Ye Chen and Luo Hanshan.

“Senior sister Zhu and Senior sister Xu, are you both alright?”

Zhu Mei smiled and said, “We were lucky as we met each other soon after we got in. It’s quite a shame though, I think I should give out my position of the top-ranked disciple, as sister Xu Jing is much more powerful than I thought.”

Xu Jing remained silent.

“Martial artists ranked in the Hidden Dragon Ranking have also come.” Ye Chen saw Mo Wuxue, Yuan Hengying, Hong Qianjun, Wei Dongshe and other Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists all arrived together, they brought a wave of strong and fierce sense of power that instantly stirred the crowd.

“Disciples from our Evil Blood Martial School, get over here!”

“Sky Eagle Castle’s disciples, what are you waiting for?”

“Multiple Mountains Martial School’s disciples come over here!”

“Green Bamboo Martial School’s disciples...”

As early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists, the few Hidden Dragon Ranked people gathered all of their fellow disciples once they arrived at the lake, and the other high level martial artists also started to do so.

Behind Ye Chen, not too far away, Ji Xueyan had just arrived. She glanced at Ye Chen’s back with a complicated look, and then walked to Zhuang Fei, the Young Master Emerald.

After another half hour, over four-hundred people gathered around the lake. By now, except one or two occasional late-comers who would rush over and join the group, almost all surviving disciples had arrived by the lake.

“We were around six-hundred in total when we came in, now it’s down to over four-hundred. Those who have died were all the most talented disciples of their own institutions.” said Luo Hanshan with a sigh.

Zhu Mei responded, “Fortunately, our Sky Cloud Martial School is doing pretty good so far. All four of us are still here, but look, some institutions have lost their entire group of disciples, not even a single one of them managed to survive, while some institutions have only one disciple each alive.”

‘All achievements made in Palaces cost great amounts of lives.’ Ye Chen murmured in his head.

At this moment, the ‘Murderous Eagle’, Yuan Hengying suddenly yelled out.

“Where is my brother? Why didn’t he come? Who has seen him? You, you might’ve seen my brother somewhere, tell me!” he randomly grabbed a disciple who came from another institution and yelled in a rude tone filled with an intention of kill. That disciple didn’t even dare to look at him.

“I, I Don’t know...” said the disciple as he trembled.

“You don’t know, huh? Then why should I let you live?”

Puff!

Yuanheng Ying twisted his fingers and directly ripped off the poor disciple’s head.

“Ye Chen, be careful, don’t let him find out!” Seeing this bloody scene, Luo Hanshan’s heart instantly started beating, and he hurriedly sent his voice to Ye Chen by the use of his Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen responded calmly, “Don’t worry Brother Luo, I’ve got this.”

Beside him, Zhu Mei couldn’t help but start complaining, “This guy is too excessive, how could he just kill someone like that? How could he just do whatever he wants just because he is more powerful than the others?”

Luo Hanshan gave a bitter smile. Zhu Mei was slightly more powerful than him, however, she was way too gentle and nice.

Yuan Hengying didn’t ask the groups that were led by Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists, instead, he rushed into those average level groups and asked around about his brother. After he killed another innocent disciple, he walked towards the Sky Cloud Martial School’s group of disciples.

“Oy, you, have any of you seen my brother Yuan Hengkong?” He swept across

the four of them with a glance, and yelled in a cold tone as his blood-red eyes popped out.

Ye Chen remained perfectly calm and responded, "Sorry, we haven't."

"Hm?! Kid, how dare you talk to me like this?! Staying so calm in front of my face, that makes you the most suspicious one. Just tell me where my brother is?!"

Yuanheng Ying approached Ye Chen step by step.

"Don't be ridiculous, I've already told you that we haven't seen your brother. Your brother has gone missing, but what can we do about that?" Ye Chen seemed to be well prepared for a deadly fight as he raised his head and showed a fierce gaze.

## ***Chapter 149 - Ancient cannibal fish***

“Brother Ye, just hold still for now, but if this Yuanheng Ying continues pushing us, we shall rush up together.” When Luo Hanshan talked to Ye Chen by the use of his Zhen Qi, he delivered the same words to Zhu Mei and Xu Jing, he told them to prepare for a deadly fight. Silently, he already made up his mind that he would definitely teach this Yuanheng Ying a lesson, even if it might cost him his life.

Zhu Mei and Xu Jing both slightly nodded and silently activated their Zhen Qi, they would launch a full strength attack once Yuanheng Ying makes the move.

The entire area fell into a deadly silence and a fierce murderous aura gradually spread out.

The other Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists such as Mo Wuxue, had been watching this scene with interest. Compared to other institutions, the Sky Cloud Martial School was relatively small, yet, their people were indeed united and brave, it seemed like they were ready to risk their lives and fight against Yuanheng Ying; however, bravery never equalled power, when against the truly strong ones, all kinds of bravery was useless.

Liu Wuxiang and Ji Xueyan seemed to not be able to bear watching this, both of them turned their eyes towards Zhuang Fei.

Zhuang Fei said blandly, “The Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is a dangerous place, you shall focus on your own safety and don’t mind about others’ businesses.”

“Our Senior Brother is right, this has nothing to do with us, if they die, we can only say that they were asking for it.”

“Maybe they did ask for it, by provoking Yuan Hengying.”

Another few Emerald Martial Palace’s core disciples even grinned seeing this.

On the Purple Sun Martial School’s side, Ouyang Ming said excitedly, “Cousin, it seems like that Yuanheng Ying is going kill them and complete the mission for us!”

“Hehe, when everybody is sent out and the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region is locked again, the faces of those few Sky Cloud Martial School’s old dudes are



going to be really funny.”

Many of the others also began whispering to each other.

“These four people are so dead, who doesn’t know that Yuanheng Ying has always been a cruel slaughterer?”

“I only wish that after Yuanheng Ying is done with them, he won’t turn towards us. Should we just leave now and come back after this dangerous situation is over?”

“Oi, Junior Brother, do you really want to die? That murderous eagle will definitely kill us once he sees us run.”

Ye Chen wasn’t distracted by all those conversations, instead, he had a piercing gaze and had activated his Zhen Qi to the peak point, he merged it with the sword intent, and kept it perfectly under his control.

“Good, you guys are genuinely brave, but that might not be a good thing. Today, you’re all going to die, I, Yuanheng Ying, never let anyone I wish to kill, survive.”

While speaking, he abruptly shook his body; the dark cyan Zhen Qi coiling around his body suddenly transformed into an enormous eagle, and let out a long shrill roar. Simultaneously, a strong sense of power swiftly spread out, and caused the air to ripple like water, it seemed to be oddly sticky.

“Guys! Look at this! Yuanheng Ying is launching his move!”

“Hm? That one also seems to be launching a deadly move.”

Some of the others showed a surprised look. In their eyes, Ye Chen gripped the sword hilt with his right hand, even before he pulled the sword out of the sheath, a dazzling beam of light had already swept across the air and cut all the surrounding plants into pieces, it was as if those plants were attacked by an invisible and incredibly sharp sword.

Showing a malicious grin, Yuanheng Ying seemed to make his move, the Zhen Qi eagle spread its wings, preparing to dart out. Right in the next moment, the multicoloured light column suddenly changed.

The tens of miles thick light column began shrinking rapidly. In just two blinks

of an eye, the light column had shrunk to a hundred meters thickness, and stood right in the middle of the lake.

“The light is gone, let’s go in!”

Some disciples couldn’t wait for the light to completely disappear, and instant darted out and leapt high into the air, and dove into the water like a fish.

Seeing nothing horrible had happened this time, all the others also rushed out towards the lake. Without any hesitation, they all jumped into the lake.

Along with a series of water rippling sounds, most of the disciples had jumped into the lake and only tens of people were left on the ground.

“Let’s go.” Zhuang Fei led the Emerald Martial Palace’s disciples into the water.

Yuanheng Ying’s look had changed a few times during this short period of time. At this moment, he had two choices, the first one was to let Ye Chen and his fellows go, and then he himself could go into the water immediately, while the second one was to kill them before he went into the water. The second choice might take a little more time since the sense of power released by Ye Chen was especially strong and fierce, Yuanheng Ying clearly understood that he couldn’t possible kill all four of them with only one or two moves.

“You’re in luck, just pray that you don’t run into me inside the palace.” After he briefly pondered, Yunheng Ying went with the first choice. The Heavenly Dream Battle Palace was extremely magical, he wanted to go in immediately, and couldn’t afford to waste anymore time. Turning around, Yuanheng Ying directly jumped into the lake, along with the silhouette of the Zhen Qi eagle attached to his body.

Ye Chen and the others slightly sighed in relief.

“Fortunately, this light column has shrunk so timely.” Lou Hanshan’s clothes were even soaked by cold sweat. He raised his head and looked around the lake, it was now completely empty.

Zhu Mei nodded and said, “Although that Yuan Hengying is a total bastard, without a doubt, he’s horribly powerful, especially that hell like aura of his, which is naturally increasing after he killed more than ten thousand people, it is

as if he was bringing hell with him, and everywhere he tread would become an ocean of blood.”

“Let’s just get in!” Among the four of them, Ye Chen was the calmest one. Just now, he was well prepared for a deadly fight, even though he was far less powerful than Yuanheng Ying. His power roughly equalled Lin Yue, ranked 70 in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking, he might barely win against Lin Yue if he used the [Heart Refining], nevertheless, Yuanheng Ying was not like Lin Yue. Yuanheng Ying was at least thirty percent more powerful than Lin Yue, and was ranked 59th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking, Ye Chen couldn’t possibly defeat him just with the sword intent and his Late Condensing Reality Realm power.

Therefore, if the fight had started earlier, only two results could be expected; the first one was that, Ye Chen would be killed and Yuanheng Ying would be severely injured, as for the second one, both of them would die and no one would actually win the fight.

Ye Chen didn’t want either of these two possible results.

Followed by another series of water rippling noises, the four of them also leapt into the lake together.

Water splashed out while they dove deep into the lake. By now, not a single person remained on the ground.

“Such immense pressure!”

Once they dove into the lake, all of them felt that their protective Qi was being pressed hard inwards.

Ye Chen activated his soul power and swept across the surrounding area, and found that contained in the lake was not just water. Within the water, there was a kind of multicoloured unknown liquid, it was denser than the water and seemed like a liquid crystal.

“This is not normal water, be careful!” Ye Chen told the others.

As they dove deeper and deeper, the water pressure grew greater and greater.

When they were over a hundred meters deep, their protective Zhen Qi shields that were originally three feet away from their skin had now been pressed to less

than two feet away from the skin; apart from this, the great amount of pressure had brought an equally great resistance, their moving speed had been reduced to an unpleasant degree.

Suddenly, streams of blood surged up from below.

“Is there a fight happening down there? But the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace is so close, why would they waste their time fighting?” Ye Chen frowned, he felt that something was wrong.

Crack!

Without catching his attention, something abruptly broke his protective Zhen Qi shield, and let a fierce stream of water flood into his shield and struck him tens of meters away.

“Brother Ye!”

Lou Hanshan clearly saw the thing that had attacked Ye Chen. It was a weird looking fish, it was as slim as a shuttle, it was about five feet long and had sawtooth-shaped teeth that were shining with a cold light. That fish moved way too fast, it had already bit through Ye Chen’s protective Qi when Luo Hanshan saw it, he didn’t even have a chance to stop it.

Boom!

Xu Jing was the first one who attacked it, she directly punched on the fish’s belly. Two flame circles appeared behind her head, they were blazing and supported her with a large amount of power, even though she was under the water.

Streams of water gushed out from the fish’s jaws, it fled for over ten meters and then stopped.

Tens of meters away, Ye Chen forcibly calmed down his surging Zhen Qi. He was slightly startled as he thought, ‘This fish’s teeth are incredibly sharp! My Zhen Qi shield didn’t work at all, it cracked my Zhen Qi shield just like a biscuit. I’m glad that I activated my body boosting spell and protective skill earlier, not letting it bite off a piece of my flesh, otherwise, this would have been waymore worse.’

Ye Chen quickly moved back to the others, and said, "I'm ok!"

Lou Hanshan said with a face filled with worry, "If I guessed right, these are Ancient Cannibal Fishes. Their teeth could cut most of metals very easily, and they're ten times more fierce than ordinary cannibal fishes."

Zhu Mei said, "Brother Ye, the martial arts you had been practising are of relatively low grade, they might not be able to protect you from these fishes' attacks, why don't you come over here and stay in the middle of us."

"Indeed, all of our arts are of the low-ranked Earth Realm, this will allow us to block group attacks launched by two or three Ancient Cannibal Fishes."

Reminded by Zhu Mei, Lou Hanshan also realised that Ye Chen's Pure Jun Zhen Qi was only a Mortal Realm art, it was no worse than most of the low-ranked Earth Realm arts as an attacking skill, but it was far less powerful as a defensive skill; besides, Ye Chen's Zhen Qi was also not as pure and the quantity not as high as the others, this made him the weakest among the four of them.

Ye Chen shook his head and said, "Earlier, I was just distracted by the blood stream that came from below, I'll be more careful."

After being attacked once, Ye Chen did not dare to be even a little bit careless now, he spread his soul power out, and covered ten meters in radius around him, with which, he could immediately sense even the slightest movement made by something within that area.

They continued to move downwards. The water pressure also increased and more and more Ancient Cannibal Fishes showed up. At first, they were only a couple of fishes, but now, they began to show up in small groups.

"Cut!"

Ye Chen swung his arm backwards and threw out a move accurately, as if he had eyes on his back.

Puff!

The water was split into two as a huge stream of sword Qi flashed across.

In the next moment, a small group of Ancient Cannibal Fishes were crushed, blood poured out like a cloud, blocking people's sight.

Further below, a plot was emerging.

“Do you want to die? How dare you be in my way?!” Hong Qianjun, 69th on the Hidden Dragon Ranking, growled out with a fierce gaze. A strong stream of Zhen Qi spread out along with his resonant voice.

Ouyang Ming gulped and said, “Hong Qianjun, one of our Purple Sun Martial School’s inner elders is from your family, eh, one of those branches of your family, this time, we want to make a deal with you.”

“What deal?” said Hong Qianjun in a frosty voice.

“Kill a person for us.”

“Don’t be ridiculous, what are you? Why do you think that I will kill a person, just for you? I can kill you right now though!” Hong Qianjun meant only half of what he said. He was just scaring them in order to squeeze more benefits out of them, as for killing them right now, he was indeed planning to do so if the price they offered was not desirable, he didn’t care about wasting a bit of time.

Ouyang Lie, the top-ranked core disciple of the Purple Sun Martial School responded blandly, “You’ll get fifty thousand pieces of low-ranked spirit stones after you kill him.”

“Hehe, what do you think I am, a beggar?! I want a hundred thousand stones for the effort I’m put and twenty thousand stones for the time I’m going to spend. And I’ll kill you right now if you dare to bargain.”

“Okay, as you wish.” Ouyang Ming said. However, his heart was bleeding at this moment. One hundred and twenty thousand low-ranked spirit stones equalled forty-eight million gold; if he had a choice, he would rather pay eighty million gold, because spirit stones were much more rare and precious, and only a small amount of stones were available in every auction. This time, the budget offered by their inner elder was a hundred thousand low-ranked stones, as for the extra twenty thousand, his cousin and himself had to cover it.

“Hehe, good, who would you like to kill? And, I’m warning you now, I am not going to accept any denials after I killed your guy, you should know that our Multiple Mountain Martial School’s people never let others own our money.”

Ouyang Ming said in an evil tone, “Ye Chen!”

## ***Chapter 150 - Battle in the water***

The lake was immeasurably deep, the first group of disciples have already dived several hundred meters, the protective Qi layer around their body was being squished to near an inch away from their skin, it was barely enough to cover the area where they happen to be surrounded by the dreaded Ancient Cannibal Fish. These fish gathered in groups, and began attacking the lone disciples.

Those with strong Zhen Qi were able to defend themselves, but those with weaker Zhen Qi were swiftly taken care of in two to three bites, and not even their bones left, the amount of blood spilt was incomparable

“Elder Sister, and the two Brothers, thank goodness you had your First Sky Holy Water technique to defend us.”

Amongst the many disciples from the martial schools, there were not many who could stand up to an attack by the Ancient cannibal fish. There was a group of five people from the Rudra Martial School covering themselves in water with a protective layer in the shape of a cone. Their fist covered by water was extremely thick. From the surface, the water was rotating so fast that it couldn't be seen by the naked eye, it was just like a drill. As soon as the fish came close, their 5ft bodies were sent flying out of the water. While it may not be able to send the larger fish such as the 10 ft long ones away, the water covered defense was virtually impenetrable. Try as they might, the fish couldn't bite through it, and in the meantime the water was filled with the blood of the fish.

One of them within the water defense said, “I am unable to defend against the Ancient cannibal fish alone, we can only defend if Senior Sister Qin also makes a move.”

Yuan Xuemei smiled and said, “You practice the First Sky Holy Water technique, if you combine a little amount of your Qi with this, it will already make it hundreds of kilograms heavy. This defensive layer is still mixed with regular water, now imagine if it was made with all your Qi, it will be more than 10 times stronger!”

“How can it be that easy, this technique produces such a small amount of Qi that we have to combine it with water in times of battle, and now we also have

to defend such a large area.” On the other side, a girl sporting a green robe who was similarly using both her hands to support the water layer, forced out a laugh.

In the midst of people talking, the water wall, just like a spiral cone, once again dived a few hundred meters.

“The monument is collapsing!”

“The smell is everywhere!”

“The fish have been taken down!”

Within the dark undercurrents of the water, below a 10m tall monument, a sudden shockwave burst out inside a group of ancient cannibal fish, killing a large amount of them.

Afterwards, a blade of light emerged, cutting down the cannibal fish left and right, they were continuously killed until there was a large mess of cannibal fish blood and parts.

The area was dark, with only a dim light showing the silhouettes in the fan shaped formation. With every move the creatures made, they were surrounded by what seemed to be numerous attacks that punched at them from every single angle. Coupled with the darkness and disorientation, the fish were unable to do anything and were thus beaten alive.

“This won’t work! There are too many of these creatures, even if we kill tens of them, we can’t kill them all.” Luo Hanshan relayed this message to the other three.

“This won’t be an easy challenge”, said Xu Jing in a difficult tone.

“What she says is right, constantly fighting them is of no use and it’s just a waste of our time, everybody hurry up first, I’ll be right behind you.” The blade technique killed the fish one after the other, Ye Chen could clearly feel his Qi being rapidly used up, almost a third of it was already gone.

“How can that be?” said Zhu Mei as she disagreed

Luo Hanshan knew what Ye Chen meant and told Zhu Mei, “Don’t underestimate our Junior Brother, he’s the fiercest one among us, he could



easily kill Ouyang Ming with a swift move.”

“Really?”

Zhu Mei did not entirely believe that this plan would work and hesitated for a bit, but still gave it her all along with Luo Hanshan. She had already made up her mind that she would quickly return at the first sign that Ye Chen was in danger.

After swallowing a Qi restoration pill, Ye Chen drew out his sword, unsheathing it in a quick and swift manner

“Wind sweeper!”

In an instant, the water spiralled straight up, and began to take the form of a large water dragon in the next moment. The creature summoned was extremely large, it began decimating the surrounding fish. The ‘pish’ sounds of blood spilling was unending as the ancient fishes fell, one after another.

After this move, half of Ye Chen’s Qi was consumed, but he still managed a faint smile as he thought, “Looks like once this is all done, I’ll have to go back to practicing the low-level techniques, or else I can’t muster the power for the more powerful ones.”

Right below, Zhu Mei looked at the scene, “I can’t believe that he was this skillful, it felt as if the blades of the water dragon could seriously injure me.”

Luo Hanshan gave a smile, “You might not believe it, but Ye Chen has learnt the sword intent, he is capable of easily dispatching those with the same level of skill as him. I’ve seen him take down three disciples who were around my level, they did not even stand a chance.”

Zhu Mei’s eyes were wide open as she said, “He’s already comprehended the sword intent? No wonder he’s so fierce. Previously, when North Snow Martial School’s sect master, Xue Wuren hadn’t comprehended the blade intent, he was only as strong as an inner elder, but once he comprehended the blade intent, his strength rose rapidly and he is now on par with Emerald Martial Palace’s Zhuang Qinxuan. And that too when no one has ever seen him go all out.”

Shortly, Ye Chen began to catch up.

But, at this time, there was a huge disturbance in the water, a 10m long,

bright, and flashy palm made of Zhen Qi came at them and enveloped the four individuals.

Ye Chen was filled with killing intent as he sent out a sword attack.

Bang!

As the large sword Qi and the palm Qi made contact, a powerful explosion took place beneath the water.

Luo Hanshan and the other three were shot down, with their bodies bloodied, their Zhen Qi was a mess.

“Hong Qianjun!”

With his blurry vision, Luo Hanshan noticed a figure emerging out of the water, with a body comparable to that of an ape.

“Haha, so you’re the Sky Cloud Martial School disciples.” Hong Qianjun made his presence known from such a far distance, he did not care about who he had attacked, to him it looked like a 4 man team. There were many barriers in the water, but when he surfaced, there were probably around 7 to 8 left.

Zhu Mei frowned, “Why did you attack us?”

Hong Qianjun simply grinned, “You lot have a terrible reputation, someone has put up a large bounty on your heads.”

In a moment, Luo Hanshan began to have various thoughts, “Bounty? There’s no way that this is the work of Yuanheng Ying, he likes to do things himself and would not pay someone else to do it for him, and aside from him, there are a few other enemies, like the Purple Sun Martial School. Yes, they’ve never gotten along well with us, and now with the rise of Brother Ye, they won’t rest until we’re done for.”

“Hong Qianjun, dead men tell no tales, it’s the Purple Sun Martial School that wants us dead, isn’t it!”

Hong Qianjun shook his head, “That is none of my concern, all I know is that I’m here to kill you. But, I can give you a chance. In your group of four, only one can live. That means the other three can either kill themselves or get killed by me, and the last one scrams!”

Ye Chen was indifferent, “Do you think you have the right to decide.”

“You, in this group, you will be the one to die.” Hong Qianjun’s body was surrounded by a bright halo which even the cannibal fish could not pierce.

Ye Chen slowly said, “Today, you will die.”

Blue veins started to bulge on Hong Qianjun’s forehead, “You are nothing but a mutt, you dare speak against me, I’ll slowly cut you down to the bone, letting you live in agony as you beg for your death, let me see if your mouth is so big then.”

A few hundred meters away, Ouyang Lie and Ouyang Ming were killing the cannibal fish while having a chat.

“Brother, do you think this Hong Qianjun can defeat them? I have such a bad feeling about this.”

Lightning flashed, and four to five cannibal fish were charred black.

‘Lightning hand’, Ouyang Lie claimed, “Hong Qianjun is ranked 69th, and he was already able to easily kill disciples at the same level when he was at the Late Condensing Reality Realm, now he is already in the Clasp of Yuan Realm, so how do they stand a chance against him?”

Ouyang Ming proceeded to nod, “That is true.”

Previously at the lake, when Yuanheng Ying wanted to kill Ye Chen and his four companions, he did not expect that the beam of multi-coloured light would suddenly disappear, and they had to dive into the water. He then proceeded to have various thoughts, there was a one in ten chance of Ye Chen stepping into the Clasp of Yuan Realm if he steps into the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace, and the chance might never come again.

If you start it, you need to finish it. So, the two of them spent a lot to hire Hong Qianjun, so that he’ll help them kill Ye Chen and his comrades under the water.

“We’ll wait until their dying breaths, then we can sneak up and stick our knife into them.” Ouyang Lie, or better known as the ‘Thunder hand’, was way more cruel than Ouyang Ming

“Hehe, that’s a good plan.”

As Hong Qianjun finished speaking, he felt a blade strike him, and his defensive layer started to break, as he heard Ye Chen's voice, "You know, you could have just gone to the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace in such a peaceful manner, no worries, no fuss, but now I have no idea which place you'd go to. You actually came looking for trouble, and were unable to kill me, now I really want to see who's like a dying dog."

When confronting the 'Murderous eagle', Ye Chen only had a small grasp of the technique, so he was unable to produce such an effect, it was probably due to the lack of initiative beforehand. It's such a shame, but Hong Qianjun can't be compared to the 'Murderous Eagle', his strength was only similar to that of LinYue, so killing him was a little difficult, but it was not impossible.

As his hand reached the sword, Ye Chen used all his might to unsheathe his sword, and used Shocking Cloud Sword art.

A large sword composed of Zhen Qi took form, it had such an explosive impact that the surrounding water was split apart, even the water behind it could not sustain the impact and exploded, allowing the power of his Qi sword to move faster than ever.

"Sword intent!"

Hong Qianjun's face turned pale with panic, sword intent was inherently difficult to comprehend, and not only did his opponent comprehend sword intent but also mastered it. He thought to himself that this person definitely should not be allowed to live, and he must die now.

After some thought, Hong Qianjun let out a cry, the armour surrounding his body began expanding until it was concentrated in a space.

"Mountain-shattering Stamp!"

With one hand, Hong Qianjun attacked.

Boom!

The Qi blade was rather quick, but when it hit the armour, it turned sluggish, as if there were an infinite number of barriers blocking it, it finally cracked it

open, releasing all the compressed Zhen Qi.

Kacha!

The Zhen Qi blade eventually disintegrated, the armour was actually able to defend against it, but Hong Qianjun nevertheless underestimated the power of the sword technique, and in the end lost a sleeve of his 'impenetrable' armour.

## Chapter 151 - Killing Hong Qianjun (Part one)

“Damn it! I want you to die!”

Seeing that he was almost at a disadvantage when facing a Late Condensing Reality Realm martial artist, Hong Qianjun turned extremely angry. His face instantly turned blue, he launched another ‘Mountain-shattering Stamp’ as he yelled.

The ‘Mountain-shattering Stamp’ was a low-rank Earth Realm martial skill, only possessed by the Multiple Mountain Martial school. Once a martial artist launched this move, all the released power would immediately gather at one certain spot, to achieve an amazing destructiveness. This skill was way more powerful than many ordinary low-rank Earth Realm martial skills. When Hong Qianjun was still at the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm, he once shattered the protective Qi of an early Clasp Yuan Realm martial artists with this skill. Just now, he launched the move with all of his power, it sent the flowing water streams in front of him up into the air.

The water surrounding Ye Chen was stirred violently, fierce streams of water began striking Ye Chen’s body, they seemed to push him back, and even tried to send him to fly. The protective Qi released by Ye Chen surrounded him three feet away from his body, it was now being squeezed by those water streams and letting out a creaking noise.

Ye Chen suddenly showed a fierce gaze, he slightly shook his body that had previously been stabilised in the water like a mountain; followed by his move, the sword intent spread out along with his Qi and cut off those surging water streams. Instantly, those ferocious water streams quieted down like beheaded serpents, huge yet powerless.

“Highly Condensed Sword Qi!”

The series of changes all happened within a single moment. Ye Chen then trod on a water stream and stepped forwards. Being trod on by his feet, the water stream seemed as solid as an iron board. No one managed to see the way he launched the move, and the Hidden Cloud Sword was swung down already. Ye Chen gripped the sword and maintained the gesture, as if he suddenly paused.

A thick, huge roaring sword Qi split up the water, it ripped off a layer of the yellow light and bumped against the lutescent palm stamp.

Puff

The sword Qi didn't directly shatter this time, instead, it shook in an intense manner and clashed against the power of the palm attack. The sword Qi inexhaustibly released waves of power which continuously struck against the palm silhouette one after another.

“What kind of sword skill is this?!”

Seeing this, Hong Qianjun's heart sank. At that moment, he was even more eager to kill Ye Chen than before. He couldn't live with the fact that he was unable to defeat a Condensing Reality Realm martial artist, even though that was someone who comprehended the sword intent. After all, he was a Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artist, it would have a bad effect on his reputation if the others come to know about this.

Puff!

Although that palm stamp was huge and powerful, it was only supported by a single stream of power. As it continuously got cut by the sword Qi, the palm stamp rapidly fell apart, and in the next moment, the sword Qi, that showed no signs of weakening, swished further towards the denser layer of the lutescent light surrounding Hong Qianjun's body, while going right against the rapidly flowing water stream, like a dazzling lightning bolt.

“Enfeoffed and Conferred a rank of Nobility!”

As he activated all of his Zhen Qi, the layer of lutescent light instantly grew brighter around Hong Qianjun's body, it seemed even more solid and touchable. After that, the thick and bright circle of light quickly condensed into a small-scale town, firmly shielding Hong Qianjun.

“What is this defensive skill? It is even more powerful than the combination of my Purple Qi and the Great Monument Suppression.” Luo Hanshan had always been good at defensive skills. Back then, even Ouyang Ming, who had mastered the Dragon-beheading Kick, couldn't break through his defence. He could even fight evenly against two same-grade martial artists with his excellent defensive power, however, once he saw the small-scale town that was condensed from the light, and surrounded Hong Qianjun's body, he realised that his own defensive



power was far less powerful than Hong Qianjun's defensive power, even if he managed to step into the Clasp of Yuan Realm. Therefore, Luo Hanshan began worrying about Ye Chen.

In the meanwhile, both Ouyang Ming and Ouyang Lie had their eyes wide open in shock.

"How can this even happen?! Not long ago, Ye Chen was almost defeated by Shi Potian, how can he now fight against Hong Qianjun without showing any signs of loss? Where did he gain the extra power from? It's impossible!" Ouyang Ming couldn't believe what he saw, he gnashed his teeth as he murmured.

Ouyang Lie said in a low voice, "It's fortunate that we didn't launch the attack ourselves, otherwise we would probably die in his hands. Nevertheless, since the god has spared us from this deadly danger, we can still find our chance and kill him. Let's just watch for now, he won't be able to hang on for too long. The 'Enfeoffed and Conferred a rank of Nobility' of the Multiple Mountain Martial School is a mid-rank Earth Realm martial art, even though Hong Qianjun hasn't mastered it yet, he can definitely destroy Ye Chen with it."

"You're right, Ye Chen is going to die anyway, he can never break that defence."

A series of earth-shaking 'clangs' rose into the air.

The sword Qi sent up huge amounts of fire sparks as it struck against the small-scale town, those fire sparks didn't die out even in the water, instead, large groups of cannibal fish were killed by the great heat.

However, no matter how heavily and swiftly the sword Qi hacked against the small town condensed from Zhen Qi, it stayed perfectly still, just like a great mountain. The sword Qi caused a few slight cracks on the small town, yet, that was far from even shaking it, not to mention killing Hong Qianjun, who was firmly shielded by the town.

"Ha, my 'Enfeoffed and Conferred a rank of Nobility' is a mid-rank Earth Realm martial art, you can only break it in your dreams!" Hong Qianjun laughed out loud and yelled. As a rank 7 institution of the White Mystery Nation, the Multiple Mountain Martial institution didn't have too many mid-rank Earth Realm martial arts; half a year ago, Hong Qianjun stepped into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, and as

a reward, the leader gifted him the 'Enfeoff and Conferred a rank of Nobility'. This art had eleven levels in total, Hong Qianjun concentrated and practised for half a year, while being guided by an inner elder who majored in this art, and now reached the eighth-level already, it was even more powerful than the peak-level of all kinds of low-ranked Earth Realm defensive arts. Without a doubt, this was Hong Qianjun's greatest defence.

Ye Chen remained expressionless, and abruptly let out a great shout.

"Go!"

Boom!

The huge stream of sword Qi tightly coiled around the small town and suddenly exploded; after the explosion, countless thin and fierce streams of sword Qi 'clang'ed against the small town from all directions, forcing Hong Qianjun to take a step back.

Hong Qianjun wasn't infuriated by this, instead, he once again laughed out loud, and threw out another two moves of the 'Mountain-shattering Stamp' in a row.

Tremendous waves of palm power rushed towards Ye Chen, everywhere these palm power streams swept across, the water would be detonated, surging into the sky like a tsunami, and then roared towards Ye Chen.

"Clear the Sky!"

Facing a pair of huge palm stamps that were rushing over from both sides, Ye Chen let out a resonant growl, and launched 'Clear the Sky', that had the widest attacking range among all of his sword skills.

Puff! Boom! Puff! Boom!

The thunderous booms caused by the Mountain-shattering Stamps and the shrill swishing sounds of the sword Qi clashed against each other, the impact was so great that it even shook the sky. All cannibal fishes that drew slightly close were either crushed or pierced through. As for Luo Hanshan, Zhu Mei and Xu Jing, they had already moved eight-meter away from the battlefield, and could only see two human silhouettes fighting against each other in the surging waves of water.

“Junior Brother Ye is indeed marvellous, fighting against Hong Qianjun, a Hudden Dragon Ranked martial artist, for so long, and the winner is not yet determined. He is still only in the Late Condensing Reality Realm, and hasn’t even reached the peak-level.” Luo Hanshan was quite surprised on one side, and felt that this was to be expected on the other side, but all in all, he was extremely happy for Ye Chen’s improvement.

Unlike him, Zhu Mei furrowed her brows and said, “Luo Hanshan, Brother Ye is in danger.”

“How come?” asked Luo Hanshan.

Before Zhu Mei responded, Xu Jing explained in a bland tone, “Junior Brother Ye’s martial art is a peal-rank Mortal Realm art, and he doesn’t have enough amount of Zhen Qi, and is limited by his cultivation level, therefore, he is roughly weaker than Hong Qianjun by at least three times. Hong Qianjun is now trying to make Brother Ye consume as much Zhen Qi as possible, and when Brother Ye’s Zhen Qi is used up, he would immediately launch a deadly attack.”

“You’re right! I didn’t think about this before!”

Earlier, Luo Hanshan was way too excited about Ye Chen’s improvement, and it made him ignore some essential details, but after being reminded by the two female disciples, he instantly realised the facts and began worrying again.

“But I believe that Brother Ye has his own solution, he doesn’t seem like a thoughtless person at all.” After her explanation to Luo Hanshan, Xu Jing added.

On the east side, eight-hundred meters away from the battlefield.

Ouyang Lie sneered and said, “Ye Chen will absolutely die in a few minutes.”

Ouyang Ming clearly understood him, and responded with a malicious grin, “As it is said, aged ginger is more pungent. Hong Qianjun is an experienced martial artist, and would have encountered all kinds of opponents. This kid, Ye Chen can’t even compare with him. Once he uses up his Zhen Qi, he will certainly be crushed by Hong Qianjun.”

“Actually, the best result of this fight would be that, Hong Qianjun will be wounded severely while Ye Chen is killed. Then, Luo Hanshan and the two girls will definitely lose their minds in rage, they would rush up and attack Hong

Qianhun as a group. However, as a powerful Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artist, Hong Qianjun can still kill all three of them, even with serious injuries; but after that, his injuries will only worsen further.”

Ouyang Ming’s eyes began shining, and said, “Are you saying that we can just let Hong Qianjun kill Ye Chen for us, and then conveniently kill him as well.”

Ouyang Lie didn’t respond, and only showed a malicious look.

As he easily shattered a thick swooshing stream of water brought up by Ye Chen’s sword Qi, Hong Qianjun proudly laughed and said, “You know, there is a huge gap between the Condensing Reality Realm and the Clasp of Yuan Realm, no matter how talented you are, you can not go beyond this gap. How much Zhen Qi do you still have left by now? I suppose less than twenty percent, Am I right?”

“More than enough to kill you.”

Even though Ye Chen had been maintaining an expressionless look all this time, his gaze continued to become more and more fierce with time, it was as if he could see through everything in this world, even the whole universe, and the reality.

Seeing Ye Chen’s cold and bland face, Hong Qianjun was once again enraged. He swore to himself that he would entirely crush Ye Chen’s confidence, and would tread on Ye Chen’s face, and torture him as hard as possible. Then, he would find out if Ye Chen could still maintain this arrogant and careless face, and not beg for mercy.

“Die! Mountain-shattering Stamp!”

Hong Qianjun swiftly launched another wave of lutescent palm stamps, which were extremely condensed, it seemed as if each palm stamp had a small hill sealed in it.

Surprisingly, Ye Chen didn’t try to take this wave of attack, instead, he turned around, lowered his body and darted away, as flexibly and nimbly as a fish. It was hard to imagine that someone could actually move so fast underwater.

The protective Qi condensed into a sword-shaped shield, and wrapped around Ye Chen. Stimulated by the sword intent, Ye Chen moved extremely fast under

water, it was as if the water had lost all of its capability to impede his movement, and was easily split up by the sword-shaped Qi shield. At this moment, Ye Chen moved even faster than those ancient cannibal fishes, and was rapidly gathering his power.

“Don’t even try!”

Hong Qianjun saw that his palm stamps missed the target, and hurriedly chased up.

The water pressure was enormous, and also physical skills weren't one of Hong Qianjun’s specialities. Therefore, Ye Chen darted farther and farther away from him at lightning speed. Hong Qianjun activated his Zhen Qi to its limit, it was so much that his Zhen Qi streams even began boiling water behind his body, generating a great amount of power, and raising his speed.

Finally, Hong Qianjun fixed his eyes on Ye Chen from a great distance, he once again launched an attack. Waves of palm stamps madly roared out, they seemed capable of destroying the entire world.

The chase continued for a short while when Ye Chen suddenly stopped, he turned around while swinging his sword towards Hong Qianjun.

“Highly Condensed Sword Qi!”

Hong Qianjun grinned scornfully, and thought Ye Chen was probably frightened dumb. He instantly activated the small-scale Zhen Qi town and surrounded his body with it, to defend against Ye Chen’s sword Qi. However, when he activated the defensive Zhen Qi town, his Zhen Qi streams paused briefly; but he neglected it, because his only thought at this moment was to kill Ye Chen, and to tread with Ye Chen’s face under his feet.

Fire sparks burst out in all directions, boiling the surrounding water.

In the middle of these fire sparks, a stream of sword Qi ceaselessly hacked at the defensive Zhen Qi town. This sword Qi moved unimaginably fast and one couldn’t even possibly trace its movements, even the surrounding water began vibrating along with its movement.

Crack!

Abruptly, a cracking noise came from the small town, and followed by that, the sword Qi hacked even harder than before. Compared to a while ago, Ye Chen's Zhen Qi didn't show any signs of being used up, and on the contrary, it had now grown even stronger; it was as if his Zhen Qi would never exhaust, and what had happened before were all unreal.

A huge crack soon appeared in the small town condensed from Zhen Qi, it seemed like it was about to be chopped into two. Hong Qianjun yelled out in shock, "This is impossible! How can you still have that much Zhen Qi?! How?!"

## Chapter 152: Killing Hong Qianjun (part two)

“You don’t need to worry about my Zhen Qi, but as for yours, I assume, you now only have thirty to forty percent left, right? That defensive skill of yours is indeed marvellous, but it’s also obviously that it consumes huge amounts of Zhen Qi, and adding to that, earlier you forcibly boosted your Zhen Qi to chase me, and even launched a few of your ‘mountain-shattering stamp’ continuously, you shouldn’t have too much Zhen Qi left by now.” said Ye Chen. His voice was low, yet, his words were like a sharp arrow that easily pierced Hong Qianjun’s heart.

Hong Qianjun yelled out in both anger and shame, “What about you?! You should have run out of Zhen Qi long ago!”

The Sword Qi released by Ye Chen had still been ceaselessly hacking the small town condensed from Zhen Qi, and that crack was expanding. Ye Chen responded blandly, “Unfortunately, I happen to have a spirit pill with me, it can instantly replenish my consumed Zhen Qi. I have already swallowed it during that chase just now.”

Ye Chen’s explanation was partially true and partially not. He indeed had that kind of pill that could instantly replenish consumed Zhen Qi, but in fact, he had a whole calabash-bottleful of them instead of only one pill. Although he didn’t know the name of that kind of medicine yet, that pill did work extremely well for him. It not only improved the amount of his Zhen Qi, it even replenished all the consumed Zhen Qi instantly, it was multiple times more effective than the ordinary Zhen Qi replenishing pills that could be found in the markets; also, it didn’t have too many side effects.

The small town condensed from Zhen Qi was about to be broken. Hong Qianjun said word by a word, “Good, among those people who have pushed me this far in a fight, you’re the only one under the Clasp of Yuan Realm. But, do you think you can win against me with just this? Enfeoff and Confer a rank of Nobility! Condense!!”

He suddenly injected all remained Zhen Qi into that small town, and right after that, the small town instantly shrunk to half its size and in the meanwhile, the crack was also gradually repaired. Now, the small town became more and more

clear, it also seemed even more solid and real than before. The already strong defensive power of the small town grew stronger, and the sword Qi that had been continuously attacking it all this time couldn't even leave another mark on it.

“Hah! The Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists could regain their Zhen Qi much faster than martial artists in the lower cultivation realms. My Zhen Qi will be replenished bit by bit as long as I don't launch any other attack and stick to defense. By then, half of your replenished Zhen Qi would be gone, and that's the time you will die!” As he said this, Hong Qianjun had nearly lost his mind in rage. He never thought that a Late Condensing Reality Realm disciple could push him to such a degree. If he couldn't kill Ye Chen today, he would definitely spend the rest of his life hunting down Ye Chen, or he would be devoured by the desire for revenge.”

Ye Chen's face still looked bland and cold, “Let's find out how long you can keep it up.”

This sword skill could indeed last for a very long time, but eventually, the Zhen Qi would run out, and the longer it lasted, the weaker it would become. Therefore, Ye Chen directly cut off the sword Qi and launched another move. A fierce and violent stream of newly released sword Qi roared out from his word and clashed against the small town, sending huge amounts of fire sparks.

Ye Chen began incessantly launching full-strength attacks, while Hong Qianjun hid in that small town and held on. All the others were almost dumbfounded by this scene.

“Twist after twist, I can't tell how this fight will end anymore.” Lou Hanshan let out a long sigh with a bitter smile as he said.

Zhu Mei responded, “Junior Brother Ye has indeed shown amazing power, and he actually managed to push Hong Qianjun this far. Now Hong Qianjun can only try his best to defend himself.”

“But, Hong Qianjun is also impressive, that defensive skill of his is incredibly powerful, it's definitely a mid-rank Earth Realm art.”

“Exactly, if he doesn't have that skill, he would have been defeated by Brother Ye Long ago.”



Xu Jing didn't join their conversation, she was expecting Ye Chen to launch the ultimate attack that would smash the enemy's last hope and leave absolutely no chance.

On the other side, Ouyang Ming gasped in shock. Ye Chen's strength shocked him so much that even his fine hairs stood straight up. Hong Qianjun was 69th in the Hidden Dragon Ranking, and had already stepped into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, but facing Ye Chen, Hong Qianjun could only spend the last bit of his Zhen Qi in defense and did not dare to launch a counter attack. Who would even believe this?

Ouyang Lie furrowed his brows and gnashed his teeth, his eyes showed a strong killing intent, and said, "If this Ye Chen survives, our Purple Sun Martial Institution could never live in peace. When both of them get exhausted, you and me, we should launch our full-strength attacks and kill him. After that, we take off immediately, in case Luo Hanshan and the two girls trouble us."

"Sure, this guy is terrifying. If we let him live, we can never stabilise our position in the Windy Nation. We have to kill him." said Ouyang Ming while gnashing his teeth.

Hong Qianjun had truly consumed quite a lot of Zhen Qi. Once again, a crack appeared on that condensed small town, it seemed to be slight but it could definitely be destructive as every attack launched by Ye Chen would accurately hack on that crack, expanding it at a visible speed. If this goes on, the small town would certainly be broken in a short while.

'You can stay proud for now, until I regain fifty percent of my Zhen Qi, then I'll immediately destroy you.' thought Hong Qianjun. He was not at all worried about that crack, he just pretended as if he was, in order to make Ye Chen feel that his defense was about to be broken.

Suddenly.

Hong Qianjun's facial expression changed. He saw Ye Chen abruptly cut off all sword Qi streams, and then his left foot stepped forward as he raised the sword high with his right hand, heading downwards, he then held still, it seemed like he had fallen into a mysterious status. In the very next moment, a stream of extremely condensed, fierce and well-controlled power gathered at the sword

tip.

“What is he going to do? Does he have more skills? No, he can’t!”

Hong Qianjun sensitively perceived a deadly crisis, and was trying to boost his protective small town with all of his power to defend himself, however, it was already too late.

“Heart Refining!”

Ye Chen gripped the Hidden Cloud Sword and hacked along a strangely simple and straightforward route. This move seemed to be slow, yet, it was actually incredibly swift. Ye Chen’s arm and the sword seemed to have disappeared in the air, and only a white beam of light flashed straight across the water and struck at the crack of the defensive small town.

Crack!

Under the white sword light, that highly condensed, powerful defensive small town, condensed from Zhen Qi, was instantly split, as if it was never that strong.

Puff!

Hong Qianjun coughed out a huge mouthful of blood. The layer of protective Zhen Qi surrounding his body was shattered, and a bone-deep wound appeared on his chest. Inside his body, the fierce sword Qi violently cut off his meridians, blood vessels, muscles and the regularly flowing Zhen Qi streams.

As it lost the source of Zhen Qi, the defensive small town suddenly completely collapsed, it transformed into yellow light spots and dissipated in the air.

“I am the top-ranked disciple of the Multiple Mountain Martial School, if you kill me, my school will certainly crush you no matter where you hide. Do you want to die?” yelled Hong Qianjun while staring at Ye Chen. Blood streams hung on the corners of his mouths. He didn’t believe that Ye Chen dared to kill him. The Multiple Mountain Martial School was a rank 7 institution of the White Mystery Nation, a mid-ranked nation. That institution was quite powerful and influential, it had a lot of powerful martial artists, and their leader was an early Astral Reaching Realm martial artist. If Ye Chen killed Hong Qianjun, the Multiple Mountain Martial School would certainly try to get revenge for him. Even if Ye Chen went back to the Sky Cloud Martial School, they could still force the

administrators of the Sky Cloud Martial School to hand over Ye Chen.

Ye Chen responded blandly, “You shouldn’t have provoked me in the first place.”

Seeing that Ye Chen didn’t launch any further moves, Hong Qianjun silently sighed in relief. ‘Just as I thought, he’s such a coward. But, since he has already offended me, he should be well prepared to be slaughtered by me in the future,’ thought Hong Qianjun, ‘then, you will be so ashamed of yourself and would beg for your death. Then you’ll realise how wrong you were today.’ In the meanwhile, he said to Ye Chen, “As a martial artist, you only have one life, now, if you let me go, I will not blame you for anything, but if you don’t, you should be aware that sometimes, we can’t choose the wrong path, a small mistake can ruin your whole...”

Puff!

Before he finished his speech, Ye Chen chopped his head down with a fierce stream of sword Qi. Blood mixed with water and spurted over ten meters high.

“I have already smashed your face, there is no other path to choose anyway, so you have to die.” said Ye Chen with that bland look.

“Junior Brother Ye, you just killed Luo Qianjun!” Luo Hanshan and the two girls were hurriedly rushing over when they saw that Ye Chen had broken Hong Qianjun’s defense. During that time, Hong Qianjun seemed to have said something to Ye Chen and both of them had stopped for a moment, but when they nearly reached Ye Chen, they saw Ye Chen abruptly chop off Hong Qianjun’s head, which shocked all three of them.

Ye Chen responded, “If I don’t kill him today, he would definitely kill me in the future.”

“You’re right.” Luo Hanshan helplessly nodded and said. This was a cruel world, where weak people could never live a good life. You had to be powerful and cold-hearted, either not make a move, or kill everybody in your way to prevent future troubles.

Zhu Mei sighed. A Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artist died just like that. \Of course, he did die because of his greed.

“Ye Chen’s so dead, so dead. He killed Hong Qianjun, the Multiple Mountain martial school will never let him live. Let’s go now, and we will inform the Multiple Mountain martial school’s elders about Hong Qianjun’s death once we get out of this ancient region. They will kill Ye Chen without a doubt.” said Ouyang Lie while the corners of his mouth twitched intensely. Ye Chen’s cruel move shocked him pretty badly, he didn’t think that Ye Chen would dare to kill Hong Qianjun.

Ouyang Ming was completely frightened, and even his face turned pale. He said, “It’s, it’s a big deal, that Hong Qianjun was killed. He is seeking death by doing this, like, like the old saying, a person can still survive a natural disaster, but can never live through his own sins.”

“Go, go, go, let’s go now! Don’t let him see us!”

Both of them activated their Zhen Qi intending to leave.

“Can you really leave just like that?”

Ye Chen’s voice came from behind them. They turned around, and saw Ye Chen wrapped in a sword-shaped Qi shield swiftly darting towards them, the sudden fright brought by this scene nearly tore their hearts apart.

“Ye Chen, what do you want?! We, we’re the Purple Sun Martial School’s disciples, you, you can’t kill...”

Ouyang Ming’s head was sent up into the air in the next moment. His eyes were wide open, as if he couldn’t believe that he was killed already. He didn’t want to die, he had so many plans for his life.

Ouyang Lie pointed his finger at Ye Chen and yelled as he trembled, “You, you, you killed, Ou-Ouyang Ming, you killed him!! From now on, our, our Pur-purple Sun will chase you to the end of the world, my family, my family will also crush you! You should just, just, expect our revenge! Your whole family will be slaughtered right in front of your eyes!”

“So wordy.”

Ye Chen swung his arm upwards and along with it, another stream of sword Qi hacked Ouyang Lie into two.

“These two...thank god we didn’t let them run away, or we all would have lost our lives. They would certainly tell others about Hong Qianjun’s death if they had escaped.” said Luo Hanshan while patting his own chest, he couldn’t even imagine what would have happened if Multiple Mountain Martial School’s people came to know about Luo Qianjun’s death.

Zhu Mei had hated Ouyang Lie for a long time, god knew how many Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciples have lost their lives in his hands. “Good, they’re the reason for all this. If it wasn’t for them, Hong Qianjun wouldn’t have trouble us for no reason, now he is dead, these two attempted to make us take the blame.”

“This was probably planned by the administrators of the Purple Sun Martial School even before we came here. They might want all of us to die in this ancient region.”

“Ah, Brother Ye, how did you find them anyway? They are thousands of meters away from you!”

Clang!

Ye Chen put the sword back in the sheath and said, “I found them long ago, I just didn’t take any action and waited patiently. Therefore, they could never run away.”

Ye Chen’s soul power was incomparably great, if he wanted, he could spread his soul power out for miles in radius. Before the fight between him and Hong Qianjun started, he had searched the surrounding area with his soul power, and found that these two top-ranked disciples of the Purple Sun Martial School were hiding nearby, probably intending to watch Hong Qianjun kill him. Sadly, they got themselves killed in the end. All the other Purple Sun Martial School’s disciples who had been sent into this ancient region had already lost their lives either while hunting demonic beasts or in fights against others, therefore, after these two died, the Purple Sun Martial School’s group of disciples were all dead.

“Now, the younger generation of the Purple Sun Martial School can never raise again, and they can’t compete against us.”

“Forget about all these, let’s just go to the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace! A long time passed since we stepped in this lake!”

“Okay, let's go down.”

Each of them activated their Zhen Qi, and dived down at their highest speed.

## Chapter 153: Black Gold Serpent and the Pure white light

After diving around three-thousand meters deep, the protective Qi around Ye Chen's body had already been compressed to just half a foot away from his body, which was a truly dangerous distance. Once the protective Qi broke, it would be quite difficult to rebuild it, which meant that, Ye Chen could only hold his breath until he could get some air.

Fortunately, they were already close to the bottom of the lake.

Boom!

A wave of violent shock waves spread out in all directions. From the front, faint multi-coloured light streams rose up, some of these light streams were incredibly fierce, some seemed as dense and heavy as mountains, some even froze the surrounding water, it all looked extremely astonishing.

"A battle is taking place about a mile away from us, let's go and take a look."

Ye Chen used his soul power and said to the other three people.

A magnificent palace was built at the bottom of the lake, with an unknown material that looked like both gold and jade, but it was neither of them. The entire palace was shining with a multi-colored light, it seemed incredibly mysterious and stunning.

Surrounding the palace, was a broad square paved with white marble. There were nearly four hundred disciples surrounding a tens of meters long, scaleless serpent, that was partly grey and partly gold, some of those disciples were launching their attacks at the serpent.

This serpent was especially fierce, even when facing group attacks launched by nearly four-hundred martial artists, it still held its head high and seemed almost invincible. Ordinary attacks couldn't even break its defensive Qi, only attacks launched by Hidden Dragon Ranked Clasp Yuan Realm martial artists could harm it by a little bit.

"Ancient Black Gold Serpent is unimaginably powerful, our individual attacks can't possibly hurt it. Let's make a battle formation and attack it." The one who made this suggestion was the top-ranked disciple of the rank 7 institution of the

White Mystery Nation, White Deer Martial School, named Lu Zhao, a young talented martial artist, 61st on Hidden Dragon Ranking.

“Lu Zhao is right, let’s make a formation!”

The other Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artists had all clearly realised that if they keep attacking this serpent separately, this fight might last years; therefore, by using their prestige, they ordered the other disciples around them to form a formation.

“...They always get all the benefits, but when there’s trouble, they just turn to us and use us.”

“Eh, what can we do about it? They’re way more powerful than us. This Black Gold Serpent needs to be taken out sooner or later, otherwise, none of us would be able to get into the Heaven Dream Battle Palace”

“Just bear with it! You can also act like this when you break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm.”

Many of the other disciples were quite unpleasant about being ordered by these Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artists, after all, a lot of their junior or senior brothers and sisters died in these people's hands. Therefore, they subconsciously wanted to reject the orders given by them, yet, none of them dared to do so, you could just imagine how bad that feeling was.

“Ah!”

On the other side, a disciple let out a hoarse cry before he was killed cruelly. The murderer was not the Black Gold Serpent, instead, it was Yuanheng Ying, who was so brutal and violent that people would begin to shiver just by hearing his name.

“I have shown my respect, but you just didn’t want it, why should I let you live then?” said Yuanheng Ying, and then showed a malicious grin, he raised his head and said to the others, “Anyone who won’t listen to me, will die!”

“Such a monster! He killed a person just like that!”

Seven to eight meters away, Zhu Mei couldn’t help but be angered.

Lou Hanshan let out a sigh and said calmly, “I think we should just stay here for



a while. That Yuanheng Ying is a born killer, if we go over, he will probably push us to the front lines as expendable warriors, to fight against that serpent. Although that serpent is only a fifth-grade demonic beast, ancient demonic beasts are always extremely powerful and have amazing defense, even mid Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists wouldn't want to directly face an ancient demonic beast...Eh? Brother Ye, where are you going?"

Lou Hanshan was trying to convince them to not join the fight, but Ye Chen already walked out.

As he took a few steps forward, Ye Chen turned around and said, "We don't have to hide from him, we can build our own battle formation, I believe that many disciples who don't like him will join our formation."

"Exactly, our Junior Brother Ye is also as powerful as that Yuanheng Ying, so why should we just stay back?"

Lou Hanshan gave a bitter smile.

The protective Qi formed a sealed shield around each martial artist's body, only the air that was needed by the human body could permeate the shield. Ye Chen took a deep breath. The reason why he decided to go there and confront Yuanheng Ying was not due to him being extremely confident about his power or him believing that he could evenly fight against Yuanheng Ying, instead, it was because he didn't want to lose his determination as a sword artist. As a decent sword artist, the first required quality was to fear nothing; unless there was a huge level-difference between his enemy and himself, hiding was never a way of solving issues, on the contrary, it would just diminish his determination.

Moving swiftly, the four Sky Cloud Martial School's disciples darted into the group of disciples in a few blinks of an eye.

"You!" Yuanheng Ying threw a sideways glance, and seemed a bit surprised. He licked his own lips and said in a creepy voice, "You, come over here, to the front."

Seeing this, some of the other disciples showed fear on their faces. Clearly, Yuanheng Ying was pushing the four of them to the front as expendable warriors, in other words, Yuanheng Ying wanted them to die. However, the Black Gold Serpent was a legendary ancient demonic beast, just a few expendable

warriors could never stop it, this just meant that more of them would be pushed to the front as expendable warriors after the first batch died. Nevertheless, although these disciples had all realised that Yuanheng Ying might possibly send them to the front as expendable warriors, they could only hold their heads down and do whatever Yuanheng Ying said. None of them dared to disobey Yuanheng Ying, as he was a complete monster; at least, against the serpent, they still had a slight chance of victory.

Without even glancing at Yuanheng Ying, Ye Chen sent out his voice by the use of his Zhen Qi.

“Who wants to join our battle formation and fight against this serpent with us?”

Once he said these words, all the others were extremely shocked, even those who had been fighting against the serpent at the moment, turned around and glanced at him.

Yuanheng Ying showed a twisted grin, and said, “You’ve challenged my patience again and again, good, today, you have to come over here and listen to every single word I say, or else you’ll die in a very ugly manner.”

“You know, trying to kill me may cost you your own life, I’m just afraid that you can’t afford it.” Ye Chen’s resonant voice resounded across the water. Now, the fierce sense of power released by him was even stronger than before, it also contained an unmovable determination.

The previous fight between Hong Qianjun and himself let him have a deeper understanding of the sword intent. At this stage, if he wasn’t limited by his cultivation level, he could kill Yuanheng Ying as easily as killing a dog; even now, he still had thirty percent chance to kill him. Therefore, there was no reason for him to not step forward.

“Cool, since you want to die so eagerly, I’ll just lend you a hand. Eagle Sky Strike!”

Yuanheng Ying was extremely angry, he shook his body and abruptly darted out, and an eagle silhouette condensed from Zhen Qi swooshed out of his body, it came roaring towards Ye Chen.

“Chop!”

Once Ye Chen let a stream of sword Qi out, the water was forced up in huge streams; the dazzling stream of sword Qi even made all the others feel slightly dizzy.

Puff!

A long and deep cut appeared on the eagle silhouette's chest, it instantly gave a long and shrill cry, it flapped its pair of enormous wings against the sword Qi, and let out a metal-clashing noise.

In the very next moment, fierce streams of power swooshed into this area, and madly rolled up into a huge water sphere over ten meters large, it then began swelling rapidly.

Boom!

The water sphere exploded with a thunderous boom that seemed to shatter the entire bottom of the lake.

“What?! Did he just take an attack launched by Yuanheng Ying? Who is this? A Sky Cloud Martial School's disciple? What's his name?”

“Even if Yuanheng Ying has only used eighty percent of his power, a Late Condensing Reality Realm martial artist couldn't possibly take that move. It's unbelievable!”

“Don't you feel that that seems like sword intent?”

“Ah! Yes! How could I not realise that?! That definitely is the sword intent! No wonder he wasn't afraid of Yuanheng Ying.”

The other disciples couldn't help but exclaim.

Yuanheng Ying's eyes turned red, like the eyes of a devil, they clearly showed his killing intent. As for the sword intent, he didn't pay too much attention to it. In his eyes, the sword intent meant nothing on a dead sword artist. If he didn't kill Ye Chen today, Ye Chen would absolutely become a huge trouble to him, in the future.

“You have to die today, I already wanted to kill you back there. None of my targets has ever survived after I wanted to kill them.” Yuanheng Ying activated

his Zhen Qi and released an even larger and more solid eagle silhouette, it flapped its wings and brought up a tsunami like surge.

“Enough!”

A bland voice abruptly interrupted the fight.

Looking towards the origin of the voice, everyone’s looks slightly changed.

That was Xue Hen, a top-ranked disciple of the Sky Serpent Nation’s rank 7 institution, Formless Martial School, 57th in the Hidden Dragon Ranking, even higher than Yuanheng Ying.

Xue Hen continued blandly, “Taking out that serpent is our first priority, after that, you can do whatever you want.”

Yuanheng Ying turned his head around and said with a dark face, “Xue Hen, I have never offended you, you shouldn’t step into my business either.”

“I’m just reminding you to not forget the true purpose of this journey, you can only ruin yourself by acting recklessly.”

“Yuanheng Ying, Xue Hen is right, let’s take out this serpent first and unlock the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace’s gate. Put other things aside for now.” said Lu Zhao.

Slightly holding back his Zhen Qi, Yuanheng Ying decided to endure Ye Chen for another short while. Once he gets into the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace and gained some improvement in his cultivation, he should immediately kill Ye Chen. As for now, he was indeed not sure if he could kill Ye Chen. He had already seen how powerful the sword intent could be in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking, it was unimaginable.

Luo Hanshan grinned as he thought, ‘That Yuanheng Ying doesn’t seem to have an upper hand against Brother Ye, otherwise, he would never listen to others. It seems like Brother Ye was absolutely right, we can never step back when facing an equally powerful opponent, it’s not good for our future development.’

Ye Chen didn’t know what Luo Hanshan was thinking, he only shouted out, “Whoever wants to join us can come over here right now, I assure you that no

one can hurt you!”

“I’m in.”

“Me too!”

“And us, the Seven Mystery Martial School!”

Instantly, a large group of disciples gathered around Ye Chen, many of them came from Yuanheng Ying's formation. This once again enraged Yuanheng Ying so much that even his eyes began shining with a blood-red light.

Hiss

As an ancient fifth-grade demonic beast, this Black Gold Serpent was horribly powerful. Even after being attacked by groups of martial artists for so long, it still continued to be energetic and violent. From time to time, two to three disciples would be smashed into pieces by its tail, and blood would puff out in the water.

However, at this stage, whatever it did could only be struggles before its death. No matter how powerful it was, a serpent could never fight evenly against hundreds of martial artists; after a while, the serpent finally lowered its head, its strong defence was about to fall apart, and it could no longer block the powerful attacks.

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

Streams of powerful attacks struck its body, squeezing out puffs of blood streams. Every single attack launched by the Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists would accurately strike its vital body parts, and was tens of times more powerful than the ordinary disciples’ attacks. Therefore, when those Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists had joined hands, the situation of this fight had been instantly reversed.

In around half an hour, the Black Gold Serpent let out a shrill howl, its gigantic body heavily thudded against the bottom of the lake, and it stopped breathing.

Creak

Once the serpent died, the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace seemed to have perceived something, and the enormous iron gate automatically opened. A pure white light spread out on everyone's body.

Buzz!

Ye Chen felt his Zhen Qi slightly shake, and then he found that showered under the white light, his cultivation suddenly achieved the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm. This whole process was completely natural and smooth, without any difficulties. He couldn't help but pause briefly in shock, and then murmured, "Perhaps, in that fight against Hong Qianjun, the amount and quality of my Zhen Qi were both improved, and I could have achieved the peak-level by cultivating for a couple of days, and now this white light shortened that time."

## ***Chapter 154: Trial and opportunity***

Although the difference between the Late Condensing Reality Realm and peak of the Late Condensing Reality Realm was not that huge, to Ye Chen, this was still a valuable improvement. If he only had thirty percent chance to kill Yuanheng Ying before, now the chances should have increased by ten percent. If he could break into the Claspng Yuan Realm, killing Yuanheng Ying would be as easy as chopping vegetables.

The other disciples had also sensed the improvement of their powers, however, none of them managed to break into a higher level like Ye Chen did.

“The gate of the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace is open!”

“Go! Go! Go!!”

“I instantly sensed an improvement when this when light came out, I can definitely break into the Claspng Yuan Realm after I get inside the palace!”

Except those Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists, most of the other disciples went crazy with excitement. The only reason they risked their lives and came into this ancient region was so that they could achieve a breakthrough. As long as they could become a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, they could hold their heads high in front of those Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists, and they’d never need to be afraid of them or obey to whatever they said; to these disciples, this was just like taking one step into the heavens.

“Go away!”

Those Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists were the fastest ones to move, their silhouettes flashed across the square and darted into palace right away. Before he entered into the palace, Yuanheng Ying conveniently crushed a disciple who was in his way, in an incredibly brutal and cruel way.

Seeing the group of madly rushing disciples, Luo Hanshan said, “Let’s go in!”

Ye Chen activated his Zhen Qi and checked his own body a few times, he didn’t find any problems, so he nodded and responded, “This Heavenly Dream Battle Palace can indeed help us achieve a breakthrough in our cultivation.”

“Hm, I think so.”



Closely following the group of disciples, the four of them walked into the palace, it was also filled with the dense white light.

“Ah!”

Taking a deep breath, Zhu Mei said in surprise, “Such dense and pure Yuan Qi, it is much stronger than the Yuan Qi contained in spirit stones, and it also requires nearly no effort to absorb.”

Actually, not just Zhu Mei, all the others also had sensed this different Yuan Qi once they stepped in.

However, the white light inside the palace was way too strong, and every single one of these disciples was instantly blinded after they walked in. They couldn’t see anything, were also unable to perceive anything, even Ye Chen’s soul power had lost its function; it seemed like only the most basic sense of touch and the sense of hearing still remained.

After around fifteen minutes, the gate of the palace suddenly shut down behind Ye Chen, letting out a muffled and thunderous boom; right after that, a small-scale earthquake occurred inside the palace. The floor under Ye Chen’s feet sank along with waves of muffled noise, as a wave fell, another rose. He somehow felt that the space surrounding him was sealed by something.

“Be careful! The inner structure of this palace has changed!”

No one responded.

Smiling bitterly, Ye Chen realised that he was separated from his fellow disciples. Fortunately, this Heavenly Dream Battle Palace couldn’t kill people by itself, so everyone inside should be safe.

Sitting down on the floor with his legs crossed, Ye Chen prepared to meditate.

‘Hm?’

Visibly, the dense and bright white light surrounding him quickly condensed into a sphere, and merged into a gigantic crystal ball, it was multi-coloured and was floating in the air.

Ye Chen stayed calm as he closely observed that crystal ball.

Buzz!

The air slightly shook, and followed by that, a faint, white human silhouette gradually emerged from the air under the crystal ball. That human silhouette was holding a sword and had its body straight. Looking carefully, Ye Chen found that this human silhouette had the exact same body shape as himself, even the shape of its sword was the same as his Hidden Cloud Sword. It was just like a duplication of himself.

Of course, that was only a silhouette condensed from light. It was pure white and had no face, it only had a human-shape, at first glance, you could tell that it was made from some kind of mysterious power, rather than flesh and blood.

Swoosh!

Once the human silhouette was formed, it stepped forward and sent a stream of Sword Qi towards Ye Chen.

“The Peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm!”

Ye Chen perceived that the Zhen Qi vibrations released by this white silhouette’s body were as strong as his own Zhen Qi vibrations. This move was also launched swiftly with a stream of perfectly controlled power, it was quite amazing, and was even no worse than Luo Hanshan. This meant that this white human silhouette was at the pre-Childe level.

Staying passive was never Ye Chen’s style. Besides, if he guessed right, this was the trial of this Heavenly Dream Battle Palace, and if he wanted to stay, he would probably have to defeat this silhouette.

Clang!

The Hidden Cloud Sword darted out from the sheath, and at the same time, Ye Chen flashed across that silhouette.

In the next moment!

The right arm of that pure white silhouette flew out from its body, along with the sword held in its hand; thin streams of white light darting out from its broken shoulder.

That silhouette, which had lost one arm, still tried to launch its counterattack, however, Ye Chen right away swung his sword backwards and chopped its head

off. Right after that, the white silhouette transformed into streams of white light and darted back to the crystal ball.

In the meanwhile.

In less than three-hundred completely sealed spaces, same thing was happening to the other disciples.

“Same level as me, even same martial skills...”

“Just slightly weaker than me, but it still seems quite difficult to defeat!”

“How come this is different from the trial ten years ago, it shouldn’t be!”

Some of them immediately started to fight against those human silhouettes, some could barely suppress those silhouettes, but couldn’t defeat them within a short period of time, while some were shocked by the sudden appearance of these white silhouettes, which made them unable to react in time. All in all, every one of them had started their trial; the difficulty of each disciple’s trial was different, it was specially set based upon his or her power and cultivation level.

The first round of the trial ended, five disciples didn’t react in time, and they were hit by these silhouettes on their vital parts, they were then immediately teleported out of the palace.

In the Scorching Ancient Desert, and beside the enormous gate of light.

Five people flew out of the gate, and thudded against the sand.

“Yao Kai!”

“Li Jing!”

These five people were disciples who have failed the first round of trial. They stood up from the ground, they looked both shocked and confused; but soon, they seemed to suddenly realise something and headed down with a frustrated look, they didn’t even hear their own elders calling them.

“It’s not a big deal, no one would ever blame you for it. You should just work harder after you get back, do not drown yourself in your frustration, otherwise, you can never improve in the future.”

“How many of our disciples are left in there?”

“What?! You’re the only one that survived?!”

Some elders encouraged their disciples, some asked about what had happened inside, while some were informed with the sad news of the death of their disciples, they couldn’t help but shed tears.

None of these disciples knew what would happen if they failed the trial, and even if they knew, they couldn’t do anything about it. Once the first round of trial ended, the second round began.

“Childe-level!”

Ye Chen’s face now looked very serious. This newly emerged silhouette in front of him was not too powerful, however, it was still only the second round. Without a doubt, the third and fourth round would be even harder. To defeat a same-level opponent, they not only required power, they also needed better fighting skills.

The silhouette dashed over, and at the same time, Ye Chen swung his sword down.

Puff!

The head of the silhouette flew up, it transformed into a stream of white light and darted back into the crystal ball.

The second round of the trial ended, way more disciples had failed in this round. In the first round, only five disciples have failed, but the number had increased to thirty-five in the second round.

As more and more failed disciples were teleported out of the ancient region, those elders who had been waiting in the Scorching Ancient Desert got a general idea of the situation inside the ancient region, and it deeply shocked all of them.

Every single one of them was clearly aware that the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region was a dangerous place, however, the death rate was still beyond the expectation. In total, six-hundred and sixty disciples were sent in, but only less than three-hundred managed to get into the palace. As for the others, they were either killed by the ancient demonic beasts, or by the disciples from other institutions, or died in the battle against the Black Gold Serpent. The death rate was higher than ever, more than fifty-five percent of those disciples have lost

their lives.

“The only good thing is that the surviving disciples will have a ten percent chance of breaking into the Clasp of Yuan Realm. Otherwise, why would we even send them into that horrible region?”

“Too many have died, but fortunately, a part of our disciples managed to survive.”

The third round of the trial started.

This time, the white silhouette was as strong as a martial artist ranked 100 on the Hidden Dragon Ranking, almost as powerful as Qiu Heng back in the swamp, who was able to kill a martial artist at the same level with a single move.

Even though he easily defeated the white silhouette, Ye Chen felt that something was different.

Every time his attack strikes the white silhouette, he would feel a slight, magical shake; as the shaking grew stronger and stronger, he realised that a stream of extremely pure Yuan Qi was contained in that shake and it was being injected into his body every time he harmed his opponent. In other words, every fight against a white silhouette would help him improve, the longer he remained in the palace, the greater his improvement be. By the end, he might even directly break into the Clasp of Yuan Realm.

After he came to know this, Ye Chen let out a long breath and murmured, “So this is the real deal of this Heavenly Dream Battle Palace. This is a trial, and also an opportunity, it just depends on whether we can take it or not.”

The third round of the trial was not that difficult to Ye Chen, yet, it was extremely hard to the other disciples.

East side, in the seventh sealed space.

Lou Hanshan had been gasping continuously. The white silhouette in front of him was slightly more powerful than him, this meant that he couldn't possibly defeat it purely with power. ‘What should I do? I can't just fail like this.’ thought Luo Hanshan.

“No, since it's a trial, there must be a way to pass it!”

Boom!

The white silhouette didn't give too much time for Luo Hanshan to come up with a plan, it abruptly sent out a heavy punch with a roaring stream of power that was as violent as a surging river.

"Purple Qi, Great Monument Suppression!"

Lou Hanshan tried his best to boost up his Zhen Qi to his limits and launched the Purple Extreme Art and the Great Monument Kingly Punch in combination, as a special and powerful defensive skill, to defend himself.

Crack!

The gigantic purple monument condensed from Zhen Qi didn't even manage to hold for three blinks of an eye, it was instantly shattered.

Lou Hanshan hurriedly leapt sideways, and luckily dodged that terrifying stream of power, yet, he still felt that his heart began beating faster and his blood started boiling under the great amount of stress, he even felt a little dizzy.

"Ah! If I can use the ninth level of the Purple Extreme Art, I might be able to defeat that thing!" Lou Hanshan's eyes suddenly started to shine. After reaching the ninth level of the Purple Extreme Art, the martial artist would be able to draw a purple lotus from the void, and under its protection, the defensive power would immediately raise to another level.

The white silhouette launched another attack right away, but this time, Luo Hanshan didn't step back, he also did not try to dodge, instead he sent out two solid punches in a row.

In another sealed space.

An amazing amount of power had burst out from Xu Jing's body. She had been fighting against the white silhouette evenly, showing no signs of a disadvantage. Every single attack launched by her would accurately hit the white silhouette's vital parts; the surging waves of the punches were swooshing around like water streams, while waves of golden light were sparkling around her body, it was just like multiple rivers rapidly flowing around her, it seemed magical and magnificent.

If Luo Hanshan and Zhu Mei were here, they would certainly be shocked by Xu Jing, because at this moment, Xu Jing's opponent was even more powerful than Young Master North Snow. According to what they know about Xu Jing, she absolutely hasn't reached that level yet, which only meant that Xu Jing had been hiding her real strength all along.

Clang!

Xu Jing's fist directly clashed against the fist of the white silhouette, it let out a loud and resonant metal clashing noise, scorching hot fire sparks flew everywhere.

“Break!”

Locking the silhouette's right arm with her left hand, Xu Jing intensely shook her body, releasing a stream of bright and pure golden light, which struck the silhouette's body, disabling it from moving; after that, Xu Jing launched her ultimate punch, which struck right on the silhouette's head.

Followed by a popping noise, the white silhouette darted back into the crystal ball in the form of a stream of white light.

## Chapter 155 - Breaking into the Claspng Yuan Realm (Part One)

Even before many of the disciples finished their third round of the trial, Ye Chen had already started his fourth round.

This time, the white silhouette was at the early Claspng Yuan Realm, Ye Chen could clearly sense the strong and intense Zhen Qi vibrations from a long distance, even the air surrounding the white silhouette began rippling like water.

“Let’s begin!”

Ye Chen had already killed Hong Qianjun and fought against Yuanheng Ying, he would never be afraid of the white human-shaped silhouette. He slowly raised the Hidden Cloud Sword with his right hand, while streams of power quickly gathered at the sword tip.

Swoosh!

The white silhouette suddenly disappeared, and then showed up again right above Ye Chen, and swung its sword down towards Ye Chen’s head at lightning speed. A tremendous stream of sword Qi swooshed down like a rapidly flowing river, it roared across the air and darted right down towards Ye Chen. This attack that was launched was incredibly fierce, it was even beyond Ye Chen’s expectations.

Slightly surprised, Ye Chen immediately raised his sword with both of his arms, and blocked the roaring stream of sword Qi launched by the silhouette.

Crack!

The ground under Ye Chen’s feet began cracking and sinking, dark and thick cracks quickly spread out like a growing spider web.

“[Lone Domination]!”

Holding his tongue against his teeth, Ye Chen gave a resonant growl, he clenched his left fist and threw out a swift punch.

Without any hesitation, the white silhouette also threw a punch, and it directly thudded against Ye Chen’s fist.

Boom!



Ye Chen's feet sank half a foot deep into the ground, while the white silhouette was sent flying backwards, slight cracks appeared on its left arm.

"Just as I thought, this thing's defensive power is weaker than mine!"

As he leapt out of the pit, Ye Chen right away released a gigantic stream of sword Qi towards the white silhouette, the sword Qi was gliding in the air, intending to finish it with this single move.

After all, the white silhouette possessed the power of an early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist; it nimbly twisted its body in the air and dodged the sharp, huge stream of sword Qi, and then let out another stream of white, thick sword Qi towards Ye Chen, with a weird gesture.

The white stream of sword Qi split the air as it swished towards Ye Chen like a dazzling electric bolt, it seemed to be more destructive than Ye Chen's sword Qi.

"[Clear the Sky]!"

After Ye Chen stepped into the peak of Late Condensing Reality Realm, the total amount of his Zhen Qi was also vastly improved, therefore, he could now launch the [Clear the Sky] much more easily, and wouldn't feel any difficulty like he had during his fight against Hong Quanjun.

A fierce stream of sword Qi, that contained the sword intent directly swished up into the air, it stirred the air violently into an enormous tornado, and smashed the white stream of sword Qi released by the silhouette; after that, the thunderous tornado swooshed further towards the white silhouette, while sharp, dazzling and piercing sword Qi streams darted out of it from time to time.

Crack, crack, crack!

Inside this sealed space, a mysterious power had been continuously fixing all the damages that were caused by the fight between Ye Chen and the white silhouette; however, no matter how fast it worked, it always fell behind Ye Chen's speed of destruction. Within a single moment, tens, even hundreds of deep sword cuts appeared on the walls and the floor, and from every single one of those cuts, fierce power streams were spurting out.

The white silhouette madly swung its sword, it constructed a screen that condensed from the sword Qi stream to firmly shield itself; even though the

screen blocked the tornado, the white silhouette began to slowly step back.

Boom!

When its back thudded against the wall, the white silhouette couldn't step back any further. Its body sparkled in anxiety, and it abruptly launched another move.

Once the white silhouette launched another stream of white, shining sword Qi, a resonant, high-pitched dragon roar resounded throughout the entire space. The incredibly strong stream of sword Qi brought up the air and roared towards the tornado that had been rampantly sweeping across the entire room.

“You still won't die? [Highly Condensed Sword Qi]!”

Ye Chen suddenly appeared in the air, he trod on a fierce airwave of the tornado, as his clothes fluttered in an intense manner.

As he growled out once again, Ye Chen swung his sword down.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Fire sparks darted out as the white silhouette raised its sword and held off Ye Chen's sword Qi; it was suppressed by Ye Chen, and was now disabled from moving.

In just a single moment, Ye Chen's sword Qi shattered the white silhouette's sword, and in the next moment, the white silhouette transformed back into a stream of white light.

Buzz!

Once Ye Chen landed back on the ground, he felt a magical shaking in his body. With the vibrations from this gentle yet magical stream of power, Ye Chen only felt an itch to his bones; soon after, he felt that the circulation speed of his Zhen Qi started to increase, it was two times faster than usual, apart from this, his blood began boiling and even his face turned red.

“Such a magical power, it is actually improving my body's condition and raising the flowing speed of my Zhen Qi.” After he went through the first three rounds of the trial, Ye Chen had already realised that this vibrating power could purify his body and improve the condition of his body, it also allowed him to absorb

Yuan Qi faster, and cultivate more effectively than before.

However, compared to before, this vibrating power that was working on him now was much stronger.

After the vibrating power faded away, Ye Chen checked his body with his soul power, and found that the Zhen Qi swirl contained in his dantian began gathering inwards, and was gradually forming a sphere.

“I am now halfway into the Claspings Yuan Realm, I only need one more chance.”

Along with the improvement of a martial artist’s cultivation, the shape and form of his or her inner Qi would also have massive changes. In the Mortal Realm, a martial artist’s Zhen Qi was weak and thin, therefore, it looked like a cyclone inside the dantian; in the Condensing Reality Realm, the inner Qi would be condensed into Zhen Qi, and would be much more solid in quality, gradually, it would form into a Zhen Qi swirl; after the martial artist stepped into the Claspings Yuan Realm, the Zhen Qi swirl would gather inwards into a perfectly round Zhen Qi sphere.

Puff!

As he easily tore apart the air, Ye Chen found that his power had been improved once again. At this stage, even if his opponent was Yuanheng Ying, Ye Chen believed that the possibility of killing Yuanheng Ying had now raised to fifty percent.

At this moment, most of the others had just finished their third round of trial.

The number of disciples who had failed the trial raised swiftly. Five disciples failed in the first round, tens of disciples failed in the second round, while in the third round, over two-hundred and forty disciples had failed, and were teleported out of the palace immediately.

“Han Shan!”

Glancing at this new batch of disciples who had been teleported out, Head Elder of the Sky Cloud Martial School found Luo Hanshan in the crowd.

Lou Hanshan gave a bitter smile and said, “Sorry elder, I failed to break into the

Clasping Yuan Realm.”

“No need to worry.” said the Head Elder while patting him on his shoulder, “With your talent, you will certainly break into that realm soon, no need to rush.”

“Hm,” Luo Hanshan nodded and said, “I have indeed gained some benefits in there. That Heavenly Dream Battle Palace is filled with dense and pure Yuan Qi, and my body was purified by the magical vibrating power during the trial. After three rounds of the trial, I found that my Zhen Qi swirl is slightly compressed, maybe I can truly achieve a breakthrough if I concentrate on my cultivation for a few days after we get back.”

“That would be the best. Ah, what about the others, are they all safe?” The Head Elder asked nervously. Every single one of the four disciples who had been sent into the ancient region was meant to become a pillar of the Sky Cloud Martial School in the future. Losing any one of them would be a severe loss to the school, especially Ye Chen. A genius who had comprehended the half step sword intent was way more valuable and rarer than any kind of treasure. If they lose Ye Chen this time, they might not find another kid as talented as him even after a long time.

As he glanced at the group of Purple Sun Martial School’s people, Luo Hanshan sent his voice to the Head Elder by the use of his Zhen Qi, “Head Elder, Brother Ye has already attained the true sword intent, he had also killed Ouyang Lie and Ouyang Ming. These two tried to kill us on the way, but finally, they were killed by Brother Ye.”

“Really?!” Head Elder’s voice sounded a bit shrill, fortunately, he was talking to Luo Hanshan by the use of his Zhen Qi, or else all the others might even laugh at him.

Luo Hanshan smiled and responded, “How could I say something that is not true?”

“Great! Ye Chen, this kid has actually gained the sword intent! He is indeed an extremely valuable genius of our Sky Cloud Martial School, ah, our Sky Cloud Martial School is meant to raise!” Head Elder gave a big grin and praised. If the Ye Chen who had gained the half step sword intent is a piece of raw jade, then

this Ye Chen, who had managed to attain the true sword intent would be a piece of top-grade, perfectly pure jade, that was already astonishing, and didn't need any further processing.

Lou Hanshan continued, "Zhu Mei and Sister Xu Jing are both fine as well, since they haven't come out yet, they might be in the middle of their fourth round of trials, this means that they can probably achieve a breakthrough."

He didn't use his Zhen Qi this time, therefore, all the other inner elders, including the Fourth Elder heard this.

The fourth Elder laughed out loud and said, "Ha! Compared to our generation, you kids are much more wonderful! In just a few years, we can just let you have our positions!"

"Ah ha ha! That would be great! Nowadays, this world is being led by young people anyway!"

"Exactly, back then, many of our powerful martial artists fell in battles against the Nine Evil Cult, therefore, people like us became inner elders even before we have truly grown strong, we had to carry the responsibilities on our shoulders at that time. You're much more talented than us, so you can certainly take good care of our institution."

Unlike other groups, the Sky Cloud Martial School's people seemed to be quite happy and delighted.

Among the Purple Sun Martial School's group of people.

The Head Elder said to an inner elder with a darkened face, "I'm just wondering how Ouyang Lie and Ouyang Ming are, as for the others, they were all probably killed already."

"Hm, Ouyang Lie and Ouyang Ming are both powerful, so they're not likely to be killed. All the others are of relatively lower level, they might not be able to survive."

The Head Elder glanced at Luo Hanshan, a fierce killing intent flashed across his eyes and then immediately vanished, he then said, "It seems like they failed to complete their mission, Luo Hanshan is still alive."

“We shouldn’t worry about Luo Hanshan, he hasn’t broken into the Clasp of the Clasp Yuan Realm Yet. But, we have to worry about that kid named Ye Chen, once he steps into the Clasp of the Clasp Yuan Realm, he would be powerful enough to evenly fight against mid Clasp of the Clasp Yuan Realm martial artists. He would certainly become a huge trouble for us, we can’t let him live, no matter how.”

“Whatever happens, let’s just wait until Ouyang Lie and Ouyang Ming come out, I have a bad feeling.”

Ah!

Suddenly, a raging growl came from the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s group of people. A powerful stream of Zhen Qi was let out along with that growl, even the sand within tens of zhang radius rose high, turning the sky grey.

“What did you say?!” The Head Elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School stared at a disciple who had just been sent out of the palace and yelled.

This disciple was extremely frightened by that resonant growl, he hurriedly lowered his head and said, “Head, head Elder, I haven’t seen Senior Brother Hong Qianjun in the Heaven Dream Battle Palace, but, but I think he should be fine, after all, he is an early Clasp of the Clasp Yuan Realm martial artist, and all the other Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists were in the palace, who else could kill him?”

“Then where is he now?! The ancient region will close in a quarter of an hour!” roared the Head Elder.

“If anything happened to Hong Qianjun, our Multiple Mountain Martial School would certainly dig out that person who might have done something to him, and then we will crush his entire family!”

Luo Hanshan hurriedly turned his eyes away from the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s group. Hong Qianjun died in Ye Chen’s hands, he saw it himself, so did Zhu Mei. Now, he couldn’t show any sign of suspiciousness, otherwise, if the Multiple Mountain Martial School knew about this, the Sky Cloud martial School would have endless troubles.

The Head Elder perceived Luo Hanshan’s abnormal reaction, and asked using his Zhen Qi, “Hanshan, what’s wrong? You should tell me if there is anything else

that had happened back there, I am your uncle by blood, don't you trust me?"

After hesitating briefly, Luo Hanshan decided to tell the truth. His father, Luo Xinglie and the Head Elder were the closest people to him among the entire Sky Cloud martial School, without a doubt, he trusted both of them.

"Head Elder, Hong Qianjun is dead, he was killed by Ye Chen. But it was started by Ouyang Ming and Ouyang Lie, if we hadn't killed Hong Qianjun at that time, he would have killed us."

"Ouyang Ming and Ouyang Lie instigated Hong Qianjun to kill you? They might have promised him some benefits. Ah, I thought something much worse happened. Just relax, it's not a big deal. If you didn't kill him, he would certainly kill you someday, this is a simple logic. However, don't tell anyone else except me and your own father, although we're not cowards, we don't want a war against the Multiple Mountain Martial School."

"I am aware of that."

## Chapter 156 - Breaking into the Claspng Yuan Realm (part two)

In total, over two-hundred and sixty disciples have failed in the first three rounds of trials. At this moment, over thirty-disciples were left in the palace. Among these disciples, eight were Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists even before they entered the palace, it was nearly impossible for them to break into a higher level through the trial, but they could still slightly improve their cultivation, and may even reach the peak of early Claspng Yuan Realm.

As for the others, there was no guarantee that all of them would break into the Claspng Yuan Realm, after all, they were all in different situations. For example, among those disciples who had failed in the third round, six managed to break into the Claspng Yuan Realm successfully, even though they didn't even start the fourth round of trial.

North side, in the ninth sealed room.

Blade lights had been darting across the entire room continuously, they then fell down in the form of light spots, like a stunning, dreamy snowfall. Within those blade lights and light spots, two silhouettes darted around and bumped into each other from time to time, producing countless fire sparks. Although, both these silhouettes were purely white, one of them was slightly translucent and was clearly condensed from some kind of power, while the other one had an extremely handsome face, he wore a long white coat, which was fluttering in the air. You could sense his warmth and gracefulness without even looking with your eyes.

Sending the white silhouette back with a fierce move, this young man in white clothes finally loosened his tightened face. Eventually, he had stepped into the Claspng Yuan Realm. After being stuck at the peak of Condensing Reality Realm for nearly two years, he had finally broken into the Claspng Yuan Realm.

The young man raised his head as he smiled and showed a good-looking face. If anyone else was here, they would certainly recognise him, he was no one else but the top-ranked disciple of the North Snow Martial Academy, the Young Master North Snow.

Also in the North, the third sealed room.



The top-ranked disciple of the Rudra Martial School, Qin Yulian had broken into the Claspng Yuan Realm.

In the South, the eighteenth sealed room.

Zhu Mei failed.

In the fourteenth sealed room, South side

An extremely powerful Zhen Qi vibration that could only be seen on an early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist's body suddenly burst out from Xu Jing, as she smashed the white silhouette's head with a punch.

As she let out a long breath, Xu Jing headed down and murmured, "I can finally start cultivating that body boosting art, I just wonder if it is really as powerful as that ancient book said."

Once Xu Jing broke into the Claspng Yuan Realm, the number of disciples who had reached this realm among the entire Windy Nation had raised to three, they were the top-ranked disciple of the North Snow Martial Academy, Young Master North Snow, Top-ranked disciple of the Rudra Martial school, Qin Yulian, and core disciple of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Xu Jing. As for Young Master Duanmu, 'Aggressive Blade' Yu Yue, 'Rain Man' Nangong Yun, Yuan Xuemei, Liu Wuxiang and Ji Xueyan, they had all failed in the third round just like Luo Hanshan.

At this moment, among all the disciples from Windy Nation, only Lin Qi and Ye Chen hadn't come out yet.

In the Scorching Ancient Desert, outside the gate of light.

Young Master North Snow, Qin Yulian and Xu Jing were sent out one after another.

"Sister Xu Jing, you did it!"

Both Luo Hanshan and Zhu Mei did not manage to break into the Claspng Yuan Realm, although they were a bit disappointed, but they both got over it soon. After all, as a martial artist, one of the most important qualities required was determination, a simple failure didn't mean anything, but the failure of life meant everything. Perhaps, after today, their cultivations would raise rapidly. Of

course, this journey in the Heaven Dream ancient Region was filled with deadly dangers, and all four of them had spent quite some effort to get through it, therefore, it would be a bit disappointing if none of them had managed to break through in the end. Once Xu Jing walked out of the gate, the strong Zhen Qi vibrations being released from her body gave the others the answer they had been expecting all along.

Xu Jing nodded and responded, “The sixth round of the trail was way too hard, I assume that no early Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist can pass it. I failed after only ten moves.”

She stepped into the Claspings Yuan Realm in the fourth round, therefore, the power-level of the white silhouette was also adjusted according to her improvement. Although that was already a higher level trial, she could still give it a shot. In the fifth round, after she spent almost all of her efforts, she eventually defeated the silhouette with hundreds of full-strength moves, but in the sixth round, the silhouette was terrifyingly powerful, and even reached the peak of mid Claspings Yuan Realm, every single move launched by it could literally smash a mountain.

“Ha! You have already managed to breakthrough, that is the most important thing! It doesn’t matter if you passed all the six rounds or not!” The Head Elder hadn’t been so cheerful for a very, very long time. At first, he was told that Ye Chen had comprehended the true sword intent, and killed two top-ranked disciples of the Purple Sun Martial School, now he saw that Xu Jing had broken into the Claspings Yuan Realm, and became a young martial artist who was as powerful as the Young Master Emerald. Each of these was an extremely good news to the Sky Cloud Martial School, it was something that was worth throwing a great party, and inviting all the powerful martial artists to celebrate together.

The North Snow Martial Academy and Rudra Martial School’s people were also quite surprised. Finally, they each had a disciple who had managed to break into the Claspings Yuan Realm. Especially the North Snow Martial Academy, other than Young Master North Snow, their ‘North Snow Fast Blade’ Lin Qi was still in the palace now. Since he had lasted this long in there, he most probably managed to step into the Claspings Yuan Realm.

“You’re all out, now among our Windy Nation’s disciples, only Lin Qi and

Brother Ye are still in there.” said Luo Hanshan.

“I think Brother Ye will certainly make it.” Said Xu Jing.

“The chances are high.” Both the Head Elder and Fourth Elder nodded and said.

Back in the palace.

In the North, the twenty first sealed room.

No one had ever imagined that Lin Qi would reach this stage, it seemed that everyone had underestimated his power. Because, by the fourth round, his opponent already possessed the power of an early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, and in the fifth round, the silhouette was even more powerful, just a step away from peak of mid Claspng Yuan Realm; of course, this power standard was set based on the average power of martial artist, otherwise, if this white silhouette in front of Lin Qi is swapped with Hong Qianjun, Lin Qi would have been killed long ago. After all, Hong Qianjun could evenly fight against any ordinary mid Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist.

This fight had started quite some time ago, what had actually been supporting Lin Qi to keep fighting all along without showing any signs of losing was nothing else but his firm determination. By now, the blade moves launched by him were getting fiercer and fiercer, it seemed that they’d soon reach another level altogether.

“Die!”

Every move made by Lin Qi was faster than his last one, the only thought that had remained in his mind was to be faster, he wanted to be faster than his limits, and then, there would be a whole new level waiting for him.

Crack!

The white silhouette which had been constantly suppressing Lin Qi suddenly paused; and in the next moment, its right arm, and its long and sharp blade suddenly flew out; after that, its entire body was hacked into tens of pieces, and then transformed into streams of white light.

Followed by a buzzing noise, the Zhen Qi swirl in Lin Qi’s dantian began shaking

intensely, and then began gathering inwards with spiral-shaped movements.

“I finally broke into the Claspng Yuan Realm. I didn’t think that I would attain the blade intent before I breakthrough.”

If he hadn’t attained the blade intent, no matter how fast he was, he would have eventually lost the fight. Nevertheless, he did it, he was now a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, and had gained the blade intent, that was desired by all sword artists. After their leader, Xue Wuren, he was the second one who had attained the blade intent in the entire Windy Nation.

The sixth round of the trail began.

Lin Qi gasped deeply. Because of his improvement, the white silhouette also became more powerful than before. It was now at the peak of mid Claspng Yuan Realm, it was even more powerful than the white silhouettes that Qin Yulian and Young Master North Snow had encountered in the sixth round of their trail.

The higher level you reached, the harder your trial would be. Lin Qi had just stepped into the Claspng Yuan Realm, his power was now at the bottom level of this realm, while that white silhouette was at the peak of mid Claspng Yuan Realm. The difference between them had gone beyond a single level, instead, it was one and a half level difference. Even though Lin Qi can now use blade intent, he couldn’t possibly defeat that silhouette.

Among the entire South Zhuo region, the number of young martial artists that could fight against opponents who were in a higher level than themselves by one and a half level, was less than five. Such as the top 3 martial artists of the Hidden Dragon Ranking, they were all in the mid Claspng Yuan Realm, yet they were as powerful as the leaders of the five top-ranked institutions of the Windy Nation, besides, in terms of talent, they were all even more talented than Lin Qi. As for the blade intent Lin Qi had just attained, it was nothing special to them. Among the top 30 of the Hidden Dragon Ranking, there were many that had attained the sword intent and blade intent; as the top 3 of the Hidden Dragon Ranking, and as the young martial artists that had grown up in the South Zhuo Region, they would have already seen, or even possessed something even more powerful than that.

The white silhouette pushed Lin Qi ten steps back with only a single move.

The second move launched by the silhouette, Lin Qi tried his best to dodge it.

After the third move, streams of blood gushed out of the corners of Lin Qi's mouth.

After the sixth move, Lin Qi lost and was sent out of the palace.

At this moment, Ye Chen was the only one among all of Windy Nation's young martial artists who was still inside the Heavenly Dream Battle Palace.

"Lin Qi came out!"

In the Scorching Ancient Desert, elders of all five-top ranked institutions of the Windy Nation turned around and looked towards Lin Qi, who was walking out of the gate.

Lin Qi maintained a bland and calm look as he walked back to the North Snow Martial Academy's group.

Disciples from four institutions of the five top-ranked institutions had successfully broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, only the Purple Sun Martial School's group of people have fallen into a deadly silence, the eyes of each of those elders were now filled with streaks of blood, it made them look like they wanted to kill everyone else.

"Head Elder, Ouyang Lie and Ouyang Ming might still be in the trial, they, since they're not coming out yet!" An inner elder of the Purple Sun Martial School couldn't stand the depressing atmosphere anymore, and said something that even he himself wouldn't believe.

The Head Elder only snorted coldly. He didn't want to say anything. Although subconsciously, he had been rejecting the fact that Ouyang Ming and Ouyang Lie had both died, his mind was still telling him that they're out of hope.

"After we get back, arrange our people, spare no efforts to kill the few top-ranked disciples of the Sky Cloud Martial School. They won't be so happy for too long."

"Sure, we can't let the power of the Sky Cloud Martial School to grow any further."

Back inside the palace, West side, in the fifth sealed room.

Yuanheng Ying shattered the white silhouette's head with a palm attack, and then madly laughed out loud. His face was filled with pride, as if he was the most powerful one in the whole world.

"This Heavenly Dream Battle Palace can't help me step into the mid Claspings Yuan Realm directly, but achieving the peak of early Claspings Yuan Realm already largely improved my power. Ha, those Sky Cloud Martial School's kids, I'll slaughter you all very soon. Now, I can crush you all with a single hand, especially that one who has attained the sword intent, I want you to die miserably."

Imagining himself killing Ye Chen, Yuanheng Ying once again laughed loudly, in the meanwhile, strong Zhen Qi vibrations rose from his body, they were so great and violent that they made him look like a monster.

East side, in the sixteenth sealed room.

Zhuang Fei slapped at the back of the white silhouette with his palm, followed by his move, a stream of highly condensed power directly shattered the silhouette. This move was perfectly executed, and not even a wisp of power had leaked out of that extremely condensed stream.

"The Windy Nation is still under my feet."

After he finished off the white silhouette, Zhuang Fei instantly released a tremendous aura of power that was nearly as great as Yuanheng Ying's Zhen Qi vibrations, obviously, he had also reached the peak of early Claspings Yuan Realm.

No one had ever thought that he would be able to step into a higher level, after all, he was only ranked 68th in the last Hidden Dragon Ranking, and was at the bottom level among those ranked young martial artists from all nine nations.

Ye Chen didn't know what the others had achieved, he neither had any spare time to think about that.

This time, the white silhouette in front of him could be counted as a relatively more powerful one among all the mid Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists, it was only slightly weaker than a peak mid Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist. However, Ye Chen had nearly reached his limit, what had been supporting him to fight against the silhouette until now was the sword intent, he had grown more and more skillful as he used it.

When Ye Chen first entered this ancient region, his sword intent was still unpractical, after the fight against Hong Qianjun, it began to grow, into the elementary-level; by now, after five rounds of the trail, his sword intent had grown further, and nearly achieved a whole new level, it could be counted as the initial success stage.

In that level, the sword intent could be extremely terrifying, multiple times more powerful than the unpractical sword intent. If the two stages of the sword intent are compared, Ye Chen could now easily defeat the previous Ye Chen who was still using the unpractical sword intent.

A thousand moves!

After launching a whole thousand moves, Ye Chen finally beheaded the white silhouette. For a moment, he felt nothing but dizziness.

Without a doubt, all his efforts were completely worthy, because right in the next second, the Zhen Qi contained in his dantian finally gathered into a perfect Zhen Qi sphere.

By now, Ye Chen formally became a Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist.

## ***Chapter 157: Three treasures***

“Hundred swords!”

Ye Chen wanted to know how powerful he was after breaking through, therefore, he shook his body and activated the [Pure Jun Zhen Qi] art with all of his power.

Swoosh

Streams of highly condensed, dazzling sword Qi swooshed around Ye Cen’s body, and exactly a hundred streams of sword Qi in total, rushed towards the same direction, releasing a terrifying amount of power, it seemed as if it could pierce through the entire universe and kill anyone in the world just with the strong vibrations released by the Zhen Qi contained in it.

“Go!”

Ye Chen swung his arm forward, and along with it, a hundred streams of sword Qi transformed into beams of white light and struck the wall in front of him, they were even faster than lightning bolts.

The wall as solid as an iron wall shook slightly, and some black powder began falling off from the wall, it was as if the structure of the entire space was loosened after being struck by Ye Chen’s sword Qi.

“A hundred streams of sword Qi, each of them could kill a peak of mid Condensing Reality Realm martial artist, and when all hundred streams of sword Qi were launched together, even peak of early Claspng Yuan Realm Martial artists would be shattered to pieces. If the Pure Jun Zhen Qi art was a low-rank Earth Realm art, it would have been even more powerful.” While calculating the effectiveness of this move, Ye Chen was a little bit surprised. Without the need of any other skills, he could now easily kill a peak early Claspng Yuan Realm Martial artist, it was indeed beyond his expectations. However, he also realised that this was only applicable to those average martial artists, to defeat those genius martial artists, it wouldn’t be that easy; to fight against those powerful, talented martial artists, he would have to use the sword intent and the Shocking Cloud Sword Art.



As he slowly let out a breath, Ye Chen murmured, “I can probably defeat ordinary peak of mid Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists, I just wonder if I can evenly fight against a late Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist.”

The differences in levels were much greater in the higher realms than the lower realms. In the lower realms, martial artists might be able to evenly fight against opponents who were two levels higher than themselves, but after they step into the Claspings Yuan Realm, that was not even possible; even though Ye Chen’s sword intent had nearly reached an acknowledgeable level and he had an incredible amount of soul power, he couldn’t possibly defeat a martial artist who was two levels higher than him.

But that was only an estimation, he still wanted to take a shot at that.

The sixth round of the trial began.

Buzz!

A white silhouette emerged from the air below the crystal ball.

Just by standing there, the enormous Zhen Qi vibrations released by its body could even shatter a mountain and shake the ocean; once the silhouette appeared, the air surrounding it was constantly being twisted.

“Late Claspings Yuan Realm!”

Ye Chen remained calm, he clearly sensed that the white silhouette was releasing an amazing amount of pressure, it was as great as the pressure given off by the Fourth Elder.

Puff!

The white silhouette abruptly launched a move, before the sword Qi even rushed out, the wall behind Ye Chen was squeezed backwards. A deep groove appeared on the wall, and black powder began falling off once again.

“It made such great damage to the wall just with the pressure being released by its sword, this fight is indeed going to be hard!” Ye Chen hurriedly raised his sword to defend himself from that huge stream of sword Qi, meanwhile, he couldn’t help but recall the ghost guard from the Ghost Corpse Mountain, that he had encountered on their way back from the Emerald Valley, he had

shattered tens of ghost guards into bloody meat paste with just a single palm move. This extreme sword pressure he was facing now was exactly as terrifying as that palm move, only late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could achieve something like this.

The white glowing sword Qi struck against Ye Chen's Hidden Cloud sword, Ye Chen seemed to have heard a shrill howl that was let out by the sword; this was a sign of destruction. That huge stream of sword Qi released by that silhouette was unimaginably powerful, only a low-rank treasure sword could possibly survive that.

“Break!”

Ye Chen growled out, he circulated the Pure Jun Zhen Qi art to his limits, and injected all of it into the Hidden Cloud Sword.

In the next moment, the stream of white sword Qi was suddenly shattered, and in the meanwhile, slight cracks appeared on the Hidden Cloud Sword, and were quickly spreading.

“Hang on a little longer, I'll let you shine one last time!”

Ye Chen was a bit sad when he saw the Hidden Cloud Sword being broken, although he hadn't been using this sword for a very long time, the sword had indeed helped him achieve victory in countless fights. He finished off a number of enemies with it, even including Hong Qianjun, a Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artist. This sword had contributed quite a lot to Ye Chen's life as a martial artist.

Stabilising the sword with his Zhen Qi, Ye Chen launched the Shocking Cloud Art with all of his power for the very first time.

“Clear the Sky!”

A sharp and fierce stream of sword Qi rose directly into the sky, it formed an enormous tornado, which looked like a pillar of the heavens, it seemed to be more condensed and solid than before, and was even faintly glowing. This tornado roared towards the white silhouette, with fierce streams of sword Qi darting out from it, from time to time.

Clang!

The white silhouette quickly waved its sword, fighting against the tornado. Its moves seemed to be rather slow, yet, every single attack made by it had accurately stuck the weak spots of the tornado.

The streams of sword Qi were shattered one after another, while the tornado continued to move closer and closer to the silhouette.

Suddenly, the white silhouette flashed across the sky, it raised its sword high and seemed to directly attack the tornado.

Puff!

The white silhouette swiftly flashed across the tornado and stably landed back on the ground. Behind it, the tornado instantly fell apart into violent airwaves, spreading in all directions.

“[Shocking Clouds Higher than Above]!”

Ye Chen had never launched the last move of the Shocking Cloud Sword Art before, it was not because he was not powerful enough to launch it, it was just that that move required way too much Zhen Qi. Earlier, he was only at the Late Condensing Reality Realm, and didn't have enough Zhen Qi to use this move. Now, he finally broke into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, and was finally able to launch that move easily.

Floating in the air, Ye Chen swung his sword straight down. His movement seemed simple, and didn't even bring up a stream of air, it was as if he was only trying to split a soft cloud.

Pop!

Followed by a sky-shaking thunderous sound, a stream of sword Qi darted out of the tip of his sword.

This attack was way too swift and fierce, even the silhouette didn't even have enough time to dodge it. As it didn't have human emotions, it only fearlessly raised its arms, and held the sword up to try and block the sword Qi.

Along with a loud cracking noise, the white glowing sword held in the white silhouette's hands was shattered, simultaneously, a deep cut appeared on the silhouette's chest. Nevertheless, Ye Chen still didn't manage to kill it. If this was a

real fight, the white silhouette would be quite badly injured by now. However, this fight was actually a bit unfair to the white silhouette, after all, the white glowing sword held in its hands was only condensed from a stream of white light, and was not as solid. In other words, with that attack launched by Ye Chen just now, he didn't win against the white silhouette, instead, he had only won against the sword in its hand, which was condensed by white light and was being supported by a mysterious power.

With his feet back on the ground, Ye Chen grinned bitterly, and looked at the Hidden Cloud Sword. After the stream of Zhen Qi that had been supporting it faded away, the sword began shattering inch by inch. At last, it turned into hundreds of fragments and fell to the ground, it sounded like a beautiful melody.

"I lost."

After losing his sword, Ye Chen couldn't possibly win against the white silhouette, even though the silhouette had also lost its sword.

'Hm?'

Ye Chen was just preparing to fight against the silhouette with his bare hands, even though he knew that he would probably fail. However, the space around him suddenly changed. The white silhouette suddenly darted back into the crystal ball, it was not like the last few times, as this time, it didn't transform back into a stream of white light.

Along with a series of thunderous booms, the sealed room began shaking intensely. Four gates appeared around Ye Chen, one of them was the gate of light, while the other three each led to a long and dark corridor.

Recalling what the Head Elder had told him, Ye Chen smiled.

This Heavenly Dream Battle Palace was unimaginably magical and mysterious, and every ten years, the trial would be completely different. Once a disciple passed the final round of the trial, the palace would activate three treasures, which could be treasure weapons, secret classics that recorded ancient powerful martial arts, or other extremely valuable things. However, disciples who had passed the last round of trial still needed to spend some efforts to get those three treasures, and what the palace would offer was only an opportunity.

“It seems that it’s already been a hundred years since the last time the palace activated the three legendary treasures. Never thought that I would be able to make it here, did anyone else pass the last round?”

Passing the trial was nowhere near easy. As the disciples continuously improved during the trial, the white silhouettes would also be upgraded according to the disciples’ improvements, for example, in Lin Qi’s sixth round of trial, his opponent was at the peak of mid Claspng Yuan Realm, while Ye Chen had faced a Late Claspng Yuan Realm opponent. Although Ye Chen’s opponent was only half a level higher than Lin Qi’s opponent, the difference between their strength was huge. Normally, even if two peak of mid Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists join hands, they still couldn’t be sure to defeat a Late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, this was how huge the difference between these two levels was.

Ye Chen had the feeling that he was not the only one who passed the last round of trial. All those Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists were incredibly powerful, especially those three ranked below 60, namely Mo Wuxue, Xue Hen, the top-ranked disciple of the Formless Martial School, and the ‘Murderous Eagle’ Yuanheng Ying.

Ye Chen almost forgot the one who was known as the ‘Prince Devil’, Leng Wuqing. He would be a nightmare to fight for any martial artist at the same level, if he could step into the Claspng Yuan Realm. He cultivated the [Earth Devil Body Strengthening technique], to him, breaking into the higher levels would be much more difficult than usual, however, once he did, he would have immense improvements.

As he waved his hand, the iron spear that had been put in a corner of the room flew into Ye Chen’s hand. He showed a helpless smile. Judging from the quality of this spear, it was way more solid and powerful than the Hidden Cloud Sword, but Ye Chen was a sword artist, and only a sword would allow him to perfectly release the sword intent; without a sword, he could never unleash his true strength in his battles, even a low-ranked treasure weapon couldn’t help him.

“I have to get myself a low-ranked treasure sword.”

As he quickly made his decision, Ye Chen glanced at all four gates. If he was

right, the three dark gates were the entrances to where the treasures were, and the gate of light was the exit of the palace. Without any hesitation, Ye Chen walked towards the left gate. As for the gate of light, Ye Chen hadn't even thought about it. Since he came all the way into this palace, how could he go back without any treasure?

Soon after Ye Chen walked into the corridor, a few other sealed rooms had also changed in their shape.

“Just like people said, you’ll get the opportunity to reach the three treasures after you pass all the rounds of the trial. Haha, they’re mine!”

As he put the blood-red blade back into the sheath, Mo Wuxue gave a malicious grin, and then stepped into the left gate.

In another room, Yuanheng Ying licked his own lips. The sixth round was harder than he thought, and he almost failed it. Fortunately, he launched his secret move at last, which allowed him to pass the trial. However, he dared not to use that secret move too often, because he could only use it a limited number of times.

Thinking of those three extremely valuable treasures, Yuanheng Ying became a bit impatient. He would definitely launch deadly attacks towards anyone that tries to stop him from getting those three treasures.

Other than Yuanheng Ying and Mo Wuxue, a few others had also passed the trial.

Leng Wuqing, the ‘Prince Devil’ was one of them. He had also broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm, this allowed his power to increase by two times when compared to before, apart from that, his body was now even more stronger than a fifth-grade martial zombie’s; at this stage, even if he blocked an attack launched by an ordinary early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist with his body, it wouldn’t be able to harm him.

The last one who passed the trial was not the top-ranked disciple of the Formless Martial School, Xue Hen, instead, he was Young Master Emerald, Zhuang Fei. All this time, he had been the most powerful and influential one among all of Windy Nation’s younger generation martial artists. He had never thought about giving up his place, not even this time.

Each corridor led to countless rooms, and the structure was extremely complicated. Stairs leading to higher or lower floors could appear anywhere inside the corridor. Without a map, one would never know where to go.

Fortunately, each room had a gate of light that could teleport the disciples out of the palace anytime. Otherwise, Ye Chen could only wait for the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region to lock itself and automatically teleport him out after he found the treasures, because he would never be able to walk out of this corridor by himself.

He walked into a room, and found nothing, he then walked out, and then walked into another, he continued to repeat this countless times.

Buzz!

After a while, a vibration came from below.

This vibration came quite suddenly, it was as if something was trying to attract his attention.

“The first treasure?”

Taking a deep breath, Ye Chen turned around and walked towards a room behind him. Inside the room, was a door that led to the lower floor.

## ***Chapter 158 - Seventy-three-thousand low-rank Spirit stones***

As the vibration grew stronger and stronger, Ye Chen easily followed it and came to a broad room.

This room was as large as tens of ordinary rooms combined, it had an area of around a hundred zhang; a thick pillar was built in the middle of the room, which held a pure white sphere of light, and a dark-red book was silently floating within the light sphere.

“An ancient manual?”

Ye Chen’s eyes shone with a bright light, at this moment, he was just in need of an Earth Realm martial art. ‘I just wonder what kind of martial art was recorded in this book...’ thought Ye Chen.

Taking a few steps forward, Ye Chen instantly showed a vigilant look and hurriedly moved to the right.

Puff!

A nearly two meter long, thick thorn, that was condensed from bright white light thrust out of the ground. That thorn moved swiftly, and even let out a shrill swishing noise. If Ye Chen wasn’t that sensitive and nimble, he would have already been pierced by that light thorn, and teleported out of this palace.

Staying still for a short while, Ye Chen raised his head and looked at the air, as he murmured, “The ground is not safe, what about the air? Hm, I better don’t be too reckless, after all this Heavenly Dream Battle Palace is immeasurably mysterious, how could it just leave the air perfectly safe? I suppose more dangerous traps were set in the air.”

Thinking of this, Ye Chen took out a low-rank spirit stone and threw it into the air.

Puff!

A tiny hole showed up on the left wall, from which, a beam of light darted out and struck the stone into a puff of smoke, which then dissipated into the air without leaving even a trace.



“I can never block that with my protective Zhen Qi.”

Roughly measuring the power of that beam of light, Ye Chen shook his head. The air was even more dangerous, and he could only walk to that pillar.

However, Ye Chen immediately stopped after he lifted up his foot. Just at that moment, another person walked in from the other door of the room.

That was Yin Wuqing, the ‘Prince Devil’.

Seeing Ye Chen, Yin Wuqing looked a bit surprised. He didn’t think that Ye Chen could make it this far. Since Ye Chan had already passed the trial, he must also have broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm.

“What I need is a martial skill manual, what about you?” Standing still, Yin Wuqing asked Ye Chen.

“Cultivation technique.” Ye Chen said.

Nodding his head, Yin Wuqing continued, “Good, if the art recorded in this book is a martial skill, then I will have it, if it’s a cultivation technique, you will have it; if it’s neither of these two, the stronger one of us will have it. I assume that you also don’t want any unnecessary conflict, do you?”

Yin Wuqing never wanted to start a fight against Ye Chen. He was now an early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist and also possessed the sword intent, this meant that he was definitely a troublesome opponent. Yin Wuqing would rather compete against those Hidden Dragon Ranking martial artists than fight against Ye Chen, of course, it didn’t mean that he was afraid of Ye Chen, he just didn’t want to fight a hard yet worthless battle.

“Okay, but on one condition. If I get this book before you, and it happens to be a martial skill, you can’t just take it away, instead, you have to trade for it with an equally valuable thing, and vice versa.”

Ye Chen agreed with Yin Wuqing, he was by no means a battle addict and he also wanted to avoid all unnecessary fights if possible. Besides, at this moment his Hidden cloud Sword was already broken, and without a sword, he couldn’t release his full power.

“Fair enough.”

Yin Wuqing firmly believed that he could get the book ahead of Ye Chen, and what Ye Chen just said further had stimulated him.

Briefly pausing, Ye Chen looked around the room and said, "At this stage, we should just try to approach that pillar in any way we could, this is not as easy as it looks to be."

Hearing his words, Yin Wuqing stamped his foot against the ground; followed with his move, a stream of power spread out from under his foot.

Along with a series of puffing noises, waves of white light thorns thrust out of the ground and pierced right into the air.

After two blinks of an eye, those white light thorns completely faded.

Although Yin Wuqing had memorised the location of every white thorn, as a very cautious person, he stamped his foot again and released an even stronger stream of power.

In the next moment!

Half of the room was filled with thick white light thorns that had just suddenly burst out of the ground; the tip of every white light thorn was sparkling, like the brightest star in the night. Looking at this scene, even Ye Chen felt his scalp go numb.

Yin Wuqing said as he slightly frowned, every time, the location of each thorn would change, and clearly, a fight would do neither of us any good."

"Then let's just wish that the martial art recorded in this book is either a martial skill or a cultivation technique!" Ye Chen gave a faint smile. He didn't agree with what Yin Wuqing said, even if they needed to fight, he just had to seal the space around his body with his Qi, and prevent himself from vibrating the ground and triggering those white light thorns.

Extremely carefully, both of them began walking towards the pillar located in the middle of the room.

Puff!

From time to time, a few white light thorns would suddenly dart out of the ground. While dodging those thorns, neither of them dared to release all of their

Qi; because they had no way to find out if another white thorn would dart out from the place they were going to land, if the landing spot was also dangerous, they could at least once again dodge it with their remaining Qi, and if the landing spot was safe, they could stand still and recover their Qi.

As for whether they would land on traps every single time, such situation was not likely to happen. If it does happen, they could only blame their extreme bad luck. After all, with their current cultivation level, they were far better than ordinary early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists, their Qi was also abundant; however, they still couldn't be too optimistic. Their whole Qi could only help them dodge at most seven times continuously, if the landing spot was still a trap by the seventh time, they would certainly fail.

Fortunately, such a situation never occurred. The most dangerous situation they had encountered in this room was when they landed on traps four times in a row.

Soon after, both of them approached the pillar.

“Get down here.”

Almost simultaneously, they raised their arms towards the light sphere, intending to take it down with their Zhen Qi.

The light sphere stayed perfectly still.

Ye Chen injected Zhen Qi into his hands, and then put his hand on the pillar, he then swiftly pulled himself up into the air; while moving up, his two hands regularly changed positions, one of his hands would always stick to the pillar to stabilise his body.

Yin Wuqing looked at Ye Chen, he seemed to be pondering something. He believed that Ye Chen did this for a reason, he concluded that the air also might be dangerous and decided not to make any moves recklessly.

Learning from Ye Chen, Yin Wuqing also injected Zhen Qi into his hands, one hand stuck to the pillar and his whole body rose into the air. As he chased right after Ye Chen, Yin Wuqing moved even more nimbly, just like an ape.

That pillar was only twenty-four zhang tall. After two blinks of an eye, Ye Chen had already reached the top.

Sticking his left hand and feet on the pillar, Ye Chen crooked his five fingers of the right hand, and attempted to rip apart the light sphere.

Pop!

The light sphere contained a great amount of power that almost threw Ye Chen into the air.

“Not like this!”

Ye Chen growled in a low voice as he gripped the iron spear and instantly pierced towards the light sphere.

Clang!

The spearhead was blocked by a palm, letting out a metal-clashing noise.

“Let’s just try our best!” Ye Chan laughed out loud and said. Followed by his voice, a red flame swooshed up from the spearhead, it shook off Yin Wuqing’s hand and then headed towards the light sphere.

The light sphere still remained unmoved, however, an area turned hollow on its surface, and in the meanwhile, a creaking noise was emitted by the light sphere.

“[Earth Devil Shattering Hack]!”

Yin Wuqing gave up on stopping Ye Chen, and instead, he turned his palm into an extremely sharp blade and directly hacked at the other side of the light sphere.

After that, waves of attacks were launched by the both of them, which struck the light sphere. Multiple hollow spots appeared on the light sphere, and the entire sphere was a little bit twisted.

In the exact moment when the light sphere shattered.

Ye Chen suddenly shook his body, countless streams of sword Qi abruptly emerged from around his body, and then swooshed towards both the lighting sphere and Yin Wuqing; in Yin Wuqing’s eyes, the entire room seemed to be filled with those streams of sword Qi.

After a series of clangs, not even a single hair on Yin Wuqing was harmed.

Those sword Qi couldn't even cut his skin open. However, after he put his hands down, he found that the light sphere was already broken, and that dark-red book was in Ye Chen's hand.

Yin Wuqing snorted scornfully.

Although he was a bit annoyed, he still didn't want a fight against Ye Chen.

Staying at the top of the pillar was not a wise idea. So, Ye Chen quickly descended back to the ground.

Glancing at Yin Wuqing, he opened the book and began reading.

A while later, Yin Wuqing, who stood twenty steps away from Ye Chen, asked, "What kind of art is that?"

Ye Chen grinned and said, "Good luck to you, it's a palm skill, and is an amazing one, mid-grade Earth Realm. To be honest, even I'm a bit attracted."

Yin Wuqing's face turned dark as he responded, "We had a deal, do you plan to break it now?"

Ye Chen shook his head and said, "What would you like to trade with?"

Without any hesitation, Yin Wuqing took off his huge backpack and threw it to Ye Chen, and said, "Seven low-grade Earth Realm martial manuals, sixty-five Mortal Realm martial manuals, one low-rank treasure dagger, one low-rank treasure light armour, one low-rank short blade, three flame bombs, and five precious herbal plants, each of them worth more than 25 kilograms of pure gold, you can have them all."

As he took the backpack, Ye Chen asked in surprise, "Aren't you going to at least take a look at this book? It might not suit you."

Yin Wuqing responded, "All physical skills suit me, no need to look."

Ye Chen opened the bag. As Yin Wuqing said, it contained all the valuable stuff. If Ye Chen guessed it right, only a small part of these valuable things was gained by Yin Wuqing himself, the rest of them were probably seized from other disciples. However, he didn't care about where he got these things from, this bagful of things were extremely valuable!

Seven low-grade Earth Realm martial arts manuals were worth more than

twenty-one thousand low-rank spirit stones, sixty-five top-grade Mortal Realm manuals were worth three-thousand, two-hundred and twenty-five low-rank spirit stones, that dagger was worth more than five-thousand low-rank spirit stones, that low-rank treasure armour was even more valuable than the dagger, it could cost more than twenty-thousand low-rank spirit stones; that low-rank treasure blade was worth no less than eight-thousand spirit stones, while the three flame bombs were highly effective weapons, each could kill a peak-level early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, they could even seriously harm mid Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists, and no one knew how to produce this kind of bombs, therefore, the price of them was incredibly high, every single one was worth more than hundreds of kilograms of gold, and if changed into stones, that should be five-thousand low-rank spirit stones; three bombs in total, would cost fifteen thousand low-rank spirit stones; as for the three herbs, they were the least valuable among all these objects, but they were still worth five-hundred low-rank spirit stones in total.

The total value of this bagful of treasures was around Seventy-three-thousand low-rank spirit stones.

Ye Chen seemed as if he was not going to give the book, he said, “Although you have quite a lot in there, they’re still not as valuable as this mid-grade Earth Realm book, if I give it to my school, I would gain three-thousand pieces of mid-rank spirit stone, that is a hundred and fifteen thousand pieces of low-rank spirit stones. You should know how valuable a medium rank Earth Realm martial art is, it’s more than enough to become the most powerful martial art of a rank 9 institution, I can’t just easily give away something like this.”

Yin Wuqing paused. Ye Chen was right, mid-grade rank Earth Realm martial art manuals were indeed extremely valuable, ordinary rank 9 institutions would hardly possess a single one of them, while a rank 8 institution would have three of them at most. Although the Brute Devil Martial School was a rank 7 institution, they only possessed five to six mid-grade Earth Realm martial art manuals, and he had already read most of them; among the martial arts recorded in those books, two were body strengthening arts, such as his [Earth Devil Body Strengthening Technique], one was a supportive art, while the others were kick skills and movement arts, none of them suited him, otherwise, he

would never pay so much attention to this one held in Ye Chen's hands.

Ye Chen said, "If I hand this book to you, you would profit much more than me. Your institution would certainly award you with a huge amount of spirit stones, but I, I will not only lose such a valuable manual, but will also lose seventy-seven thousand low-rank spirit stone, am I wrong?"

"What do you have in mind?"

"Easy, I will read aloud this book for you, you can just memorise it. After you get back to your school, you can just practise according to your memory. As for this book, I shall have it."

Hesitating for a while, Yin Wuqing finally agreed.

## ***Chapter 159 - Another ancient martial art manual***

As a genius, Yin Wuqing surely had a great memory. He forcibly memorised the whole three-thousand words in that dark-red palm skill manual, and duplicated the Zhen Qi flow pattern on a piece of cloth, and in this way, he gained all the contents of that book.

“How about we work together? I assume that by now there would be people other than us inside this palace.” Ye Chen suggested as he put away the manual.

“This manual is more than enough for me, I don’t want to waste anymore time searching for other treasures.” responded Yin Wuqing.

Ye Chen smiled faintly. ‘This Yin Wuqing is quite interesting, although he came from the Brute Devil Martial School, he is nothing like those greedy and brutal people, seems like martial artists who follow the devil way might all have different personalities. Some seemingly nice people can be extremely cruel, while some seem to be violent and fierce, but they still have their own principles. Yin Wuqing looks cold and careless, but he indeed has his own principle. However, I still can’t find out if he is as merciless as his name states.’ thought Ye Chen.

[TL note: ‘Wuqing’ literally means merciless in Chinese.]

As one foot stepped into the gate of light, Yin Wuqing continued, “Besides, I don’t have any valuable stuff to trade for another treasure.”

Ripples emerged on the gate of light, as Yin Wuqing walked out and disappeared.

“You might get the treasure this time, who knows?” Ye Chen gave a bitter grin and murmured.

Looking around, Ye Chen made sure that nothing was left in that room, he then carefully walked out, back to the corridor.

The corridor seemed to lead everywhere, the multiple rooms located on the both sides made this place seem even more complicated and confusing than a maze, completely without an end.

“I’ll just walk around.”



Ye Chen tried to think, but he couldn't come up with a plan, so he decided to randomly move around.

A corridor and a corridor...

A room and a room...

He went upstairs, he went downstairs, and then downstairs again...

Within a single hour, Ye Chen had walked more than a hundred miles, at last, he was completely confused, and didn't even know where he was.

.....

In another broad room.

A pool was located in the middle of the room, it was less than ten zhang in radius. In the centre of this round pool, there was a flat stone. A glowing white sphere was floating upon the flat stone, within which, was a blade that was imprinted with ancient and mysterious patterns. Even without being pulled out of the sheath, one could already sense the great amount of power contained in it.

"Is this prepared for me?" Treading on the surface of the water, Mo Wuxue fixed his eyes on that blade. He fell in love with this blade with the first glance, and even began gasping continuously.

'Hm?!'

As he turned around, he saw another person.

The 'Murderous Eagle', Yuanheng Ying.

"Yuanheng Ying, you want my blade?" With a face filled with maliciousness and obvious killing intent, Mo Wuxue asked. It seemed like he would immediately launch a deadly attack if Yuanheng Ying said yes.

Yuanheng Ying carefully approached the pool of water, and tread on the water surface, he then said, "Mo Wuxue, I don't see your name on that blade, how can you just claim it as yours?"

Mo Wuxue gave a creepy smile and responded, "It seems like you not only want to take my blade, but also want to challenge my position. Good, you're

about to shed some blood today.”

“Hehe, perhaps, you’ll be the one bleeding. You’re not thinking that you will win for sure, are you? Hm, I would really like to find out if you have achieved some improvement.”

These two young martial artists were at about the same level, Yuanheng Ying had never seen Mo Wuxue as a fearsome opponent, apart from that, now he was also deeply attracted by the treasure blade.

“Die!”

Mo Wuxue was just as brutal and violent as Yuan Hengying, the only difference between him and Yuan Hengying would be that, he was not that addicted to killing. Once Yuanheng Ying gave his response, he had already decided that he would kill Yuanheng Ying in this room itself. The sharp blade swished out of the sheath, and darted towards Yuanheng Ying, leaving a blood-red arc in the air.

“The Great Eagle! Die!”

Yuanheng Ying had been silently preparing for a while to release this attack, he suddenly shook his body and released a gigantic eagle silhouette, which was condensed from Zhen Qi. The eagle silhouette rose into the air and spread its huge wings, and blocked the blood-red stream of blade Qi.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Two fierce streams of power bumped into each other, they stirred the water surface, and multiple water columns rose in the air.

A water column was abruptly shattered, Mo Wuxue darted out from it and continuously hacked out eight times with his full-strength; his face now looked extremely cold.

“[Blood Storm]!”

His blade split the air, and letting out a thrilling roar that sounded as horrible as a ghost’s wails; with a single glance, one could see that the pool of water was entirely shrouded by a blood-red mist, within which, countless blood-red Qi streams were swiftly darting towards all directions to cut Yuanheng Ying into pieces.

“Mo Wuxue, if this is the best you can do, you should just let me have the treasure, otherwise, you won’t just simply shed some blood today, instead, I might even smash your head.”

Finished speaking, he let out a loud roar and along with that, multiple enormous eagle silhouettes darted out from his body, madly tearing those streams of blood-red Qi with their sharp and solid claws; it seemed like this group of terrifying eagle silhouettes could even tear the entire sky apart.

“I haven’t tortured and killed a person for...about three months now, today, I am going to let you know the feeling of dying in my hands.”

Both of them were said to be horribly violent and brutal, even among fierce martial artists. One was addicted to killing and had killed countless people, the other was completely cold-blooded and merciless. Over ten-thousand people were killed by these two young martial artists, without a doubt, both of them could be counted as complete murderers. The fierce murderous aura released by each of them could even scare an average low-grade martial artist to death.

At that moment, once they launched their moves, a dense, dreadful atmosphere, filled with evil, maliciousness and fury, instantly enveloped the area of the entire water pool.

“Behead!”

In the middle of the fight, Mo Wuxue suddenly launched a deadly attack. He raised the blade sideways and swiftly hacked down with all of his power; followed by his move, the water puddle was squeezed hollow, and in the meanwhile, an invisible yet effective fierce power wrapped around Yuanheng Ying, and then quickly condensed into a gigantic blade, that swooshed down towards Yuanheng Ying’s head.

Crack!

The eagle silhouette that had been protecting Yuanheng Ying’s body was shattered, and Yuanheng Ying fell into a dangerous situation.

“Mo Wuxue, here, taste my secret move! [Magical Eagle World]!” Yuanheng Ying’s eyes popped up as he roared out. A stream of dark-cyan Zhen Qi rose into the air, and transformed into a pair of tremendous eagle claws. This pair of eagle

claws gave off an ancient and evil aura once they emerged in the air, it was as if they were the claws of a devil.

Boom!

The gigantic blade was instantly smashed by the pair of claws, at the same time, the pair of claws also dissipated in the air. Waves of earth-shattering power spread out in all directions, and even broke that white light sphere.

“Yuanheng Ying, I’ll spare your life this time, but the next time I see you, you’ll certainly die an ugly death.” The light sphere was broken and the blade fell in Mo Wuxue’s hand, he then said to Yuanheng Ying as he quickly yet carefully walked out of the room. That voice of his was apparently filled with killing intent.”

Yuanheng Ying was extremely furious. He was by no means less powerful than Mo Wuxue, but Mo Wuxue seized the blade and ran away. His eyes turned red, and he only felt that his chest was suddenly filled with the flames of anger and he was unable to let that out.

“Mo Wuxue, I’ll kill you once I kill that kid!” Seeing that Mo Wuxue had already walked up to the gate of light, Yuanheng Ying yelled.

“I’ll be expecting you.”

Mo Wuxue was clearly aware that, he and Yuanheng Ying were not the only two who had managed to pass the trial. If he was not wrong, one of the other two treasures might have already been attained by someone else, and he had got the blade, this meant that only one treasure was left in the palace. Although he wanted to continue searching for another treasure, he was worried that Yuanheng Ying might launch a suicidal and destructive attack at him, as Yuanheng Ying had just lost the fight. Therefore, he had to take precautions against that, this was the reason why he decided to go out of the palace through the gate of light; he had already attained a treasure anyway, besides, he couldn’t be sure about attaining another treasure even if he stayed.

Once Mo Wuxue left, Yuanheng Ying directly left the room and continued his search, he temporarily calmed down from his rage. He had to obtain one of the three treasures.

.....

After another half an hour.

Ye Chen was more or less tired, not only physically, but also mentally. These endless corridors and countless rooms were all the same, this made him feel that he had been circling around in one place all this time, and this made him agitated, and he nearly lost control of his mood. Only because of the sword intent, he managed to stay calm.

The sword intent could block all kinds of evil.

Apart from being able to kill evil enemies, the sword intent could also suppress all kinds of negative feelings and inner evils, of its possessor, this was the reason why all sword artists desire the sword intent so much.

After a long while, Ye Chen suddenly stopped.

Buzz!

Buzz!

Buzz!

Quite far away from Ye Chen, a slight vibration hit his body. Although that vibration was very slight, Ye Chen still grasped it with his sensitive soul power.

“The second one!”

As he increased his walking speed, Ye Chen’s clothes began fluttering in the air. He turned and then turned again... Ye Chen quickly disappeared from the corridor.

Soon after.

Ye Chen arrived at a room, it was as huge as the first one, without any hesitation, he stepped into it.

There was nothing else except an enormous platform floating in the middle of the room. This platform was completely supported by some mysterious power, which held it perfectly still and stable in the air, just like a floating mountain.

A one-meter tall, square pillar stood on the platform, above that, there was a round, pure white light sphere, and within the light sphere, was a dark-gold ancient manual.

“Another manual!”

Ye Chen was excited seeing this manual. While he searched for treasures, he had thought of many things because of his boredom. It seemed like there were many treasures hidden in this Heavenly Dream Battle Palace, but not all of them suited him; however, if a martial artist who managed to pass the trial found that all three awarded treasures were not suited to him or her, the three treasures couldn't be count as rewards; therefore, the three treasures offered by the palace might each suit a disciple who passed the trial, or all three treasures might suit any disciple. For example, that palm skill recorded in the dark-red manual suited Yin Wuqing perfectly. As for this one in front of him, he didn't know yet. It may suit Yin Wuqing, it might also suit himself.

“Can it be what I am looking for?”

The trap set in this room was a kind of pure white flame, it would suddenly spurt out of the ground from a random spot, covering a few meters in radius, it was even more harmful than that white light thorn in the first room. Fortunately, the places where the flame spurts were not as many as the trap spots in the first room, so he could always land on a safe spot.

Swiftly, Ye Chen moved across the room, and stood under the floating platform. He threw a low-rank spirit stone upwards, but no trap was activated, it seemed that the area under the platform was safe.

After figuring that out, Ye Chen relaxed a little bit. He leapt up from the ground and stuck both his palms that were filled with Zhen Qi to the bottom of the platform, Ye Chen nimbly moved to the edge of the platform, and prepared to get on that platform.

Puff!

At that moment, a gigantic green palm transformed from Zhen Qi pressed towards him. The stream of power contained in that palm was so pure and condensed, that Ye Chen only felt all his muscles being crumpled, it was as if his body couldn't stand the great amount of pressure given by that green palm.

He didn't panic, he stuck one hand on the platform, and his body hung on the edge of the platform, Ye Chen pulled out the iron spear with his other hand and triggered the flame power contained within the spear.

Boom!

The Zhen Qi palm dissipated, and Ye Chen saw the face of the person, who had just launched the palm attack.

“Zhuang Fei, it’s you.”

Ye Chen showed an ice-cold face. Zhuang Fei launched a deadly attack without even saying anything, it seemed like he was going to directly kill Ye Chen. If he didn’t have his powerful soul power, that allowed him to be much more sensitive than martial artists at the same level, this palm attack would have certainly killed or severely injured him. Even if this palm attack failed to kill him, he would have undoubtedly been thrown out of the platform, and burnt to ashes by the white flame in this room, he was just not sure if the white flame could kill people.

Zhuang Fei remained expressionless as he said, “Ye Chen, this manual is mine.”

## Chapter 160 - Use the Spear as a Sword

“Yours? Why? Just because that you’re the famous Young Master Emerald?” Since Zhuang Fei had already launched a deadly attack to Ye Chen, Ye Chen would surely not show any kindness to him.

Zhuang Fei’s eyes shone with a frosty light. Just a few months ago, he wasn’t even seeing Ye Chen as a real martial artist, but now, this kid grew some power and had become so arrogant. However, he was indeed a bit surprised by that, the fierce palm attack he launched just now had missed its target.

“Give the book to me and I won’t harm you.” Silently gathering his Qi, Zhuang Fei said while preparing to unleash a stronger attack.

“You don’t deserve it at all.”

At this moment, Ye Chen had already leapt up to the flat and flicked the spear in his hand. The spearhead, which contained Ye Chen’s sword intent, easily ripped the light sphere up, and in the next moment, the book flew into Ye Chen’s hands.

Seeing this, Zhuang Fei instantly showed a murderous expression.

Ye Chen only stood on the flat, completely neglecting the dense killing intent released by Zhuang Fei.

He opened the book.

“[Great Mystery Art], a mid-ranked Earth Realm art, containing eleven levels in total. The first and second levels are fundamental, and the improvement of Zhen Qi starts from the third level. Every step to a higher level, a martial artist’s Zhen Qi will become more condensed than before by around thirty percent. This will occur until the eleventh level. In the top level, the martial artist will be able to grow a chestful of supreme Zhen Yuan, which can easily take any enemy’s life.”

Grow a chestful of supreme Zhen Yuan?

After Ye Chen saw these words, he was sure that this [Great Mystery Art] was the one he had been looking for, it was even better than he expected. Not to mention that the one who ordered him to hand the book over was Zhuang Fei, even if an advance Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist ask for that book, Ye Chen



would kill him no matter what.

It should be mentioned that Zhen Yuan could only be achieved by an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist. Below the Astral Reaching Realm, martial artists could only grow Zhen Qi inside their bodies. Although Zhen Qi and Zhen Yuan seemed so alike, they were totally different things. If any martial artist could grow Zhen Yuan before the Astral Reaching Realm, that would definitely become his most powerful weapon, even among all his fierce skills. Any Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist couldn't possibly survive an attack launched with the power of Zhen Yuan; they would instantly be torn to pieces.

Closing the book, Ye Chen gave a satisfying grin, then prepared to leave.

"Since you're not giving me that book, don't blame me for this!" Nimbly dodging the swooshing white flames that spurted out from the ground, Zhuang Fei darted towards the flat and swiftly leapt onto it.

Ye Chen didn't move. This room was full of traps, as such, he could never hastily leave. Besides, Ye Chen would rather like to find out how Zhuang Fei was planning to keep him from going out.

"You used to be the most talented and influential one among all Windy Nation's younger generation martial artist, but surely not anymore. Just let me smash your glory for you!"

Ye Chen didn't even care if he has a sword or not by now. With that low-ranked great spear and his practical sword intent, he could release up to eighty percent of his true power, that was more than enough to defeat Zhuang Fei. As for the reason why Zhuang Fei had been so confident, it was because Zhuang Fei didn't think that Ye Chen's sword intent could improve anywhere further.

"You asked for this! [Heaven Emerald Palm]!"

Without making even the slightest noise, a green and gigantic palm condensed from Zhen Qi darted out from Zhuang Fei's palm, directly striking towards Ye Chen's head.

"Break!"

Ye Chen sneered as he thrust his spear out. The spearhead accurately aimed at the weakest spot of that green Zhen Qi palm.

Pop!

That Zhen Qi palm dissipated in the air.

“He aimed on my attack’s weakness again!” After the last time Ye Chen broke his Zhen Qi palm, Zhuang Fei had perceived something, and now he was sure that Ye Chen certainly had mastered a certain martial art, which allowed him to accurately launch attacks towards weakest point of his enemies’ attacks.

“Try to break this! [Emerald Shadow Light]!”

Zhuang Fei growled while throwing out a series of palm attacks in a row. Countless Zhen Qi palm swished towards Ye Chen, tailed by streams of beautiful green Zhen Qi. This time, these Zhen Qi palms were like a wave of fierce wind, and would randomly change their routes.

“I’ll break anything launched by you!” Using the spear as a sword, Ye Chen abruptly flicked the spearhead and launched [Clear the Sky], which had the widest attacking range among all the moves of the [Shocking Cloud Art].

A fire red stream of spear light darted right into the air, intensely stirring the air and causing a tremendous tornado; surprisingly, the tornado contained pure flame power, which made it gradually turn red as it suddenly spread out along a terrifying and formidable heat.

Within a single moment, all of those green Zhen Qi palms were shattered, without leaving even a trace; after that, the tornado shrunk into half its size, yet remained fierce as it roared towards Zhuang Fei.

While Ye Chen and Zhuang Fei were fighting, the Scorching Ancient Desert was neither in peace.

After Leng Wuqing and Wo Wuxie came out from the light gate, people immediately started whispering to each other, and the quiet desert instantly became noisy, as if a stone was suddenly thrown into a quiet lake. As for the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s elders, each of them now had a pure black face, because they were sure that Hong Qianjun was dead.

“Who the hell killed Hong Qianjun? Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists?”

“Whoever it is, we will slaughter that person once we find out the truth!”

Those elders didn't slow their voices down when they said these words, and all the other people clearly heard them.

"I have never thought that Hong Qianjun, the Hidden Dragon Ranked 98 martial artist could be killed in there, that's an early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist! And he was so talented, he could even defeat medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists!"

"To be honest, I would like to know the name of the person who has killed him."

"I assume it's one of those Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists. Only they are capable of that anyway. The three ranked before 60 are the most suspicious."

"Do you mean Wo Wuxie, Xue Hen and Yuanheng Ying?"

"Exactly, apart from them, who else could kill Hong Qianjun? Even if the other Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists were slightly powerful than Hong Qianjun, none of them could ever manage to kill him."

The Sky Cloud Martial School's group of people chattered among each other.

Lou Hanshan let out a long breath and said, "Wo Wuxie is out, so did Leng Wuqing. Now only brother Ye, Zhuang Fei and Yuanheng Ying are still in the palace. Why are they still not coming out? Is breaking into the Claspng Yuan Realm especially hard?"

Zhu Mei and Xu Jing were wondering about the same thing.

The Head Elder suddenly popped up his eyes, as if he thought of something important, and said, "Maybe they have all passed the trial and began fighting for the three treasures offered by the Heaven Dream Battle Palace."

"It's been a hundred years since the last time someone passed the trial!" Zhu Mei said with surprise in her voice.

"Indeed, no one has managed to pass the final round of the trial during the last hundred years, but your generation was the best for a century. Therefore, passing the trial is no longer impossible, otherwise, they should have come out long ago." said the Fourth Elder.

Luo Hanshan nodded and asked, "Since passing the trial is that difficult, the

three treasures should be very valuable, am I right?”

The Head Elder responded, “Of course. The most powerful and precious martial art possessed by our Sky Cloud Martial School is called the [Great Rudra Magical Art], that was gained by the third generation of the school leader, from nowhere else but this Heaven Dream Ancient Region. Except for the leader and his inheritors, no was is qualified for that great art at all.”

“The [Great Rudra Magical Art] was truly gained from this Heaven Dream Ancient Region?!” This was the first time for Luo Hanshan to heard about this. As for the power of the [Great Rudra Magical Art], he had already seen it with his own eyes. Activated by Zhen Qi, a move of that art could evaporate an entire river, without leaving even a drop of water.

From time to time, those Purple Sun Martial School’s elders would glance at the Sky Cloud Martial School’s people. Seeing the serious yet surprised look of the Sky Cloud Martial School’s Head Elder, those Purple Sun Martial School’s elders couldn’t help but make guesses about the contents of their conversations.

“That sword kid of the Sky Cloud Martial School hasn’t come out yet, did he already die inside?”

“I’m afraid this won’t be that simple. I have never heard that this Heaven Dream Battle Palace can actually kill a person. All failed disciples will either be automatically sent out or stay inside, he should be still inside by now. I am just worried that all of them might have passed the trial.”

“Once the final round of the trial was passed by one or multiple disciples, the palace would offer three treasures, which are unimaginably valuable and precious. If that Sky Cloud Martial School’s sword kid got one of the three treasures, he might do some evil things to our Purple Sun Martial School with it! After all, all the treasures which have been offered by the palace are incredibly powerful. They are even more valuable and powerful than ordinary equal-level treasures which could be found outside. It would be fine if he only gets a treasured weapon or tool, but if it’s a mid-ranked Earth Realm martial book, that would definitely become another secret and supportive martial art possessed by the Sky Cloud Martial School, and they would be even more powerful than other mid-ranked Earth Realm martial arts.”

The face of the Purple Sun Martial School's Head Elder turned darker and darker while he continued, "That sword kid had brought us so many troubles before he even grows mature. If we let him live, a great disaster will strike on our Purple Sun Martial School sooner or later. I think we should call a meeting with all the Assassin Group's leaders to make sure that we can take that kid out with a single attack."

"You're right, Zhu Lieyang is not powerful enough for this anymore. I'm afraid that he couldn't even fight evenly against that kid at this stage."

.....

Back inside the palace.

Zhuang Fei was shocked. He didn't think that Ye Chen could launch such a powerful attack even without a sword.

"How was that even possible?! Is his sword intent truly so powerful?"

Seeing the red tornado roaring towards him along with the streams of spear light, Zhuang Fei wanted to kill Ye Chen even more than before. He had sensed a severe threat from Ye Chen, which made him feel really angry.

"Break!"

Huge streams of Zhen Qi rose in the air, meanwhile, a mountain-like silhouette shrouded Zhuang Fei entirely. He stayed perfectly still while letting out streams of river-like, flowing palm powers, which were thick and condensed. Affected by Zhuang Fei's palm power streams, all those fierce airwaves that were moving towards him were instantly shattered.

"What is this skill? Mountain? Water? Can it be [Mountain and Water Great Art]?" Ye Chen once heard from the Head Elder that the first leader of the Emerald Martial Palace had found an incomplete book, which recorded the legendary martial art, [Mountain and Water Great Art], from the remaining site of the Mountain and Water Pavilion. Although it was only an incomplete record, it was still a mid-ranked Earth Realm martial art, and was definitely terrifyingly powerful; its power was even greater than the Sky Cloud Martial School's [Great Rudra Magical Art].

The red tornado was shattered, after which, streams of palm power kept

moving straight towards Ye Chen.

Ye Chen laughed out, as though he didn't seem to care at all.

“[Shocking Clouds]!”

“[Limitless Fierce Cloud]!”

“[The Sword of Fleetness]”

“[Dimly discernible Sword]!”

Using the spear as a sword, Ye Chen didn't take a single step back, instead, he launched a counterattack without any hesitation. He swiftly flicked the spear and launched multiple moves of the [Shocking Cloud Art]; activated by the sword intent, each spear light he released was dazzling, not only did they destroy Zhuang Fei's palm power streams, but they also directly struck on the gigantic mountain silhouette which had firmly wrapped Zhuang Fei's body.

The mountain silhouette was soon shattered. Facing Ye Chen's practical sword intent, Zhuang Fei's [Mountain and Water Great Art] failed to defend him. After all, he was now only in the eighth-level of that art, and for sure, he couldn't release the true power of that art; besides, before this, Ye Chen managed to break Hong Qianjun's mid-ranked Earth Realm defensive skill, [Enfeoff and Conferred a rank of Nobility], although he only managed to do that with a lot of difficulty.

Spewing a mouthful of blood, Zhuang Fei said, “Yuanheng Ying, I know you're out there. Do you want to watch us kill each other?”

“Hehe.”

An evil laughter came from outside, along with that, Yuanheng Ying showed up in the room, then said, “Zhuang Fei, It seems to me that you'll be the only who will get killed in this fight.”

“I'm afraid that even you can't defeat him.” Zhuang Fei boosted up his Zhen Qi and stabled the mountain silhouette, barely managing to temporarily hold Ye Chen's attack off.

Ye Chen showed a fierce killing intent in his eyes as well. He knew Yuanheng Ying was out there long ago, he was just pretending that he didn't know,

because he wanted to deal with Yuanheng Ying after he killed Zhuang Fei.

Yuanheng Ying slightly paused. Honestly, he was indeed not sure whether he could defeat Ye Chen or not. Ye Chen was a total freak, now as a Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, he was probably even more powerful than him. However, the more powerful Ye Chen became, the more he wanted to kill Ye Chen, he couldn't let Ye Chen live and eventually become a serious threat to him.

“What do you have in mind? You and me, together?” Yuanheng Ying asked.

Zhuang Fei responded with a frosty tone, “In order to accomplish a great goal, we shouldn't let ourselves be stuck by details, should we?”

## ***Chapter 161 - Coming Out***

“You say ‘we shouldn’t let ourselves be stuck with details’, but I would like to know how we should share that book?”

“Let’s do it half and half. You memorize half, I’ll memorize half.”

“Then it’s settled.”

Swiftly flashing across the room swiftly, Yuan Heng dodged all the white flames spurting out of the floor while bursting out countless eagle silhouettes out of his body one after another; a group of enormous eagle silhouettes nearly shrouded the entire flat as they roared towards Ye Chen.

Seeing this, Zhuang Fei understood that Yuanheng Ying had accepted the deal, therefore, he hurriedly boosted up his Zhen Qi to his limits and solidified the mountain silhouette, making it look like a crystal mountain. Afterwards, he let out another wave of flowing palm power streams, which immediately joined the group of eagle silhouettes swooshing towards Ye Chen.

“Today, the both of you will be leaving parts of your body before you can go out.”

Ye Chen didn’t step back, instead, a sharp yet tremendous stream of power rose directly into the air, as if the most powerful sword in the world was coming out of the sheath to slaughter the entire world.

“Break!”

Activated by the great sword intent, the flame on the spearhead extended into the air, then began changing its shape; eventually, it transformed into a blazing flame sword, letting out a long and shrill roar while hacking on weakest area between the wave of palm power streams and the group of eagle silhouettes.

An ear-piercing noise, which sounded like a piece of clothing being torn apart, came from the air. Ye Chen’s flame sword was incredibly powerful, it had managed to break the massive joint attack launched by Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei.

Yuanheng Ying, who had just leapt onto the flat, was thoroughly shocked. Ye Chen was even more powerful than he thought. Ye Chen could actually block



such a powerful attack by using the spear as a sword; if he had a low-ranked great sword, there wouldn't be a fight at all!

Fortunately, what Ye Chen was wielding was just a spear, it would never change into a real sword.

“Zhuang Fei, stop hesitating! We can never defeat this kid without launching our most powerful move, he might kill us if we keep fighting like this.” While speaking, Yuanheng Ying took a slight step sideways, then suddenly let out a great dark-cyan stream of Zhen Qi. From within, a pair of gigantic eagle claws emerged, they were in a dark-cyan colour and had been releasing a primitive and violent sense of power. They could even scare an ordinary person to death.

“[Flush the Mountain]!”

Hearing this, the mountain silhouette that had been protecting Zhuang Fei suddenly collapsed into a tsunami-great stream of water. The amazing stream of water stream flushed around Zhuang Fei's body, and it seemed it would swoosh out anytime and destroy every single thing on its path.

It turned out that the [Mountain and Water Great Art] could not only serve as a defensive art, but could also transform into a full-strength attack. This offensive skill was called [Flush the Mountain], by launching this move, the martial artist could transform the power of the defensive mountain into a flood and attack the enemies. However, although this offensive skill was indeed amazingly powerful, launching this move meant that the defensive power of the martial artist would become especially weak, and this could provide an opportunity for the enemy to launch a counterattack. As for the full-strength defensive move of this art, Zhuang Fei hadn't achieved that yet as that required the martial artist to reach the ninth-level of this art; otherwise, Ye Chen wouldn't be able to break his mountain silhouette with a just single spear attack.

Boom!

Absolutely sparing no effort, both of them launched their most powerful move.

The pair of horribly gigantic eagle claws seemed to tear the entire sky apart while swishing towards Ye Chen. This attack was closely followed by a roaring wave of palm power streams, like a genuine tsunami, even more terrifying than before.

A series of thunderous sounds burst out. Ye Chen's iron spear was two-meter and three feet long, and in addition to the flame sword attached on the spearhead, it was now four meters long. Ye Chen swung the spear across the air, and along with his move, the flame sword let out shreds of flames, hacking on the pair of gigantic claws and those palm power streams, creating countless sparks of fire.

Soon after, Ye Chen abruptly flicked the spear; a shocking wave spread out from the spear, pushing the pair of huge claws away, and at the same time, the flame sword darted out from the spearhead, shooting towards Zhuang Fei like a shooting star.

"Damn it!"

Zhuang Fei yelled out. At this moment, his defensive power was weaker than ever; he would certainly die once the flame sword hit on his body. Zhuang Fei had no time to hesitate as he launched two streams of palm power as fast as he could, striking against the flame sword.

Pop!

Pop!

The two streams of palm power were shattered one after another, and at the same time, the flame sword dissipated in the air, transforming into a raging fire which wrapped Zhuang Fei's entire body.

While Ye Chen was concentrated on attacking Zhuang Fei, Yuanheng Ying was preparing to launch another deadly move. However, before he could even launch his move, a fierce explosive power suddenly struck him from under his feet and nearly blew him out of the flat. Fortunately, he had already boosted his Zhen Qi as much as he could, which allowed him to defend against that explosive power by just stomping his feet against the ground.

"That was close." Yuanheng Ying silently sighed in relief. That explosive power couldn't harm him, but it was more than enough to push him out of the flat. The other part of this room was filled with traps, if he failed to react in time, he could have been hit by that white flame, which was spurting out from the ground. That would either kill him or throw him out of the palace, but he wouldn't accept either of these two options.

Ye Chen was silently sighing as well. He just used the secret skill [Earth Explosion] he gained from the Bloody Butcher. However, it was too weak to hurt Yuanheng Ying. Before, this secret skill had helped him a lot in all kinds of fights, but now it wasn't even useful against his opponent. This Mortal Realm skill couldn't even scratch Yuanheng Ying, who had an Earth Realm protective skill.

Puff!

The flame was torn apart and Zhuang Fei walked out. Except for a dark face, Zhuang Fei looked quite fine. However, by now, both Zhuang Fei's and Yuanheng Ying's hearts began beating. Ye Chen was far more powerful than they expected him to be. Ye Chen could even take an advantage when facing both of them, if they didn't have their own secret powerful moves, they might have already been defeated by Ye Chen. However, with the current situation, neither of them still believed that they could defeat Ye Chen merely with their own secret moves.

At this moment, Ye Chen stood perfectly stable on the flat while launching his final attack.

“[Shocking Clouds Higher than Above]!”

With the spear held by his right hand, he slashed it down without any extra movements, not even making the slightest noise or a single spark of fire. Ye Chen launched the move as simple as flipping a cloud.

Boom!!!

A thunderous explosion resounded.

This attack was strangely simple, however, it had generated a terrifying power, just like a sudden and destructive thunderstorm that happened on a perfect sunny day! It was an attack that could destroy a person both physically and mentally.

Did either Zhuang Fei and Yuanheng Ying have the chance to dodge? Both of them were slashed by the scorching red spear light stream, which shattered their protective Qi, causing them to cough out a mouthful of blood as they were thrown off of the flat.

The purely white flame spurted out from the ground and both of them instantly disappeared.

On the flat...

Ye Chen shook his head. It turned out that the white flame couldn't kill a person, but could only send people out of the palace. This was the best result anyway, it was better not to kill any of them right now, because currently, the Sky Cloud Martial School wasn't strong enough to take this responsibility. After all, both the Sky Eagle Castle and the Emerald Martial Palace were rank 7 institution, and were powerful enough to crush a lower ranked institutes. Neither of these two institutions would be willing to forgive the person or the institution who had killed their top-ranked disciple.

.....

The gate of light opened once again, and from which, two silhouettes darted out.

"Yuanheng Ying!"

"Zhuang Fei!"

The Elders of the Sky Eagle Castle Martial School and the Emerald Martial Palace shouted out simultaneously, however, they were all immediately dumbfounded when they saw the bleeding and bruised faces of Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei, not to mention those wounds on their bodies.

"Ying, what happened? Who did this to you?" Asked the Head Elder of the Sky Eagle Castle Martial School with a dark face.

"Head Elder, let's take later." Yuanheng Ying didn't want to tell the truth in front of all these people; that would be extremely humiliating. Two Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists had been beaten to vomiting blood by a kid and nearly died. No matter how they tell this story, that would be a huge humiliation and would affect the two institutions' reputation.

Zhuang Fei did exactly the same.

In the Evil Blood Martial School's group, Wo Wuxie was surprised. Yuanheng Ying was as powerful as him, and Zhuang Fei was as marvellous as well, how did they got hurt? Have they fought each other? This seemed to be the most reasonable explanation.

“Just wondering who got the rest of the two treasures.”

Wo Wuxie felt a bit ashamed, if only he knew that Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei were in the palace searching for treasures, he could still take a shot for another two treasures or even one.

The light gate once again opened and another silhouette darted out.

“Who is it?!”

“Who else is inside? All Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists had already come out!”

“Is it the one who wounded Zhuang Fei and Yuanheng Ying?”

All the elders began taking guesses as the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s elders popped up their eyes and stared at the silhouette; they earnestly wished that person would be Hong Qianjun who had gone missing all this time.

Only the Sky Cloud Martial School’s people clearly knew that the last one who came out of the palace was Ye Chen. As for Hong Qianjun, he was dead, killed by Ye Chen long ago, there was no Hong Qianjun in this world anymore.

Swoosh!

That silhouette landed on the sand, wearing a pale blue long outfit. His sleeves were decorated with unique patterns which only belonged to the Sky Cloud Martial School.

“Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciple!”

Most of the people were confused. They had thought of many possibilities, but none of them thought that the last one to come out of the palace would be a Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciple. They didn’t even this kid nor did they heard his name before.

However...

He was the last one to come out through this gate. That meant he had passed the trial and was involved in the treasure search. Moreover, he came out without even the slightest wound.

Could he be the one who had hurt both Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei?

No, he couldn't be. Some elders shook their heads. They would rather die than believe that the two Hidden Dragon ranked martial artists were injured by this kid.

The Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder showed a frosty look, no one knew what was going on in his head.

"Brother Ye, you came out!" Luo Hanshan sighed in relief and said. The trial was made even harder because Ye Chen needed to compete against other others who had also passed the trial in order to gain those treasures. Therefore, Luo Hanshan had been worried about Ye Chen's life all the time.

Ye Chen nodded as he quickly came over and joined the group.

The Head Elder looked at him with a smile and asked, "Are you alright?"

"Perfect." Ye Chen responded while glancing at Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei.

"Good, you're not injured at all. Ah, is it you who injured Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei back in there?"

Ye Chen hesitated shortly before nodding his head.

"You did that?" All the other elders of the Sky Cloud Martial School took a long gasp of shock.

Luo Hanshan laughed and said, "Brother Ye had stepped into the Clasp of Yuan Realm and had become a lot stronger than before. It's not a big deal for him to wound Yuanheng Ying or Zhuang Fei, on the contrary, it would be strange if he couldn't."

Luo Hanshan thought Ye Chen had defeated Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei separately, and didn't think that it was a very big deal. He only felt that those elders had all underestimated Ye Chen.

The Head Elder was slightly surprised, but soon he calmed down and thought that Ye Chen was already a possessor of the sword intent and had broken into the Clasp of Yuan Realm. Undoubtedly, he had already gained a great improvement, and he could surely defeat some Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists. If no accident happened, Ye Chen would certainly gain a position in the next season's Hidden Dragon Rank Tournament, which would happen in a year

and a half. No one could ever stop Ye Chen from that.

“Hm, kid, have you seen my top-ranked disciple, Hong Qianjun?”

A deep voice abruptly came from behind Ye Chen. That voice came from the Head Elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School. Seeing that Ye Chen was last one to come out of the palace, suspicion crept into his mind. He felt that Ye Chen could be the one who murdered Hong Qianjun, therefore, he walked towards Ye Chen step by step, while releasing a great sense of power.

‘Crap!’ Lou Hanshan’s facial expression suddenly changed.

## ***Chapter 162 - The War has Begun***

The great pressure didn't affect Ye Chen at all, because he was now shrouded by the fierce sword intent. Ye Chen remained perfectly calm as he responded, "I have never heard about him."

"Nonsense! Our Multiple Mountain Martial School's top-ranked disciple, Hong Qianjun, is a famous Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artist. How can you possibly never hear anything about him? You might be the one who murdered him!"

"Head Elder, please don't talk too much. Just take him back, then we'll run an interrogation later."

"Exactly, I don't think he could still remain so calm after our interrogation."

"No need to do all those troubles! Let's just take this kid ours for good!"

All the Multiple Mountain Martial School's elders looked malicious and violent, they had never thought of letting Ye Chen go, even if Ye Chen was not the murderer, being suspicious was more than enough.

"Since when could you bully our Sky Cloud Martial School's disciple like this?" An equally strong sense of power rose from the body of the Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder as well. He walked out of the group step by step, while staring at the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder. The eyes of the Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder were not as beady as the young people, yet his gaze was as sharp and fierce as iron thorns.

An inner elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School heard the Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder and responded scornfully, "Who do you think you are? Our Multiple Mountain Martial School is an influential institution. We think that one of your disciples might have murdered our top-ranked disciple, so we have to take him back with us, no one can stop us! You better do whatever we say, otherwise, you'll bring a disaster to your Sky Cloud Martial School, and you can only be regretful for that."

Standing beside the Head Elder, the Fourth Elder popped up his eyes in rage and growled, "Ridiculous! We have our dignity as a martial school, we will never



hand Ye Chen to you! Don't even think about it, if anyone of you dared to touch him, you will die!"

The Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder scoffed coldly, and at the same time, the sand below him sank down under the great pressure released from his body. He said, "You? I can chop you to pieces as easily as killing a dog!"

He turned his head to Ye Chen and continued while waving his hand, "Kid, come over here!"

Swoosh!

Followed by his voice, a terrifying great suction spread out from his palm. Affected by the suction, the sand around Ye Chen instantly rose into the air, drawing towards the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder in a funnel shape. Ye Chen lost control of his own body as he got dragged forward along with those sand.

"Break!"

A stream of flame burst out of Ye Chen's spearhead along with an indestructible firm determination, fiercely hacking on the air in front of Ye Chen, and cutting off that stream of suction.

Hm?

The Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder furrowed his brows. He moved his left hand slightly backwards and boosted the suction up. The suction grew two times greater than before, that it even caused a ten-meter deep pit around Ye Chen.

"You have already pushed it too far! Stop!"

The Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder was infuriated. He suddenly took a step forward and released a tremendous amount of Zhen Qi, firmly enveloping the entire space around Ye Chen. After which, no matter how strong the suction became, Ye Chen couldn't feel anything.

"You're courting death!"

A yellow, gigantic Zhen Qi palm silhouette abruptly swooshed out towards the Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder. Wherever it swept across, the sand would

be detonated, sending out meters thick and tens of meters tall sand columns one after another.

The Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder launched the first attack, the [Mountain-Shattering Stomp]. It was similar to the skill Hong Qianjun was practicing. His Mountain-Shattering Stomp was a lot more powerful than Hong Qianjun's move, that a single strike he launched was literally powerful enough to shatter a mountain and split the ground.

"[Purple Light Paradise]!"

The clothes of the Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder rose as he fluttered in the air without being blown by the wind. He slightly lowered his body as he seemingly slowly moved his arm, yet swiftly thrust his finger out to launch his move. Followed by a sizzling noise, a huge purple stream of light swooshed out of his finger and quickly condensed into a dazzling beam of light, instantly puncturing the yellow and huge palm silhouette, squeezing out an ear-piercing and metal clashing noise.

"Look! The Sky Cloud Martial School and the Multiple Mountain Martial School are fighting!"

"The Multiple Mountain Martial School is so unreasonable, they can't even prove that the Sky Cloud Martial School's disciple is the murderer, but they still insist on taking that kid away. Clearly, the Multiple Mountain Martial School is not showing any respect to the Sky Cloud Martial School."

"You're absolutely right, back to the Multiple Mountain Martial School, that kid would certainly confess to false charges under torture, even worse, they might kill him directly."

"The Multiple Mountain Martial School is a rank 7 institution of the mid-ranked nation, Seven Mystery Nation. They're powerful and influential and had been acting like this all the time. We can only say that the Sky Cloud Martial School have caught such a bad luck..."

"Hehe, I think that the Sky Cloud Martial School is gonna suffer pretty badly this. An amazing genius emerged from a rank 9 institution, you can't say that the other institutions won't be jealous to them for that. It's also hard to tell if the Multiple Mountain Martial School is holding some ideas..."

“Hm, to be honest, even I am jealous of that kid. Have you seen that move he did just now? That move certainly contained sword intent! I assume that this is the reason why he managed to pass the trial and perhaps have gained some treasures from the palace.”

The other elders were either a bit angry or sighing in regret, but of course, most of them were jealous of the Sky Cloud Martial School, wondering why such a genius who had attained the sword intent didn't emerge from their institutions.

“All of you, move!”

“Kill!”

“How dare you fight back!”

This time, the eleven inner elders of the Multiple Mountain Martial School had come, along with tens of outer elders. All of them were above medium Clasp of Yuan Realm. Seeing the Sky Cloud Martial School's Head Elder launching his counterattack, those Multiple Mountain Martial School's elders couldn't hold their anger anymore as they all shouted out.

“All Sky Cloud Martial School's martial artists, launch your moves!”

Hearing the Head Elder, the Fourth Elder gave a resonant growl. A raging flame suddenly burst out of his body, which even grilled the sand around him into black crystals.

“Fourth Elder, take the spear!”

Blood boiled inside Ye Chen's body, but his mind stayed perfectly clear. Whether in terms of personal power or composite level, the Multiple Mountain Martial School's groups of elders were slightly better than the Sky Cloud Martial School's elders. Fortunately, although the Sky Cloud Martial School was a rank 9 institution, they were still as powerful as those rank 8 institutions, which meant that they were only a grade lower than the Multiple Mountain Martial School, and could never be easily defeated by the Multiple Mountain Martial School. Ye Chen always knew that the Fourth Elder had fire quality Zhen Qi, therefore, this iron spear suited him perfectly. Without any hesitation, Ye Chen threw the spear to the Fourth Elder.

“Low-ranked great spear?” Gripping the spear with one hand, the Fourth Elder instantly sensed the great flame power contained in the spear, making him laugh out loud. Many great powerful weapons existed in the world, but the number of the martial artists was even bigger. A lot of Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist had a perfect suited weapon, and the Fourth Elder was one of them. Now holding this low-ranked great spear, he wouldn’t even be afraid of peak-level advance Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists.

Boom!

The iron spear was violently swung across the air, causing a stream of raging fire to swoosh out of the spearhead and spread out. The raging fire turned into an ocean of flames, instantly striking two Multiple Mountain Martial School’s inner elders who were darting over.

“Seventh Elder and Ninth Elder, a dagger and a short blade for you two!” Ye Chen threw out the two weapons while shouting. The Ninth Elder was a master of blade skills, while the Seventh Elder was an excellent assassin. The low-ranked great dagger and low-ranked short blade Ye Chen traded from Leng Wuqing just suited them perfectly.

“You found three low-ranked great weapons?!”

“You know not all of us have great weapons. Only a few of us could find suitable weapons from the school’s storage, but a not suitable great weapon is no better than ordinary weapons. For example, an ordinary sword will be much better to a sword artist, than a low-ranked great blade.”

“Hm, a suitable weapon is precious, they’ll accompany us for our entire life.”

All the others who had been watching this abruptly started fight gasped deeply in shock.

Last time, Lin Qi successfully bid the low-ranked great blade, ‘air-splitting blade’, in the North-West Auction plaza. This was all because their inner elders, who mastered blade skills, didn’t want to compete against him. After all, Lin Qi would certainly become a pillar of the North Snow Martial Academy one day, and those elders had to take good care of him. As for the elders from the other institutions, who didn’t really need to take care of Lin Qi particularly, once they put the bid, the elders of the North Snow Martial Academy would definitely follow-up to buy

the blade and give it to Lin Qi as reward. Therefore, the elders would usually only like to go to big-scale auctions that had all kinds of great treasures; small-scale auctions were mainly for disciples who came from all institutions.

“Amazing blade!”

“Nice dagger!”

The eyes of both elders instantly shone as a wide grin appeared in their face.

In fact, Ye Chen had another low-ranked great blade, but that was stored in his storage ring, and his storage ring was inside the Head Elder’s storage ring. He couldn’t disturb the Head Elder at this moment, because a slight carelessness during a fight could make a powerful martial artist lose. If he disturbed the Head Elder and caused him lose the fight just because he wanted to take his storage ring out, that would be a great frustration for the entire group. Ye Chen was clearly aware of that.

The fight between the two institutions had started and nearly a hundred medium Clasp of Yuan Realm artists began launching their moves, creating an incredibly terrifying scene. However, only thirty percent of them possessed low-ranked great weapons, while the others were only fighting bare handed or with ordinary weapons. All they could rely on were their own martial knowledge and skills.

“Kid, die!”

Suddenly, a Multiple Mountain Martial School’s elders darted to Ye Chen and threw out a heavy kick.

Boom! The ground sank down layer by layer. Ye Chen didn’t have a sword, and he could only launch the [Crane Shadow Step] with all of his strength to swiftly move back; he didn’t dare to launch any counterattack.

“Don’t run!”

This was the outer Head Elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School, a peak-level medium Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, and was half a step away from becoming the inner Head Elder. Facing his full-strength attack, Ye Chen didn’t have a chance to fight back unless he had a sword. As such, he could only try to dodge.

“Brother Ye, catch this sword!”

Seeing that Ye Chen was in danger, Zhu Mei hurriedly threw her Fragrant Plum Sword to Ye Chen. As for Xu Jing, who had always been a passionate warrior, she didn’t launch her move this time, instead she chose to stand still and shield both Luo Hanshan and Zhu Mei, in case the enemy launch a surprise attack on them.

“Nice sword!” Ye Chen swung his arm backwards and gripped the flying sword without even turning his head around, as if he had eyes on the back of his head.

A great sword could actually do very limited help to a sword artist. At most, it could slightly improve the effectiveness of their attack, but it couldn’t reverse the whole situation. However, the most important quality about a great weapon was that they were especially solid and nearly indestructible. The higher the grade a martial artist reach, his or her Zhen Qi would become fiercer and more violent, to the point where ordinary weapons could no longer sustain the flow of the great Zhen Qi, causing it to break. In the Astral Reaching Realm, Zhen Qi would condense into Zhen Yuan, which could crush or detonate any ordinary weapon with a single touch, therefore, only ranked great weapons could allow Astral Reaching Realm martial artists to release their Zhen Yuan powers. Compared to low-ranked great weapons, mid-ranked weapons would be even better.

“You can’t change anything even if you now have a low-ranked great weapon in your hand, you’ll die anyway!”

The outer Head Elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School gave a malicious grin as he leapt into the air and launched eighteen kicks in a row. Every single kick attack he launched was as heavy as a small hill, swooshing towards Ye Chen. It seemed to crush the entire desert along with Ye Chen.

“[Clear the Sky]!”

Zhu Mei’s sword was long and slim. It wasn’t really a good fit for Ye Chen’s sturdy body shape, but it was already much better than the low-ranked great spear and his Hidden Cloud Sword. Holding the sword with his right hand, Ye Chen abruptly swung it downwards and left a dazzling arc in the air.

Followed by a series of sizzling noise, a thin yet forceful stream of sword Qi straightly rose into the air, stirring the air and forming a gigantic tornado. It

rolled up a giant amount of sand and turned into a sandy tornado, which was even more terrifying. Letting out thunderous roars, the sandy tornado bumped against the eighteen streams of kicking power.

Boom!

The sandy tornado was shattered and all the sand fell down from the air as it blotted the sky. Meanwhile, the eighteen streams of kicking power dissipated in the air as well.

“You’ll lose!”

Holding the Fragrant Plum Sword in hand, nothing could suppress the sharp and strong sense of power released from Ye Chen’s body at this moment. It was just like the sharpest sword in the world, which was able to split the entire sky into pieces. Ye Chen showed a fierce gaze as he once again raised the sword. His sandy tornado was shattered easily, but he didn’t care at all. He only slightly stomped his foot on the ground and nimbly sent himself up into the air. After which, the Fragrant Plum Sword was abruptly swung down, without even bringing up a single airwave.

“He launched that move!”

Yuanheng Ying’s and Zhuang Fei’ hearts started beating madly, both of them were defeated by this move, which had left absolutely no space for them to defend themselves.

## Chapter 163 - Become Famous because of One Fight

An earth-shaking thunder burst out while a dazzling stream of sword Qi flashed across the air.

This move was made incredibly fast, to the point where the sword Qi stream fiercely struck on the protective Qi shield of the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Outer Head Elder, right in front of his own eyes.

Puff!

The protective Qi shield was shattered as the Outer Head Elder spat out blood.

"You?! How can this be possible?"

After vomiting a huge mouthful of blood, the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Outer Head Elder pointed his finger at Ye Chen and yelled. He couldn't believe that he had failed to defend himself from a single sword attack launched by Ye Chen, and worse, even his protective Zhen Qi shield was shattered. Ye Chen was no one but an early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, even if he was indeed a genius, he couldn't possibly be able to defeat an elder so easily.

While yelling, the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Outer Head Elder couldn't help but let out another mouthful of blood. He still had a trace of the sword intent lingering around him. Hurriedly stepping back, the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Outer Head Elder was clearly injured, to the point where he couldn't even continue fighting.

Ye Chen sneered as he thought, "Both Yuanheng Ying and Zhuang Fei combined couldn't even take this move, not to mention that you are only fighting by yourself. However, you're indeed a powerful martial artist, you could actually survive this attack."

"Sword Qi and Thunder?! Did His sword Qi actually bring up a genuine thunder?! How fast could his attack be in order to achieve such a great effect?!"

"He is just a Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, how could he possibly reach this level of the sword art? Because of the sword intent?"

"Exactly! Only the sword intent can improve the powers of sword skills to such a degree, with the sword intent, both speed and power can be improved by leaps



and bounds.”

Most of those people who had been watching this fight were elders of the other institutions, who were all experienced martial artists, therefore, they realised how special that sword move was. But at the first glance, none of them knew that at this moment, the Sky Cloud Martial School’s Head Elder was shocked even more badly than them.

“This is the [Sword Qi Thunder]! The highest level of the Shocking Cloud Sword Art!”

“Such a great shame, I had been practising the Shocking Cloud Sword Art for so many years, but I still couldn’t reach the level of [Sword Qi Thunder]. This kid is indeed the most amazing genius of our Sky Cloud Martial School for a whole century! I am willing to defend him with my own life, even if I die in this battle, that can be counted as my final contribution to our Sky Cloud Martial School!”

“Exactly! This kid is the biggest hope of our Sky Cloud Martial School! Anyone who wants to kill him is intending to destroy our school thoroughly! We can’t spare them for their malicious attempts!”

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

What Ye Chen did actually motivated the entire group of elders of the Sky Cloud Martial School, every single one of them managed to boost their Zhen Qi up and launch an even fiercer move. Some of them even broke their own limitations.

“Damn! They are all agitated! Press their morale down! Quick! Don’t let them take any advantage!” The Multiple Mountain Martial School’s groups of elders were all taking an absolute advantage in this fight, however, within a blink of an eye, their advantage had completely vanished. Instead, waves of counterattack swooshed right through their faces without any break. All the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s elders could only do whatever they could to defend themselves.

“It’s all because of that kid named Ye Chen! You! Go kill him!”

“If we can’t kill him, he’ll definitely become our deadly enemy one day!”

The Multiple Mountain Martial School only had one more inner elder than the Sky Cloud Martial School, none of them could break out from the series of fierce attacks and attack Ye Chen at this moment. As such, a few powerful outer elders were sent to kill Ye Chen.

“You rats!”

The Fourth Elder swept the spear across the air, which struck the two Multiple Mountain Martial School’s inner elders back, then he turned around and intended to help Ye Chen.

“Don’t even try!”

With the low-ranked great spear, the Fourth Elder was now only slightly less powerful than the Head Elder. At this moment, another Multiple Mountain Martial School’s inner elder, who was relatively more powerful, blocked the Fourth Elder’s way. All the others from this two institutions had joined the fight as well. Within the area that had a radius of over ten miles, strong power streams had darted off everywhere as puffs of sands rose into the air, causing the sky to darken.

“He is now famous because of this fight,” said the ‘Prince Devil’, Leng Wuqing, while letting out a faint smile. The other Brute Devil Martial School’s disciples looked at him confusingly, wondering what had happened to their senior brother, who had always been extremely cold and bland, seemingly unable to smile.

Without a doubt, Ye Chen would become so famous among all the nine nations after this fight, and after a while, martial artists of the South Zhuo Region or other nations might even hear his name. He had injured the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s Outer Head Elder pretty badly with only one sword attack, that, even many Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artists couldn’t possibly do it. No one would even think that before this fight, Ye Chen was no one but an ordinary kid.

Among the Emerald Martial Palace’s group of people...

Liu Wuxiang and Ji Xueyan were both dumbfounded. Ye Chen’s rapid and

terrifying improvement had made both of them feet helpless for the very first time in their lives. He used to be so average and ordinary, but now the talent and power he had shown in the fight had thoroughly shocked everyone.

Facing three Multiple Mountain Martial School's outer elders, who were darting towards him swiftly, Ye Chen neither took a single step back or tried to dodge. Instead, he said with a resonant voice, "Only three? Not enough!"

"Shut up!"

"Reckless little bastard!"

"You'll die right now!"

Badly infuriated by Ye Chen, these three outer elders growled out. Judging only from their strength and cultivation, these three were no worse than inner elders of the Multiple Mountain Martial School. They firmly believed that they could undoubtedly kill Ye Chen with their strength combined, but Ye Chen had just teased them. They couldn't help but instantly release a fierce killing intent as well as streams of pure Zhen Qi, raising clouds of sands that looked like the end of the world.

"[Mountain-Shattering Stamp]!"

"[Ten Shadow-Splitting Blade]!"

"[The Natural Qi]!"

All three of them then launched their move immediately, sending out waves of fierce power streams towards Ye Chen; countless hue and deep slashes appeared on the ground right away.

"[Clear the Sky]!"

Ye Chen was never a fan of rules, he always added his own ideas into his sword moves. Originally, after launching this move, a stream of sword Qi would rise into the air, stirring the airwaves to form a tornado that would attack the enemy, but this time, Ye Chen put himself in the core of the tornado. By standing there, he couldn't even feel a breeze; moreover, the sandy tornado had firmly wrapped him up and constructed a natural and powerful defence. Standing inside the tornado, Ye Chen let out more streams of sword Qi.

Sword Qi darted out from all directions, swiftly flashubf across the air at a lightning speed; even more terrifying was, with the rotational acceleration provided by the tornado, that sword Qi didn't only darted out towards every direction, but also became sharper and more destructive.

“Ah!”

One of the three Multiple Mountain Martial School's outer elders, who were slightly less cautious, had one of his arm chopped off by a stream of sword Qi, causing him to let out a great howl.

“Retreat!”

“Step back!”

The other two were forced back quickly as well.

At this stage, all those audiences had lost the capability to describe their feelings.

Some said, “This kid can make his moves in whatever way he wanted, that is just amazing. He'll certainly become a marvellous martial artist in the future. Oh, but of course, he has to survive first.”

“Those disciples who were ranked before thirty or fifty in the last season of the Hidden Dragon Rank Tournament had already grown mature, and they won't be afraid of the older generation martial artists anymore. If this kid is given more time, he'll probably achieve that level too.”

“It is still too early to say this. After the Claspig Yuan Realm, a breakthrough will become more and more difficult, that means he won't be able to gain a sudden and great improvement, unless he has a fortuitous encounter.”

“You're right. This Heaven Dream Ancient Region can be counted as a public great opportunity, otherwise, they could never step into the Claspig Yuan Ream so quickly.”

“The world is vast, broad and nearly boundless. Noone knew exactly how big this world was. Hundreds of billions of people had been living in this world, if one genius can be found among every ten-million people, millions of geniuses are expected to exist in this world. Not every single one of those geniuses could

become a legend, once they ran out of talent, they could only work harder and harder and accumulate as much power as they could. However, to cultivate as a martial artist meant that one had to try to go against the heavens; perhaps, when you finally managed to accumulate enough power, you have already run out of time for your further cultivation, and you could only feel shame for yourself.”

“However, a very few amount of people could always stay extremely lucky, gaining a great opportunity before their talents ran out, letting them achieve an amazingly great improvement within a short time. Those people become one of the rulers of the world. Such as the Mysterious Queen, who had been dominating a piece of land; she had stepped into the Life and Death Realm at the age of thirty-five and became one of the most powerful martial artists in this world, gaining an equal status with the Void Emperor, Dragon Emperor and Evil Emperor. She could live for a thousand years and she could easily rebirth from a single drop of blood, not a single ordinary method could actually kill her.”

“Therefore, a great opportunity is an essential part of a legendary martial artist’s life, and almost no one could achieve the top level without a great opportunity. If anyone managed to reach the top without a great opportunity, he or she could be counted as a total miracle because of their limitless talents; after all, all of our talents had its own limitations, only the word ‘miracle’ could be use to describe a person with limitless talents.”

“[Limitless Fierce Clouds]!” “[The Sword of Fleetness]!” ...

Ye Chen launched the Shocking Clouds Sword Art’s moves one after another and continuously forced the three Multiple Mountain Martial School’s outer elders back. While stepping back, the three elders’ clothes were all gradually dyed red with blood.

When the three of them were about to die under Ye Chen’s word, one of them abruptly took out a dark-red iron ball from his storage ring as he showed a twisted and malicious look.

“Shameless! In addition to bullying one kid in a group, they are going to use the red light flame bomb!”

“These few people are humiliating the Multiple Mountain Martial School.”

“This kid is in danger. One red light fire bomb could easily kill an ordinary early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, and it could even hurt a medium Claspng Yuan Realm severely.”

“Once he get injured, he would truly fall into a fatal situation.”

Many elders from the other institutions disdained the few Multiple Mountain Martial School’s outer elders for their movements, however, they didn’t think that Ye Chen would be killed by the bomb either. Geniuses always had their own defensive skills, nevertheless, the situation of this fight would instantly reverse once this bomb caused a serious injury to Ye Chen.

“Die!”

This outer elder yelled out while injecting his Zhen Qi into the bomb as he threw it out; his face went even twisted when he did that. The bomb swiftly darted to Ye Chen, letting out an ear-piercing swishing noise.

Boom!

A raging fire swooshed up along with a thunderous boom, spreading out in no time and covering a huge area. Despite of the fact that Ye Chen could move at an amazing speed, he still couldn’t leave the bomb’s attack range in time. A stream of flame bumped against his body, which sent him flying into the air.

“Brother Ye!”

Zhu Mei, Xu Jing and Luo Hanshan shouted out simultaneously.

When the Sky Cloud Martial School’s elders saw this as well, their faces instantly turned deadly pale.

Swoosh!

Nimbly and stably landing on the ground, Ye Chan gave a faint smile and said, “Is this all you’ve got? Then you’re gonna die for sure.”

“What the hell?! He’s not hurt at all!”

“How could that even happen?! The red light fire bomb is made from the pure fire Yuan Qi collected from the Surprising Sky! Although it’s not that powerful, but it could at least wound that kid pretty badly!”

The outer elder who threw the bomb out just now couldn't even believe what he saw. He yelled to the other two outer elders, "Come on! The school have given each of us a fire bomb before we left, don't save it, threw them out and kill this kid!"

In the past, the Multiple Mountain Martial School elders as well as a few elders from the other institutions had discovered the remains of an ancient institution, which had quite a lot red light fire bombs buried in it. They divided up those bombs evenly after that. However, no one knew the producing method of this kind of fire bomb, not even Astral Reaching Realm martial artists could produce it, therefore, they were quite precious. This time, those outer elders of the Multiple Mountain Martial School got one red light fire bomb each, only because they were sent to escort those top-ranked disciples to this ancient region. Otherwise, the school would never give each of them a rare fire bomb; the Multiple Mountain Martial School had given all of red light fire bombs in the storage out, and had reminded those elders that they were not to use these bombs unless they have to. In that way, these bombs could still be saved for the disciples.

"Okay, this will definitely finish him!"

They had already lost their dignity as martial artists. At this moment, the only thought left in their minds was to kill Ye Chen.

Boom! Boom!

Another two sky-shattering booms happened in a row, along with which, an ocean of flame shrouded an even bigger area.

Launching the [Crane Shadow Step], Ye Chen immediately moved away from the center of the two explosions. He was only slightly struck by explosive shock waves. Suddenly, a round Zhen Qi shield appeared around his body and began glowing, which seemed to have a crystal-like lustre.

Pop!

The Zhen Qi shield was twisted by the strong explosive shock waves, and then the great explosive force bounced Ye Chen into the air.

"Ordinary Zhen Qi shield could never do this! But that doesn't look like any

defensive skill...”

“Can it be a low-ranked great armour?!”

“It’s possible! Low-ranked great armours are relatively more precious among all low-ranked great weapons. Although they are not actually indestructible, those armours are way stronger and sturdier than ordinary Zhen Qi shields and defensive skills. Besides, he was not even directly hurt by the bombs. He was only affected by the shock waves. It’s probably why he is completely unharmed.”

Some knowledgeable elders among the other institutions guessed that Ye Chen was wearing a low-ranked great armour, which could largely boost his defensive power up, and more or less, help him survive the explosions without a hitch.



## ***Chapter 164 - Young Azure Dragon Tablet***

The sandy ground sank down when Ye Chen landed heavily.

Touching his own chest, Ye Chen felt the cold, smooth and solid armour. Just like everyone guessed, he had indeed worn a low-ranked great armour under his clothes. It was one of the more relatively precious great weapons that he had traded from Leng Wuqing.

With this low-ranked great armour, Ye Chen's defensive power improved by a hundred and fifty percent when he activated his protective Qi; however, this was still not enough to keep him safe from the explosion. He still had to stay as far away from the explosion's center as much as possible; after all, the low-ranked great armour was only capable of improving his defence, it could never shield him from such a great explosion.

"Die!"

Leaping into the air, Ye Chen employed the last form of the Shocking Clouds Art, lithely launching another sword attack.

The protective Qi of the three Multiple Mountain Martial School's outer elders all shattered as great thunders bursted out resoundingly. The most powerful one amongst them remained standing, while the other two fell on the ground. It was unknown whether they were dead or alive.

"Phew!"

Ye Chen let out a heavy breath, then threw a round pill into his mouth. He didn't pursue the surviving outer elder. Although he was now a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, his martial skills were still too low; because after a great fight, his Zhen Qi had almost ran out. Fortunately, he had the magical medicine that he found in the tomb to replenish his Zhen Qi within a moment, otherwise, he would really be in great danger.

After fighting face on against Ye Chen twice, two of the Multiple Mountain Martial School's outer elders were struck down and had been possibly killed; this deeply shocked the Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artists, such as Wo Wuxie. Silently, they all began calculating the possibilities of staying unharmed if

they were the ones who had been fighting against Ye Chen. The outcome of their estimations was not favorable for them at all. None of them had any chance in defeating Ye Chen, not even if they used their most powerful skills.

“This guy is insane, even the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s outer elders couldn’t kill him. In that case, he’s going to suppress me forever, god damn it!” Yuanheng Ying had been sitting on the ground whilst he healed himself, but his injuries could not possibly recover within such a short period of time, instead, it would take at least two to three months; during this period, Yuanheng Ying would also have to take all kinds of medicines to replenish his Zhen Qi, otherwise, it would take even longer for him to get back to his peak level.

Recalling the move that Ye Chen launched at Zhuang Fei and himself back at the palace, even now, Yuanheng Ying couldn’t help but shiver. At the time, he had already launched his strongest defensive move, and yet, he still failed.

“Yuanheng Ying, you were injured by this kid, right?” The Head Elder of the Sky Eagle Castle suddenly threw out this question.

Yuanheng Ying didn’t want to admit it, but based on the current situation, there was no reason for him to hide the truth any further. In everyone’s eyes, Ye Chen was much more powerful than Yuanheng Ying, and it was completely reasonable for Ye Chen to defeat Yuanheng Ying. Thinking of this, Yuanheng Ying, who had a dark and icy look, nodded in response, “Both Zhuang Fei and I were injured by him, and he also got that book. I’ll make him pay for this sooner or later.”

The Head Elder of the Sky Eagle Castle said blandly, “You will only focus on rest and recovery. As for revenge, don’t even mention it within two years, unless you reach the medium Clasp of Yuan Realm. Apart from this, the next season Hidden Dragon Rank will start in a year and a half, that means, your first priority should be improving yourself.”

“No! I have to kill him for what he has done!”

“You don’t even have a chance for that. Those Purple Sun Martial School’s elders will never let him live. Just like twenty years ago, and they will still do the something after another twenty years.”

“Purple Sun Martial School?” Asked Yuanheng Ying frowningly.

“Indeed, twenty years ago, the Sky Cloud Martial School was a top rank 8 institution, only slightly less powerful than rank 7 institutions, while the Purple Sun Martial School was a medium rank 8 institution, generally weaker than the Sky Cloud Martial School. When all institutions joined hand in hand and fought against the Nine Evil Cult, the Purple Sun Martial School entrapped the Sky Cloud Martial School, made a group of Sky Cloud Martial School’s elite martial artists that had been besieged by those Nine Evil Cult’s warriors; most of those elite martial artists ended up dying or badly injured. After that, the Sky Cloud Martial School couldn’t forgive the Purple Sun Martial School and set a similar trap, killing the old leader and a few top-ranked inner elders of the Purple Sun Martial School. Since then, an unforgivable enmity had grown between this two institutions, neither of them has ever stopped trying to destroy each other. At this stage, they’re both growing power as much as they can.”

“Head Elder, are you saying that, the Purple Sun Martial School don’t want the Sky Cloud Martial School to surpass them?”

“Of course, after all, the Sky Cloud Martial School have a solid foundation. Although they lost many of their powerful martial artists twenty years ago, they have never stopped cultivating younger generation martial artists. The Sky Cloud Martial School’s power have already recovered to a rank 8 level in five years ago, and they were under the protection of Top Elders all the time; no institution dared to easily start a war against them. Now, a genius disciple, who can even defeat multiple Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artists all at once, has emerged from the Sky Cloud Martial School, the Purple Sun Martial School will certainly spare no effort to kill him, by whatever possible method.”

Hearing this, Yuanheng Ying felt a bit annoyed. He wanted to kill Ye Chen by himself so badly, yet, Ye Chen was crazily powerful and he would only die if he truly goes challenge Ye Chen.

Snorting scornfully, Yuanheng Ying murmured, “You’re gonna die soon anyway, and I don’t even need to do it myself. Let’s just find out who can laugh till the end!”

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Every Multiple Mountain Martial School’s outer elders had a red light fire

bomb, seeing that Ye Chen's strength showed no sign of dwindling after such a long while, they threw out their bombs one after another.

Instantly, three Sky Cloud Martial School's outer elders, who didn't manage to dodge in time, had been struck by a bomb right on the chest, dying immediately and falling to the ground.

"You think only you have powerful weapons?! We do too! Blast them!"

Some Sky Cloud Martial School's elders took out dark-cyan metal balls from their storage rings, aimed at their enemies and threw out swiftly.

Ear-piercing thunders immediately burst out, along with dazzlingly silver lightning bolts, that flashed across the air like fierce, silver serpents. A few outer elders of the Multiple Mountain Martial School were struck by the lightning bolts and killed right away, falling directly on the ground while puffs of black smoke rose from their bodies.

"The Sky Cloud Martial School people have silver light thunderbolt bombs! Who would have thought of that?!"

"The thunderbolt bombs are just as powerful as the red light fire bombs. They are made from the thunder Yuan Qi of the Surprising Sky, and powerful enough to tear a small mountain apart."

"Quite a few outer elders have already fallen in this battle, while those inner elders still stay fine, however, they might eventually die or get injured if this battle lasts a bit longer."

Such a great fight between two top-ranked institutions was not something that you could see every day, therefore, all the others didn't want to leave, and had been continuously whispering to each other with all kinds of expression.

"[Highly Condensed Sword Qi!]"

After taking the medicine, Ye Chen didn't waste any time to wait for Multiple Mountain Martial School's elders to attack him, instead, he darted out and launched attacks initially. But of course, he was not dumb. Rather than rushing into the group of inner elders, Ye Chen chose to go to the area where outer elders had gathered in; additionally, he released his soul power, shrouding the area five meters in radius around, in case any inner elder of the Multiple

Mountain Martial School come to attack him.

Breaking one outer elder's defensive Qi, Ye Chen then launched the deadly move and killed that outer elder, after that, he knitted his brows. The current situation seemed not good for the Sky Cloud Martial School! Among the outer elders, both sides had winners and losers, and the same number of them had already fallen or gotten injured. However, inner elders of the Multiple Mountain Martial School had more advantages than the Sky Cloud Martial School's inner elders. At this stage, the Multiple Mountain Martial School had already won the fight halfway through. Ye Chen clearly understood that his strength was far from enough; he could only barely deal with one Multiple Mountain Martial School's inner elder, not to mention change the overall situation.

"If this goes on, the Sky Cloud Martial School will be crushed. I have to find a way to take out one of the Multiple Mountain Martial School's inner elders."

Swiftly moving around where those outer elders had been fighting in, Ye Chen swept across the entire area with his eyes, then quickly located his target. That person was now standing on the edge of a group of outer elders, and had been fighting against the Ninth Elder of the Sky Cloud Martial School. The Ninth Elder was a master of sneak attack, but in a frontal fight, he seemed to be slightly less effective. If he didn't have that low-ranked great dagger given by Ye Chen, he would be seriously injured or even killed long ago.

"He'll be the one!"

The Sky Cloud Martial School and Multiple Mountain Martial School had the nearly same number of inner elders, therefore, losing one inner elder could completely turn the situation around, otherwise, Ye Chen would never risk attacking an inner elder.

"[Heart Refining]!"

Although the last move of the Shocking Cloud Art was powerful and incredible, the [Heart Refining] was still the most powerful move of Ye Chen. The [Heart Refining] would become more and more powerful as Ye Chen's power was ceaselessly improving, and its effect would grow greater and greater as his sword intent become more and more mature; therefore, Ye Chen could still use this move as the final attack even when he stepped into the Astral Reaching

Realm. His swiftly moving body suddenly stopped. He trod on the air and swung his sword downwards.

Puff!

A stream of sword Qi condensed into a beam of white light and darted out at a lightning speed.

Puff!

That inner elder's protective Qi was cut open immediately, then a bloody slash appeared on his back. He let out a great howl then roared out.

"You damn little bastard! You'll die!"

Boom!

Directly swinging his arm backwards, the inner elder launched his counterattack. A ten meters long blade Qi burst out like a thunderstorm; only after its gale cut off a huge and deep crater into the sand ground did it finally stop.

"Ye Chen! Watch out!" The Ninth Elder didn't have enough time to defend Ye Chen. He could only take the opportunity that was created by Ye Chen to launch a series of fierce attacks on the enemy.

"[Highly Condensed Sword Qi!]"

When he launched the Heart Refining, Ye Chen was already well prepared for the counterattack, therefore, even though that stream of blade Qi had swooshed over at a terrifying speed, Ye Chen managed to block it. He threw out a stream of sword Qi, which was as huge and thick as a mountain, that clashed against the blade Qi.

A wave of ear-piercing noise rang out.

The Highly Condensed Sword Qi's effect was not delivered within a moment, instead, supported by Ye Chen's Zhen Qi, it lingered around the blade Qi and rapidly neutralized it. When the sword Qi dissipated, the remaining blade Qi couldn't hurt Ye Chen anymore, and it was shattered by Ye Chen with only a punch.

Boom!

Ye Chen had just created a chance for the Ninth Elder. On the other side, another Sky Cloud Martial School's inner elder was sent flying into the air while vomiting blood.

Seeing this, Ye Chen had no choice but to hurriedly rushed over. His fate will be exactly the same as these elders of the Sky Cloud Martial School, that meant, if these elders were defeated completely, he could never survive on his own. However, if he tried his best, he might create more opportunities for these elders to win this fight.

However, another change happened at this time.

The Rudra Martial School's Head Elder was a beautiful lady. Seeing the Emerald Martial Palace showed no intention to intervene, she slightly frowned, then swiftly moved to the middle of the battlefield.

"People, this fight is not necessary at all, just stop from here!"

Hearing this, an inner elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School gave a sneer and said, "Who the hell do you think you are? You have no qualifications to step into this battle."

Currently, they were already holding a definite advantage, and they would be able to defeat the Sky Cloud definite sooner or later. None of them thought that someone else would wade in this fight, therefore, those Multiple Mountain Martial Elders turned around and glared at the Head Elder of the Rudra Martial School in anger.

Among the others, the Head Elder of the Purple Sun Martial School's face had darkened. He sniffed coldly and said, "The Rudra Martial School has developed for only around ten years, why is she acting so recklessly? Just let that Sky Cloud Martial School be destroyed!"

Since there was already an enmity between the Purple Sun Martial School and the Sky Cloud Martial School from twenty years ago, the Purple Sun Martial School's people would love to watch the Sky Cloud Martial School be thoroughly crushed. However, now that the Rudra Martial School's Head Elder abruptly stepped out and tried to stop this fight, those Purple Sun Martial School's elders felt like killing her.

The face of the Rudra Martial School's Head Elder was ice-cold. From her storage ring, she took out a tablet that was one foot long and two inches thick, and was entirely wrapped by streams of cyan light; a fierce cyan dragon was embossed on the tablet, making it seem like imperial.

"People, you still don't want to stop?"

After glancing at the tablet held by the Rudra Martial School's Head Elder, the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Head Elder suddenly had a change of expression. He said word by word,, "Young Azure Dragon Tablet! Where did you get it?! Why do you have it?!"

"You don't need to know, you should just remember the name of the person who owns this Young Azure Dragon Tablet."

The face of the Head Elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School suddenly darkened. He then growled, "Multiple Mountain Martial School's people, listen to me, stop fighting!"

"What? Why?!"

"Head Elder, we're about to beat them up!"

Many outer elders of the Multiple Mountain Martial School didn't understand why they had to stop the fight now. Only some inner elders seemed to have thought of something; just like their Head Elder, the faces of these people darkened immediately as well.



## Chapter 165 - Return

Special thanks to Josephine F. and Sebastien T. for sponsoring this chapter.

.....

Unwillingly, these Multiple Mountain Martial School's elders stopped fighting immediately and began gathering towards their Head Elder—six of these elders had fallen in this battle, this number was not that huge at all. As for those Sky Cloud Martial School's elders, they certainly didn't chase the enemies and gathered back around the Head Elder as well.

A small wasteland dyed in crimson blood and over ten corpses, a scene where anyone would be shocked at first glance, lied in between these two groups of people.

By now, all the others had seen the tablet held by the Rudra Martial School Head Elder, and they were all shocked as well.

“Why on earth does the Rudra Martial School have this tablet?! They're only a rank 8 institution!”

“The owner of this Young Azure Dragon Tablet is not actually that terrifying, but what's behind that person is unspeakably powerful...”

“Exactly, the Young Azure Dragon Tablet appeared here in the South Zhuo Region, this isn't gonna be that simple. We have to warn the others about this when we get back. Tell them to not mess with the Rudra Martial School's Head Elder, don't even provoke any of their disciples. Anyone who does not listen to us will die!”

“Indeed, in case they make some huge, stupid mistakes and bring our institution a disaster.”

The Head Elder of the Purple Sun Martial School popped up his eyes and gazed at the tablet held by the Rudra Martial School Head Elder; the embodiment of a cyan dragon coiling around the tablet was now spurting streams of dense smoke, and had been gazing at the world with its pair of frosty eyes, as if it was able to see through anyone's heart and shake people's souls.

“How can it be possible?! Is she an offspring of that...person? What does she

want from our Windy Nation?”

The first person that popped into his mind was not the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder, instead it was Long Biyun, the Patriarch of the Rudra Martial School. That woman was a complete mystery, but now he finally grasped a trace of truth through layers of fog.

“No wonder the Rudra Martial School have risen in only around ten years and became one of the five top-ranked institutions of the Windy Nation. It turns out that she’s an offspring of that person...If I’m right, he had been expecting the resurgence of the Nine Evil Cult since long ago. He is just waiting for the right opportunity.”

The Sky Cloud Martial School’s Head Elder let out a long breath.

The Fourth Elder said worryingly, “I thought only a couple of not so powerful people were still alive among the remaining forces of the Nine Evil Cult, but it turns out that I was so wrong. Otherwise, that man wouldn’t set a finger into the Nine Evil Cult in over ten years ago, as a preparation for what’s gonna happen after today.”

The Head Elder nodded and responded, “We’re only a rank 9 institution, even though we’re as powerful as rank 8 institutions, we are always as weak and inconsequential as a bunch of ants in those people’s eyes. Therefore, we should not worry too much and mind only our own business. We won’t even have a chance to deal with those big troubles.”

“You’re right.”

Smiling bitterly, the Fourth Elder rubbed his own jaw. He realised that he had been worrying way too much. If he took part in a battle among those people who were all in legendarily high grades, he would certainly die; a thousand martial artists at the same level as him would also die without question, even if they joined hand to hand. He should just work harder on cultivating himself and try to achieve the peak-level advance Clasp of Yuan Realm as soon as possible, rather than worrying about these unpredictable things.

Going back to Luo Hanshan, Xujing and Zhu Mei, Ye Chen gave the sword back to Zhu Mei and said, “Senior sister, thank you for lending me your sword, it would be so much more difficult for me to defeat them if you haven’t.”

Zhu Mei grinned and said, “With your current power and potential, you’ll soon have your own low-ranked great sword. I heard that your family possesses an inherited, legendary sword called Dead Shadow Sword. That sword is capable of breaking the air resistance and launching attacks at an amazing speed. It could even kill someone without being noticed.”

“Eh, that sword does exist, however, only the current Patriarch of our family can have it.” The Dead Shadow Sword was one of those top-grade weapons among all low-ranked great weapons. Its amazingly fast speed was its most effective features. It could allow its owner to defeat his enemies within the shortest time. However, Ye Chen had never thought about becoming the family Patriarch; after all, that was not what he wanted.

Giving a contemplating look at the tablet held by the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder, Ye Chen abruptly asked, “What exactly is the Young Azure Dragon Tablet? Is it some kind of big deal?”

Lou Hanshan, who was always the most knowledgeable one among all disciples, shook his head and responded, “I don’t know either, maybe we’re not powerful enough to learn that kind of information. Look, even outer elders from all institutions don’t have any idea about that tablet, only some core inner disciples seem to know a little about it, but clearly, they didn’t want to tell.”

“No matter what, the Rudra Martial School have just done us a huge favour.” Ye Chen was clearly aware of that, although the Sky Cloud Martial School was as powerful as all rank 8 institutions, none of the rank 8 institutions could still compare with this rank 7 institution. Generally, the Multiple Mountain Martial School’s elders were slightly more powerful than the Sky Cloud Martial School’s elders; although the Sky Cloud Martial School could fight evenly against them for a short time, in a drawn-out fight, the difference between these two institutions would be quickly exposed.

Xu Jing didn’t talk, she was never a talker. She only took a glance at the Emerald Martial Palace’s side, finding their Head Elder who had been fearfully staring at that Young Azure Dragon Tablet for a long time, with a bleak expression.

In the middle of the battlefield, the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder

gradually descended from the air, landed back on the ground and said, “The Heaven Dream Ancient Region is a place of magical opportunities, but it’s also a region of deadly dangers. Once our disciples enters the region, they should directly face their destinies. Not to mention that you do not have evidence, even if you do, you can’t just avenge your disciples carelessly. Those dead disciples are no longer geniuses, they are not worth fighting for anyway.”

The Head Elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School yelled out harshly, “If we don’t avenge him, the death of our top-ranked disciple would be in vain!”

“Since you have sent him into that ancient region, you should have well prepared for his death. If every institution acts like your Multiple Mountain Martial School and have revenge for their fallen disciples, we would have to expect a great war.”

“How could they even compare with Hong Qianjun?” Said another elder of the Multiple Mountain Martial School.

“Two of our Rudra Martial School’s disciples have fallen as well,” said the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder while her face darkened down, “Now I suspect that the people who killed our disciples were from your Multiple Mountain Martial School; should I kill you all and avenge our disciples? If so, I can just use this Young Azure Dragon Tablet, and this will destroy an entire area of thousands of miles in radius of your institution.”

“This is...How, how could it be our disciples...” A voice of one of the Multiple Mountain’s elders lowered down. He didn’t know how to refute the Rudra Martial School Head Elder’s words. If he insisted on holding against the Rudra Martial School, he might truly bring troubles to the Multiple Mountain Martial School. The Multiple Mountain Martial School could indeed be counted as one of the most powerful institutions among the nine nations, but comparing to the Rudra Martial School’s background, the Multiple Mountain Martial School wasn’t even worth mentioning.

“Alright, this ends here. We shall go back to our institutions.”

By now, the enormous rainbow stream that had directly connected the earth and heaven had gradually faded, and the light gate was already invisible. As for when it would appear again, it would be ten years later from now.

“Blood Evil Martial School’s people, let’s head back.”

“Formless Martial School’s people, we’re going home.”

“White Deer Martial School...”

“Moonlight Martial School...”

People from all institutions hopped on their riding beasts’ backs and rose into the air in groups, then soon disappeared into the thick layer of clouds in a few blinks of an eye.

The Multiple Mountain Martial School’s Head Elder snorted coldly and silently glanced at Ye Chen with eyes brimming with killing intent. He then turned around and shouted, “Let’s go back.”

After people from the other eight nations left, the Emerald Martial Palace and the Purple Sun Martial School people left as well. Soon, only the Rudra Martial School’s and the Sky Cloud Martial School’s people were left on the scene.

The Sky Cloud Martial School’s Head Elder cupped his hands, slightly bowed to the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder and said, “Elder Long, we owe you a big favour. We will report every detail to our leader after we get back.”

Similar to the Rudra Martial School’s leader, the family name of the Rudra Martial School’s Head Elder was also Long. In response, she said blandly, “I didn’t do it for you, I did it for that little kid.”

Looking at where she was glancing, the Head Elder said in surprise, “Ye Chen?”

“Indeed, he has superb talent and potential, I could barely watch him die in this unfair fight. But of course, he has to earn a bright future only by himself, none of the others can ever help him. Even any of those powerful martial artists never relied on help.”

The Head Elder nodded. She was absolutely right, every single powerful martial artist depended on nothing else but their own power. As for those so-called geniuses who grew up under strong protection, they were all as fragile as flowers in a greenhouse, and could never truly become powerful martial artists; only people who had been through all kinds of difficulties had a chance to become a truly powerful martial artist.

“Regarding the Young Azure Dragon Tablet, just keep it to yourselves, these kids don’t need to know about it, that information won’t do them any good anyway.” Said Elder Long.

“I am aware of that.”

The Head Elder was a clever and thoughtful person, thoroughly understanding many things with only a hint. If he guessed right, Ye Chen was temporarily chosen. However, he couldn’t be the only chosen kid. Countless talented kids could be found in this Southern Zhuo Region and the rest of the world. Some of them showed amazing talents when they were young but turned back normal when they were older, while some ordinary kids might’ve abruptly turned out to be real geniuses; no one could tell which kid was truly going to become a powerful martial artist. The only way to find out was to widen the range of choice and gradually weed out those who were not qualified.

Guided by Elder Long, the Rudra Martial School’s people hopped onto their riding beasts’ backs and left quickly as well, heading back to the Windy Nation.

Clearing his throat, the Head Elder said, “None of you shall ask too much about what transpired today.”

“Sure.”

Ye Chen and the other three disciples nodded and said.

“Good, let’s go home.”

Wind vultures let out shrill songs. Tens of Sky Cloud Martial School’s people carried the bodies of the fallen elders and hopped onto the vultures’ back. The group of windy vulture darted into the air swiftly then soon disappeared.

Ten days later, they returned to the Sky Cloud Martial School.

That night, a high-level meeting was held in the school.

The next day, Ye Chen traded what he gained from the ancient region into a stunningly huge amount of magic stones.

He wasn’t going to hand the Great Mystery Art to the school, but only planned to trade another book that recorded a secret palm art; however, that great fight that had happened at the desert touched his heart, because he saw those elders

risking their own lives to protect him. 'Why should I hide this book from the school? With the addition of two powerful mid-ranked Earth Realm arts, the power of Sky Cloud Martial School could certainly reach its peak-level in only a few years, or even upgrade into a rank 7 institution.'

Ye Chen had gained a lot from this journey to the Heaven Dream Ancient Region. Except for the two mid-ranked Earth Realm martial books, he had traded all the other objects for a hundred thousand pieces of low-ranked magic stones in total. With the two mid-ranked Earth Realm martial books, he made a hundred thousand low-ranked stones and six-thousand mid-ranked stones in total; if he exchanged them all into low-ranked stones, that should be four hundred thousand pieces of low-ranked stones.

With this huge amount of wealth, Ye Chen would never worry about running out of magic stones for cultivation for a very long time.

Nevertheless, what he had been worrying about was totally reasonable.

In the early Condensing Reality Realm, a martial artist only needed to consume a piece of low-ranked stone every five days for his cultivation; however, Ye Chen consumed double the amount, which was two pieces of low-ranked stones every five days.

In the medium Condensing Reality Realm, Ye Chen needed to consume two pieces of low-ranked stones every three days.

In the advance Condensing Reality Realm, Ye Chen needed to consume two pieces of low-ranked stones each day.

And in the early Claspng Yuan Realm, the number of low-ranked stones he would consume daily would be raised to ten, that meant three hundred pieces of low-ranked stones every month, and three thousand and six hundred pieces of low-ranked stones per year.

With his old savings, he could only afford three years of cultivation; after he ran out of stones, he had to complete missions for the school and earn stones, or find some valuable stuff to trade for stones, just like this time. As for how many he could earn, that would entirely depend on his dedication and luck.

In another word, once a martial artist stepped into the Claspng Yuan Realm, a

martial artist would no longer worry about money.



## ***Chapter 166 - Deciding to Strengthen Himself***

Special thanks to Sebastien T. for sponsoring this chapter.

.....

The night sky was as dark and desolate as the ocean, completely silent.

Inside the room, Ye Chen sat on the bed with his legs crossed and his hands on his knees. He was meditating with his full concentration, and in front of him, the moonlight that poured into the room through the screen window was soft and clear.

The Great Mystery Art was a mid-ranked Earth Realm art, and the Zhen Qi flowing route required by this art was over ten times more complicated than the Zhen Qi flowing route required by the Pure Jun Zhen Qi. When practicing this art, the Zhen Qi flow has to make multiple twists and turns at many important spots inside the martial artist's body; at the end of which, the entire pattern may look like a dead knot, or even a ball of disordered ropes. One can hardly gain a clear understanding of it.

At this stage, in order to achieve the first level of this art, Ye Chen has to complete a whole circle inside his body and extract and purify a stream of Great Mystery Zhen Qi from his original Zhen Qi.

However, as the Great Mystery Art was genuinely complicated, it was not that easy to complete a whole circle; at least, Ye Chen was still having a headache because of the tangled Zhen Qi flowing pattern. He did not dare to be even a slight bit careless. After all, once a Zhen Qi stream flows into a wrong meridian, it might cause severe inner damage inside his body.

Sweat dripped down from his forehead, but Ye Chen had yet to sense anything; only closing his eyes and scrunching his brows from time to time. Within a short time, his expression had changed a number of times.

Phew!

A while later, Ye Chen slowly opened his eyes and let out a long breath, seeming a bit tired.

“No wonder mid-ranked Earth Realm arts are considered the most powerful

arts possessed by many institutions. It is only the first level of this Great Mystery Art and it is already so difficult that it costs me half a day of hard work. Hmm, to cultivate to the top-level, just how difficult can that be?" Before, the progress of Ye Chen's cultivation was extremely rapid, but this time, he felt that it was a bit demanding when practicing the Great Mystery art; every single move made by him had to be done cautiously, and it was extremely time and energy consuming.

A night was spent in silence.

In the next half month, Ye Chen spared no effort on practising the Great Mystery Art every single night; during the daytime, he chose to practice the low-ranked Earth Realm art that he got from the ancient region. Although this lifestyle was dull and dry, he was indeed very busy.

.....

Another half a month passed.

Above a soaring cliff, the ocean of clouds surged silently.

On the ground a human silhouette was moving swiftly across the plain. His movements were as smooth as flowing water and as fast as a demon; every time he abruptly stopped moving for a moment, his silhouette would abruptly split into two then dart out towards different directions. One of the two silhouettes was wearing a long outfit that fluttered in the air that let out powerful rustling noises, while the other had a lifeless expression and a slightly translucent body. It was very apparent that it was condensed from Zhen Qi.

"Again!"

Moving another few steps forward, Ye Chen shook his body, and along with this move, another Zhen Qi condensed silhouette darted out from his body. It looked much more alive than the first one, wearing a Zhen Qi outfit that fluttered in the air.

The two Zhen Qi silhouettes and Ye Chen moved alongside each other, and in the next moment, all three of them threw out a heavy punch simultaneously and struck the cliff.

Boom!

A fierce stream of fist power was suddenly injected into the cliff, and Ye Chen instantly leapt backwards, yelling out in a low voice when he flew in the air.

“Back!”

Followed by his voice, the two Zhen Qi silhouette merged back with his body.

Landing back on the ground, Ye Chen let out a long breath, then raised his head. He saw that three deep holes were punched into the cliff; the two holes on the sides were about half a meter wide and three to four meters deep, while the hole in the middle was one meter wide and six meters deep. At this moment, rock fragments were still falling off from around the three holes.

“Not bad, about fifty percent as effective as me!”

He hadn’t yet reached the top-level of this Shadow-Dividing Light Art, but he was about to. At his current stage, he was already able to create two Zhen Qi silhouettes within a short time and confuse the enemy; it should be noted that in real fights, even the body shapes of martial artists themselves could become indistinct because of their swift movements. If two extra silhouettes abruptly emerged from nowhere, the enemy would definitely be confused, and that would be the perfect moment to launch a surprise attack.

Apart from this, in terms of speed, the Shadow-Dividing Light Art could allow a martial artist to move a level faster than the Crane Shadow step. That was nearly three hundred meters within a moment, even faster than the elder of the Pavilion of Martial Arts.

“Such a shame, I’m stuck at the fifth-level of the Great Mystery Art and can’t break into the sixth-level at this moment, but generally, I have improved significantly more than before.”

The Great Mystery Art was gained from the Heaven Dream Battle Palace, this meant that it was even more precious than the ordinary mid-ranked Earth Realm martial arts. Ye Chen only reached the fifth level of this art, and the quality of Ye Chen’s Zhen Qi managed to surpass the Zhen Qi at the seventh-level of the Pure Jun Zhen Qi. The total amount of Zhen Qi at the fifth-level of the Great Mystery Art was equivalent to the seventh-level of the Pure Jun Zhen Qi. It was hard to imagine what stage his Zhen Qi quality and quantity would achieve when he breaks into the sixth, seventh, or even the top level of this art.

But of course, everything in this world had its positive side and negative side. As the Great Mystery Art was so powerful, the difficulties that Ye Chen would encounter during his cultivation would certainly increase by a huge degree. Spending a whole month, Ye Chen had only barely reached the fifth level of this art, but thankfully, his general power had already greatly improved.

When the first stream of sunlight poured down from the heaven, Ye Chen murmured to himself, "It's time for me to meet the leader."

.....

On the main road of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

"Good morning senior brother!"

"Morning senior brother!"

A group of male and female inner disciples walked over. Among them, the one with the highest grade was already in the advance Condensing Reality Realm, while the one with the lowest grade was in the early Condensing Reality Realm. Seeing Ye Chen from a distance, they called 'senior brother' altogether with a polite and respectful tone.

Ye Chen remained silent, and only nodded to them.

Once Ye Chen walked away, those disciples instantly began whispering to each other.

"Our senior brother Ye is now Windy Nation's legendary genius, he has attained sword intent and broken into the Claspng Yuan Realm. He severely injured the rank 7 institution, Multiple Mountain Martial School's outer Head Elder with a single move! Any of these news are shocking and amazing. It's said that he is now even more powerful than the four young masters and is the most talented young martial artist in the whole nation."

"The era of the four young masters has passed, now among the whole of Windy Nation's younger generation martial artists, only six can be considered as the most powerful. They're the Young Master Emerald, Young Master North Snow, Lin Qi, Qin Yulian, our senior sister Xu Jing, and senior brother Ye Chen."

"....."

Ye Chen did not hear these conversations, and even if he did, he would not feel any pride from it. Perhaps, he was already the most talented young martial artist of Windy Nation, but compared to the other powerful martial artists of this world, he was still at the bottom level. Besides, he always felt that if he continued to stay at the Sky Cloud Martial School, the highest grade he could ever achieve in his entire life would merely be the Astral Reaching Realm; that means that he could never truly become one of the peak experts among the powerful ones in this world.

The Astral Reaching Realm was nowhere near his true goal.

Walking past a group of buildings, Ye Chen arrived in front a magnificent palace.

“Brother Ye, this is the Sky Cloud Palace, only the leader and inner elders are allowed to enter.” Eight attendant disciples blocked Ye Chen’s way and said blandly.

Ye Chen raised his head and responded in a similarly bland tone, “I have to discuss with the elders and inner elders regarding something important, please, go inform them of this.”

“An important thing? How important exactly?” Said one attendant disciple while furrowing his brows.

“You can just tell them that Ye Chen wants to go out and attain some experience, and that he wants to leave the Windy Nation.”

“Leave the Windy Nation?” The eyes of all eight attendant disciples suddenly bulged in shock. They had heard about Ye Chen’s achievements back in the Scorching Ancient Desert long ago, and if no accidents happens, Ye Chen will surely become the leader of the Sky Cloud Martial School one day. As for Luo Hanshan, although he was the current leader’s son, the leader would never let him take up the responsibility since he was not powerful enough.

“Hang on, let me inform the leader and all inner elders.”

No matter how dumb these attendant disciples could be, they had already realised that this was indeed a huge issue, therefore, they moved quickly.

In a very short time, all thirty-six inner elders appeared in front of the palace

together, and each one had a serious face; this scene made some of the other disciples who happened to see this, think that some other institution was going to start a war against the Sky Cloud Martial School, and they all glanced at each other in panic.

“Ye Chen, come inside with us.”

The Head Elder nodded to the attendant disciples who had been guarding the palace, then guided Ye Chen in.

The inner space of this palace was incredibly broad, even broader than the Cloud Riding Palace. Thirty-six chairs were set up on both sides of this broad hall, and without a doubt, these chairs belonged to the thirty-six inner elders.

“Ye Chen, I heard that you want to go out and strengthen yourself.”

Unable to wait for the leader to show up, the Head Elder asked.

Ye Chen nodded, “Yes, Head Elder.”

“Eh, I knew this day would come.” The Head Elder let out a long sigh. Ever since he met Ye Chen for the very first time, he knew that Ye Chen would never spend his whole life here in the school. Ye Chen’s ambitions were huge, so huge that he could not even imagine how great Ye Chen’s ambition actually was. However, he never thought that Ye Chen would make the decision so quickly.

Normally, a trip of self-strengthening could either be one of a large-scale or small-scale, for small-scale trips, disciples would usually travel around the Windy Nation or the few surrounding nations, but would not go anywhere too far; as for large-scale trips, the South Zhuo Region, even the True Spirit Continent could all be reached. During the past few hundred years, many of the Sky Cloud Martial School’s disciples had decided to go out and toughen themselves, but most of them never came back. No one knew whether they were killed out there, or they just simply didn’t want to come back.

Judging from Ye Chen’s look, the Head Elder realised that he was planning on a large-scale self-toughening trip, and he would never come back without a true achievement that satisfied himself. In other words, Ye Chen had already decided to give up on the leader’s position of the Sky Cloud Martial School.

The Fourth Elder was never a patient person, and he said hurriedly, “Ye Chen,

nothing will go wrong even if you stay here, you would even become an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist in the future! Isn't our Top Elder an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist? You can achieve that as well, without a doubt!"

Ye Chen shook his head and said, "Head Elder, and Fourth Elder, please, don't worry at all. I will directly go to the Hidden Dragon Rank next season, and we can meet over there."

"Let's just wait for the leader first." Unlike the Fourth Elder, the Head Elder deeply understood that there was no way that they could talk Ye Chen out of it. Otherwise, Ye Chen would never have been able to attain the sword intent at all; because every single person who was able to attain the sword intent had an incomparably firm determination. Their decisions, once made, could never be changed by anyone in the world.

All thirty-six elders sat back at their own seats, while Ye Chen stood in the middle of the hall.

Soon after, Luo Xinglie, the leader of the Sky Cloud Martial School walked into the hall with big steps. When he glanced at Ye Chen, he had a complicated look on his face; he then directly walked to his seat and sat down.

"Ye Chen, a self-strengthening trip is definitely a good thing for you. I'm just wondering, where are you planning to go?"

Ye Chen cupped his hands, slightly bowed, then responded politely, "Both the South Zhuo Region and the True Spirit Continent are all covered in my plan; I will make further detailed decisions later, depending on my situation."

Hearing him, Luo Xinglie and the other elders gasped in surprise. In their eyes, the South Zhuo Region was already very vast and dangerous, but Ye Chan was planning to go to the True Spirit Continent as well, even though he did not have a solid plan

With a wave of his hand, Luo Xinglie signaled that Ye Chen did not need to be courteous at all, then said, "Ye Chen, you're one of the most talented martial artists of our Sky Cloud Martial School; ever since our school was founded, none of our disciples has gone beyond your level, yet. Do you have any idea that, when I step into the Astral Reaching Realm, you will become the leader of our Sky Cloud Martial School, instead of my son, Luo Hanshan?"

‘Seriously?’ Ye Chen thought that this martial world was exactly the same as what those books said — the position of leader would fall mainly to the leader’s offsprings, and people from outside of the leader’s family would hardly ever gain the leader’s position. Even if some of them managed to do it, it was extremely rare.

However, he was not interested in such powers at all. Neither becoming the leader of the Ye Family nor the Sky Cloud Martial School was his goal. His true goal was to travel around this strange and exciting world, and grow into a top-level powerful martial artist step by step; none of the other things mattered to him.

“Leader, I still want to leave for a self-strengthening trip. The Sky Cloud Martial School will do perfectly fine with sister Xu Jing, but of course, if our school ever encounters any severe trouble, I, Ye Chen, will definitely come back immediately, no matter where I am at that time.”

The other inner elders began whispering to each other. Some of them held a different opinion, and said, “Ye Chen, the world out there is indeed interesting and exciting, but you have to know that countless talented martial artists have fallen during their journeys. Are you aware of that? The last thing I want is to watch you fall.”

“Elder Gao is right, Ye Chen, you must reconsider it!”

Hearing this, Luo Xinglie stared at Ye Chen with an unwavering gaze, hoping that Ye Chen would give up on his plan. As for a small-scale trip, it was of little cause for concern.



## ***Chapter 167 - Take Off***

Special thanks to Malik. J for sponsoring the chapter. We'll do 2/day this coming week as compensation for the delays. Have fun reading!

....

"I have already made my decision and I'm not going to change it."

Ye Chen said as he slowly shook his head. The Head Elder had thought about making him stay in the Sky Cloud Martial School for a little bit longer, at least until the end of the next season Hidden Dragon Rank, however, he still couldn't find an excuse for him to stay. Currently, without any question, he was the most talented young martial artist among the entire Windy Nation; without a target to chase, he felt that it would be a complete waste of time if he stayed here, and that would reduce the possibility for him to become a true top-level martial artist. The path of a martial artist had always been a path against nature, to achieve the top-grade as a martial artist meant that person had to grasp every single second that he had. Countless powerful martial artists had failed to make the last step to the top-level even in the last moment before they died; it was all because when they were young, they thought they still had plenty of time, yet, when they finally reached a certain level, they realised that time was never enough.

The Head Elder gave a bitter laugh and said to Luo Xinglie, "Leader, just let him go! All truly powerful martial artists are meant to be alone."

"Head Elder!" Yelled the Fourth Elder. He had always believed that Ye Chen would become a firm shield of the Sky Cloud Martial School, and could definitely help the school to rise again. Now that Ye Chen was leaving, and could possibly be killed out there, the Fourth Elder was driven crazy.

The Head Elder said, "I may try harder to persuade him to stay if he doesn't have such a large goal, but do you think that becoming an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist is all he had been pursuing? No, his target is the entire True Spirit Continent, even the whole world; staying in this small Windy Nation would only stop him from achieving his goal. A journey of a truly powerful martial artist is exactly a journey of life and death; anyone who is afraid of death couldn't

possibly become a real martial artist.”

Hearing the Head Elder’s words, everyone else remained silent. He was right, anyone who was afraid of death couldn’t possibly become a real martial artist, and every single truly powerful martial artist had reached their grade by treading on blood and corpses. Some of those elders couldn’t understand Ye Chen and refused to agree with him, but none of them could persuade him to stay.

After a long while, Luo Xinglie said, “Good, since you have your goal, our Sky Cloud Martial School shouldn’t become your limitation. Just do your best to temper yourself out there, and after you achieved your goal, don’t forget to visit us back here, just let us know that you’re still alive. Except for this, you shall worry nothing else.”

Ye Chen took a long exhale, bowed deeply and cupped his hand, saying, “Thank you, dear Leader! And thank you, dear elders!”

The Head Elder grinned and said, “Ye Chen, the self-tempering trip is your very own business, we surely won’t stop you from doing that. Besides, with your talent, you have to go out there and build your own true achievements. Who can tell for sure that you won’t become a real powerful martial artist one day? If you do, our Sky Cloud Martial School will be counting on you till then.”

“Indeed! Since you have already made up your mind, I’ll support you as well!”

“Do be careful out there, remember that you only have one life!”

“Always stay cautious, don’t act rashly and recklessly, to make sure that you won’t make any unnecessary mistake.”

Seeing Ye Chen showing no signs of changing his decision, the other elders realised there was nothing more to say. They could only wish that Ye Chen could stay safe out there. As for his cultivation, they didn’t need to worry about that at all; as long as Ye Chen stayed alive, he could definitely step into the Astral Reaching Realm.

Leaving the palace, Ye Chen saw Luo Hanshan standing in front of the gate.

“I am so jealous of you! You’re going out for a self-tempering trip already! Freely and excitedly!” Said Luo Hanshan. As the son of the current leader, none of the news that happened in the school could hide from him. He rushed over

once he heard that Ye Chen was leaving, standing outside of the palace, expecting Ye Chen to come out.

Ye Chen grinned and said, “Actually, you can take a trip as well.”

Lou Hanshan smiled bitterly and responded, “I surely will, but I can only do a small-scale self-tempering trip, travel around the few surrounding nations; if the range goes wider, I’m afraid that I wouldn’t be able to handle it. Unlike you, none of the younger generation martial artists in our nation could surpass you at present, I still have many equal opponents here.”

Ye Chen remained silent. Exactly, he had never thought about leaving the Windy Nation before he became the most powerful one among all younger generation martial artists in this nation, but after he came out of the Heaven Dream Ancient Region, this plan suddenly popped into his head, and quickly occupied his entire mind; as if a voice had been continuously urging him, ‘It’s time to go, it’s time to go...’

Walking side by side, both of them left the palace.

“Now your name is at the very top of the ranking jade wall, before you come back from your trip, no one can ever replace you.” Said Luo Hanshan while pointing his finger at the jade wall in the plaza.

Ye Chen responded, “Xu Jing is also great.”

“Do you have any idea about that?” continued Luo Hanshan, “Although it’s only been a month since you came back from the ancient region, you have already become a legend of our Windy Nation. Almost every single one is talking about your deeds back in the ancient region and the desert. To be honest, you’re the first one who has managed to cause such a shocking effect in our nation, after a hundred years. All younger generation martial artists have already been seeing you as a legend.”

“Seeing me as a legend?”

“Before you, the best news ever was that Zhuang Fei managed to break into the Hidden Dragon Rank and was ranked 86th, however, you have defeated many Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists from all nine nations, and injured the Multiple Mountain’s outer Head Elder with a single move, what would you

call such an amazing achievement other than ‘legend’?”

While they were talking, Zhu Mei and Xu Jing walked over.

Zhu Mei looked at Ye Chen with a gentle smile, asked, “Are you leaving?”

“I’ll head back to the Ye Family first, then leave in the next morning.”

“Good, the next season Hidden Dragon Rank is going to start in a year and a half, only Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists are allowed to take part in that rank. I’ll meet you in the year after next.”

Ye Chen nodded, then turned his eyes to Xu Jing.

Xu Jing said, “Don’t get yourself killed out there.”

Ye Chen let out a bitter laugh. ‘Can’t she at least say something nice?’ Thought Ye Chen. However, what she had just said exactly fitted Xu Jing’s personality.

Saying goodbye to the other three disciples, Ye Chen went back to his room and roughly packed his bag, then went down the mountain immediately, heading to the Ye Family in Luo City, ten thousand miles away from the Sky Cloud Martial School.

At the highest speed of a Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, he or she could run over two thousand miles far in two hours, and ten-thousand miles in ten hours.

Without exerting all his energy, Ye Chen arrived at the Ye Family in about fourteen hours.

.....

Same as those inner elders of the Sky Cloud Martial School, at first, neither did Shen Yuqing nor Ye Tianhao agree with Ye Chen on his decision of leaving the Windy Nation. In their eyes, the world out there was way too huge and dangerous. Even though Ye Chen could fight evenly against enemies who were in slightly higher grades than him, an average Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist could only barely defend themselves.

Eventually, both of them were defeated by Ye Chen’s determination.

Nevertheless, Ye Chen’s trip back home was just on time. His mother, Shen

Yuqing, had gotten pregnant once again, and possibly have twins of opposite sex. Without a doubt, this was such a great news.

Before, Ye Tianhao had indeed thought about having another child, but for unknown reasons, that didn't happen. This time, the big surprise came so suddenly.

Regarding this, Ye Chen fell into deep thought. His mother got pregnant again right when he decided to leave, was this only a coincidence? Did this mean that he would leave for a very long time? Five years, ten years, or even longer? Ye Chen then shook his head. He was deeply aware of that, many things were destined and could not be changed; too many unpredictable situations could happen in his journey, and he could not tell for sure how long that journey would be.

In the next morning, outside the northern gate of the Luo City.

“Chen, send us letters when you have time.”

From a great distance, Shen Yuqing waved her hands at Ye Chen with a pair of misty eyes.

Ye Tianhao silently looked at Ye Chen's back, his sight was also hazy; he couldn't help but murmur to himself, “A young eagle has already spread its wings and flew up into the sky. My son is the highest achievement of my entire life.”

At this moment, streaks of sunlight beamed down, elongating Ye Chen's shadow.

Slightly pressing his straw hat down, Ye Chen didn't look back. Soon later, Ye Chen's silhouette disappeared in Ye Tianhao and Shen Yuqing's sights.

Not everyone knew about Ye Chen's departure except for his parents, the patriarch and the elders of the Sky Cloud Martial School, Luo Hanshan, Zhu Mei and Xu Jing, none of the others knew.

Those people thought that Ye Chen was still working hard on cultivating himself at the Sky Cloud Martial School. They might notice something only after a long period of time.

## **Chapter 168 - Track**

A crescent moon was illuminated the night sky, while a gale swept across the grassland.

The nights in the Great Devil Grassland had always been cold and desolate that you could hardly see any living traces of human beings within thousands, or even tens of thousands of miles in radius; the only thing you could find in this area was countless demonic beasts, and the only kind of sound that could be heard were fierce and resonant beast roars.

Ye Chen's first destination was the Thousand Thread Nation, located in the northeastern direction of the Windy Nation. He had to travel across the Great Devil Grassland in order to reach his destination. He could've chosen to take a detour, but that would cost a lot more time.

Not far away, a house-sized boulder had blocked the gale, and behind the boulder, a blazing bonfire could be seen dancing happily, bringing a miniscule amount of security in this frigid and lonely night.

Wiping the oil from the corners of his mouth, Ye Chen leaned against the boulder and murmured, "Boars living in this grassland taste quite amazing, I could even eat all those grilled meat without salt."

Boars of the Great Devil Grassland were only bottom grade demonic beasts, and were at the lowest level of the food chain in this part of the grassland, that most of the other demonic species fed on these boars. However, these boars' reproductive ability was ridiculously astounding. One female grassland boar could give birth to tens of offsprings every year, and they could keep reproducing for many years. Ever since the ancient times, the grassland boars had been the most thriving species of the Great Devil Grassland, until the present time; plants that grew in this grassland couldn't fill their stomachs anymore, and they would even dug the roots of those plants out and consume them.

After grabbing a stick and poking the bonfire a few times to rekindle the flames, Ye Chen then sat up straight with his legs crossed and started his daily cultivation.

The first and second levels of the Great Mystery Art were essential and

fundamental, only a solid foundation had allowed Ye Chen to break through the third level steadily. Beyond the third level. Ye Chen's main purpose was to condense and purify his Zhen Qi as much as possible; on the third level, the quality of his increased Zhen Qi was already better than his original Zhen Qi that he had gained while practising a top-ranked Mortal Realm art. The quality of his Zhen Qi would improve further on the fourth level, and on the fifth level, the quality of his Zhen Qi would surpass the Pure Jun Zhen Qi, and be gradually turned into a pale blue colour.

As his Zhen Qi had completed multiple, complete revolutions inside his body, only a small amount of Pure Jun Zhen Qi was left. Instead, the Great Mystery Zhen Qi had occupied ninety percent of the Zhen Qi spiral inside his dantian and had gradually stabilized.

‘When the rest of Pure Jun Zhen Qi converts into Great Mystery Zhen Qi, I will be able to break through the sixth level, by then, both quality and quantity of my Zhen Qi will go far beyond my original Pure Jun Zhen Qi, and that would mean a solid improvement in my overall power.’

This thought flashed in his mind, and at the same time, Ye Chen raised the flowing speed of his Zhen Qi.

A great gale approached with an ear-piercing swooshing noise, pressing all grass to the ground, disabling them from standing back up.

The sound of faint, ghost-like footsteps disappeared as the gale came, followed by which, a pair of blood-red, glowing light spots had been slowly approaching Ye Chen, bit by bit.

Under the dim moonlight, you could see that the owner of that pair of blood-red glowing pupils was a cattle-sized, cyan wolf. Its fluffy fur looked like a blazing, cyan flame dancing in the air, and its pair of frosty eyes looked absolutely emotionless; the pair of glowing dark red and erect pupils had been unmovingly gazing at the bonfire behind the gigantic boulder.

A fourth level demonic beast, Cyan Flame Wolf!

A hundred meters!

Sixty meters!

Thirty meters!

By now, the wolf had already seen Ye Chen's face clearly. Seeing that Ye Chen had his eyes closed and seemed to be in a deep sleep, hints of cruelty flashed across its eyes.

Swoosh!

The wolf slightly lowered its body, then suddenly leapt into the air and darted out.

At the very next moment, its claw was only less than three feet away from Ye Chen's face, and was so close to tearing Ye Chen apart, tasting his tender flesh and fresh, warm blood.

Without opening his eyes, Ye Chen clenched his left fist and thrust his arm out at a lightning speed; without any extra movement, his fist smashed against the wolf's head, sending it flying backwards for over a hundred meters. The wolf's body whirled over ten times in the air.

Boom!

The wolf crashed on the ground heavily. Its head was smashed by Ye Chen, its brain matter mixed with fresh blood had been squeezed out, flowing everywhere on the ground; sooner or later, the wolf's heart stopped beating.

Under the dim and hazy moonlight, the demonic beasts which had been hiding in the darkness and staring at Ye Chen with pairs of greedy eyes, couldn't help but moan out while turning around and fleeing instantly. In their eyes, this human was terrifying, that the Cyan Flame Wolf which was one of the most powerful kind of these beasts, couldn't even survive a punch launched by him, and was immediately killed in such a horrible state.

.....

The Gale City was the only city located at the Great Devil Grassland, it was as vast as Happy City, which was known to be the biggest city in the Northwest. The Gale City was over fifty miles in square meters, and over fifteen million people had been living here. Thirty percent of those people were mainly composed of travellers, selling all demonic-related materials as livelihood; they saw Gale City as one of their strongholds.



“Damn, we’ve suffered a great loss this time. Not only did we fail on hunting the Half Demonic Horse, but also, five of our team members were killed by the fourth level beast, Cyan Flame Wolf.”

“Who could’ve known that the Half Demonic Beast would head into the wolf’s territory? We’re already lucky for coming back alive, eh, poor Song Tao, this is just his first hunt.”

“They’re dead already, what we can at least do is to send their families some silver, especially Song Tao’s newly-widowed wife, we should send her double the shares.”

“Of course.”

‘People always say that martial artists can easily earn huge amounts of money in Gale City, but those people never know that they could get killed so quickly here.’ Thought Ye Chen, as he heard these martial artists sigh.

From a great distance, Ye Chen saw the magnificent Gale City. Slightly pressing his straw hat down, Ye Chen raised his walking speed towards the city.

In a short while, Ye Chen walked up to the city gate.

Warriors who had been guarding the city gate were all strong and sturdy, their temples bulged out and their gazes were piercing and fierce, that would make ordinary people shiver in fear. Obviously, most of them were tenth level martial artists in the Mortal Realm, and the few, who seemed to be leaders, were early Condensing Reality Realm martial artists.

Not only that, Ye Chen had clearly sensed the power of Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists from inside the fort built upon the city wall.

‘Such a strong defence, no wonder this Gale City can stand firm in this fierce grassland for thousands of years and had never suffered a single attack from demonic beasts.’ Silently, Ye Chen was a bit surprised.

A few warrior leaders had been patrolling in front of the city gate while growling, “Five silver for one person, don’t even think about sneaking in, or you’re gonna have to pay ten times more and stay in the jail for ten days, do not do anything you may regret yourself, since there’s no cure for regret in this world.”

“Five silver? So expensive.” Ye Chen remembered that the Windy City only required fifty bronze coins for entry, it was ridiculous that this Gale City asked for five silvers.

However, after he saw that people who came to the Gale City were all martial artists, Ye Chen loosened his raised brows. A martial artist could make fifty silvers by hunting a bottom level demonic beast, and three to four hundred silvers by killing a second level demonic beast; if this martial artist could hunt a third level demonic beast, one to two thousand silvers would slip into his or her pocket. Compared to their incomes, five silver was nothing.

Handing five silvers to the guard, Ye Chen walked into the Gale City.

“Boss, is it him?”

A team leader of those guards looked at Ye Chen’s back while leaning his face near the guard commander’s ear, and asked.

The guard commander nodded and said, “Although he’s wearing a straw hat, his body shape is exactly the same as the picture, it is him, definitely.”

“Hehe, that man said that we can get a hundred thousand gold and a hundred pieces of low-ranked magic stones after we finish him. Ha, with this sweet price, our hard work will be worth.”

“For the hundred low-ranked magic stones, you can have thirty percent while I’ll have the rest, are you ok with that?”

“How would I dare to not be okay with that, my dear boss? Without you, I could never get such a sweet job.”

“Good then, just go send a few street boys to keep an eye on him, don’t let him out of your sights. I’ll inform that man right now, and get our gold and stones by the way.”

“Yes, Sir!”

.....

Walking on the street, Ye Chen raised his head and looked around. Generally, Gale City was not as luxurious and exquisite as Happy City. Most buildings here had simple but solid structures, that looked nice and functional. However, not

every building was like this. Further away were multiple establishments composed of hotels, all of those hotels had four to six floors and looked very stylish, some of those buildings were even inlaid with precious gemstones.

“Ah, I’m so sick of grilled meat since I have only been eating that for these past few days. It’s nice to rest a little bit, and maybe take a nice bath.” Ye Chen walked into the most luxurious hotel with a relaxed demeanor.

“My dear guest, do you have any friend who is coming with you?” A front desk waiter bowed and asked politely.

Ye Chen threw a whole piece of silver, that’s worth around ten silver, to the waiter and spoke blandly, “I came alone. Just give me the best room and prepare some hot water.”

“No problem! Just follow me, please.”

Shoving the silver into his pocket, the waiter guided Ye Chen upstairs with a big grin on his face.

This was a commodious suite, containing a tastefully decorated living room and a cozy bedroom, as well as a well-equipped bathroom.

In the middle of the bathroom was a small pool filled with steaming warm water. Streams of steam slowly rose into the air, and soon covered the entire room with mist.

Ye Chen took off his clothes and jumped into the pool, he couldn’t help but let out a moan filled with comfort.

Leaning against the backrest at the edge of the pool, Ye Chen curved his lips upwards and murmured, “It feels marvellous to be rich. Back in that world, I was indeed a student from a famous university, but I was also only a poor orphan and had to work bloody hard in all summer and winter vacations, but still, the money I earned couldn’t even afford my daily life. I was so afraid of all kinds of money issues back there. I dared not to even think about having a girlfriend. But in here, I can live happily for like a thousand years with only the gold in my backpack, if I sell some valuable stuff, I’ll probably have more money than the total amount possessed by the Windy Nation’s ten greedy officials.”

Before he travelled across the time and space and came to this world, Ye Chen

was so jealous of those martial artists that he had read about in martial novels. Those legendary martial artists drank booze with kegs and each could even swallow an entire boar leg; they never worried about financial situations and could spend money as normally as pouring water. Even if they run out of money, they could just go out and take a job with their martial power, which would bring them wealth that ordinary people could never even imagine. With this money, they could keep living a free and exciting life, fully concentrating on martial arts that they loved.

Now, Ye Chen's old dream had come true. His life was now even more unfettered and easier than those so-called martial artists that he had read about in his other life. He was now more powerful than ordinary martial artists that he could easily and conveniently kill a fifth or sixth level demonic beast, and earn thousands, even tens of thousands gold. Even if he didn't want to waste any time on hunting beasts, it would be totally fine; those gold carried by him could support his life for a very, very long time, and he hadn't even counted those magic stones yet.

Thinking about these, Ye Chen slowly closed his eyes and fell into a ninety percent deep sleep, as for the ten percent left, he stayed perfectly awake that if anyone walked into his room, he would know in an instant.

Inside a room of another hotel.

A middle-aged man who had a huge scar on his face had been leisurely sitting in a cozy leather chair and sipping wine. That was Zhu Lieyang, the Purple Sun Martial School's elder, of the information department.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Someone knocked at the door.

"Come in." Responded Zhu Lieyang in a cold tone.

The door was pushed open, and the guard commander who walked in with his body bowing deeply said, "The man you're looking for showed up, he is now staying in Jin Hua Hotel. Now that you have your man, so... what about our gold and stones..."

"You'll surely have your gold and stones, just keep track for now."

“Eh, you have clearly said that you would pay us once your man showed up, haven’t you?”

Zhu Lieyang raised his head and stared at the guard commander with a blade-sharp gaze, saying, “What? You think I would break my own promise?! A hundred thousand gold and a hundred low-ranked stones are nothing to me, but if you let that boy get away, you will get nothing, and you’ll die!”

“Okay, okay!”

The guard commander was a peak-level Condensing Reality Realm martial artist, but under Zhu Lieyang’s gaze, cold sweat trickled down his forehead in streams while his legs began shivering ceaselessly.

“Good, off you go.”

After the guard commander left, Zhu Lieyang showed a malicious smile and murmured, “Ye Chen, you can never know that there’s a spy among your Sky Cloud Martial School’s elders, can you? We got the information once you left. This time, you’re not gonna survive.”

## ***Chapter 169 - Location Revealed***

Sleeping until evening, Ye Chen only just woke up. His smooth and solid skin was not wrinkled even after soaking in the water for a long time, instead, it now looked even greater than before.

Putting on a clean shirt, Ye Chen walked out of the room and went downstairs.

“Dear guest, let me show you to a private dining room.”

There were a number of waiters on shift at this moment, and the one who was currently speaking to Ye Chen, was not the one who showed him the room earlier. However, all the waiters were smart enough to realise that a guest who was willing to pay for the best room, would definitely be able to afford a private dining room as well. After all, the best room from Jin Hua Hotel costs fifty gold per night, if converted to silver, it would be equivalent to five hundred silver.

“Thanks!” Ye Chen nodded and said, he was indeed starving.

This Jin Hua Hotel had five floors in total. The fourth and fifth floors were the guest rooms, and the second and third floors was where the private dining rooms were located. The first floor was a lobby, serving also as a restaurant.

In front of the door to the private dining room labeled number six; the waiter pushed open the door for Ye Chen, bowed, and said, “This is one of our best private dining room, please.”

Walking into the room, Ye Chan looked around and found that it was a very nice looking dining room, and could very well be counted as a luxury. The room had an enormous window on the east side that allowed guests to watch the streets. However, all these were nothing special to Ye Chen. He quickly turned around and said to the waiter, “Give me all your special dishes, and three bottles of the highest grade wine— the older the better.”

“Well chosen! Just a moment, dear guest.”

Closing the door, Ye Chen sat in a leather chair in front of the table.

Watching the street view for a time, Ye Chen became slightly bored, as such, he pulled out a sword sheath from his storage ring.

Clang!

Pulling the sword from its sheath, a frosty beam of light immediately flashed across the sword; after the light faded, a long veined pattern could be seen on the sword body, its wriggling form resembling a coiled dragon.

“Dragon Spring Sword, the best one amongst those produced by the Sky Cloud Martial School. This sword is indeed a higher grade than the Hidden Cloud Sword.”

Ye Chen held the sword hilt and slightly swung the sword down.

Puff!

Without using any Zhen Qi, the sharp edge split the air. The process was perfectly smooth with not a single resistance felt.

“This Dragon Spring Sword is one of the highest grade weapons that ordinary martial artists could ever produce. I wonder how a ranked great weapon is made, and how are magical powers injected into the weapon such that it allows the sword to greatly raise the power of its owner...” Pushing the sword back into the sheath, Ye Chen murmured.

Great Weapons were not something that could be produced by random institutions, not even rank 7 institutions could. In the Windy Nation, most great weapons came abroad, while the others were found in remaining sites of ancient institutions. The production of ranked great weapons were extremely difficult, even more so than breaking into the Astral Reaching Realm. At least for reaching the Astral Reaching Realm, there was a rough path that could be followed to reach it, but no one knew anything about how to produce ranked great weapons.

The Hidden Cloud Sword was destroyed, and Ye Chan had yet to find a suitable low-ranked great sword. Fortunately, the Dragon Spring Sword was not bad at all. Apart from the fact that it could not automatically activate the sword Qi, its hardness far exceeded the Hidden Cloud Sword's, and ought to fulfil Ye Chen's need for a period of time. Of course, he would still need to purchase a low-ranked great sword when he has the chance.

Knocking on the door sounded, and Ye Chen placed the sword back into his

storage ring.

Along with a creaking noise from the door, four waiters carrying multiple dishes walked in. The one walking in the front grinned to Ye Chen and said, “Dear guest, our Gale City is situated in the Great Devil Grassland, where all kinds of demonic beasts can be found in numbers. Hence, our most special dishes are all demonic beasts recipes, give it a try, you would definitely find that it is more tender than ordinary meat dishes.

“I’ve long heard about demonic beast dishes, tell me more about your dishes.”

“Sure. This dish is called Wing-spreading Phoenix, it is made from the wings of the third level beast, Scorching Temper Bird; it has been through eighteen processes. This one is called A Blooming Old Tree, and is made using the Gallbladder of a second level beast, Iron Gallbladder Snake...This is called Higher and Higher, and was made with Bamboo Snake meat, and this is A Snow Mountain, made from the third level beast...”

The waiter seemed to have done this multiple times, and as he narrated every single one of those dishes to Ye Chen, he did so smoothly without pausing.

Ye Chen tried one dish, and found that it was amazingly delicious. More surprisingly, the Yuan Qi contained in the beasts’ bodies had yet to completely disappear. To ordinary people, these dishes would definitely boost their body’s condition.

“Good, all of you can leave now.”

Ye Chen poured himself a glass of wine, then waved his hand and said to the few waiters.

As an old habit, Ye Chen would release his soul power while he was eating, and let his soul power cover a five hundred meters radius around him.

Hm?

Ye Chen furrowed his brows.

Inside the next private dining room.

“Boss, didn’t that man say that he would pay us once this guy shows up? Why are we still watching him?” Two men were sitting around the table, and the one



who had been speaking was the city gate guard leader. By now, he had already switched his armour out for a martial suit.

The guard commander, who was also wearing a martial suit, responded, “That man is even more powerful than the general, we can’t afford to provoke him. Besides, we have been doing this job for so long, why can’t we keep watch on him for another couple of days? What are you worrying about anyways? When the time comes, you’ll have such a great time with those gold and spirit stones stuffed in your pocket.”

“I’m not complaining about the extra work, I’m just concerned whether he would actually pay us or not...”

“I think he will. He seems to have a high status, and those few gold and spirit stones don’t mean anything to him.”

“I hope you’re right.”

The voices of these two men were extremely low, and they believed no one could possibly hear them; however, Ye Chen had grasped every single word that they said.

“It seems that I’m now someone’s target. Hm, the Multiple Mountain Martial School is too far away from here, it can’t be them. It should be the Purple Sun Martial School’s people then.” Back in the Heaven Dream Ancient Region, Ouyang Ming and Ouyang Lie had tried so hard to kill Ye Chen; Ye Chen was pretty sure that it was planned, at least partially by the high-level elders of the Purple Sun Martial School.

Ye Chen’s face remained unchanged, and he continued eating and drinking as if he heard nothing at all.

After dinner, Ye Chen went back to his room on the fourth floor.

Late at night.

Sitting on the bed with his legs crossed, Ye Chen slowly let out an extra long breath.

The Great Mystery Art, sixth level.

At this moment, the Pure Jun Zhen Qi contained within Ye Chen’s body had all

disappeared, the Great Mystery Qi, which was more powerful and purer, had taken its place.

The Zhen Qi spiral formed from the Great Mystery Zhen Qi was bigger than the spiral formed from Pure Jun Zhen Qi, and was a pale blue colour— extremely pure. It looked just like airwaves that were transformed from blue crystals; lively yet stable, pure yet powerful.

“My cultivation stayed at the same level, but my power has improved. Hm, I wonder what kind of boundary the seventh level will be...” Because he slept during the day, Ye Chen now didn’t feel sleepy at all, so he got off the bed.

“Enn..enn..en..enn.”

What embarrassed him slightly was that waves of moans came from next door from time to time. Although he was not experienced in human affairs, Ye Chen knew exactly what his temporary neighbours were doing.

“Well, I should just sleep earlier, since I’m setting out early tomorrow morning.”

Giving a bitter smile, Ye Chen forcibly calmed his boiling blood and surging Zhen Qi streams down, then went back to bed.

.....

“What? He arrived yesterday, but is leaving today?!”

In the private room of a certain restaurant, Zhu Lieyang asked in a deep voice while the few bulging blood vessels in his forehead, twitched.

The guard commander lowered his head and responded, “Yes, he paid for his room and left just a while ago, and is headed towards the east city gate.”

“Damn you! Don’t tell me I’m going to fail again!”

Zhu Lieyang now felt only a raging fire fill his chest that he could not let out. He pressed his palms to the sandalwood table in front of him, and silently, he burnt the table into nothing, not even leaving a fistful of ash behind. The guard commander was deeply shocked by this, and did not dare to even breathe; he couldn’t help but start shivering, afraid that he would be the next one to burn.

A while later, Zhu Lieyang choked his anger back into his chest, then taking a

small box out of his storage ring, he stood up and said, "In here is ten thousand taels of gold and ten pieces of low-ranked stones."

He prepared to leave after he finished his speech.

"L-Lord," the guard commander paused briefly, then squeezed out a fake grin and said, "Did, didn't you promise us a hundred thousand taels of gold and a hundred pieces of low-ranked stone?"

"One more word, and you'll die."

"No, these will do fine, just fine." As a guard commander, he had never felt so oppressed, but in front of this powerful man, he could only endure it; in his head, he gave a silent curse, 'Well, you don't seem to have the certainty of killing that guy, which is also good, I sincerely hope that he crushes you. You bloody bastard.'

Walking out of the hotel, Zhu Lieyang darted towards the east city gate.

'Ye Chen, this time I absolutely won't let you get away, not matter what. I'll tail you from here and wait for the few leaders of the assassin group to come, when that time comes, it'll be your death.'

A few months ago, Zhu Lieyang was injured by the terrifying demonic beast at the Silent Hill; it took him a whole three months to recover. By the time he was fully recovered, he received information that Ye Chen had wounded the Multiple Mountain Martial School's outer Head Elder, a medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist. This was a strike to Zhu Lieyang, as he was only a early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist and he was already no longer a match against Ye Chen. Otherwise, he would have already gone after Ye Chen himself a long time ago, not hire other people to watch him and wait for the assassin group's leaders.

Nevertheless, the assassin group's leaders were still half an hour away, but Ye Chen was already leaving the city.

Leaving the east city gate, Zhu Lieyang activated his Zhen Qi and accelerated at his highest speed. Soon, he saw the back of a young man; a straw hat on his head.

Ye Chen had been walking alone, not too fast nor too slow; his soul power had been completely released, and every single object within a thousand meters

radius was under his watch.

Hm, he's coming.

Without turning around, Ye Chen pictured the approaching person in his head according to what his soul power had grasped. It was a sturdy man with a scar on his face. Ye Chen recalled seeing this man at the inner disciple rank competition, and back then, this man was an invited guest and he sat with the other famous martial artists.

Retaining his speed, Ye Chan walked into a sparsely populated area.

'Something's wrong! Does he know that I'm following him?' Zhu Lieyang's eyelids began twitching. Before, he dared to approach Ye Chen directly only because they were inside the city which was filled with martial artists, including Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists. All those martial artists that were coming and going numbered many, and they perfectly protected him from standing out. But now, not a single person could be found in the surrounding vicinity for miles.

At this moment, Ye Chen turned around and looked at him with a faint smile.

Run!

This was the only thought that popped into Zhu Lieyang's mind immediately. He instantly boosted his Zhen Qi to his limit, then turned around and prepared to run.

"You can no longer run."

Another Ye Chen appeared right behind Zhu Lieyang, blocking his way. Zhu Lieyang didn't even know from when and where this second Ye Chen came from.

What the hell?!

Zhu Lieyang turned back around, and saw the first Ye Chen dissipating along with the wind. It was actually only a Zhen Qi silhouette.

"What do you want?" Zhu Lieyang forced himself to stay calm.

Rubbing the storage Ring with his thumb, Ye Chen said blandly, "If I guessed right, your identity as a martial traveller was only a pretense, you're an elder from the Purple Sun Martial School, correct?"

In institutions ranked below 7, all Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists had the chance to become outer elders; Claspings Yuan Realm disciples could choose to give up on becoming outer elders, and instead wait till they reached the appropriate grade, then, directly become inner elders and hold some real authority in the school.

“Don’t be ridiculous, I’m no one but an ordinary martial traveller.”

Ye Chen gave a frosty grin, and pulled out the Dragon Spring Sword.

## ***Chapter 170 - Heavenly Great Thunder Art***

“Don’t even try, today, you’re going to die.”

At exactly the same moment when he let out the word ‘die’, Ye Chen pulled his sword out of the sheath and swung it towards Zhu Lieyang, who was ten steps away from him.

Zhu Lieyang had been preparing for this since long ago; in an instant, he boosted up the fire power contained in his Zhen Qi, which then transformed into a gigantic flame ball, wrapping his entire body. The flame ball was scorching hot, to the point where even a sparkle falling from it burned a fist sized deep hole out of the grassland, raising a dense puff of smoke.

Protected by the flame ball, Zhu Lieyang gained some confidence and thought, ‘I’ve already reached the level nine, the highest level of this Blazing Sun Protective Art. Even if I can’t block his attack entirely, he can’t possibly break my defence so easily either. As for that Multiple Mountain Martial School’s outer Head Elder, he was probably wounded because of carelessness.’

Puff!

A pale blue stream of sword Qi swiftly hacked on the flame ball along with a terrifyingly great power; countless dazzling fire sparkles were released as it collided with the flame ball.

Before Zhu Lieyang realized what had happened, the protective Zhen Qi flame ball was shattered already, and his right arm flew out from his body.

“I’m an elder of the Purple Sun Martial School, don’t you dare kill me! You’ll definitely die as well if you kill me! Our people will chase you till the end of the world!” His face was even twisted because of the sudden and great pain. It was only at this moment when Zhu Lieyang finally realized that Ye Chen was way more powerful than him, and he could never ever fight evenly against Ye Chen. Zhu Lieyang immediately activated all of his Zhen Qi, even temporarily forgetting about his broken arm, in order to turn around and fled at his highest speed; in the meanwhile, he yelled at Ye Chen with a hoarse voice.

“Cut!”

Ye Chen still had an emotionless expression as he released an even stronger stream of sword Qi.

Followed by another puffing noise, Zhu Lieyang's body was split into two and blood splashed everywhere, dying a huge piece of grassland red.

"You're defensive power was actually not bad, but still not as good as Hong Qianjun's."

Shaking his head, Ye Chen raised his hand into the air and slightly crooked his finger. Along with his move, Zhu Lieyang's broken right arm flew towards him. The arm was crushed as it simultaneously dissipated in the air; only a storage ring that fell in Ye Chen's hand was left.

Ye Chen injected his Zhen Qi into the ring and easily crushed the last bit of Zhu Lieyang's remaining Zhen Qi; when Ye Chen opened the storage space inside the ring, he was immediately dumbstruck.

"This guy is pretty rich!" Ye Chen showed a smile.

Fifty big boxes and thirty small boxes were piled up inside the storage ring. Each big box contained a hundred thousand gold, while each small box contained ten thousand gold; apart from these boxes, a massive pile of low-ranked magic stones were also contained in the ring. Ye Chen roughly measured the pile of stone and discovered that there were at least twenty thousand pieces of low-ranked magic stones, equivalent to eight hundred thousand gold.

The other small stuff contained in the ring were not worth mentioning in Ye Chen's eyes.

Raising his head, Ye Chan looked back at the Gale City and murmured, "He can't be the only one sent by the Purple Sun Martial School to kill me, more powerful assassins might show up later, I should just leave here as soon as possible.

Activating the Shadow-Dividing Light Art, Ye Chen moved at his highest speed. In only a few blinks of an eye, he had already moved to miles away, and in another blink, Ye Chen had already disappeared without leaving a trace.

After quite a long while, three human silhouettes darted over. Their moving speed was amazingly high; long and dense purple airwaves were tailing each of

them all the way, seemingly magical and powerful.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three people landed heavily on the ground, and a few huge and deep cracks emerged on the grassland from under their feet. One of them was a middle-aged man, who had a gloomy face, another one was a malicious looking elderly man, and the last one was a sturdy man, whose face was covered in dense and thick moustache. Although the three of them looked completely different, the senses of powers released from their bodies were similarly dangerous and fierce.

The elderly man let out a series of creepy laughter and said, "Our speed is almost as fast as the speed of sound, that kid can never run."

"Let's just keep moving."

The sturdy man seemed quite serious, obviously, he was the leader of this small squad. Along with his voice, all three of them leapt up and darted out simultaneously, soon disappearing into the distance.

.....

This Great Devil Grassland was ten thousand miles in radius, and was the habitat of multiple kinds of demonic beasts, including many sixth level demonic beasts.

At this moment, a sixth level demonic beast, Black Comb Serpent suddenly showed up and blocked Ye Chen's way.

"This serpent can move even faster than me, and is even capable of flight with its beast Qi. Fortunately, it's only a sixth level beast, equivalent to a peak-level medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist that I can still defeat; otherwise, today, I would have to make some effort in order to leave."

Standing still, Ye Chen was silently observing this Black Comb Serpent. It was over forty meters long and lying on the ground with its body coiled, causing it to look like a small hill. Each scale on its body was as big as a human head, and was pure black and shiny. There was a black comb on its gigantic head, which looked creepy and terrifying.



The serpent let out a high-pitched scream. Different from other snakes and serpents, the sounds of Black Comb Serpent was nowhere near to the hissing sounds of normal snakes. Instead, it was shrill and sharp, which sounded like infants' scream, making people literally sick.

“Highly Condensed Qi!”

Before the serpent made any move, Ye Chen had already launched his first attack. The Dragon Spring Sword was taken out of the sheath as it released a huge stream of sword Qi.

The serpent was immediately infuriated; it swung its thick and muscular tail sideway and bumped against the sword Qi stream, causing a thick layer of grass and soil to be sliced off the ground by its tail.

Before the sword Qi stream could deliver any effect, it was shattered by the strength of the serpent's tail; it turned into countless small streams of sword Qi and darted toward all directions.

“It's even more powerful than the Multiple Mountain Martial School's Outer Head Elder!”

Ye Chen's expression turned serious. Swiftly, he flashed across the air and only a Zhen Qi silhouette was left on where he was standing.

Puff!

The serpent tail crushed the Zhen Qi silhouette once after it emerged; meanwhile, the real Ye Chen had already risen into the sky, stably trodding on the air as he swung his sword down, quick and clean.

“[Higher than Above]!”

A fierce sword Qi stream darted out while an earth-shaking thunder burst out.

A huge cut appeared on the serpent's body, and grey-red blood gushed out of it in thick streams. The serpent raised its head and let out waves of howl in pain; strong sound wave spread out immediately, shattering all surrounding grass; grass clippings were rolled up by the wind, swooshing around and hazing the entire area.

Above the cloud layer, a middle-aged man, who had a sallow face and was

wearing a blue loose robe, had been pouring wine into his own mouth from a calabash while looking at Ye Chen. He grinned and said, “Not bad, good kid, he has reached the highest level of the Shocking Cloud Art, Sword Qi Thunder, at such a young age, and he even possessed the sword Qi. No wonder that old bastard, Xian Yunzi, asked me to protect him and clear some lowly douches on the way.”

This man in a blue robe was Thunder Freer, an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist.

Wiping the wine drops hanging on the corners of his mouth, Thunder Freer shook his head and continued, “However, a Black Comb Serpent is not something that you can easily deal with, all equal level martial artists will definitely do whatever they can to avoid a frontal battle against such a serpent. The Black Comb Serpent is one of the domineering beasts of this Great Devil Grassland. It is even times more powerful than the Windy Vulture which could move at the speed of sound.”

Back on the ground.

The serpent, which was hurt by Ye Chen, instantly had its eyes turn blood-red as it spurted a black, fan-shaped stream of light out of its jaws, aiming straight at Ye Chen.

Wherever the black light swept across, a tens of meters wide deep pit appeared on the ground, which was filled with black, sticky and stinky liquid.

“Damn!”

Ye Chen hurriedly moved; he flashed across the air for a few times, leaving multiple Zhen Qi silhouettes in the air.

Along with a series of popping noise, those Zhen Qi silhouettes were crushed by the black light one after another.

Dodging the black light, Ye Chen landed back on the ground hundreds of meters away; he murmured, “It seems that I have to use the [Heart Refining].”

While murmuring to himself, his right foot took a step forwards as he gripped the sword hilt with both hands, In the next moment, he immediately launched the move.

Woosh!

The sword Qi condensed into a white beam of light and darted out at an incredibly high speed, hitting on the serpent's head.

The serpent didn't have any chance to dodge as the sword light directly hacked on its head and left a huge cut, even puncturing its skull. This old and powerful serpent, which had already gained a little bit intelligence, dared not to fight back anymore; instead, it suddenly boosted up the Beast Qi which was wrapping its entire body up and sent it darting out; within a single moment, the serpent had already ran three meters away,

Phew!

Let out a long breath of relief; Ye Chen was slightly startled. The serpent was only a sixth level beast, yet it was so fierce and powerful; if Ye Chen didn't have the [Heart Refining], a powerful ancient sword skill, he would be the one fleeing now, and he might not even survive.

Once the serpent ran, Ye Chen sensed something else.

Turning around, he clearly perceived three streams of incredibly powerful Zhen Qi, which had been moving towards him. These three streams of incredibly powerful Zhen Qi were even faster than the fleeing serpent, which meant, he had already lost his chance to flee.

"Haha, die!"

Miles away, three human silhouettes darted over. The middle-aged man, who had a gloomy face, raised his right hand and pressed on the air; followed by his move, an enormous, scorching hot Zhen Qi palm swooshed towards Ye Chen.

Facing this sudden and deadly attack, Ye Chen was startled again, however, he remained perfectly calm as he launched the [Heart Refining] once again.

A white beam of light pierced through the Zhen Qi palm and both of them exploded in the next moment.

"Hmm?"

The middle-aged man furrowed his brows. Although he had launched this move from quite a long distance, he used seventy to eighty percent of his

powers, which was more than enough to smash a medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist. However, this kid had actually managed to block his attack. No wonder people said that he was the most talented martial artist among all nine nations.

“We can’t let him live!” Said the sturdy man with a cold tone.

The other two nodded. Lately, the Purple Sun Martial School had lost too many talented disciples, to the point where they were now far less powerful than the Sky Cloud Martial School. If Ye Chen survived and grew into a real powerful martial artist, the Purple Sun Martial School would never be able to suppress the Sky Cloud Martial School again, even worse, the Sky Cloud Martial School could totally subdue them; the Purple Sun Martial School could never endure this.

Moving at an amazing speed, a couple of miles only took these three people a few blinks of an eye.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

All three of them landed on the grassland, staring at Ye Chen with a weird look, as if they were staring at a corpse.

“Are you Purple Sun Martial School’s people?” Ye Chen’s look remained unchanged.

The malicious-looking elderly man gave an evil grin as he said, “You’re pretty calm, aren’t you? Hm, you can indeed become a big deal. You’re right, we are leaders of the assassin group, our job is to hunt all enemies of our school down. You’ve become our target in such a young age, you should be so proud of that.”

“I’m not gonna die today,” said Ye Chen blandly.

“Hehe, you don’t think someone is gonna show up and rescue you, do you?” said the gloomy middle-aged man with a creepy smile. They were in no hurry to launch their attacks, all three of them were advanced Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists, therefore, no matter how talented Ye Chen was, he couldn’t possibly defeat them all at once.

“You probably don’t know this yet. Before I left, I had a secret conversation with our school leader and the Head Elder. They said that they would send a powerful martial artist to protect me until I left the Windy Nation. If that’s true, I

guess that the powerful martial artist is nearby at this moment, and he will probably show up soon.”

What Ye Chen said was true. He was deeply aware of that; although he was the most powerful one among all Windy Nation’s younger generation of martial artists, compared with those older generation martial artists, he still had a long way to go. Therefore, the school leader and Head Elder arranged a powerful martial artist to protect him until he left the Windy Nation; however, Ye Chen didn’t know who that person was.

“I would like to find out where your powerful protector is hiding, hehe, get out if you hear me!”

The middle-aged man with a gloomy face didn’t believe Ye Chen’s words, besides, this grassland was flat and broad. With a single glance, the surrounding area could easily be observed, and there completely nowhere to hide. If there was truly any another powerful martial artist around, they would know for sure.

Before his voice faded, a meter-thick lightning bolt suddenly swooshed down from the heaven, straightly striking on the middle-aged man.

As an advance Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, this man didn’t even have a chance to struggle, before he was entirely struck into a puff of ash. A huge and nearly a hundred meter deep hole appeared on the ground from where he was standing on.

Not only Ye Chen, even both the sturdy man and the elderly man gasped deeply in shock; at this moment, each and every strand of their hair stood on end.

## ***Chapter 171-The Might of Zhen Yuan***

The sturdy man raised his head and growled towards the sky, “Thunder Freer! Do you have any idea regarding the consequences of killing us, the leaders of the Purple Sun Martial School’s assassin group?!”

“Right now, you still have the chance to leave, I assume you don’t want to be hunted down by our Top Elder again, do you?” The malicious-looking elderly man was not as calm as the sturdy man. He clearly knew that the latter could easily end both of their lives in a moment. If the other party insisted on killing them, escaping would be futile. They could only hope that the other party would be afraid of their top elder, and give up on protecting Ye Chen.

Bang!

An even thicker lightning bolt struck down from the sky, splitting into two in the air. Each bolt struck both the sturdy man and the elderly man, and just like the middle-aged man who had a gloomy face, both of them were instantly burnt to ashes along with their protective Zhen Qi. Two huge, deep craters were produced on the ground, and flames that contained slivers of lightning bolts was blazing in all three holes; while streaks of lightning lingered in the air, letting out popping and crackling sound.

“Is this the power of an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist?” Ye Chen finally realised what had happened just now, and instantly knew it was an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist protecting him. However, what had still shocked him was that, three advanced Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists were completely burnt to ashes before they even had the chance to fight back. The gap between the two grades was astoundingly wide, such that he couldn’t even imagine how wide that gap actually was.

From above the skies, a lightning bolt tore apart the cloud layer and descended with a speed that far exceeded the speed of sound, and faintly, a human silhouette could be seen within the lightning bolt.

The lightning bolt dissipated in the next moment, and the person landed on the ground not too far away from Ye Chen, murmuring, “You might have survived if you didn’t mention that old Lie Huo bastard’s name, but mentioning

that damn name, I moreso won't let you live.”

Ye Chen gasped deeply, then bowed with his hands cupped, and said politely, “Thank you for saving my life, dear senior Thunder Freer!”

Turning around, Thunder Freer spoke with a grin, “That old bastard, Xian Yunzi, is an old friend of mine, so I still have to help him out with this small problem; besides, I’ve been annoyed by that old Lie Huo bastard for such a long time.”

“Old Lie Huo bastard? Is he the Top Elder of the Purple Sun Martial School?”

Ye Chen once heard from Luo Hanshan that all five top-ranked institutions of the Windy Nation was under the protection of their Top Elder, and only Astral Reaching Realm or higher grade martial artists could become a Top Elder of the institutions. This was the main reason as to why the Ghost Artist did not dare to directly attack the five top-ranked institutions. The Ghost Artist was also an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist himself, but he hadn’t fully recovered from his old injuries yet.

Thunder Freer nodded and said, “Yes, he is. That Lie Huo bastard don't have much of an upright moral character, yet, he is the strongest amongst the three of us. He has already reached the medium Astral Reaching Realm, while both Xian Yunzi and I are still in the early Astral Reaching Realm. Back then, he didn't dare to be so aggressive twenty years ago because your Top Elder, Wu Yunzi, was even more powerful than him. However, Wu Yunzi was too easily goaded, and died at the hands of the Nine Evil Cult’s besiegement. That Lie Huo bastard was definitely heavily involved in it, I suspect, at the time, he colluded with the remaining forces of the Nine Evil Cult.”

“Colluded with the remaining forces of the Nine Evil Cult? Wouldn’t this have enraged everyone back then?”

“He wasn’t the only one involved. At that time, the Nine Evil Cult was doomed, and none of their remaining forces could change their fate. Thus, many people began scheming; they used the remaining forces of the Nine Evil Cult to destroy their enemies and suppress the other institutions. The previous patriarch of your Sky Cloud Martial School, Wu Yunzi, had a very short temper, yet, he was genuinely an upright person. As he couldn’t bear watching any unfairness, he got

trapped and killed by others, as well as many other powerful Sky Cloud Martial School's martial artists; after that, your school degraded into rank 9 from rank 8. Fortunately, the old bastard, Xian Yunzi was full of cunning tricks, that under an extremely dangerous situation, he saved your school and set another trap, that killed one of the Lie Huo bastard's junior brothers and a few of the most powerful inner elders of the Purple Sun Martial School. As such, he barely weakened Purple Sun Martial School and made them equally powerful with you again."

Hearing this, Ye Chen nodded. Conflicts would always happen in anywhere that had people living in there, from tricks to schemes, from families to institutions, this kind of things were constantly happening in every corner of their world, on a single piece of land. These things probably would stop only until all human beings had lost their humanities and turned into dolls.

"That Lie Huo bastard might become so angry when he learns that I've killed these three, however, he can only do nothing to me. I'm all alone and free, not like him, who has an institution to protect."

Thunder Freer lazily said as he grabbed the calabash and drank a mouthful of wine.

This was the very first time Ye Chen met an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist face to face, he deeply understood that this was a precious chance, so he hurriedly asked, "Dear senior, is the gap between the Claspng Yuan Realm and the Astral Reaching Realm truly that tremendous? I saw you killing all three of them as easily as crushing a couple of ants."

"Look." Said Thunder Freer as he gulped his wine and raised his left hand.

Buzz!

A dazzling light burst out from his palm then condensed into a dark blue Zhen Yuan sphere. The Zhen Yuan was incredibly pure, even purer than crystal and a lot shinier than gemstones. If it could solidify, it would be equally valuable to an entire country back in Ye Chen's old world.

"Have you discovered anything?" Asked Thunder Freer.

Ye Chen pondered and said, "It's more than ten times purer than Zhen Qi, is it



extracted from Zhen Qi? Just like my Great Mystery Art, I will be able to extract a mouthful of Zhen Yuan until I reached the top level, and that will allow me to destroy any martial artists on the same level.”

Thunder Freer nodded and praised, “Hm, you’re a smart kid. Zhen Yuan is the essence of Zhen Qi. With your current total amount of Zhen Qi, you can barely extract a mouthful of Zhen Yuan. Even if you can, that would be thin and could only support you for a single move. However, Astral Reaching Realm martial artists’ bodies are filled with Zhen Yuan, therefore, if I couldn’t kill an advance Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist with a single move, I would be too ashamed to call myself a martial artist.”

“Ah, I understand. The difference between inner Qi and Zhen Qi is not that big, but the difference between Zhen Qi and Zhen Yuan is incredibly huge, after all, inner Qi and Zhen Qi are only different in forms, while Zhen Qi and Zhen Yuan are different in qualities, not even at the same level.” Murmured Ye Chen.

Thunder Freer continued, “However, there’re always exceptions. A few Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist had indeed managed to defeat Astral Reaching Realm martial artist, but it was not as easy as it sounds. Let’s take you as an example, if your sword intent can’t keep maturing, then you can never gain any special opportunity. You might as well be crushed by a single attack launched by me, even if you stepped into the advanced Claspings Yuan Realm, it’ll be the same nonetheless.”

Ye Chen remained silent. That was perfectly true. As the grade of a martial artist continuously grew higher, the difficulties of breaking through the higher grade would become even greater. With Ye Chen’s current power, he could only be counted as the most talented one within the Sky Cloud Martial School, but if he went to the South Zhuo Region or the True Spirit Continent, he would instantly become an ordinary martial artist who wasn’t even worth mentioning.

“Haha, I’m not trying to frustrate you, just making an example. With your talent, your sword intent would never stop maturing. If your sword intent could reach a great success, and obtain other opportunities, you might soon be able to survive an attack launched by an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist; however, if you wanted to fight one, that is more difficult than you thought. In recent centuries, only very few martial artists have managed to do that. The Mysterious

Queen is one of them. Back then, when she was only an advanced Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist, she had even killed quite a few Astral Reaching Realm martial artist on her own. That person is literally terrifying, and has been seen as a total legend among all supremely talented geniuses in the world even now.”

The Mysterious Queen, her again. Ye Chen had already heard her name for many times. She was the definite top one of all kinds of martial-related records; no one, not a single one could ever surpass her. She was the most domineering among all geniuses. She was the true queen among all martial artists for centuries, no one could even compare to her.

Ye Chen couldn’t even imagine just how talented the Mysterious Queen was when she was young, but he was sure that if she was of the same age as him, she could totally crush him. This could be simply seen in her history, that she had become a Condensing Reality Realm martial artist at eleven years old, stepped into Claspings Yuan Realm at fourteen years old, Astral Reaching Realm at eighteen years old, Sea of Souls Realm at twenty-five years old, and broke into the Life and Death Realm in her thirty-five, becoming the youngest Life and Death Realm martial artist for a whole thousand years. Only this record had made Ye Chen shiver and gave him goosebumps; he was now seventeen years old yet he still was in the early Claspings Yuan Realm, it was already hopeless for him to catch up to the queen, unless he could have multiple great opportunities that came one after another, even more than the queen herself had ever had.

Thinking of this, Ye Chen’s determination became even firmer than before. He had to push himself out of his comfort zone and temper himself, otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to become a Life and Death Realm martial artist within five hundred years, not to mention catching up to the Mysterious Queen.

Pausing for a short while, Thunder Freer then continued, “It’s good that you want to go out of the Windy Nation and travel around. Staying another day in the Windy Nation would reduce the possibility for you to become a truly powerful martial artist by a little bit; if you just stay here and do nothing for a few years, your hope would be lost. You have to know that time isn’t going to wait for you, you have to grasp every second, especially when you’re young; literally, I mean every second. I think you can understand me. Young people should fight as hard as they can, because when you’re older, your mindset would

change and your improvement would slow down, till then, you would hardly be able to maintain your peak body condition. Since the beginning of the world, every single truly powerful martial artist was raised in his or her development phase. If you can't reach the top while you're young, you probably won't be able to reach it in your entire life."

Ye Chen nodded and said, "I am deeply aware of that, dear senior. This is why I am so eager to temper myself, grasp every single opportunity that is meant to be mine, and even those which supposedly are not."

"Ah, opportunity, haha, opportunity! This is an essential thing! Only with great opportunities can you possibly become truly powerful. Ah, such a shame, I haven't gained too many opportunities back in my prime, perhaps I will just be stuck in this Astral Reaching Realm for the rest of my life." Sighing, Thunder Freer continued, "When you reach the medium or advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm, you have to find yourself a higher level art, the higher the better."

Ye Chen somewhat understood but not too clearly, therefore, he asked, "If practising low level martial arts could only inevitably improve a martial artist at a slow rate, I wonder what realm your Heavenly Thunder Art belongs to?"

"Mid-ranked Earth Realm. Not a single high-ranked Earth Realm martial art existed in this Windy Nation. That Mountain and Water Art possessed by the Emerald Martial Palace is only an incomplete art and can't be counted as a proper high-ranked Earth Realm martial art. As for the reason why I told you to find yourself a higher level art, that is because when you're about to break into the Astral Reaching Realm, a lower level art would make you waste too much time. While in mid-ranked Earth Realm, I spent a whole ten years to break through the Astral Reaching Realm from the Clasp of Yuan Realm, ten years! So much time was wasted. If I had a higher level art back then, I might've gone even further."

'It would take ten years to reach the Astral Reaching Realm from the Mid-ranked Earth Realm?!' Ye Chen was slightly shocked by this, but soon realised that it was absolutely reasonable. The leaders of all five top-ranked institutions of the Windy Nation had been stuck in the peak-level advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm for quite a few years already, yet none of them managed to achieve a breakthrough till now. Ye Chen assumed that the main cause for this was their

martial arts that were all at a relatively lower level, and their Zhen Yuan could only be extracted at an extremely slow speed.

## ***Chapter 172 - Five Poison Mountain Range***

Thunder Freer continued speaking as he raised his head and looked at the sky, “I have stepped into the peak-level advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm in my forty-six, and the Astral Reaching Realm in my fifty-six, but in the recent forty years, I have only managed to break through the peak-level early Astral Reaching Realm from the early Astral Reaching Realm. Normally, martial arts that suit Astral Reaching Realm martial artists should be in high-ranked, or even top-ranked Earth Realm, and martial arts that suit Sea of Souls Realm martial artists should be in Heaven Realm. If your martial arts couldn’t reach these basic levels by then, you would soon be surpassed by people who are as talented as you, and they would surpass you even further. Ye Chen, as a martial artist, you may give others anything but martial arts. A good martial art can save you lots of time. For example, if you have a high-ranked Earth Realm martial art, breaking through the Astral Reaching Realm from advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm would take you seven to eight years; if you have a top-ranked Earth Realm martial art, that would only take five to six years; and if you have a low-ranked Heaven Realm martial art, you could do that in just two to three years. A powerful martial art is the foundation of a truly powerful martial artist, giving away a martial art is akin to giving up on a great opportunity, so you must keep this in mind.”

“I understand. Thank you, dear senior.”

Before, Ye Chen did know about the importance of martial arts, but he didn’t understand it clearly. Hearing the Thunder Freer’s words, he realised that the difference between martial artists who had powerful martial arts and martial artists who didn’t, could be enormous. It was like how a step forward meant heading towards a vast land and a step backwards, towards a dead end.

“Good, I’ve already told you everything you needed to know. From now on, you’re on your own. No one can ever help you to become a truly powerful martial artist. Before you leave the Windy Nation, I’ll be watching you from up there but you should take care of all insignificant conflicts by yourself.” Thunder Freer spoke a lot only with Ye Chen because he liked Ye Chen as a genius, he usually wouldn’t mutter even a single word to other geniuses.

Followed by a piercing sizzling noise, waves of dazzling lightning bolts burst

from Thunder Freer's body and afterwards, he swiftly darted up into the air.

Exhaling deeply, Ye Chen murmured, "I'm still far from powerful enough!"

.....

Treading across the Great Devil Grassland, what had appeared in front of Ye Chen was a boundless river called Wild Goose Falling River, which was the natural boundary between the Windy Nation and the Thousand Thread Nation.

"It's said that even wild geese can't fly across this river, and will all fall into the river in mid-flight, I wonder if it's true.." Frowning, Ye Chen searched for information about this river in his mind.

As an early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, Ye Chen could now basically fly in the air, but only for a limited time; he had to find a foothold to stop before his Zhen Qi runs out. Only martial artists above advanced Claspng Yuan Realm were able to do long-time flight. Apart from this, early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could only fly up to around one thousand meters high, medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could reach two thousand meters high, and advanced Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could fly up to three thousand meters high; as for Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, they could even go up to tens of thousands of meters high.

With Ye Chen's current power, he could only reach about a thousand meter high, not even as high as wild geese could; that meant he probably couldn't fly across this river either.

"I'll just give it a try."

This area was totally desolate that no ferryboat was available, therefore, Ye Chen could only count on himself.

Swoosh! Ye Chen spread his wings and leapt into the air, darting out.

Flying for around ten miles, the airwaves around Ye Chen suddenly became disordered, forming into countless fierce turbulences, roaring across his body and consuming his Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen threw out a punch, shattering a turbulence and thought, 'No wonder no wild geese can ever fly across this river, the airwaves above this river are so

disordered and fierce, even ordinary flying demonic beasts will get exhausted up here by fighting against these turbulences and fall into the river eventually, not to mention ordinary birds like wild geese.'

Turbulences grew even greater around Ye Chen. Flying forwards by a small distance, Ye Chen even saw cyclones and waterspouts; many birds flying across this area were struck down into the water, no one knew if they could survive.

"Break!"

Ye Chen boosted his Zhen Qi and shattered a waterspout with a punch, the strong, shocking waves spreading out from his fist shook the entire area, calming down the turbulences around him.

"This won't work, I've spent too much Zhen Qi and my Zhen Qi is becoming muddy already. I have to go down." After launching another punch, Ye Chen sensed a rapidly increasing amount of muddy Qi from inside his body which was a sign of Zhen Qi disorders. If he kept staying in the air, his Zhen Qi would probably begin flowing in reverse and harm his meridians. After all, he wasn't an advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist yet, and couldn't fly for a long period of time; besides, he had been dispersing turbulences by using too much Zhen Qi.

Nimble descending down from the air, Ye Chen rubbed his storage ring with his right hand; following his move, a human-waist-thick tree trunk appeared in the air, falling down into the river.

Along with a loud crashing sound, the tree trunk floated on the water surface, and Ye Chen stably landed on it.

Sweeping across the surrounding area with his soul power, Ye Chen hadn't discovered any possible danger. He took a brief break, adjusted his breath, and then boosted his Zhen Qi once again, creating a Zhen Qi motor for the tree trunk.

Treading on the water surface, Ye Chen began to quickly move forward; a strong gust of wind streamed across his face.

If any cyclone or waterspout showed up along the way, Ye Chen would immediately punch it into oblivion, and if any aquatic demonic beast attempted

to attack him, he would stamp his foot against the tree trunk, release a pure and great wave of Great Mystery Zhen Qi, which would instantly spread out, shrouding the entire area that had a radius of ten meters and casting all attackers away; occasionally, one or two fifth-grade demonic beasts managed to approach him, but Ye Chen would directly chop them into pieces, the blood would always dye a huge area crimson.

“Fortunately I have this medicine that can instantly replenish consumed Zhen Qi, otherwise, crossing this river wouldn’t be so easy at all.” Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could move at an incredibly fast speed, and could fly for two to three thousand miles by the use of their light arts. However, none of them could achieve a long-time flight, because the total amount of Zhen Qi of a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist could only support him or her to fly for a few hours. If their Zhen Qi ran out, that would not only harm the martial artist’s body, but would also make them vulnerable when facing sudden and unexpected dangers. As for crossing the river by treading on a Zhen Qi propelled trunk, that would cost even more Zhen Qi than flying; because a light art that allowed a martial artist to fly in the air was a skillful kind of art and could save a part of Zhen Qi for the martial artist. However, propelling the tree trunk with Zhen Qi did not require any skill and was purely dependent on the consumption of Zhen Qi; additionally, the water resistance was much greater than the air resistance, and that meant a higher Zhen Qi consumption.

Luckily, Ye Chen had gained a calabash-full of magic medicine in the Heaven Dream Ancient Region that contained around one hundred pills. Normally, he would save that medicine, but at this moment, those pills had been doing an immense help to him.

Although the Wild Goose Falling River was an amazingly great river, it was not a vast ocean and still had banks to reach. Moving for seven to eight hundred miles, Ye Chen finally saw the river bank on the other side.

Looking at the deserted river bank and expanding mountain range, Ye Chen grinned bitterly and murmured to himself, “It turns out the route I chose is a bit isolated, that I haven’t seen a single person till now. Well, it’s okay though, I’m going to temper myself anyway. For that purpose, I have to adapt in all kinds of environment. I just need to get used to this lonely journey.”



Bang!

The tree trunk bumped against the river bank as Ye Chen leapt into the air at the same time.

Opening the map, Ye Chen moved his finger across a mountain range and the area around it, then said, "There are three mountain ranges in front of the Wild Goose Falling River, two smaller and one larger. If I'm right, this should be the larger mountain range named Five Poison Mountain Range which is as broad as the Silent Hills, around thousands of miles long. Demonic beasts living in this area are most highly poisonous, among them, five poisonous creatures are the most famous."

The five famous poisonous creatures were scorpions, spiders, centipedes and bufonids. Demonic beasts that evolved from any of these five kinds of creatures were incredibly poisonous, capable of killing any ordinary Condensing Reality Realm martial artist with a single touch; therefore, martial artists who planned to travel across this area would usually carry some high-grade antidotes to prevent poisoning.

Ye Chen raised his head and gazed at the sky as he folded the map. He thought that Thunder Freer might have already left. Now, he was literally on his own. No matter how dangerous this journey would be, he had to survive in order to become a truly powerful martial artist.

In the future, he might have to face mountains of corpses and oceans of blood. He would have to step on those if he didn't want to become a part of them. He could only reach the top step by step.

Ye Chen flew across the river bank and darted towards the mountain range.

.....

Swoosh!

A dazzling stream of sword light splitted a vampire bat into two. That bat was as large as a wild dog and had sharp and thick teeth in its mouth.

"This Five Poison Mountain Range is indeed worthy of its name, seventy percent of the beasts that I encountered along the way were poisonous." After unsheathing the Dragon Spring Sword, Ye Chen threw a miasma-proof pill into

his own mouth. Many areas of this Five Poison Mountain Range were filled with miasma that wouldn't cause any effect within a short span, but if exposed for a longer period of time, all kinds of harmful effects could be inflicted to a martial artist, and his or her power would be greatly reduced.

Ye Chen kept moving forwards into the mountain area.

In a small-scale valley.

A muddy pool was located in the middle of the valley, near a flat area.

At this moment, a group of people gathered in the flat area, in front of them was a humongous multicoloured bufonid, each malignant tumours on its back was as large as a basin. A dense, savage energy was continuously surging from the bufonid's body, nearly suffusing the entire valley..

"Young mistress, please leave now! We'll stall this thing!" Said a middle-aged man who seemed to be the leader of this group of people to a pretty girl behind him.

The girl's face was now deadly pale and yet, she determinedly shook her head and said, "How can I just escape without you?! I was the one who wanted to come to this Five Poison Mountain Range in the first place!"

Hearing her, a young man standing beside her, who had a simple and honest face, spoke anxiously, "Young mistress, this Five Coloured Bufonid is a fifth level demonic beast, even a single drop of its venom can kill you immediately. You can do no help by staying here, besides, our master is still waiting at home for the Buddhist Vanilla to save his life!"

"Zheng Xuan, you shall go as well, take the young mistress back!"

The middle-aged man harshly ordered the young man to leave with the girl.

"Dad!"

The young man bellowed with a sorrowful expression. The middle-aged man was his father, and the girl was his beloved young mistress, he couldn't bear to lose either of them.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, the Five Coloured Bufonid launched its first attack. Its tens of meters

long tongue thrust out from its mouth, immediately capturing one of the guards and swallowing him whole.

“Bastard!!”

The middle-aged man gripped his blade and launched a fierce slash.

Clang!

The blade Qi barely broke the bufonid’s defensive Qi and only made it shed a few drops of blood. The bufonid’s blood dripped on the ground, letting out a loud sizzling noise, along with a dense, pungent scent which instantly pervaded around. Two guards who stood closest to the bufonid directly fell to the ground as their mouth foamed right after inhaling the smell, and then died afterwards.

“Poisonous blood?” Seeing this scene, a human silhouette murmured to himself as he abruptly showed up at the entrance of the valley.

That was none other than Ye Chen. After travelling for several hours, he had already trodden towards the outskirts of the Five Poison Mountain Range’s middle area. Fortunately, he hadn’t encountered any high-level demonic beasts. After all, the truly powerful demonic beasts were all living in deep mountains and hardly came out.

Swish!

The Five Coloured Bufonid’s tongue was long and thin, could move swiftly that human eyes couldn’t possibly perceive its motion. This time, the fierce and slim tongue directly punctured two guards’ chests and darted towards the pretty girl.

“Get away from her!” The young man raised a long sword with difficulty, shielding the girl with his own body and intending to cut the long bufonid tongue.

Unfortunately, no matter how fast he moved, the bufonid’s tongue would always be faster than him. The long and powerful tongue nimbly coiled in the air and wrapped the young man’s arm, instantly dragging him over.

That middle-aged man was a Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist. Seeing that the bufonid grabbed his son, he rushed up and attempted to pull the young man back; however, right after he raised his blade, the bufonid suddenly exhaled a

puff of highly poisonous breath into his face.

Boom!

The middle-aged man's protective Qi got deformed by the poisonous airwave as he was sent flying backwards.

Right after striking the middle-aged man away, the bufonid directly rolled the young man up with its tongue, along with the two guards whose chests were punctured by its tongue earlier, immediately dragging them back into its gigantic mouth.

Puff!

A sharp gust of sword Qi abruptly flashed across the air. At the same time, the bufonid's tongue was chopped off.

## ***Chapter 173 - Old Lu***

The young man that narrowly escaped from death hurriedly stepped back. As for the two guards whose chests were punctured, and strung up by the broken bufonid's tongue; they were quite irrefutably dead.

"Zhengxuan! Are you alright?!"

Not far away, a middle-aged man coughing out a mouthful of blood rushed over and asked.

"He saved me." The young man said as he shook his head, he then turned his head toward the entrance of the valley.

The pretty girl's eyes instantly shined. The boy standing there appeared to be only sixteen or seventeen years old, and even seemed to carry an air of youthful inexperience. However, that sword attack launched by him earlier was indeed terrifyingly powerful. It had chopped the bufonid's tongue off so easily, as if he was just cutting a piece of meat.

"Thank you, young martial artist, for saving Zhengxuan's life." The middle-aged was shocked by Ye Chen's powerfulness as well, yet he remained perfectly calm. He was clearly aware that this world was vast and magical, and some amazing geniuses at a very young age had already managed to far surpass the older generation martial artists. One such individual was Wei Dongshe, the top-ranked disciple of the Green Bamboo Martial School, a rank 7 institution of the Thousand Thread Nation.

Ye Chen's clothes fluttered in the wind, making a loud rustling noise as it did. Nimble moving across the valley, he appeared suddenly in front of the group of people; responding with a deep voice, "It was as easy as lifting of a finger, don't mention it."

The pretty girl was still as grateful as before and said, "If you hadn't help us, we would have all died here - Watch out!!"

Before she even finished the sentence, her expression abruptly changed and she let out a scream. In her view, the eyes of the Five Coloured Bufoid abruptly turned blood-red and it spurted a stream of five-coloured air in Ye Chen's

direction. The monstrous air engulfed and devastated; wherever it swept across, the plants would immediately wither and on the ground, a deep gorge would be plowed.

Ye Chen's sense of awareness was impeccably sharp, and every single movement made by the bufonid was under Ye Chen's watch. He swiftly turned his body, and with a swing of the Dragon Spring Sword, a beam of pale blue sword Qi was slashed out.

Puff!

The sword Qi scattered the stream of five-coloured air and fiercely slashed the head of the bufonid.

The bufonid let out a series of muffled howls; its house-sized body fell over and smashed open a few large cracks on the walls of the valley, even causing rocks to tumble down the valley.

“Highly Condensed Qi!”

This Five Coloured Bufoid was many times weaker than the Black Bomb Serpent, however, it possessed a great defensive power. Any ordinary attack would not be able to kill it. Ye Chen didn't want to waste any time on it, thus, he launched a deadly attack.

Following a wave of puffing noises, a thick stream of sword Qi that contained layers of power easily cut open the ugly skin of the bufonid; it pierced through the body of the bufonid, striking the rock wall behind it, and leaving a deep slash behind.

Clang!

Placing the sword back into its sheath, Ye Chen then waved his hand; along with this move, the bufonid's pearl core popped out of its chest and flew towards Ye Chen.

“Amazing! He killed the bufonid!”

“The Five Coloured Bufonid is as powerful as a medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, but even a medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist wouldn't want to fight against it head on!”

“This young martial artist looks to be even younger than my nephew, I can’t believe he actually just killed the bufonid with a single move!”

All the surviving guards were medium or advanced Condensing Reality Realm martial artists, and many times before, they had heard of all kinds of amazing geniuses, yet none of them has actually met one; watching Ye Chen kill the bufonid just now made them all dumbfounded.

The young man whose name was Zhengxuan, finally realised what had just happened. Eyes filled with admiration and jealousy, he cupped his hands and said, “My name is Lu Zhengxuan, may I have your name please?”

Ye Chen shook his head and said, “I’m leaving immediately, there is no need to know my name.”

He had saved all these people only because it was no effort on his part, and it wouldn’t take up too much of his time. Since saving some lives could be done in passing, why shouldn’t he do it?

Putting the pearl core into his storage ring, Ye Chen turned around and said, “I’m leaving, you should be extra careful.” He prepared to leave after he said this.

Abruptly, the middle-aged man began coughing severely, and immediately after, spat out a mouthful of badly stinking blood. On his face, faint five-coloured flakes emerged.

“You’re poisoned.” Ye Chen frowned.

The middle-aged man forcibly boosted his Zhen Qi, temporarily restraining the poison effect. Giving a bitter smile, he said, “The Five Coloured Bufoid’s poison is far too powerful; it managed to poison me through my protective Zhen Qi.”

“Don’t move, let me try to disperse the poison for you.”

Swiftly moving behind the middle-aged man, Ye Chen pressed both of his hands to the man’s back; streams of pure and powerful Great Mystery Zhen Qi were injected into the middle-aged man’s body through the meridians in Ye Chen’s arms.

After a short while.

Ye Chen dropped his hands, slowly letting out a long breath, he said, “The poison is too strong; mere Zhen Qi can’t disperse it. You’ll have to make an antidote to cure him. Fortunately, his current situation is not that serious, and the poison can’t kill him in such a short time.”

The girl, who seemed to have thought of something, said, “Normally, to make an antidote of a certain kind of beast poison, the corresponding materials from the beast’s body should be collected and used, this Five Coloured Bufonid...”

Whilst speaking, the girl turned her eyes to Ye Chen. The bufonid was killed by Ye Chen, this meant that the bufonid’s body now belonged to him. Therefore, without Ye Chen’s permission, the girl and the others did not dare to collect materials from the bufonid’s body.

“You can do whatever you want with the dead bufonid.” Ye Chen wasn’t going to take the bufonid’s body, anyway.

After collecting the necessary materials, the group of people prepared to go back.

Ye Chen saw that among this group of people, some were injured while some were poisoned, only a few of them could still fight. They couldn’t possibly survive their return journey like this, not in the dangerous and wild Five Poison Mountain Range. Helplessly, Ye Chen sighed then said, “I’ll will escort all of you out!”

The girl glanced at Ye Chen with a pair of sparkling eyes filled with gratitude.

During the journey, Ye Chen got to know some of the people’s name and circumstances. The beautiful girl’s name was Lin Qingmei, and she was the young mistress of the Lin Family in Black Rock City, a city situated near the Five Poison Mountain Range. The name of the middle-aged man who was poisoned was Lu Zhengde; he was Lu Zhengxuan’s father, and at the same time, an elder of the Lin Family. This time, they entered the Five Poison Mountain Range to collect a rare and magical herbal medicine— the Buddhist Vanilla... however, this Buddhist Vanilla was guarded by the Five Coloured Bufonid, which nearly killed them all.

Walking out of the Five Poison Mountain Range, they traveled Eastwards for over a hundred miles; after which, a city that was mainly built with black rock



appeared in Ye Chen's sight.

"It's about the same size as Windy City, this city probably doesn't have much of a tyrannical force." Normally, powerful institutions each had their own territories, and large influential families were all living in relatively bigger cities, such as Luo City, where the Ye Family lived in. This Black Rock City couldn't even compare to big cities like that.

Walking into the city, Ye Chen found that the warriors who were guarding the city gate all had different expressions, but he didn't pay too much attention to this.

The Lin Family was located in the southern area of the city. Judging from the size and layout of their family house, the Lin Family could barely count as a mid-size clan, and compared to the truly large clans, the disparity between the two was huge.

"Young mistress, you're back!"

"Our master said you should meet him immediately after you return. Hm? Is Elder Lu poisoned?"

The eyes of the butler and servants, who had been standing near the main gate, instantly shone when they saw Lin Qingmei and the others approach, but upon seeing Lu Zhengde's appearance, they all cried out simultaneously.

Lin Qingmei gave a bitter smile and responded, "I'll go see my father now."

.....

In the guest room, located on one side of the main family house.

Ye Chen sat on the bed with his legs crossed, and a piece of low-ranked magic stone gripped within each hand; he was concentratedly cultivating.

The Great Mystery Art had eleven levels in total; he had to try his best to improve until he reached the top level. Since he was now traveling all by himself, he had to improve his power as fast and as much as possible, and achieve the top level of the Great Mystery Art as soon as he could. Otherwise, if he encountered any advance Clasp of Yuan Realm enemy, he wouldn't be able to guarantee his own safety.

A while later.

Crack!

Both low-ranked stones in his hands shattered, and Ye Chen opened his eyes.

“I’m now at the peak of the sixth level, and I should be able to step into the seventh level in a couple of days.” Throwing the two used low-ranked magic stone pieces away, Ye Chen got off the bed.

Boom!

The entire Lin Family suddenly vibrated intensely, as if a small-scale earthquake just occurred in the area.

“A fight?”

Without much hesitation, Ye Chen pushed open the door and rushed towards the origin of the explosion.

Two groups of people were standing opposite each other in the Lin Family public square. In front of the Lin Family’s main hall, stood the Lin Family’s martial artists; on the other side, stood several strangers in yellow lead by a fat middle-aged man, and an elderly man in black clothes.

On the Lin Family’s side, one man was struck down, and he laid on the ground vomiting blood. Quite obviously, he was severely injured and would not be getting back up for the time being.

“Hehe, Lin Tiemu, it seems that you still haven’t learnt your lesson. From today onwards, I will wound one of your martial artists every day until you handover my Huang Family’s Frosty Iron Sword production method. Let’s see how long you’ll last,” said the fat middle-aged man maliciously, rubbing the emerald ring on his finger as he did.

The face of the Lin Family’s master seemed especially pale, as if he was wounded badly. He ordered a servant to hold the injured martial artist up, then said in a cold, harsh voice, “The production method of the Frosty Iron Sword is part of our Lin Family’s inherited property, and has nothing to do with your Huang Family. On what grounds can you say that it belongs to your Huang Family?”

The fat middle-aged man said, “Our Huang Family established itself in Black Rock City even earlier than your Lin Family, you were but a newcomer, how could you possibly possess the producing method of the Frosty Iron Sword? Old Lu, please, teach him a good lesson and let him remember for a long time, least he tears off the scars and forgets the pains.”

The elderly man in black clothes gave a sinister grin, then said, “Master Lin, you were wounded by my Black Striking Palm half a month ago, everyday your meridians are still suffering tremendous pains, aren’t they?”

“Don’t you dare!” Lin Qingmei yelled as she rushed out of the crowd.

“Ah, I almost forgot, I would like to have your daughter. What do you think about that, Master Lin?” A greedy beam of light flashed across the elderly man’s eyes when he said this. Raising his hands and crooking his fingers, a great stream of Zhen Qi was released and it wrapped around Lin Qingmei, preparing to drag her over.

Puff!

A gust of fierce sword Qi slashed across the air, cutting the elderly man’s stream of Zhen Qi off.

“Who is it?!” Growled the elderly man with a dark face.

Ye Chen walked into the square and said, “You guys are so noisy.”

The fat middle-aged man thought that someone powerful had been hiding in the Lin Family, but seeing Ye Chen, a young man of around sixteen years old walk out, he laughed out loud and said, “Lin Tiemu, don’t tell me that this is your newly hired powerful helper, you don’t truly believe that he is able to stop Old Lu, do you?”

“Kid, you’ll die right now if you dare to stop me.” Said the elderly man in black with an awe-inspiring voice.

Lin Qingmei’s face instantly showed surprise when she saw Ye Chen, however, a worried look soon emerged on her face. She said lowly, “What are you doing here?”

“Who are they?” asked Ye Chen.

“That bloody fatso is the master of the Huang Family, a family also living in this Black Rock City. They’ve been coveting the production method for Frosty Iron Sword that is possessed by my family. Before, they didn't dare to do anything to us because we were no weaker than them, but recently, he hired this old man called Old Lu, and attacked my father. My father was wounded seriously, and the reason I went to the Five Poison Mountain Range was to get the magical herb to treat my father’s injuries,” said Lin Qingmei.

Ye Chen nodded, and didn’t say anything.

“Qingmei,” said Lin Tiemu, the master of the Lin Family, “Is this the young man whom escorted all of you out of the Five Poison Mountain Range?”

“He is, Father.”

“Since he is your benefactor, why haven't you brought him away to get some rest.” Lin Tiemu had already noticed that Ye Chen was an early Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, and didn’t want to get Ye Chen involved in this conflict.

Lin Qingmei had a complicated look on her face. She had seen Ye Chen’s power with her own eyes, and he was as powerful as medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists; however, that Old Lu was even more powerful and had already reached the peak-level of the medium Claspng Yuan Realm, even her father was wounded by that Old Lu. Deep down, She wished that Ye Chen could help them out once more, but it was not likely to happen. After all, she had witnessed Old Lu wound her father, and she clearly knew that Ye Chen couldn’t possibly defeat Old Lu.

“It’s too late to leave, just die!”

Old Lu’s face became ferocious and he launched a palm attack at Ye Chen. Along with an ear-piercing sound, an enormous black palm silhouette split the air; many ordinary man quivered in fear.

Clang!

Swiftly, the Dragon Spring Sword was pulled out, and Ye Chen carelessly swung the sword out.

## ***Chapter 174 - A Map Fragment***

A shining, pale blue coloured, crystal-like streak of sword Qi darted out, slashing the black palm print into pieces, then advancing towards the elderly man's neck.

"Damn it! This sword Qi is too fierce!" Old Lu's expression abruptly changed as he hurriedly pulled a shield out of his storage ring, shielding himself from the attack.

Clang!

The sword Qi clashed against the half-foot thick shield, carving a massive incision on it, from which sparks were created and the residual sword Qi was deflected three to four meters away.

All members of the Lin Family popped their eyes out and widely opened their mouths in shock.. Ye Chen had forced Old Lu to use the shield with merely a single move, and had even left a four-inch deep cut on the shield that was obviously forged from a particularly solid kind of alloy and was half a foot thick; he had nearly chopped the shield directly into two!

Seeing Ye Chen raising his sword again, Old Lu instantly dropped the broken shield and rushed up to Lin Qingmei who was standing not too far away from him, and attempted to grab her as a human shield to force Ye Chen to stop attacking.

Lin Qingmei was merely a powerless girl. She only saw a black silhouette swiftly flashing across the air. In a mere moment, Old Lu was already in front of her. Old Lu thrust his scrawny arms in a grasping motion, intending to grab Lin Qingmei's neck.

However, although Old Lu moved at an incredibly high speed, Ye Chen had moved even faster than him. In no time at all, Ye Chen appeared beside Lin Qingmei, and back from where he had stood, only an afterimage was left.

Another pale blue, dazzling sword light flashed across the air, which was as fierce as a lightning bolt.

Right in the next second!

Old Lu was sent flying backwards, and in mid-air, his body suddenly split into two.

“Old Lu is dead!!” Screamed the Master Huang. A second ago, his face was still filled with a proud and malicious look, but now, only fear could be seen from his face.

Swoosh!

Ye Chen slightly waved his right hand. Following his move, Old Lu’s storage ring flew over into his hands. Without even looking at it, Ye Chen threw the ring into his own storage ring, then turned around and looked at Master Huang.

Master Huang’s face instantly turned deadly pale. He squeezed out a fake grin and said tremblingly, “I, I promise that, that I will never, ever trouble Lin Family. As for this Old Lu, he, he deserved to die, as he had harassed countless maids during the past half-month when he stayed in my house.”

Ye Chen remained silent. After all, this conflict actually didn’t have anything to do with him, and if he slaughtered the Huang Family’s people without a valid reason, the others might see him as a bloodthirsty person; but of course, if Master Lin actually intended to destroy the Huang Family, Ye Chen would surely lend a hand and kill a few of their martial artists.

Apparently, Lin Tiemu didn’t have that intention. He only spoke harshly to Master Huang, “Huang Jian, my Lin Family had neither offended your Huang Family nor intended to compete against you for customers in this Black Rock City, you should just leave! If you dare trouble us again, I, Lin Tiemu, will definitely make you pay for that.”

“I won’t, I won’t!”

The only thought that had remained in Hang Jian’s mind was to leave right away, as for what would happen in the future, he didn’t have the audacity to worry about it at this moment. He was just afraid that Ye Chen would conveniently kill him as well.

After Huang Family’s people left, Ye Chen shook his head and thought, ‘Lin Tiemu is way too softhearted. If one desires to achieve a big goal, they have to be determined, even ruthless, and never let a single opportunity slip away.

However, people have their own ways of living, and not all have a great goal, probably, this Lin Tiemu just wanted to live a peaceful life here in this Black Rock City.'

Besides, although Lin Tiemu was injured, he was still much more powerful than Huang Jian; if he recovered and regained his power, the Huang Family wouldn't possibly dare to trouble them again within a short time.

"Young martial artist, this time you have done us a huge help. I, Lin Tiemu, am forever grateful." Lin Tiemu cupped his hands and deeply bowed to Ye Chen. Ye Chen had not only saved his daughter, but also killed that Old Lu who was the most powerful enemy of the Lin Family at present time, eliminating a huge obstacle for the Lin Family.

"T'wasn't much!" Said Ye Chen.

It was nearly dusk, Lin Tiemu ordered the cooks and the servants to prepare a splendid banquet, especially for Ye Chen. During the feast, Lin Qingmei had drunk quite a lot of wine that her cheeks were flushed red. From time to time, she would glance at Ye Chen. On the other side, the young man named Lu Zhengxuan looked quite gloomy.

"Zhengxuan, don't worry. He is not like us, we're not the same kind of people. He'll leave sooner or later." The poison inside Lu Zhengde's body had already been neutralized by now, he sat beside his son and comforted him.

Lu Zhengxuan gave a faint and bitter smile as he nodded. He was now an advanced Condensing Reality Realm martial artist, as long as he kept working hard, he could definitely become a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist; however, compared to Ye Chen, he felt an immeasurable gap between them. Fortunately, he was clearly aware that countless geniuses had been living in this vast world, but not anyone can be one; his own goal was to become the most powerful martial artist in Black Rock City.

In the next morning, Ye Chan bade farewell to the Lin Family and left the Black Rock City.

.....

Deep within the woods, a bonfire was blazing.

“Now that I’m at the seventh-level of the Great Mystery Art, the quality of my Zhen Qi has already increased by around thirty percent, and the total amount of Zhen Qi has risen a little bit as well, about ten percent.”

As Ye Chen was sitting beside the bonfire with his legs crossed, he threw a punch towards a gigantic tree standing further away from him. It had a trunk that would take five people to put their arms around.

Crack!

The huge tree was broken into two, and the upper part was sent flying backwards for tens of meters.

It had been three days since he left the Black Rock City. During this period of time, he had spent four to six hours on practicing the Great Mystery Art each day, and tonight, he finally managed to break through a higher level once again.

“Ah, I haven’t check that Old Lu’s storage ring yet.” While resting, Ye Chen took out the storage ring that used to belong to an elderly man called Old Lu.

Removing the residual Zhen Qi of Old Lu, Ye Chen looked through the inner space of the storage ring using his soul power.

Although Old Lu was a peak-level medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, he was not rich at all. From that ring, Ye Chen only found over one thousand pieces of low-ranked stones, around five hundred thousand gold, and other strange objects such as, a piece of stone that constantly released black smoke, a skull that was carved out of an entire piece of jade, and a dilapidated roll of a map.

Ignoring the other objects, Ye Chen took the map out.

As Ye Chen opened it, he found that this very old, yellow-grey coloured piece of map was only as big as his palm. Rivers, mountains and woods were painted on the map using a special kind of pigment. At the edge of the map, a red spot was quite striking.

“I don’t recognise this jungle and those mountains, but this large river clearly is the Wide Goose Falling River. The Wide Goose Falling River is one of the three largest rivers in the entire South Zhuo Region. Before, I merely travelled across a small part of it. The end of this river is in the northern area of Grey Mystery



Nation, that is also the location of this red spot. Hm, I just don't know what this red spot means."

Ye Chen fell into deep thought. He first thought that this was just a piece of an ordinary map, but now, he realised that this red spot might represent something special. After all, only this piece of leather that this map was made from, seemed incredibly old.

"Well, I've come out for a self-tempering trip anyway, my destinations can be everywhere. I might find something valuable in the location of this red spot. It's just that, the Grey Mystery Nation is not one of the nine nations, and is over five-hundred-thousand miles away from the Thousand Thread Nation; it will take me plenty of time to get there."

After Ye Chen stopped pondering, he made up his mind. He decided to go to the location of this red spot, to discover what lied there.

Three days later, Ye Chen once again came to the river bank of the Wild Goose Falling River.

If the edges of the Wild Goose Falling River between the Windy Nation and the Thousand Thread Nation was the most downstream part, the place Ye Chen was currently in should be the upper part of the downstream of the river.

Beside the river was the River Bank City, a thriving harbour city that had over five million people living in it. Enormous ships had docked in the ports while people carried the cargos out of them.

"Young martial artist, the Ocean Beast is setting out in a few minutes, why don't you just go and settle there?"

Someone came over from a port and informed Ye Chen.

"Sure." Ye Chen nodded and responded.

The so-called Ocean Beast was a gigantic, fusiform-shaped ship, its size was over one hundred meters long and twenty meters wide. The ship was entirely crafted from highest grade ironwood, which was as valuable as gold. Even ordinary Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists were not able to leave marks on the body of this ship, it was extremely solid and had a marvelous defensive power, and was one of the greatest safeguards for passengers, who wanted to travel

across the river.

Without a doubt, the River Bank City was incapable of crafting such an enormous ship. This ship was crafted in the Black Dragon Empire, one of the largest three nations of the South Zhuo Region. This ship had costed the River Bank City an unspeakably huge amount of money; with Ye Chen's current wealth, he couldn't possibly purchase even one of this ship.

Not too many people were on the ship, only about thirty to forty people in total. Half of these people were the rich and powerful ones, around sixty percent of them were even nobles, while the rest of these passengers were all martial artists. The Zhen Qi vibration of each of these seven to eight martial artists was pure and intense, judging from which, all were Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists; one of them was in advanced Claspings Yuan Realm, his fierce gaze was as sharp as daggers, that could seemingly cut a man's soul into pieces.

Seeing Ye Chen walking onto the ship, all of these people showed a slightly surprised look.

"Hey, young man," a fat rich guy laughed out loud and said, "Do you intend to experience this world? Was your money stolen from your own family? Your family seems pretty rich though, since you have to pay a hundred-thousand gold for a ticket of this ship! Not everyone can afford that!"

Silently, those martial artists called the fat rich guy 'idiot'. Although Ye Chen's Zhen Qi vibration was slightly weaker than others' Zhen Qi vibration, he was undoubtedly a Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist. How could a Claspings Yuan Realm martial artist even possibly be unable to afford a ship ticket? Why on earth should he steal money from his family to pay for his ship ticket?

Ye Chen didn't respond and only gave a faint smile.

"Alright, people, the Ocean Beast is setting out. I wish that you can all stay nice and friendly during our journey, do not cause us any trouble." The cabin door abruptly opened, a middle-aged man and two younger men walked in. Those words were spoken by the middle-aged man with a harsh tone.

"Ahyaya, who dares to cause any trouble on the Ocean Beast? If anyone does, that person must want to die so badly."

“Indeed, the Ocean Beast belongs to the South chamber of commerce.”

“And the South chamber of commerce is one of the two large-scale chambers of commerce in the South Zhuo Region, even more powerful than rank 7 institutions. Their people are all especially powerful martial artists.”

Hearing those conversations, Ye Chen slightly frowned. The aura released by this middle-aged man was no weaker than the aura of Sky Cloud Martial School’s Patriarch. Clearly, he was a peak-level advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, and the two younger men standing behind him were all medium Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists; added with other powerful martial artists working for the South chamber of commerce, they could indeed prevent all passengers from causing any trouble on this ship. It was not too difficult to imagine how powerful this South chamber of commerce was.

Along with a series of creaking noise that came from beneath the deck, the ship began moving.

.....

Back in the Black Rock City, and in the Huang Family’s main hall.

“Tell me! Where’s the person who killed Old Lu?!”

Two young men had been looking down at Master Huang. The one at the left was wearing a black outfit, whose face looked evil and creepy, while the other wore a cyan outfit, looking cold and arrogant. Each of them had been releasing a great Zhen Qi vibration, far stronger than Ye Chen’s Zhen Qi vibration; both of them were at least at the peak-level early Clasp of Yuan Realm.

The Master Huang wiped his own forehead and said, “I don’t know, he left right in the next morning, why, why don’t you go ask the Lin Family instead? They’re quite close to him.”

Boom!

The young man in a cyan outfit abruptly threw a heavy kick onto Master Huang’s body, making him cough out a mouthful of blood, then sneered and said, “Are you trying to use us? Hmph, in your dreams.”

Leaving the Huang Family, the young man in a black outfit said, “That young

man was merely around sixteen to seventeen years old, but he had managed to kill Old Lu, a peak-level medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist. We can't despise him."

The young man in a cyan outfit sneered and responded, "Both of us are ranked above 45th in the last season Hidden Dragon Ranking, we could've easily crushed that Old Lu with our little fingers!"

"What should we do now?"

"Don't worry, I have seen that map on a roadside market but didn't pay too much attention to it. Later I went back for it and found that it was already bought by that Old Lu. Fortunately, I have memorised the location of the red spot, it's near the edge of the Wild Goose Falling River, as for its specific location, we can look for it when we get there."

"Hehe, good. If I'm right, we can definitely dig treasures from the remains of an ancient institution based on the location of the red spot. If we can find a few high-ranked martial art books in there, we will be able to rock the next season Hidden Dragon Ranking."

## Chapter 175 - The Power of Astral Reaching Realm

The Ocean Beast moved incredibly fast, far beyond one's imagination. Within a mere twenty-four hours, the ship had sailed over ten thousand miles away from the River Bank City. This ship was nearly twice faster than the half-demonic beast horse – Ghost Eyes Jade Lion.

Only a broad river like this Wild Goose Falling River could allow the Ocean Beast to move at such a high speed, if this river changed into a smaller one, the ship would be destroyed and everybody on it would've died long ago.

Perhaps the designer of this ship was concerned about the fierce wind caused by the high speed during sailing that might throw passengers off the deck, so this ship was crafted into a smooth fusiform, and two wooden chambers were set in the prow which shrouded a small half of the ship's bow, distributing the wind that pushed against the ship, and protecting the deck area from being blown by the wind.

Creak!

Pushing the cabin door open, Ye Chen saw the sharp bow of this ship cut through a cyclone and swiftly moving across it. The lightning-fast speed and great power of this ship actually gave Ye Chen goosebumps.

"This is indeed a masterpiece crafted by the Puppet Martial School, I've never thought that a ship can be so unimaginably magical." Standing beside Ye Chen, a middle-aged man with a curly beard, who was an advanced Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist leaned against the wall and praised.

Ye Chen asked confusingly, "Is this ship crafted by the Puppet Martial School as well?" He had seen quite a lot of works of the Puppet Martial School before, such as human shaped wooden puppets and puppet crows. Even as a space and time traveller, Ye Chen was deeply shocked by those lively and exquisite works.

"Royalties of the Black Dragon Empire have once discovered the remains of a Puppet Martial School's branch stronghold, and found many valuable works in it. Ocean Beasts were part of them. It's said that the South Chamber of Commerce had purchased five Ocean Beasts from the Black Dragon Empire in total, each costing them more than five hundred million gold; in addition to this price, the

South Chamber of Commerce has to pay a huge amount of magic stones yearly for these ships. In other words, the chamber of commerce is merely renting these ships.” The middle-aged man with a curly beard looked like an ordinary man wearing a grey outfit, and seemed to be around forty-five years old.

Ye Chen’s eye bulged and said, “They have already paid five hundred million gold for a ship, but still need to give magic stones as yearly contribution, isn’t the empire way too greedy?!”

The middle-aged man grinned and responded, “They only have to contribute magic stones in the first ten years. Besides, you can just do a rough calculation, every time this ship carries a batch of passengers across this river, they can make millions of gold from those passengers, and every year, they can transport ten batches of passengers, at least; moreover, other than passengers, this ship can also transport other goods. In fact, the most important function of Ocean Beasts was to ship cargos for the chamber of commerce. After all, every single trip made by this ship means a distance of over hundreds of thousands of miles, is there any other kind of ship that can do the same thing?”

Ye Chen agreed with him. The South Chamber of Commerce was an influential chamber of commerce, commercial activities were surely the most important thing to them. Shipment of cargos would be much easier and convenient with Ocean Beasts, and with these ships, an amazing amount of manpower and material resources, as well as time, would be saved.

Ye Chen and this middle-aged man didn’t know each other too well, therefore, their chat had only carried on for a short while.

Standing beside the fencing around the deck, Ye Chen saw an air barrier three feet away from him. That was formed from highly compressed air. If a Mortal Realm martial artist had taken a step forward and bumped into this air barrier, he or she would definitely be sent to the air; even Condensing Reality Realm martial artists would have to spend all their efforts in order to stabilise their bodies in this air barrier.

When Ye Chen looked through the air barrier, he saw the seemingly boundless water.

As one of the three largest rivers in the South Zhuo Region, this Wild Goose

Falling River was six-hundred and fifty thousand miles long; its main body flowed across the Windy Nation, Thousand Thread Nation, Grey Mystery Nation and the other thirteen nations; countless tributaries of this river covered almost every corner of the fifteen nations.

As an enormous river, Wild Goose Falling River was merely the smallest one amongst the three largest rivers. The largest one was called Rosefinch River, not only did it run through a large half of the South Zhuo Region, but also reached other regions such as the Misty Snow Region and the Cloud Billows Region; in fact, the Wild Goose Falling River could be counted as one of the tributaries of the Rosefinch River. You probably couldn't even imagine how vast the Rosefinch River exactly was, it was even broader than the oceans of Ye Chen's original world.

"One day, when I tread across all mountains and rivers then finally reach the top of this martial world, what will this world look like to me?" Facing the rapidly flowing, boundless river, Ye Chen clenched his fists and thought of his goal.

"Everyone, dinner is ready, please come in!"

The cabin's door was pushed open again, and a member of the South Chamber of Commerce leaned his head out from the door and said to the others.

"Good, I'm just feeling a bit hungry."

"I heard that food on the Ocean Beasts are marvelous! I wonder what we will have for dinner..."

Hearing people's discussion, Ye Chen smiled and walked in as well.

After dinner, the day ended.

Ye Chen went back to his own cabin.

This Ocean Beast had four floors in total, the bottom floor was a cargo storage space, the second floor was the living quarters of the members of the South Chamber of Commerce, while powerful martial artists working for the South Chamber of Commerce and the other passengers stayed at the third and fourth floors. Ye Chen stayed in room number five at the fourth floor. It was a quite big room, having an area around twenty to thirty square meters.

As Ye Chen sat on the bed and crossed his legs, he began his daily cultivation.

.....

Ten days had soon passed.

This Ocean Beast had already travelled across a few nations, and had now entered the territory of a mid-ranked nation, the Rising Sun Nation.

“From now on, all kinds of powerful martial artists might show up anytime, you people should be prepared for that; do not provoke any of them.” The captain of this Ocean Beast, a middle-aged peak-level Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, who had a cold face, walked onto the deck and warned all the passengers.

A young man, who was protected by four Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists and had seemingly come from a noble family, grinned then said, “Captain Xu, you’re a peak-level Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist and one of those powerful martial artists hired by the South Chamber of Commerce, you must have met so many legendary people. Can you please tell us something about those powerful martial artists? We have nothing to do anyway.”

The captain glanced at the young man. This young man named Zhao Kang, the third prince of the Thousand Thread Nation who especially loved to make friends with powerful martial artists. Many influential martial artists were his friends, however, in the eyes of those South Chamber of Commerce’s people, those so-called influential martial artists were just a bunch of average people, and were only slightly famous within the Thousand Thread Nation.

“Since our Prince is interested, I can indeed share some of my experiences.” He travelled to the Thousand Thread Nation a lot, therefore, leaving a good impression to Zhao Kang was certainly beneficial. After all, not every issue could be easily solved by brute force, otherwise, there wouldn’t be so many forces that had tangled interests and problems in this world.

Hearing him, several others turned their eyes to the captain as well and walked over, all showing great interest.

“There’s not much to say regarding the Clasp of Yuan Realm. A martial artist in this realm can’t be counted yet as one who is truly powerful, only people above this realm deserve the word ‘powerful’. We all know that, when a martial artist



converts all of his or her Zhen Qi into Zhen Yuan, this martial artist will be able to step into the Astral Reaching Realm, and gain great power that can even allow him or her to travel across the heaven and earth. However, not everyone knows about the other abilities of Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, that I am about to mention.”

Clearing his throat, the captain continued, “The first ability possessed by Astral Reaching Realm martial artists is the ability of Zhen Yuan solidification. Unlike Zhen Qi solidification, the results of Zhen Yuan solidification are much more powerful and solid. For example, if an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist lost his sword, he could easily materialize one using his Zhen Yuan; the power of a Zhen Yuan sword is only slightly weaker than a low-ranked great sword, but far more powerful than ordinary weapons. Without a doubt, Astral Reaching Realm martial artists’ Zhen Yuan could transform into other objects as well, like blades, spears and any other kind of weapons, I think you all have understood it. The second ability of Astral Reaching Realm martial artists is being able to grow the Zhen Yuan flame by the friction of their Zhen Yuan; the Zhen Yuan flame can easily melt some especially tough kinds of metals and forge them into weapons. You may feel that this ability sounds nothing special, but you have to know that, when some rare and precious kinds of metals has been forged into weapons, those weapons can be extra solid and nearly indestructible, even no worse than low-ranked great weapons as only a few people in this world know about how to actually forge a low-ranked great weapon. Even if those Astral Reaching Realm martial artists don’t need those weapons, they could just give them to their families, friends and children. Apart from forging weapons, the most important and powerful usage of the Zheng Yuan flame is that, it is able to burn an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist’s Zhen Yuan and generate a volcanically great power that can allow the Astral Reaching Realm martial artist to launch a destructive, final attack. However, there’s a great side effect though; if lucky, this will injure the Astral Reaching Realm martial artist from the inside, to the point that he or she needs to spend a very long time on recovery, and if unlucky, if the Zhen Yuan have burned too fast and violent, that Astral Reaching Realm martial artist might accidentally burn himself into ashes.”

“So terrifying!”

Someone gasped in deep shock.

Ye Chen stood slightly far away from the captain, yet he had understood every single word spoken by the captain. ‘Burn the Zhen Yuan? This sounds a bit similar to the Sky Cloud Martial School’s [Burning Sacrifice], the only difference between these two techniques is that, what will be burnt when a martial artist uses the technique is his or her Zhen Qi or inner Qi, but the Zhen Yuan flame will burn the martial artist’s Zhen Yuan. The difference between Zhen Yuan and Zhen Qi is huge, therefore, the power of [Burning Sacrifice] can’t even compare with the power of the attack launched by an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist by burning his or her Zhen Yuan. In this way, the fight between Astral Reaching Realm martial artists can be flexible and unpredictable. Those who are more powerful might not necessarily defeat others who are slightly weaker than them, as once the slightly weaker side became berserk, he or she might decide to burn his or her Zhen Yuan. As a consequence of that, the two of them might perish together.’ Thought Ye Chen.

“No wonder people say that Astral Reaching Realm martial artists are truly powerful. They’re not only powerful, but can also boost their power up with so many methods. Without an overpowering advantage, an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist will never easily start a fight against another Astral Reaching Realm martial artist. Just like how Thunder Freer is not afraid of the Top Elder of the Purple Sun Martial School who is more powerful than him, at all.”

Thinking of this, Ye Chen was also intrigued by the captain’s speech.

The captain continued, “According to the different qualities of Zhen Yuan, the power generated by burning the Zhen Yuan can be in different scales. For example, martial artists who possess fire powers, can burn their Zhen Yuan very easily and smoothly, while martial artists with water powers will have to spend much more effort on this. Nevertheless, to martial artists with water powers, the side effect of burning Zhen Yuan is much smaller than it is to the martial artists with fire powers; which means, after launching an attack by burning their Zhen Yuan, martial artists with water powers can recover much faster than martial artists with fire powers. To Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, there are no definite advantages and disadvantages, and every single one of them has their own specialties.”

“Hm?”

The Captain abruptly stopped talking then turned his head, looking behind.

Seeing the captain’s actions, the others turned around as well.

“An Astral Reaching Realm martial artist! He has wings!” Ye Chen was the first one who clearly saw the arriving person, as his awareness was much greater than the captain’s.

The moving speed of this Ocean Beast was lightning-fast that it could travel seventy to eighty meters in every blink of an eye; but at this moment, a human silhouette had been flying over at a tremendous speed. Wherever he passed through, all cyclones and violent airwaves had been shattered into oblivion. Because the person was flying at a low altitude, he had raised a series of enormous surging waves from the Wide Goose Falling River. A huge, deep chasm appeared wherever he passed through as hundreds of meters high river water was intensely propelled outwards due to his momentum

Just this sight wasn’t astonishing enough as this man had a gigantic pair of wings on his back that was around twenty to thirty meters wide, seemingly able to cover the whole ship as he flew over.

Whoosh!

That man’s wings suddenly shook while he was still around a mile away from the ship. In the following moment, he showed up on the deck and a fierce gale was brought by him, entirely shaking the Ocean Beast, seemingly able to turn it over.

“Ah, you are Black Crow Taoist Priest. My humble name is Xu Changjian, one of the South Chamber of Commerce’s attendants.” The captain cupped his hands and bowed deeply to that winged man, while speaking politely.

Everyone else had finally seen the man’s face clearly after he neatly landed on deck. It was a scrawny middle-aged man wearing a black outfit; by now, the pair of wings which seemed ethereal, had folded behind his body. Soon, the pair of wings completely retracted back into his body, to the point that one could not even find any trace of it on his back.

The scrawny middle-aged man laughed aloud and said, “I’ve been flying for

over a hundred thousand miles, now feeling a little bit tired. Is it okay if I take a break here on your Ocean Beast?"

"Of course! It's our greatest pleasure!"

"Haha, very nice of you."

## Chapter 176 - Five Hundred Years Old Sword Intent

Since an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist had abruptly shown up, none of the others on the deck dared to speak at this moment, so as to not accidentally offend him; a few cowardly rich men even sneakily headed back into their own cabins.

Seeing this, Black Crow Taoist Priest grinned and said, “You may continue chatting, I won’t bite.”

Xu Changjian grinned as well and said, “Black Crow Taoist Priest is one of the few most respected senior martial artists to me, you don’t need to be afraid of him at all.”

Hearing Xu Changjian’s words, the others slightly loosened their agitated face, yet, they still did not dare to talk loudly, only whispering to each other.

“This is the very first time that I meet an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist, I wonder where this Black Crow Taoist Priest comes from.”

“Even Captain Xu has been acting so respectful to him, he must be ridiculously powerful!”

“The aura released by this Black Crow Taoist is way too great, as immeasurable as a bottomless river. Compared to him, those powerful martial artists in our institutions are merely ordinary people!”

“Tell me about that! The higher a martial artist’s grade goes, the wider the gap between him and the lower grades martial artists would be. It’s said that an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist could easily crush an advanced Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist with a single finger!”

Ye Chen observed Black Crow Taoist Priest for a moment then turned away as he thought, ‘He’s indeed unimaginably powerful. I can sense the vibration of his Zhen Yuan that is as powerful as a surging river and as deep as the ocean. Unlike Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists’ Zhen Qi vibrations, Zhen Yuan vibrations of Astral Reaching Realm martial artists are spreading in the form of spirals, that seem to be able to pulverize everything. This Black Crow Taoist Priest is more powerful than Thunder Freer by at least thirty percent.’

“I could never meet so many powerful people if I stayed back in the Windy Nation,” murmured Ye Chen to himself, “Firstly, Thunder Freer, now this Black Crow Taoist Priest, both of them are legendary powerful martial artists who have been admired by others.”

Standing straight on ship’s bow, Black Crow Taoist Priest turned around and asked Xu Changjian, “Do you have any booze? Bring me some if you do!”

“Sure, give me a second!” Xu Changjian responded and hurriedly walked into the cabin for booze.

Soon, he walked out smilingly, then threw a bottle to Black Crow Taoist Priest and said, “Senior, this is the famous Centurial Pear Blossom Wine, of our South Chamber of Commerce.”

Black Crow Taoist Priest caught the bottle in the air and excitedly pulling out the bottle plug as he chugged the wine. He began murmuring, “Good, good, pure and thick, I might purchase hundreds of bottles of this from your Chamber of Commerce later.”

“Ah ha ha! Our Chamber of Commerce manager will surely give you a great discount.”

The Ocean Beast kept moving towards north and soon sailed for another two or three thousand miles. Gradually, the Wild Goose Falling River became narrower and narrower. The width of the river had already narrowed down to around a hundred miles, from five hundred, or even seven hundred to eight hundred miles. If you were standing on the Ocean Beast’s deck right now, you could already see waves of mountain ranges and those big, thriving harbour cities by the river.

Black Crow Taoist Priest turned his head to the right front after throwing the wine bottle into the river, then he laughed out loud and said, “It has already been ten years since the last time we met, today, we can finally have a good, serious fight!”

Seemingly a response to Black Crow Taoist Priest’s words, from a mountain in the river bank in the right front that was over a hundred miles away from the ship, an enormous, dazzling and raging flame stream suddenly darted into the sky, letting out a scorching red, sunshine-like fiery light, which was casted upon

the glistening river surface.

“Haha, I’m leaving!”

Said Black Crow Taoist Priest to Gao Changjian while an enormous pair of wings stretched out from his back, then flicked; along with which, he directly flew up into the air, darted towards the flame stream. In the air, a dark, thick black air swirled around his body, giving a vigorous and bold aura.

“Goodbye, dear senior!” Shouted Xu Changjian.

Ye Chen narrowed his eyes. From the swooshing flame stream, he saw a faint human silhouette. Technically, he didn’t truly see that, he had only grasped the great sense of power released by that person with his soul power, and formed a human silhouette in his mind; just like a blind man constructing the surrounding environment that he had been staying in for many years in his mind.

“Another Astral Reaching Realm martial artist.” Ye Chen enthusiastically said after letting out a long breath.

“Captain Xu, are the pair of wings of Black Crow Taoist Priest transformed from his Zhen Yuan, like one of those Astral Reaching Realm martial artists’ abilities you’ve mentioned before?” Once Black Crow Taoist Priest left, the others were instantly freed from the great pressure exuded by him, and some of them asked questions immediately.

Xu Changjian grinned and responded, “Zhen Yuan solidification is indeed an ability possessed by Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, however, none of them would use this ability unless they had to. You can think of it this way, all Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists are able to temporarily transform their Zhen Qi into certain objects, but compared to martial artists who are proficient in certain Zhen Qi solidifying arts, who can be more powerful?”

“Martial artists who are proficient in certain Zhen Qi solidifying arts are surely more powerful! For ordinary Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists, transforming the Zhen Qi into weapons then launching the attacks is no different from direct attack, it’s just more complicated.”

“Exactly, this principle also works for Astral Reaching Realm martial artists. The pair of wings of Black Crow Taoist Priest was actually created from a martial art

that he has mastered called Great Black Crow Art, which is much more powerful than ordinary Astral Reaching Realm martial artists' Zhen Yuan solidifying ability. In addition to greatly increasing the movement speed, this art can also raise the circulating speed of a martial artist's Zhen Yuan. It's one of the most powerful martial arts possessed by the Flying Devil Martial School."

"Flying Devil Martial School? Do you mean that rank 6 institution of the Black Dragon Empire?"

"Ah! Black Crow Taoist Priest is a Flying Devil Martial School's martial artist! So that is where he comes from!"

All those people were smart and knowledgeable that from Captain Xu's words, they immediately learned about Black Crow Taoist Priest's background, and all popped their eyes out in shock. In their eyes, all rank 6 institutions were legendarily mighty powers. If rank 9-7 institutions could be counted as big institutions, rank 6 institutions can definitely be seen as supreme institutions, after all, any rank 6 institution could easily destroy lower ranked institutions, or even a relatively small nation.

Boom!

Under the watchful eyes of everyone who had been standing on deck, the mountain, where the great flame stream had bursted from, suddenly shattered into pieces; overwhelmingly powerful shockwaves visibly spread out towards every direction.

"Black Crow Taoist Priest is fighting against someone!"

"He shattered a genuine mountain with a single move! That's terrifying!"

Ye Chen wanted to observe the battle between two powerful Astral Reaching Realm martial artists using his soul power, however, they had both moved exceptionally swift, that within a single moment, each of them had already launched more than a hundred moves, and Ye Chen's soul power couldn't possibly react that fast; If he forcibly did that, he would only drive himself crazy.

The Ocean Beast didn't slow down, sailing for another five-hundred mile in only half an hour, leaving that shattered mountain behind; soon, the mountain had disappeared from sight.



Ten days later.

The river's width narrowed down once again into fifty from sixty miles.

This morning, Ye Chen pushed the cabin door open, walked out and took a big gasp of fresh air.

"In twenty days of bitter practice, I've finally broken through the eighth-level of the Great Mystery Art. By now, the quality of my Zhen Qi has already surpassed the Zhen Qi that was generated by a low-ranked Earth Realm art, but the quantity is still a bit less." Ye Chen hadn't practised on any low-ranked Earth Realm art, but he had met many Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists who did, therefore, he could easily find out the general degree of the eighth-level of the Great Mystery Art by comparing himself to them.

Ye Chen raised his head and gazed afar; he saw a perfectly straight gorge which was faintly visible in the front.

In the afternoon, all passengers had gathered onto the deck, enjoying the warm sunlight.

Xu Changjian pointed at the front and said, "We will see the most famous scene of this Wild Goose Falling River from three to four miles away, called Natural Moat Gorge."

"Natural Moat Gorge! Is it that one which used to be a mountain but then been chopped into a gorge by a man?!" The middle-aged man with the curly beard couldn't help but yell out in a badly shocked face.

Chopped by a man?!

Ye Chen silently exclaimed. Even from a great distance, he could already see that enormous, steep gorge that was even ten times more gigantic than the Sky Cloud Martial School's Windy Mountain. 'Who could've chopped such a lofty mountain into two?! He must be unbelievably powerful!'

Xu Changjian continued, "Five-hundred years ago, this Natural Moat Gorge was not a gorge at all, neither was it called the Natural Moat Gorge, instead, it was a mountain named Sky Pillar Mountain which stood beside this Wild Goose Falling River and was a hundred and eight thousand meters tall, occupying a huge area that had a radius of thousands of miles. One day, two Life and Death

Realm martial artist started a great fight in this place, one of them swung his sword down and directly hacked the Sky Pillar Mountain into two. One-half of the mountain was straightly pushed right into the middle of this river, becoming an enormous gorge that is over ten miles wide, which had also created a new water channel that is thousands of miles long. Now it's called Natural Moat Gorge Water Channel."

"Two Life and Death Realm emperors started a fight here, and the Battle Emperor had directly hacked the Sky Pillar Mountain into two!"

Ye Chen gasped deeply in shock.

The Ocean Beast moved closer and closer to the gorge, along with that, people on the ship finally saw the Natural Moat Gorge clearly.

This gorge was around one hundred and seventy meters tall, and was formed by two cliffs. The outer sides of both cliffs were rugged mountainsides, while the inner sides were perfectly straight and smooth planes. Just like Xu Changjian said, this extremely straight gorge indeed looked like a mountain that had been chopped into two by a person. The two cliffs that formed the valley had the same height, while the inner space of the gorge was as straight as a ruler, if someone pushed the two cliffs back together, they could surely reform into a lofty mountain.

"We can't get into the Sky Moat Gorge, let's just pass through the main water chamber instead." Every time the ship sailed past this area, Xu Changjian would always remind those South Chamber of Commerce members to avoid getting into the gorge, he did exactly the same this time.

"Don't worry captain, we don't want to die yet."

The South Chamber of Commerce member who had been controlling the steering wheel grinned and responded.

Ye Chen couldn't help but ask, "What's so special about this gorge that we can't pass through it?"

"You'll soon find out." Xu Changjian said while rubbing his own chin.

Sooner or later, two separated water channels appeared in front of the Ocean Beast, one led to the Natural Moat Gorge, and the other, led to the original river

channel.

The Ocean Beast was now very close to the Natural Moat Gorge, which had soared right into the clouds; compared with the gorge itself, the Ocean Beast was even tinier than an ant. Such a great contrast could easily confuse a person and grow a strange fear in his or her heart.

Buzz!

Suddenly, without any sign, an extremely fierce stream of power flashed over from the Natural Moat Gorge, shrouding the Ocean Beast entirely.

Everybody on the ship couldn't help but take a few steps back, while their faces turned pale.

Puff!

Surprisingly, Ye Chen, who only knew a little more about martial arts, suffered even worse than those rich people that he abruptly coughed a full mouthful of blood out on the deck.

Xu Changjian gave a dumbfounded look at Ye Chen, wondering how that happened. Ye Chen was clearly a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, how come he couldn't stand the fierce power released by the gorge? Such a thing had never happened before, besides, the ship was still a small distance away from the gorge, the effect of that power shouldn't be so strong.

But after a brief astonishment, he stopped wondering about it, instead, he said, "The reason why we can't go through the gorge is that, when the Battle Emperor chopped the Sky Pillar Mountain open back then, his fierce and piercing sword intent has remained in the gorge all this time. The sword intent has been lingering inside the gorge, therefore, if we rashly get into it, that sword intent would definitely crush our bodies and our souls. In other words, we would all die immediately. I heard some Astral Reaching Realm martial artists have entered the gorge before, but no one ever saw them come out, I assume they were all dead already."

## ***Chapter 177 - Unexpected Reunion***

“A sword intent that has lingered for a whole five hundred years?”

Once that fierce and enormous stream of power had spread out, Ye Chen recognised that it was a sword intent. After all, he was also a possessor of the sword intent, and his sword intent had already nearly reached a small success. Therefore, he knew a sword intent much better than others, but that was also the reason why he was affected worse than others. Confronted by the sword intent that came from the gorge, Ye Chen’s sword intent was immediately crushed, making him ooze blood out of his mouth.

Just now, Ye Chen had heard from Xu Changjian that this sword intent belonged to the Battle Emperor and had lingered in this gorge for five hundred years. He couldn’t help but become dumbfounded. As a stream of sword intent that hadn’t yet dissipated even after remaining in this area for an entire five hundred years, it must be even more powerful than a sword intent that had already reached a large success, and should be at an immeasurably, legendarily high level that was way beyond the large success of a sword intent.

As for what kind of sword intent it exactly was, Ye Chen had absolutely no idea.

“Those Life and Death Realm martial artists who are capable of dominating lands are indeed terrifying. I assume only another Life and Death Realm martial artist could possibly survive the sword intent's might if it was during the time when it had just achieved its present status decades ago!” Wiping the blood off his mouth, Ye Chen slightly sighed out as his heart was filled with a complicated and unexplainable feeling.

‘Hm?’ Ye Chen’s expression abruptly changed.

The broken sword that had been quietly laying inside his storage ring all this time suddenly began shaking slightly, as if something was attracting it.

Clang, clang...

The broken sword was fragmented into two pieces, one was the sword blade while the other was the hilt, with a small part of the sword blade. At this moment, both of them had swiftly flown up and smashed against the spatial

barrier of the storage ring, letting out loud and metallic noises.

“Could this broken sword be...”

Ye Chen thought of a possibility that this broken sword belonged to the Battle Emperor, or that it was somehow related to this Natural Moat Gorge. Back in the auction, Ye Chen remembered what the auctioneer had said, that this broken sword was five hundred years old, and that was exactly when the Battle Emperor fought against another Life and Death Realm martial artist in this place.

“Amazing! This broken sword might’ve possibly been the Battle Emperor’s sword, now it sensed the sword intent and is attempting to break out of the storage ring.” Ye Chen didn’t worry that the broken sword might break out of the storage ring and fly away, because the inner space of the storage ring was especially firm that a broken sword, which had already lost its power, couldn’t possibly break the spatial barrier, unless it formerly possessed a sky-shattering power.

The Ocean Beast sailed past the gorge beside, and when the ship was close to the gorge, the volume and frequency of the noise made by the broken sword by smashing against the spatial barrier inside the ring increased significantly. Within a single moment, the broken sword would at least smash against the spatial barrier for tens, even over one hundred times, resulting in a wave of dazzling sparks that had even melted a few low-ranked spirit stones which were close to it.

Nevertheless, the movements within the ring only lasted a short period of time. As the Ocean Beast sailed further forwards and left the Natural Moat Gorge behind, the noise made by the broken sword gradually lowered down. Soon, the broken sword completely calmed down, silently lying in the storage ring as per usual.

Taking a deep gasp, Ye Chen thought, ‘Right now, I’m not yet powerful enough to head to the gorge. But when I grow enough power, I can probably go take a look in that gorge and see if this truly was the Battle Emperor’s sword. I might also find that small piece of the lost sword blade in there.’

The final destination of this Ocean Beast was the Three River City, the biggest harbour city of the Spirit Speak Nation.

In the Three River City's port.

Large groups of people had been walking inside and out, while all kinds of ships were docked including cargo ships, passenger liners and warships. The total amount was more than one hundred.

"People, this Three River City is where one of our South Chamber of Commerce's branch chambers of commerce located, and this is our final stop. Please get ready to go ashore." The Ocean Beast stopped by the river as Xu Changjian stood on deck and spoke to all passengers.

"Eh, I'm going to the Elephant Mountain Nation, it turns out that I need to board another ship."

"I'm going to the Grey Mystery Nation, but that's quite far away. I'll take a short break in this Three River City for now."

Only a few passengers knew beforehand that the final stop was the Three River City. Everyone else merely embarked on the Ocean beast because of its incredibly fast speed. In fact, other routes might be even shorter compared to the one they've just taken.

Ye Chen didn't directly begin his journey to the Grey Mystery Nation after getting off the ship. After all, he was still around two to three hundred thousand miles away from his final destination, and there was no need for him to rush.

Three River City was very much bustling in activities, and was also rather crowded.

Walking around the streets, Ye Chen could only see a dense mass of people everywhere.

"Dear guest, I'm very sorry but all our rooms have already been booked. I suggest you go check out other hotels."

"Dear guest, our rooms are unavailable as well. Other hotels still might have available rooms."

"I am sincerely sorry, but you're right, hotels in the outer city are sold out every single day. You probably can only find available rooms in the inner city."

After checking seven to eight hotels consecutively, Ye Chen had failed to find

an available room. He couldn't help but smile wryly. The density of population of Three River City was indeed astounding, but of course, this clearly showed that this city was thriving.

"I should just go check the hotels in the inner city."

Well-known large cities usually had inner cities and outer cities, such as the Luo City, where Ye Chen's family lived in; the Happy City, where the Northwest Auction House was located; and the Gale City in the Great Devil Grassland. All of these cities had inner cities. Normally, only the nobility and especially wealthy people could live in inner cities.

After paying an excessively expensive entrance fee, Ye Chen walked into the inner city.

Compared to the outer city, the streets in the inner city were broader, but the density of population of the inner city was much lower than it in the outer city. At least, he didn't have to accidentally step on others' feet every time anymore.

"Eh?! Ye Chen! You!"

A voice that wasn't totally unfamiliar to Ye Chen came from behind.

Ye Chen turned around and saw the person's face. He grinned and said, "Lin Yue, it's been a long time. What are you doing in Three River City?"

The young man who had just called Ye Chen's name was no one else but Lin Yue, the top-ranked disciple of the Elephant Mountain Nation's rank 7 institution, Dragon and Tiger Mountain martial school. Back in the Heaven Dream Ancient Region, he once fought against martial zombies together with Ye Chen and Leng Wuqing.

Lin Yue laughed out loud and said, "I was going to ask you the same thing! Our Elephant Mountain Nation is not that far, but your Windy Nation is way too far from here."

"I came out for a self-tempering trip."

"A self-tempering trip, hmm, such a good idea! Eh, but it's a shame that our leader said that I'm still not powerful enough to leave the school. He only told me to keep cultivating myself."

Ye Chen grinned. He understood the leader of the Dragon and Tiger Martial School. They had worked so hard to raise a Hidden Dragon Ranked young martial artist, there was no way that they would risk losing him before he matures.

“I’m planning to stay in this city for one or two days, what about you?”

“I came for a party, why don’t you come as well?! You can be counted as the most talented young martial artist amongst our nine nations. You’re totally qualified to participate in this party!”

“What party?” Asked Ye Chen confusingly.

“It’s held by the Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists of this Spirit Speak Nation. All invited guests are the Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists from the few surrounding countries, and our Elephant Mountain Nation is just nearby.”

“I better pass. They didn’t invite me anyway, it might be rude if I go without an invitation.”

“What are you even talking about? People always go to the party without invitations, you’ll meet many of them this time too.”

It seemed that Ye Chen had no choice but to agree in going to the party with Lin Yue.

They headed to a luxury hotel.

Lin Yue said, “Let’s get in, the party will be held in the hotel’s backyard.”

Walking into the hotel, they straightly went through the lobby, then stopped in front of large groups of separated luxurious backyards behind the hotel’s main building. The party would be held in the third backyard.

“This way, please.”

Waiters had been welcoming guests at the entrance of the backyard.

Lin Yue nodded, guiding Ye Chen as they walked in.

These series of luxurious backyard belonged to the hotel, and were specially made for VIP guests. Each backyard was broad and was decorated quite exquisitely with rockworks, pools, pavilions and other objects.

Walking into the magnificent backyard, Ye Chen slightly narrowed his eyes as



he found over ten young people in the broad yard.

As expected, each of them was a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist. Two of them were even in the medium Claspng Yuan Realm, and had been releasing a strong Zhen Qi vibration.

“Haha, brother Lin Yue, you’re here!”

A handsome young man who was happily chatting with others, stood up and greeted Lin Yue with an amiable smile on his face.

“Hehe, it seems that I’m a bit late.” Lin Yue cupped his hands and responded, then turned to Ye Chen and said, “This is the organizer of this party, Qi Shaofeng, ranked 38th of the Hidden Dragon. He has stepped into the medium Claspng Yuan Realm long ago, and is very powerful.”

Hearing him, Ye Chan gave Qi Shaofeng a measuring glance. Qi Shaofeng looked slim and gentle. He didn’t have that kind of fierce gaze that is normally seen from most martial artists’ eyes. Instead, he looked as friendly and warm as a spring breeze. However, Ye Chen dared not to underestimate him just because of his gentle look. All top 50 Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists were in advanced Claspng Yuan Realm back when the last season Hidden Dragon Rank competition was held. Nearly two years had passed after that, and it was totally reasonable for those people to break through the medium Claspng Yuan Realm. Without a doubt, this Qi Shaofeng was definitely an amazing martial artist.

“I was wondering who this was, then found out this was you, Lin Yue. It’s been a long time since the last time we met, I assume you’ve improved more or less, haven’t you? If you don’t have any special skills, you might get weeded out of this new season Hidden Dragon Rank competition.” The seemingly unruly young man beside Qi Shaofeng stood up as well, then glanced at Lin Yue and said.

Lin Yue responded, “Haha, I’m just an average martial artist that can’t even compare to you, Gao Yuan.”

“Who’s this one? How come I’ve never seen you before? You’re not thinking that we’re holding some kind of lame party that anyone can come, are you?”

Lin Yue laughed out loud and explained, “I brought him here. He’s surely qualified for this party.”

“Hm? Do tell.” Qi Shaofeng seemed a bit curious about Ye Chen as well. He believed that Lin Yue wouldn’t just randomly bring a stranger to the party.

Lin Yue introduced Ye Chen to the others, and said, “He’s the most talented young martial artist amongst our nine nations, named Ye Chen. He had even defeated Yuan Hengying once. That Yuan Hengying is still probably recovering from the battle.”

He had defeated Yuan Hengying once?!

Hearing this, the others turned their heads around, looking at Ye Chen.

Qi Shaofeng smiled and said, “Yuan Hengying is an impressively powerful martial artist. You’re indeed qualified for our meeting since you’ve defeated him once. Come, just grab a seat.”

Facing everyone’s stare, Ye Chen stayed calm and found himself a seat. Soon, beautiful waitresses served him wines and drinks.

“I thought he was such a huge deal, but it turns out he did nothing but defeated Yuan Hengying. To be honest, your nine nations don’t have any properly talented martial artists at all.” Gao Yuan took a sip of his tea, then spoke nonchalantly.

Sitting beside Ye Chen, Ling Yue said, “That guy named Gao Yuan is a bit arrogant, but he’s quite powerful, ranked 47th in the last season Hidden Dragon Rank. Now he’s a peak-level medium Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist, and is much more powerful than Yuanheng Ying and Wo Wuxie. Apart from this, I’ve heard that he had some special experiences, and had even mastered a legendary martial art.”

More or less, Lin Yue had his own purpose in bringing Ye Chen here. For example, he wanted to let the others know that, the nine nations did have talented young martial artists.

“People, I, Mu Rong Dao Chen, am late.”

A ringing voice abruptly came from outside, following which, a young woman in a purple dress walked in. She was about twenty years old, had a wonderfully shaped body and was wearing a veil. Although people couldn’t directly see her face, merely judging from the perfect shape of her face, made people think that

she was definitely a breathtakingly beautiful woman. A breeze blew through the yard, bringing an orchid-like scent from her body that was even more intoxicating than the flower aroma in the backyard.

## ***Chapter 178 - Provocation***

A peak-level medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist?

Ye Chen's pupils instantly shrunk. This girl with a veil was a peak-level medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist. With his sensible soul power, Ye Chen grasped the Zhen Qi vibration released from this girl's body, which was as great and strong as a rapidly flowing river.

Lin Yue slightly paused, then turned around with great difficulty after he recognized the girl; he said to Ye Chen with a low voice, "Murong Qingcheng, the second-ranked disciple of the Black Dragon Empire's rank 6 institution, Sky Flying Devil Martial School, Hidden Dragon Ranked 27, but it's said that her real power is no weaker than the top 10."

'Sky Flying Devil Martial School?' Ye Chen thought, 'such a coincidence, back on the Wild Goose Falling River, I've met the Black Crow Taoist Priest, an elder of this Sky Flying Devil Martial School, now I meet their second-ranked disciple here in this Three River City!'

Lin Yue continued, "The Black Dragon Empire is not too far away from here, but usually, very few of martial artists in that empire would respond to Qi Shaoeng's invitation. I have no idea why is she showing up this time, after all, all top 30 Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists are so proud; they hardly ever even talk to lower ranked people."

The appearance of Murong Qingcheng had immediately created a weird atmosphere in the backyard, that all the other young male martial artists simultaneously sorted their clothes and straightened their bodies, trying to show their best sides to this goddess-like girl. As for the other few young female martial artists, each let out a cold sniff, evidently feeling quite unpleasant. However, they had to admit that whether in terms of body shape or temperament, Murong Qingcheng was far better than all of them. As for facial features, everyone knew that Murong Qingcheng was one of the two legendarily beautiful girls in the entire Black Dragon Empire, that even multiple princes of the empire had been dreaming about her.

A vivid passion surged out of Qi Shaofeng's eyes while he hurriedly walked up

and said, “Ah, Miss Murong, please forgive me for not going out to welcome you!”

Murong Qingcheng gave a faint smile and responded, “Just call me Murong.”

“Good, Murong, please take a seat over here.” Qi Shaofeng raised his right arm and showed Murong her seat.

Sitting beside Qi Shaofeng’s seat, Murong Qingcheng held up a cup of tea that was served by a waitress just now; she took a slight sip then swept around the backyard with her pair of soul-taking beautiful eyes. She was slightly surprised when she saw Ye Chen, who was sitting in a corner, because she clearly remembered that Ye Chen was not in the last season Hidden Dragon Rank. ‘He might be a newly emerged talented young martial artist.’ she thought.

This party was held out of no special purpose, but serving as a platform that could allow all talented young martial artists to know each other and exchange their experiences. Without a doubt, as talented and passionate young martial artists from different institutions, martial arts and cultivations were their eternal main topics since the beginning of the time.

“Brother Zhang, I heard that you have already reached the ninth-level of your ‘Wind God Break’, just wondering how powerful you are now. You must be pretty amazing!”

“The ‘Wind God Break’ is the secret martial art of our Wind Steer Martial School, it surely is amazing. Brother He, even your Gold Steel defence art might not be able to hold off my move now.”

“Eh? Since you’ve said so, why don’t we gave a try to find out whether your Wind God Break is more powerful than my Gold Steel defence art?”

“As you wish!”

As martial art related topics went on, some of them couldn’t help but become irritated, making them start a competition.

To this situation, Qi Shaofeng was well prepared that he quickly cleared a large space empty for them, he then grinned and said, “The next season of Hidden Dragon Rank has not yet begun, you two should know when to stop in order to not affect our good friendships.”

“Don’t worry, I won’t hurt him.”

“I’ll be gentle as well.”

These two young martial artists ranked similarly in the last season Hidden Dragon Rank, therefore, they both wanted to find out which one of them was more powerful than the other; it was something that could be told even from their languages.

Qi Shaofeng gave a bitter smile then stepped back to beside Murong Qingcheng.

Boom!

Swiftly, each of the two young martial artists had already launched a move. The sturdy and muscular one released a golden, translucent shield, which had wrapped his entire body up; that shield seemed to be formed from golden air streams, yet it looked thicker and more solid than airstreams, which was more like a layer of golden water, firmly shielding every corner of the martial artist’s body.

In front of him was a tall and slim young man, whose hair was fluttering in the wind. A cyan whirlwind emerged behind his body, which was compressed into an oval shape. The core of the oval whirlwind was deep blue. As the tall and slim young man abruptly threw out a punch, a cyan stream of air immediately coiled around his arm, then swooshed out towards his opponent.

Lin Yue explained to Ye Chen, “The one with Golden Steel defence art is named Zhao Gang, Hidden Dragon Ranked 65, and the one with Wind God Break is named Cheng Feng, Hidden Dragon Ranked 60. Although their ranks are slightly different, their levels are nearly the same, therefore, no one knows who would win this fight.”

“Perhaps Zhao Gang.” Said Ye Chen.

“Why?” Asked Lin Yue confusedly.

Ye Chen grinned and said, “Although Cheng Feng’s moves were launched fiercely and violently like a thunderstorm, but he could never break Zhao Gang’s defence within a short time; but Zhao Gang has already started looking for the weaknesses of Cheng Feng while he’s defending himself. If I’m right, Zhao Gang

will launch his effective counterattack once after Cheng Feng's Zhen Qi begin running out."

Hearing Ye Chen, Lin Yue turned his face back to the battlefield, but he failed to discover any clue that was mentioned by Ye Chen no matter how hard he tried. These two young martial artists had been moving way too swiftly, that it was quite difficult for the other same level martial artists to analyze their fight; even if they could, they couldn't possibly forecast their later situations just like Ye Chen just did.

"Shameless big talker." Said Gao Yuan after letting out a scornful sniff.

Lin Yue didn't take Ye Chen's forecast seriously either, but since Ye Chen was his friend, he would surely defend him from the others under the current situation.

"The conversation is between us and has nothing to do with you." Said Lin Yue.

"Oy," said Gao Yuan with a scornful tone, "Every single one in this space is much more powerful than both of you, the reason why brother Qi invited you is that he wanted to give you a chance to meet some truly talented martial artists and learn that there are always someone beyond you. Don't think that coming to this party makes you equally powerful than us!"

Ye Chen did not show any change in expression, he only responded blandly, "Well, in terms of power, you're only average among all these people here, you're not qualified to say that to us either."

Gao Yuan showed a frosty gaze, then said, "Among the ranks of all Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists of your nine nations, the highest was only 54. If you think that you can domineer the world of younger generation martial artists only because you've defeated some of those lousy Hidden Dragon Ranked martial artists in your nine nations, you would certainly become such a huge joke. Seriously, don't be so stupid, you're not as powerful as you think."

A few others, who had always been looking down upon the nine nations, including the Elephant Mountain Nation and Windy Nation, each showed a teasing look when they heard Gao Yuan.

"Where does this kid come from? He can't really think that he's a big deal, can

he?”

“People from the nine nations have always been in the bottom of every single season of Hidden Dragon Rank.”

“The last time, that stupid thing named Wo Wuxie jumped out and messed around, yet we’ve thought him a good lesson. Now we have another arrogant dumb kid from the nine nations.”

Lin Yue’s face was darkened badly, he whispered to Ye Chen, “Ye Chen, can Zhao Gang truly win the fight?”

“Very likely.”

Ye Chen didn’t care what the others said, he predicted that Zhao Gang could win the fight only because that was the result of his analysis through his soul power.

Those sour words had already caught Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng’s attention.

Qi Shaofeng shook his head and said, “This kid is indeed a bit rash.”

A complicated look flashed across Murong Qingchen’s eyes, but she didn’t say anything.

Boom!

Dazzling Golden light clashed against dark cyan air streams, squeezing out huge amounts of raging fire sparkles.

“Zhao Gang, your turtle shell is indeed hard to break, but I bet you can’t take this coming move!” While shouting, Cheng Feng’s body rose into the air while he spread out his arms and threw a kick down below.

Cyan whirlwind instantly wrapped his right leg up while madly spinning, generating a sharp and piercing cyan spiral under his foot as it was swiftly thrust down.

Gao Yuan gave a sneer when he saw this as he firmly believed that Zhao Gang couldn’t take this move. Most of the others believed so as well.

Ye Chen remained perfectly calm, acting like nothing was happening at all.



Clang!

The golden shield went badly twisted and seemed to break in the next moment; Zhao Gang suddenly raised his left arm and launched a palm attack right onto Cheng Feng's foot.

Cheng Feng leant his body aside, laughed out and said, "Haha, that is only a foreplay of my real attack! [Sudden Storm]!"

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Within only a moment, tens of sharp silhouettes ceaselessly pierced towards Zhao Gang; streams of fierce, awl-shaped power streams broke his golden shield bit by bit.

"Cheng Feng, you're too impatient. Lose!"

Zhao Gang stood perfectly still and said, but right in the following moment, he swiftly flashed across the air while his thick and huge palm, which looked like a statue made of pure gold, struck on Cheng Feng's protective Zhen Qi.

Boom!

Cheng Feng thought that he had suppressed Zhao Gang since the very beginning, but he had never thought that Zhao Gang had been looking for his weakness all this time. At this moment, Cheng Feng's Zhen Qi was beginning to run out, but he had no time to stall. Therefore, he couldn't help but slightly slow down, causing him to fail in dodging the sudden attack. His protective Zhen Qi was then shattered by Zhao Gang's palm, and he was sent flying backwards as blood streams gushed out of his mouth.

"Thank you very much."

Zhao Gang gave a grin, then stepped back into the crowd.

Many of the others were choked by the end of this fight, including Qi Shaofeng. In their eyes, Cheng Feng's comprehensive power should be slightly more powerful than Zhao Gang.

Lin Yue popped up his eyes and glanced at Ye Chen in surprise. This was exactly what he said earlier. Shaking his head, he showed a big grin; Lin Yue felt a strong pleasure of being a winner. He hurriedly turned aside and yelled to Gao Yuan,

“Oy, Brother Gao, you just said that Ye Chen is a shameless big talker? Are you sure that you weren’t talking about yourself?”

“You!” Gao Yuan growled back with a darkened face.

Lin Yue turned back and neglected the other party. He then murmured, “Well, some arrogant people just can’t stop overestimating themselves...”

“Was he just guessing blindly?”

“Surely! He is only an advanced Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist!”

“But I can’t stand watching their proud faces, someone wants to challenge them? Go teach them a good lesson!”

“Haha, don’t even bother, brother Gao Yuan will do it!”

While the others were talking, Gao Yuan took a step forward, pointed his finger at Lin Yue and Ye Chen and said, “Cut the crap, which one of you dares to fight against me? Or you can just fight together, as such, the others won’t call me a bully.”

Before Ye Chen responded, Lin Yue walked up and said, “Fight together? Don’t be ridiculous, who do you think you are? I’ll be the first one.”

Ye Chen stayed silent. Although he wished that Lin Yue would win, Ye Chen couldn’t tell which one of them was more powerful before the fight started.

Gao Yuan curved his lips upwards and said, “If I can’t defeat you within ten moves, I’ll give up and let you win.”

“I’d like to find out how you would make that happen.”

After the journey in the Heaven Dream Ancient Region, Lin Yue had already realized that he was not powerful enough, therefore, he had been training himself severely back in the Dragon and Tiger martial School all this time. If he didn’t improve in the slightest, he wouldn’t even come to this party to shame himself.

On the empty area, the two of them stood twenty meters apart while staring at each other.

Pop!

“Lin Yue, I’ll soon let you know the difference between us.” Gao Yuan took a long gasp, and at the same time, blue light streams poured out from his body; inside those blue light streams, electric bolts dazzlingly sparkled. The flagstone paved on the ground instantly cracked, it was charred black because of the electric bolts.

Lightning Zhen Qi!

Ye Chen was slightly surprised.

## Chapter 179 - Break It with a Single Move

Without a doubt, among all kinds of Zhen Qi, the attacking effects of the lightning Zhen Qi were the strongest; the earth Zhen Qi and gold Zhen Qi were good at defence; while the water Zhen Qi had the greatest recovering power. As for the other rare kinds of Zhen Qi, some of them were more powerful than the others, for example, ice Zhen Qi was an incredibly powerful kind.

Nevertheless, the natural quality of Zhen Qi was only a small element of a martial artist's comprehensive power, it couldn't twist the overall situation of a martial artist. A martial artist's personal cultivation was always the most important thing.

"Lin Yue, take this!"

Dazzling lightning bolts suddenly darted out from Gao Yuan's body as he swiftly moved towards Lin Yue; along with a thunderous boom, he threw out a heavy punch. He moved amazingly fast, as if the distance of twenty meters between the two of them didn't even exist.

So fast! Lin Yue was slightly surprised, but immediately, he released huge waves of cyan-yellow airwaves that surged out of his body and spread out like a tsunami; the waves neutralize the fierce power contained in Gao Yuan's punch.

Following a series of ear-piercing popping noise, countless tiny electric bolts burst out, flashing across the air.

"Do you truly believe that you are capable of withstanding ten moves of mine with your crap defence?" Gao Yuan sneered and said as he thrust his left fist out. An even brighter and thicker stream of lightning bolts roared out and clashed against those cyan-yellow airwaves released by Lin Yue. Because of the high speed, the lightning bolts stream had even let out a shrill noise; judging from which, the speed of this move made by Gao Yuan was as high as the speed of sound.

Standing beside Murong Qingcheng, Qi Shaofeng said, "Lin Yue might lose the fight. Gao Yuan has lightning Zhen Qi, which is not only powerful, but also allowed him another advantage, which is that amazing speed."

"Indeed, but I don't think Lin Yue's going to be defeated so easily." Although

Murong Qincheng was a reticent person, she still responded.

As those cyan-yellow airwaves were shattered layer by layer, Lin Yue finally launched his counter attack.

“Ten moves are far from enough if you want to defeat me! Down!”

Lin Yue didn't step back, instead, his fist abruptly swooshed out. An enormous stream of power instantly transformed into a three-feet tall Zhen Qi cauldron in the air, bumping against Gao Yuan's fierce fist power.

Bang!

Two different kinds of Zhen Qi clashed against each other, generating a sharp and great shock wave that had even sliced a thick layer of the ground off within a single moment. In the next moment, the shock wave struck the backyard wall, which was quite far away from the battlefield, causing it to collapse.

“[Lighting Strike]!”

Their bodies immediately separated after a single slight contact. In terms of the power grade, Gao Yuan was slightly more powerful than Lin Yue, therefore, he quickly regained control of his body, which was fiercely pushed backwards by the great shock wave, that his feet had even deeply gullied the ground. After which, two large spheres of lightning bolts grew out from his palms as he suddenly put his palms together and squeezed a water-tank thick lightning bolts out, striking it towards Lin Yue.

Lightning bolts flashed across the air; wherever it swept over, the ground would began to crack as it got charred black.

“[Cauldron Stabilized the World]!”

Gao Yuan was more powerful than Lin Yue thought, but at this moment, Lin Yue couldn't think that much. He boosted his Zhen Qi up as much as he could; with his feet apart and his arms raised, those thick cyan-yellow airwaves surrounding him transformed into an over three-meter tall Zhen Qi cauldron, firmly shielding Lin Yue behind and blocking the thick lightning bolt.

Clang!

A high-pitched bang erupted along with eye-piercing lightning bolts; fierce

sound waves contained countless electric bolts roared towards every direction, even affecting the surrounding people.

By now, anyone could easily tell the differences between the power levels of all these people. The slightly weaker people were forced to build thick Zhen Qi screens to shield themselves from the roaring shocking wave, while more powerful ones directly shattered the shocking wave that had affected them, or simply boosted their protective Zhen Qi up. Among all those people, Qi Shaofeng, Murong Qingcheng and another medium Yuan Realm martial artist were clearly the most powerful ones.

Qi Shaofeng used his palm as a blade, swiftly swinging it in the air; along with his move, the strong shock wave that had swooshed up to him was straightly cut into two like a piece of paper, then it dissipated. Another medium Yuan Realm martial artist straightened his palm in front of his body; once that shock wave made a contact with his palm, it was crushed just like beans in a millstone.

As for Murong Qingcheng, who was in the highest grade among all these people, she gave a faint smile while slightly crooking her long and slim finger, then she flicked it.

Pop!

The shock wave bounced back against her beautiful finger, as if her slight flick had changed the motion trail of the fierce shock wave.

“Amazing!”

Although Ye Chen had been observing the others all this time, he didn't forget to defend himself from the shock wave. He straightened the first and middle finger of his right hand and slightly swung them upwards in the air, easily cutting the shock wave apart.

Back to the empty area.

Slight streams of blood gushed out at the corners of Lin Yue's mouth, and his clothes were slightly burned.

Gao Yuan laughed out loud and said, “It turns out that I have still overestimated you, you're not as good as you've claimed since you can only take three moves of mine, haha!”

“Too early to say that, the winner is still undetermined. Take this!”

Lin Yue abruptly launched an unknown art, that in an instant, the cyan-yellow air streams around his body grew thicker and denser than before as they swooshed up into the air. After which, he gave a resonant growl and spread out his arms, aiming at Gao Yuan.

Boom!

A ten-meter tall and twenty-meter-wide gigantic cauldron descended from the air, right onto Gao Yuan’s head.

“Are you trying to suppress me?!”

Gao Yuan instantly knitted his brows as he suddenly felt that his body had become heavy and stiff; his protective Zhen Qi was even squeezed back into his body. At that moment, he was almost disabled from moving. In the following moment, the ground under his feet couldn’t stand the great pressure as it cracked and sank down into a one-meter deep pit, which had a similar shape with the gigantic cauldron.

“Growl!”

Gao Yuan let out a resonant and furious growl, and at the same time, that dazzling and explosive electric bolts burst out of his body once again; following which, a lively lightning fist rose up into the air and heavily punched on the gigantic Zhen Qi cauldron.

Despite the huge size of that Zhen Qi cauldron, it was still a bit blur and rough in shape. Having been struck by the lightning fist, the Zhen Qi cauldron was shattered immediately.

Puff!

Lin Yue spat out a mouthful of blood as his face turned ashen.

“You’re already quite impressive since you’ve pushed me this far, but now you’re going to lose!” Standing in the pit, Gao Yuan threw another heavy punch out towards Lin Yue along with huge streams of lightning bolts.

“Lin Yue can’t take this punch.”

Without any hesitation, Ye Chen’s body transformed into a hazy silhouette,

darting towards Lin Yue. At the same time, he pulled the Dragon Spring Sword out and hacked on the lightning fist.

Strong lightning bolts darted out of the lightning fist when Gao Yuan gave a malicious and scornful grin back in the pit. This punch was powerful enough to shatter a small mountain, even ordinary peak-level medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists couldn't possibly take that.

Puff!

The lightning fist was split into two from the middle, while Ye Chen stayed perfectly unharmed.

"Did he just broke that punch? No! How is it possible?!" Gao Yuan paused in shock as he couldn't even believe what he had just seen.

All the others who had been watching the fight were as shocked as him.

"Gao Yuan's [Thunderbolt Punch] was hacked apart! Is that even real?!"

"I suppose Gao Yuan didn't launch the punch with hundred percent power! After all, this punch was meant for Lin Yue, that he must have taken twenty to thirty percent of his power back."

Turning around, Ye Chen said to Lin Yue, "I got this."

"Be careful," Lin Yue wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth and seriously said, "He's much more powerful than he was two years ago. He can almost fight against advance Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists evenly."

"I know."

Ye Chen turned his eyes back to Gao Yuan after Lin Yue stepped back.

Leaping out of the pit, Gao Yuan chuckled and said, "Good, you have broken a punch of mine, that was launched with eighty percent of my power. It's more than enough for you to be proud of."

"What would be different even if you launched it with hundred percent power? Just show whatever you can!"

"I wish you can stay so confident later."

Gao Yuan gave a shrill long shout, and afterwards, those lightning bolts



surrounding his body suddenly boosted up. Obviously, he didn't use his full power before, as he didn't think Lin Yue deserved that. If Ye Chen didn't break his lighting bolts with a single sword move, he would still take a part of his power back, but now he didn't want to do that. Instead, he wanted to knock Ye Chen down with the next punch and the next punch alone; he wanted him to lose completely.

Taking a step forward, Gao Yuan stamped the ground, causing it to crack. Meanwhile, lighting bolts wrapped up his entire right arm, making it look like an arm of thunderbolts, which then swooshed out along with a domineeringly great power.

“[One Thunderbolt Double Blinks]!”

Crack!

The enormous thunderbolt fist exploded in the air, splitting into two slightly smaller fists, darting towards Ye Chen from both sides at a literally lightning speed.

“Not enough!”

Ye Chen still remained calm, yet his body immediately split into two silhouettes as well, each breaking a thunderbolt fist right away.

“Shadow-Dividing Light Art ? Hm, just a small trick!”

Gao Yuan was a bit disappointed since he had failed to defeat Ye Chen with the punch. However, soon he forgot that disappointment as he took another long gasp. Those lightning bolts surrounding his body suddenly shrunk and tightly attached on his skin. It formed a blurry lighting armour that was in a magnificent shape, which made Gao Yuan look like an ancient warrior who was brave and violent.

“Damn! Gao Yuan has already gained the [Thunderbolt Armour]! It's said that once after a martial artist gained the Thunderbolt armour, the power of his or her Thunderbolt Punch will increase by fifty percent!” Said Qi Shaofeng with a surprised tone.

Murong Qingcheng said, “Ever since the last season Hidden Dragon Rank ended, everyone had been improving rapidly. The next season Hidden Dragon

Rank is going to be more competitive.”

“That’s for sure, now that the general situation of the younger generation martial artists in the South Zhuo Region is at the peak status, it’s gonna be unimaginably difficult if we want a higher rank.”

While this conversation was happening, Gao Yuan gave another great growl.

“[Heavenly Thunderball]!”

Before that move was made, a large piece of ground under Gao Yuan’s feet began to crack and sink down, as if an invisible power had been tearing the ground apart; after that, those broken stone pieces that were paved on the ground floated up into the air, filling the entire space with countless electric bolts that flashed everywhere.

Right in the next moment!

A bright stream of light, which looked like a shooting star, swished out from Gao Yuan’s palm. It was tailed by tens of meters long lightning streams that was coiled around by thick, crackling lightning bolts that were shaped like snakes. Moreover, those large stone pieces floated in the air were dragged along by those electric bolts as they swooshed towards Ye Chen, as if the entire space was pressing onto Ye Chen’s head.

“This move is more than enough to defeat an advance Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, Gao Yuan has already won.”

“Well, it’s better this way. Those reckless kids should learn a lesson anyway. They have to know that this world is vast and their nine nations are nothing, nothing at all.”

Even though this punch hadn’t struck on Ye Chen’s body yet, all the others believed that Ye Chen was going to lose the fight.

“Still not enough!”

Ye Chen showed a cold, fierce gaze as he spoke. His clothes rose and fluttered backwards without being blown by the wind. He gripped the Dragon Spring Sword with both hands and simply swung it down. The move he made seemed to be slow, but in fact he moved so fast and incredibly forceful. When he swung the

Dragon Spring Sword, the surrounding people seemed to fall into an illusion. They all faintly felt an invisible power that had stirred the entire space and quieted everything and everyone down; the space had suddenly become so quiet that one could even hear a needle falling to the ground, the sounds of wind blowing across grasses and leaves, and even the sound of the blood flowing in the surrounding people's own body.

Puff!

What broke firstly were those stone pieces and small electric bolts flowing behind the great thunderbolt. Under the effect of this sword move launched by Ye Chen, a completely invisible and great force field was created, which seemed to be able to crush the entire world. Even more dazzling thunderbolts flashed over right after those stone pieces were crushed, but a clear stream of sword light struck down towards it accurately; this tremendous, shooting star like thunderbolt looked exactly as powerful as a genuine lightning descending from the heaven, which could seemingly destroy everything in the world. However, facing that clear stream of sword light, it was easily and quickly chopped into two right from the middle.

“He broke Gao Yuan's attack once again...with a single move...”

Someone murmured.

## Chapter 180 - A Small Success of the Sword Intent, Great Sky Devil Force Field

“How can it be?! My Thunderbolt Punch has already reach such a high level that the power of my punches should’ve improved by at least nearly fifty percent. Even advance Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist shouldn’t be able to take my punches now, how the hell did he break it with a single sword move?! Is that the sword intent?! It can’t be!!”

Thinking of the term ‘sword intent’, Gao Yuan couldn’t help but instantly quiver. He stared at Ye Chen, who was shrouded by countless sparkling electric bolts, with a badly shocked face. In his eyes, Ye Chen’s average-looking body shape began expanding limitlessly at the moment, and that fierce sense of power released from Ye Chen’s body seemed to be capable of tearing the entire universe apart.

Followed by a loud and shrill sizzling noise, Ye Chen walked out from those electric bolts that had been roaring around his body. His blue outfit remained perfectly clean and stainless, and those thick streams of lightning bolts, which were combined from countless tiny electric bolts, were all shattered and dissipated by his sharp protective Zhen Qi even before they could approach his body. Those dazzling and seemingly terrifying lightning bolts were actually unable to hurt him even by a little bit.

“I’ve already taken three punches of yours, now you should try to take a sword move of mine.”

A sharp and fierce gaze zipped out of Ye Chen’s eyes, like two invisible and especially piercing beams of sword power, darting right towards Gao Yuan; Gao Yuan felt a chill ran down his spine in the following moment, even his fine hairs stood on end as his scalp went numbed.

“That’s nothing but a sword move! I’d like to find out how are you planning to break my defence with a single move.”

Gao Yuan indeed feared Ye Chen’s sword intent. Although he hadn’t fought against a possessor of the sword intent and learned its true power in the last season of the Hidden Dragon Rank, he could still clearly remember the tremendous shock created by someone’s sword intent; but luckily, this was not a Hidden Dragon Rank competition, and he still had plenty of time to build a solid

defence.

“[Tunderbolt Triple Heaven]!”

Slightly lowering his body, Gao Yuan gave a deep growl as he abruptly joined his palms together then spread his arms; swiftly, he repeated the motion for three times. Along with his moves, three layers of dazzlingly blue thunderbolt defensive screen emerged in front of him in a row. Looking inside the three layers of screens, the world was badly blurred and everything began shaking.

“Who would know that this kid is actually capable of forcing Gao Yuan to use his full defence?!”

“Once a sword artist gained sword intent, his or her power would immediately immensely increase. Normally, ordinary martial artists could barely fight evenly against possessors of the sword intent who are at the same power level with themselves.”

“Nevertheless, I don’t think he can break all those three layers of defence merely with this move.”

Finding out that Ye Chen had attained the sword intent, the looks of most of the others turned serious.

Slightly flipping her hair which was fluttering in the air, Murong Qingcheng said with interest, “Small success of the sword intent, I assume only very few have reached this level among the younger generation martial artists in the entire South Zhuo Region.”

Qi Shaofeng paused briefly, then nodded and responded, “In the last season Hidden Dragon Ranking, thirteen competitors were possessors of the sword intent in total, and among them, two have achieved a small success of the sword intent. However, amongst all thirteen of them, only eight have gained ranks, while the other five were too immature in cultivation and were not capable of using their sword intents properly. I think they will all show up again in the next season of the Hidden Dragon Ranking.”

“The South Zhuo Region has a billion of people, but the number of sword intent possessors under twenty-four years old are only thirteen. I have never thought that the nine nations, the poor region where Lin Yue came from, can

actually raise a young martial artist who has already reached a small success of the sword intent, so impressive.”

“Indeed, sword artists who have attained the sword intent are truly terrifying, they are able to maintain the peak status of their powers in every single second, and their sword intent can perish anything that would affect their fights negatively.”

Qi Shaofeng took a long and deep gasp as he looked at Ye Chen with a pair of passionate eyes.

“Just take this!”

After Gao Yuan constructed his defence, Ye Chen took a small step forward while gripping the sword hilt. He swung his sword from left to right, his move seemingly perfectly quick and clean.

Following his move, the air rippled like water surfaces, then it was cut open like a piece of paper.

Pop!

Pop!

Pop!

The three layers of thunderbolt defensive screen only managed to hold the sword Qi for a short moment, before they were punctured by the destructively fierce sword Qi. Gao Yuan, who was under the protection of those dazzling screens, spat a mouthful of blood out; at the same time, the lightning armour wore he was wearing instantly shattered.

“Is this how amazing the sword intent is? My defence is like nothing to him...”

Gao Yuan let out another mouthful of blood, then lowered his head.

The entire backyard fall into a deadly silence; at the moment, one could hear nothing but slightly rustling noise made by the plants. After a long while, people finally began talking.

“Gao Yuan has lost the fight, that kid won with a single sword move...”

“This guy’s incredibly powerful and talented, if he can step into a higher grade

before the next season Hidden Dragon Ranking, another legendary figure might emerge.”

Standing in the crowd, Lin Yue was deeply shocked by Ye Chan and silently exclaimed, ‘It’s only been a couple of months since the last time I met him, yet his power has already increased by leaps and bounds, this Ye Chen is truly amazing.”

“Thank you.”

Ye Chen cupped his hands and slightly bowed to Gao Yuan, then stepped back to beside Lin Yue.

“Ye Chen, that was...”

“Just a Small Success of the Sword Intent.”

Before, Ye Chen’s sword intent was already very close to small success of the sword intent, and when the Ocean Beast ship sailed past the Natural Moat Gorge, Ye Chen’s sword intent was crushed by the Battle Emperor’s sword intent that had been lingering in the gorge; however, this had brought Ye Chen a new and deeper understanding of the sword intent. In addition to his crushed and regrown sword intent, he finally broke through from his old level and stepped into the Small Success of the Ssword intent.

The sword intent close to Small Success seemed to be only half a step away from the Small Success of the sword intent, yet the difference between the two was huge as the difference between ordinary men and freaks.

“Just as I thought.”

Lin Yue nodded and said with a long sigh.

Gao Yuan was defeated and dared not to challenge Ye Chen again, while the others quickly stopped talking about this fight after a brief shock. After all, wins and losses were as frequent as lunches and dinners to these young martial artists. None of these younger generation artists was willing to be the weaker one; if they lose a fight, they would take the loss as an alert, silently going back to train themselves even more severely in order to defeat their opponents one day and wash the shame off. This strong competition was exactly the reason why these young martial artists had been improving so rapidly. They surpass each

other over and over again, and through this, their potentials were activated bit by bit.

When these younger generation martial artists hit their peak status, the truly powerful martial artists emerge one after another; it is when the real flourishing age of the True Spirit Continent would come.

“Murong, the last time, I have missed the chance to compete against you, what about we take a brief bout right now?” Another medium Clasp of Yuan Realm young martial artist couldn’t bear waiting anymore, intending to compete against Murong Qingcheng and find out the actual power level of himself.

“Sure.” Murong Qingcheng smiled and responded.

The air suddenly became sticky and as thick as the water. At the same time, Murong Qingcheng silently flashed across the air and appeared in the middle of the battlefield. At that moment, many of the others felt a sudden pause from their minds.

“A force field?”

A shocked look appeared in Ye Chen’s eyes.

Lin Yue then said in a low voice, “Murong Qingcheng’s majored martial art is one of the two legendarily secret martial arts possessed by the Sky Flying Devil martial school, called Great Sky Devil Art. It is a top-ranked Earth Realm martial art divided into fifteen levels. The martial artist will be able to create a Sky Devil Force Field in the level-6, which can allow the martial artist to manipulate the air inside the force field to boost their movement speed to an extreme degree. Moreover, the power of enemies’ attacks can also be weakened, even entirely neutralized by the force field. This is a nearly invincible skill. Many people think she should be no less powerful than the top 10 of the last season Hidden Dragon Ranking.”

“However, the guy who challenged Murong is not an easy one either, his name is Wei Renjie, and he has attained the blade intent two years ago. He was ranked 37 in the last season Hidden Dragon Ranking, even higher than Qi Shaofeng. I have no idea what power level he is now at. Attending this party is so worth it, I have never thought that we can watch such a high-grade competition here.”



Finishing his speech, Lin Yue felt that his blood even began boiling.

“Top-ranked Earth Realm martial art, Great Sky Devil Art, and the blade intent!”

Ye Chen slowly let out a long breath. Rank 6 institutions were indeed as powerful as people said that they even possessed Top-ranked Earth Realm martial arts; rank 7 institutions couldn't even compare with them. Without a doubt, institutions beyond rank 7 were called as super institutions because their general powers were so great. As for that young man named Wei Renjie, Ye Chen was wondering why he wasn't affected by the enormously great sense of power released by Murong, it turned out that was because he was a possessor of the blade intent. People who had attained the sword intent and the blade intent all have especially firm determinations, which allowed them to be hardly affected by other things or people; but of course, once a certain negative effect happened on them, that would still be disastrous, because gradually, their sword intent or blade intent might die out. If it affected severely, they might be disabled from achieving any martial accomplishment all their lives. Therefore, it could be said that any fight could be much riskier to possessors of the sword intent or blade intent than it was to the others.

“If you're still at the level 6 of your Great Sky Devil Art, you might lose to me today.”

Wei Renjie laughed out loud and said while walking towards the battlefield step by step. Every step forward, the sense of the blade power released by him would grow stronger and greater, and when the seventh step was made, an enormous stream of blade power swooshed up into the air, cutting the surrounding air into pieces.

“Brother Wei, you seem confident.” Murong Qingcheng stood in the middle of the battlefield and said. The air surrounding her remained completely still, and it was not affected by the blade power at all.

“If I don't have that confidence, I would have lost already. How can I be not confident about myself?”

Clang!

Pulling his blade out of the sheath, Wei Renjie launched the first move.

His sword move was activated with sword intent, and it was as rampant as an evil dragon. A sharp stream of blade power roared out towards Murong Qingcheng, who stood in not so far away. However, before the blade power even approach her, the ground around the area, which had a radius of one zhang surrounding Murong Qingcheng, sank down immediately; as for the one zhang in radius area around her, it was under the effect of her force field.

“Break!”

Murong Qingcheng took a step forward and slapped on the blade power with her long and slim hand.

Buzz!

The air instantly went twisted. Those slim and beautiful fingers, which seemed gentle and soft, contained terrifyingly great power, that it had even twisted the moving track of the blade power. The blade power stream was weakened by thirty percent once after Murong’s fingers touched it, then she easily slapped it into oblivion.

“[Terrifying Waves]!”

Wei Renjie gave a great growl. While gripping the blade hilt with both hands, he swung the blade down.

Boom!

A thunderous, tsunami-like noise rose from his blade, along with which, an unspeakably huge stream of blade Qi swooshed out of the blade and darted out, as if it was meant to devour every single person and object on its way. Even Ye Chen was slightly shocked by this great stream of blade Qi, just as Lin Yue said, as the ranked 37 martial artist in the last season Hidden Dragon Ranking, this guy was definitely a tough one.

“[Great Sky Devil Force Filed]!”

Murong Qingcheng’s look slightly turned serious as she pushed both of her palms forward and built an even stronger force field in front of her, attempting to crush this stream of blade Qi and those hazy Zhen Qi waves behind it.

Crack!

What suffered the first was the luxurious building behind Murong Qingcheng; it was split into two from the middle, leaving a gigantic gully on the ground. Right after that, Wei Renjie's blade Qi went shattered as well; the blade Qi was twisted into an extreme degree when it was still half a zhang away from Murong, then broke down.

"Great Sky Devil Art, level-7?!"

Wei Renjie stared at Murong right into the eyes, but he didn't launch another move.

"Your blade intent should have already reached a small success, since you've managed to break a half of my force field." Murong gave a typical faint smile and said.

Wei Renjie pushed his blade back into the sheath, shook his head and said, "I lost. The Great Sky Devil Art is a top-ranked Earth Realm martial art and incredibly strong. Your power must have improved since you're now at the seventh level of it, I can never break your upgraded force field with my current power, I deserve to lose."

'Such a powerful art! But it is not perfect, its biggest weakness is nothing else but its difficulty, which made Murong Qingcheng improve very slowly. She has already stepped into the medium Claspng Yuan Realm, but she was still in the seventh-level of this Great Sky Devil Art, and it might take her even more time to break into the eighth-level; compared with her, although my Great Mystery Art is in a lower grade, but I can master it with much less time. I should be no weaker than her till I reached the ninth or tenth level of the Great Mystery art, hm, the good thing is I have been breaking through into new levels very fast, I'll be there soon.'

While watching Wei Renjie admitting defeated, Ye Chen silently compared Murong Qingchen with himself.

## Chapter 181 - Head To The Grey Mystery Nation

As the battle between Murong Qincheng and Wei Renjie ended, the others were perfectly agitated and began their own battles, including Qi Shaofeng.

What Qi Shaofeng had been using was a rare pair of branch weapon called Waning Moon. With only one move, his opponent who was a peak-level late Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist was sent flying directly into the air. A ten-meter long, half a zhang deep, arc-shaped cut appeared on the ground between them.

Lin Yue couldn't help but whisper to Ye Chen, "Don't let Qi Shaofeng's nice and gentle look confuse you. In fact, he would never hesitate in launching a deadly attack."

Ye Chen nodded. Some people looked as nice and friendly as a sheep, yet, they were actually as fierce as a wolf. This kind of people usually seemed nothing special but once they were enraged and exhibited their real powers, they could be even more terrifying than genuine wolves.

Putting the pair of Waning Moon back, Qi Shaofeng raised his head, looked at the sky, then grinned and said, "My dear friends, the party is over. Feel free to hang around this place for as long as you like. All of your expenses will be covered by me. I believe I can surely afford that."

"Ah, the delicacies in this Three Rivers City is quite famous. I have been drooling over it for a long time! Since our dear brother Qi is so generous, I'll probably take this opportunity and try those famous delicacies!"

"Hehe, if you want to taste some Three Rivers City's authentic delicacies, you'd have to go to those nice boat — hotels!"

Most of these young martial artists were energetic and vigorous young men. None of them was a virgin anymore. The delicacies served by those boat-hotels was merely a perfect excuse and a nice side dish. Their real interests were in those beautiful and young girls who worked on those boat-hotels as entourage. Although these young men were clearly aware of each other's thoughts, none of them could say it out loud since Murong Qingcheng and a few other female young martial artists were still there.

Leaving that nearly damaged backyard, the group of young martial artists walked in separate ways.

Late at night.

The Three Rivers City was still ablaze with lights, showing no sign of quieting down.

Inside the bedroom, Ye Chen had been sitting on a king-sized bed with his legs crossed, and working on his Zhen Qi cultivation concentratedly; all those noises coming from outside couldn't affect him even by the slightest amount.

Those people he met at the party today, such as Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng, had given Ye Chen a great pressure. Among those young martial artists, some had mastered legendarily powerful martial arts, some possessed great martial skills. Even the sword skill which always allowed him to defeat opponents at a higher level than himself, seemed less impressive today because Wei Renjie had attained the blade intent which was equally legendary to the sword intent. Moreover, he had also reached a small success on his blade intent, just like Ye Chen did on his sword intent.

If he attended the Hidden Dragon Rank with his current power, he could never make into the top 40. Perhaps, even the top 50 would also be a dream to him. It had been two years since the last season Hidden Dragon Rank ended, who knew how much had those low-ranked martial artists improved during this time period? Some of them might've been immature and were lacking in practice back when they last attended. But in the past two years, those young and talented martial artists could have already reached a whole new level and probably could make into the top 30, or even the top 10 this time.

Ye Chen felt a slight pain from his meridians. Therefore, he cut off the connection between his meridians and the spirit stones held in his hands, then slowly opened his eyes.

"Pressure is a good thing, but I have to be patient and strengthen myself bit by bit. After all, no one can grow enough muscles in only one day. Anxiousness can't help anyway. At this moment, I'll have to concentrate on reaching the top level of the Grey Mystery Art."

.....

On a tall building were two dark human silhouettes.

With the dim moonlight, you could find that they were a man and a woman. The woman was wearing a purple dress and veil; just like you thought, it was none other than Murong Qingcheng, the second-ranked disciple of the Sky Flying Devil Martial School, while the man was Qi Shaofeng.

“Brother Qi,” a soft breeze gently blew across Murong Qingcheng’s veil while she spoke in a bland tone, “you asked me to come all the way here. Not only for the small party, I assume.”

“Surely not.” Responded Qi Shaofeng with his typical smile.

“Hm, then I’d like to know the real purpose of yours.”

Murong Qingcheng seemed calm and careless, but abruptly, she thrust her hand out and clenched her fist. Along with her move, a bat nearby which was searching for food, got instantly crushed by a sudden and invisible emerging force field.

Qi Shaofeng gave his explanation, “Three months ago, I’ve got the information about how someone gained a Sky Devil Serpent’s scale in the vast mountain area of the Grey Mystery Nation.”

“Sky Devil Serpent’s scale? Are you serious?”

Murong Qingcheng stared at Qi Shaofeng with a sharp and piercing gaze, while a subtle and weird look flashed across her eyes.

Breathing slightly heavier than before, Qi Shaofeng turned his eyes away from Murong Qingcheng’s face embarrassedly, then he smiled and continued, “It should be true. That Sky Devil Serpent’s scale was then purchased by me with one hundred thousand gold and five hundred pieces of low-ranked stones. I have it right now, you can take a look yourself.”

His storage ring shone with a dim light and along with that, a human-head sized scale appeared in Qi Shaofeng’s hand. He took a deep breath, then handed the scale to Murong Qingcheng.

Taking the scale, Murong Qingcheng activated her Sky Devil Zhen Qi and injected it into the scale.

Buzz!

The surrounding air slightly rippled, while a black layer of light emerged around the scale.

“It’s indeed a Sky Devil Serpent’s scale, because only the scales of Sky Devil Serpents can make connection with my Sky Devil Zhen Qi.” At first, Murong Qingcheng showed a surprise look on her face, but soon gave a bitter smile and said, “However, judging from the shape of this scale, this serpent should still be in its growth stage, level 7 or above. That means even if we join hand in hand, we couldn’t possibly survive a casual attack launched by it. Not to mention even taking the Sky Devil Bloom.

Murong Qingcheng cared so much about this. It wasn’t because that she wanted something from the serpent itself; instead, what she truly wanted was a Sky Devil Bloom, that had been guarding by Sky Devil Serpents. According to the ancient legend, Sky Devil Blooms were nourished by the ancient Devil King’s blood and contained an extremely great power. If she could have a single petal of the Sky Devil Bloom, she could probably break into the eighth, or even the ninth level of her Great Sky Devil Art within a short amount of time. If she obtained the entire bloom, she could even reach the top level of the Great Sky Devil Art. In the history of the Sky Flying Devil Martial School, apart from some legendarily powerful martial artists who had already fallen, not a single one had ever managed to achieve the top level of this Great Sky Devil Art.

Qi Shaofeng grinned and said, “I surely won’t waste your time by letting you come all the way here for nothing. Look closer and see if this scale is complete?”

Hearing him, Murong Qingcheng looked down and checked the scale again. Just as Qi Shaofeng said, there was a crack on the edge of that scale which she didn’t notice earlier because she was too excited.

“This serpent was wounded!”

Murong Qingcheng clearly knew that Sky Devil Serpents had amazingly great defensive power, same level demonic beasts could hardly hurt them. That would mean the scales of Sky Devil Serpents wouldn’t fall off easily. Unlike ordinary snakes and serpents, Sky Devil Serpents would eat their own exuvial skins. Therefore, no scales would ever fall off during ecdysis.

“Even if it’s an injured growth stage Sky Devil Serpent, we can’t possibly handle it. Unless it has severe internal injuries and can’t recover in a short time.” Despite that she wanted a Sky Devil Bloom desperately, Murong Qingcheng remained perfectly calm.

“That day, a thunderstorm appeared in the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range, not far away from the person who found this scale. I assume that thunderstorm was meant to be the serpent’s tribulation, and other demonic beasts or martial artists had tried to kill it when its tribulation came because that would be in its weakest moment. By now, the serpent might already be dead, and yet you are able to make a connection with the Sky Devil Bloom with your Sky Devil Zhen Qi. As long as the distance is not too big, we most likely can find it.”

Qi Shaofeng tried so hard to help Murong Qingcheng obtaining that Sky Devil Bloom for one and only one purpose, that was to earn her heart. Ever since he met Murong Qingcheng at the last season Hidden Dragon Rank, he was totally obsessed with her because of her beauty and talent. He had been attracted to her too deeply that he couldn’t even control his desire of loving her, just like many other young male martial artists.

“I owe you one.”

More or less, Murong Qingcheng understood why Qi Shaofeng had been doing all these for her. But she didn’t want to accept his love and neither was she willing to give up on that Sky Devil Bloom.

“When do you want to go for the bloom? I am not as powerful as you, but I can try my best to help.” Said Qi Shaofeng.

“Three days later, I need some time to prepare.”

“Good, I’ll see you then.”

After Qi Shaofeng left, Murong Qingcheng turned around, looked down at the Three Rivers City while sighing slightly. She had a good impression of Qi Shaofeng, but that was all. She was deeply aware that nothing real would ever happen between Qi Shaofeng and herself. Moreover, her focused martial art was the Great Sky Devil Art which made her nearly immune to love. Nevertheless, although she couldn’t easily fall in love, once that happened, it would never



change till she died.

The air slightly twisted and at the same moment, Murong Qingcheng disappeared.

.....

Mornings in the Three Rivers City were always lively, all kinds of noises were mixed together and gushed into hotel rooms.

After Ye Chen brushed his teeth and washed his face, he then walked out of his room.

The streets were filled with people, bustling in activity.

“Passenger ship to the Grey Mystery Nation! Three seats left! Anyone who intends to go to the Grey Mystery Nation, please head to dock number 23 as quickly as you can!”

Ye Chen stopped, asked, “How fast can the passenger ship travel?”

“Our South Chamber of Commerce’s ships are always fast! Four thousand miles a day! This ship is purchased from the Black Dragon Emperor!”

Ye Chen was slightly surprised, but then he shook his head. Three Rivers City was the location of South Chamber of Commerce’s branch. One could surely find lots of ships belonging to the South Chamber of Commerce. However, the moving speeds of those ships were far slower than Ocean Beasts. As the ship could only move four thousand miles a day, it would take fifty days from here to the Grey Mystery Nation. That was too slow.

“I’ll just pass then.”

Ye Chen decided to travel to the Grey Mystery Nation on foot instead of taking any ship. With his current power, he could travel at least ten thousand miles daily.

After leaving the Three Rivers City, Ye Chen leapt into the air, then flew swiftly along the Wild Goose Falling River.

As he gradually flew far away from the city, fewer people could be seen around him. At last, he couldn’t find a single person in the surrounding area. What continued accompanying with him was nothing else but the vast river and

endless mountain range.

Boom!

Punching a flying demonic beast that had rushed towards him away, Ye Chen remained a great speed and flashed into the thriving mountain area.

Moving along the river was not a shortcut at all. He now needed to move across the Spirit Speaking Nation's mountain range in order to arrive the Grey Mystery Nation as soon as possible.

Time flew as quickly as the rapidly flowing water.

After half a month, Ye Chen finally arrived at the Grey Mystery Nation.

Opening a map of this nation, Ye Chen pointed his finger on the map while murmuring, "This Grey Mystery Nation is basically formed by mere mountain ranges. Here should be the Ancient Trail Mountain Range, and Triangle Mountain Range. If I go further straight, after the Triangle Mountain Range, I will have to travel across a desert in order to get to the edge of the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range. After that, I don't know exactly where to go. After all, the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range looks tiny on the map, each peak can't be marked individually on the map. Therefore, I'll have to find it by myself. Well, fine then, I should just head to that place first."

After he packed the map, Ye Chen glanced at the sky then darted out.

Mountains in the Grey Mystery Nation were far more dangerous than the mountains in the Windy Nation. Therefore, Ye Chen dared not to recklessly rush into the mountains because that might cause the attention of some powerful demonic beasts.

In this way, he might take longer than he expected.

Nevertheless, although he had been extra careful, he couldn't possibly avoid all trouble. After Ye Chen traveled across the mountains for three days, he had encountered seven level 6 demonic beasts and two peak level 6 demonic beasts in total. For level 6 demonic beasts, Ye Chen could still handle the situation. Although he couldn't defeat them, he had easily managed to escape. However, both of the two peak level 6 demonic beasts had almost injured him while he had spent quite an effort to escape their chase. Even for once, he had clearly seen

trails of a level 7 demonic beast. Fortunately, the beast had already gone far away from him.

Gazing at the golden and seemingly boundless desert in front of him, Ye Chen let out a long sigh of relief and murmured, “I finally arrived at this desert! I should be able to enter the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range after travelling across this desert.”

Instead of keeping moving forward, Ye Chen found a shade and sat down, then took a break. During the past few days, he had been too nervous which made him feel a bit tired.

In the next morning, Ye Chen left the mountains and walked into the desert.

## ***Chapter 182 - Bone-Corroding Miasma***

Looking around, Ye Chen couldn't see anything but the vast and golden desert. The surface of the desert was as smooth as silk, with perfectly fair-shaped undulations that formed into different sizes of sandhills. From time to time, some low-level demonic snakes would occasionally dash out of the sand, wriggle their bodies, then widely opening their jaws and launching a deadly strike on their prey.

Boom!

When Ye Chen walked across a medium-sized sandhill, he suddenly felt his scalp tingle and he instantly jumped into the air, leaving an afterimage from where he formerly stood. In the following second, the sandhill sank down to the ground and instead, an enormous black hole emerged from underneath, having a thick line of sharp teeth on its edge.

That was a gigantic demonic beast and the black hole was its mouth. If Ye Chen didn't react quickly in time, he would've been swallowed by this beast and chewed into meat paste already.

"Walking in the desert is too dangerous! This demonic beast had been hiding so deep that it didn't even let out any trace of power!" Ye Chen was indeed completely startled.

Back on the ground.

The demonic beast didn't seem to care too much about missing its target. It only sunk back into the ground and soon disappeared, leaving a huge pit in the sand ground.

.....

This desert was not as vast as the Ancient Scorching Desert. Ye Chen crossed it in only three days' time, after which he soon arrived at the sprawling and massive Hundred Thousand Mountain Range area.

"This Hundred Thousand Mountain Range is the largest and also the most dangerous region of the entire South Zhuo Region. I can barely survive in it with my current strength. Fortunately, I've finally reached the ninth level of the Great

Mystery Art the day before yesterday. By now, both the quality and quantity of my Zhen Qi have already improved dramatically, allowing me to deal with medium level six demonic beasts.”

As stated by its name, people had said that the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range had one hundred thousand huge mountains in total, but in fact, there were also countless, relatively smaller mountains in this place. In total, the number of mountains in this place might be millions or even tens of millions. This region was extensive, nearly boundless, and covered four-fifths of the Grey Mystery Nation’s territory. In history, not a single person had ever managed to entirely travel across the region. Even the number of people who had travelled across one-tenths of this region was very few, because the region was literally vast and had countless mountains. Even if a martial school sent all of their people into this region, that would only be equal to a drop of water into the ocean; not a single ripple would be stirred.

Taking a deep breath, Ye Chen walked right into the outskirts of the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range.

.....

While Ye Chen was treading across the mountains, two human silhouettes showed up at the Ancient Trail Mountain Range near the border of the Grey Mystery Nation. One was wearing a black outfit while the other, a cyan outfit. Those two were the young men from the Huang Family in Black Rock City.

Standing on a gigantic tree, the young man in a black outfit said, “After we go through the Ancient Trial Mountain Range, Triangle Mountain Range, and the desert, we’ll enter the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range. Qin Hao, are we really going into the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range? It’s said that this Hundred Thousand Mountain Range area is the most mysterious and also the most dangerous region of the entire South Zhuo Region. Countless level 7 and level 8 demonic beasts are living in it. You can even find level 9 demonic beasts there, and even Astral Reaching Realm martial artists dare not to just tread there rashly. However, demonic beasts still aren’t the most terrifying thing within the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range. According to legend, some magical, mysterious and ancient terrifying entities were left in that region, those which are far more dreadful and deadlier than demonic beasts.”

“Well, risks are always proportional to profits. If we stop only because of those possible dangers, how could we possibly obtain what we desire? Besides, the location of the red spot isn’t in the middle of that mountain area, but only near the edge. We might not even encounter with that many terrifying things.” Responded the young man in a cyan outfit with a bland look.

The young man in black slightly loosened his tightened face, then continued, “The edge area of this Hundred Thousand Mountain Range is so broad, where exactly is the location of that red spot?”

“It’s on a goat-head shaped mountain, surrounded by a thriving jungle.”

“Ah, it should be easy to find since we already know the shape of the mountain, let’s go!”

Swish! Swish!

Both of them then swiftly darted into the Ancient Trail Mountain Range.

“Qin Hao and Tiao Chong had come as well, so unexpected.” On another mountaintop which wasn’t too far away from where the two young men formerly stayed, a man and a woman showed up. The one who was talking with a warm smile, was Qi Shaofeng, while the beautiful girl standing beside him wearing a purple dress, was Murong Qingcheng.

Murong Qingcheng said, “They shouldn’t be after the same thing as we are.”

“You’re right, Sky Devil Blooms can do no help to them, therefore, they have no reason to take such a huge risk and pursue it.”

Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng began their journey three days after Ye Chen left the Three River City, during which, they accidentally saw Qin Hao and Tian Chong, who were both powerful martial artists ranked higher than 45th in the last season Hidden Dragon Rank. Between them, Qin Hao was no less powerful than Qi Shaofeng, ranked 35th in the last season Hidden Dragon Rank.

.....

Inside the Hundred Thousand mountain area, no one under the Astral Reaching Realm dared to fly in the sky, not even peak-level late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists; as for Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, they could

only fly in the edge area and had to move on feet in the inner areas of the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range region just like the others. After all, flying in the air could draw a martial artist too much attention that the other creatures could easily find him or her by simply raising their heads. A short flight might be safe; yet, after a slightly longer period of time, flying could become one hundred percent dangerous and chances of dying would go beyond eighty percent.

You could even say that flying in the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range area was an effective method of committing suicide.

Across the rugged trail, the silhouette of a person flashed swiftly.

In the past five whole days, Ye Chen had been searching for the location of the red spot in every single minute and only rested at night because searching during night time could be too dangerous.

The red spot was located on the goat-head shaped mountain and was surrounded by dense jungle. Seeing from the map, it was quite obvious; yet, once after he came into this vast mountainous area in person, Ye Chen had gotten the feeling of searching for a needle in an ocean. Sometimes he even felt a bit powerless and frustrated. Each day, he could search through one hundred mountains, which meant he had already searched through five-hundred mountains during the past five days. However, mountains were the most abundant thing in this Hundred Thousand Mountain Range, that the total number of mountains in the area could be tens of billions, equaling to the population of a large-scale city.

Considering how it wasn't absolutely safe in the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range, Ye Chen couldn't possibly search through thousands of mountains in one day even though he was capable of it. This was, after all, the legendary and most dangerous region of the entire South Zhuo Area; it wasn't a place where he would be allowed to do as he pleased.

Ao-woo!!

In a valley far away from him, an over ten-meter long and three-meter tall, wolf-shaped demonic beast raised its head and gave a long, resonant howl. Centered at the valley, this piercing and frosty howl spread out for hundreds of miles, sending a dense sense of beast power throughout. Hearing this howl, all

the other lower-level demonic beasts deeply bowed their heads over and let out trembling purrs, submitting themselves to the rule of this powerful wolf-shaped beast.

“It’s a peak level 6 demonic beast, Lunar Wind Wolf!”

Ye Chen immediately hid behind a pile of rocks.

Judging from the level, Lunar Wind Wolves were equally powerful to late Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists. However, ordinary late Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists could never defeat them, even survive their attacks. Only genius late Claspings Yuan Realm martial artists might be powerful enough to fight evenly against Lunar Wind Wolves. Ye Chen would be able to defeat this Lunar Wind Wolf if he reached the late Claspings Yuan Realm. He could even kill this wolf if he reached the peak level late Claspings Yuan Realm. Nevertheless, he was still far from the late Claspings Yuan Realm at present.

A fierce gust of wind blew across the surrounding area, along with which, the Lunar Wind Wolf began its monthly patrol. None of the other demonic beasts dared to run; instead, they all lied on the ground and deeply lowered their heads, not daring to even move a little bit.

Floating in the air, the Lunar Wind Wolf glanced around, abruptly opened its mouth and sucked a muscular demonic cattle over and bit it into two, squeezing fresh blood out of its sharp teeth in huge streams.

A short while later, this Lunar Wind Wolf that had just finished its desert, gave a satisfying howl then swiftly dashed out, starting the inspection tour of its own territory.

Ye Chen walked out from behind the pile of rocks after the wolf had gone far.

“This wolf is definitely the king of all level 6 demonic beasts. Those level 6 beasts I met back in the Ancient Trail Mountain Range and Triangle Mountain Range were all far weaker than this one.”

Normally, the levels dividing amongst demonic beasts were rough. Take level 6 demonic beasts as an example. From the weakest to the strongest, all level 6 demonic beasts were further divided into three small grades, which were ordinary level 6 demonic beasts, elite level 6 demonic beasts, peak level 6



demonic beasts. Nevertheless, the difference between peak level 6 demonic beasts and other peak level 6 demonic beasts could still be huge. Both the two peak level 6 demonic beasts Ye Chen met at the Ancient Trail Mountain Range and Triangle Mountain Range had ordinary bloodlines, while this Lunar Wind Wolf possessed an ancient legendary demonic beast's bloodline that was incredibly domineering. That ancient bloodline even gifted the wolf a chance to break through the level 7 that peak level 6 demonic beasts with ordinary bloodline couldn't do.

"Despite this Lunar Wind Wolf's enormous shape, it can't be invincible. Hm, I think I won't see it anymore." While murmuring to himself, Ye Chen continued his search for the red spot.

Two more days had passed.

In this afternoon.

'Hm?'

"That area is being shrouded by a dense, purple smoke. I'm afraid that is a highly poisonous miasma, but its covered area is way too huge." Standing on a hill, Ye Chen's blue outfit looked similar to surrounding plants that one could hardly see him at first glance. There's a big chance that even demonic beasts and other people wouldn't even notice him standing there.

"I'll just go and take a quick look in there!"

Ye Chen had already been searching for the location of the red spot in this Hundred Thousand Mountain Range for a week. Right now, he didn't want to miss any chance of finding it.

Tens of miles would only take Ye Chen as long as the time taken for a meal, and that was only because he had to say extra cautious; otherwise, he could easily make it in the span of ten breaths.

Swoosh!

Leaping onto a tree and squatting on a thick branch, Ye Chen carefully observed the miasma-filled area from hundreds of meters away.

Abruptly, he frowned his brows. That area was a dense jungle, guarded by a

group of martial artists who were all wearing the same yellow outfit and each held a long blade. The sleeves of their outfits were all embossed with a cyan and long blade, indicating that these people might've come from a martial school that particularly mastered blade arts.

Most of these people were Condensing Reality Realm martial artists while around twenty of them were in the Clasp of Yuan Realm. In total, that specific area was being guarded by three hundred martial artists.

"Elder Teng, what is that purple smoke above the woods? Seems quite dangerous." Standing beside a boulder near the jungle, a young man asked an elderly man who had a shining black hair.

The elderly man took a quick glance at the purple miasma and said, "That's the Bone-Corroding Miasma. It can immediately kill any martial artist who haven't yet extracted their Zhen Qi into Zhen Yuan with only a single touch. This miasma can corrode your defensive Zhen Qi in a very short time."

"That bad? Why haven't I heard about this Bone-Corroding Miasma before?"

"There're lots of things that you haven't yet heard about. This Bone-corroding Miasma is uncommon now as it only exists in the remains of some ancient sites. Our Long Blade Martial School had been very lucky to find this Bone-corroding Miasma this time; perhaps, we can also find some treasures in this jungle."

"Ah, no wonder our patriarch came all the way here in person, took hundreds of people searching in the woods and told us to guard out here; then kill any martial artist who shows up within our sights. Oh, is there any Bone-corroding Miasma inside the woods? Our patriarch and the others will be safe in there, won't they?"

"Don't worry, the Bone-corroding Miasma is lingering only above the jungle, not inside."

The elderly man with a black hair was the outer Head Elder of the Long Blade Martial School, while the Long Blade Martial School was an ordinary rank 9 institution located in thousands of miles away from here. Not long ago, one of their elders found the Bone-corroding Miasma in this place and immediately reported to the school, after which, the patriarch of this martial school instantly decided to come over with more than half of their people. Fortunately, the path

from their institution towards here wasn't too dangerous. They had managed to arrive after losing only around ten martial artists.

Grasping their conversation with his soul power, Ye Chen then fell into deep thought. The Bone-corroding Miasma was an ancient being. In accordance to its appearance, the jungle might truly be a hiding spot of some ancient treasures. 'Ah! The location of the red spot that is marked on the map seems a bit similar to here!' Ye Chen popped out his eyes and thought.

As Ye Chen took out the map from the storage ring and gave a quick look, his pupils then suddenly shrunk. He found some faint purple colour on the circle-shaped woods around the red spot; It was most likely, the Bone-corroding Miasma. Even if the purple colour on the map and the colour of the miasma was only coincidentally similar, Ye Chen still wanted to go into the jungle and find out the truth; otherwise, he felt that he wouldn't be able to find the red spot's location if he didn't do so.

## ***Chapter 183 - Terrifying Flesh-Eating Vines***

Instead of going directly into the jungle, Ye Chen leapt down from the tree and darted away towards another direction.

For quite a long while, Ye Chen stared at the rugged rock hill in front of him and remained silent.

That dense jungle was surrounded by a series of thousands of meters tall natural rock hills. Beyond that was nothing else but the Bone-corroding Miasma that would kill a person with a single touch. Not a single current of fresh air could be seen between the miasma and the hilltops of those rock hills; which meant, one could never enter into the jungle through those rock hills.

Ye Chen bitterly smiled as he glanced at the miasma. Although the Bone-Corroding Miasma was only floating in the air about one thousand and two to three hundred meters from the ground, yet, who knew how wide its covered area was? If Ye Chen chose to get into the jungle by flying over the rock hills and the miasma, he might encounter some unexpected dangers or completely deplete his Zhen Qi; both of these two situations would make him fall directly and be corroded into a puff of ash by the miasma.

“Well, it turns out that I have to get in through the entrance found by those people with blades, which might require violence.”

Slowly heaving a long breath, Ye Chen went back to where he came from.

.....

Also in the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range Range, but thousands of miles away from where Ye Chen was.

Bang!

A thunderous boom bursted into the air.

“Damn it! This Lunar Wind Wolf is way too powerful, I can’t stop it!” Tian Chong’s outfit by now had already been torn into shreds, while blood quickly dripped from his fingertips.

Qin Hao looked no better than him. At this moment, Qin Hao had been staring

at the Lunar Wind Wolf stood on the hilltop in front of him, with a pair of frosty eyes.

Qin Hao and Tian Chong had been searching near the edge of the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range for a couple of days and found nothing, but today, they were somehow targeted by this Lunar Wind Wolf, the king of all level-6 demonic beasts for unknown reasons. This wolf had been chasing them all day long at its highest speed that was even faster than peak-level late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists' moving speeds; although both Qin Hao and Tian Chong were powerful and experienced martial artists, they couldn't possibly get rid of the wolf's chase.

"We've got to find a way to rid of this wolf! We can't just start a fight against it!"

Tian Chong let out a bitter smile as response. He was absolutely aware of that. If they truly started a fight against the wolf, they might not even be able to leave a slightest scratch on the wolf's body until they die.

Ao-woo!

The Lunar Wind Wolf abruptly gave a long, cold and resonant howl while it stamped its foot against the rock hill and smashed the entire hill directly; following with that, it dashed over towards the two young men as swiftly as an arrow in flight.

"[Sky Dragon Battle Emperor Spear]!"

"[Air Splitting Palm]!"

A faint golden stream of spear light instantly surged out, transformed into a Zhen Qi dragon silhouette and roared towards the wolf; following closely behind the dragon silhouette were lines of gigantic Zhen Qi palm silhouettes that had vacuumed the surrounding air and directed towards the wolf as well, seemingly as powerful as a lofty mountain. The dragon silhouettes and those palm silhouettes coordinated perfectly, clearly showing that this wasn't the first time that the two coordinated in a battle.

However, the Lunar Wind Wolf had torn the dragon silhouette apart by slightly swinging its claw; as for those palm silhouettes, they were shattered and

dissipated by the enormous waves of beast power that gushed out of its mouth.

“Run!!”

Neither of them had ever planned to hurt the wolf with their moves. All they wanted was to earn a bit of time to run; but of course, they were not stupid enough to flee by flying as the wolf was able to chase them up in absolutely no time. Their only chance for survival was the precipitous geographic weather of this mountain range.

Mountains were shattered one after another, that was the scene of the Lunar Wind Wolf chasing the two young men.

“Look! There’re people in there! It seems like Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng!” Tian Chong suddenly shouted out while pointing his finger at the front.

Hearing him, Qing Hao showed a surprised look and yelled, “Let’s go over there! Let them take the danger for us!”

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

Under a deadly danger, both of their moving speeds had reached a whole new level.

In a few miles away.

Qi Shaofeng spoke with a darkened expression, “These two bastards, they’re trying to draw the Lunar Wind Wolf to us, bloody hell.”

“Let’s go!”

Murong Qingcheng didn’t want to waste any time in dealing with the wolf. Therefore, she activated her Sky Devil Force Field that instantly twisted the surrounding air; at the same time, she swiftly darted out.

Four people and a horrible beast chased each other, letting out sky-shattering booms from time to time.

“Rise!”

All those ground-shaking noises could easily attract other terrifying beasts or

even some mysterious beings. Therefore, Murong Qingcheng raised her right arm and following her move, a ten-meter tall hill was pulled up from the ground by her Sky Devil Force Field, and then threw towards Tian Chong and Qin Hao. From Tian Chong and Qin Hao's sights, even the sky darkened.

"Bitch!"

Qin Hao's mouth corner twitched intensely while he launched a palm move against the small hill that had been thrown over.

The small hill was shattered right away and countless rock pieces fell to the ground like a heavy rain of rocks.

Within a short span of time, the Lunar Wind Wolf had already caught up to them and widely opened its mouth, letting out a thick, cold stream of beast power.

"Ah!!"

A hoarse scream came out of Tian Chong's mouth. He only felt that his blood was all frozen within a moment and his body was paralysed. Before he could even ask for help, his body was thoroughly smashed by the wolf's claw and blood splashed everywhere.

"Tian Chong, be at peace. I'll avenge you." Murmured Qin Hao while his eyes, which were filled with a greedy and dirty look, were fixed on Murong Qingcheng.

Murong Qingcheng didn't pull up another hill to attack Qin Hao because at this moment, he was the wolf's target and once he died, Qi Shaofeng and herself might become the new target of the wolf; therefore, attacking Qin Hao was really not a wise move based on the current situation.

"There's a dense jungle! Let's head in!"

Qi Shaofeng had been observing the surrounding environment all this long. Just now, he saw the dense purple miasma at the front then found the thick jungle beneath it. The trees in the jungle were over a hundred, even hundreds of zhangs tall and all gigantic. He was slightly relieved after he found this jungle as once they got into the jungle, the wolf wouldn't be able to find them again despite its marvelously great power. Besides, all those trees were towering and gigantic. Even though one tree was far from enough to stop the wolf, all those

trees together as a jungle should be able to stall the wolf for a long while.

Murong Qingcheng nodded.

Outside of the jungle.

“Elder Teng! Some strangers showed up again, and a beast!”

“Ah! It’s a Lunar Wind Wolf! Bastards! They’re drawing the Lunar Wind Wolf over!”

Those Long Blade Martial School’s people who had been guarding outside the jungle instantly fell into a panic.

Elder Teng’s face darkened immediately as well and said, “Four days ago, a young man broke into the jungle which was still fine as he didn’t hurt any of our people. But now, these three people have drawn a Lunar Wind Wolf over, this is an intentional attack on us! They want to wipe us out! Unforgivable!”

“Elder Teng! What should we do? We can never deal with the Lunar Wind Wolf! Even our Patriarch can’t either!”

Took a deep breath, the Elder Teng gave the order in a cold tone, “Everybody, get into the jungle right now!”

“But...”

“But what?! Just get in if you want to live!”

Hearing the elder’s order, all of those Long Blade Martial School’s people rushed into the jungle and soon disappeared. Not a single trace was left outside the jungle.

“Let’s get in as well!”

While speaking, Murong Qingcheng activated the Sky Devil Force Field and pulled up hundreds of zhangs tall tree, throwing towards Qin Hao like a javelin. She had disliked him since long ago.

“Murong Qingcheng, you better don’t ever let me catch you, or I’d make you beg for death.” Yelled Qin Hao with a badly twisted face.

“Qin Hao,” said Qi Shaofeng after he sneered, “Even if you can survive today, I’ll kill you soon.”



Whoosh! Whoosh!

Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng swiftly darted into the jungle before the voice faded.

Qin Hao was the only one left outside the jungle by now. After being tangled by the huge tree that was thrown by Murong Qingcheng a short while ago, the Lunar Wind Wolf was just about to caught up with him.

“Damn it! I was going to save this Yuan light ball for a more important occasion!”

Qing Hao couldn't afford to hesitate any longer, and quickly took out a cyan crystal ball from his storage ring. Except for the colour difference, this cyan crystal ball looked exactly the same as Ye Chen's blue crystal ball.

Qin Hao then crushed the crystal ball in his hands. Following his move, a one-foot thick, cyan layer of light that have dense streams of cyan air flowed inside it, bursted out and entirely wrapped Qin Hao's body. Obviously, the defensive power of this cyan light shield was incredibly great.

Along with a series of creaking noise, the light shield was squeezed twisted by the wolf. At the same time, the wolf slammed Qin Hao into the jungle with its enormous claw. Qin Hao flew straight into the jungle, during which, countless towering trees were smashed broken by his body; if he wasn't protected by the light shield, he would've already been smashed into a pile of meat paste long ago.

As the wolf had been chasing Qin Hao and Tian Chong for such a long time but only managed to kill one of them till now, it surely was furious at this moment. Without any hesitation, the wolf flashed into the jungle as well.

.....

Trees in this jungle were indeed amazing. Apart from the incredibly great heights of those trees, they were all as thick as walls that if one were to excavate these trees out, the inner space could definitely contain an entire skyscraper building which was huge enough to accommodate thousands of people. Only the gods knew how these trees had grown gigantic.

Ye Chen stood under a great tree, and felt that his own self was as tiny as an ant.

“It has been four days since I came in, yet I haven’t ran into any demonic beast so far, but what happened to these drained and horribly withered human corpses? They’re everywhere. Did they kill each other?” Ye Chen was a bit confused by the absence of demonic beasts. Running into a fierce beast wouldn’t be so bad as he could always try his best to escape, but the total absence of demonic beasts was quite bizarre. Besides, this place where it didn’t even have a trace of living beasts was covered by withered corpses, belonging to both people and beasts.

“Ah! Ah!!”

From deep inside the jungle, a series of howls came out one after another.

“What’s that?”

Ye Chen instantly tightened his face, swiftly and silently moving to the source of the voice. In the meantime, he released his soul power as much as he could, in case any other unexpected situation happened.

Deeper inside the jungle were hundreds of people, and each had a cyan long blade embossed on the sleeve. Without a doubt, these were the Long Blade Martial School’s people.

“Patriarch, another ten died! We couldn’t even see the attacker! All those dead fellows were all drained like their blood and flesh had been completely sucked out!”

Said an elder with a deadly pale face.

The Patriarch was a sturdy, middle-aged man holding a two-meter long, huge blade that had sawtooth at the edge. He responded with a calm voice, “Everybody, listen to me! Don’t panic! Keep watching each other’s back and remain vigilant! Report if you see anything! Don’t make any move before that!”

“Yes!”

All the others shouted out in response to their patriarch’s order, yet their voices were clearly trembling.

“Brother Three, what, what do you think is attacking us? It, it can drain a man completely within the blink of an eye, only, only leaving the bones and skin.” Among those people, a young man who was around twenty years old, swallowed and said to the slightly older one next to him.

The slightly older young man shook his head and said, “This jungle is strange. It’s in the middle of the Hundred Thousand Mountain Range, but not a single beast can be found in here. Just try your best to protect yourself.”

The young man couldn’t respond any longer because his body began shriveling, becoming more and more skinny. At the end, only a skeleton wrapped by dried skin was left, falling to the ground and seemed unspeakably terrifying.

The slightly older young man popped his eyes out in shock while a stream of blood gushed out of the corner of his sight. Subconsciously he looked at the front and saw a thin silhouette rushing over. It was a cyan and red vine that had an opening at the end; within which, were layers of tiny yet sharp teeth lined up in a spiral form.

“It’s vines! Be careful...Ahh!!! No!!!”

Terrified and shrill howls rose from his mouth. Just like the young man, this slightly older one was quickly drained as well into a dry and terrifying corpse, then fell to the ground.

Around one thousand meters away, Ye Chen witnessed this scene with his soul power, and he couldn’t help but get startled badly.

“Those vines are nothing nice. Those are probably some terrifying ancient plants. It seems that they love to feed on human blood and flesh very much. All those corpses in this jungle were the result of their own works.”

By now, Ye Chen finally realised the only reason why he hadn’t seen any demonic beast in this jungle. It was because they were all consumed by those vines. With his current soul power, he couldn’t tell for sure just how huge those vines’ attack range exactly was, and only felt that this entire jungle was dominated by those horrible vines.

At the center of the Long Blade Martial School’s group.

“Form into battle formation!” Growled the Patriarch abruptly.

Following his order, all Long Blade Martial School's people moved close to each other while facing the jungle, forming a large-scale circle that was a complete battle formation. Every single one of them fixed their eyes on the trees without blinking; cold sweat dripped down from their hands that had the hilts of their long blades gripped. Meanwhile, gulping noises came out of their throats from time to time.

## ***Chapter 184 - Goat Head Mountain***

“Why can’t I hear anything?!” The overwhelming pressure was about to drive some of the young martial artists crazy; one young martial artist, because he was too nervous, began blabbering to give himself courage.

“Be quiet!”

A Long Blade Martial School elder standing to the side said in a low voice and glared at him.

Silently, a cyan and red vine thrust out from the ground and immediately ripped the elder’s protective Zhen Qi apart, deeply piercing his body. The body of the arm-thick vine swelled from time to time, as if it was swallowing the elder’s flesh and blood quickly.

“No!!”

Watching his own body rapidly get drained, this elder could no longer remain calm, and he let out a despairing howl.

In the next moment, the battle formation formed by the Long Blade Martial School’s people fell into chaos.

“Vines are coming up from the ground!!”

“Damn it! They’re in my pants!”

“Help! Someone help me!!”

Waves of screams and howls spread out from the battle formation while despair flooded the minds of these people. Many of them instantly felt their limbs become numb, and they found it difficult to breathe.

The school Leader whose name was Li Yuan, clenched his fists and took a deep breath; he growled harshly, “Split up! Every ten people to a team and each team form a small battle formation! Hack every vine in your sight as hard as you can! Remember! Every time you chop down a vine, you have a better chance of living!”

In this short period of time, thirty more people had died, and among them, around thirty percent was due to martial artists mistakenly killing their own

people. If this situation was allowed persist, everyone would break down and go crazy.

In front of the despair and fear, the school Leader's orders were not too effective; only a few people had listened to him, while the majority entered a state of madness, where with their eyes reddened they hacked away at anything that neared them, without a thought.

The weakness of humankind was completely exposed at this very moment.

"I can't take it anymore! I want to leave! I'm leaving this bloody shit hole!!"

"If this goes on, we're all gonna die!!"

As increasingly more people were killed by the vines, a young martial artist finally lost his mind and desperately rushed out of the group, attempting to flee. As the first one make his move, more and more young martial artists followed suit. It was like a virus infection, too rapid to be stopped.

"Ah!!"

"No!!"

None of the young martial artists actually managed to get away; they were all sucked dry by the vines. Facing these monster like vines, their protective Qi were as fragile as Tofu, easily shattering with a slight stab.

"Leader! We're all going to die soon if this keeps up! Let's just run! At least some of us will survive if we run, It's still better than total destruction!" At this moment, they had already lost two to three elders, thus the other elders couldn't help but yell this out. All the Long Blade Martial School's elders were Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists with great defensive Zhen Qi; however, attacks launched by the vines were far too swift and frequent, and those vines would always find the weakest spot in their defensive Zhen Qi to attack.

Li Yuan was a peak-level late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, and under the protection of his powerful defensive Zhen Qi, he had managed to chop off quite a number of vines. However, even he was beginning to feel like he was strong in will but weak in power as even more vines ceaselessly thrust out from the ground. Each time he chopped off a vine, more vines would immediately squeeze out from the ground and dart towards him, and he couldn't stop fighting for

even a single second.

With a dark expression and a slightly pale face, Li Yuan imbued his voice with Zhen Qi, projecting his orders out with a voice that resonated.

“Everybody, retreat! Don’t panic!”

Before his voice faded, another elder said in a trembling voice full of despair, “Leader, we can’t retreat, the vines are everywhere and we’re surrounded.”

‘Bloody hell! Is our Long Blade Martial School going to perish right here?’

They couldn’t help it but that was exactly what Li Yuan and all the other elders had been thinking of at that particular moment.

“They’re coming!! Mama!!”

Countless numbers of cyan and red vines resembling an enormous group of snakes swamped them; wherever it swept across, one after another martial artists would fall, their bodies completely drained and reduced to only skin and bones.

Hearing the loud, ear-piercing laughter like noise, Li Yuan for the very first time felt helpless. Only one thought remained in his mind— kill. To kill as many as he could. A fierce blade Qi radiated out from the center of his body, and crushing countless vines, it shot towards the area where the vines were most concentrated to continue killing.

Ye Chen had stopped observing the Long Blade Martial School’s people, as he had been discovered by tens of vines as well. These vines had no eyes or nose and had only a mouth, but their perception seemed to be incredibly sharp; easily finding the weakest spot in Ye Chen’s defensive Zhen Qi.

In the unsheathing of the Dragon Spring Sword, three vines were cut off and red and green streams of liquid flew in all directions.

‘Fortunately, I’ve already reached the ninth-level of the Great Mystery Art, and the quantity and quality of my Zhen Qi is now much greater than when I was still cultivating low-ranked Earth Realm arts. Additionally, this low-ranked great light armour I’m wearing now, can improve my defensive power by around ten percent. My defensive power is now generally as high as a peak-level medium

Clasping Yuan Realm martial artist's. Ye Chen thought about how lucky he was as he moved swiftly around in cutting those vines.

Soon, the tens of vines were all cut down by Ye Chen while he remained perfectly unharmed.

However, Ye Chen's eyebrows furrowed even further.

Perhaps because the vines perceived Ye Chen to be too great a treat, countless vines began gathering from all directions, gradually circling around him and leaving no gaps in between.

Ye Chen's look remained unchanged. As a possessor of the sword intent, he would not be affected by any kind of negative emotions, instead, he would only be even more calm than usual when facing deadly dangers.

Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish!

When launching their attacks, the vines did not make even the slightest sound. They were completely silent, and facing Ye Chen's attacks, the attack speed of these vines reached a whole new level; rapidly launching themselves at Ye Chen with a speed that was almost as fast as lightning.

"[Clear the Sky]!"

Ye Chen swung the Dragon Spring Sword upwards, generating a huge arc of sword Qi that directly rose and stirred the air, creating a pale-blue tornado that enveloped Ye Chen's body.

Following a series of puffing noises, all the vines that had been approaching Ye Chen, were crushed by the tornado; from time to time, large streams of sword Qi would dart out of the tornado and slash apart a large number of vines.

Pop!

Suddenly, a dark-red vine penetrated the tornado, shooting towards Ye Chen's face.

'This tornado contains my Zhen Qi, making it capable of crushing the hardest of metals when it's spinning at a high speed. This dark-red vine must be far more solid than the other vines since it managed to penetrate through. The situation seems to be taking a turn for the worse.' This thought quickly flashed through Ye



Chen's mind as he swung the sword down to cut the dark-red vine into two. With the support of the sword intent, Ye Chen could still easily cut the dark-red vine into pieces as it was not invulnerable.

In the next moment, however, Ye Chen discovered that a new section of vine was already rapidly growing from the broken end of the dark-red vine. At which its mouth was densely filled with sharp teeth.

"I've got to get out of here!"

Chopping off the dark-red vine once more, Ye Chen boosted his Great Mystery Zhen Qi as much as he could and injected it into the tornado; he then began moving deeper into the jungle.

The dark-red vine closely followed him—as if reluctant to part—while the others vines frantically moved ahead of the tornado, as if they were trying their best to stop Ye Chen from getting deeper into the jungle.

Struck by the tornado, countless vines were torn apart, and cyan and red fragments and liquid covered the ground in layers.

The further Ye Chen went into the jungle, the more the jungle seemed boundless; seeming to look like a dark and mysterious world.

.....

"God damn it! What the hell is this!"

Qin Hao was now entirely surrounded by the cyan and red vines. Although his defensive Zhen Qi would still be able to keep him safe for now, his Zhen Qi was being consumed at an extremely high rate; In only half an hour, he had already taken three Zhen Qi replenishing pills.

Swoosh!

A leg-thick vine suddenly shot over.

Crack!

A gigantic palm silhouette smashed the vine, but very quickly, the vine recovered back to normal.

"This won't do! I need to get out of here! This bloody forest is way too

dangerous! My Zhen Qi is being consumed much faster than it is being replenished. I'll die sooner or later if I stay in here."

Qin Hao was extremely annoyed. He had only just managed to escape the Lunar Wind Wolf's pursuit, and now, once more he had strangely walked into these cyan and red vines' encirclement. Ever since he entered this Hundred Thousand Mountain range, nothing good has happened. Fortunately, he was not too far away from the entrance of the jungle, and should be able to get out easily.

Another gigantic Zhen Qi palm silhouette burst out, clearing a path for Qin Hao it allowed him to dash towards the entrance of the jungle.

At this moment, a large tree nearby was suddenly struck down in the center, and an enormous silhouette leapt out from behind it. As would be expected, it could be nothing else but the Lunar Wind Wolf.

Qin Hao and the wolf stared at each other, but neither of them had noticed that a stream of purple miasma was descending from overhead; this gas was like a living creature, twisting and wriggling as if alive, and incredibly vivid in colour.

Puff!

A large hole appeared in Qin Hao's defensive Zhen Qi shield, and the flesh that was exposed where this large hole opened, quickly turned to ash. While the Lunar Wind Wolf opposite him suffered no less than he did. This purple miasma was the Bone-corroding miasma that floated above the jungle. A moment ago, when the wolf broke the towering tree, it caused the miasma, which was heavier than air, to sink down and spread out near the ground.

"I can't die like this!! I can't—"

Qin Hao roared out but before he could finish his last words, his entire body turned into a puff of ash.

The Lunar Wind Wolf was an amazingly fierce and powerful beast, and even the miasma failed to kill it immediately. The wolf let out waves of howls as it rushed towards the entrance whence it came in from; soon, however, its body began shortening and turning into ash bit by bit. These ashes were blown away and thus dissipated into the wind, leaving not even a trace of Qin Hao or the

wolf. The miasma was even more terrifying than the vines.

Not much purple miasma had descended from the air, and after covered a certain area, it stopped spreading; meanwhile, the surrounding trees began absorbing the miasma and releasing it back into the air through its leaves. In this way, the miasma and the tree achieved a magical equal and stable balance.

.....

In the middle of the jungle, Ye Chen raised his head to look at the mountain in front of him that was over a thousand meters tall. A part of the mountaintop was raised and looked like an animal's mouth, while the sides of the mountain weirdly extended towards the sky, resembling the horns of a goat.

"The mountain shaped like a goat's head! It's here!"

Behind him, the vines never slowed down, only god knew exactly how much and how long these vines were. While continuously crushing the vines with his tornado, Ye Chen quickly moved towards the mountain top.

Closer to the mountain, Ye Chen found a large dark cave which opened wide like the mouth of the goat; seeming especially dark and deep.

"You can never gain benefits without taking equal risks, I should just get in there and take a look."

Dispersing the tornado, Ye Chen swiftly darted into the cave. Following right behind him, the vines entered like a tide gushing in.

With his powerful soul power, Ye Chen could clearly see the inner space of the cave, thus, he easily evaded and avoided the surrounding obstacles, reaching the deepest part of the cave unhindered.

"There are stairs here, it looks like this cave is indeed man-made."

Towards the left, he had discovered a hidden flight of stairs that was arced in shape that led upwards. At first glance, the stairs were very narrow. Ye Chen threw an instant Zhen Qi replenishing pill into his mouth, then boosted his Zhen Qi up and rushed up the stairs.

At this moment, those vines which had been chasing Ye Chen all the way,

seemed to hesitate, then paused in front of the stairs.

Along with a series of slight swishing sounds, the vines slowly retreated, seeming to have given up on hunting Ye Chen.

## ***Chapter 185 - Void Shattering Finger***

The second floor was no longer entirely dark, instead, countless noctilucent stones were emitting soft light that lit up the space.

Upon entering one of the rooms, even with Ye Chen's state of mind, he couldn't help but suck in a deep breath in shock.

Bountiful riches!

That's right, there were indeed bountiful riches—the items on the second floor did not only comprise of just one, and adding to that, all of these items were absolutely valuable.

Where the eyes lingered, multitudes of chests filled with gold could be seen stacked carelessly; with each chest capable of holding at least a hundred thousand taels of gold, and there being at least several hundred chest here, the total numbered at ten million taels of gold. This amount was comparable to the total amount of wealth possessed by a mid-scale family.

Next to the chests filled with gold were crates of precious stones, and contained within were rubies; emeralds, first-grade agate, crystal necklaces, black pearls, and jade pieces, each and every one these were a treasure worth at least a thousand jin in gold. The total value of these gemstones and jewelries was no less than the chests of gold.

Although gold and treasures, to a martial artist, was relatively easy to obtain, this unbelievably huge amount of wealth would still dumbfound any martial artist. The majority of martial artists could never earn this much gold in their lifetimes. Additionally, the difference was that they were accumulated their wealth bit by bit, which felt more natural, while Ye Chen was now gaining this much riches so suddenly.

“Well, let me just pack these first.”

Ye Chen waves his hands while murmuring. Following his move, the chests of gold and treasures flew into his storage ring.

“Hm, this low-ranked storage ring is full!” These chests were too huge; there were only five hundred chests collected in total, and his low-ranked storage ring

was already full after barely collecting one tenth of the chests. Fortunately, Ye Chen had a few more low-ranked rings and one mid-ranked storage ring.

Packing all the gold and treasures, Ye Chen's gaze fell to the side where crates with low-ranked spirit stones and a good amount of mid-ranked stones were. From these crates, astonishing spirit stone Yuan Qi converged in midair, transforming into all kinds of magical animal silhouettes; such as dragons, tigers, and phoenixes.

"A hundred boxes of low-ranked stones, five boxes of mid-ranked stones; with each box containing ten-thousand pieces of stones."

Ye Chen's breathing quickened. He was only slightly shocked by the gold and treasures, but now, this much spirit stones left him literally stunned. He could say for sure that the Sky Cloud Martial School's ten years saving did not even have a million pieces of low-ranked stones, not to mention fifty-thousand mid-ranked stones.

"Come!"

Without any hesitation, Ye Chen threw everything into his storage rings as before.

In a short period of time, six-hundred large crates were removed from the room, making the second level seem many times emptier than before. Taking a quick glance, Ye Chen roughly counted the rest of treasures in this room,

He found three bottle gourds of magic pills.

One could replenish his consumed Zhen Qi, one could improve his spiritual power, and the last one could help cultivating his soul.

All three kinds of pill were supportive magic medicine, that would help to improve a martial artist's Zhen Qi, spiritual power and soul power. They may not sound so useful, but these pills were actually capable of effectively raising a martial artist's speed of improvement. The reason why some martial artists were called 'amazing geniuses', was that of all of their Zhen Qi, spiritual power, and soul power were extremely exuberant, allowing them to improve much faster than the others. For example, Ye Chen's soul power was extremely powerful, and allowed him an incredible comprehension ability. This was the reason why he

could learn things so fast. If he could improve his Zhen Qi and spiritual power to the same level as his soul power, his improvement speed would definitely be able to reach the same degree as those amazing geniuses; but of course, he had to keep taking the Zhen Qi-replenishing pills and the spirit-improvement pills until he reached his desired level.

“One bottle gourd contains three-hundred pills, if one pill is taken every three days, these three bottles of pills would last around nine-hundred days.” In Ye Chen’s eyes, these three bottle gourds of magic medicines were genuinely invaluable. If these magic medicines were put on auction, even Astral Reaching Realm martial artists would want them, they might even go crazy for these pills. It should be known that, normally, all recipes of magic medicines were owned by large and influential martial schools; this meant that the powerful high-grade medicines were in the big martial schools’ hands. As for ordinary martial artists, they shouldn't even dream of holding the powerful high-grade medicines.

“Well, an innocent man can easily become a sinner because of what he owns. These pills are valuable enough to make some Astral Reaching Realm martial artists become motivated to kill me.” Ye Chen murmured as he placed the three bottle gourds into a storage ring.

He then walked to a corner where there was a bookshelf holding multiple books.

On the top shelf were thirty-six top-ranked Mortal Realm martial art books.

The second shelf laid nine low-ranked Earth Realm martial arts books.

The third shelf had three mid-ranked Earth Realm martial arts books.

And on the bottom shelf, layed a high-ranked Earth Realm martial arts book.

Ye Chen directly threw all these books into his storage ring without even taking a look at the content. He wouldn’t have the time to practice on these new arts anyway, even if he did read them.

Phew!

Ye Chen let out a long breath then looked around. The second floor had already been emptied by him, and nothing was left.

“I’ll just head to the third floor then.”

Swiftly, Ye Chen darted up the stairs again.

Unexpectedly, the third floor had nothing but a gate of light. It stood in the middle of the room and shone with a gentle and clear light.

Standing in front of this light gate, Ye Chen hesitated.

He didn’t know where this light gate would send him to, and the unknown will always make people hesitate, even someone like Ye Chen.

“I’ve spent quite an effort to find this place, I would definitely regret it one day if I don’t go in.”

Ye Chen quickly made up his mind and entered the light gate.

Buzz!

The surrounding space suddenly rippled like water, and in the next moment, Ye Chen disappeared in the light gate.

He had been teleported once before, thus, he was well prepared for it this time and was perfectly calm.

The teleporting might last for only a moment, or a couple of days. When Ye Chen felt a sudden looseness to his body, he had already arrived at a magnificent stone hall.

This stone hall didn’t have any door; only smooth walls on all sides, and at the top of this stone hall, hung a huge crystal lamp that gave off a brilliant radiance. Below this lamp was a stone platform, upon which, suspended a huge key that measured about a small arm in length. This key was white in colour and seemed to be made from white crystal, while its shape was unusual yet simple in design.

“So weird, unexpectedly there’s such a big key.”

He raised his hand and attempted to grab the key, but realised that the key was shielded by an invisible and especially strong force; completely impenetrable.

“Break!”

Ye Chen completely activated his Zhen Qi; turning his palm into a fist, he



launched a fist strike to center of the invisible force.

Boom!

The invisible force show no sign of breaking, instead, the tremendous force was struck back, sending Ye Chen flying; he nearly bumped into the stone wall behind him.

Face turned serious, Ye Chen pulled out the Dragon Spring Sword and released four streams of sword Qi in a row.

As the series of sword Qi surged towards the key, thunder sounds manifested.

In the next moment, all four streams of sword Qi were similarly reflected back with a power even more violent than before.

Ye Chen swung his sword and dissipated the fierce counterattack, while giving a bitter smile. Although he clearly knew that the white key had a huge function, with his current power, he had no way of retrieving it.

Therefore, Ye Chen temporarily stopped trying, and began observing the entire stone hall.

Hm?

He found a similar stone platform in the corner, and on it, laid one piece of white jade slip.

He waved his hand, and this time with no strange invisible force, the jade slip flew into his hands.

He flipped the jade slip back and forth a few times, but failed to find a single character on it, or special use for it. Pondering briefly, he injected a stream of Zhen Qi into the slip.

Abruptly, a scene emerged in his mind. A demonic beast over a hundred meters tall with a pair of sharp gigantic horns on its head, was roaring. The beast opened its mouth and blew; a lofty mountain was immediately blown away. It stomped its foot and the earth cracked under it; lava spewed from these cracks to tower in the sky, dying the skies red. This destructive power was extremely powerful and was simply something never seen or heard before. Perhaps only Life and Death Realm martial artists could barely reach this level of unspeakably

terrifying destructive power

Just when the beast pulled out a thousands of zhangs tall mountain, an enormous, stone pillar-like finger appeared in the air, and resembling a shooting star pointing the way, it pointed at the beast's forehead.

Bang!

The beast's body instantly shattered into pieces and completely dissipated.

As Ye Chen widely opened his mouth in shock, that heavenly great finger turned around, and pointed towards him. He couldn't flee, and couldn't even move. In the next moment, the finger pointed at his forehead.

At that moment, Ye Chen felt like his brain was about to explode, and that an overwhelmingly large amount of information had suddenly filled up his brain, but soon, that information automatically sorted out into writing and a Zhen Qi flowing pattern.

This was a martial art called Void Shattering Finger, but what Ye Chen had just gained was not the complete art, instead, it was only the third move of it. According to what Ye Chen had watched in his own mind, this mere move was already this incredibly powerful. After all, that beast he saw was a Life and Death Realm one, yet, it hadn't survive this move. But of course, he was also deeply aware that without enough power, he would not be able to kill any Astral Reaching Realm martial artist even if he mastered this move, let alone a Life and Death Realm beast.

To martial artists, even the most powerful martial skill had to be launch using genuine power, if one didn't have enough power to launch the learned martial skills, all those skills would be meaningless. All in all, cultivation was the most important thing of a martial artist.

Apart from the third move of this Void Shattering Finger, the information in his head also told him that, if he wanted to break the invisible power screen and take the white key, he had to learn a bit of this move; it did not require much, only a little bit was need. He had three days, if he couldn't get the key in three days, he would be automatically teleported back, and would never have another chance to reach this white key.

“Three days, I can only try!”

Sitting down and crossing his legs, Ye Chen began learning the third move of the Void Shattering Finger.

After one day.

Ye Chen thrust his finger out, along with this move, the air twisted and let out a muffled pop.

Shaking his head, Ye Chen closed his eyes and continued learning.

In the second day, he opened his eyes and slowly raised his finger. He pointed at the key.

Puff!

Faint ripples emerged on the invisible power screen surrounding the white key, but soon disappeared, as if nothing had ever happened.

“Still not working, I only have one last day!”

Originally, Ye Chen gave a bitter smile, but immediately after, he activated his sword intent and eliminated all kinds of useless thoughts in his mind; he sat back down and went back to his learning. On and off he would recall the screen where the beast was shattered by the gigantic finger with a single point.

Time flew by. Ye Chen’s brows were sometimes knitted, and sometimes smoothed out. This switching back and forth occurred who knows how many times in a moment.

In the third day’s afternoon.

A terrifying power suddenly of exuded from Ye Chen’s body. He abruptly opened his eyes. His pupils were all grey, nearly had no difference between the whites of his eyes.

“Break!”

From a long distance, Ye Chen pointed his finger at the key with all of his power.

Bang!

The invisible power screen was finally shattered, no, technically it was

unlocked. In the current stage, the power of Ye Chen's Void Shattering Finger was actually no better than his sword intent, however, the invisible power screen was closely connected with the Void Shattering Finger, that was how Ye Chen 'unlocked' the invisible power screen.

Learning the Void Shattering Finger had consumed a great amount of energy. Ye Chen whipped his forehead then took out a Zhen Qi-replenish pill, a spirit-boosting pill and a soul-improving pill, and threw them all into his mouth.

Resting for a short while, Ye Chen stood up and walked to the white key.

That key was roughly as long as a small arm, and had an ancient character 'four' inscribed in the front, apart from these, Ye Chen couldn't figure out anything else regarding this key, neither did it cause anything strange.

At the exact same moment as when Ye Chen picked up the key, a faint and sparkling light gate appeared in the hall, seeming like it could disappear anytime soon.

Daring not to waste another second, Ye Chen threw the key into his storage ring, and rushed into the light gate.

When he came out again, he was back at the third floor of the cave in the goat-head mountain. Immediately after, he heard a slight buzz, and the light gate dissipated completely. He knew that he could never get back into that stone hall. No one knew where the stone hall actually was, or if there even was any other entrance.

Just as he prepared to leave and go one floor down, Ye Chen's brows slightly knitted, as his soul power perceived another two people on the first floor, these two people were none other than Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng.

"What are they doing here?"

For a moment, Ye Chen had some doubts.

## Chapter 186 - The Parent of The Man Eating Vines

In the pitch-black darkness of the first floor.

Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng were surrounded by a terrifyingly large group of cyan and red vines, and could not even move an inch. The floor of the first-floor was now covered in vine fragments and sticky cyan and red liquid.

“I’ve already taken over a hundred Zhen Qi-replenishing pills in the past three days, now my Zhen Qi is extremely muddy and I only have less than three percent of my powers left,” Qi Shaofeng said with a bitter smile. Magic medicines were indeed powerful, but no martial artist should take too much of them. In a day, the intake of Zhen Qi-replenishing medicines should be no more than ten, otherwise, the Zhen Qi would become muddy and one’s power would be reduced.

Martial artists who consumed over maximum limit also had to spend extra time refining their Zhen Qi, else some medicinal side effects may be left behind. This was also the reason why the majority of martial artists, before reaching the limit, would not use Zhen Qi-replenishing pills.

Murong Qingcheng’s pair of beautiful brows knitted. Her major martial art was the Great Sky Devil Art, and compared to Qi Shaofeng, she had twice his Zhen Qi amount. She, however, had also taken about forty Zhen Qi-replenishing pills during the past three days, and by now, only had sixty to seventy percent of her powers left. If the Great Sky Devil Art wasn’t so magical and powerful, and the Sky Devil force field hadn’t been protecting them all this while, both of them would have been sucked dry already.

“Break!”

The Sky Devil force field was boosted once more, and it crushed a large group of cyan and red vines, clearing a small space out, but right at the following moment, more vines shot forward, filling the empty space back up in no time.

“[Sky Devil Great Palm]!”

Murong Qingcheng had yet to sleep for even a single second in these three days, and had been fighting ceaselessly. Despite the fact that she has always been a calm and confident person, she was now enraged; thus, she launched a

powerful move of the Great Sky Devil Art - the Sky Devil Great Palm.

Along with this move, the vines several hundred meters ahead of them all floated in the air, and were disabled from moving. Followed by a thunderous boom, all the floating vines exploded and were quickly absorbed by the Sky Devil Force Field.

“Go! Let’s go upstairs!”

The air was badly twisted by the massive explosion and Murong Qingcheng shouted out while darting towards the second floor.

“What a powerful move!” Qi Shaofeng hurriedly followed suit.

Crack, crack, crack...

Fissures appeared in the steps ahead.

Suddenly, tens, or maybe hundreds of dark-red vines broke out from the stairs and blocked their way, each of these dark-red vines were as thick as a human leg. At this moment, these vines all straightened in front of them, resembling a thick, dark-red wall. It gave off a terrifying pressure.

“We might die here.” The Sky Devil Great Palm had just consumed the greater part of Murong Qingcheng’s Zhen Qi, and the Zhen Qi-replenishing pills she took earlier had yet to come into effect. It couldn’t replenish her lost Zhen Qi in such a short time, and thus, it would be nearly impossible for her to break the dark-red wall of vines.

The launching speed of these dark-red vines far exceeded the speed of the red and cyan vines, and in the blink of an eye, these dark-red vines were about to ram into their defensive Zhen Qi. With their current strength, they could only accept certain death.

Suddenly, a roaring tornado appeared abruptly along with a series of splitting noises; it blew away all the dark-red vines, before wrapping around the both of them and bringing them out of the cave.

“You?!”

Murong Qingcheng didn’t manage to struggle out from Ye Chen’s grasp, and could only continue to let him hold her tightly. Her face held a look of surprise as

she said this.

Ye Chen glanced at the broken dark-red vines, then responded blandly, "How did you get here?" He had the suspicion that they were following him.

Qi Shaofeng explained, "Murong and I came to find a magical herb, but a Lunar Wind Wolf forced us into these jungle."

"So it's like this!" although Ye Chen still felt that they were a bit suspicious, he continued to keep a bland face

"Do you doubt us?" Murong Qingcheng asked.

"It's not important, getting out of here is the most important thing right now," said Ye Chen. If Murong Qingcheng's and Qi Shaofeng's strength were at its peak, Ye Chen would have never rescue them. After all, both of them were above Ye Chen in strength, and if they joined hands, they would have been able to kill Ye Chen ten times.

"Whatever it is, I owe you one." Murong Qingcheng said then did not speak further.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The dark-red veins behind were catching up, and with the current dark-red vines' fierce launching speed, it sufficient for them to pierce the tornado, and tear all of their defensive Zhen Qi apart.

"You, hold me tight," said Ye Chen.

Murong Qingcheng hesitated briefly, but seeing all the fierce dark-red veins that were following closely behind them, she hurriedly put her arms around Ye Chen's waist. Seeing this, Qi Shaofeng's expression changed slightly.

Ye Chen finally freed his right arm and pulled out the Dragon Spring Sword. Without even turning his head around, he launched another large-scale sword move - Lightning flashes and thunder rumbles.

Earth-shaking thunders burst out after another, while tens of sword Qi darted out from the tornado.

Along with a series of puffing noise, all the dark-red veins that had almost caught up to them, were all slashed into pieces; their heads, however, quickly

grew back in literally no time at all, and they continued chasing the tornado which already moved a great distance away.

This was the fifth large-scale sword move that Ye Chen had launched in this jungle, this meant that he had already consumed a large amount of Zhen Qi.

Ye Chen took out an instant Zhen Qi-replenishing pill, and threw it into his mouth.

Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng hardly paid any attention to the pill that Ye Chen had just taken; they thought that it was only an ordinary Zhen Qi-replenishing medicine, which would make his Zhen Qi muddy if he consumed excessively. As for the reason why Ye Chen's Zhen Qi maintained at its peak, the only possible explanation was that, either Ye Chen hadn't been attacked by these vines before, or he had consumed a number of pills

Yes, that was the only explanation they could come up with.

Ye Chen had accurately predicted that they would think in this way, so he dared to take the pill right in front of them.

Boom!

The tornado carried the three of them at an inconceivably high speed, and under Ye Chen's control, the tornado was incredibly flexible and could easily dodge all kinds of obstacles.

"Brother Ye, this sword move of yours is really intriguingly and unusual! It is actually moving with us wrapped inside it." Qi Shaofeng couldn't help but praise.

Ye Chen smiled and didn't explain that this move was something he adapted himself.

This jungle was the vines' main territory, and soon, more and more dark-red vines surged over from all directions like a tsunami

"[Falling Star]!"

"[Sky Devil Force Field]!"

Even though Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng were now all less powerful than Ye Chen, they still had some Zhen Qi left. Without any hesitation, they each launched a fierce move towards the vines.



As they had each launched a move, Ye Chen gladly took a brief break. The remaining powers of Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng surprised Ye Chen, especially Murong Qigncheng. Even right now, Murong Qingcheng's power was still greater than Lin Yue's power. Fortunately, Ye Chen was well aware of the consequences of consuming magic medicines excessively; without a couple of months of bitter work, one didn't even need to think of returning to peak condition.

Moving at its highest speed, the tornado quickly approached the edge of this jungle.

Hm?!

Suddenly, Ye Chen furrowed his brows.

"What is it?" Asked Murong Qingcheng.

"Underground, something especially powerful is coming over, and at a very high speed." His soul power couldn't penetrate too deep into the ground, thus, he didn't know exactly how powerful that creature was, but without a doubt, he was sure of the threat that the creature posed.

"What should we do now?"

Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng thought that they could get out of this dangerous area soon, but now, before one treat even subsided, a new problem was arising. Struck by this bad news, neither Murong Qingcheng nor Qishaofeng knew what to do next.

Ye Chen took a deep breath, and said, "I know how to get us out of here, but that'll cost me a lot."

"How much will it cost you? I'll make it up to you!" Qi Shaofeng said without any hesitation.

"A Yuan Light Ball."

"Yuan Light Ball?"

Qi Shaofeng's eyes popped wide. He had heard about this kind of extremely rare life-saving treasure, it was said that a Yuan Light Ball could block any attack launched by any martial artists under the Astral Reaching Realm. To Clasp

Yuan Realm martial artists, a Yuan Light Ball was valued even more than a mid-ranked, even top-ranked great weapon, after all, no great weapon could guarantee the safety of their lives, while a Yuan Light Balls could.

“I’ll give you a hundred-thousand low-ranked stones and three-thousand mid-ranked stones!”

“I’ll give you two-hundred-thousand low-ranked stones and three-thousand mid-ranked stones!”

Before, they did not possess this much stones, but the both of them had earned quite a number from the Heavenly Dream Ancient Region. Just like Ye Chen, they had each gained a good amount of treasures from the ancient region and traded them for stones.

Ye Chen remained silent. Seeing this, Qi Shaofeng said, “Brother Ye, it’s still not enough?” These stones equaled to tens of inner elders’ total wealth, ordinary Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists could only dreams of having this much stones. After all, not everyone had the chance to enter into an ancient region and gain a bunch of valuable treasures from it.

Ye Chen said, “I saved the Yuan Light Ball as a life-saving treasure, if I use it now, I would have no life-saving treasure left. What can be more valuable than life?”

Qi Shaofeng didn’t respond. Ye Chen’s words were perfectly reasonable, if he was Ye Chen, he wouldn’t be satisfied by the price either.

Murong Qingcheng said, “What if I add a mid-ranked storage ring?”

“Murong!”

Qi Shaofeng didn’t think that Murong would offer a mid-ranked storage ring.

Murong Qingcheng shook her head and said, “It’s just a ring. Brother Ye is right, nothing can be as valuable as our lives.”

Ye Chen was shocked as well. He didn’t think that Murong would offer a mid-ranked storage ring either, as a mid-ranked storage ring could be immeasurably valuable. Who didn’t want a higher ranked storage ring? After all, the inner space of a low-ranked storage ring was only as big as a room while the inner

space of a mid-ranked storage ring could be as huge as a hall. The inner space of a mid-ranked storage ring was ten times bigger than the inner space of a low-ranked storage ring, and a mid-ranked storage ring was a hundred times more valuable than a low-ranked storage ring.

At this stage, what Ye Chen needed the most was a mid-ranked storage ring, as the six-hundred boxes of gold, stones and treasures had already filled up all of his low-ranked storage rings, and his mid-ranked storage ring only had around sixty percent of its inner space left empty; which may not be enough for his future needs.

“Good, deal.”

Ye Chen understood that what Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng had offered were all that they had; they could not afford a higher price. Besides, even if he left them and ran away by himself, that horrible unknown creature underground probably might still not give up on chasing him, and he would still have to use the Yuan Light Ball.

Very quickly, they gave Ye Chen what they promised, as for how they did it, it was done very simply and conveniently. When the storage ring is activated, a light screen would appear and you could directly throw what needed to be put into the ring into the light screen.

Boom!

At exactly this moment, the ground behind them suddenly churned and sank down. An enormous, human-shaped monster bore out. The monster was over a hundred meter tall, and its single body was connected to countless vines, some of these vines were cyan, some were red and some were dark-red, there was even a kind of purple coloured vine that Ye Chan and the other two hadn't seen before.

It was the parent of those man-eating vines.

Seeing this terrifying scene, all three of them couldn't help but suck in a long deep breath in shock. They now began wondering if the Yuan Light Ball could really save their lives from this horrible monster.

Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish!

An overwhelmingly large amount of vines swiftly shot forward towards them. Among these vines, the number of purple coloured ones were the fewest, yet, they were also the fastest ones. The speed of these purple vines were even faster than the sound speed, and Ye Chen and the other two people only saw the purple vines flash across the air like purple lightning bolts, before it pierced the tornado and shot to less than three-feet away from their bodies.

Pop!

Those purple vines were stopped by a thick and clear blue light shield, which was a foot thick and had blue airstreams flowing quickly around inside it, releasing an amazing defensive power.

The dreadful thing was that, these purple vines had already pierced into the blue light shield by around thirty percent of its thickness, clearly, these blue vines were even more powerful than that Lunar Wind Wolf.

## Chapter 187 - Emperor's Tomb, Aries

‘Without this light shield protecting us, we’d have been killed a long time ago.’ Qi Shaofeng thought himself lucky, and the bit of resentment that he had towards Ye Chen vanished.

“Hurry, let’s go!”

Grabbing Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng, Ye Chen stomped his foot against the ground and darted for the jungle entrance.

Pop! Pop! Pop! Pop!

Those purple vines would strike the light shield from time to time, and every strike made by these vines would break the light shield by around thirty percent; even worse, many times these strikes would fall on the exact same spot on the light shield. Fortunately, the light shield’s defensive powers was not static, instead, the blue airstreams were constantly flowing inside the light shield so that all the broken spots could be fixed right away; in this way, the light shield maintained a perfect balance.

The man-eating vine parent realised that its purple vines were incapable of breaking the light shield, thus it opened its mouth and belched out a thigh-thick dark-purple vine. As the dark-purple vine sped away from the parent, its speed was fast like lightning and only after it was several miles away, did a thunderous sound resound out. Unexpectedly, its moving speed was several times faster than the sound speed.

“[Sky Devil Great Palm]!”

In this life and death moment, Murong Qingcheng once again launched a powerful move. Her slim and beautiful palm carried a power that was as deep as the ocean, and it struck the air.

Bang!

In front of her palm, every single object in several hundreds meter radius suddenly became suspended in the air, then soon became a puff of smoke. As for the dark-purple vine, although it hadn’t been reduced to smoke, it was indeed slowed down as if it had fallen into a trap. The dark-purple vine’s moving speed

was instantly dragged down from three times to two times the speed of sound, and finally, to just the sound speed.

“That was all I could do,” said Murong Qingcheng with a stream of blood dripping from the corner of her mouth, “I’m counting the rest on you.”

“I’ve got this.”

Ye Chen nodded and responded. He spread his soul power out towards the front and the back, where the front being the entrance of the jungle and the back being where the man-eating vines’ parent was. Running at their fastest speed for half a day, they were finally reaching the entrance of this jungle, which was now only tens of miles away from them.

As a dim beam of light flashed across the storage ring he wore on his hand, a Red Light Fire bomb appeared in his hand. He had three Red Light Fire bombs in total, he got them from the ‘Devil Prince’ Leng Wuqing, back at the Heaven Dream Ancient Region. These Red Light Fire bombs were quite powerful and were even able to hurt a medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist. Nonetheless, not a single medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist could be a threat to Ye Chen’s life now, thus, he had no reason to save these three bombs, and was instead going to use them now.

Ye Chen flicked his fingers slightly and threw a fire bomb backwards. The bomb made a beautiful parabola in the air while flying out of the light shield. Observing closely, one would realise that when the Red Light Fire bomb was only a millimetre away from the light shield,

Ye Chen shouted, “Explode!”

A raging blaze erupted in the air along with Ye Chen’s voice. The formidable power released by the bomb did not even damage the light shield a little, on the contrary, it largely improved the moving speed of the light shield and the three people wrapped inside it, almost making it shoot out like a roaring shooting star.

“What an excellent idea!”

Both Qi Shaofeng’s and Murong Qingcheng’s eyes suddenly shone in surprise. Before, they thought that Ye Chen had reached his current level only out of luck, but now, the both of them changed their thinking. Under such a pressing and

dangerous situation, Ye Chen could still remain so calm, and even come up with such a clever idea to create an external force to improve their moving speed. They felt so dumb when they compared themselves to Ye Chen, as they knew nothing but to fight blindly.

Ye Chen took out the other two Red Light Fire bombs, and did exactly the same with them as he had just now. Their moving speed was raised to such an incredible degree that, wherever they passed, the air would twist intensely and clouds of dirt would be raised, forming fierce and muddy waves that closely followed behind the blue light shield.

Pop!

The dark-purple vine finally recovered from the effect of the [Sky Devil Great Palm], and boosted its speed back up to three times the speed of sound, and rapidly chased after them.

Five miles!

Three miles!

One miles!

In the time it took ten blinks, the dark-purple vine had already reached one mile away from the light shield, and this distance was shortening rapidly.

By now, the entrance of this jungle was only two miles away from the light shield.

“Success or failure depends on this moment!”

Ye Chen still remained perfectly calm and kept running at his highest speed, as if the dark-purple vine did not even exist.

After one eye blink, the dark-purple vine was only less than three-hundred meters from the light shield.

In half an eye blink, the distance was shortened to less than fifty meters.

“Go!”

Ye Chen grabbed the Yuan light ball, which was the core of the light shield, and abruptly threw it backwards.

Swoosh!

All three of them flew out of the light shield at that moment and kept running towards the entrance.

Puff!

The light shield that was left on the ground suddenly distorted, it was then punctured by the dark-purple vine. Its great defensive power had only managed to stall the dark-purple vine for a single blink of an eye.

In this short span of time, Ye Chen, Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng had reached less than two-hundred meters away from the entrance of the jungle, and the dark-purple vine was three-hundred meters away from them.

Three-hundred meters would only take the dark-purple vine one-third of an eye blink, but the three people could never make it out of the jungle in such a short time span.

At last, the dark-purple vine punctured all three of their bodies.

No, the ones that were penetrated were Zhen Qi silhouettes.

As it turns out, Ye Chen had swiftly launched the Shadow-Dividing Light Art at the crucial moment and created three Zhen Qi silhouettes to trick the dark-purple vine; as for the real Ye Chen, he had already moved to the front and right of the dark-purple vine, with Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng carried in his arms.

In the next moment!

The dark-purple vine again, punctured their...Zhen Qi silhouettes.

Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng couldn't help but each take a long gasp in deep shock. Neither of them could even imagine how Ye Chen did that. The dark-purple vine had been chasing them at a literal lightning speed, and they could not possibly react in time. If they were Ye Chen, they could never ever launch the Shadow-Dividing Light Art so quickly to confuse the cannibal vine. But of course, they knew nothing about Ye Chen's especially high soul power. With his soul power, every single move made by the dark-purple vine was under Ye Chen's watch. This meant that Ye Chen knew exactly when was the best moment to



launch the move to confuse the man-eating vine.

After being tricked a few times, the man-eating vines' parent became furious. It did not understand how these people managed to survive its deadly attacks over and over again.

A warm stream of sunshine poured on their faces — Ye Chen, Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng finally rushed out of the jungle.

Nevertheless, they could not relax yet and had to maintain vigilance. Ye Chen boosted his Zhen Qi up as much as he could, and darted to the front and right of himself where there was a tall rock hill.

Obviously, Ye Chen worried too much. The man-eating vine couldn't come out of the woods, as if it was blocked by an invisible wall.

Phew!

Dropping the two people, Ye Chen felt a sudden dizziness that nearly struck him down.

In the past few hours, Ye Chen had squeezed all his powers and wisdom out of himself to fight against the man-eating vine, and had struggled just on the edge of death. Even though he managed to survive at last, only he knew how much energy it cost him. He was pretty sure that any other Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist would have died ten times over already under the same situation, and would never make it out of the jungle alive, not to mention that he had to carry two people along with him.

Standing beside him, Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng had been staring at Ye Chen, as if they were staring at a genuine monster.

"What?" Ye Chen asked with a low and hoarse voice.

Qi Shaofeng smiled bitterly and said, "I feel like a complete idiot when I compare myself to you, even though I'm at a higher power level than you. How, how did you even do that?"

"I just didn't want to die," said Ye Chen returning the same faint, bitter smile.

"For me to admire someone, this is the first time. I have to admire you, although you're just an early Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist." Murong

Qingcheng didn't try to hide her admiration of Ye Chen at all.

"Let's just get out of here."

After catching his breath, Ye Chen said. He did not want to talk too much about this.

Hearing him, Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng nodded; neither of them wanted to come back to this place ever again.

Ye Chen met around ten Long Blade Martial School's people on their way out of the Hundred Thousand Mountain range, they were the only few who managed to survive the man-eating vines' attacks, and now all looked especially tired and sad.

'These few people are lucky. If they had stayed back in the jungle for a little while longer, the parent of those man-eating vines would leap out from the ground and suck them dry, and thus, their martial school would have vanished.' Ye Chen shook his head and thought.

Not too many demonic beasts lived in this area, thus, they walked out of the mountain area in only half a day, and arrived in the territory of the Long Blade Martial School.

After another small half a day, they arrived at the only city near the Hundred Thousand Mountain range, the Sunset City.

Inside a private dining room of a big restaurant, Ye Chen, Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng sat around a table.

"All thanks to you, brother Ye. You've saved our lives." Qi Shaofeng said while pouring Ye Chen a glass of wine.

Ye Chen responded, "Technically, it's just business between us, you don't need to thank me at all."

Since he had already accepted five-hundred thousand low-ranked stones and six-thousand mid-ranked stones, and mid-ranked storage ring offered by Qi Shaofeng and Murong Qingcheng, he was already quite satisfied and didn't think they owed him anything.

"You can't put it in that way, without you, even if we possessed all the wealth

in this world, we'd have no chance to use them." Murong Qingcheng said while raising her glass and clinking it with Ye Che's.

"Well, then I'll let you cover the bill."

Ye Chen raised his glass and downed the wine.

Daylight was ebbing away, and after a few glasses of wines, all three of them were a bit tired. Thus, they went back to their separate rooms.

Ye Chen lied on the soft bed and closed his eyes, quickly falling into a deep sleep, leaving only a slight bit of consciousness.

He was exhausted by what had happened in the past few days.

In another room, Murong Qingcheng took a quick shower then dragged her aching body into bed, and soon fell asleep as well. She had been continuously fighting for several days, and that had consumed a great amount of her energy. Although it seemed like she had done nothing after she met Ye Chen, she was still quite badly frightened, which was equally exhausting.

In the middle of the night.

Ye Chen woke up first.

"Ah... I feel much better. I never was that tired!"

Getting off the bed, Ye Chen closed the window, then thought, 'I haven't look at that white key yet, I wonder what it can do.'

Ye Chen took out the arm-long white key, then fixed his eyes on it.

It seemed like nothing special. He then activated his Zhen Qi and injected it into the white key.

Buzz!

A bright white light burst forth from the key, in which, a line of ancient characters emerged.

"Emperor Tomb, Aries!"

Furrowing his brows, Ye Chen didn't understand how did Aries have anything to do with this key, neither did he know if it was the same Aries as in his old world. 'But this is not that world, this is the True Spirit Continent! Maybe it just

has the same name, hm, I better assume it's something else.' Ye Chen thought.

Apart from the confusion about Aries, Ye Chen thought that Emperor Tomb might be a powerful martial artist's tomb, and this white key might be able to unlock that tomb. 'Hm, no, it might only be one of a series of keys which unlocks the tomb when they're gathered together. After all, the map I got was incomplete, it was only a piece of a bigger map.' thought Ye Chen

If Ye Chen guessed right, he could only find the tomb and unlock it when he has all the keys.

The disappointment had only lasted a short while. The biggest gain made by Ye Chen through this journey was that he had learned a move of the Void Shattering Finger. If he keeps practising that move and achieves a small success with it, he would be able to defeat any martial artist in his generation; if he could achieve a big success with that move, his power would become immeasurably great. The scene of that terrifyingly powerful monster being pointed at by a gigantic finger and then shattering was still replaying in Ye Chen's mind, over and over again.

"The Void Shattering Finger is way too difficult, that I can't possibly achieve any success in it within a short time. I should just take a look at that high-ranked Earth Realm martial art book at first." Ye Chen had gained quite number of martial books from the second floor of the goat-mouth shaped cave, and among these books, the best one was a high-ranked Earth Realm martial art book. Back then, Ye Chen did not have the time to take a look at its content, but now he finally had some free time to read it.

## ***Chapter 188 - The mountain of falling***

A dim light flashed across Ye Chen's storage ring, after which, a thick book appeared in Ye Chen's hands.

Ye Chen opened it and began reading.

"Three Fuluo Mysterious Codex, a secret high-ranked Earth Realm martial art!"

A secret art?

Ye Chen's heartbeat quickened after only reading these few words. Normally, anything that involved the words 'secret art' in its title, were marvellous items. As the title stated, 'secret arts' were rare and mysterious, and ordinary people could not even see one in their whole lives; 'secret arts' were also much more valuable and precious than other same grade martial arts.

Taking a deep breath and calming down, Ye Chen kept reading.

"This secret martial art is a supportive and improving art, created specifically to improve movement arts. This art includes three levels; reaching the first level, the martial artist will be able to raise a movement art that he or she had already mastered, to a higher grade. Reaching the second level, the movement art can be improved two grades higher, and reaching the third level, the movement art can be improved three grades higher; the martial artist can continuously improve a certain movement art until the grade of the movement art reaches top-rank Earth Realm."

Closed the book, a big grin emerged on Ye Chen's face. This book showed up just in time.

His Shadow-Dividing Light Art was an excellent art, with which, he could release Zhen Qi silhouettes to confuse his enemies when facing a life-threatening danger. However, as his power level was constantly improving, the weakness of the Shadow-Dividing Light Art was becoming more and more obvious. The biggest weakness of the Shadow-Dividing Light Art was its relatively slow speed.

Among same level movement arts, the speed of the Shadow-Dividing Light Art could still be count as better than average. It was just that, every single talented young martial artist that Ye Chen had met on his journey, had mastered a mid-

ranked or top-ranked movement art, and in the future, he might also encounter geniuses with top-ranked movement arts. Compared to those higher level movement arts, the speed of Ye Chen's Shadow-Dividing Light Art would certainly become a weakness.

Now it would not be a problem at all, all he had to do at this moment was to achieve the first level of the Three Fuluo Mystery Codex, and to improve the Shadow-Dividing Light Art into a mid-ranked Earth Realm martial art, or even reach the second level and improve the Shadow-Dividing Light Art into a top-ranked Earth Realm martial art. If he could achieve the third level of the Three Fuluo Mystery Codex, his Shadow-Dividing Light Art would become a top-ranked Earth Realm martial art. This meant that the Three Fuluo Mystery Codex equaled to a top-ranked Earth Realm martial art, and could raise the speed of the Shadow-Dividing Light Art to a desired degree, or even faster than desired.

"Secret arts are usually difficult to cultivate. I assume this Three Fuluo Mystery Codex is as difficult as any top-ranked Earth Realm art, and I possibly won't reach the top level in a short time. But I will be able to improve the Shadow-Dividing Light Art to a higher grade just with the first level of the Three Fuluo Mysterious Codex, and that will be enough for a long period of time."

The sun was rising in another one or two hours, and Ye Chen didn't want to continue sleeping at all; thus, he sat on the bed and crossed his legs, and began cultivating his Great Mystery Zhen Qi.

Before he cultivated, he had taken a spirit-boosting pill, a Zhen Qi-replenishing pill and a soul-improving pill, and then gripped a low-ranked stone in each of his hands. Soon, he entered an extremely concentrated state.

The pills quickly delivered their effects. Surprisingly, Ye Chen found that his cultivating speed, which had not been slow at all, has been raised by thirty percent. That is to say, his past cultivation of thirteen days was equivalent to his present cultivation of ten days; in another word, with those pills, he could save around eighty days per year.

"Breaking into the higher levels becomes more and more difficult after the Clasp of Yuan Realm, these three kinds of pills can certainly save me some time."

Ye Chen settled his mind down and went back to his cultivation.

In the next morning inside the hotel's lobby.

Ye Chen, Murong Qingcheng and Qi Shaofeng sat around a table near a window, and were having their breakfasts.

“Ah, brother Ye, why are you still using an ordinary sword? Your power can definitely be raised by at least ten percent if you have a low-ranked great sword.”

“A suited low-ranked great sword is not that easy to find, I am indeed thinking of buying a low-ranked great sword.” said Ye Chen.

Murong Qingcheng said, “Auctions for great weapons are usually only held once a year, or even longer. Why don't you just go to the Martial City of the Black Dragon Empire, hundreds of martial artists go to that city every day, and eighty percent of them are above the Condensing Reality Realm. Most of these martial artists have been travelling around the world for a long time, and they might have some spare great weapons gained from their journeys unsuitable for themselves. Great Weapon exchanges happens all the time among these martial artists, and you can also buy a sword since spirit stones are now the accepted currency in the world of martial artists.”

“The Martial City?”

Ye Chen hadn't heard of the city before.

Qi Shaofeng nodded and said, “Indeed, I've been there once. Millions of martial artists gather in that city, and Murong was right, eighty percent of them are above the Condensing Reality Realm, including many Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists and Astral Reaching Realm martial artists. You can even meet Sea of Souls Realm martial artists there. The Martial City is very famous in the entire South Zhuo Region, and if you're willing to pay, you'll get a low-ranked great sword easily.”

“Hm, I'll certainly pay a visit to that city then.”

A low-ranked great weapon can improve a martial artist's power by ten to twenty percent, and that made low-ranked great weapons much more valuable than ordinary weapons. Ye Chen quickly made a decision; his next destination would be the Black Dragon Empire. Since long ago, he had been curious about

the Black Dragon Empire, one of the three biggest nations in the South Zhuo Region.

Murong Qingcheng then said, “I am going to the Black Dragon Empire too, so we can travel together.”

Hearing her, Qi Shaofeng’s look suddenly changed. He then gave a helpless bitter grin. He had been planning to spend a couple more days with Murong Qingcheng, but that was not going to happen.

“Good then!” Ye Chen nodded.

Finished with breakfast, Ye Chen and Murong Qingcheng left for the Black Dragon Empire right away.

.....

The Spirit Speak Nation was only about seventy to eighty thousand miles away from the Black Dragon Empire, with an average speed, a week was more than enough for them to get there.

During the journey to the Black Dragon Empire, Ye Chen practised the Three Fuluo Mystery Codex stringently every single day. He tried his best to reach the first level and upgrade the Shadow-Dividing Light Art as fast as he could.

As for Murong Qingcheng, she cultivated her Zhen Qi especially hard during the journey. As she had taken too many medicines in the past few days, her power was reduced to sixty and seven percent. Even though she had the secret Zhen Qi cultivating art possessed by the Sky Flying Devil Martial School, her power had only currently recovered to about eighty percent.

Of course, Ye Chen was extremely shocked by this amazing recovery speed. He estimated that Murong Qingcheng’s power would recover to at least ninety percent by the time they arrived at the Black Dragon Empire.

“Rank 6 institutions are truly as powerful as people say they are, indeed amazing. This secret Zhen Qi cultivating art is already powerful enough to suppress all rank 7 institutions.”

However, Ye Chen still underestimated Murong Qingcheng and the rank 6 institution she came from.



On the sixth day of their journey.

Murong Qingcheng finished her daily cultivation, and standing up from the ground, she activated the Sky Devil Force Field with all her power; instantly, a hill near her became unable to bear this great force field that suddenly emerged and was crushed to pieces.

“Is your power already completely recovered?” Ye Chen asked in surprise.

Murong Qingcheng nodded and responded, “This time I actually hadn’t taken too much Zhen Qi replenishing pills. Two years ago, another rank 6 insertions had started a fight against our Sky Flying Devil Martial school, and in that fight, I took a whole fifty pills in a day and killed over twenty Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists.”

“A war between two rank 6 institutions?”

“Nothing but a small fight, if it was a real war, I wouldn’t be able to stand and talk to you here now.”

Ye Chen shook his head. He couldn’t even imagine exactly how powerful those rank 6 institutions were.

After another day, they finally arrived at the border of the Black Dragon Empire.

In front of them, was a three-thousand Zhang tall, lofty mountain, and despite the enormity of this mountain, it looked like nothing special from the outside. Nevertheless, the mountain exuded an imposing aura that caused people to feel fearful. Ye Chen had also found that, many other martial artists would rather take a detour than to directly go over the mountain.

Murong Qingcheng explained to Ye Chen, “According to legend, a Life and Death Realm martial artist once died on this mountain; his blood even dyed the entire mountaintop red and his strong spiritual power had merged with this mountain, forming an extremely terrifying sense of power. If ordinary martial artists get too close to this mountain, they might suddenly lose their minds and die.”

“What is this mountain’s name?”

“The Mountain of Falling.”

## ***Chapter 189 - The Martial City***

Special thanks to Nitish M. for sponsoring the chapter.

...

The Mountain of Falling looked quite close but actually, it was over ten miles away from the main road. While walking towards it, Ye Chen kept feeling an overwhelmingly great pressure that had strengthened all of his negative emotions by several-folds and even induced some greatly confusing illusions.

Ye Chen activated the sword intent and eliminated all of these negative effects, then turned around and looked at Murong Qingcheng. She seemed to have gotten used to this terrifyingly great pressure released by the mountain already, and was maintaining a perfectly calm face. Faintly, Ye Chen had also perceived another mysterious sense of power released from Murong Qingcheng's body that had been neutralising the power of the mountain.

"So weird."

Ye Chen was quite curious about that mysterious power possessed by her.

Sooner or later, they walked past the Mountain of Falling and the great pressure given by that mountain quickly dissipated.

.....

The Martial City was located in the western part of the Black Dragon Empire, and in the middle of the Heavy Mystery Mountain Range,

Before approaching the Heavy Mystery Mountain Range, Ye Chen had already sensed an increase in gravity which was extremely subtle that one could barely sense it without a specially great perception.

At first, Ye Chen didn't pay too much attention to that, but as they moved closer and closer to the Heavy Mystery Mountain Range, the increase in gravity grew more and more obvious; Ye Chen couldn't help but ask, "The gravity in this area seems to have a problem, doesn't it?"

"So you have felt it already! Indeed, the gravity in this Heavy Mystery Mountain Range is way stronger than other places in this world. The closer we

are to the central area, the greater the gravity will be. Right now, we haven't even entered into the Heavy Mystery Mountain Range yet."

"I didn't know about this."

Murong Qingcheng smiled at Ye Chen. She was as shocked as he was now when she came to this area for the first time, but then she got used to it. This True Spirit Continent was so broad, nearly boundless, that many unexplainably magical people and things existed on this continent. For example, every ancient region was naturally formed as a complete and individual space, and was able to deny the passage of all martial artists whose bone ages were beyond twenty-four years old. Not even Life and Death Realm Martial artists could possibly be allowed to enter.

After half an hour, they reached the Heavy Mystery Mountain Range.

"Such an intense gravity, at least three times greater than usual." Ye Chen didn't control his power well when he first walked into the mountain area and left a few deep footprints on the ground.

As for Murong Qingcheng, she had been walking just as normal.

Taking a deep breath, Ye Chen quickly adjusted his power to fit the current gravity so no footprints would be left on the ground.

During their journey in the Heavy Mystery Mountain Range, they had met quite a few groups of martial artists. Most of them were Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists and only a few were Condensing Reality Realm ones.

"Look, isn't that Murong Qingcheng?"

"Who's the guy next to her? Why can he travel together with Murong Qingcheng?"

"I haven't seen him before, he looks nowhere like a Sky Flying Devil Martial School's disciple."

"Ah...I'm so jealous of him! Murong Qingcheng is one of the two most beautiful girls in the entire Black Dragon Empire, I'd be so satisfied if I can even talk to her. Why on earth can this guy walk side by side with her?"

"This guy is so dead. Hundreds, and even more than a thousand talented

young martial artists had been dreaming of Murong Qingcheng. Any one of them can easily crush him with a finger.”

“Hehe, you’re absolutely right. Let’s just expect the show of his death.”

The Heavy Mystery Mountain Range wasn’t too huge. Ye Chen and Murong Qingcheng spent merely two hours to walk into its central area. The gravity in the central area was incredibly intense, nearly ten times greater than normal. Ye Chen had roughly done the math and found out that, if one flew in this place, the Zhen Qi would be consumed ten times faster than usual; which meant, no Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artists could do a long-term flight, and even Astral Reaching Realm martial artists’ flying speeds would be greatly reduced in this place.

“That mountaintop is the entrance of the Martial City.” Said Murong Qingcheng.

Ye Chen asked in a surprised tone, “What? Is the entrance of that city truly located on the mountaintop?”

“You’ll find out soon.”

Ye Chen finally understood what she meant after he climbed to the mountaintop.

The Martial City was located on a majestic mountain. This mountain seemed topless, as if someone had sliced the entire mountaintop off and created a smooth, flat area that had a radius of over a hundred miles on top of the mountain. The edge of this flat area was split from the main mountain body by a bottomless chasm, which had completely separated the flat area and the outer world. There were only two methods in entering this flat mountaintop area: the first one was to fly in. However, the gravity of the chasm area was far too great because Ye Chen had just witnessed a level 4 flying demonic beast that had been dragged down into the chasm by the suddenly increased gravity and disappeared completely, without even leaving a trace.

The second method in entering the flat area was through those chains in front of them. Countless adult-leg sized chains had been floating above the chasm, connecting the main mountain body and the middle flat area.

“Let's go.”

Murong Qingcheng nimbly leapt up into the air then landed on a chain, then streams of Zhen Qi bursted out of her heels, pushing her swiftly towards the other end of the chain.

Ye Chen did exactly the same, closely following behind her.

When he reached the middle area of the chasm, Ye Chen sensed a huge increase in gravity. The gravity in that area was at least thirty times stronger than normal, no, probably fifty times stronger. No wonder even level 4 flying demonic beasts couldn't fly across this chasm. If any Claspig Yuan Realm martial artist dared to recklessly fly, they would probably end up exactly similar to that flying beast.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

They landed in front of the city gate of the Martial City.

The Martial City was even bigger than the Happy City. It was more than seventy square miles; its city walls had a height of more than three hundred meters. This height wasn't set for no reason, as based on the pull of gravity in this area, all martial artists below the Claspig Yuan Realm couldn't possibly fly so high.

In each side of the city gate, was a line of martial guards.

Murong Qingcheng reminded Ye Chen, “The entrance fee is one piece of low-ranked stone, so is the exit fee.”

“They charge for leaving as well?” One piece of low-ranked stone was indeed a high price, but Ye Chen had already gotten used to the high standards of those big cities' entrance fees. After all, people who would come to this Martial City were all martial artists, and they could buy many rare objects in this city, which was quite attractive. He did understand why they charge so much for entrances, but he couldn't figure out why they were charging for leaving as well.

Murong Qingcheng explained, “The Martial City has many rules, this is just one of them.”

Handing two pieces of low-ranked stones to a guard, they walked into the city.

The first impression Ye Chen had from the architecture and landscape inside the Martial City was, gigantic and magnificent. A random building can be over ten meters tall while those hotels were all luxury and stylish; each looked just like a sky-high tower which stood on the city and were quite eye-catching. The street was especially broad that even a hundred people could walk on the streets side by side and not feel crowded at all. For a short moment, Ye Chen felt that he had come to a city of giants.

“The second rule of this Martial City is that, fights are strictly forbidden. Anyone violates this rule will be executed immediately, or in lesser cases, be imprisoned.”

Hearing her, Ye Chen nodded and responded, “This Martial City is a city of martial artists, I assume, this city is run by some powerful people, am I right?”

Murong Qingcheng nodded and said, “The lord of this city is a Soul of Sea Realm Martial Artist.”

“A Soul of Sea Realm Martial Artist, no wonder!” If Astral Reaching Realm martial artists could be counted as powerful people, Soul of Sea Realm Martial Artists were all legendary that every single slight movement made by them could be powerful enough to change the structure of a piece of land. Under the watch of a Soul of Sea Realm Martial Artist as the lord of this city, anyone who dared to violate any rule of this city might just want to get themselves killed.

This broad street wasn't built for no reason at all as Ye Chen had seen many stalls set up by martial artists by the streets once he walked in. The appearances of these stalls were varied as some looked like bookshelves, leathers, tables, and gigantic stones that looked like a table; Ye Chen was even dazzled by all those different stalls and merchandises.

“If you want to set up a stall, you'll have to pay a hundred low-ranked stones for a permit. Otherwise, you would violate a rule and the punishment could be terrifying. Normally, people won't set up stalls if they didn't have too many to sell. Instead, they prefer to choose off-market dealings for small batches of merchandise.” Said Murong Qingcheng.

“Is there any shops in this city?” Asked Ye Chen.

“Yes, but treasures and ranked great weapons are rarely sold in shops. Shops

normally only sell medicines and ordinary weapons, or food and drinks. Of course, if you have a huge amount of treasures and ranked great weapons to sell, you can just buy a shop. But people usually don't have that many great things to sell, so a simple stall is more cost-effective, as you only need to pay a hundred low-ranked stones for the permit."

Quite a lot martial guards had been patrolling in the city to see if anyone was breaking any rule, none of those martial artists who were more powerful than these guards, dared to provoke them. They were afraid that once they offended these martial guards, punishments would come in all kinds of unexpected ways.

While walking past a few stalls, Ye Chen found that not every owner of these stalls required their customers to pay with stones, some of them would offer two prices, one in gold and one in spirit stones. Comparatively, the price of gold was usually higher than the price in stones. For example, you could buy a magic herb with ten low-ranked stones that's equal to four thousand gold. But if you want to pay with gold, the price would be six thousand.

To this, Ye Chen had his own understanding. He assumed that gold in this Martial City was not as valued as it was in the outer world, as spirit stones were what everybody actually needed. Therefore, if you want to purchase using gold, you shouldn't struggle too much about the price.

As Ye Chen stopped in front of a bookshelf, he took a quick glance and found that the books placed on the shelf were all secret martial art books. Books on the upper layers were top-ranked Mortal Realm secret martial art books while books on the bottom two layers were low-ranked Earth Realm secret martial art books.

"How much are these books?" Ye Chen asked.

The owner of this stall was a medium Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, he gave a quick glance at Ye Chen, then said in a bland tone, "Eighty low-ranked stones for each Mortal Realm books, low-ranked Earth Realm books have different prices."

Hearing this, Ye Chen gave a closer look at those low-ranked Earth Realm books.

The price of the cheapest low-ranked Earth Realm book was six thousand low-ranked stones, while the most expensive one was one hundred and thirty



thousand low-ranked stones. The five low-ranked Earth Realm books on the shelf were worth over forty-thousand low-ranked stones in total. ‘That was quite a fortune!’ Thought Ye Chen.

This Martial City was indeed as marvelous as Qi Shaofeng said. Even the profit gained in business transactions of such a small stall can be so huge.

‘I still have tens of martial books in my storage ring, I can just come here and sell them if I need more stones someday.’ Thought Ye Chen.

“Do you want a book or not? If you don’t, can you please move a bit away? I’ve got other customers.” Said the stall owner with a dark expression.

“Ah, I’m just taking a look.”

Ye Chen walked away with Murong Qingcheng. The bad attitude of the stall owner didn’t bother him at all. After all, none of these people who came to set up a stall in this Martial City was ordinary, and they all have different personalities. Good temper or bad temper, you could meet all kinds of people in your journey, but you don’t have the right to ask a powerful martial artist to be nice to you.

Even after walking past a few blocks, they still haven’t seen any stall that sold treasures and weapons. Most stalls were selling magic herbs, rare metals, inner Dan of demonic beasts, and martial art books.

“You can’t find too many good stuff here in the outer city. Let’s go to the Trading Hall, it’s in the inner city.” Said Murong Qingcheng.

“Trading Hall?”

“The Trading Hall is where you can find the most genuine treasures and ranked great weapons. Sometimes even Astral Reaching Realm martial artists would buy or sell in the Trading Hall. But you have to be qualified for you to be allowed to enter the Trading Hall. That is, you either need to be a late Claspng Yuan Realm or above grade martial artist, or possess more than two hundred thousand low-ranked stones. You have more than five hundred thousand low-ranked stones. That means you can surely get in there.”

## ***Chapter 190 - The Trading Hall***

Listening to Murong Qingcheng phrase it that way, Ye Chen was now determined to check out the inner city trading hall.

Entry into the outer part of the city would already cost a piece of low grade spiritstone, while entry into the inner city would cost a hundred times that amount. Merely the entry fee into the inner city already left the majority of Condensing Reality Realm martial artist isolated on the outside; they were not as extravagant yet as to casually spend a hundred low-ranked spirit stones, it should be known that the majority of them only had a net worth of no more than several hundred to a thousand low-ranked spirit stones.

Paying two hundred pieces of low-ranked spirit stones, Ye Chen and Murong entered the inner city.

“There’s four Astral Reaching Realm users drinking tea, and there’s another two taking a stroll. It’s only been a while, and we’ve already seen six of them. Truly unbelievable.” It was very difficult to see any Astral Reaching Realm martial artist outside, and yet, on the inner Martial city’s streets there immediately appeared six, and one of them had a cultivation several times more terrifying than the Black Crow Taoist Priest, and it’s only the fucking Mid Astral Reaching Realm martial artists.

“Oh! This little miss wouldn’t happen to be Muong, now would she?” Of the two strolling Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, the silver-gray haired elderly men wearing a smile on his face looked over here.

Murong Qingcheng politely returned the greeting, “Greetings Senior Diao!”

The silver haired elderly man nodded, “Help me ask how your Sky Flying Devil Martial School’s Elder Li is doing, just say that I will look for him for chess when I have the time, but you must tell him that he’s not allowed to spend too long thinking about the next move. Last time, if it were not for me quickly clinching victory, who knew how many days it would have taken to finish that game of chess.”

Murong Qingcheng let out a small laugh, “Haha, I’ll will definitely let Elder Li know, although, this time Senior Diao would have to be careful; Elder Li has

researched a tricky move that is specially used to deal with you.”

“Good, let him go ahead and try. I, Diao, may have a slightly lower cultivation than his, but my chess skills are even more amazing than his,” laughed the silver haired elderly man. He soon gave a glance at Ye Chen, and said teasingly, “Miss Murong, who is this fellow, he’s not your sweetheart, is he?”

“Oh, no no, he’s just a friend actually, his name’s Ye Chen”, said Murong Qingcheng

“So he’s a friend, try harder then.” The silver haired old man looked so kind, and did not even have a little of the airs of a Astral Realm martial artist, on the contrary, he teased Ye Chen.

Ye Chen on meeting them, could not become uninvolved, and with one fist cupped in the other, said, “Greetings to both Seniors.”

The old man to the side faintly nodded his head and did not speak, while the silver haired old man waved his hand and said, “You must be busy! We still have some business to attend to.”

“Take care, Senior Diao.”

Murong Qingcheng’s eyes followed them as they left.

Ye Chen could not help but ask, “Who is this Senior Diao, his cultivation is extremely terrifying!”

“Senior Diao is not associated with any school or academy, but is very famous within the Black Dragon Empire. Among martial artists of the same level, the number of people that can surpass him are very very few. His self-created move, Mountain Shaking Fist, can shake a large mountain into dust; as a result, the Jianghu martial artists call him the Mountain Shaking Old Man,” replied Murong Qingcheng.

“To make a mountain shake to dust, that’s indeed frightening enough!”

To break a mountain and to shake a mountain to dust-there was a huge disparity between the two. The ten people who came before them were not an opponent for the Mountain Shaking Old Man.

.....

The trading hall was a long and broad hall over five miles long; the hall had 4 entrances, and at each entrance there was a martial artist inspecting.

“You two, please show us your spirit stones for a moment, you will only be qualified to enter if you have two hundred thousand low-ranked spirit stones.” The heading martial artist saw that these two did not even have the cultivation of a Peak Clasp Yuan Realm martial artist, and thus spoke in a neither servile nor overbearing manner.

Ye Chen nodded his head. A faint light flashed across his storage ring, and a total of twenty large chests fell to the floor, with each chest containing ten thousand low-ranked spirit stones.

“It indeed is two hundred thousand low-ranked spirit stones, you may now enter.”

Hearing that, Ye Chen went and kept his twenty large chests. Suddenly, the thought of Murong Qingcheng possibly not having the required amount to enter crossed his mind. However, what caused him to be surprised was that, Murong Qingcheng without needing to take out any spirit stones at all, took out a black jade tile; when they saw the jade tile, they immediately let her through.

“Our Sky Flying Devil Martial School is a Rank 6 institution, all we have to do is show our core disciple tile and they’ll let us into the hall,” said Murong Qingcheng.

Ye Chen sighed ruefully, precisely because super Martial Schools had a large reputation, core disciples could directly enter the trading hall; their status were equivalent to a Peak Clasp Yuan Realm user or higher.

The interior space of the hall was extremely vast, and inside, pillars built entirely of jade towered. These pillars were hundreds of meters tall and 5 meters thick, and had numerous carvings of different types of fish, birds, and insects on them. The hall’s floors were made of very expensive jasper, which appeared extremely shiny and crystal clear to the eye; treading on it felt like walking on the serene waves, it really opened up the mind.

As far as the eye could see, there were crystal counters every twenty steps, and within these crystal counters there were items that were individually unique; there were treasure tools that sparkled brilliantly, demonic beasts' inner cores that emitted Yuan Qi in undulating waves, rare spirit grasses that gave off a pressing spirit power, and in addition, they had multiple rare books.

At this moment, almost every crystal counter was surrounded by a group of martial artists, and of them, eighty percent or more were Late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists, and the majority of the remaining were early or mid-level Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists. Occasionally, a few solitary independent Astral Reaching Realm martial artists could be seen as well.

After making a rough estimate, Ye Chen reckoned that the total number of Claspng Yuan Realm users in the hall exceeded fifty thousand, which was an astonishing number.

Following the crystal counters' sequence, the two of them walked as they observed.

Stopping in front of a crystal counter, Ye Chen looked up at the sign which read, 'Sixth level Demonic Beast, Three Headed Snake inner core, priced at fifty thousand low-ranked spirit stones.'

"The Three Headed Snakes are only slightly weaker than an Ominous Wind Wolf, and normal peak-level late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist were entirely no match for it; but unexpectedly, Three Headed Snake inner cores were being sold here.

Ye Chen was very clear about this; the Three Headed Snake was quite possibly killed by Claspng Yuan Realm martial artists. Astral Reaching realm martial artists had better things to do, after all, fifty thousand pieces of low ranked spirit stones were not much to them. Furthermore, once their cultivation reached the Astral Reaching realm, low ranked spirit stones could no longer meet their regular cultivation needs, only the mid ranked spirit stones were capable of quickly letting them refine their Zhen Qi.

"Don't underestimate the Martial Artists of the world, some of the not so famous Claspng Yuan Realm users are even more frightening than the Dragon

Soldiers who are 10 years younger than them. To us, the Ominous Wind Wolf and the Three Headed Snake are unrivaled existences, but to them, perhaps all they need is one move to destroy them,” said Murong Qingcheng

“One move to kill the Ominous Wind Wolf, is there anyone below the Astral Reaching Realm capable of doing that?” To the best of Ye Chen’s knowledge, the Ominous Wind Wolf proved to be much stronger than Luo Xinglie, who was the leader of the Sky Cloud Martial School; at the time, Luo Xinglie was already a genius in his own right, and was now a peak-level late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist.

Stepping into the Astral reaching Realm level is extremely difficult. Even though there are some who are already at the Peak-late Claspng Yuan Realm level, they might be stuck at this level for a lifetime. Thus, they spend all their time trying to study a powerful method and train their strength to its absolute peak; this strength that they give out is absolutely terrifying. Simply because they lack the talent, it does not mean that this will stifle them, or else it would be seen as a major loss.

Ye Chen nodded his head, “Regardless of their methods, to be able to kill a sixth level Demonic Beast, the Three Headed Snakes, their strength has to be incredible. I can’t see myself matching them anytime soon.”

Looking at Ye Chen’s strength, he was at most at the level of an ordinary late Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist’s level. Anyone slightly stronger than that and he would have to flee, and if he were to meet a Peak-level late Claspng Yuan Realm user, he reckoned that he would not be able to even run as the enemy would be many tiers higher than him.

Walking another few hundred meters ahead, Ye Chen’s eyes suddenly had a red light flash across.

The dazzling red light came from the third crystal counter on the left, where at the same time, a severe and powerful Qi aura assaulted their senses, oppressing the mind.

Both of them looked over.

“mid-grade treasure tool----- the Blood Yang Axe, worth thirty thousand pieces of mid-ranked spirit stones!”

Murong Qingcheng said in surprise, “There is someone selling mid-grade treasures, but the price is too high; there are very few people below the Astral Reaching Realm level that can afford it”

“What’s the general price for mid-grade treasures?” Ye Chen could feel the power emanating from the Blood Yang Ax, and as soon as his spirit power got close to it, he felt it being crushed, which prompted the quick question.

“The price of Common mid-grade treasure tools is not anything below thirty thousand pieces of mid-ranked spirit stones, and this Blood Yang Ax should be counted as one of the better mid-grade treasure tools.”

“Normal mid-grade treasure tools already cost thirty thousand pieces of mid-ranked spirit stones, and I recall that they only increase your attacking power by thirty to forty percent, whereas a low-grade treasure increases it by twenty percent, so why does the price differ by a hundredfold?”

Murong Qingcheng shook her head, “You misunderstand, low grade treasures only increase attack power by twenty percent when in the hands of a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist, but in the hands of a Astral Reaching Realm martial artist, to be able to increase the power by twenty percent is already an extremely difficult feat in itself. Whereas for a mid-grade treasure tool, it increases the attack power of an Astral Realm Reaching martial artist by thirty to forty percent, the two can’t be compared. It’s a shame that there are very few mid-grade treasure tools, even for my Sky Flying Devil Martial School’s Elder, very few of the them have one.”

“So it’s like this, then what if it were in the hands of a Claspng Yuan Realm martial artist?” Ye Chen was very clear on common items, but he only had a smattering of knowledge on rare treasures. No one has ever told him about it, and the information could not be found in books. As for the Astral Reaching Realm martial artists, although they would know of this, however, you cannot expect them to talk about daily life with you, and tell you all about the relatively high-end stuff. Let alone the fact that Ye Chen was only familiar with the Thunder Freer person, and judging from his actions, he did not have any mid-

grade treasure tools either.

“It’s very difficult for a Clasp of Yuan Realm martial artist bring out the full potential of mid-grade treasure, at most, their attacking power would increase by thirty to forty percent, the same as an Astral Reaching Realm martial artists’, but you must keep in mind, even if you have a mid-grade treasure tool, do not take it out. It can’t be said for sure that some of these Astral Reaching Realm martial artists won’t kill to seize the treasure.”

“Thanks for the heads up.”

Ye Chen nodded his head, the other party was worthy of being a core disciple of a super Martial School; the things she knew were more, and compared to her, his own knowledge was non-existent.

“The Blood Yang Ax, my luck isn’t bad.” A broad and muscular middle aged man that appeared to be fifty years old came over, his eyes fixated on the Blood Yang Axe.

Ye Chen’s pupils constricted, surprisingly, this man was an Astral Reaching Realm martial artist.

Jingle!

The broad and muscular middle aged man pulled the crystal counter’s cord, and inside the walls behind the counter, the tinkling of bells sounded. Soon after, an old man with an aura as deep as the ocean came out from behind a door, and with his Zhen Qi undulating, he appeared to be even more powerful than the broad and muscular middle aged man.

“You wanna buy the Blood Yang Ax?”

“Not bad”

Seeing the two men form a business deal, Ye Chen shook his head. Previously, the Astral Reaching Realm martial artists were rarely seen, and yet in this Martial City, they could be found everywhere-he was already numb to it.

The interior space of the trading hall was very large; with its length and width being more than five miles long, it was bigger than some of the small towns



outside the city. The two took their time and walked around along a rows of crystal counters.

“En! It’s the low tiered treasured sword, I’ve finally found it.” Extremely clearly, Ye Chen’s soul power sensed a sharp sword power that came from the right, a hundred meters ahead.

“Lets go over there and see”

As they were talking, Ye Chen was already walking over there, while Murong Qingcheng followed beside him.

